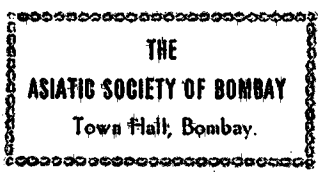
00030937



Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018

THE

NEW CHRONICLES

OF

ENGLAND AND FRANCE,

In Two Parts;

30937

BY

ROBERT FABYAN.

NAMED BY HIMSELF THE

CONCORDANCE OF HISTORIES.

REPRINTED FROM PYNSON'S EDITION OF 1516.

THE FIRST PART COLLATED WITH THE EDITIONS OF 1533, 1542, AND 1559;

AND

THE SECOND WITH A MANUSCRIPT OF THE AUTHOR'S OWN TIME, AS WELL AS THE SUBSEQUENT EDITIONS: INCLUDING THE DIFFERENT CONTINUATIONS.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED

A BIOGRAPHICAL AND LITERARY PREFACE,

AND

AN INDEX,

BY HENRY ELLIS.

TTc8

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR F. C. AND J. RIVINGTON; T. PAYNE; WILKIE AND ROBINSON; LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME AND CO.; CADELL AND DAVIES; J. MAWMAN; AND J. JOHNSON AND CO.

1811.

00030937

PREFACE.

OF the personal history of Robert Fabyan but few notices have reached us. There was nothing remarkable in his descent, and he made but little figure in public life. He was, however, an alderman of London, and presents us with the rare instance of a citizen and merchant, in the fifteenth century, devoting himself to the pleasures of Learning.

From his Will it appears that his father's name was Iohn Fabyan; and there is reason to believe that although he was apprenticed to a trade, his family were people of substantial respectability in Essex*.

* Stephen Fabyan, one of his ancestors, held considerable property at Stisted in 1404; and afterwards became possessed of the manor of Ienkins. (See Morant's Hist. of Essex vol. ii. pp. 173, 392.

A charter in the Harleian Collection, at the British Museum, (marked 85 D. 25.) mentions a Robert Fabyan of Concton in Surrey, in the tenth year of Henry IV. Another charter occurs in the same Collection (51 A. 9.) of the third year of Henry the Sixth, in which William Gresthous of Coggeshale in Essex, grants a messuage and its appurtenances to Stephen Fabyan, Robert Fabyan, Iohn Fabyan, Iohn Starlyng and others.

There is also, in the Prerogative Office, the Will of Iohn Fabyan, citizen and draper, dated in 1477, in which he speaks of his brethren Stephen and Robert Fabyan. His residence appears to have been at Coggeshall, where the first mentioned Stephen, according to Morant, was a cordwainer. Another Will occurs, also, of a Thomas Fabyan early in the sixteenth century.

Strype in his edition of Stowe's Survey, 1720, vol. ii. b. iv p. 113, mentions the will of Iohn Fabyan, gent. of the parish of St. Clement Danes, dated March 16, 1541: in which he bequeaths to his sister Martha four nobles yearly, out of the lands he had purchased in Ovington, *co.* Essex, for her life. To the Lady Marney he bequeaths all his books of meditation, and his *Chronicles*; and speaks of the lady Sperte as his sister, and of the earl of Southampton as his master. Strype, (who quotes *Reg. Law.* as his authority, in the margin,) mistook this for the will of the historian.

Among the visitations in the Herald's College four short pedigrees occur of the family of Fabyan, (C 24. 501. C 24. 424. I 23. 73. Vin. 56. fol. 221.) bearing the same arms with the historian*, but all of them of the reign of Charles the First.

* Erm. Three fleurs-de-lis within a bordure Gu. MS Coll. Arm. D. fol. 33.

Bishop

Bishop Tanner says he was born in London*. At what period he became a member of the Draper's Company cannot now be ascertained. Their registers would probably have furnished a clue to guess at the exact time of his birth. But the hall of that respectable body has been twice destroyed by fire, and they have no muniments which reach beyond the year 1602.

From records in the City archives, however, it appears that he was alderman of the ward of Faringdon Without: in 1493 he served the office of sheriff: and, in the registers which go by the name of the Repertory, a few scattered memoranda are preserved of the part which he occasionally took, at a period somewhat later, in public transactions.

On the 20th of September, 1496, in the mayoralty of sir Henry Colet, we find him "assigned and chosen," with Mr. Recorder and certain commoners, to ride to the king "for redress of the new impositions raised and levied upon "English cloths in the archduke's land." This probably alludes to the circumstance of Philip, to whom the emperor Maximilian had resigned the Low Countries the year before, exacting the duty of a florin upon every piece of English cloth imported into his dominions: but which he desisted from in the articles of agreement signed by his ambassadors in London, July 7th, 1497†.

In the following year, when the Cornish rebels marched toward London, alderman Fabyan was appointed with John Brooke, and John Warner late sheriff, to keep the gates of Ludgate and Newgate, the postern of the house of Friars-preachers, and the Bar of the New Temple.

A few months after, in the thirteenth of Henry VII. we find him an assessor upon the different wards of London, of the fifteenth which had been granted to the king for the Scottish war.

In 1502, on the pretext of poverty, he resigned the alderman's gown; not wishing to take the mayoralty; and probably retired to the mansion in Essex mentioned in his will.

* Bibl. Brit. Hib. p. 272. † Compare Rapin. Hist. Eng. vol. i. p. 680. Act. Pub. xii. 448. 654.

That

That he was opulent at this period cannot be doubted. But he seems to have considered that the expences of the chief magistracy were too great, even at that time, to be sustained by a man who had a numerous family. He orders the figures, as will be seen in his will, of sixteen children, in brass, to be placed upon his monument.

Stowe in his Survey of London*, gives the English part of the epitaph on Fabyan's tomb, from the church of Saint Michael Cornhill, and says he died in 1511†: adding that his monument was gone. Bale, who places Fabyan's death on February 28th, 1512, is probably nearest to the truth, as his will, though dated July 11th, 1511, was not proved till July 12th, 1513; which, according to the ecclesiastical computation, would be somewhat less than five months after the supposed time of his death.

Fabyan's Will, of itself, affords a curious comment on the manners of the time of Henry the Eighth. A copy of it is here given from the Registry of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury.

"In Dei nomine. Amen. Undecimo die mensis Iulii, anno dominice incarnationis millessimo quingẽtesimo undecimo, ac anno illustrissimi principis, ac regis nostri Anglie Henrici octavi, tertio. I ROBERT FABYAN, citizein and draper of London, thanke and lawde be thereof geuen to God and to his blessed moder our Lady seynt Mary, hole of body and of mynde, ordeyne and make this my present Will and Testament in maner and forme as folowith. And first I bequeth my soule to the infynite mercy of o^r. savio^r. Ihū Crist, and to the prayers and tuycion of his moost blissed moder our Lady seynt Mary, blissed seynt Cristoffer myn advowry, and to all the glorious company of heven, my body to be buried, if I dye win the citie of London, win the church of And if it happen me to decease at my mansion callid Halstedyat, then I will that my corps be buried atwene my pewe and the highe awter

* Edit. 1603, 4to. p. 198. † See also Weever, Fun. Mon. p. 416.

‡ Halsted, Fabyan's residence at Theydon Gernon in Essex, was an ancient mansion, though it is not noticed either by Salmon or Morant in their histories. In the return from this parish in the 14th of Edward the Third,

wyndow the quere of the parisshe churche of Alhalowen of Theydon Gardon, in the shyre of Essex; whiche tyme of buryng, and also the monethis mynde, I will that myn executrice do cause to be caried from London xii. newe torches, there beyng redy made, to burn in the tymes of the saide burying and monethis mynde; and also that they doo purvay for iiii. tapers of iiiilb. every pece, to brenne aboute the corps and herse for the forsaid ii. seasons, whiche torches and tapers to be bestowed as hereafter shalbe devised; which iiij. tapers I will be holden at euery tyme by foure poore men, to the whiche I will that to everyche of theym be geven for their labours at either of the saide ii. tymes iiij*d*. to asmany as been weddid men; and if any of theym happen to be unmaried, than they to have but iij*d*. a pece, and in lyke maner I will that the torche berers be orderid. And I will and bequeth unto asmany persones as bere my body to church, to everyche of them, vi*d*. and to suche, ij. as lay my corps in my grave, to everyche of them, ij*d*. And I will that myn executrice, in as covenable wise as they may after my decesse, cawse three trentalls to be songen for my soule, and all cristen soules; whiche, iij. trentalls I will be songen at the Freer Augustines, the Grey Freers, the White Freers, for the which I will that myn executrice geve unto everyche of the said houses, vi*s*. viij*d*.; and if any of the saide orders refuse to syng the saide trentall for the said stypend, than I will that myn executrice geve all suche money, of the freers so refused, and depart it among poore householders of the parisshes of Seynt Benett Fynk, and Seynt Barthilmews the Litell, if I be buried win London, that is to say, to every household man and wif, vi*d*. and to an householder beyng unmaryed, iiij*d*.; and if it happen me to be buried in the church of Teydon Garnon foresaid, than I will that the half of such money of the freers refusid, be devided and geuen among the poore parisshons of the said Theydon Garnon, and other parisshes next adioynaunt, and the other half as is abovesaid. Also I bequeth unto the parson of Theydon Garnon, if he be present other at my burying or moneths mynde, if I be there buried, xii*d*. and if he be absent viii*d*. And I will that myn executrice cause at the least to be vi. preests present at myn burying, whereof I will the highe masse of oon be of Requiem, and the other v. to be desyred to sing oon a masse of the v. Wounds, the ij*de*. a masse of thassumpcion of o*r* Lady, the iij*de*. a masse of all Martirs, w*t* a speciall memory of seynt Cristoffer, the iiij*te*. a masse of all Confessours, w*t* a speciall memory of seynt Nicholas, and the v*te*. a masse of all Virgyns, w*t* a speciall memory of seynt Dorothe; to the either of which preests I bequeth, and everyche of them, vi*d*. w*t* condicion that at the tyme of the Lavatory everyche of theym turne theym to the people, and exorte theym to pray for ȳ soules following, & all x*pen* soules, the soules

Third, when the subsidy of the ninth and fifteenth was granted to the king, Radulphus *de Halsted* is one of the persons taxed. (Inq. Nonarum, p. 315, fol. Lond. 1807.)

On September 15, 1810, the writer of this Preface made a visit to Theydon, in the hope of finding at least some faint memorial of the family. No field, or plot of ground, however, in the parish, bears, at present, any similar appellation to Halsted; nor could he find the marks of any ancient residence. No mention of any of the family occurs in the register: and though in a chest in the vestry he turned over several hundred deeds, letters, rent-rolls, &c. of the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries, evidently muniments from the archives of the ancient lords of Theydon Gernon, not one contained a single reference even to the name.

of

of Robert Fabyan and of his children, the soule of Iohn and Agnes his parents, the soules of Nicholas Sharp, Cristoffer Sharp, Amy, Mary, and Robert Sharp, Edmond and Cristoffer Sharp the younger, the soules of John Pake the yonger, and Iohane his wif, Iohn Wodchurch, & Elizabeth his wif, dame Iane Lisle, maister Peter Huse, Robert Tate, Iohn Fabyan my brother, Thomas Gotton, Iohn Benet, and at xpm soules: and that doon, to saye for the said soules "De profundis," w̄ the other prayers. Also I bequeth unto the brotherhod of seynt Cristoffer of Yorke. xl^d. w̄ condicion that the receyvo^r. of the said. iijs. iiii*d.* make fast promyse and cause suerly to be doon, that all the preests whiche be reteyned of the saide fraternytie may oon tyme in their masse after the first receipt of the saide. xl^d. rememb^r. and pray for my soule by name. Also I bequeath unto the brotherhode of seynt Cristoffer, holden w̄in the parisshe churche of seynt Mighell, in Cornhill. xij*d.* and to the fraternytie of our Lady and seynt Anne, w̄in the said church. xij*d.* requyring the masters of the fraternytie of our Lady and seynt Anne, to desyre their preest, oonys in his masse, to remember my soule, and all the soules before written. Also I bequeth unto as many Godchildern as I have lyving in the countie of Essex, and specially in the parisshes to my mansion adioynant, to every of them. viii*d.* willyng theym that be lernyd to saye, at thre sundry tymes, "De profundis," w̄ the other prayers; and such as bee unlernyd to say oon tyme our Lady psawter, remembring my soule and all Cristen soules. Also I will, that if I decesse at my tenemente of Halstedis, that myn executrice doo purvay ayenst my burying competent brede, ale, and chese, for all comers to the parisshe churche, and ayenst the moneths mynde I will be ordeyned, at the said churche, competent brede, ale, pieces of beffe and moton, and rost rybbys of beffe, and shalbe thought nedefull by the discrecion of myn executrice, for all comers to the said obsequy, over and above brede, ale, and chese, for the comers unto the Dirige over nyght. And furthermore I will that my said executrice doo purvay ayenst the said moneths mynde. xxiiij. peces of beffe and moton, and. xxiiij. treen platers, and. xxiiij. treen sponys; the whiche peces of fleshe with the said platers and spoonys, w̄. xxiiij*d.* of siluer, I will be geven unto. xxiiij. poore persones of the said parisshe of Theydon Garnon, if w̄in that parisshe so many may be founde: for lake whereof, I will the. xxiiij. peces of flesh and. ijs. in money, w̄ the foresaid platers and sponys be geven unto suche poore persones as may be found in the parisshes of Theydon at Mount, and Theydon Boys, after the discrecion of myn executors; and if my said monethes mynde fall in Lent, or upon a fysshe day, than I will that the said. xxiiij. peces of fleshe be altered unto saltfyche or stokfyshe, unwatered and unsodeyn, and that every pece of beef or moton, saltfyshe or stokfysh, be well in value of a peny or a peny at the leest; and that noo dyner be purveyed for at hom but for my household and kynnysfolks: and I will that my knyll be rongyn at my monethes mynde after the guyse of London. Also I will that myn executrice doo assemble upon the said day of moneths mynde. xij. of the porest menys childern of the foresaid parisshe, and after the masse is ended and other obseruances, the said childern to be ordered aboute my grave, and there knelyng, to say for my soule and all Cristen soules, "De profundis," as many of theym as can, and the residue to say a pater noster, and an ave oonly; to the which. xii. childern I will be

geven.

geven. xiij*d*. that is to meane, to that childe that begynneth "De profundis" and saith the preces. ij*d*. and to euery be of the other. i*d*. Also if it happen me to dye at London, then I will that suche. iiij. of my feliship as here me to churche, have my ryngs of gold, wherynys geven "Memento," and the other too which goo upon the side of the bere to have. vij*d*. a piece of theym, so that either of the. vi. persones saye (oon?) tyme "De profundis" for my soule and all Cristen soules. And to such. ij. of my brethern as laye my body into the pytt I will be geven. vij*d*. that is to every of theym. iiij*d*. And I will that my knylle be rong att the tyme of my burying, and that noo cost be doon upon noo monethes mynde, except a secret Dirige kept by note and masse of Requiem, upon the morn by note, and. vi. preests to syng. vi. masses, as above is rehersed, doyng as above is said. Also I will, that if I decesse in London, that myn executors doo then purvey. xvi. torches newe, and. iiij. tapirs weying euery taper. vi*lb*. the which I will be holden by. iiij. poor men, and not to be sett upon candilstykks, and not to be occupied nother torches nor tapirs but at my burying tyme oonly, and upon the morn at the masse, and nott at the moneths mynde; and also that at the moneths mynde be kept nother drynking nor dyner, but at the pleasure of myn executrice. Also I bequeth to the high aulter of seynt Benet Fynk in London, for consideracon me moeving. xii*d*. And I will that after my funerall and monethes mynde ended, as above ys said, be it in London or in Essex, that. xii. of the foresaid torches be bestowed as after foloweth, that is to say, first. ii. of theym be geven unto the parisshe church of Theydon Garnon, and oon unto the parish church of Theydon Mount, and unto the parisshe churche of Theydon Boys, and oon unto the parish churche of Lamborn, and. vii. other I will be devided as followeth, that is to meane. ij. of theym to be given unto the parisshe church of seynt Benett Fynke in London, and oon of theym unto the parisshe churche of Stanford Ryvers in Essex; and also more I will that twoo of theym be geven to seynt Mighell parisshe in Cornhill, and oon to the parisshe churche of seynt Barthilmews the Litell, and the. vii^th. unto the parisshe churche of seynt Cristofer, all. iii. parisshes beyng in London. And if any leve by the reason that I be buryed in London, I will that the tapers, and also the said torches be at the disposicion of myn executrice. And ouer that I will that myn executrice, at the tyme of the delinerey of the foresaid torches, geve unto eueryche curat or curatts deputie of the forenamed. ix. parisshes. iiij*d*. to thende that my soule, and the soules above written, may be remembred in their parisshe bede rolle by the whole space of a yere after. Also I bequeath unto the. ij. pryson housis of Ludgate and Newgate. xs. that is to saye, to every of theym. vs. to be given to the prisoners most nedy, in brede, that is to meane, to that oon of those prysons euery weke, by the space of. xx. weeks, vi*d*. begynnyng at Ludgate the first weke, and the secunde week at Newgate; and that weeke that Ludgate is served, that other to be spared: and in likewise when Newgate is served, Ludgate to be spared, so that the said almes may be contynewed to bothe prysonys by. xx. weks as above is said: and the said. vi*d*. in brede be given wekely to oon of the said pryson houses upon that day in the weke that it shall happen me to departe owte of this present lif, Sondaye oonly excepted. Also I will that after my funeralls fynysshed and endid, all my moevable goodes, as well stuff of household, plate, and

other

other what soo it be, except my wiffs apperell, ẇ ryngs, beds, girdills, and all other necessaries what soo to her belongith, ẇ also such stuff of household and quyke cattall as I have at my tenemente or mansion of Halstedis in Essex, be praysed and ingrossed in a summe, whiche said stuff of household, plate, and other what soo it be in London, and also my stuff of household and quyke catall beyng off myn at my foresaid tenemente of Halstedis, soo beyng praysid, engrossid, and sussyd, shall be devided in three even porcions or parts; whereof the first part I will be reserved to the payment of my detts, and of other charges, as my funeralls, and legacies in this my present Will before and after expressed: all whiche detts and other charges beyng clerely discharged, I will that the surplusage that of this my part clerly remayneth, be saffly and suerly kept by the discrecion of myn executrice, to the use and behoff of Mary my doughter, towards the same of xlvi. whiche to hir I bequethe as to her mariage by this my present testament; and the other. ij. parts of my moveable, before expressed, except before excepted, I will shalbe devided, soo that to Elizabeth my wife I will the oon moytie be geven, and that other moytie I geve and bequeth unto my. iiij. sones, that is to saye, Iohn, Robert, Thomas, and Antony, soo that eueryche of theym have lyke porcion, and noon of theym have more than another; the whiche porcions I will be deliuered to eueryche of theym by myn executrice, at such season as eueryche of theym comyth unto his lawful age. And if it happen any of the said. iiij. sonys to dye, whiche God forbide, or they come unto their lawful ages, I will that then all such porcion or porcions as shulde come to hym or theym soo dying, remayn unto the other on lyving, evynly amongs theym to be devided: provided alway, that if the said. ij. parts be in any maner of stuff or catall or any part of theym, and not brought into money, that then my said wif to have the choyse off whiche half she best lyketh, and my said. iiij. childern to holde theym contented ẇ all suche half as she refusith. Also I will that my chalice, ẇ my. ij. crewetts and pax of siluer, before the praysement or division made of my foresaid moveables, ẇ my best aulter clothis, and best vestment, chyssibyll, awbe, & all other to the saide vestment belongyng, ẇ my great masse-booke, and also the great prymar, whiche before daies I gave to my wif, remayn styll to her, in augmentyng of hir porcion. Also I bequeth unto Iohane Haryat my doughter, a ryng of gold sett ẇ a ruby. And I bequeth to Iohn myn eldest sone, my signet of gold, the bigger of the twoo; and that other signet of gold, ẇ my puncheon of ivory and silver, I geve and bequeath unto Robert my secunde sone; and to Thomas I geve and bequeth my bagg ryngs of silver; and to Antony, my Spaynyshe bagg garnysshed ẇ silver; and to Mary my doughter, I bequeth a ryng of gold, sett ẇ a turques, a dyamaunt, and a ruby. Item unto my cousyn Dorothe I bequeth of money, ẇ that she byde ẇ her after my decesse. Also I will, that by the terme of. ix. years after my decesse be kept an obite ẇin the parisshe churche of seynt Benet Fynk, of London forsaid; at the which I will be yerely present. vi. preests, to thende that oon of theym may syng a masse of Requiem by note, and the other fyve to syng. v. masses as before been specified, and to say "De profundis" at the tyme of the lavatory, for the soules above written; to eueryche of which. vi. preests I will be geven, soo they be present at the Dirige over nyght, vd. Also I will

wil that the clerk of the said churche have for his service in the quere and ringyng at the said obite, soo that oon pele over nyght be roug w all the bellys, and oon pele upon the mornyng in likewise, xiid.: and to the sexton, if any then be, and such laye men as be present and syng in the quere at the said obite, I will be given to euerych of them ijd. and unto xij. children, not passing the eldest of theym xii. years, I will be geven xiiid. that is to meane, that the said. xii. children over nyght whan the Dirige ys ended, goo unto the place of my buryinge, and there knelyng, and in likewise upon the morn after masse and other obsequices be fynysshed, say "De profundis," for my soule and all Cristen soulee; for the whiche charitie soo by theym executed, I will that he whiche is assigned to begyn "De profundis," and saye the prayers, have. ijd. and to euery of the other I will be given. id.: and if soo happen that I be buried in [illegible], as above is said, then I will that the said xiijd. be distributed amongs the poore people of the abovesaid parisshe churche of seynt Benett, after the discreco of the churche wardeyns of the said parisshe, to whom I pray that they will of their charitees take upon theym yerely to see the orderyng of this obite. And for their diligence and labo'. aboute the same, I will that every of theym have yerely. xijd. Furthermore I will that the said churchwardeyns doo to be ordeyned in spice bred. vid. and in white bunys. xijd. and a kylderkyn of goode ale, w. viijd. chese, to refresshe all comers to that obite, and to have the saide brede and drynke, and chese, spent win the church, or in suche place as by the said wardyns discrecions shalbe thought more necessary. And I will that what remayneth of the said brede, ale, and chese, after the honest of the parisshe and comers to that drynking be servid, that it be dealed and geven unto the poor people of that parisshe, if any be, and ellys to suche as the said wardyns shall thinke it moost nedeful. And I will that yerely during the said. ix. yeris, if my body be there buried, that there be ordeyned. ij tapers of. ijlb. every tapir, and. ij. candilstykks of the waxchaundeler, and they to be sett at my grave, and to brenne the tyme of the hole obsequy: and if my body be ellys where buryed, that then the said. ij. candilstykks, and upon theym the. ij. tapirs, be sett in the churche at an hers, and there to brenne as above is said. For the whiche candilstykks and wast, and making of the said. ij. tapirs, I will the chaundeler have. viijd. For mayntenyng of whiche said obite, I will that my wif, or suche as holde my tenements win the saide parisshe of seynt Benett Fynke, yelde and paye unto the churchewardeyns for that tyme beyng, yerely, during the foresaid. ix. yeres, every yere. xiis. iiijd. for lake of payment whereof I geue vnto the saide Churchwardeyns for that tyme beyng, sufficient auctoritie to distreyn in any of the said tenements, hede place, and other, as often as the said. xiijs. iiijd. is unpaid, or any parcell thereof, during the full terme of the foresaid. ix. yeres, wylling and praying the said wardeyns that after the charges of this obite be fully contented and discharged, that all suche money as shall remayn, whiche I estyme to be every yere. xiid. or nere aboute, that they will geve the said surplusage, what so it be, unto som poore freer Augustine that will promyse to saye oonys "De profundis," and three masses for my soule, and the soules before written, w the psalmys of the passyon by eche tyme. And moreover I will that the soo son as the terme of these. ix. years be expirid, that incontinently at that. xii. monthis ende, another obite begyn to be holden win the parisshe church of Alhalowen,

Alhalowen, in Garmons towne forsaid, and there to be contynewed by the terme of. xii. yeris; where first I will be. iij. preests yerely at the said obite, whereof oon to be assigned to syng masse of Requiem, another masse of the v. Wounds, and the thirde to syng a masse of thassumpcion of o^{r} Lady, and at the tyme of the lavatory euerych of them to saye "De profundis," for my soule and the soules above written; to the which. iij. preests I will be geven to euerych of them. v*d*. And furthermore I will that there be ordeyned for the cõmers to the said obite, in brede. ij*s*. and in ale. iij*s*. xx. peces of beffe or motoñ, price. xx*d*. ij. chesis, price of both. xii*d*. And, I will and pray the churche wardeyns of that parisshe churche, from yere to yere then beyng, to ordeyn for the said vitaylls to the moste advauntage yerely as it cometh aboute, and for all other besynes concernyng the said obite: to the whiche wardeyns I bequeth yerely for their diligence aboute the premysses, to euerych of theym. xii*d*. And more, I will that the saide wardeyns doo purvey for xii. childern, not passyng the age of. xii. yeris; the which to be sett aboute my grave by. ij. tymes, as above is said, and to say "De profundis," for my soule & all x^{p}en soules, if I be buried w^{i}n that churche, and if I be buried ellys where, than I will that the saide childern be ordeyned standing aboute the hers, and there to saye their prayers: and if so many may not be had of that age that can say "De profundis," than I will that so many as lake may be suche as can say their pater noster: all whiche children I will that they be rewarded as in the other obite is devised. Also I bequeth unto the clerke of that churche for ryngyng, and other obseruances to be doon by hym in the tyme of the said obite. v*id*. and to the werks or profitts of the said churche for the wast of. ij*d*. of theyre sepulcre tapers to stand aboute my grave if I there be buried, or at the hers ellis where I be buried. ij*d*. For mayntenyng of which said obite, I will that my wif, or such as holde my londs called Pakis Tenement and Halsteds, w^{t} thappertenñces, by the said yeris, paye yerely during the terme of the foresaid. xii. yeris unto the church wardeyns forsaid, for that tyme beyng. xiij*s*. & iiij*d*. for lake of payment whereof, or of any part or parcell of the said. xiij*s*. iiij*d*. I gẽve full power over the said churchwardeyns for that tyme beyng, and to their successours then yerely folowyng, to distreyn w^{i}n any of the foresaid londs and tenemẽts, and their appurtenances, and the distres so taken to withold & kẽpe till the said annuytie, for the terme abovesaid and euerych parcell thereof be fully contented and paied. And furthermore, I pray and requyre the said wardeyns, that w^{t} suche money as shall remayn yerely over the charge paid and contented for the said obite, whiche I estymé to be. x*d*. or there aboute, that they w^{t} the said surplusage will bye. vi. treen platers, and. vi. treen sponys, and. vi. peces of beeff; the which platers, sponys, and peces of beffe I will be geven unto. vi. poore householders of the said parisshe, upon the Sonday next aftir the Sonday that my said obite shalbe kepid upon: for I will that my said obite be kepid yerly by all the forsaid terme of. xii. yeris, upon the Sonday next folowing the daye of my decesse. And if it happen the saide obite to fall in Lent, than I will that for the peces of beeff abovesaid, and for the chese, be ordeyned pyes of elys, or som other goode fysh mete, to the value of the. ij*s*. viij*d*. above expressed; and then also the. vi. peces of beeff, before geven to the. vi. poore house holders, be altered into goode fysshe, after the

the discrecion of the said churchwardeyns, and so deliuered as above is specified. And also I will that if I decesse win the citie of London, that win three yeres folowing myn executors doo make in the walle, nere unto my grave, a litell tumbe of freestone, upon the which I will be spent. liijs. iiijd. att the moost, and in the face of this tumbe I will be made iij too platis of laton. ij. figurys of a man and of a woman, v. x. men childern, and. vi. women childern, and over or above the said figurys I will be made a figure of the fader of heven enclosed in a sonne. And from the man figure I will be made a rolle toward the said figure of the fader, and in hit to be graven *O Pater in celis*; and from the figure of the woman another lyke rolle, whereyn to be graven *Nos tecum pascere celis:* and at the feete of the said figurys I will be graven thes. ix. verses folowing.

Preterit ista dies, oritur origo secundi,
An labor, an requies; sic transit gloria mundi.

Lyke as the day his cours doeth consume,
And the new morow spryngith agayn as fast,
So man and woman by naturys custume
This life doo passe, and last in erth ar cast
In ioye and sorowe whiche here their tyme dide wast.
Never in oon state, but in cōs transitory,*
Soo full off chaunge is of this worlde the glory.

And before upon the said tumbys border I will be written these words folowing, *Tumulus Roberti Fabyan, dudum pannarius ac aldermannus London, qui obijt Febr.* And if I be buried in the churche of Theydon Garnon forsaid, than I will that win a yere folowing myn executors doo purvey a stoon of marbill to laye upon my grave, aboute the borders whereof I will be fastyned a plate of laton, and win that plate graven thies words folowing, *Hic iacet Robertus Fabyan, dudum ciuis et pannarius London, ac vicecomes et aldermannus, qui obiit die, &c.* And in the upper part of that grave stone I will be sett a plate and thereyn graven a figur of our Lady with her child sittyng in a sterr, and under that. ij. figurys w the children before specified; and either of the said. ij. figures holding a rolle, wheryn upon the mannys part I will be graven *Stella Maria maris.* And upon the womannys rolle *Succurre pijssima nobis.* And in. iiij. convenyent places of the said grave stone I will be sett. iiij. platts graven with. iiij. skochens of armys folowing, that is to say, at the hede the armes of the citie of London, & the Drapers armes, and at the fett myn owne armes, and my merchaunt marke; and I will that this stone be of suche quantitie that it excede not the price, w all costs of plats and graving, over the sum . Also I will, that if it fortune me to be buried owte of London, that suche iiij. ryngs of gold, as before I bequeathed unto. iiij. of my brethern drapers whiche

[* course ?]

shulde

shulde bere my corps unto the churche; that they be then geven unto theis. iiij. of my brethern drapers whos names be folowing, that is to saye, to William Gam the first, the secunde to William Dixon, the thirde to Edmound Tryndill, and the. iiij. unto whiche said my brethern I requyre and pray that of their charities they will oonys, at tyme convenyent, say for my soule and all Cristen soules, *Placebo* and *Dirige*, w the, ix. lessons and other prayers to the same apparteignyng.

Terrarum Distributio.

Also I will and bequeth unto Elizabeth, my greate tenemente w all thappertenances and gardyn therunto belonging, w all myn other tenements, as well chatell as free and fee symple lands whiche I have win the parisshe of Seynt Benet Fynk, win the warde of Bradstrete of London; w also my tenemente w thappertenances standing in the parisshe of Seynt Mighell, in the warde of Cornhill of London forsaid, the whiche Iohn Lamplew draper now dwellith yn and occupieth; to have and to holde all the foresaid greate tenemente, w gardyn, and all other thappertenancs, as is above said, standing in the parisshe of Seynt Benet Fynke forsaid; w also the aforesaid tenement standing in the parisshe of Seynt Mighell forsaid, unto the said Elizabeth my wif, terme of hir life, upon condicion that she lyve soole and woute an husband, she bering all the charges and quyterents whatsoever they be goyng owte of the same. And also yerely, over and above the forenamed charges and quyterents, to paye unto the churchwardeyns off Seynt Benet Fynke forenamed, by all the terme of. ix. yeres., xiij*s.* iiij*d.* for the mayntenance of myn obite before rehersed, and to repayre and sufficiently to uphold all the foresaid londs and tenements, for so long tyme as she doeth occupye the same. And after the decesse of Elizabeth my said wif, or win a yere aftir she is or shalbe maried, if she soo be disposed not to live aloon, I will that then all the foresaid lands, as my greate tenemente w the gardyn and all other the appertenances, w all the other my londs and tenements, as well free chatell and fee simple land, which I have win the parisshe of Seynt Benett Fynke forsaid, be solde by myn executors to the most advauntage, and of the money that shall come of that saide sale, I will that Mary my doughter have as moche as shall make up the hole sum of. xl*li.* before in this my present testament to her bequethen, to be to her deliuered at the tyme of the said sale, if she be then maried, and the residue, what so it be, comyng in money or money worth of the said londs sale, I will and bequeth it unto Robert my son, except. x*li.* I will and bequeath to Antony my youngest sone; and that then the forsaid xiij*s.* iiij*d.* sett out for myn obite be yeerly paid of my tenemente in Cornhill, for so many yeris as then shalbe to come of the. ix. yeris forsaid; and then also the said tenemente to remayn, aftir the decesse of Elizabeth my wif, unto Robert my sone forenamed, he than to bear the charge of the foresaide obite, till the full of the saide. ix. yeris be expired, to have and to holde the foresaid tenemente, w all thappertenancs, to the said Robert my son, and to his heyres and asignez for evermore: and if it happen the saide Robert my son to dye before he come unto his lawfull age, whiche God defende, I will that then the saide tenemente, w all thappur-

tenances, remayn to Antony his broder, and the money to the said Robert also before bequethed, the moytie thereof I will be geven unto the said Antony, and that other moytie unto Thomas his brother, if he then lyve, and ellys unto Iohn myn oldest son, to have and to hold the foresaid tenemente, with all thappurtenances, to the saide Antony my son, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore, they then to bere the yerely charge of. xiij*s*. iij*d*. for myn obite, if than any of the forsaid. x. yeres be for to come: and if the said Antony decesse or he come to his lawful, whiche God defende, I will that then the said tenement, w̄ all thappurtenances remayn to Thomas my son, to have and to holde the foresaid tenement, w̄ all thappurtenances unto the said Thomas, and to his heyres and assignes for euermore; and for lake of Thomas then lyving, I will that the saide tenemente, w̄ thappurtenances, remayn to Iohn myn eldest son, if he then lyve, to have and to holde the foresaid tenement, w̄ all thappurtenances unto the said Iohn, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore. Also I will and bequeth unto my said wif Elizabeth, all my lands and tenements standing, lying, and beyng w̄in the parisshes of Esth'm, Westh'm, Leyton, as well freehold as copy, Affebrigge otherwise Lamborne, Theydon Boys, Theydon Garnon, Theydon at Mount, and Stanford Ryvers, or ellys where w̄in the countie of Essex, w̄ all their appurtenances to the said lands and tenements belonging, to have and to holde all the foresaid lands and tenements, as well free as copy, w̄ their appurtenances, unto the saide Elizabeth my wif, for the terme of hir lif, she beryng all quyterents, and other charges to the said londs and tenements belonging; and ouer that yerely to pay unto the churchwardeyns of Teydon Garnon. xiij*s*. iij*d*. by the terme of. xii. yeres, for the mayntenyng of an obite w̄in the said churche, as before is more playnly expressed: and also that she repayre and sufficiently mayntayne all the said rents by all hir lives tyme, and so leve them well and sufficiently repayred. And also that she of hir modirly goodnesse and disposicion give yerely, durying her said lif, unto Iohn myn eldest sone and heyre. vi*li*. xiij*s*. iij*d*. towards his lyving, soo that he be kynd and loving, and obedient unto hir in all her nedys. And after the decesse of my said wif, I will that all my londs & tenements lying in the parisshes of Esth'm, Westh'm, Leyton, as well free as copy, Affebrigge otherwise Lambourn, Theydon Boys, Theydon Garnon, and Theydon at Mount, remayn unto Iohn myn eldest son, w̄ all their appurtenances in the said londs and tenements belonging, to have and to hold all the forsaid londs and tenements, w̄ all their appurtenances, as well copy as free holdis, unto the said Iohn, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore, therw̄ to doo and dispose after their owne propre willys, they beryng and paying yerely for the abovesaid terme of. xii. yeres, to the churchwardeyns of Theydon Garnon forsaid, for the maynteyning of myn obite forsaid, if then any of the said. xii. yeres be to come. xiij*s*. iij*d*. And for my lands and tenements whiche I have within the parissh of Stanford Ryvers, w̄ all their appurtenances, I will that aftir the decesse of my wif that they remayn holly unto Thomas my son, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore, to have and to holde all the saide londs and tenements, w̄ their appurtenances unto the saide Thomas, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore, so that he lyve tyll he come unto his lawful age of. xxi. yeres; and if the said Thomas decesse or he come to the age

abovesaid, which God forbide, I will that they the said londs and tenements, w̄ all their appurtenances, remayn to Antony my sone, to have and to holde all the saide londs and tenements, w̄ all their appurtenances unto the said Antony, and to his heyres and assignez for evermore, if he then lyve and be of lawfull age, as above is said; and if the said Antony dye, as God defende, or he come to the full age of. xxi. yeres, I will that than all the said lands and tenements, w̄ all their appurtenances be sold by my executors, and the money of theym comyng be devided evenly atwene my two sonys, that is to say, Iohn and Robert, if they then lyve; and for defawte of theym not then lyving, whiche God of his mercy forbide, I will that then the said money comyng of the sale of the saide londs and tenements w̄in Stanford, be devided atwene my. ij. doughters, that is to say, Iohan and Mary, soo ỳ Mary have. ij. parts of the said money, and Iohane the thirde part.

From several passages in his History it is evident that Fabyan was conversant in French, and no layman of the age he lived in is said to have been better skilled in the Latin language. With these accomplishments, with great opportunities, and with a taste for poetry, he endeavoured to reconcile the discordant testimonies of historians: adding the fruits of personal observation in the latter and more interesting portion of his Chronicle.

His poetry indeed, is not of a superior cast. Mr. Warton considered the "Complaint of king Edward the Second" to be the best of his metres: but observes that it is a translation from a Latin poem attributed to that monarch, but probably written by William of Wyrcestre. "Our author's transitions," he adds, "from prose to verse, in the course of a prolix narrative, seem to be made with "much ease, and when he begins to versify, the historian disappears only by "the addition of rhyme and stanza*."

The authorities which are cited in his Chronicle are numerous, and some of them but indistinctly named. Indeed he appears more than once to have quoted

* Hist. Eng. Poet. vol. ii. p. 191.

the

the same work by a different appellation. The greater part of these could only have been known to him in manuscript. Such as were in print at the close of the reign of Henry the seventh are noted in the margin. The principal are, Antonius or Antoninus, archbishop of Florence*; Alfredus†; Beda; Carinus‡; Caumptus§; the Chronicle of England; Caxton's Chronicle‖; Guido de Columna¶; Peter Desrey, "which made a recule or lytle boke of the wynnynge "and losynge of Ierusalem**;" the English Cronicle of England††; Eusebius‡‡; Eutropius; Paulus Diaconus §§; the Frensh Chronicle‖‖; Fasciculus Temporum¶¶; the Floure of Histories; Iohn Froyzarde; Gaguin***; Geffrey of Monmouth†††; Gildas; Giraldus Cambrensis; Henry of Huntingdon; Homer's

* Antonius was his proper name: that of *Antoninus* having been given to him on account of his diminutive stature. The editions of his "Summa Historialis," in Fabyan's time were, one, printed in folio at Venice 1480, and three at Nuremburg in 1484, 1491, and 1494.

† Alueredus Beverlacensis? ‡ See p. 56. § See p. 254.

‖ "The Cronicles of Englond," impr. by William Caxton, fol. Lond. 1480. See Dibdin's edit. of Herbert's Typogr. Antiq. vol. i. p. 85.

¶ Guido de Columna de Historia Trojana was printed by Theodore Rood, at Oxford, in the same year with Caxton's Chronicle. It was also printed in fol. Argent. 1486. There was another edition about this time without place or year: and a fourth, fol. Argent. 1489.

** "Les Faits & Gestes du preux Godefroy de Bouillon & de ses chevaleureux Freres Baudoin & Eustace, yssus & descendus de noble lignie du Chevalier au Cigne avec leur généalogie, traduit du Latin." fol. Par. 1499, 4to. 1500. Desrey also published "Les Grandes Chroniques de Charles VIII. depuis l'an 1484, jusqu'en 1496." fol. Par. 1510.

†† Here, it is probable, the Chronicle so commonly found in our manuscript Libraries, called the *Brute*, or *Brute of England*, is intended. It appears to have been composed in the time of Edward the Third; and is continued in many copies as low as King Henry the Sixth. The early part is a mere transcript from Geffrey of Monmouth: Wace's translation of whose history into the Romance tongue appears to be as well known by the appellation of *Le Brut*, in France.

‡‡ "Historia Ecclesiastica." *Lat.* Gouffredo Boussardo interprete. 4to. Par. 1492.

§§ Eusebius and Paulus Diaconus were printed together, at Rome, in folio. 1471.

‖‖ "Les Chroniques de France (appellee la Chronique de St. Denys,) compilés par l'ordre du Roy Charles VIII." 3 tom. fol. Par. 1476. See Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xv. p. 580. From a passage in p. 289, however, Fabyan appears to have seen this Chronicle in manuscript.

¶¶ The "Fasciculus Temporum," by Rolewinck, was first printed at Cologn in fol. 1474, again in 1481, and a third time at Basil in 1482.

*** "Compendium super Francorum Gestis, a Pharamundo usque ad annum 1491." 4to Par. 1497. Augmented editions of this work, with a continuation to 1499, were printed, fol. Par. 1500, 1504. 8vo. 1507. Robert Gaguin, the author, died in 1501. He was the intimate friend of Erasmus, who calls him a discreet historiographer, and compares him to Sallust and Livy for purity of speech and composition of his history. He was ambassador, successively, in Italy, Germany, and England.

††† "Britanniæ utriusque Regum & Principum Origo & Gesta insignia, ab Galfrido Monemutensi ex antiquis-

" Recuyll, or Boke made by him of the siege of Troy* ;" St. Jerom ; Hoveden ; " the Legende of the Seyntes radde yerely in the Churche† ;" Dan Iohn Lydgate ; Marianus Scotus ; William of Malmesbury‡ ; La Mere des Histoires § ; Matheolus Veronensis ; Petrus Pictaviensis ; " the Plegys or Rehersayllys of the " names of kynges of Spayne‖ ;" Trevisa's Translation of the Polycronicon ; Iacobus Philippus¶ ; Ranulphus Cestrensis** ; Hartmann Schedel†† ; the Chronicles of Rome ; the books of Turpin and Eginhardt ; Vincent de Beauvais‡‡ ; and " a whyte monk, author of the story of Edgar"§§.

Beside which he cites " a Chronicle registered within the monastery of St. Al-

" simis Britannici Sermonis monumentis in Latinum traducta ; et ab Ascensio cura & impendio magistri Ivonis " Cavellati in lucem edita. Prostant in ejusdem ædibus." 4to. (1508.)

* This was " The Recuyell of the Historyes of Troy," by Raoul le Fevre : the French edition of which is said to have been the first work printed by Caxton at Cologne. The English edition is supposed to have been printed soon after 1471, when Caxton finished the translation. Fabyan, who understood no Greek, ascribes it to Homer.

† And, in another place, Caxton's " Boke called the Legeaunt of Seyntes." This was, no doubt, " The Golden Legende," first printed by Caxton in 1483, a second time, according to Ames, without date ; and a third time in 1493.

‡ Whom he likewise quotes under two other denominations, " Willielmus de Pontificibus," and " Willielmus de Regibus." See also Stow's Summarie of English Chronicles, edit. 8vo. 1570. In the " Catalogus MSS. Angl. 7430. Mus. Ashm." a Chronicle, undoubtedly that which goes by the name of *Brute of England* is described as a work " supposed to be written by *Wilhelmus de Regibus.*" Fabyan, in another part of his Chronicles calls him " Wyllyam, writer of the Histories of Kynges."

§ La Mer des Histoires, 2 vol. fol. Par. 1488, occurs in the Catalogue of Lord Oxford's printed library, vol. iii. p. 178. 8vo. There was another edition printed in folio, at Lyons, in 1506 : and a third edition, about the same time, without date.

‖ This is a work which, if in print, has as yet eluded enquiry.

¶ His " Supplementum Chronicarum," was printed in fol. at Venice in 1483, 1486, 1490, and 1492 : again, Brix. 1485. These earlier editions bring the history down to 1480. The Venice edition in fol. of 1503, ends with the year 1502. See Fabric. Bibl. med. & inf. Latinit. edit. 1754. tom. i. p. 403.

** This, of course, was Higden. In another place Fabyan speaks of " the Monke of Chester," by whom he probably meant Roger of Chester, a Benedictine Monk of the abbey of St. Werburgh, whose " Polycraticon" had a new title, and a few alterations made in it by Higden. The Polycraticon, or Polycratica Temporum, came down to 1314. MS. Cott. Jul. E. viii. See Tanner Bibl. Brit. p. 640. Another manuscript in the library of Benet College, Cambridge. A. vi. comes down to 1338.

†† " Chronicon Nurembergense," fol. Nuremb. 1493.

‡‡ This French Translation of Vincent's " Speculum Historiale," appears to have been that used by Fabyan. It was printed at Paris by Verard, in 1495-6, in five folio volumes of the largest size. A magnificent copy, printed on vellum, superbly illuminated, is among the books in the library of the British Museum, which formerly belonged to King Henry the Seventh.

§§ See p. 199.

ban ;"

ban;" an old book sometime in the Guildhall of London named "Domysdaye*;" "the Registre of Gregory," at Canterbury; "the translation that holy Gildas made of Molmutius' Laws out of British speech into Latin†;" an old Register within the Church of St. Paul; and the Registers in the archives of the City of London.

Fabyan, like the old chroniclers in general, for fear of neglecting some important facts, went beyond the age of historical certainty in his details. He divides his Chronicles into seven portions, giving a copy of verses as an epilogue to each, under the title of the Seven Joys of the Blessed Virgin. The six first portions bring his history from the landing of Brute to the Norman Conquest. The seventh extends from the Conquest to the conclusion.

That he was a little tinged with superstition must be allowed: but he was no great favourer of the Monastic Institution‡. His observations on some of the miracles related in his history are too pointed to be mistaken. On the preservation of the holy oil at Rheims from the time of St. Remigius, he remarks, "to this report "every man may give credence as hym lyketh. For I fande not this wryten in "the Gospell, nor yet in no booke of Holy Scripture§." He makes a similar observation on the supposed vision of Richard, the third Duke of Normandy, adding that "Antonius archbishop of Florence, whan he reherseth any like nar- "racions which he thinketh somewhat doutefull, he ioyneth thyse wordes, and "sayth *pium est credere.*‖" In another place he says, at once, "which is for "folys to believe¶." Nor is he backward in pointing out the partiality of Ro-

* "Which he had seen or known." See p. 202. In the first folio of the second volume p. 293. he speaks of it as "in Saxon tongue then used: but in later days, when the said laws and customs altered and changed, and for "consideration also that the said book was of small hand, and sore defaced, it was the less set by, so that it was embezzled or lost." Fabyan says the names of the Portgreves of London before the time of Richard the First were entered in it.

† Bishop Tanner has the following remark on this translation in his Bibliotheca Britannico-Hibernica, p. 321. "At si extaret liber, quem Gallofridus primo cap. secundi libri Britannicæ Historiæ adfirmat Gildam de Victoria Aurelii Ambrosii scripsisse; aut si rursus *Leges Molmutianæ*, quas idem 18 cap. primi libri Historiæ Britannicæ asserit Gildam Latinitate donavisse, usquam comparerent; forsitan meliuscule de illo quantum ad antiquitatis pertinet cognitionem; sentirem." Such a translation, he adds, in a note, is also mentioned by Castorius. "Ita J. Castor. in Chronico MS."

‡ See p. 305. § p. 72. ‖ p. 209. ¶ p. 91.

bert

bert Gaguin, (the author whom he principally follows in the French History,) to his native country*.

A manuscript of the Second Volume of Fabyan's Chronicles, from which some valuable collations have been obtained for the present edition, is preserved in the library which formerly belonged to sir Robert Cotton, now in the British Museum†. It wants, unfortunately, several leaves toward the close: but having the *Envoy* which appears in the edition of 1533, is concluded originally to have been continued lower than the first printed copy.

Stowe, in the Collections which he made for his Survey, speaks of a Continuation by Fabyan himself, as low as the third year of Henry the Eighth; "which Boke (he adds) I have in writen hand‡." It is not improbable that it might have gone from Stowe's Collection to Sir Robert Cotton's.

There is another Manuscript existing, in a private Library in Warwickshire.

The edition of 1516, which forms the text of the present Work as far as P. 678, appears to have been edited by Pynson himself: who changed a Latin Table of Contents, at the beginning, to an English one. This, in the present Edition, has been superseded by an Index at the end. Instead of a Title it gives the Arms of Henry the Eighth crowned, sustained from below by a Dragon and a Greyhound. Above the Crown is a Rose supported by Angels with Scrolls. That on the left bears these words, *Hec rosa Virtutis de Celo missa sereno.* That on the right, *Eternum florens regia sceptra feret.* The same device is repeated on the other side of the leaf, and again at the beginning of the Second Volume. The Work, throughout, is adorned with Prints, but of so rude a kind, as, no doubt, to have been used with equal propriety in other publications§. Brute is habited in plated armour of the fifteenth century: and two wooden

* See pp. 288, 415, 611. † MS. Cotton. C. xi. ‡ MS. Harl. 538.

§ The Print which Mr. Herbert thought might be a Portrait of the author appears also in the "Kalender of Shepardes:" and seems to have been copied from a wood cut, of earlier date, in "La Mer des Histoires," fol. Lyon. 1506.

blocks, one looking to the right, the other to the left, appear to have produced all the portraits of all the kings both of England and of France.

The great rarity of this first Edition is in part accounted for by Bale, who in the second impression of his Work "De Scriptoribus," fol. Bas. 1557, subjoins the following Anecdote to the account of Fabyan he had before published. "Ejus Cronicorum exemplaria nonnulla Cardinalis Wolsius in suo furore com-"buri fecit: quod cleri proventus pingues plus satis detexerit." The obnoxious part of the Chronicles here mentioned must have been the Abstract of the Bill projected by the House of Commons in the eleventh year of Henry the Fourth, for depriving the Ecclesiastics of their temporal possessions. Bale's assertion, it must be owned, is unsupported by any other writer. Certain, however, it is, that the second Edition did not appear till after the Cardinal's death.

"Fabyan's Cronycle newly prynted, wyth the Cronycle, Actes, and Dedes "done in the tyme of the reygne of the moste excellent prynce Kynge Henry "the VII. father vnto our most drad souerayne lord kynge Henry the "VIII. To whome be all honour, reuerēce, and ioyfull contynaunce of "his prosperous reygne, to the pleasure of God and weale of his realme. "Prentyd at London by Wyllyam Rastell, 1533. Cum Privilegio."

In this Edition Pynson's text was principally followed, though with occasional variations; and one year, the twenty-fourth of Henry the Sixth, was entirely omitted, as well as the singular passage which asserts Edmund Crouchback to have been the eldest son of King Henry the Third. The following is the Title prefixed to the second Volume.

"The Seconde Volume of Fabyan's Cronycle, conteynyng the Cronycles of "Englande and of Fraunce, from the begynnyng of the reygne of king Rychard "the fyrste, vntyll the begynnyng of the reyne of our most redoubted souerayne "lord kynge Henry the VIII. Prentyd at London by Wyllyam Rastell, 1533. "Cum Privilegio."

In 1542 appeared the third Edition, with this Title,

" The Chronicle of Fabyan, whiche he hymselfe nameth ŷ Concordaunce " of Hystoryes, nowe newly printed, & in many places corrected, as to ŷ " dylygent reader it may apere. 1542. Cum Privilegio ad imprimendum solum. " Printed by Iohn Reynes, dwellynge at ŷ Sygne of ŷ Saynte George in Paul's " Churche Yarde."

The Title prefixed to the Second Volume was

" The Secõde Volume of Fabyan's Cronycle, conteynynge ŷ Cronycles " of England & of Fraunce, from ŷ begynnynge of ŷ reygne of kynge " Richarde ŷ fyrste, vntyll ŷ xxxii. yere of ŷ reygne of oure moste redoubted " soueraygne lorde kyng Henry ŷ VIII."

The alterations and omissions in this and the subsequent Edition of 1559 are more numerous than the generality of readers may probably suspect. Within a year after the publication of the last Edition, in 1533, the papal authority in England had been abolished: and the very name of pope not only erased from the Service Books, but forbidden to be used. The changes of the times gave but little hope of security to any printer, even of an old work, if it contained facts or doctrines incompatible with the views of reformation.

Among the more conspicuous of the omissions are "the Seven Ioys of the "blessed Virgin," with the Verses commending the persecution of one Badby a Lollard; innumerable Miracles, particularly where they were taken from the "Legend of Saints," or attributed to popes; the *Envoy* at the close of the first Volume; the whole of the twenty eighth year of Henry the Third; all such passages as tended to encourage houses of religion, penance, pilgrimage, or the preservation of relics; and whatever related to offences done to the

* A few copies of this edition may be found with the name of William Bonham. But nothing was more usual, at that period, than for a work to be printed for several publishers, each of whom had his single name to his own copies.

Church of Rome, the shrines of Saints, the rejected sacraments, the burning of tapers, or the mass.

Nor must the omission of such passages be forgotten in which any king, whether of England or France, is described as an "Enemy to holy religious "places." Henry the Second is no longer called the "hammer of holy church:" nor have we any notice of the repentance of Hugh bishop of Chester, for having *expelled the monks* of Coventry, who "upon his death bed axed of God, that, for a due and convenient penance, he might redeem that offence by lying in the fire of purgatory from the day of his death to the general day of doom."

But the most remarkable of all the passages altered or omitted are those which relate to the struggle between Henry the Second and archbishop Becket. The latter is no longer mentioned as a "glorious martyr" and a "blessed saint," but as a "traiterous bishop." The greater part of his History is silently omitted, and the rest accommodated to the changes which had taken place in religion.

Among the more minute alterations the words "holy" and "blessed" are but rarely bestowed on saints or martyrs. In one place for "*martyred*" we have *murdered*; and in another "shewing that many *virtues* ben rehersed of the holy virgin Edyth," we have *verses*. The word "pope" is uniformly changed to *bishop of Rome*; and Notes are occasionally inserted* not only against the papal authority, but against "the readiness, wickedness, and ambition," with which it was exerted.

The Title to the fourth Edition of the Chronicles was as follows:

"The Chronicle of Fabian, whiche he nameth the Concordaunce of Histories, "newly perused. And continued from the beginnyng of king Henry the "Seuenth, to thende of queene Mary, 1559. Mense Aprilis. Imprinted at "London, by Iohn Kyngston"—

* See pp. 47, 48, 278.

and, at the back of it, was this Address, from

" THE PRINTER TO THE READER.

" Because the last printe of Fabian's Chronicle, was in many places altered from the first copie, I have caused it to be conferred with the first print of all, and set it foorthe in all pointes accordyng to the aucthour's meanyng. Also all through the storie of the Britons, wherein he followeth Geffrey of Monmouth, I haue caused, his storie to be conferred with Geffries, and noted the chapiters in the margine, where out the matter is taken, and such thynges as he (I wote not for what cause) omitted, I have caused to be translated, and duely placed vnder the perusers name. The like haue I doen for the moste parte, all the boke through, notyng the places of soche aucthours as he allegeth. And bicause the controuersie and varieties, is greate emong writers, about the nomber of yeres, from Adams creation, to Christes incarnacion, therefore as master Fabian followeth, the Septuaginta, and sainct Bede, so have I in the margine added the accompt of Ihon Functius and other, all through the Storie, till the beginnyng of our Sauiour, to the ende you maie knowe the diuersities of theim, and lacke nothyng necessarie for the truthe. I have also continued the storie from Fabian's tyme, till the ende of our late soueraigne quene Maries, briefly touchyng the speciall matters, that have happened therein. And if I haue in any place mistaken ought, or one letter be shaped for an other, I beseche you, of your gentlenes to amende it. Thus I praie God farther you in all good studies."

The passages marked by square brackets in the side margin of the present Edition are the authorities alluded to in this Preface. In the lower margin of the first Volume, where the various reading has no reference attached, it may be considered as authorised by all the subsequent Editions: and, in the second Volume, by the Manuscript and subsequent Editions*.

* For the dates and facts of Fabyan's Life obtained from the Archives of the City of London, the Editor's thanks are due to Mr. Thomas Woodthorpe.

THE

FIRST VOLUME

FABYAN'S CHRONICLE.

PRIMA PARS CRONECARUM.

FOR that in the accomptynge of the yeres of the worlde, from the Creacion of Adam, vnto the incarnacion of Crist, been many and sundry oppynyons; as the Hebrews, which accompt for ȳ sayd terme. iii. M. ix. C. sixty and. iii. yeres; the seuenty Interpretours rekyn. v. M. C. lxxx. and. xix. yeres. Some there be that rekyn. v. M. C. lxxx. and. xix. yeres; and some v. M. CC. &. xxviij. yeres. In the thirde booke and first chapiter of Policronicon ben also shewyd dyuers oppynyons, wherof the grettest nombre and most certayne, is v. M. and CC. yeres: and in other places also some rekyn moo: and some haue lasse: by reason wherof the tymes ben dyuersly sette and accompted; as the first foundacion of Rome, the subuercion of that[1] famous Cytie of Troye, the first buyldyng of the Cytie of London, and dyuers other olde things. But for I se that the accompt of the. lxx. Interpretours is of holy Beda, and many other holy wryters, allowyd & folowed; therfore I, entendyng to shewe, in this rude werke folowynge, what yere of the world Brute entryd firste this Ile, than called Albion, and now Englonde, purpose tokepe the sayd accompte, wherof the particulers ensewe. That is to wyt firste from Adam to Noe flowyd[2] xxij. C. and xlii. yeres.

From Noe to Abraham flowid[3] ix. C. and xlii. yeres.

From Abraham to Dauid flowid[4] ix. C. and xl. yeres.

From Dauid to the Captyuyte of the Iewys passyd[5] iiii. C. lxxx. and v. yeres.[4]

And from the Captyuyte to the commynge of Criste v. C. lxxx. and x. yeres.

The whiche in all make v. M. C. lxxx. and xix. yeres.

After whiche accompte moste accordynge to the purpose of this werke, albeit that dyuers oppynyons therof ben laste[6] in wrytynge, and of dyuers Auctours: the famous Cytie of Troye was subuerted of the Grekys, as wytnessyth holy Eusebius and other, in the yere of the worlde iiij. M. and. xxiii.

Also folowynge the sayd accompt, as wytnessyth the foresayd Euseby and dyuers other, the Cytie of Rome was begōne to be buylded in the. xi.* yere of Ezechias than kyng of Iuda, the which yere maketh after ȳ sayd Auctours, ȳ yere of the worlde, iiii. M. CCCC. lxx. And ȳ sayd Auctours affermyn that the sayd Cytie of Rome was edyfied after ȳ subuercion of Troye, CCCC. and. xlvii. yeres. By whiche reason it muste folowe that it was buylded in the yere of the worlde as is abouesayd.

*[It was the first yere of Achas and before Ezechias. xvj. yere, after Eusebius. iiij. M. CCCC. xliij.]

Peter Pictauienc' and other testefyen that Brute entryd firste the Ile of Albyon, now called England, in the xviii. yere of ȳ preyst and Iugge of Isr[6] named Hely: and as affermyn[7] dyuers Auctours the sayd Hely began to rule the Israelitis the yere of ȳ thirde age; that is from Abraham to Dauid, DCCC. lxi.[8]; whiche makyth the yeres of the Worlde. iiii. M. & xlv. wherunto if there be joyned the abouesayd. xviii. yeres, than must it folowe that Brute shulde entre this lande in the yere of the world. iiii. M. lxiii.

[1] the. [2] was. edit. 1542, 1559. [3] was, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] iiii.hundred and v. yeares. edit. 1542, 1559.
[5] leste. [6] Israel. [7] affermyth. edit. 1533, 1542. [8] viii. C. xli. edit. 1542, 1559.

To this agreyth the Auctour of Policronicon, whiche sayth that Brute entryd Albyon. xl. yeres after ỹ Subuercion of Troye; which. xl. yeres, ioyned to ỹ former sayeng of Eusebius, makyth the sayde nombre of. iiii. M. and. lxiii. yeres. Also a wryter of Hystoryes called Iacobus Philippus affermyth that Troye was taken by ỹ Grekes in ỹ thirde yere that Abdon or Labdon iugged the Israelitis: whiche began his rule ouer the sayde Isrites, after accorde[1] of moste wryters, in the yere of the worlde iiii. thousande and. xx: Wherunto if there be ioyned thre yeres, for ỹ thirde yere of his rule, in which yere Troye as before is sayde was taken, and. xl. yeres that passyd or Brute percyd Albyon, it must folowe that Brute entred firste this Ile of Albyon as before is sayd, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. lxiii. Thanne by these foresayde reasons Brute toke possession of this Ile of Albyon, in the yere of the worlde as before is sayd, before the buyldynge of the Cytie of Rome, as by the foresayd reasons maye be also prouyd, CCCC. and. vii. yeres: and before the Incarnacion of our blessyd Sauyour, folowynge the same accompte, a thousande an hondreth. xxx. and. vi. yeres.

Thus endeth thaccomptynge of the yeres of the worlde from the Creacion of Adam vnto the incarnacion of Criste.

INCIPIT PROLOGUS[2].

Fol. ii.

WHan I aduertyse in my remembraunce,
The manyfolde storyes, in ordre duely sette,
Of kyngs & prynes that whylom had gouernaunce,
Of Rome and Italye, and other further fette,
As of Iewes and Grekes, the whiche haue no[1] lette,
But that men maye se in order ceryously,
Howe longe they[4] reygned, and howe successyuely.

Of Fraunce and other I myght lyke wyse reporte
To theyr great honour, as of them doth appere,
But to Englande, if I shall resorte,
Ryght mysty storyes, doughtfull and vnclere,
Of names of tymes, and of the duraunt yere
That kynges or prynces ruled that famous yle,
Almoste vncertayne howe I shulde guyde my style.

And for of cunnynge I am full destytute,
To brynge to frame so great a mysterye:
I nyll presume, without other refute,
To ioyne suche a werke or it to rectyfye,
To me it semyth so ferre sette a wrye
In tyme of yeres, to other discordaunt,
That to my dull wytte it is nat atteynaunt.

[1] the accorde. [2] The Prologue. [3] not, edit. 1559. [4] the, edit. 1559.

To

PROLOGUS.

To brynge in ordre a thynge of suche weyght,
And cause it to agre with other olde storyes,
But it to[1] remytte to theym that ben sleyght
And sharpe in lecture, and haue kept theyr studyes,
And sought the Bookes of many olde hystoryes,
And haue in Cronycles full experyence,
To frame suche a werke by theyr great prudence.

And I lyke the Prentyse that hewyth the rowgth[2] stone,
And bryngeth it to square, with harde strokes and many,
That the mayster after may it ouer gone,
And pryute therin his fygures and his story;
And so to werke it after his propornary,[3]
That it may appere to all that shall it se,
A thynge ryght parfyte and well in eche degre.

So haue I nowe sette out this rude werke,
As rough as the stone nat cōmen to the square,
That the lerned and the studyed clerke
May it ouer polysshe and clene do it pare;
Flowrysshe it with Eloquence, wherof it is bare,
And frame it in ordre that yet is out of ioynt,
That it with olde Auctours may gree in euery poynt.

Besechynge hym that wyll so take the payne,
Or any other that lyste on this loke[4];
Where any Errour in this by hym is sayne,
It to correct, and mende this rude boke,
For by hym that neuer yet any ordre toke,
Or gre of Scole, or sought for great cunnynge,
This werke is gaderyd, with small vnderstandynge.

Nat for any pompe, or[5] yet for great mede,
This werke I haue[6] taken on hande to compyle;
But of cause oonly for that I wolde sprede[7]
The famous honour of this Fertyle Ile,
That hath contynued, by many a longe whyle,
In excellent honour, with many a royall guyde,
Of whom the dedes haue spronge to the worlde wyde.

But of those dedes me lyste nat here to shewe,
For in the sequele they shall well appere,
And in short processe and in as wordes fewe
As I goodly may I shall lyke[8] in fere,
The storyes of Englande and Fraunce so dere,
That to the reder it may well be sayne,
What kynges togyder ruled these landes twayne.

[1] But to, edit. 1559. [2] rough. [3] proporcynary. [4] to loke. [5] nor. [6] haue I.
[7] But onely bycause that I wolde sprede. [8] lyuke.

And

And in the pryncipyll of the reygne of euery kynge,
As well of one and other, more and lesse,
What yere of the worlde he toke begynnynge[1]
To guyde his Realme, and ferther besynesse,
I wyll eke take to shewe and expresse
What terme of yeres euery prynce dyde reygne,
And in what honour he dyd his tyme maynteyne.

The tyme also, howe longe the Brytons ruled,
And howe by Saxons they were lastly[2] put oute,
Than of Danes, whiche both landes defoyled
By theyr outrage and of theyr fury stoute;
Of whom both nacyons stode longe in great doute,
Tyll Fraunce with theym allyed by maryage,
And Englande lastly voyded that lynage.

Nota. Than howe the Normannes, by Wyllyam Conquerour,
Entryde this lande, and helde the Sygnory,
A certayne of tyme, tyll the hygh gouernour
Restored the blode of Saxons Enderly[3]
And of the Scottes that neuer coude apply,
To kepe theyr Allegeaunce, but many a tyme rebelled,
And to be true were full often Compelled.

Fol. iii. The fatall warre that hath dured so longe,
Twene Fraunce & Englande, to both theyr damage,
And of the peas that hath ben vnderfonge,
Bothe by great othes, and Eke by maryage,
Of Walys Geryshnesse and of theyr lyght dotage,[4]
Howe they were scourged for theyr vnstedfastnesse,
With dyuers other whiche I shall after expresse.

And for that London, that auncyent Cytie,
Hath euer parseueryd in vertuous noblesse,
To the great honour, as may consyred[5] be,
Of all this lande in welth and great largesse,
Therfore I thynke somwhat to expresse,
Of theyr good ordre, and Cyuyle polycy,
That they so longe haue ruled theyr Cytie by.

And of theyr rulers, as they are yerely chosyn,
To rule the Cõmonte by theyr discrecion,
I shall you shewe; and to you disclosyn
The names of Mayres and Shyryffes of that towne;
And all suche actes as by Reuoluciowne
In theyr dayes fyll, so that there shall appere
The prynces Actes whiche chaunged[6] yere by yere.

[1] his begynnyng, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] lastly were. [3] enterly. [4] dotake, edit. 1559. [5] consydred. [6] chaunced, edit. 1559.

Of Fraunce also the Cronycle shall ensewe,
In his dewe ordre, so that ye may knowe,
Whan they began theyr prynces to renewe,
And from the seruage, whan they were kept lowe,
Of the Romaynes, whom they dyd ouerthrowe,
And of theyr names that they whylom dyd chaunge;
Of theyr firste Baptym[1] and of theyr names straunge.

Thus, in this boke, may you here or se[2]
Of bothe landes the Cronycles entyere,
With other matyers whiche Regystred be,
Of olde wryters, suche as wrote full clere;
Actes of Prynces done both ferre and nere,
And theym engrosed with great dylygence;
Wherby to theyr folowers myght grawe[3] experyence.

Into. vii. partes I haue this booke deuyded,
So that the Reader may chose where he wyll;
The firste conteyneth howe the Brytons guyded
This lande from Brute, Moliuncius vntyll:
And from Moliuncius, I haue sette for skyll,
To the nynthe yere of kynge Cassibelan,
The seconde parte: for that the Romaynes than

Conquered Brytayne and thens to Seuerne[4],
The thirde part I haue also assygned:
The fourth endyth than at Constantyne:
The fyft at Cadwaladyr I haue also diffyned:
At the Conquest I haue eke determyned
The. vi. part: and of the Seuynth or laste
At our redoubted prynce I haue the ende caste;

Henry the. vii[5], whom god preserue and saue,
And hym defende from all aduersyte.
Besechynge theym that wyll the laboure haue,
This boke to Rede, or any part to se,
That where defaute is it may corrected be,
Without disdayne, and that they wyll supporte
And ayde this werke with all theyr comforte.

And for this boke Includyth Storyes fele,
And towchyth thynges done in sondry place,
So that one tyme muste with an other dele,
To kepe the yeres, the tyme, and the space,
Therfore this name it shall nowe puchace[6],
(Concordaunce of Storyes) by me prouyded
The Auctour sans Nome fynally deuysed.

[1] Baptysme. [2] and se. [3] growe. [4] Seueryne. [5] Henry the. viii. edit. 1542, 1559
[6] Shall it nowe purchace, edit. 1542, 1559.

And for this werke may haue the better spede,
To prayer me thynketh, it is ryght necessarye
That I shuld falle, consyderynge my nede,
That I muste haue for lacke of due stodye,
Were thorough that connynge and parfyte memorye
Of thynges taken whan I was yonge and hynde
Ben ferre set of, and put from my mynde.

By this is Ignoraunce nowe cōmyn in place,
And Oblyuyon hath sette in his foot,
So that knowlege from me they done race,
Wherby in olde Auctours I myght fynde some boot
In latyn and Frenche, that in theyr dytees swoot
These olde wryters haue so compendiously
Sette the olde Storyes in ordre dylygently.

But in this prayer, I thynke nat' to be vsed,
As dyddyn these Poetis in theyr olde dayes,
Whiche made theyr prayers to goddes abused,
As Iupiter and Mars, that in theyr olde lawes
Were named Goddes, and fayned in theyr sawes
That they were Goddes of Batayll and rychesse,
And had in theym great vertue and prowesse.

Fol. ii8. For what may helpe these fayned goddes all,
As Saturne, or Mercury, or yet bryght Appollo,
Bachus, or Neptune, or Pluto the thrall,
Coelus[2] or Mynos[3], or blynde Cupido;
Or yet that goddesse the fayre Iuno,
Diana, or Pallas, or Ceres the fre,
Or yet the Musis that ben thryes thre.

Wherto shuld I calle vnto Caliope,
Moder of Orpheus, with swete Armony,
That of Eloquence hath the Soueraynte;
Or to Carmentis whiche by her firste study,
The Latyn letters fande out parfytly;
Syne all these were Mynystris of god in mortall,[4]
And had in theym no power dyuynall.

Wherfore, to the lorde that is Celestyall,
I wyll nowe crye, that of his Influence,
Of grace and mercy, he wyll a droppe let fall,
And sharpe my wytte with suche experyence,
That this may fynysshe with his Assystence,
With fauour of the virgyn his Moder moste excellent,
To whom I thus praye with mynde and hole entent.[5]

[1] nought. [2] Eolus. [3] Morynos, edit. 1533. 1542. evidently by mistake. [4] immortal.
[5] In the Editions of 1542 and 1559, the two last lines run thus,
"To the glorye of his name, which in heauen is
"Where the angels incessantly syng, *gloria in excelsis.*"
The prayer to the Virgin is of course omitted.

Assit principio sancta maria meo.

Moste blyssed Lady comforte to suche as calle
To the for helpe in eche necessyte,
And what thou aydest may in no wyse Apalle
But to the best is formyd in ylke degre:
Wherfore good Lady I praye it may please the,
At my begynnynge my penne so to lede,
That, by thyne ayde, this werke may haue good spede.

¶ FINIS.

PRIMA PARS CRONECARUM.

¶ Capitulum Primum.

SYNE[1] that I haue shewed vnto you what season & tyme of the yeres of the worlde, Brute entred firste this Ile of Albyon; Me semyth it is conuenyent that I also shewe how, & for what cause, it was first named Albyon. The whiche so toke firste name, as wytnessyth Strabo* and other wryters, of the[2] whyte Clyues or Rockes that stande vpon the sees syde, and are ferre seen in clere wether and bryght dayes, wherof it was of olde wryters named Albyon, as it were the whyte Lande, whiche sayinge affermyth also Ranulphe and dyuers other. * [Bartilmewe.]

So that it may certaynly be knowen that it toke nat that firste name of Albyne doughter of Dioclecian kynge of Sirie, as in the Englysshe Cronycle is affermyd. For in all olde Storyes or Cronycles is nat founde that any suche kynge of that name reygned ouer the Syriens or yet Assiryens, nor yet that any suche Storye that his. xxx. Doughters shulde slee theyr. xxx. Husbandes, as there is surmytted[3] was put in execucion[4]: whiche if any suche wonder had ben there wroughte, shuld nat haue ben vnremembred the wryters[5] and Auctours of that parties: considerynge that many lasse wonders are put in wrytynge by the sayde wryters. Wherfore it is more apparent that it toke that firste name of Albyon, as aboue is sayd, than of Albyne doughter of the sayd Dioclecian. And as to ỹ Geauntes that Brute founde in this Ile at his arryuayll, they myght be brought in to this Lande by some meane of Shyppes or otherwyse, rather than to be borne of those women as there also is imagyned. [See Hardyng of Danās doughters.]

Of this Ile the Auctours Alpherde and Beda tell many wonders, whiche in the firste Booke of Polycronicon are suffycyently towched, where it is sayde that this Ile is called an other worlde. For as sayth Solius[6] the edge of the Frenshe Clyffe shulde be the ende of the worlde, if this Ilande ne were nat. Othee many[7] thynges there ben[8] specifyed, the whiche I passe ouer. [Ranulphe in the firste Boke, from the 39 chapiter vnto the 60.]

This[9] is closyd on all sydes with the see, & stretcheth in length out of the Sowth into ỹ North, hauynge in the Sowthest syde Fraunce, in the Sowthe the Lande of Spayne, in the North the Countre of Norwaye, and in the West, the Countre of Irlāde. And hath in length from Totnesse to Catenessey, xv. myles beyonde Myhell Stowe[10] in Cornewayll, vpon viii.C. myles.

[1] Syns, edit. 1533. [2] *the* omitted in edit. 1542, 1559. [3] surmysed, edit. 1533. 1542. there surmysed, 1559. [4] writynge. [5] of the wryters, edit. 1533, 1542. [6] Solinus. [7] many other. [8] ben there. [9] Thys yle. [10] Mychell stowe.

And

And to rekyn the Brede from Seynt Dauyth[1] lande in Walys, called Menena[2], to Douer Clyffs, it conteyneth after moste wryters. CCC myles.

And if it be rekenyd from the sayd place in Walys, vnto Yarmouthe in Norff[1] nat so-moche; but lasse by. lx. myles after some wryters: and Beda sayth it conteyneth ouer. CC. myles.

And this Ile was firste, as aboue is sayd, named Albyon: and secundaryly Brytayne, after Brute: And thirdely Anglia of Anglis by Cōmaundement of Egbert kynge of Anglys, and of Westsaxons. Albeit that after some wryters it was called Anglia, after the name of the Quene of this lande named Anglia. Albeit ŷ therof is foūde lytell auctoryte.

This[3] was firste conquered by the Romayns, and so contynued vnto theym as trybutary, and vnder their rule, as after in ŷ ende of the Storye of Gracianus shall appere, ouer CCCC. yeres.

Secondely by the Saxons.

Thirdly by the Danys.

And Fourthly by the Normayns. And was deuyded first by Brute in thre parties, as in the Storye shall appere folowynge.

Fol. 9.

¶ HERE BEGYNNETH OF THE STORYE.

¶ Capitulum Secundum.

[Geffrie of Monmouth 1 booke, 2 chapter, &c.]

BRute, of the Auncyēt and Noble blode of Troyans[4], dyscendyd of Eneas a Troyan, and of ŷ doughter of Pryam kynge of the Troyans: whiche Eneas receyued of his sayd wyfe a sone, named Ascanius, ŷ which was kynge of the Countre of Italy next after his Fader Eneas; For so it was that after the foresayd Cytie of Troye was as before is sayd by the Grekes subuerted, Eneas whiche entendyd to haue sauyd from deth ŷ fayre Polixena, doughter of kynge Pryam, was, for that dede, by Agamemnon duke or chyef leder of the Grekes, exyled from Troy. The which accompanyed with a great Nombre of Troyans within. iii. yeres after his departynge from Troy, landed in the coūtre of Italye. And there after dyuers cōflictis and Bataylles had with Latynues[5], than kynge of Italye, he maryed, by the agrement of the sayd Latynues, his doughter named Lauyna, vpon ŷ whiche he gatte a sone & named hym Siluius postumus: Of the whiche after some wryters discendyd Brutus firste kynge of Albion. But for a more concordaunce of this werke, and conuenyency of yeres. As testyfyeth Policronica, Guydo de Columpna wryter of Storyes, & other, Ascanius the first sone of Eneas gotyn vpon his first wyfe had a sone named [Siluius, whiche after some wryters is named][6] Siluius Eneas. This Siluius Eneas was Fader to Brute. Of this is dyuers opynyons, wherof some are manyfestly shewed in the. xxvii[7]. Chaptre of the seconde Booke of Policronicon.

Then it foloweth in the Story, this Brute, beyng of ŷ age of. xv. yeres, slewe his fader in shotynge at a wylde beest. And as some Auctours haue, he slewe also his moder in tyme of

[1] Dauyds. [2] Meneuia, edit. 1559. [3] This ile. [4] The Troyans, edit. 1542, 1549. [5] Latinus.
[6] Omitted in edit. 1542, 1559. [7] xxviii. edit. 1542. xviii. edit. 1559.

his

his byrth. But for the laste dede, by agrement of al wryters, he was banysshed the Coūtre: And after, by fortune, landed with his company in a Prouynce of Grece, where at ỹ tyme reygned a kynge named Pandrasius[1], or after some wryters, Pandarus, ỹ whiche kynge, as after myth Geffrey of Monmouth, was lynyally descendyd of the blode of Achylles.

In this prouynce Brute foūde many Troyans, as Captyuys and thrall to the Grekes, with the whiche he conspyred & faughte with the Grekys sondry tymes: And lastly, for a fynall concorde, toke to wyfe the doughter of ỹ sayd Pandrasius named Iunegen[2]: After whiche maryage solempnysyd, the sayde Brute, by counsayll of the Troyans, with a certayne of Shyppes well vytaylled, departed out of Grece & sought his aduenture: whiche after many daūgers of the see passyd, he landed with his Company in a parte or Ile of Affrica, named as sayth Guydo & other, Loegesia[3], within which Ile at those dayes stode an old Temple dedycat in the honoure of Diua or Diana[4] a Goddesse of mysbyleued people. The which Temple, when Brute had apperceyued, anone he[5] yode into it, where knelynge befo the Aulter, with great deuocyon sayde these Versis folowynge.

Diua potens Nemorum: terror siluestribus apris.
Cui licet Aufractis[6] ire per etheros[7]
Infernasq; domos terrestria Iura reuolue[8]
Et dic quas terras nos habitare velis
Dic certam sedem qua te venerabor in euum
Qua tibi virgines[9] templa dicabo choreis[10].

The whiche versis are to be vnderstandyn in our Moder tunge as after is expowned.

Celestyall Goddesse, that woldest[11] fryth and wode,
The wylde bore & beests, thou feryst by thy myght:
Guyder of shypmen passynge the Ragyous flode,
The infernall howses, for and the erth of ryght
Beholde & serche, and shewe where I shall lyght.
Tell the cretayne[12] place where euerlastyngly
A temple of virgyns to the I shall edefye.

After whiche prayer and other[13] obseruaunces after the pagan Ryte, with great deuocion done and excercysed, aboute ỹ Awter of ỹ sayd Goddesse or Idolf[14] in those dayes vsed, Brute fyll in a slepe; in tyme of whiche slepe apperyd to hym the sayd Goddesse and sayd to hym in maner and forme as folowetb.

Brute sub occasu[15] solis trans gallica Regna
Insula in occano est vndiq; clausa Mari:
Insula in occano est habitata gigantibus olim,
Nunc deserta quidem[16], gentibus apta tuis.
Hic de prole tua reges nascentur, & ipsis
Totius terre subitor[17] orbis eris.[18]
Hanc pete namq; tibi sedes erit in illa[19] perhennis,
Hic fiet natis altera Troia tuis.

The whiche versis maye be Englysshed as hereafter folowetb.

Brute farre by West, ouer the lande of Fraunce,
An Ile in occean there is, all closed with the see;
This Ile ỽ Geaunts whylom inhabyt by chaūce,
Nowe beynge deserte as apte for thy people & the.

[1] Pandrasus. [2] Iguogen. [3] Lergesia. [4] Diua Diana, edit. 1559. [5] ye, edit. 1559. [6] aufractus, edit. 1533, 1542. aufractus, 1559. [7] æthereos, edit. 1533, 1559. ætheros, edit. 1542. [8] reuolve. [9] virgineis. [10] choris. [11] weldest. [12] certayne. [13] other *omitted.* [14] Idolle. [15] occasum. [16] quidam, edit. 1559. [17] subditus. [18] erit. [19] erit illa, 1559.

In this of thy body kynges borne shall be,
And of this Ile thou shalt lorde[1] and kynge.
Serche this, for here a perpetuell See to the,
And here to thy childer a new Troy shal sprynge.

¶ Capitulum. iii.

WHen Brute a woke & remēbred hym of this vision, anon he called to hym such as he moste trusted, & shewed to theym what he had seen & harde. Wherof they all beynge greatly reioysed, caused great fyres[2] to be made, in the whiche they caste wyne, mylke, & other Lycours, with dyuers Aromats[3] & spyces of moste swettest odour, as in the olde Pagan lawes & rytes were vsed.

[Geff. 1. 8.] Fol. vi.

Whiche obseruaūce with other done, ẇ great ioye & myrthe entryd[4] into theyr Shyppes & pulled vp theyr sayles & toke theyr course Westwarde. And so sayled by the space of. xxx. dayes passyng by many auentures & daungers as of Philenes, the Lake called Lacus Saliuarū[5] or salte lake or ẏ place where salt is made, the Ryuer called Malue,[6] & Hercules pyllers, & came lastly to ẏ see Tyron[7] or Turon, where he encountred ẇ a small Nauy of Shyppes of ẏ which a Troyan and neuewe to Brute called Corneus[8], was Capitayne; when eyther of them had saluted other, & reioysed of theyr metynge, they togyder made towarde lande, and landyd in the prouynce of Gallia now called Guyan, of whiche prouynce at that daye a Prynce named Copharius[9] was ruler: the whiche, hauyng knowlege of the landynge of these straūgers, with his power made toward them & to theym gaue Batayll, but the Troyans were victours & ouercame Copharius with all his knyghts.

In this batayll was slayn̄ a noble Troyan & neuewe to Brute named Turnus[10] & there buryed: wherfore in remembraunce of the sayde Turnus, Brute buylded there a cytie & named it Turon as some Auctours testyfye, but it shuld seme by the sayinge of Policronica that thylke Cytie Turon was buylded afore. Albeit that the Auctour of Cronica Cronicarum affermyth it to be buylded by Brute in remembraunce of his sayde Cosyn Turnus, whiche Cytie at this day is yet of great fame ẇin the Realme of Fraūce. This done the sayd Brute & Corneus[8] with their Troyans toke agayne Shyppynge, the whiche after. iii. dayes or fewe dayes saylynge, landyd at an Hauen or port in Cornewayll named at this day Totnesse, and from thens yode serchyng ẏ lande & coūter[11] ẏ yere as before is sayde. iiii. M. lxiii.

Before the buyldynge of Rome folowynge the foresayd Accompt. cccc. &. xx.

Before the Incarnacion of Criste. xi. C. and. xxxvi.

And before Alexandre ẏ great Conquered the worlde. viii. C. and. xi.

Also before any kyng Reygned ouer the Frenshemen, or that they were clere quyte of theyr Trowage[12] agayne the Romaynes. xv. C. lvi.

¶ Capitulum. iiii.

[Geff. 1. 9.] REtourne we thenne to Brute, whiche after his landynge in this Ile of Albyon, Circuyd & serched the lande ouer all, & founde it full fertyle & plenteuous of wode & of grasse, & garnysshed with many fayre Ryuers & stremes. And in his trauaylynge the lande he was encoūtred ẇ many great & myghty Geaunts, the whiche he distroyed, amonge ẏ which, as reherceth ẏ[13] Englysshe Cronycle, was one of passynge strengthe named Gogmagog; the whiche he causyd to wrestle ẇ Corneus or Coryn his Neuewe besyde Douer: In whiche wrestlynge ẏ[14] Geaūt brake a rybbe in ẏ syde of Corneus, where thorough Corneus beyng sore amoued, ẇ great strēgth supprysed[15] ẏ Geaūt, and cast hym downe the Rocke of Douer: by reason wherof, as affermyth the sayde Englysshe Cronycle, ẏ[16] place was named ẏ fall of Gogmagog.

[1] be lorde. [2] fares, edit. 1533, 1542, *improperly*. [3] dyuerse aromate. [4] they entryd. [5] Salinarum. [6] Malea. [7] Tyrrhen. [8] Corineus, edit. 1533, 1542. [9] Groffarius. [10] Turonus. [11] countre. [12] trewage. [13] the, edit. 1542. [14] that. [15] suppressed, edit. 1542, 1559. [16] the, edit. 1533, 1542.

But

But after that, the name was chaũged & called the fall of Douer; whiche to this day enduryth. For this dede & other Brute gaue vnto his sayd neuewe Corneus or Coryn the hole Countre of Cornewayll.

And whenue Brute had thus destroyed the Geaunts & serchyd the sayd Ile of Albyon thoroughly, he cõmyng by ỹ Ryuer of Thamys, for pleasur that he had in that Ryuer, with also the Cõmodities therunto adioynynge, beganne there to buylde a Cytie in the remembraunce of the Cytie of Troye lately subuerted; and named it Troynouant: whiche is as moche to saye as newe Troye, whiche name enduryd tylle the cõmynge of Lud after kynge of Brytayne vpon the tyme of a Thousande. lxviii. yere. But the sayde kynge cõmaundyd it to be called Luddys Towne, whiche by shortnesse of speche is nowe called London.

Thenne when Brute had thus buylded his Cytie and sawe that he was stablysshed in his Realme quyetly, he then by thaduyce of his lordes cõmaũdyd ỹ sayd Ile and Countre to be called Brytayne, & his people Brytons, and so contynued his reygne prosperously. In the whiche tyme he stablysshed & ordred his people to lyue in tylthyng[1] of theyr lande & otherwyse.

This Brute had receyued of his wyfe. iii. sõnes wherof ỹ firste was named Lotrinus or Lotryne[2], ỹ[3] seconde Cambrius or Chambre[4], and the thirde Albanactus or Albanakt. To the first & eldest he beset this Ile of Brytayne, the whiche after was named mydell Englande, whiche is to meane Troynouant with all the Countres there aboute lyinge, cõteynynge Eest, West, & South. And for this cause & for it shulde sounde towarde the name of the sayd Lotryne[5], This parte of Brytayne was longe after called Loegria or Logiers.

To the secõde sone Cambre, he beset or apoynted to hym the Countre of Walys, the which was first named after hym Cambria, this in the Eest syde was some tyme departyd from Englande by the ryuer of Seuerne: But nowe in ỹ North syde, the Ryuer named Dee at Chester departyth[6] Englande & Walys. And in ỹ South the Ryuer that is called Vaga at the Castell of Stryglynge[7] partyth Englãde & Walys. [That is Wye, and Chepstow castell.]

To ỹ thirde sone or[8] Albanakt he beset the Northe parte of this Ile & named it Albion, or more verely ỹ sayd Coũtre toke after ỹ name of ỹ said thirde sone and was called Albania. This Countre was after named Scotlande, and is deuyded from Loegria or Logiers[9] as sayth holy Bede by. ii. Armys of ỹ see, but they mete nat. ỹ Eest Arme of thyse two begynneth aboute. ii. myles from the Mynster of Eburcurynge, in the West syde of Penulton. The West Arme of those twayne hath in the ryght syde, or somtyme had, a stronge Cytie named Acliud, which in ỹ Brettishe tunge was called Clyntstone, & stãdeth vpon the Ryuer called Clynt. Thus whenne Brute had deuyded this Ile of Brytayne, as before is shewed, in thre partes, & had holden ỹ principate therof nobly by the terme of. xxiiii. yeres, after most cõcordaũce of wryters, he dyed; and was enteryd or buryed at Troynouant or London. Scotlande.

¶ Capitulum. v.

LOtrinus or Lotryne,[10] the firste or eldest sone of Brute, was made kynge of Brytayne of the Countre of Logiers, ỹ yere of ỹ worlde. iiii. M. lxxx. &. vii. the whiche helde to his part, as sayth Policronica, & also Guydo de Columpna, the coũtre ỹ stretchith from the South see vnto the Ryuer of Humbre, or[11] as before is expressyd. Whyle this Lotrinus thus reygned in Logiers, his brother Albanactus beyng ruler as before is sayd of Albania or Scotlãde, was warreyd by a Duke whome the Cronycle of Englãde nameth Humbre, the whiche slewe Albanakt in playne Batayll. [Geff. 1. 11.]

Ye shall vnderstande ỹ this Humber, at ỹ daye of his cõmynge into Albania, was nat

[1] tyllynge. [2] Locrinus or Locryne. [3] the. [4] Cambre. [5] Locryne, edit. 1533. [6] departed. [7] Strynglyng [8] or, *omitted*. [9] Logieris. [10] Locrinus or Locryne. [11] or, *omitted*.

named Hũbre; but after olde wryters he was called kynge of Hunys, or kynge of Sithia wout other addicõn. This kyng, as before is sayd, after he thus subduyd Albanactus, helde the lande of Albania tyll after ỹ Lotrinus ẅ his Brother Camber gatheryd a great power of men of Armys; & yode agayne the sayde kynge of Hunys, & by strengthe of theyr Brytons chasyd and subduyd ỹ sayd Hunys so sharply, that many of them with theyr kynge were drowned in a ryuer whiche departyth Englande and Scotlande. And for somoche as to the wryter of the storye of Brytons his name was declared to be Humber: Therfore the said Auctour affermyth ỹ the sayd Humber ỹ Ryuer toke ỹ firste name of hym whiche yet contynued[1] to this daye.

Fol. vii.

Furthermore testyfyeth ỹ sayd Auctour ỹ after this victorye thus opteyned by thyse. ii. foresayd bretherne, this Lotrinus[2] enamowryd hym selfe vpon a fayre wenche named Estrilde & doughter of the forenamed Humber, & her kept[3] vnlefully by a certayne of tyme; wherwith his wyfe named Gwentolena[4] beynge sore discontent, excyted her Fader and frẽdes to make warre vpon the sayd Lotryne[5] her husbande. In the which warre, lastly, he was slayne when he[6] reygned or ruled Loegria or Logiers, after the concordaunce of moste wryters, xx. yers: And was buryed by his Fader in the Cytie of Troynouant, leuynge after hym a yõnge sone, gotten vpon his wyfe, named Madan.

Humber ryuer.

¶ Capitulum. vi.

[Geff. 1. 13.] GWentolena[7] or Gwentoleyn̄, the wyfe of Lotrynus[8], & doughter of Corneus[9] duke of Cornewayle, forsomoche as Madan her Sone was yonge to gouerne the lande, was by cõmon assent of all Brytons[10] made ruler of the Ile of Brytayne, the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. C. and. vii. And so hauynge possession of the sayd Ile, wele and discretly she ruled it, to the comfort of her Subiectes, tyll the tyme her sone Madan came vnto his lawful age, at ỹ whiche season she gaue ouer ỹ rule and domynion to hym, after she had ruled, as before is sayd, this Ile. xv. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. vii.

[Geff. 1. 13.] MAdan the sone of Lotryne[11] and of Gwentolyne[12] before named, was made ruler of Brytayne in the yere of ỹ worlde. iiii.M.C. and. xxii. Of this is lytell or no memory made by any wryters, except ỹ some wryte of hym ỹ he vsed great Tyranny amonge his Brytons. Neuerthelesse, al or the more partie of wryters agreen, that he ruled this Ile of Brytayne by the terme of. xl. yeres, at the ende of whiche terme, he beynge at his disport or huntynge, was of wylde bestes or Woluys slayne or deuouryd; & laft[13] after hym. ii. sõnes, as sayth Policronica, named Mempricius[14] and Maulius[15].

¶ Capitulum. viii.

[Geff. 1. 19.] MEmpricius the eldest sone of Madan was made ruler of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.C.lxii. But he reygned nat longe in peas, for his yonger Brother Maulius, of a malicious & Couetyse mynde, entendyng to be kynge, & to expelle or subdue his Brother, excyted the Brytons in suche wyse to rebell agayne Mempricius, that great & deedly warre contynued longe amonge theym: How be it that[16] lastly by medyacions of frends a day of Cõmunycacion in louynge maner attwene these. ii. Bretherne was appoynted, at which[17] day of assemble Mẽpricius by Treason slewe his Brother Maulius, after whose deth he lyued in more tranquylyte & rest: Where thorugh he fyll into slowth & by meane of slowth into vnlefull lykynge & Lecherye, and by that vyce into haterode

Iniuria.

[1] contynueth. [2] Locrinus. [3] kept her, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] Guendolocna. [5] Locryne.
[6] he hadde reygned. [7] Guendolocena. [8] Locrinus. [9] Corineus. [10] the Brytons.
[11] Locryne. [12] Guendolyne, edit. 1533, 1542. [13] lefte. [14] Menpreeius. [15] Maulius.
[16] that *omitted*. [17] the which, edit. 1542, 1559.

of his Subgettes by takyng of theyr wyues & childer: And fynally became so vnhappy ỹ he forsoke his lefull wyfe & Concubynes, & fyll into ỹ synne of Sodomye; thus from one vyce he grewe into an other so that he became odyole to god and man: And, lastly, goynge on huntynge, & loste of his people, was distroyed of wylde besies when he had reygned. xx. yeres, leuynge after hym a goodly yonlynge[1] begotten of his lefull wyfe named Ebrank.

¶ Capitulum. ix.

EBrank the sone of Mempricius[2] was made ruler of this lande of Brytayne in the yere of ỹ worlde. iiii.M.C.lxxx. and. ii. and had, as testyfyeth Policronica, Gaufride, and other wryters, xxi. wyues, of the whiche he receyued. xx. sõnes and. xxx. doughters; wherof the fayrest was named Gwales, or after some Gualea. He sent these doughters to Albia[3] Silius whiche was the. xi. kynge of Italie or the. vii.[4] kynge of Latynes, to the ende to haue theym maryed to the blode of Troyans. This Ebranke was also a man of fayre stature & of great strength, and by his power and myght he enlarged his domynyon, insomoche that he wanne & occupyed a great parte of Germania by the ayde and helpe of the Latynes, and retourned thens with great pray and ryches; after whiche retourne he buylded ỹ Cytie of Caerbrank now called Yorke, whiche shuld be, as sayth ỹ Auctour named Flos Historiarum, or ỹ Floure of Hystories, wryten in frenshe, In the. xxiii. yere of ỹ reygne of the sayd Ebranke: whiche accompte to folowe, it shulde seme ỹ Troynouant, or London, was buylded before the sayde Cytie of Yorke aboute an hondreth and. xl. yeres; supposynge the Cytie of London to be begonne in the seconde yere of Brutes reygne. [Geff. 1. 13.] Nota. Yorke buylded.

Also he buylded in Albania or Scotlande, the Castell of Maydens, the whiche nowe is called Edynborgth: after whiche edyfyces endyd and made, he with a great Armye sayled into Gallia, nowe Fraũce, and subduyed the Gallis, and retourned with great triumphe and rychesse. And whan he had guyded this lande of Brytayne nobly by the terme of. lx. yeres, after moste concordaũce of wryters, he dyed: and was buryed at Caerbrank or Yorke, leuynge after hym for his heyre, his eldest sone, as saith Gaufride, named Brute greneshielde.

¶ Capitulum. x.

BRute Greneshielde, the sone of Ebranke, was made Gouernoure of this lande of Brytayne the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CC. &. xlii. Of this Brute is noo memorye made, touchynge any fame, excepte that Gaufride sayth that he ruled this lande of Brytayne (his Fader lyuynge) a certayne tyme, and after his Fader by the terme of. xii. yeres; the whiche yeres expiryd or endyd, he dyed, and lyeth buryed at Caerbrank or Yorke; leuynge after hym a sone named Leill. [Geff. 1. 14.]

¶ Capitulum. xi.

LEyllus or Leill,[5] ỹ sone of Brute Greneshielde, was made ruler of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CC. &. liiii. This was a Iuste man & louer of peas and equyte, and in his tyme made the Towne of Caerleill, or Carlele, and ruled this Lande well and honourably by the terme of. xxv. yeres, as testyfyeth the forenamed Gaufride, and after dyed, & was buryed at Caerlyll be foresayd. [Geff. 1. 14.] Carlyle.

But of this Leill[6] spekyth somedele ỹ abouenamed Auctour, Floure of Hystoryes, sayinge that in the ende of his reygne he fyll to slewth and vnlefull lykynge of his body, by meane wherof cyuyle stryfe began to growe within this Realme, the whiche was nat pacyfyed by some termes after his dayes; the whiche sayinge is nat denyed by ỹ foresayd

[1] yonglyng. edit. 1559. [2] Menprecius. [3] Alba, edit. 1559. [4] vj. edit. 1559. [5] Leyr. Auctour.

Auctour, Gaufride. This Leill lafte[1] after hym a sone named Lud, or after some wryters, he was named Lud Rudibras[2].

¶ Capitulum. xii.

[Geff. i. 14.] LUd or Lud Rudibras, ȳ sone of Leill, was made ruler of the lande of Brytayne in the yere of ȳ worlde. iiii.M.CC.lxxix. This also of Gaufride is called Rudhidibras, ȳ whiche after he was stablysshed in his reygne, appeasyd & drewe to accorde of the dyscorde & varyaunce that had sprongen in his Faders lyues tyme. The whiche dyscretely appeasyd & endyd, he buylded the Towne of Kaerkyn, now called Cāterbury; the towne also of Kaerguent[3], now called Wynton or Wynchester; and also a towne called Mount Paladour, now named Septon or Shaftisbury; in the tyme of buyldynge of whiche towne of Septon, as affermyth myne auctour Gaufride, an Egle there spake certayne wordes, the whiche he sayth he wyll nat declare or wryte for any certaynte. Thus when this sayd Lud had ruled this Lande nobly, by the terme of. xxxix. yeres, he dyed and lafte[4] after hym a sone named Bladud[5].

Fol. viii.
Caunterbury.
Wynchester and Shaftysbury.

¶ Capitulum. xiii.

[Geff. i. 14.] BLadud the sone of Lud Rudibras was made gouernour of Brytayne In the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CCC.xviii. This, as testefyeth Gaufride, Policronica, & other, was well & sufficiently instruct in the cōynges or seyences of Astronomy & Negromācy; by them he made the hote Bathes wīn the towne of Caerbadon, now named Bathe; the whiche towne or Cytie he also bulyded[6]. But to ȳ repugnyth Wyllyam de Malmesbury, sayeng that the foresaid hote Bathes were made by the Industry or made of Industry[7] of Iulius Cesar, firste Emperour of Rome. This Bladud, as affermyth ȳ foresayd Auctoure Gaufride, taught this lore of Negromancy thorough his Realme; & fynally toke in it suche pryde & presumpcion, that he toke vpon hym to fle into[8] ȳ ayer, but he fyll vpon the Temple of his god Appolyn, and theron was all to torne. whan he had ruled Brytayne by the space of. xx. yeres, leuynge after hym a Sone named Leyr.

Bathe Towne.

¶ Capitulum. xiiii.

[Geff. i. 14.] LEyr the Sone of Bladud was made Ruler ouer the Brytons, ȳ yere of the world. iiii. M.CCC. and. xxxviii. This[9] was noble of condycyons, and guydynge[10] his lande and Subgectes in great welth, he made the towne of Caerleyr, nowe called Leycetyr or Leycester. And albeit that this man helde longe the principate of Brytayne, yet of hym is no thynge left worthy memory, except that Galfride sayth that he receyued of his wyfe. iii. doughters oonly, without any sone, whiche were named Gonorilla, Ragan, and Cordeilla, the whiche he moche loued, but moste specyally he loued ȳ yongest, Cordeilla by name.

Narracio.

Whane this Leyr, or Leyth after some writers, was fallen in competent[11] age, to knowe the mynde of his. iii. doughters, he firste askyd Gonorilla, the eldest, howe well she loued hym; the whiche callynge her goddes to recorde, sayd, she loued hym more than her owne soule. With this answere ȳ fader beyng well cōtented, demaunded of Ragan, the seconde doughter, how wel she loued hym; to whom she answered, and affermyng with great othes, said, that she coulde nat with her tunge expresse the great loue that she bare to hym, affermyng further more ȳ she loued hym aboue all creatures. After these pleasaunte answeres had of those. ii. doughters, he called before hym Cordeilla the yongest; the which, vnderstandynge the dissymulacyon of her. ii. susters, entendynge to

[1] lefte. [2] Hurdibras. Opposite this last paragraph in the edit. of 1542. we have "Nota, that the hote bathes of bath were made by Nigromancye." In the edit. of 1559 this note is placed in the margin of the 13th Chapter. [3] Raerguen, edit. 1542. [4] lefte, edit. 1533. 1542. [5] Baldud. [6] buyldyd, edit. 1533. [7] or of the Industry. [8] in, edit. 1542. 1559. [9] This Leyr. [10] guyded. [11] into impotente, edit. 1559.

proue

proue her Fader, sayd, most reuerent Fader where my. ii. susters haue dissymulyd with the, with theyr plesaunt wordes fruteles, I knowynge ȳ great loue & Faderly zele that towarde me euer before this tyme thou hast borne, (for the which I may nat speke to ȳ otherwyse than my cōscyence ledyth me.) Therfore I say to the, fader, I haue loued ȳ euer as my fader & shall cōtynuelly, whyle I lyue, loue ȳ as my naturall fader. And if thou wylt further be Inquizitif of the loue that I to the here, I ascertayne the that asmoche as thou arte worthy to be beloued, euen so moche I loue the and no more.

The Fader with this answere beyng discontent, maryed his. ii. elder doughters, that one vnto the Duke of Cornewayll, and that other vnto ȳ duke of Albania or Scotlande, and denyded with theym two in maryage, his lande of Brytayne after his deth, and the one halfe in hande durynge his naturall lyfe: and for the thirde, Cordeilla, reserued no thynge. It so fortuned after, ȳ Aganippus which the Cronycle of Englande named Agamp, and kynge of Fraunce, harde of beaute' and womanhode of Cordeilla, and sent vnto her Fader & axyd her in maryage. To whom it was answeryd ȳ the kyng wold gladly gyue to hym his daughter, but for Dowar he wold nat departe with: For he had all promysed vnto his other ii. Doughters. Aganippus, thus by his messagyers enfourmed, remembred ȳ vertues of ȳ forenamed Cordeilla, and without promesse of Dowar maryed the sayd Cordeilla.

But here is to be noted, ȳ where this Aganippus or Agamp is called in dyuerse Cronycles kynge of Fraūce, it can nat agree with other Hystoryes, nor with the Cronycle of Fraunce; For it is testefyed by Polycronica, by Peter Putanience[2], by Mayster Robert Gagwyne[3], by Bisshop Antonyne, & many other Cronycles, that longe after this day was no kynge in Fraunce, nor longe after it was called Fraunce. But at this daye the Inhabytaunts therof were called Galli, and were tributaryes vnto Rome, wout kyng, tyll ȳ tyme of Valentinianus, Emperour of Rome, as hereafter in this werke shalbe manyfestly shewyd.

The story of Brytons sayth, that in the tyme ȳ Leyr reygned in Brytayne, the lande of Fraunce was vnder the domynyon of xii. kynges, of the whiche Aganippus shuld be one: the whiche sayeng is full vnlyke to be trewe, which myght be prouyd by many reasons whiche I passe ouer for lenght of tyme.

¶ Capitulum. xv.

THan it foloweth in the storye, after this Leyr was fallen in Age, thyse forsayd. ii. Dukes thynkynge longe or the Lordshyp of Brytayne was fallen to theyr hādes, arose agayne theyr Fader, as testefyeth Gaufride, and beraft hym the gouernaunce of the Lande vpon certayne condycions to be cōtynued for terme of lyfe; the whiche in processe of tyme more & more were mynysshed aswell by Magleyr[4] as by Hemyon[5], Husbandes of the forenamed Gonorilde and Ragan. But moste displeasyd Leyr the vnkyndnesse of his. ii. doughters, consyderynge theyr wordes to hym before spoken and sworne, and nowe founde & prouyd them all contrary.

For the whiche he beyng of necessyte constrayned, fledde his lande and sayled into Gallia for to be comforted of his doughter Cordeilla; wherof she hauyng knowlege, of naturall kyndnesse comforted hym: & after shewynge all ȳ maner[6] to her husbande, by his agrement receyued hym and his to her lords Court, where he was cherysshed after her beste maner. Longe it were to shewe vnto you the Circumstaunce of the vtterans of ȳ vnkyndnesse of his. ii. doughters and of ȳ wordes of comforte gyuen to hym by Aganippus and Cordeilla, or of the Counsayle and purueyaunce made by the sayd Aganippus and his lords for restorynge of Leir agayne to his domynyon: But fynally he was by the helpe of ȳ sayd Aganippus restoryd agayne to his Lordshyp, and so possessyd, lyued

[1] of the beautie. [2] Pictauyence. [3] Gogwyne, edit. 1542 [4] Maglaunus, edit. 1533. Maglanus, edit. 1542, 1559. [5] Heninus. [6] mater, edit. 1542, 1559.

as ruler and gouernoure therof by the space of. iii. yeres after; in whiche season dyed Aganippus. And whane this Leyr had ruled this lande by the terme of. xl. yeres, as affermyth dyuerse Cronycles, he dyed, and was buryed at his Towne of Kaerlier, or Leycestre, leuynge after hym, for to Enheryte the lande, his doughter Cordeilla.

¶ Capitulum. xvi.

Fol. iv. [Gest. 1. 16.] COrdeilla, the yongest Doughter of Leir, was, by assent of ỹ Brytons, made Lady of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CCC.lxxxxviii. The whiche guyded ỹ lande full wysely by the tyme or space of v. yeres complete, ỹ which tyme expirid and ronne, her. ii. Neuewes called Morgan[1] and Cunedagus[2], sones of her. ii. susters, came vpon her lande: & made therin great wast and destruccion, and at ỹ laste toke her and cast her into a stronge pryson, where she beynge dyspayred of the recouery of her astate, as testyfyeth Galfride, she[3] slewe her selfe whenne she had reygned, as before is declared, by ỹ terme of. v. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. xvii.

[Gest. 1. 16.] CUnedagus and Morganus[4] neuewes, as before is sayd, of Cordeilla, departyd this lande of Brytayne bytwene theym, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CCCC. and thre; that is to wyt, the Countrey ouer & beyonde Hunber fyll to Morgan towarde Catenessey; and the other parte of the Lande towarde west, as rehercetb Gaufride, fyll to Cunedag[5]. After. ii. yeres were ronne & endyd, some cayl disposyd came vnto Morgan and sayd, that to hym it was great reproche and dishonoure, consyderynge that he was comyn of Gonorilla ỹ elder suster, and of Maglair[6] her husbande, and Cunedag was discendyd of Ragan ỹ yonger and Hemynyon[7] her Husbande, that he had nat the rule of al ỹ lande: to whiche sedycious persones Morgan gyuynge credence, was supprysed[8] with Pryde and Couetyse, and anone by theyr counsayll assembled a great Hooste and made warre vpon his sayde Brother, brennynge and destroyeng his Lande without mercy. Wherof Cunedagus[9] beynge ware, in all haste gaderyd his people, & after cerayne[10] messuge sent to hym of reconcilyacion, sawe[11] there was no peas to be made but by ỹ Iugement of batayll, mette[12] with his Brother in playne felde, where ỹ goddes were to hym so fauourable, that he slewe moche of the people of his brother and compellyd hym to fle. After which victory thus had, he pursued Morgan from countre to coũtre, tyll he came within the Countre or prouynce of Cambria or Walys: in ỹ whiche countre the sayd Morgan gaue one other batayll vnto his brother Cunedag, but for he was ferre ỹ weker, he there was ouer comyn & slayne in the felde; whiche felde or Countre where ỹ sayd Morgan faughte and was slayne, is to this daye called Glaumorgan[13], whiche is to meane in our vulgare tunge, Morgannys[14] lande: and thus was Morgan slayne, whan he had reygned w̃ his brother. ii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. xviii.

[Gest. 1. 16.] CUnedagus before named the sone of Hemynion and Ragan, yonger or myddel doughter of Leir, was made ruler and lorde of all brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CCCC.v. Of the whiche is no thynge worthy memorye lafte in wrytynge, but that he guyded the lande after ỹ deth of his brother, well and honourably by the terme of. xxxiii. yeres: after which terme endyd, he dyed & was buryed at Troynouant or London, leuynge for his heyre a sone, as testyfieth Gaufride, named Riuallo or Rinallo, or after some wryters, Reyngnolde.

[1] Margan. [2] Cunedagius. [3] she, *omitted*. [4] Marganus. [5] Maglaunus.
[6] Hemmius. [7] suppressed, edit. 1542, 1559. [8] Cunedag. [9] certayne. [10] seynge.
[11] he mette. [12] Glaunmargan. [13] Margan land.

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. xix.

RIuallus[1], the sone of Cunedagus[2], was made Gouernoure of the Brytons in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.CCCC. and. xxxviii. The whiche of wryters is called fortunate and restfull; this[3] ruled ŷ Brytons with great sobernesse, and kept the lande in great welthe & prosperyte: Albeit that of hym is lafte no specyall memory of Acte done in his tyme, Except myne Auctour sayth that in ŷ tyme of his reygne it reyned blode by ŷ space of. iii. dayes contynually within the lande of Brytayne. After the whiche Reyne ensued so great excedynge in[4] nombre of[5] multytude of Flyes, the whiche were to the people so noyous & contageous, that they slewe moche people: And after that, as sayth an olde Auctoure whose name is vnknowen, ensued great sykenesse and mortalytie, to ŷ great disolacion of this sayd lande. Than it foloweth in the story, whan this Riuallus had reygned after moste concordaũce of wryters, by terme[6] of. xlvi. yeres, he dyed and was buryed, as testyfyeth the sayde olde Auctour, at Kaerbranke or Yorke, leuynge after hym a Sone, as wytnessyth Gaufride, named Gurgustius. In the tyme of the reygne of this kynge, after moste concorde of wryters, ŷ famous Cytie of Rome shulde be Buylded, as is shewed more playnely in a Treatyse of Latyn in the begynnynge of this werke sette[7]. [Geff. 1. 16.] Blode Reyned.

¶ Capitulum. xx.

GUrgustius, the sone of ŷ fore named Riuallus, was made ruler of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.cccc.lxxxiii. This in the Cronycle of Englande is named Gorbodiam, sone of Reygnolde, of the whiche is lytell memory made outher of his Reygne or of his dedes by any Auctours or wryters of the Hystorye of Brytayne, except[8] the aboue named olde Auctours; and ŷ Auctour called the floure of Hystoryes wytnessyth that he reygned xxxviii. yeres, leuynge after hym none heyre of his body begotten. And lastly dyed, and was buryed by his fader at Kaerbrank or Yorke. Rome, as aboue is touched, was firste buylded[9] in the tyme of Riuallus: And after most wryters, In ŷ yere of the world. iiii.M. CCCC.lxx.; after ŷ buyldyng of Troynouant, or London. CCCC.vii. yeres; whiche folowyuge ŷ accompt, shulde be in the. xxxii. yere of ŷ foresayd Riuallus. [Geff. 1. 16.]

¶ Capitulum. xxi.

CEcilius, or after some wryters Siluius, the Brother of Gurgustius, as affermyth the fore sayde olde Cronycle, was made chyef ruler of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.v.C. and. xxi. This in the Englysshe Boke is named Seyzill, of the which is no mencion made, nother of his reygne nor dedes, except that Geffrey of Monmouth wryter of ŷ hystoryes of Brytons saythe that he reygned. ii. yeres, whiche sayeng is nat accordaunt with other wryters: But more to the conuenyency of tyme and agrement of other Cronyclers[10], accordynge to the sayinge of the forenamed olde Auctour, he reygned by the terme of. xlix. yeres, & after dyed, and was buryed at Caerbadon or Bathe, and lafte after hym none heyre of his body begotten. [Geff. 1. 16.]

¶ Capitulum. xxii.

IAgo or Lago, the Cosyn of Gurgustius, as wytnessyth Gaufride, as next Inherytor, was made gouernour of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.v.C.lxx. This also is vnmynded of wryters outher for restfulnesse of tyme, or ellys for rudenesse of his dedes, that clerkes lyst nat to spende any tyme in wrytyng of suche dedes; of hym is no thyng specyfyed, sauynge the forenamed olde Auctoure joyneth to his tyme of reygne. xxv. yeres. And also he sayth, he dyed wythoute Issue, and was buryed by his Cosyn at Caerbrank or Yorke. [Geff. 1. 16.]

[1] Riuallus. [2] Cunedagius. [3] this Riuallus. [4] in *omitted*. [5] and, edit. 1542. 1559. [6] the terme. [7] "in the treatyse in the begynnyng of this werke." [8] except that, edit. 1542. 1559. [9] buylded and edyfyed. [10] Cronycles, edit. 1542.

¶ Capitulum. xxiii.

[Geff. 1. 16.] *Fol. n.*

KYmarchus[1] ȳ sone of Secilius[2], as some wryters haue, but more veritably as sayth ȳ olde Cronycle, the brother of Iago[3] was made ruler of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.v.C.lxxx.[4] and. xv. the which, as his brother before hym, passyd his tyme without any notable Actes or dedes, so that of him is no more memory made than of his brother. For the more party they that wrote the fayts or dedes of Brytons, make but a short rehersayll of these. v. kyngs, that is to say, from Ryuallo to Gorbodio[5], saying that after Ryuallo succedyd Gurgustius, succedyd[6] Iago, to Iago succedyd Kymarchus[7], & after Kymarchus succedyd Gorbodio; of these. v. kynges or rulers is made lytell other mencõn. [For ȳ which cause is made of these gouernours is dyrke & dowtful.][8] Than it foloweth in ȳ said olde Cronycle, that whan this Kymarchus had reygned. iiii. yeres, he dyed, and was buried by his brother at Kaerbrank or Yorke, leuynge after hym a Sone, as testyfyeth Flos hystoriarum, whiche Sone was named Gorbodio.

¶ Capitulum. xxiiii.

[Geff. 1. 16.]

GOrbodio the sone of Kymarchus was made ruler of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde folowyng the foresayd accompte, iiii.M.CCCCC. &. xlix. whiche all so passed his tyme lyke vnto the forenamed Dukes or kyngs, without any speciall memory of honoure notyd by wryters. This, by moste lykelyhode to brynke[9] hystories to accorde, shulde reygne ouer the Brytons the terme of. lxiii. yeres, whiche terme endyd, he dyed, and lyeth buryed at new Troy or London, leuynge after hym. ii. sõnes named Ferrex w[10] Porrex, or after some wryters Ferreus or Porreus.

Nota historiam de istis ducbus fratribus ac de ingratitudine Matris eorum.

¶ Capitulum. xxv.

FErrex with Porrex his brother, sõnes of Gorbodio, were ioyntly made gouernours and dukes of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde iiii.M.vii.C. and. xi. & contynued in Amytie a certeyne[11] of tyme: After which tyme expyrid, as wytnessyth Policronica, and also Gaufride, Porrex beyng Couetous of lordshyp, gaderyd his people, vnwetynge Ferrex his brother, entendynge to distroy hym; whereof he beyng warned, for lacke of space to assẽble his people, For sauegarde of his persone fled sodeynly into Gallia or Fraunce, & axyd ayde of a Duke of Gallia, named by Gaufride Gunhardus or Sunardus[12], the whiche duke hym ayded, & sent hym agayne into Britayne with his hoost of Gallis; after whose landyng his brother Porrex with his Brytons hym mette, & gaue to hym batayll, in the whiche Batayll Ferrex was slayne with ȳ more parte of his people.

Pater Gorbodio et mater Iden.

But here discordyth myn Auctour with some other wryters, and with the Cronycle of Englande; for they testyfye that Porrex was slayne & Ferrex surmyuyd; but whether of them was lyuynge, the moder of thyse. ii. bretherne named Iden[13] settynge a parte all moderly pytie, with helpe of her women entryd the Chambre of hym so lyuynge, by nyght, and hym there slepynge slewe cruelly, and cut into smal peces, and thus dyed the. ii. foresayd bretherne, after they had thus ruled Bretayn in warre & peas, to thagremẽt of most wryters. v. yeres.

Crueltie.

¶ Capitulum. xxvi.

HEre nowe endyth ȳ lyne or ofsprynge of Brute, after ȳ affermaunce of moste wryters, for Gaufride sayth, after the deth of these forenamed bretherne, great discorde arose amonge the Brytons, ȳ which longe tyme amonge them contynued; By meane whereof the people and Countre was sore vexed & noyed vnder. v. kynges. And further sayth Guydo de

[1] Kinimachus. [2] Sisilius, edit. 1533. 1542. Siluius, edit. 1559. [3] Lago. [4] iiii. thousand iiii. hundred lxxx. and xv. edit. 1533. [5] Gorbodug. [6] after hym succedyd. [7] Kinimachus. [8] *This sentence is omitted in the subsequent Editions.* [9] brynge. [10] and. [11] Of *omitted.* [12] Suardus. [13] Widen.

Columpna,

Columpna, that ỹ Brytons abhorred the lynage of Gorbodio[1], for so moche as firste that one brother slewe ỹ other, And more for the Innaturall disposicion of the moder ỹ so cruelly slewe her owne childe.

The Cronycle of Englande sayth, that after ỹ deth of the two forenamed bretherne, no ryghtfull enheritour was laft on lyue; wherfore ỹ people were brought in great discorde, In so moche that ỹ lande was deuydyd in. iiii. parties, so that in Albania was one ruler, in Loegria or Logiers one other ruler, in Cambria the thirde Duke or ruler, and in Cornewayle the. iiii. duke or ruler; but of these. iiii. Dukes, the Englysshe Cronycle alloweth Clotō Duke of Cornewayll for most rightfull heyre. Policronica sayth that after the deth of the foresayd. ii. bretherne, great discorde was in the lande, which greuyd the people sore vnder. v. kynges; But he nother reherceth the names, nor the tymes of theyr reygnes, except he addyth to, that the sayd discorde contynued tyl the tyme of Moliuncius Dunwallo[2]; So that here appereth no tyme certayne howe longe this varyaunce & discorde amonge the Brytons contynued. But who so lyst to loke vpon a draught made by me in latyn[3], In the begynnynge of thys boke, he shall se there, if he please to caste ouer ỹ tymes and yeres there expressyd, that this foresayd discorde cōtynued nere to the terme of. li. yeres; The[4] whiche draught or cōceyte if any man there[5] fynde Errour, that of his goodnes he wyll it amende & correcte[6]: And all other places where he shall by good profe fynde place of Correccion.

Tempus discordie.

¶ Capitulum. xxvii.

THus here endyth ỹ Firste parte of this werke, conteynynge or deuydyd in. vii. partes, as before is shewed. [And in the[7] way of a thanke to be gyuen to our most blessyd Aduocat and helper of al wretchys that to her lyste to call, I meane that moste blessyd virgyne our Lady saynt Mary, moder of criste; For ỹ of[8] her grace hath fortheryd this werke hytherto: And for to Impetre[9] of her ỹ grace and ayde of her moste mercyfull contynuaūce to accomplisshe this werke, begon, as before is shewed, vnder supporte of her moste bounteous grace; here wyll I w̄ humble mynde salute her with the firste ioye of the. vii. Ioyes whiche begynne[10].

Finit prima.

Gaude flore virginali. &c.

Most mergynall[11] flour, of al most excellēt,
Percyng of Angells ỹ hyest Gerarchy[12],
Ioye and be glad, for god Omnipotent
Hath the lyft vp, & set moste worthely
Aboue ỹ nombre & glorious company
Of his blessid seȳts, w̄ moste hye dignite;
Next after hym most honoured to be.][13]

This first parte, to be accompted from the firste yere of Brute vnto the last yere of the foresayd discorde, or vnto ỹ first yere of Moliuncius[14], Includyth of yeres. vii.C. and. iiii.

¶ Finit Pars Prima[15].

¶ Capitulum.

[1] Gorbodug. [2] Dumuallo. edit. 1533. Mulmutius Dumuallo, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] in English. [4] In. [5] here. [6] Of his goodnes lette hym amende and correcte yt. [7] a, edit. 1533. [8] of, *omitted* in edit. 1533. [9] Impetrate, edit. 1533. [10] begynneth. edit. 1533. [11] virgynall. edit. 1533. [12] Hierarchy. edit. 1533. [13] *The sentences within brackets are omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [14] Mulmutius. [15] *The subsequent Editions have* "Thus endeth the fyrste Parte;" *followed in that of* 1559 *by*

"An Addition of Robert Record.

"The. v. kynges that be omitted here, are founde in certaine old petigres; and although their names be moche corrupted in diuerse copies, yet these are the moste agreableste."

"Rudaucus kyng of Wales.

"Clotenus kyng of Cornewale.

¶ Capitulum. xxviii.

[Geff. i. 16.] MOliuncius' Dunwallo, or as some haue, Dūwallo Moliuncius, ŷ sone of Clotoū[2], as testyfieth the Englysshe booke, and also Gaufride, was venquesshor of ŷ other Dukes or rulers, and began his reygne ouer the hole Monarchy of Bretayne, In the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.vii.C.xlviii. This is named in the Englysshe Cronycle Donebant, the whiche was a noble man, & causyd to be made ẅin the Cytie of Troynouant a Temple, & named Templum pacis. it the temple of peas; the whiche, after some oppynyons, is that place or selde[3] where the Al Blākwelhall. market of wollen clothe is holden, called or named Blakwelhall; he also made many good lawes, the which were long after vsyd & called Moliuncius lawe. These lawes holy Gyldas wrote with great dylygence oute of the Brettyshe speche into latyn. And longe *Fol. xi.* tyme hereafter that Aluredus kynge of Englād turned those lawes out of latyn into Englysshe. This[4] also gaue pryuylage to Templis, to plowghes, & Cytes, and to the wayes ledynge to the same. And as some Auctours wytnesse, he began the. iiii. hyghe wayes of Bretayne, the whiche were finysshed and parfyted of Belynus his sone, as after at lengthe shalbe declared. The olde Cronycle testyfyeth ŷ this Molyuncius, which he in his Malmesbury and Vyts. boke nameth Molle, made the. ii. Townes of Malmesbury and Vyes. And all other wryters afferme, that this Molyuncius, after he had stablysshed his lāde, and set his Brytons in good and conuenyent ordre, by thaduyce of his Lordes he ordeyned hym a Crowne or Diademe of golde, and caused hymself to be Crowned with great solempnyte, after the vsaunce of pagan lawe then vsed; & for this cause, after the opynyon of some first crowned kynge. wryters, he is named the firste kynge of Brytayne: And all the other before rehersyd are named rulers, Dukes, or gouernours. Than it foloweth in the story, when Molyuncius had guyded the lande well ond[5] honourably by the terme of. xl. yeres he dyed, and was buryed in ŷ foresayd Temple of peas within Troynouant or London, leuynge after hym. ii. sones named Belynus & Brennius[6].

¶ Capitulum. xxix.

[Geff. i. 17.] BElynus and Brennius, the ii. sōnes of Moliuncius, began to reygne Ioyntly as kynges of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. and. viii. So that Belinus helde to hym Loegria or Loegiers, Walys & Cornewayll, and Brennius helde to his part al the lāde ouer and beyonde Humber; ẅ whiche particion eyther of theym was contentyd and pleasyd, as testyfyeth Polycronica, by the terme of. v. yeres, after the whiche terme endyd and expyryd, Brennius entendyng to haue more lande or all, aroos agaynst his brother Belyn, & made vpon hym mortal warre. In the which warre Brennius was ouersette, and was compelled to flye the lande and sayle vnto Armorica, now named lytell Brytayne; or, Discordia. as sayth Gaufride, into a Countre called Allebrog, as after shalbe more playnly declared, & there allyed hym, after the foresayd terme as before is sayde of. v. yeres was expyryd, as Belinus. affermeth Policronica. For Gaufride sayth in his boke made of the History of Brytons, that after the terme of. v. yeres aforesayd were expyryd and runne, Brennius, by sterynge of yonge & euyll Counsayll, entendyng as before is sayd, sayled, vnwetynge his brother, into Norway, and there maryed the doughter of Elsynge or Elfyng[7], than ruler or Duke of Norway: whan this was shewed vnto Belyn, considerynge the sodayne departynge, in all hast seasyd[8] Albania, and all ŷ other lande apperteynyng to Brenne, into his owne hande, and strengthed the Cyties and other stronge places ẅ his owne Sowdyours. Wher- Bellini[9] fraternale. of whan Brenne was warned, he in all possyble hast assembled a great people of ŷ Norwayes and toke his shyppynge to sayle into Brytayne. And as he was kepyng his Course

" Pinnor kyng of Loegria.
" Staterius kyng of Scotlande.
" Yeuan kyng of Northumberlande."

[1] Mulmutius. [2] Cloten. [3] selde. [4] He. [5] and. [6] Brennus. [7] Elfunge or Elfynge. [8] he seasyd. [9] Q. *Bellum.* EDIT.

vpon

vpon the see, he was encoūtred with Cutlakus[1] kynge of Dēmark, the whiche had lyen in awayte for hym for loue of ŷ whiche[2] that Brennius had maryed. For before tyme he had requyred her of Elfynge her Fader. When those. ii. flotes[3] were mette, stronge shotte & Fyght was vpon both parties: But fynally the Danes onercame ŷ Norwais or Norganys & toke the Shyp by strengthe whiche the wenche was in; the whiche anone was brought vnto the shyp of Cutlakus: & Brenne with a fewe of his shyppes lafte was fayne to Sauegard hymselfe by flyght. Whan Cutlake[4] had thus opteyned victory, entēdyg to haue sayled towarde Denmark, in short whyle after the Tempestes came so hydous vpon ŷ see, that his Nauy was deuyded; scateryd[5] that one from the other in such wyse ŷ he was in fere to haue ben drowned; and at the ende of. v. dayes, nat wetyng where he was, with fewe shyppes landed in the Countre of Northumberlande, where at that tyme was Belyn prouydynge defence agayne his brothers cōmynge, wherof whanne worde was brought vnto Belyn of the landynge of the foresayd Danoys prynce, ẅ a small company, he reioysid it, and cōmaunded[6] with his shyppes & Company to be put in suer holde & kepynge. Fortuna.

It was nat longe after but Brenne had reculid and gaderyd togyder ŷ more parte of his Nauy, before, as ye haue harde, chasyd. And when he had theym newely Riggyd & vytayled, he, herynge of the Aryuayll of Cutlacus i Northumberlande with his wyfe, sent wordes of Manace vnto his Brother Belyn, wyllyng hym to sende vnto hym his wyfe, wrongfully Rauysshed by Cutlacus. And also to restore vnto hym his lande & Patrymonye, or ellys he wolde shortly inuade his lande yet[7] for to waste, and hym, as[8] his Enemy, to distroy. The which desyre or request of Belynus was playnly and shortly denyed, whiche knowlege had, Brennius shortly after landyd in a parte of Albania & made towarde his Brother, & his brother towarde hym, so that theyr hostes mette nere vnto a wood named at that day Kalater or Kalaterin, where atwene theym was a mortall Batayll insomoche ŷ moche people fyll vpon both parties. But lastly that[9] the Brytons wan the felde & chasyd ŷ Norganys or Norways vnto theyr shyppes, chasyng & sleynge them without pytie: And as affermeth myn Auctour the fyght was so cruell & sharp ŷ there was slayne to ŷ nomber of. xl. M. men. After[10] discumfyture Brenne was constrayned to flye & with fewe in nomber recouеryd the Lande of Gallia.

Belynus hauynge thus victory of his Enemyes, after thankes & oblacions made vnto his goddes, after the pagan lawe, He than assembled his lordes at Kaerbrank or Yorke to haue their aduyce what he shuld do with the prynce of Denmark. In the whiche coūsayll it was concludyd, that foresayd Cutlacus[11] shuld holde & do homage to ŷ kyng of Brytayne for the lande of Denmarke, and yerely bere to hym a certayne tribute, whiche doon with suertie and hostages taken, ŷ sayd Cutlacus ẅ his loue was sette at lybertie and leue to retourne into his owne Countre; whiche yerely trybute as testyfyeth the Englysshe Cronicle was. M. li. Tributus.

¶ Capitulum. xxx.

THen it foloweth in the History whan Belyn had thus victory of his Enemyes, & was alone possessoure of this Realme of Brytayne, the lawes before made by his Fader he confermed, and ordeyned Iustyce to be Mynystred thorough the lande. And for somoch as the. iiii. wayes begon by his Fader were nat perfyghted & endyd, He therfore causyd workmen to be called, and set theym to paue with stone the sayd wayes, that they myght sufficiently be knowen of al waygoers or traueyllers of the Countres, as hereafter ensuyth. [Geff. i. 18.]

The firste of these. iiii. ẅayes was named Fosse, the whiche stretchyd out of ŷ South into the North, & begynneth, or at that dayes began, at ŷ Corner of Totnesse in Cornewayll, & passyd forth by Deuynshyre, Somersetshyre, & so forth by Tutbury, vpon Cot-

[1] Guilthdacus. [2] wenche. [3] fletes, edit. 1559. [4] Guilthdake. [5] and scatered. [6] commanded hym. [7] yt. [8] hym as, *omitted*. [9] that, *omitted*. [10] After this. [11] Guylthdacus teswolde

teswolde besyde Couētre, vnto Leycestre, & from thens by wylde playnes towarde Newerke, & endyth at the Cytie of Lyncolne.

The seconde way was named Watlȳgstrete, ȳ which stretchith ouerthwarte the wayes of Fosse out of the Southest into ȳ Northest. This began at Douer, and passeth by the Myddel of Kent ouer Thamys, besyde London, by west of Westmynster. And so
Fol. xii. forthe by seynt Albanys, In the west sydē of Dunstable, of Stratford, of Towceter, & of Wedon, by South Kyllyngbourne of[1] Kyllebourne, by Athirstone, vnto Gilberts hill that nowe is named Wrekyn, & so forthe by Seuarne, passyng besyde Wrokceter, and forth vnto Strattone, to the myddell of Walys, vnto a place called Cardican, at the Irysshe see.

The thirde waye was named Ermyngstrete; The whiche stretchyth out of the West Northwest, vnto the Eest Southest, and begynneth at Menema, the whiche is in seynt Dauies lande In west Walys; And so stretchyth forth vnto South Hamptone.

The fourth and laste waye is called, or was called, Kykenyldis strete. The whiche stretchyth forthe by Worcetir, by Wycombe, by Birmyngham, by Lychefyeld, by Derby, by Chestirfield, by Yorke; And so forth vnto Tymmouth[2]. The whiche was sufficiently made; he graūted and confermed theym all suche preuyleges as before were graūted by Dunwallo his Fader, the whiche preuyleges, with other lawes by hym made, who is desyrous to knowe, lette hym rede ouer the Translacion that holy Gildas made of Molyuncius[3] lawes out of Brettisshe speche into Latyn, And there he shall se the circumstaunce of euery thynge.

In this whyle that Belyn was thus occupyed aboute the nedes of his lande, his brother Brenne, beynge, as before is sayd, in a prouynce of Gallia, takyng sore to mynde his expulsion from his naturall Countre, nat hauynge any comfort how he myght attayne to his former dygnyte, lastly resorted with. xii. persones oonly accompanyed, vnto the Duke or ruler of ȳ[4] prouynce or Countre: For ye shal vnderstande that at those dayes, as testifieth Entropius[5] and other wryters, the Gallis occupyed dyuers Countres; and therfore Titus linius[6], which wrote the Actes & dedes of the Romayns, made distinccion of the Gallis, and nameth theym that Brenne ladde, whan he besegyd the Cytie of Rome, and after ȳ Capitoill, Cenouenses[7] Galli; whiche is to name the Gallis of that Countre where the Cytie of Cena than stode, & yet dothe, as testyfieth ȳ Auctour of Cronica Cronicarum and other, in a Countre of Italye named at this day Ethruria[8]: The whiche Cytie, as affermen ȳ sayd Auctours, was firste buylded of the foresayd Gallis in the tyme of Brenne, beynge theyr Duke or leder, before the cōmyng or Incarnacion of Criste. CCC. lxxx. and. vi. yeres, whiche maketh the yere of ȳ worlde, folowynge the accompt of this werke. iiii. M. viii. C. &. xiii. yeres.

Then it foloweth in the Storye when Brenne was comyn to the presence of the Duke, named, by myn Auctour Gaufride, Signius[9] Duke of Allebrog, the whiche is to vnderstande[10] Duke of Armorica, nowe named lytell Brytayne, as by Policronica and the Englysshe Cronycle is suffycyently declared, & shewed vnto hym his aduersytie & trouble. The sayd Duke receyued hym into his Courte, & for he was personable and well manered, hauynge great experience in hawkynge & huntynge and other properties apperteynynge to a Gentylman, he had hym in shorte whyle in especiall fauoure before any noble man of his Court; by meane wherof he lastly Maryed his doughter vpon Condicōn that if he dyed without Issue male, that he than shuld be ruler of that Coūtre. And if it happened hym to haue an heire male, ȳ then it natwithstandynge to ayde & helpe hym to Recouer his lande before lost. The whiche cōdicions well & suerly vpon the Dukes partie, by thassent of the nobles of his lande, assured, ȳ sayd Duke wīn compas of ȳ same yere dyed, after whose deth, whan by a Cōuenyent terme it was knowen that the Duchesse his wyfe was nat wt childe, al the lordes to Brenne dyd homage & became his men. To the which lordes, the

[1] or, edit. 1559. [2] Tinemouthe, edit. 1559. [3] Mulmutius. [4] That. [5] Eutropius. [6] Livius. [7] Cenonenses. [8] Etruria. [9] Seginus. [10] be understande, edit. 1542, 1559.

more

more to wynne theyr loues, he departed moche of his Tresour, & shortly after ẅ their assents gaderyd a great Armye, & so in all hast sayled into Brytayne to make new warre vpon his brother Belyn, & after a certayne tyme there lādyd. Of whose landing when Belyn was enfourmed, he in all hast gaderyd his Brytons in great nōbre, & made towarde hȳ as to his mortal enemy. But ỹ moder of these. ii. brether[1] named Tonwenna[2], or after ỹ Englisshe boke, Cornewey, cōsyderynge ỹ mortall hateryd attwene her. ii. childer, & in partie of their both persones, of a Moderly & naturall pyte went attwene her. ii. sōnes, & vsyd her ī such discrete maner & moderly cōpassion, as shewing her brests & other demeanures ỹ at lēgth she accorded them. After which accorde both brethrene, ẅ theyr lords & frends spede thē vnto Troynouant or London, & there, after many things orderyd & made for ỹ weale of ỹ lāde, they cōdescēded & agreed to lede their both hosts into Gallia for to Subdue to them ỹ sayd Coūtre, & in as goodly hast as they myght prepare for that Iourney, they toke shyppynge & so sayled into a part of Gallia, Brennyng & wastyng ỹ Coūtre wout pyte, & as wytnessyth myn Auctor Gaufride, in a short whyle they subdued a great part of Gallia, Italy, & Germania. Brennius.

But here I entende to leue ỹ ferther processe of myn auctour Gaufride, for somoch as here[1] he varyeth from other wryters of Auctorytie, as Eutropius, Titus Liuius, & other ỹ dyd great dilygence in wrytyng of ỹ dedys & Acts of ỹ Romayns, & of other people dwellyng those dayes[4] in Italia, Gallia, & Germania. For where ỹ sayd Gaufride sayth ỹ at suche tyme as Belyne & Brēne made warre in Italye, Gabius & Porsēna were at ỹ day Consulis[5] of Rome, ỹ saying is farre discordaūte vnto ỹ other foresayd auctours. For, as they affirme, at ỹ tyme when Brenne besegyd Rome, Claudius Amelius[6], & Lucius Lucrecious[7] were Consulis, & Furius Camillus was at ỹ tyme dictatour of Rome, and none lyke vnto the other were Consulis[8] many yeres before nor after. But trougth it is ỹ the sayd. ii. bretherne dyd many great acts in the forenamed Coūtres, but not all accordyng ẅ the saying of ỹ sayd Gaufride. For where he referreth all those dedys to both Bretherne, ỹ forenamed Titus Liuius spekyth but of Brenne oonly, as it shall somedele be touchyd hereafter; wherfore to folow ỹ moste wryters, when Belyn had dwelled a certayne of tyme ẅ his brother Brēne, In those parties, by agrement of them both, Belyn retourned into Brytayne, & Brēne remayned there.

¶ Capitulum. xxxi. [Chap. 19.]

WHan Belinus or Belyn was retourned into Brytayne he repayred olde Cyties & buyldyd vpon ỹ Ryuer of Vske a Cytie & called it Caeruske nere vnto the Ryuer of Seuerne. This Cytie was after named the Cytie of Legions, for somuch as the Legions of Romayns[9] were lodgid wīn the same Cytie. And now it is called Caerleon or Carleon. Also he buyldyd an Hauen ẅ a gate ther ouer wīn Troynouant. In the sūmet or pynacle wheron was set a vessell of Brasse, In ỹ whiche was closyd ỹ Asshes of his brent body, when he was dede. This gate was longe after called Belyns or Belynus gate, but at this day it is called Belȳgesgate.

In this whyle ỹ Belynus was thus occupied in Britayne, his brother Brenne desyrous to wynne fame and honoure, buylded in Italy and other parties of Gallia these Cyties and Townes folowynge.

Mediolana or Milleyn ī Lūbardy.
Papya or Papy.
Bargamum[10] or . . . .
Sena or . . . .
Comum or . . . .
Brixia or . . . .

[1] brethern. [2] Conuuenna. [3] here, *omitted* edit. 1542, 1549. [4] at those dayes. [5] Consules.
[6] Etilius. [7] Lucretius. [8] Consules, edit. 1535, 1542. [9] the Romaynes, edit. 1542, 1559.
[10] Burgamum.

Verona

Verona or . . . .
Vincencia or . . . .
Cremona or . . . .
Mantua or[1] . . . .

Fol. xiii. The whiche Cities & Townes were buylded of ỹ Gallis, or at ỹ leest newe repayred in the tyme ỹ Brenne was their leder or Duke. Albe it ỹ some wryters wold meane ỹ Comum & Cremonia[2] were buylded after Brēne was dede.

Policronica wytnessyth ỹ the Senōns, whiche he meaneth by ỹ Gallis dwellyng aboute ỹ Cytie of Sena, by ỹ ledynge of Brennius, ouercame the Romaynes. xi. Myle from Rome, at the Ryuer Albia, & chasyd them to Rome, & toke ỹ Cytie vnto ỹ Capitoill, & after layde Siege to ỹ same Capitoill, & vpon a nyght whyle ỹ wardeyns of the Capitoill slepte, The Frenschmen or Gallis, by a way vnder ỹ erthe, came into ỹ Capitoill & were lykely to haue wōne it. But a noble Romayne named Mallius, or Maulius[3] Torquatus, awoke by ỹ criyng or noyse of a Gander, or Ganders, ỹ which Maulius awakynge ỹ other Romaynes, put of ỹ Gallis,

Ganders worshiped. For which cause, ỹ Romaynes long tyme after, helde a Feest of Ganders the firste daye of Iune moneth[4]. Neuerthelasse, afterwarde they called it Iunois Feest, forsomoch as they thought ỹ Iuno that Goddesse, had by her influēce, gyuen that grace vnto ỹ Ganders, ỹ they shuld by theyr noyse awake the Romaynes; But yet ỹ Gallis or frenschmē helde the Romaynes so short, ỹ they were compelled to gyue vnto Brēne their Duke, a. M. li. weyght of golde, as therof is wytnesse Titus Liuius. And furthermore, sayth ỹ said Liuius, ỹ the gallis slewe of the Senatours many in nombre, the whiche first they supposed had ben goddes, bycause of their rych appareyll whiche they satte in. But shortly after this, ỹ forenamed Furius Camillus, which was called agayne from the Cytie of Ardentea[5] where he was outlawyd before the Comontie of Rome, was called agayne in this nede, & made agayne Dic-

Brenne chacyd. tatour[6]. The whiche pursued Brenne & his people and to theym gaue batayll, sleyng of them a great Multitude, & wanne from theym all the golde and Iuellys that before tyme the Gallis had wonne of the Romaynes. The whiche dede was done, as wytnessyth the foresayd Titus Liuius, the yere after the buyldynge of Rome. CCC. lxv., whiche was the yere of ỹ worlde, folowynge the accompt of this werke. iiii. M. viii. C. and. xxxv. And before Crists Incarnacion, kepyng the same accompt. CCC. lxiiii. Thenne it foloweth in the Storye of Brenne, when he was thus scomfyted of the Romaynes, he tourned his people towarde the Macedoynes or Greks, and deuyded his people in. ii. hosts, wherof he reteyned ỹ one with hym, & ỹ other he sent into a coūtre called than Galacia, & after Gallo Greci, and lastly Galates. Then Brenne ouer came ỹ Macedoynes with theyr Duke Sostene, and after spoyled Goddes[7] and theyr Temples, & sayd in his game, ryche goddes must gyue to men somedele of theyr rychesse. Also he spoyled ỹ temple of ỹ God Apolyn Delphicus, standynge in the Hyll of the Mount Parnasus: Wherfore, as testyfieth the wryter Policarpus, the people of that Coūtre prayed to god for helpe, and sodaynly ỹ Erth began to quake, & a great part of the hyll fell vpon ỹ host of Gallis & them slewe; & after ỹ ensued & fyll to grounde hayle stones of suche greatnesse ỹ it slewe one other great parte of the sayd host, And Duke Brennius[8] was so sore woūded, wherby he fyll in suche dispayre ỹ he slewe hym self with his owne swerde. [No man shall wonder, though this Appolyn toke wreche of theim that spoyled thē goddes & theyr Temples; For god sufferyd Appolyn to destroy many Nacions because of theyr trespasses & euyll lyuyng: For it is certayne ỹ spirits of ỹ heyre may vse their shrewdnes in theym that be of mysbyleue & vse euyll dedys; For grace is withdrawen from such maner of men, wherfore the Spirits haue the more power to hurte & greue them.][9]

Than syne I haue here shewed vnto you, the fyne or ende of Brēnius, I shall now retourne my style vnto his brother Belynus, ỹ which as before is towched endeuoryd hym

[1] or, *omitted in* edit. 1559. [2] Cremona. [3] Maulius. [4] moneth, *omitted.* [5] Ardea.
[6] And by the Comontye of Rome in this nede made agayne Dictatour. [7] the Goddes.
[8] Brennius, edit. 1533, 1542. [9] *omitted in the* edit. *of* 1542, and 1559.

aboute

aboute the weale of his lande of Britayne & his people duryng the tyme of his reygne, in executyng of many notable dedys ẏ which for length of tyme I ouer passe; so that lastly he dyed & was buryed as before is sayd at Belyus, or Belynus gate, within Troynouant or Lōdon, when he had reygned with his brother & alone, after the moste concordaunce of wryters, xxvi. yeres, leuynge after hym a sone called Gurguncius[1], Gurguit Barberut[2], or after some wryters Gurguyt Barbarons[3], whiche is to meane Gurguyt with ẏ rede berde.

¶ Capitulum. xxxii.

GVrguncius[1] or Gurguyt, ẏ sone of Belyn, was made kyng of ẏ lande of Bretayne, in the yere of the world. iiii. M. viii. C. and xxxiiii. This in the Englysshe Cronycle is named Corynbratus or Corynbatus, ẏ whiche, forsomoche as the tribute before graūted by Cutlak[4] kyng of Dēmark vnto the kyngs of Brytayne for a perpetuytie was denayed, he arrayed his Army & Nauy, & sayled īto Denmark, and there wasted & harmed ẏ Countre with Iron & fyre, in suche wyse ẏ at length the kyng of Denmark ẇ ẏ assent of his Baronage, graūted to paye & contynue the foresayd tribute yerely, of. M. li. after whiche victory thus had of the Danys, he with great tryumphe retourned towarde Brytayne. And in kepyng of his cours he encoūtred ẇ a Nauy of. xxx. sayl besyde the Ile of Orchades full of men & women. Of which flote, the chief Capitayne was called after most wryters Bartholomewe, ẏ whiche whā he was brought vnto ẏ kyngs presence, shewyd ẏ he with his people were put or exyled out of the Coūtre of Spayne & were named Basclensis[5], & had sayled longe tyme vnpon[6] the see, to ẏ ende to fynde some Prynce that wold gyue to them a dwellyng place, & they to become his Subiects, & holde theyr lande of hym; besechynge the kynge to haue compassion on them, & to graunt to them some place to enhabyte them in, & ẏ they shulde no lenger dwell in theyr shyppes, cōsideryng their vitayl was spent by reason of their longe liyng vpon ẏ see. After which request thus made by their Capitayne, ẏ kyng ẇ thaduyce of his Barons graūted vnto them, a voyde & wast Coūtre, which was & is ẏ farthest Ile of al ẏ Ilis towarde ẏ west, the which Ile as sayth the Englysshe Cronycle was than named Irelande, after the name of their Capitayne called in the Englisshe Cronycle Irlamal, but who so wyl knowe ẏ first cause of ẏ namyng of this Ile Irlande, let hym rede ẏ. xxxii. &. xxxiii. Chapiters of ẏ first boke of Policronica, & there he shal fynde ẏ more certeyntie of ẏ first namȳg therof, ẇ many other thyngs towchynge ẏ sayd Ile, the which I ouerpasse for length of ẏ mater; for there he shalbe sufficyently enfourmed of ẏ, & also of other thyngs. Then it foloweth in ẏ story; After this Gurgūcius[7] was retourned into his lande of Britayne, he ordeyned to be stablysshed & kept ẏ lawes made by his forefaders, & excercisyd Iustyce to his subiects, & guyded his lande well & nobly by the terme, after moste wryters, of. xix. yeres, & than dyed & was buryed at new Troy or Lōdon, or at Caerleon, leuyng after hym a sone named after myn Aucto[1] Guytelinus[8], but after some he is named Guytellius[9].

[Chap. 20] Tributum. Irishmen. Irelande.

¶ Capitulum. xxxiii.

GVitelinus[8] or Guytellius[9], ẏ sone of Gurguncius[10]; was made kyng of Brytayne, in ẏ yere of ẏ world. iiii. M. viii. C. &. liii. This is named in ẏ Englisshe Cronycle Gwentolyne, ẏ which guyded his lande & Brytons ẇ great mekenesse & sobernesse: He had also a noble wyfe called Mercia[11], instruct and lerned in many Sciences, the whiche amonge other noble dedys by her done, studyed and brought forthe a certayne good and conueny-ent lawe amonge the Brytons, the whiche was named longe after the Marcien lawe. This lawe for that it was thought bothe good and necessary, Aluredus whiche longe after was kynge of Englāde translated this lawe[12] out of Bretysshe speche into Saxon speche, & thā was it

[Chap. 20.] Mulier prudens Fol. xiiii.

[1] Gurguyntus. [2] Gurguynt Brabtruc. [3] Gurguynt Barberous. [4] Guilthdak. [5] Balenses. [6] uppon. [7] Gurguintus. [8] Guynthelinus. [9] Guyntellius. [10] Gurguintus. [11] Marcia. [12] "this law," *omitted in the subsequent Editions.*

called

called after ỹ trāslacōn in the Saxon tunge Merchenelagth[1], whiche is to meane ỹ lawe of Mercia. To this woman, for her wysdome, was cōmytted all the gouernaunce of the lande, insomoche as wytnessyth myn Auctour Gaufride & other, she reygned as Quene of Brytayne somwhat of tyme[2] after her husbande was dede, but the yeres of her reigne be accompted with the yeres of her husbande, or w̄ the yeres of her sone Cecilius, so ỹ no tyme asserteyned, is to her deputed or set. Then it foloweth whan this Guytelynus[3] had reygned well & mekely by the terme of. xxvi. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at newe Troye or London, leuynge after hym a sone named Sicillius, or Cecilius.

¶ Capitulum. xxxiiii.

SIcillius or Secilius the sone of Guytelynus[4] was made kinge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxix. This in the Englysshe Cronycle is named Seyzyll, of whiche no mēcion nor worthy memory is made. Albeit ỹ Gaufride meaneth ỹ this Sicillius was but. vii. yeres of age when his Fader dyed; wherfore the charge of ỹ Realme was cōmytted vnto Marcia his moder, the whiche guyded it well & sufficiently tyll her sayde sone came to his laufull age, and than resygned to hym all the rule, whiche so contynued, but howe longe he reygned Gaufride expressyth nat; wherfore I now folowe the sayinge of ỹ fore named Auctour called the floure of Hystories, which affermeth hym to reygne oonly. vii. yeres. Albe it ỹ Englisshe boke sayth he reygned. xv. yeres, whiche agreeth nat so well w̄ the Cōcordaunce of other Historyes & tymes. This Sicillius as Gaufride wytnessyth, laft after hym a sone named Kymarchus[5] whome the Englysshe bookes nameth Kymor.

¶ Capitulum. xxxv.

[Chap. 20.] KImarchus[5] the sone of Cecilius was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of ỹ world. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxx. &. vi. This in the Englysshe booke is called Kymor of ỹ whiche is made no mencion, nother of his tyme of Reygne nor of his dedes. For the more partie of wryters reherce in most breuest or[6] shortest maner, that after Kymarchus reygned Dauius[7], after Dauius[7] Moruidus[8]. But the olde Cronycle whiche I haue before tyme spoken of, sayth that this Kymarchus, whiche he nameth Kymarchus[5] Dauius[7], was a wylde yonge man & lyued after his pleasure, wherfore as he was in his disport of huntyng he was by his euyll wyllers slayne whā he had ruled skarsly. iii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. xxxvi.

[Chap. 20.] DAuius[7] the sone of Kymarchus[5], as wytnessyth the fore sayde floure of Cronycles, but ỹ brother of Kymarchus[5] as sayth Gaufride, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxx. and. ix. The whiche in ỹ Englysshe boke is named Howan. Of this also is no mencion made nor memory, nouther of Acte nor of reigne. But as the forenamed olde Cronycle saith that Kymarchus[5] and Dauius[7] was one persone, reygned as before is sayde. But ỹ abouesayd wryters called floure of Hystories sayth he reygned fully. ii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. xxxvii.

[Chap. 20.] MOruidus[8] the bastarde sone of Dauius[7], as sayth Gaufride and other, was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of the world. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxx. and. xi[9]. the whiche in the Englysshe Cronycle is called Morwith. This as witnessith Gaufride was gotyn vpon the Concubyne of Dauius[7] named Tangustela, and was a man of worthy fame in dedys of Chiualry; but he was so ouercome with wrath & cruelnes, that lyghtly he slewe all men ỹ hym tened or angred. He was also beauteuous of persone, & lyberal of gyftes, & with that he was of a meruelous

[1] Marthchelage. [2] a certayne tyme. [3] Guinhelinus. [4] Guynthelinus. [5] Kymarus. [6] and. [7] Elanius. [8] Morindus. [9] iiii. M. viii. C. xc. edit. 1542, 1559.

strength,

strength, insomoche that he had nat his pere within his Realme of any man of noble byrthe.

In his tyme came into Brytayne a prynce out of a Coũtre called Morauia[1], the whiche Countre at thyse[2] dayes is assygned by Strabo ỹ wryter, to lye[3] bytwene the Kyngdomes of Hungary and of Beame; the whiche Prynce w̃ his cruel and fyers people, wastyd ỹ lande of Britayne w̃ Iron & fyre without pytie, wherof Moruidus[4] beyng warned, in all hast gaderyd his people and hym mette and faught in such wyse, ỹ he chasyd ỹ sayd Prynce agayne to the see, and toke many of his Sowdyours as prysoners, ỹ whiche in satisfyinge of his cruelnesse & Tyranny, he causyd to be put to dethe in his syght by dyuers maners of Turments, as by heddyng, fleyng, brennynge, & other Cruel execucions. Lastly, as tyfieth[5] Guydo de Columpna and other, this Moruidus[4] walkynge or rydynge vpon the see stronde espyed a wonderfull Monstre, the whiche of his corage & knyghthod, he thought to sle; and by a manly Corage and force, assayled this monstre or beste, fyghtynge with it a certayne of tyme. Butte in conclucyon he was deuouryd, and swalowyd of the sayd monstre, after he had reygned, after moste wryters, by ỹ terme of. viii. yeres, leuyng after hỹ, as wytnessyth Gaufride. v. sõnes, wherof the first was named Gorbomãnus, the seconde Archygallo, the thirde Heliodorus[6], the fourth Vigenius or Nigenius, and the fyft or yongest Peridurus. Myrynge.

¶ Capitulum. xxxviii.

GOrbomãnus the firste sone of Moruidus[4] was made kyng of Britayne, in the yere of ỹ worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxx. and. xviii. This in the Englysshe Cronycle named[7] Granbodian, the whiche, as testyfieth Gaufride, was Iuste[8] and ryghtwyse[9] man to ỹ Goddes & to his people, and yelded to eyther partie that was his, that is to saye to his Goddes he yelded due reuerence & Sacrefyce, and to the people Iustyce & equyte. And he renewyd and repayred al olde Temples thorough his Realme, and buylded some newe: And in his tyme was more welth & plente in his Realme, moche more than was in any of any of his predecessours dayes. But fynally to the great sorowe of al his Brytons he was taken with sykenesse and dyed without issue of his body, whan he had reygned, after moste wryters, by the terme of. xi. yeres. [Chap. xl.] Homo Iustus.

¶ Capitulum. xxxix.

ARchigallo the seconde sone of Moruidus, and Brother vnto Gorbomannus, was made kynge of Bretayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. ix. C. &. x. This in the Englysshe boke is named Artogayll, the whiche folowed nothynge the werks of his brother but gaue hym self all to disceucõn and stryfe, & imagenyd causes agayne his nobles to put theym from theyr goodes & dignyties, and in theyr places to sette & ordeyne vnnoble & of rude byrth and maner; and from the ryche by Synystre & wrongful meanes he plucked their ryches & goods; by whiche ĩordinat meanes he enriched hỹ self & inpouerysshed his subiects: for which Condycions his lordes & subiects murmurid for hym agayne[10], & lastly of one assent toke hym or more verely deprynyd hym of all honoure & kyngly dygnytie, when he had reygned after most concordaunce of wryters. v. yeres. [Chap. xl.]

¶ Capitulum. xl.

Fol. xv.

HEliodorus[6] the thirde sone of Moruidus[4], & brother of Archigallo, was by one assent of the Brytons made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.ix.C. and. xv. This in ỹ Englysshe Cronycle is named Hisider or Esodir: The whiche became so mylde & benyng[11] to the Brytons that they gaue to hym a surname, & called hym Heliodir[12] the meke: for he amonge other dedys of mekenes, as he was vpon a day in his disport [Chap. xl.] Homo pietatis.

[1] Mauritania. [2] those. [3] be. [4] Morindus. [5] testyfyeth. [6] Elidurus.
[7] ys named. [8] a juste. [9] righteous, edit. 1542, 1559. [10] agayust hym. [11] benygne.
[12] Elidure.

of huntynge in a wode, nere vnto Caerbrank or Yorke called Calater, or after some wryters Caltras, he fande his elder brother Archigallo late kynge, maskelyng or wandryng in the thykest of ŷ wood, whom louyngly & charitably he in secrete maner cõueyed vnto his owne Mancõn into ŷ Cytie than named Acliud[1] or Acliut. And as affermeth myn auctour Gaufride, to thentent to bryng his Brother to his former dignytie as after foloweth, the sayde Heliodorus[2] fayned hymselfe syke & in all hast sent his messagers aboute his Realme, to gather and assemble the Barons of his lande; and whan the day of assemble was cõmyn, & his lordes accordynge to his cõmaundement were present, he called theym one by one as they were of honour into his secrete cubicle or chãbre: and therby his wyse & discrete wordes, aswell in benygne & louynge Manere, as other wordes and countenaunce, apperteynyng to his Royall power & dignytie, he gat graũte of his sayd lordes that they shulde ayde and strengthe hym to theyr powers, to bryng his brother Archigallo to his former honour and regally. After whiche graunt by ŷ lordes made, he assembled a Counsayll of his Brytons at Caerbrank or Yorke, and there caused suche meanes to be made to the Cõmons, ŷ in conclusion whan ŷ said Heliodorus[2] had ruled ŷ lãde. v. yeres as kynge, he there resygned his Crowne & all kyngly power vnto his sayd brother Archigallo.

¶ Capitulum. xli.

[Chap. 21.] WHen Archigallo was thus restoryd to his kyngly dignyte, he remembred well the euyll lyfe ŷ before tyme he had ladde, & ŷ punysshemẽt whiche he had suffred for the same: wherfore in eschewynge of lyke daunger, he chaunged all his olde cõdycions and became a good & rightwyse[3] man, Mynystrynge to the people equyte & Iustyce; and bare hym so nobly agayne his lordes & rulers vnder hym of his landes, ŷ he was beloued & drade of all his Subgettes, & so contynued durynge the terme of his naturall lyfe. But fynally he payde the dette of nature whan he had reygned now lastly after most wryters. x. yeres, & was buryed as sayth the sayd olde Cronycle, at Caerbrank or Yorke.

¶ Capitulum. xlii.

[Chap. 21.] HEliodorus[2] beforenamed was agayne by oné assent of ŷ Brytons made kyng, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.M.ix.C. & xxx: But his. ii. yonger bretherne Vigenius and Peridurus, hauynge of hym indignacõn that he was for his vertue & good gouernaunce so well fauoured with the Brytons, of malyce conspyred agayn hym & gatheryd an Army of Sowdyours, & made a Felde with hym accessaryes agayne the kynge[4]. And in the felde toke hym and cõmaũded hym vnto the Tower of Troynouant, as sayth Gaufride, there as a prysoner to be sauely kepte, after & when he had reygned nowe last by the space as wytnessyth the olde Cronycle. ii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. xliii.

[Chap. 21.] VIgenius & Peridurus the yongest sõnes of Moruidus[5] & bretherne of Heliodorus[2] beforesayd, were joyntly made kyngs of Brytayne, in ŷ yere of the worlde. iiii.M.ix.C. &. xxxii. These. ii. Bretherne are named, in ŷ Englysshe Cronycle, Higanius and Petitur, the whiche as testifieth Gaufride, departed ŷ lande atwene them so ŷ all the lande from the water of Humber westwarde, fyll to Vigenius or Nigenius, and the other part of the lande with also Albania or Scotlãd fyl vnto Peridurus. But after the sayinge of Guydo de Columpna, Vigenius or Nigenius was nat kyng, but alonely Peridurus, ŷ whiche as he sayth helde his brother Heliodorus[2] in pryson by his owne assent. For somoche as Heliodorus[2] was nat wyllynge to be kynge, and as affermeth ŷ said Guydo, this Peridurus was cruel tyrannous[6] to the Bretaynes, and slewe and entreated the lordes in moste

[1] Aldud. [2] Elidurus. [3] ryghteous, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] "accessaryes agayne the kynge," *omitted in the subsequent Editions.* [5] Moriudus. [6] and tyrannous.

cruell maner: wherfore he became so odyous to them, that they rebelled agaynst hym & slewe hym. This sayinge contraryeth and enpugnyth myne Aucto' Gaufride, saying, that Vigenius died after he had reygned. vii. yeres; after whose death Peridurus seasyd al the lande into his owne rule, and rulyd it with great sobernesse, in suche wyse ỹ he excelled or was prevsed aboue al his brether, so that Heliodorus was clene forgoten of the Brytons. The Englysshe Cronycle also sayth, ỹ this Peridurus foũded ỹ Towne of Pykeryng; but fynally he was taken with sodayne sykenesse, wherof he dyed whã he had reygned with his brother & alone, after thaccorde of most wryters. ix. yeres, leuyng after hỹ no child to be his heyre. Pykeryng Towne.

¶ Capitulum. xliiii.

HEliodorus[1] befornamed so sone as Peridurus was dede, fõr as moche as he was next heyre to the Crowne, was taken forthe of pryson and made the thirde tyme kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the world. iiii.M.ix.C. and. xli.. The whiche as before tyme he had vsyd hym self, so he contynued styll in mynystrynge to all persones right and Iustyce, al the dayes of his lyfe; and lastly beyng of good age, he dyed when he had nowe lastly[2] reygned after moste concordaũce of wryters. iiii. yeres, leuynge after hym a sone named Gorbonianus or Gorbomanus; and as wytnessyth the olde Cronycle & the Englysshe Cronycle, the forenamed Heliodir[1] was buryed at Carerleyl or Karlele. [Chap. xl.]

¶ Capitulum. xlv.

YE shal vnderstande ỹ the[3] deth of the foresayd Heliodir[1] the wryters of the Story of Brytons, wryten dyuersly, so that the one varyeth greatly from the other both in the names, and also in the tyme of their reygnes, the whiche wolde aske a longe tyme to reherce in ordre the dyuersytie of that one from ỹ other. And also to some Reders the matier therof shulde be but small pleasure. Wherfore to suche as ben desyrous to knowe of the tyme and season that passyd atwene the laste yere of Heliodir[1], & ỹ first yere of Lud, in which passe tyme reygned in Brytayne. xxxii., or after some wryters. xxxiii. kynges, let hym loke in the begynnynge of this werke, in a draught made or expressyd in laten: And there he shall se my Conceyte for the declaracõn of the yeres passyd or spent, atwene the foresayd. ii. kynges Heliodir[1] & Lud, prayinge hym or them ỹ so shall loke in ỹ sayd draught, that if I haue in any poynt Erryd, ỹ of theyr goodnesse, they woll with good delyberacõn correcte & amende it. But for it semeth to me, that of all' suche Auctours as I haue redde or seen, Guydo de Columpna reherceth moste breuely the passe tyme of the sayd kyngs, therfore I purpose here to reherce his sayinge as he hathe lafte it to vs in laten.

¶ Capitulum. xlvi.

GOrbonianus or Gorbomanus, the sone of Regny, sone of Heliodir[1], was made kynge of Brytayne in the yere of the world. iiii.M.ix.C. and. xlv.. After whom succedyd Morgan[4]; after Morgã[4] Eminicianus[5] brother to ỹ said Morgan[4], the whiche Eminicianus[5] was depryuyd for his cruelnesse; & after hym reygned. xx. kynges successyuely, ỹ one after ỹ other, of the whiche as sayth myn Aucto' Guydo, is no mencyon made eyther for their rudenesse, or ellys for crueltie, or discordaunt meanes, or maners vsed in the tyme of theyr reygnes, the whiche mysordre clerkes disdayned to wryte or put in memory. And next the laste of thyse fore sayd. xx. kynges, succedyd Bledgaret[6], a cunnynge musician; the whiche, for his excellence in that facultie, was called of the Brytons God of Glemen[7]. After Bledgaret[6] was thus kynge and dyed, succeded ix. kynges, of whom for the former consyderacion is nouther name nor tyme of reygne put in memory. The last of [Chap. xl.] *Fol. xvi.*

[1] Elidurus. [2] "lastly," *omitted*. [3] to the. [4] Margan. [5] Emerianus. [6] Blegabridus. [7] Glemen or minstrelles, edit. 1559.

whiche

whiche. ix. kyngs was by the agremēt of all wryters named Hely, whiche Hely after some wryters reygned. xl. yeres. And after some but bare. vii. monethes. In whiche. xxxiii. kynges tymes passyd or flowed, that is to say, from the last yere of Heliodir[1] vnto the last yere of the foresayd Hely, as by ỹ forenamed draughte made in Latyn apperyth[2]. C. lxxxvi. yeres, whiche sayd Hely lafte after hym. iii. sōnes named Lud, Cassibulanus, & Neuius[3].*

¶ Capitulum.

[1] Elidure, edit. 1533, 1542. [2] fornamed Table apperyth. [3] Neurius.

* At the end of the. xlvi. chapter, the Edition of 1559 has

" A note of the peruser.

" To the end the names of these. xxix. kinges maye be knowen, I have out of Galfride drawen this piece folowinge:

After the deathe of Elidurus, the sonne of Gorbonian his eldest brother was crowned kyng, who in all pointes bothe in witte and good gouernaunce, folowed hys vncles steppes; for, auoydinge tyrannye, he behaued hym selfe towardes his subjectes iustlye and mercifullye, and neuer swarued from right in any thing.

After hym raygned Margan the sonne of Archigallo, who accordynge to the example of hys kindfolke, gyded the Brytons in quiet and equitie.

After him raigned hys brother Emerian, one so farre vnlyke him that for misordering of his people they deposed hym the. vi. yere of hys raigne.

Ydwallo the sōne of Vigenius his vncle, was promoted to the Kyngdome, who, taught by hys kinsman's punishement, behaued him selfe justly all the tyme of his raygne.

After hym succeded hys cosyn Rimo, the sonne of Peredurus.

After him Geruntius the sonne of Eledurus.

After him his son called Catell.

After Catell, Coyle.

After Coyle, Porrex.

After Porrex, Cherimus, who had three sonnes, Fulgenius, Eldad, and Androgius, who raigned orderly eche after other.

After them the sonne of Adrogius. After him Eliud. After him Dedacus. After him Clotenus. After him Gurgineus. After him Merianus. After hym Bledius. After him Cap. After him Owen. After him Sicilius or Cisillius. After hym Blegabridus, who so farre excelled in musycke all minstrels and poetes before his time, that he seemed to be as it were a God of that scyence. After hym raygned his brother Archemayll. After him Eldon. After him Redion. After him Rodreck. After hym Samulpenisell. After hym Pyr. After him Capoir. After him his sonne Glygwell, a man veryе sober and wise in all his doinges, and did vpright iustice to all kind of persons.

After hym succeded hys sonne Hely, whose raigne continued. xl. yeres.

¶ These raigned after Lanquets accompt.

Gorbonian, whō he taketh for Reygny Gorbonians son,	x. yeres.
Margan	xiiii.
Emerian	vii.
Iewell, called Iuall	xx.
Rimo	xvi.
Geruntius	xx.
Catell	x.
Coyl	xx.
Porrex	v.
Cherimus	i.
Fulgen	iii.
Eliud, whom he calleth Eldred	i.
Androgius	i.
Vrian the sonne of Androgius	iii.
Eliud	v.
Dedacus, Clotenus, Gurginetes, these Lanquet leaueth out.	
Merianus	ii.
Bleduus, whome he calleth Bladanus	ii.
Capenus or Cap	iii.
Owyn	ii.
Sisillius, whome he calleth Silius	ii.
Blegabredus	xx.
Archemall	ii.
Eldon Eldoll	iiii.
Redian Rodian	ii.
Samull Penisell, whome he maketh two men	v.

Pyr

¶ Capitulum. xlvii.

LUd the eldest sone of Hely was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. [Chap. 22
v. M. C. &. xxxi. This[1] was honourable in all his dedes, for he edyfyed newe Temples, and repayred ŷ olde, he also repayred olde Cyties and Townes, & specially in ŷ Cytie of Troynouant, he caused many buyldynges to be made, & gyrde the sayd Cytie aboue with a stronge walle of lyme and stone, & in the west parte of the sayd walle he arreryd a fayre and stronge gate, and cõmaũde it to be called Luddys Gate, whiche at this daye is clepyd Luddysgate. And for he loued moche this Cytie he vsed moch & moste to lye there; by reason wherof it was called Caerlud or Luddys towne: and after by corrupcyon, or shortyng of the speche, it was named Lõdon whiche name at this daye remaynyeth & abydeth. This Lud also, as wytnessyth Gaufride, was stronge and myghty in Armys in subduynge his Enemyes; he was also lyberall of gyftes and plenteuous in his housholde, so that he was moche loued & drade of his Brytons. But when he had cõtynued his reygne with great honour by the terme of. xi. yeres, he dyed and was buryed i his gate called Portlud or Ludgate, leuynge after hym as wytnessyth Gaufride. ii. sõnes Androgeus and Temancius or Tenancius.

¶ Capitulum. xlviii.

CAssibulan[2], the brother of Lud, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the [Chap. 22.]
worlde. v. M. C. &. xlii. For somoche as the. ii. sõnes beforenamed of Lud were to yonge or insuffycyent for to take on hande so great a charge. But as wytnessyth the olde Cronycle, and also the Auctour of the floure of Hystories, this Cassibulan was nat made kynge, but ruler or Protectour of ŷ lande, for the tyme of the noneage of the foresayd Brether. Albeit myne Auctour Gaufride saythe that after Cassibulan was set in Auctoryte, he became so noble & lyberall that his name sprange ferre: and by his excercysyng of Iustyce ŷ Brytons ought to hym more fauour thã to eyther of his neuewes. Howbeit he cherysshed theym & brought them forth accordyng to their byrth. And whan they came vnto yeres of discrecion he gaue to Andrageus the Cytie of Lõdon w̃ the Dukedome or ŷ Erledome of Kent. And to Temancius the Dukedome of Cornewayll.

In this season was Caius Iulius, ŷ whiche is moste cõmonly called Iulius Cesar, sent by the Senat of Rome as folowe[3] & Consull w̃ Lucius Bubulus into Gallia now called Fraũce, for to subdue them vnto ŷ Empyre of Rome. The whiche Iulius beyng vpon ŷ see syde after he had ouercome ŷ Gallis, & beholdyng ŷ whyte Clius or rocks of Brytayne, enquyred of ŷ coũtre & what peple dwelled therin. And whan he was suffyeyently enfourmed of all ŷ Cõmodyties therof, he had great wyll to brynge the sayd Countre vnder the yocke of ŷ Romaynes: for so moche as at those dayes a great parte of ŷ worlde was trybutary to[4] Rome. But as sayth myn Auctour firste he exorted the Brytons by wrytynge and messengers to gyue Trybute vnto Rome, wherof[5] Cassibulan hauynge indygnacion, wrote vnto hym sharpe and short answeres shewynge that he and euery noble man was bounde specially to kepe his countre from seruage, and to kepe his Subgettes that they myght enioy lybertie & Franchyse, the which to obserue he wolde do ŷ vttermost of his power & myght; with the whiche answere Iulius beyng no thynge contented, in all haste [Chap. 23.]
made redy his Nauye and people, and sayled towarde Britayne. When[6] ŷ Romaynes were comyn nere the Lande of Brytayne, and shuld haue landed, the Brytons pyght sharpe

Pyr pyrrhus	ii.
Glyguell Diuell	iiii.
Hely	i

So that their yeres by this accompt amount to. clxxxxii. yeres."

[1] This man. [2] Cassibelan. [3] felowe. [4] of, edit. 1559. [5] wherefore. [6] and when.

stake

staks and longe vpon the bankes, whiche caused theym to wynne lande[1] with great daunger; and nat longe after theyr landynge Cassibulan w a stronge hooste of Brytons encoūtred the Romaynes, gyuynge or yeldynge to theym suche fyght and battayll that they were fayne to resorte to their Shyppes for theyr suertye. Natwithstandynge as wytnessith Gaufride and other, Iulius, after he had renewed his knyghtes and also ryggyd his Nauy, he came agayne the seconde tyme, entendynge to subdue the Lande to the Empyre of Rome, but as before tyme he was by the manhode of the kynge and his Brytons manfully and knyghtly withstandyn and chasyd, soo this seconde tyme he was in lyke wyse [Chap. 34.] ouercomyn, and compelled to flee without honoure. For whiche victorye thus twyes optayned by the Brytons, Cassibulan entendynge to gyue thanke vnto his Goddes, and reward to his knyghtes, in goodly haste caused an assemble to be made of his Lordes & knyghtes at ȳ Cytie of Caerlud or Lodon, where after dewe obseruaūces done to theyr goddes after the vse of theyr Pagan lawes, a great and Solempne feest was holden by the kynge to all that wolde come, with most lyberalytie & plentie in all that was necessary to suche a feest. And the more to encrease the kynges honoure and to the more comforte and dilectacion of his lordes and other there beynge present, there was all maner kyndes, & games ȳ at those dayes were excersysed & vsed, contynewynge whiche feest, ii. noble & yonge knyghts amonge other happened to assey eyther other in wrastlynge, wherof that one was neuewe to kynge Cassibelan named Hirreglas[2] & that other named Euelinus was Andragius comes vel dux London. allyed vnto Andragius Erle or duke of London. By meane of this wrastlynge dyuycion or vnsyttyng words fyll atwene the. ii. yonge knyghtes, that after wordes ensued strokes by meane wherof parties were taken on eyther syde, whiche ranne togyder in great Ire and malyce. So that on eyther part many & diuers were hurte & wounded, amonge whom Irreglas[2] neuewe to the kyng was slayne, whiche causyd great distourbaunce in the Courte Occacion of tribute. and amonge the lordes.

When the knowlege of ȳ deth of Irreglas[2] was brought vnto the kynge, he was therwith greatly amoued, & entendynge dewe Iustyce to be had and mynystred, by thaduyce of his Barons causyd the forenamed cosyn of Andragius, Euelynus, to be somoned for to appere before hym and his counsayll, and there to acquyte hym of such cryme as to hym was layde for the deth of Irreglas[2] before slayne. But Euelynus by counsayll of Andragius withstode that cōmaūdement, and shortly after the sayde Andragius & Euelyne departed the court without takynge leue of the kynge. The kynge disdeynynge this demeanure of Andragius, after dyuers monycions to hym gyuen, gatheryd his knyghtes & made *Fol. xvii.* warre vpon Andragius, wherefore he consideryng after many wayes and meanes thought that he was nat of power to withstande the kyngs great Indignacion, sent his letters vnto Cayns or[3] Caius Iulius Cesar, shewynge to hym the circumstaunce of the mater, and aduoydynge hym of all gylt, besought & prayed hym in moste humble wyse ȳ he wolde shortly retourne with his Army into Brytayne, and he with his hole power shuld be redy to ayde and helpe hym agnyne ȳ Brytons. Of this message was Iulius verey glade and in al hast made towarde Brytayne with a great power, to whom the wynde was so fauourable that in short tyme after this message he drewe nere the lande. But, as affermeth myn Auctour Gaufride, or he wolde lande, ferynge the treason of Andragius, he receyued from hym in hostage, his sone named Scena, v. xxx. other of the moste noble of his Iulius Cesar. Lordship, & that done he landed with the helpe and eyde of Andragius; wherof whan Cassibelan had warnynge, in all haste he made towarde the Romayns, & in a valey nere vnto Dorobernia, now named Cauntorbury, there he founde the Hoost of the sayd Iulius lodgyd, and with hym Andragius with al his power, after which knowlege had eyther of other, with their habyllements of warre eyther greued other tyll at lengthe bothe hoosts mette hande for hande and faught vigerously, in suche wyse, ȳ many fell on eyther partie. But when the Brytons, as sayth Gaufride, had longe foughtyn, & knyghtly defended the

[1] the lande, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] Hirelda. [3] "Cayns or," *omitted.*

Romaynes,

Romaynes, Andragius ẅ his people cam by a wynge of the Brytons, and theym so sharpely assayled, that they were cõstreyned to forsake the felde and place ỹ they before hadde kept; the whiche Flyght discomforted soo the other, that fynally all fledde and gaue place to the Romaynes, the which theym persued and slewe ẅout pyte. So that Cassibelan with his Brytons that were lafte were fayne to gette theym to a place of suertie, there to rest tyll they myght newly prouyde to ẅstande his' Enemyes.

But fynally as all wryters agree, Iulius helde the kynge so shorte, that for an vnytie and concorde he was fayne to become tributary to the Romaynes, and to paye to theym yerely a certayne trybute, whiche Gaufride affermeth to be. iii. M. li.; & whan ỹ sayd trybute was set in a suertie so that the sayd Romaynes were with it contented, and Iulius had accomplysshed his wyll and pleasure in thynges to hym thought necessary, he with Andragius departed the lande, and so spedde hym towarde Rome, where soon after he was agayne by the wyll of ỹ most of the Senatours made Emperour: and this trybute thus was graunted when Cassibelan had reygned as kynge of Brytayne fully. viii. yeres and more.

Firste tribute graũted.

¶ Capitulum. xlix.

THis begynnynge of this tribute payde by Cassibelan vnto ỹ Romaynes shuld seme by moste concordaũce of wryters to be vpon. xl. and. viii. yeres before Christs Incarnacõn or after some. l. But for profe of the firste sayinge, I haue shewyd my conceyte in the draught or treatyse in latyn[2] before named, the whiche I remytte to the Correccion of suche as haue parfyte vnderstandyng in calculyng of hystories and tymes. And here I make an ende of the seconde parte of this werke; [and in yeldynge Graces to oure moste Consolatrice, that moste blessyd virgyn our Lady saynt Mary, ỹ virgyne[3], here I agayne salute with the Seconde of the forsayd. vii. Ioyes whiche Begynneth,

Gaude sponsa cara dei, &c.

Be Ioyous y[e] spouse of god most dere,
Which, like to ỹ sone, most clerest of light,
When in the day he shyneth most clere,
The world illũynest by menes ful right,
And thorowe ỹ vertue of thy full myght,
Causest ỹ world to be resplendisshaunt
By meane of thy peas which is full habundaunt][4].

This Seconde parte to be accompted from the laste yere of the discorde[5] of the Brytons to the ende of the. ix. yere of Cassibilan, Includeth of yeres. CCC. lxxx. and. ï

INCIPIT PARS TERTIA.

¶ Capitulum. l.

THus maye we vnderstande that by the apoyntment before made Cassibelan cũtynued styl as kynge and gouernour of this lande of Brytayne, whiche by most concord-

[1] theyr. [2] in the tabyle. [3] which. [4] *Omitted in the edit. of* 1542, & 1559.
[5] "Of the discorde" *omitted in the edit.* 1542, & 1559.

aunce of wryters had Reygned before, or he were made Tributary, vpō. ix. yeres; whiche sayd. ix. yere made ỹ yere of the worlde, folowynge thaccompte before expressyd. v. M. C. and l. And after he reygned by thagrement of all wryters as kynge of this lande fully. vii. yeres. So that in all, before the graunte of the tribute and after, he reygned vpon. xvi. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. li.

Andragius Comes Kancie.

NOwe than haue I shewyd to you, how that Iulius Cesaris, by ayde and helpe of Andragius Erle of Kent, made this lande Britayn[1] tributary to the Romaynes, whenne Cassibilan had ben kynge of the sayd lande vpon. ix. yeres; whiche. ix. yere I haue sette for ỹ ende of the Seconde part of this werke, so that the. x. yere of Cassibelan is the firste yere of the thirde part of the sayd werke. Than, as all wryters testyfye, Cassibelan contynued after the departynge of Iulius as kynge by ỹ Terme or space of. vii. yeres as before is declared: In tyme[2] of the whiche. vii. yeres is none noble acte nor dede of hym put in memory or wrytynge.

But for some wold thynke that after Cains or[3] Caius Iulius Cesar had thorough helpe of Andragius Erle of Kent and eldest sone of Lud thus as before is sayd, subdued Cassibelan, that the sayde Iulius wolde haue restoryd ỹ sayd Andragius to the Crowne of Brytayne as his rightfull enherytaunce, and clerely to haue expelled & put out the said Cassibelan from all kyngly diguytie. To this answereth the olde Cronycle and sayth, that Cassibelan was nat the sone of Hely but that he was ỹ Eldest sone of Lud. by reason wherof he was first made kinge, and so as rightfull heyre contynued durynge his lyfe kyng of Brytayne, the whiche whan he had reygned. ix. yeres or he were tributary, and. vii. yeres after, as affermeth the sayd olde Cronycle, in all. xvi. yeres, he thenne dyed without Issue, and was buryed at Caerbranke or Yorke.

¶ Capitulum. lii.

[Chap. 25.]

TEmancius or Tenancius ỹ yongest Sone of Lud, as affermeth Gaufride, was made Kynge of Brytons, in the yere of ỹ worlde. v. M. C. and. lvii. This is named in the Englysshe Cronycle Tormace, and nat kynge, as the sayde boke affermeth, but his elder brother, which in the sayd boke is named Andragen, was, after the affirmaunce of the sayd Englisshe Cronycle, made kyng. But the foresayd Gaufride and other testyfien, that for somoch as Andragius feryd to be euer hated of the Brytons, for his treason wrought[e] agaynst the kynge & the lande, he therfore chase to goo with Caius Iulius to Rome rather than to be kynge of suche as he thought wolde neuer haue hym in theyr loue and fauoure[4]. Thenne it foloweth in the Story, this Temancius ruled the Lande with great dylygence and Iustyce, & defended the lande well and knyghtly agayne all Alyaunts and Straungers, and payde his trybute to the Romaynes that Cassibelan badde graunted; and lastly dyed, whenne he had reygned after moste wryters. xxiii. yeres, and was buryed at Caerlude or London, leuynge after hym a Sone, the whiche was called Kymbalyne.

Bl. xviii.

¶ Capitulum. liii.

[Chap. 25.]

Kymbalinus or Kymbalyne, the sone of Temancius, was of the Brytons made kynge in the yere of the worlde. v. M. C. and. lxxx. Thus[5], as wytnessyth Guydo, was brought forth[6] at Rome amonge the Romaynes, & there made a knyght, & had of theym suche fauoure, that he was at the[7] lybertie to paye ỹ tribute or nat. Of hym is lytell memory made, except all wryters agreen, that in the season that he was kynge our sauyour Criste Ihesus was incarnat of that moste blessyd virgyne our Lady seynt Mary, which shuld be to accord Hystories, in the. xix. yere of his reygne. Of the reigne of this Kymbalyn Auctours

Natiuitas Christi tempore istius Regis.

[1] Of Brytayne. [2] the tyme. [3] "Cains or" *omitted.* [4] theyr loues. *edit.* 1559. [5] This man. [6] up. [7] "the" *omitted.*

wryte

wryte dyuersly. So ỳ some shewe no yeres, and some but fewe, which can nat accorde w̄ the tyme of other Cronicles. But ỳ Auctour of ỳ Hystorye called flour of Hystoryes, wytnessyth that he reygned. xxxv. yeres, the which saying, who lyst to se the Treatyse by me made in Laten before rehercedˡ, he shal there haue knowlege ỳ this said Auctour accordeth best with other Storyes and Cronycles. And whenne that this Kymbalyne had reygned gloryously ouer the Brytons, by all the season before expressyd, he dyed and was buryed at Caerlud or London, leuynge after hym. ii. sonnes named Guyderius and Aruiragusˢ.

NOwe before haue I shewed to you, in the latter Chapter, that Criste was Incarnat in the. xix. yere of Kymbalyne, whiche maketh the yere of the worlde, that is to say, from the firste Creacion of Adam to the Incarnation. v. M. C. lxxx. and. xix., the whiche Accompt is approued by holy Isodreˢ, Bede, and other.

Than Criste was Incarnat, the yere of the world as before is expressed.
From Noes flood or after. ii. M. ix. C. and. lvii.
After Abraham. ii. M. xvii.
After Dauid kyng of Israell. M. lxxv.
From or after the transmygracion of the Iewes to Babilon. v. C. lxxx. and x. Compūs.
After Brute entred Brytayne xi. C. and xxxvi.
After Alexandre the grete nere vpon. CCC. and. xxv.
After the Buyldynge of Rome. vii. C. and. xxix.
And in the begynnynge of the. xlii. yere of Octauius Augustus then Emperoure of Romeᵗ.

¶ Capitulum. liiii.

GViderius, the firste Sone of Kymbalyne, beganne his reygne ouer the Brytons the yere [Chap. 25.]
of the worlde. v. M. CC. & xvi. And the yere after Christes Incarnacion the. xvii. yere. This[5] was welthy and trusted moche in his strength, & for he thought the Romaynes had the forenamed tribute with wronge, he therfore of a knyghtly courage denyed to the Romaynes the said tribute, wherfore Claudius which was vncle vnto Caius Calligula the. iiii. Emperour of Rome, and this Claudius the fyfte[6] came into Brytayne with a great Army of Romaynes, and as wytnessyth Policronica, conqueryd and wanne agayne the sayd tribute without great fight; and that done, he also subdued ỳ Iles of Orchades or Orkeis, whiche stande beyonde Scotlande within the great Occean, and after turned agayne to Rome the. vi. moneth after that he came thens. The Cronycle of Englād, and also Gaufride, say that in the Hoost of the Romaynes was a Capitayne named Hame or Hamon, the whiche entendynge hurte & destruccyon of the Brytons, chaūged his Shelde or Armure and dydde vpon hym the Armoure of a Brytayne, and by that meane as a Bryton mysclad, and[7] entred into the thyckest of the hoost, and lastly vnto the place where as kynge Guyderius faught, and shortly after slewe the kynge. But Aruiragus seynge this sodayne Myschyef, to the ende ỳ the Brytons shulde nat gyue backe, he hastely causyd hym[8] to be Armed with the cognisaunce of the kynge, and so for kynge cōtynued the fyght with suche manhode that the Romaynes were put to flyght. Thus by accorde of wryters, Guyderius was slayne of the foresayd Hamo, whenne he had reygned ouer the Brytons by concordaunce of other Hystoryes. xxviii. yeres, leuynge after hym none heyre of his body to guyde the Lande after his deth.

ˡ the Table before rehersed. ˢ Arvigarus, edit. 1559. ˢ Isodore. ᵗ At the close of this Account, in the Margin of the edit. of 1542, we have
"Note, that Brytayne, nowe called Englande, was inhabyted xi. C. and xxxvi. yere before the incarnacyon "of Christ. And that London was buylded before Rome. iiii. C. & vij. yeare."
[5] This man. [6] "And this Claudius the fyfte" *omitted in the subsequent editions.* [7] he.
[8] hymselfe.

¶ Capitulum. lv.

[Chap. 26.] ARuiragus, the yongest sone of Kymbalyne, and brother to Guyderius before slayne, was ordeyned kynge of Brytons, in the yere of our Lorde. xliiii. This in the Englysshe booke is named Armager, the whiche, as there is shewed, well and knyghtly mayntey ned the warre agayne the Romaynes, and after slewe the forenamed Hamo nere vnto an Hauen or port of the see, and hym, so slayne, threwe Gobetmeale into the same see. For this skyll was this Hauen longe tyme after called Hamons Hauen, which at this daye is called Southampton. Thenne it foloweth in the. viii. Chapitre of the. iiii. Booke of Policronicon, that Claudius, after dyuers happes of Bataylle, toke Aruiragus to his grace, and brought his doughter, Genuissa[1] by name, from Rome, and Maryed her vnto Aruiragus; and for he wolde make the place of the maryage more Solempne, he therfore called the Towne of maryage Claudiocestria after his name. The whiche before was called in Brettysshe tunge Caerleon, and after Glouernia after a Duke of Demecia that hyght Glora, but nowe this Towne is named Glouceter.

Glouceter towne.

All otherwyse telleth the Englysshe Cronycle, and sayth, that Armager scomfitted Claudius, and compelled hym to gyue his Doughter Genuissa or Gennen to the sayd Armager to wyfe, with condicion that the Romaynes shuld neuer after that day clayme any tribute of Brytayn, except alonely Feawte, whiche saying appereth doughtefull for dyuers causes. Wherof one is, that the sayd Armager shuld nat constreyne Claudius to gyue his doughter to hym. For so moche as the sayd Armager had neuer seen the sayd Gennen before tyme, nor knewe nat of her Conuersacion. Thanne meruayl it were that he shuld force her Fader to gyue hym a wyfe that he hadde caste no loue vnto before tyme. One other reason is ỹ the sayd Cronycle testyfyeth, that after he had maryed the sayde Gennen, he was at London Crowned kynge of Englande: For I wolde thynke if he hadde ouercomyn Claudius as there is surmytted[2] he wolde firste haue crowned hymself kynge, and thenne haue maryed his Doughter. But by the same reason it certyfyeth more strenger the former sayinge of Policronica. For by all lykelyhod, Claudius wolde nat suffre hym to be Crowned kynge, tyll he hadde fully perfourmed his promysse in Mariynge of his doughter.

Fol. xiii.

And albeit that myne Auctour Gaufride varyeth nat moch from the Englysshe Cronycle, I thynke in that doynge he tooke ensample of Homerus that wrote the dedys and Actes of the Grekes, the whiche shewed and put in Memorye all the noble Actes by theym doon. And specyally in the Recuyll or boke made by hym of ỹ Siege of Troye. But the other dedys, concernynge theyr dishonoure, he hydde it as moche as he myght; and in lyke manere do many other wryters whiche I passe ouer: And so Gaufride, for he was a Bryton, he shewed the beste for Brytons. Thanne it foloweth after the Solempnyzacōn of this Maryage, whiche was with all honoure fynysshed, Claudius sent certayne Legions of his knyghtes into Irlande to rule that Countre, and retourned hym selfe to Rome.

¶ Capitulum. lvi.

IT was nat longe after the departynge of Claudius, but that Aruiragus rode aboute his Realme, and with great dilygence Repayred Cyties and Townes before decayed and broken with the strength of the Romaynes, and entreatyd his Subgettes with suche Iustyce and good ordre that they loued & drade hym more thenne any of his progenytours. This in tracte of tyme made hym welthy, and by meane of this welthines ensued[3] Pryde; So that hym thought great shame to be vnder the rule or guydynge of the Romaynes: Wherfore lastly he denyed the tribute before graunted, wherof whanne knowlege came vnto the Senate of Rome, in all haste was sente a Duke of Rome called Vaspacian with a certayn of Legions to subdue Aruiragus. Ye shall vnderstande that a Legion of knyghts is. vi. thoussande. vi. hondred. lxvi. Whanne Vaspacian was landed in Brytayne, as tes-

[1] Gemissa. [2] Surmysed. edit. 1542, 1559. [3] issued. edit. 1559.

tyfyeth

tyfyeth Policronica, he spedde hym so that in shorte whyle he subdued Aruiragus to ỹ Empyre, and causyd hym to graunte payment of ỹ foresayd tribute, whiche was done, as sayth Gaufride, by entreatie of the Quene Gennissa, & of no constraynt nor coaccion. Whenne Vaspacian hadde thus recoueryd the tribute, he than also made Subgette to the Empyre, an Ile in the see lyinge vpon the Sowthe syde of Brytayne, nowe called the Ile of Wyghte; and after retourned to Rome.

Whenne Aruiragus was thus Secondly brought vnder ỹ yoke of the Romaynes, he became more myelde towarde theym. So that whyle he lyued after, he payde his tribute with lasse Grudge, and contynued hym in theyr fauoures, in such wyse that he was of theym wel beloued: And so lastly dyed whenne he hadde ruled the Brytons well and nobly, by the terme of xxx. yeres, and was buryed at Caerglone, Caerleone, Claudiocestria or Glowceter, leuynge after hym a sone named Marins[1].

¶ Capitulum. lvii.

[Chap. 26.] MArins[1] ỹ sone of Aruiragus, was ordeyned kyng of Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. lxxiiii. This, in the Cronycle of Englande, is named Westmer, whiche Marins[1], as wytnessyth Gaufride, was an excellent wyse man, and guyded his Brytons moste honourably, and in great prosperyte and welthe. In the tyme of the reygne of this Marins[1], a Duke or kynge of a nacion called Pictes, as[2] wytnessyth Virgilius, are descendyd of a People called of olde tymes Scytis[3], they also are named Gothis or Hunys. This foresayd leder of Picts is named, of Gaufride, Rodris[4], the whiche landed with a great Nauy, in the prouynce of Albania, now[5] Scotlande, and it began to waste with Iron & with fyre. Wherof whanne Marins[1] was warned, he in all haste assembled his knyghtes, & made towarde his Enemyes and gaue vnto theym stronge batayll, in the which Rodris[4] or after some Rodicus, was slayne, and a great parte of his people were slayne; in remẽbraũce of whiche victory, kyng Marins[1] lette arrere a great stone, & ī this he cõmaũded to be grauen Marii victoria, which is to meane the victory of Marins[1]. Wylliam of Malmesbury sayth ỹ this stone was arered in mynde of Marins[1] ỹ Consull of Rome. The Englysshe Cronycle sayth that this batayll was foughtyn in a place, the whiche nowe is called Stanysmore. Butte where so this stone is sette, the Countre there aboute was lõge after called West maria, and now Westmerlande: Then it foloweth in the Storye that when the resydue of the people of Rodicus[6], whiche were fledde from the felde, vnderstode that theyr hedde and Capitayne was slayne, they made humble request to the kynge that he wolde accept theym vnto his grace, and that he wolde graunte to theym some Lande & Countre to dwell in; whiche graunted vnto theym a place in the ferre ende of Scotlande, whiche is named of myne Auctour Catenesey[7], where the sayd Scytis[8] or Pictes firste enhabyte[9] theym, and for somoche as the Brytons disdayned to gyue vnto theim theyr doughters in Mariage, therfore they acqueynted them with the Irysshe men and maryed theyr doughters, and grewe in proces[10] into a great people; and for this Allyaunce attwene the Irysshe and them, theyr Countre as wytnessyth Policronicõ. xxxvii. Chapitre of his firste boke was called Irlande, and after Pictauia, and lastly Scotlande. And whenne Marins[1] had thus subdued his Enemyes, he attendyd and sette his mynde to the Cõmon wele of this lande and subgettes, and contynued the resydue of his lyfe in great tranquyllyte and reste: And so lastly payde his naturall tribute and was buryed at Caerleyll, leuyng after hym a sone named Coilus or Coyll, whenne he had reygned after most wryters. lii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lviii.

[Chap. 26.] COylus ỹ sone of Marins[1], was after the deth of his Fader made kynge of Brytons,

[1] Marius. edit. 1533. Maurius. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] whych as. [3] Scythis. [4] Londricus. [5] now called. [6] Lodricus, edit. 1533. Loudricus, edit. 1542, 1559. [7] Cathenesia. [8] Scoytis, edit. 1542. Scottes, 1559. [9] inhabyted. [10] in processe of time, edit. 1559.

in the yere of our Lordes Incarnaçion. C.xxvi. This was from his Infancy norysshed and brought vp among the Romaynes in Italia or Rome, by reason wherof he was to theym louynge & kynde, and they in lykewyse[1] vnto hym, and he for somoche as he knewe the power of the Romaynes great, in auoydynge of warre and other daunger, payde vnto theym the forsayd Tribute durynge his lyf. This[2] also as wytnessith Gaufride, was a lyberall man of gyftes by reason wherof he opteyned great loue of his nobles and also of his Cōmons, and as some Auctours haue, this Coill made the Towne of Colchester, which at this daye is a fayre Towne in the Shyre of Essex. But other ascribe it to Coell or Coill, that was kynge nexte after Asclepeodotus. But when this Coilus had reygned in Soueraygne peace, by the terme of. iiiii. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at Caerbranke or Yorke, and lafte after hym a sone the which was named Lucius or Lucy.

Fol. xx.

¶ Capitulum. lix.

[Lib. ii. caput. x.] LUcius or Lucy, the sone of Coilus, was made kyng of Brytons in the yere of our Lord. C.lxxx. The whiche in all Actes and dedys of goodnes folowed his forefaders in suche wyse, that he of all men was beloued and drad. Of this is lytell or none acte notable put in memory, except that all wryters agree that this Lucius sent to Eleutherius, than pope[3] of Rome, certayne Pistles or letters, prayinge hym that he and his Britons myght be receyued to the fayth of crists Churche; wherof the Pope[4] beynge very Ioyous and gladde, sent into Brytayne. ii. noble clerkes named Faganus and Damianus[5], or after some Fugacius and Dimianus; thyse. ii. good and vertuous clerkes were honourably receyued of Lucius, the whiche, by theyr good Doctryne & vertuous ensamples gyuynge, conuertyd the kynge and a great parte of the Brytons.

But for somoch Auctours and wryters wryte dyuersly of the tyme of this receyuynge of the fayth by Lucius, so that the one varyeth greatly from the other: Therfore I haue shewed in ỹ forenamed treatyce[6] made by me in Laten, that it shall, vnder correccion, appere, that the fayth was receyued by Lucius, as affermeth Petrus Pictauiensis, the. viii. yere of the reygne of the sayd Lucius: And the yere after Cristes Incarnacion. C.lxxx. and. viii. The whiche Lucie, after the fayth thus by hym receyued, by the aduyce of the foresayd Clerkes, and with the Instruccyons sent to theym by the foresaid pope[7] Eleuthery, Instituted and ordeyned that all or the more partie of Archeflamynys and Flamynys, whiche is to meane Archebysshoppes and Bysshoppes of the Pagan lawe, whiche at that daye were in nombre as wytnessyth Gaufride and other. iii. of the Archeflamynys, and. xxviii. of the Flamynys, were made and ordeyned Archebysshoppes, and Bysshoppes of the Churche of criste, as after foloweth.

Archeflamynys, Bysshoppes Constituted.

Bysshopes constituted. THE firste of the Archeflamynys See, rule, or Iurisdicciō, was, as wytnessith Alfrede[8] and Policronica, at London, the seconde at Yorke, and the thirde at Caerurst, or Kaer-

[1] "in lykewyse" *omitted.* [2] This Coillus. [3] bishop. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Eleutherius. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Dumianus. [6] forenamed table. [7] "Pope" *omitted in edit.* 1542. 1559. [8] Gaufride.

glonne or Glowceter. To these[1] iii. Archebysshoppes were Subiect the foresayd. xxviii. Flamyns or Bysshoppes. To the Archebysshoppes See of London was subiect Cornewayll & all myddyll Englande vnto Humbre. To ỹ Archebysshoppes See of Yorke was subgette all Northumberlande, from the Bowe of Humber with all Scotlande. And to ỹ thirde Archebysshoppes See whiche was at Glowceter, was Subgette all Walys: In whiche prouynce of Walys, were. vii. Bysshoppes, where as nowe ben but. iiii. At[2] that daye Senarnne departed Brytayne & Cambria or Walys. But in the tyme of Saxons after hadde[3] the rule of this lande of Brytayne, as testyfyeth Wilhelmus de Pontifie. Albe it that scỹt Gregory hadde grañted vnto London the pryuelage of ỹ Archebisshoppes See. Neuerthelesse scỹt Austyne, the which with other was sent into England by the foresayd Gregory tourned the Archebysshoppes See out of London into Caũterbury. After the deth of Seynt Gregorye by meanes of prayer of kynge Egbert or Ethelbert, & other Cytezeyns & Burgesys of Caunterbury, where it hath cõtynued to this day, except ỹ for ỹ tyme of Offa, kyng of Mercia or Mercherik, for displeasure that he hadde to the Cytezeins of Caunterbury by name, & toke from them that dignyte, and worshypped Adulphe bysshop of Lychefelde with ỹ Pall of Caũterbury, by thassent of Adryan, the firste of that name, than Pope[4]. Neuerthelesse of[5] the tyme of Kenulphus, whiche nat longe after was kyng of the sayd Mercia or Mercheryk, it was agayne restoryd to Caunterbury. *Fol. xxi.*

The worshyp of the See of Yorke hath enduryd there alwaye, & yet doth though Scotlande withdrawen[6] from his Subieccion. The Archebysshoppes See of Caerglone or Glowceter was tourned frome thens to Menenea, whiche is in the West syde of Demecia, vpon the Irysshe See, whiche nowe is called seynt Dauid Lande. In this prouynce from ỹ dayes of seynt Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampson, Bysshop, sat. xxiii. Bysshoppes. But in the sayd Sampsons dayes, than Archebysshop, fyll such mortalyte thorowe Walys of ỹ yelowe euyl called the Iaundyes, that moche people therof dyed. Wherfore ỹ sayd Sampson toke with hym ỹ Pall, & sayled into Armorica or lytell Brytayne, and was there bysshop of Dolence or Dolences, and from that tyme vntỏ the firste Henriis tyme, kyng of Englande, hadde sytten at Menenia, or seynt Dauiis. xxi. bysshoppes and all without Pall, but whether it were for lacke of Cũnynge, or ellys for powertie, it is nat asserteyned. Neuerthelesse alway from the tyme of the sayd Sampson, vnto the foresayd Henry, the firste tyme all the Bysshoppes of Walys were sacred of the Bysshop of Menenia or Seynt Dauiis. And ỹ Archebysshop of Menenia was at all tymes sacred of the Bysshoppes of Walys as of his Suffrigãs, and made noo profession nor obieccion to any other Churche. Butte after thyse dayes, other Bysshoppes that satte there were compelled to be sacred at Caunterbury: In token of whiche Subieccion Boniface, Archebysshop of Caunterbury and legate of the Crosse, sange in euery Cathedrall Churche of Walys a Solempne Masse, which was done by the sayd Boniface in the tyme of Henry the seconde, beyng kynge of Englande. *De wallia.*

But nowe ye shall vnderstande there beeth[7] but. ii. Prymates or Archebysshoppes in all Englande and Walys. That one is at Caunterburye and that other is at Yorke. To ỹ prymat of Caũterbury ben Subiect. xiii. Bysshoppes in Englande, and. iiii. in Walys. And ỹ Prymat of Yorke hathe but. ii. Suffrigans in Englande, whiche be the Bysshoppes of Caerleyll and of Durham, and who so wyll be further Instruct of the ordre and Chaunges of Bysshoppes See of Englande, lette hym rede ouer the. lii. liii. lv. lvi. and. lvii. Chapiters of the firste booke of Policronicon, or a parte of holy Bedis werke, whiche he compyled of the same Matter called Historia Anglicana, and there he shall haue euery thynge sette out clerely and truely.

And for to contyneve my processe of Lucius, as wytnessyth myne Auctoure Gaufride, whenne he hadde, as before is sayd, Stablysshed and orderyd the foresayd Archeflamyns

[1] the, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] And at. [3] they had. [4] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542, 1559.
[5] in. edit. 1533, 1542. [6] be withdrawen. [7] ben.

and

and Flamyns, and that they were also confermed of the pope[1]; he thenne endowed theym with suche landes and possessions, as before tyme were occupyed or gyuen to ŷ Maynteynynge and vpholdynge of the pagan Rytes and lawe, vsed before tyme. And the Temples of Idollys thoroughe his lande he caused to be Dedicat to Ihesu Criste and his Seyntes, and honouryd theym moche[2] great, and ẅ large gyfts. And whenne he hadde done, after most accorde of wryters, by the terme of. xii. yeres he dyed and was buryed in the Cytie of Claudiocestre or Glowceter without heyre of his body, the whiche after grewe to great damage of the Brytons as after shalbe shewed.

Tabula. Of this Lucius it is shewed in a Table hangynge vpon the wall of ŷ North syde of ŷ Ile in ŷ back of ŷ Quere of seynt Poules Churche of London, that the sayd Lucius reygned ouer the Brytons. lxxvii. yeres. And ouer that, the Auctour of Cronica Cronicarum testyfyeth, ŷ after Lucius had receyued ŷ feyth, he assembled a great hooste of Brytons and sayled ouer into Gallia or Fraunce: and thens into other Countres, passynge by Becia, and the Cytie called Augusta, and there Subdued many of the Enemyes of Cristes fayth, where after many vertuous dedys, he restyd ī good peace: And his Suster called Emerita, as sayth the sayd Auctour, was also martyred for Cristes sake. But of this sayinge and other, the doute is assoyled in the foresayd treatyse made in Laten[3], where it shall appere that he reygned but. xii. yeres, as aboue is shewed.

[And for somoche as in this Lucius endeth for a tyme, the lyne of Brytons, and the lande after this daye, was ruled somedele by the Romaynes, therfore I wyll here ende the thirde parte of this werke, ad[4] for the good spede I haue hyderto hadde, and to the ende to Impetre the more grace in accomplysshynge the other dele of this werke, I here salute our moost blessyd Lady with the thirde Ioy of the foresayd. vii. Ioyes whiche begynneth.

Gaude splēdens vas virtutū. & cetera.

Hayll and be glad thou vessell moost shynynge
Of vertue[5] and grace, at whose cōmaundement
The hole Court of Heuyn is euer and byddynge,
And thou also art amonge theym ment
Moost benygne, and happy to euery good entent,
As dyngne[6] moder of Ihesu, with moost excellence,
Honoured in glory with all theyr assystence][7].

This thyrde parte to be accompted from the ende of the. ix. yere of Cassibelan to the last yere of Lucius Includeth of yeres. CC. xli.

TRouthe it is, as affermyne all wryters, that after the dethe of the forenamed Lucius, for so moche as of his body Remayned none heyre, the Brytons amonge theym selfe fyll at great dystaunce and warre. The whiche warre and trouble endured to the great dystourbaunce of the lande. But howe longe the certeynte[8] is nat set out by any wryter that I haue seen, Excepte the Englysshe Cronycle sayth, that it endured. l. yeres, the whiche sayinge, vnder Correccion, can nat stande with the concordaunce of other wryters, as it is more playnly declared in the treatyse of Laten before spoken of[9]. Where also it shall appere that the sayd discorde amōge ŷ Brytons, cōtynued but oonly. xv. yeres.

Tempus discordie.

After whiche Terme of. xv. yeres exspyrid, as after more clerely shall be shewyd, Seuerus beynge than Emperour of Rome began his Domynyon ouer this lande of Brytayne.

So that ye shall nowe vnderstande that the last yere of this discorde was ŷ yere of our

[1] byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542, 1559. [2] wyth muche. [3] foresayd *Table* in the begynnyng of this worke. [4] And. edit. 1533. [5] vertues. edit. 1533. [6] dygne. edit. 1533. [7] *omitted in the edit of* 1542, 1559. [8] certayne. [9] foresayde Table.

lorde

lorde. CC. and. vii., by reason wherof, it foloweth that the sayde. xv. yeres Ieyned vnto the foresayd thirde parte, that the sayd thirde parte conteyneth & Includeth of yeres. CC. lvi.

Explicit Pars Tertia.

INCIPIT PARS QUARTA.

¶ Capitulum. lxi.

SEuerus, a Romayne, at this day Emperour of Rome began to rule this Lande of Brytayne, in the yere of our Lordes Incarnacion. CC. and vii.[1] the whiche, as wytnessyth Gaufride, and[2] was before tyme sent from the Senat of Rome iv. ii. Legions of knyghtes into Brytayne, to appease the warre & stryfe amonge theym, and also for to withstande the Pictes & other Enemyes, whiche dayly inuaded the Lande; for dyuers wryters agree ẏ this Seuerus was made Emperoure, the yere of Cristes Incarnacōn. C. lxxx. &. xv. and ruled the sayde Empyre, after moost wryters. xvi. yeres: by whiche rule it shuld appere that he shulde be taken for gouernoure of this Realme of Brytayne, the. xii. yere of his Empyre. Bel. xxii. Chap. 2.]

It is saydè of this man, that after he hadde Subdued the Parthis, and the Arabis, he was named Particus, and was sent, as before is sayd, of the Senat of Rome into Brytayne, wher he caused to be made, at the coste of the Cōmonte, a walle of Turuys and great stakes, of the lengthe, as wytnessyth Policronica, of. C. xxii. myles, as in the. xviii. Chapitre of his. iiii. booke apperyth. This wall, after thexposicion of the said Policronica, began at the Ryuer of Tyne, and enduryd to the Scottysshe see; or from ẏ ende of the lordshyp of Deyra, vnto ẏ sayd Scottysshe see; or after some wryters, from Durham to the see beforesayd. Walle of Turuys.

Thenne it foloweth, the Pictes, with theyr leder Fulgēcius[3], issued from Albany or Scotlande, into the Lande of Brytayne, distroyed moche of the Coūtre beyonde Durham. Wherfore, this Seuerus, with an hoost of Brytons & of Romaynes, mette with the sayd Fulgencius[3] in a place nere vnto Yorke, where, after sore Fyght, the sayde Seuerus was slayne, whenne he hadde ruled this lande, after moost concordaunce of wryters, by the terme of. v. yeres, & was after buryed at Yorke, leuynge behynde hym. ii. sōnes, that one named Geta, and that other Basianus.

¶ Capitulum. lxii.

BAsianus, the sone of Seuerus, and of the moders syde a Bryton, beganne to rule this Lande of Brytayne, in the yere of Cristes Incarnacion. CC. &. xii. Of this man spekyth no thynge the Englysshe Cronycle. But trouthe it is, as wytnessyth Gaufride, and other, that after the dethe of Seuerus, stryfe arose attwene the Brytons and the Romaynes, thenne beynge within the Lande of Brytayne. For the Cōmons helde for theyr [Chap. 2.]

[1] viii. [2] "and" omitted. [3] Fulgenius.

kynge Basianus, for so moche as he was borne of a Bryton woman: and vpon that other partie in lyke maner, the Romaynes they allowed Geta for theyr kynge, because he was descendyd of a Romayn. And, as ferther affermeth the forenamed Gaufride, for this discencion a Batayll was hadde attwene the sayde. ii. Bretherne, in the whiche Geta was slayne, and Basianus remayned for kynge of all the lande.

Opinio Auctorum. But from this sayinge varyeth greatly Eutropius. And other that wrytte of the Cronycles of Rome. For by them it is wytnessyd that Geta was slayne at a Cytie named Edissa, whan he faught agayne the Parties[1]; and Basianus succedyd his Fader in the dignyte of Emperoure, whiche, as in the sayde Cronycle of Rome is testyfyed, was also called Antonius. Marcus Aurelius[2] and Caracalla, a man of right euyll condycion and vnresonable of Lechery. Soo that he lay by his Stepdame & hir weddyd named Iuliana and dyd other many cruell dedys, and lastly was slayne at the forenamed Cytie of Edissa, when he hadde ben Emperoure vpon. vii. yeres.

In the tyme ỹ Basianus was thus Kynge of Brytayne, one named Carancius[3], a Bryton of lowe byrth, in mercyall dedys[4] purchaced of the Senate of Rome the kepynge of the Coostes of Brytayne. And to withstande ỹ malyce of straungers, as Pictes & other, by meane of this Carancius[3] drewe vnto hym many knyghtes and specially of the Brytons, promysynge to theym that if they wolde make hym kynge, he wold clerely delyuer theym from all Seruytude of ỹ Romaynes, where thoroughe the Brytons, as wytnessyth Gaufride, rebelled agayne Basianus, and with theyr Duke & leder Carancius[3], arreryd agayne hym deedly warre, by meane wherof Basianus was slayne, whenne he hadde ruled this Lande, by moost cōcordaunce. vi. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxiii.

[Chap. 2.] CArancius[3], a Bryton of vnknowen byrthe, was of the Brytons made ruler, in the yere of our lorde. CC. xviii., the whiche, as before is touched, was by the Senate of Rome deputed for a Substitute or a Ruler vnder the Romaynes, as it is shewed in theyr Cronicles. In the absence or whyle Basianus, thenne Emperour of Rome, and kynge of Brytayne, was occupyed aboute the nedys of ỹ Empyre, this Carancius[3], for that he was nat of power to withstande the Pictes, or for the fauour that he bare towarde theym, for aydynge hym agayne the Romaynes he gaue to theym the Countree of Albania, that nowe is called Scotlande.

Scotlãde.

But ye shall vnderstande that here is nat ment all Scotlande, for, as wytnessyth Policronica, this parte that was gyuen thus to the Pictes, was the Southe parte of Albania, and beganne at Twede, and enduryth to the Scottysshe see: of the kynde of those Pictes is somwhat shewed before in the Story of Marins[5], but more after shalbe shewed of theym in conuenyent place, both of theyr ofsprynge and maners.

Thenne it foloweth in the Storye, when ỹ Romaynes had knowlege of the deth of Basianus, anon they sente a Duke from Rome named Allectus with. iii. Legions of knyghtes for to slee Carancius[3], and to subdue ỹ Brytons to the Empyre; to the whiche Allectus fortune was so fauourable, that he chased Carancius[3], and lastly slewe hym, whenne he had ruled the Brytons, by mooste accord of wryters. viii. yeres.

Fol. xxiii. But Iacobus Philippus, Auctoure of a booke named Supplemētum Cronicarum, sayth, that in ỹ tyme that Maxymyanus or Maxymyan, surnamed Herculeus and Dioclesian Dalmatheus, were Emperours of Rome, and harde[6] that this Carancius[3] had taken vpon hym to were the purpure, ỹ oonly was reserued to Emperours, and also that he ruled the Realme of Brytayne as to his synguler vse; and furthermore were credyble enfourmed that Narsetus another Substitute, hadde, or occupyed ỹ Eest Landes with cruell Batayll; and other prynces had vexed[7] the great Coūtre of Affrica; many other also by the insti-

[1] Parthiens. [2] Marcus Aurelius Antonnius. edit. 1533, 1542. [3] Carassius. (*Carausius*).
[4] but valyant and hardy in mercyall dedys. [5] Marius. [6] they harde. [7] "had vexed" *omitted.*

gacion

gacion & leuyng[1] of one named Achilleus, had subdued the Countre of Grece; for whiche sayde nouellys and tydynges, thyse. ii. Emperours to the ende to refourme all thyse sayd Rebellions, chase vnto theym. ii. noble men, of the which that one was named Galerius, and that other Constancius, as Cesars or Felowes to rule the Empyre: And that done, the sayd. ii. Cesars sent[2] with great powers, that one into Affrica, and that other into Egypt. This forenamed Maxymyan came with a great power of people into Brytayne and ouercame the sayd Caransius[3], more by gyle then by strength, whanne the sayd Caransius[3] hadde ruled the Brytons, as saith the forenamed Auctour Iacobus Philippus, by the terme of. x. yeres.

This Galerius was surnamed Moximianus, lyke as Maximianus was surnamed Herculeus.

In the whiche saying appereth errour for dyuersitie of tyme and yeres. For after moost accorde of wryters, and also by the affyrmation of the sayd Iacobus Philippus, the sayde Emperours Dioclesian and Maxymyan ruled the Empyre of Rome aboute the yere of Cristes Incarnacion. CClxxxx. and this Carancius[3] was ruler in Brytayne longe before, as in the tyme of Basianus Emperour of Rome, that reygned aboute the yere of our Lorde. CCxiii. as testyfieth Policronicon & other.

Variacio Cronicarum.

Also a boke in Frensche called la Mere de Histories, whiche may be Englisshed the Moder of Hystories, sayth, that this Carancius[3] was firste as a Treasourer, or suche an hyghe offyce[4] among the Romaynes, by reason wherof he soughte great habundaunce of ryches, and fyll, by meane[5] thereof, in fauoure of the Senatours of Rome; Soo that fynally, he was made Senatoure, and became a man of great Auctoritie; in somoche that Basianus, thenne Emperoure, made hym protector of the Cytie and Coūtre of Alexandry. But then he was supprisyd with such pryde, that he exercisid Tyranny and other vnlefull meanes in so excedynge maner, that the Countree waxed wery of hym, & cōspyrid his deth. Wherfore, after punysshmēt done vpon some of his Enemyes, he feryngē ȳ Sequell and Reuengement of the same, laft that Countree and retourned vnto Rome; where, after he hadde a season restyd, he was, by the Senate of Rome, assygned for his Sternesse vnto the Rule of Brytayne, with the ayde of. iii. Legions of knyghtes. And so, beyng Garnysshed with all abylymentes of warre, entrede this Ile of Brytayne, and with great trauayle subdued theym to the Empyre, and so contynued the lyues tymes of the Emperoure Basianus.

But so sone as he was asserteyned that the Emperoure was slaine at Edissa, as before in the Storye of Basilianus[6] is shewed, thynkynge that the Romaynes[7] shulde growe stryfe and dissencion, for the eleccion of a newe Emperoure, by reason of whiche stryfe, he myght the rather lyue so ferre from theym without any correccyon, confederyd with the Scottes and certayne other of the Brytons, and slewe many of the Romaynes, suche of theym as he thought wolde nat consent to his treason. And by that meane, fynally was made kynge of Brytayne, and so contynued, as affermeth the sayd Auctour, to accompte from his firste hauynge rule vnder the Romaynes, vnto the tyme that he was slayne of Allectus. viii. yeres, nat without excercysynge of his olde accustomed Tyrannyes and other vnsyttynge Condicyons.

¶ Capitulum. lxiiii.

ALlectus, a Duke or Consull of Rome, sente, as before is sayde, from the Senate, began to rule the Brytons, in the yere of our Lorde. CC. and. xxvi. This in the Englysshe Cronycle is named Allec, which whanne he had restored the lande to the Subieccion of Rome, he then pursued certayne of ȳ Brytons that hadde fauoured Carancius[3] agayne the Romaynes, and in that doynge, vsed and excercysyd many Tyrannyes and exaccions, by reason wherof he fylle in great Grudge of the Brytons, wherfore, they entendynge to oppresse and subdue the power of the Romaynes, purchasyd and excyted a noble man of the {Chap. 2.}

[1] ledyng, edit. 1559. [2] were sent [3] Carassius. [4] Offycer. [5] reason [6] Basianus. [7] amonge the Romaynes.

Brytons called Asclepeodotus & Duke of Cornewayll; the whiche gatheryd a great Hoost of the Brytons, & made warre vpon the Romaynes, & chasyd theym frome Countre to Countre, and from towne to towne; lastly Allectus with his Romaynes drewe hym to London, and there keped hym for his moost suertie. Wherof beynge warned, Asclepeodotus with his Brytons came nere vnto the sayd Cytie, where by meanes of prouocacion on eyther party vsed, lastly the Romaynes Issued oute of the Cytie and gaue Batayl to the Brytons, in the which fyght many fyll on eyther partye, but the more on the partye of the Romaynes; amonge the whiche was also slayne Allectus: Wherefore a Capitayne of the Romaynes called Liuius Gallus, aduertysynge this myschief, and the great daunger that the Romaynes were in, drewe backe into the Cytie with the Romaynes that were lefte on lyue, & defendyd it with theyr powers. Thus thenne appereth that Allectus was slayne of the Brytons, whiche was by moste accorde of wryters, whan he had rulyd this lande vnder the Romaynes by the terme of. vi. yere.

¶ Capitulum. lxv.

[Chap. 2.] ASclepeodotus, Duke of Cornwayll, as sayth Gaufride, but aftter the sayinge of Eutropius and Beda, he was presente[1] of the Pretory of Rome, this[2] began his Domynion ouer ȳ Brytons, in the yere of our Lorde. CC.xxxii. The whiche, as before is sayd, with his Brytons, gyrt the Cytie of London with a Stronge Syege, and kepte the foresayd Liuius Gallus and his Romaynes in streyte holde; and fynally, as affermeth myne Auctour Gaufride, with knyghtly force and violence entred the sayd Cytie, and slewe the forenamed Liuius Gallus nere vnto a Broke there at that daye Rynnynge, and hym threwe into the sayde broke, by reason whereof, longe after it was called Gallus or Wallus brooke, and this daye[3] the strete where sometime ranne the sayd brooke, is now called Walbroke. Walbrooke. And after he had thus venquysshed the Romaynes, he helde this lande a certayne of tyme in peasyble wyse, and ruled the Brytons with good Iustyce, inwardynge[4] and exaltynge the good men, and punyssynge of the euyll.

In this whyle, by styrynge of disclaūderous & deuylysshe persones, a grudge was arreryd attweene the kynge and a Duke of his lande called Coill or Coilus; the whiche was Duke or Erle of Kaercolyn or Colchester, wherof the cause is nat apparaūt: But how it was, great people were assembled on both parties, and fynally mette in the felde, where *Fol. xxiiii.* was Foughtyn a great and stronge Batayll, in the whiche Asclepeodotus was slayne, when he had reygned, to ȳ Concordaunce of other Hystoryes, and after the affyrmaūce of the olde Cronycle, by the space of. xxx. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxvi.

COelus Erle of Colchester, began his Domynyon ouer the Brytons in the yere of ȳ Incarnacion of Criste. CC.lxii. This in the Englysshe booke is called Coyll, the whiche guyded the lande to the pleasure of the Brytons a certayne tyme; butte, as wytnessyth Gaufride, when the Senate of Rome had vnderstandynge of the deth of Asclepeodotus, they were Ioyous of the dethe of hym, forsomoche as he had euer ben an Enemye to the Empyre; but forsomoche as at that dayes was great dissension amōge theymself, as wytnessyth the Cronycle of Rome, they coude nat cōuenyently sende any Army of knyghts for to warre vpon this Coelus; wherfore he contynued the longer in reste and Seynt Alboon. good peas. After the Cronycle regestred within the Monastery of seynt Alboon, the sayd holy Martyr suffred his passion[5] in the yere of our lorde. CC.lxxx. and. vi., Whiche shulde be the. xxiiii. yere of this present (kyng.) But this discordeth from suche wryters as affermen ȳ holy man to be martyred in the. x. persecucion, vnder Dioclesian & Maxymyan Emperours.

[1] Presydente. [2] "this" *omitted.* [3] at this day. [4] In rewardynge. [5] dethe, edit. 1542, 1559.

Neuerthelesse,

Neuerthelesse, at lengthe was sente from the Senate a noble wyse man called Constancius, ŷ which, as affermeth the forenamed[1], had before tyme subdued to the Empyre a great part of the coūtre of Spayne; But that sayinge disagreeth to the wrytynge of Eutropius, for the Countre of Spayne was nat subdued by hym tyll after that he was Emperour. Than it foloweth whanne this Constancius was arryued in Brytayne with his Army, anone Coelus assembled his Britons; but for he dredyd the strength and fame of this Constancius, he sente to hym an enbassed, affermynge vnto hym Condicyons of peas, with graunte of paymentes of the Trybute which before was denyed: Or ellys, as meaneth Policronica, within a Moneth after the landyng of this Constancius, Coelus was dede, wherefore ŷ Britons to haue the more peas, wyliyd this knyght to take to wyfe Heleyn the doughter of Coelus, with the possession of ŷ lande of Brytayne; whiche by hym was graunted: Than, as before is sayd, Coelus dyed, whenne he hadde ruled the Brytons, after moste accorde of wryters. xxvii. yeres. Helena sc2.

¶ Capitulum. lxvii.

Constācius a Senatour of Rome, as saythe Policronica, beganne to rule the Brytons in the yere of our Lord. CC.lxxx. and. ix. This, as before is shewed, Maryed Heleyn the Doughter of Coelus laste kynge of Brytayne: but ye shall vnderstande that this Constancius was firste Maryed vnto Theodora, the step doughter of Herculeus Maxymyanus, and hadde by her six sonnes, Soo that this Heleyn was his seconde wyfe, whiche was fayrest of all Maydens, and therwit lerned and suffycyently lettred; she is also noted of many wryters to be a Captyue or a prysoner to ŷ Romaynes. Of this Constancius lytell memorye is lafte in the Brettysshe or Englysshe Cronycles, except that he receyued of the foresayde Eleyne a Sone named Constantius[2], the whiche after, for his knyghtly and Merciall dedys, was called Constantyne the great. [Chap. 3. Pol. li. 4. cap. 24. & 25.]

But for the noble dedys of so victoryous a Duke shuld nat be hydde, as was this Cōstancius, therfore I shall now folowe ŷ Story of Rome, whiche sayth, ŷ for somoche as in the tyme of Dioclesianus and Maxymyanus beynge Emperours, many Countres rebellyd agayne the Empyre, therefore the sayd Emperoures admytted this Constancius and one Galerius as Cesars, which was a dignytie next of Auctorytie to the Emperoures, and so ŷ Empyre was at those dayes guyded by. ii. Emperoures, & by. ii. Cesars. This Cōstancius, as wytnessyth Policronica, made subiecte to the Empyre the Almaynes, and slewe of theym in one day. lx. M. And after other many victorious dedys, whan ŷ forsayd. ii. Emperoures had of theyr free Wylles resygned and gyuen ouer all Imperyall dygnytie, this sayde Constancius ẇ his forenamed felowe Galerius, were made Emperours; that is to wytte, that Galerius was Emperour of all Iliricum, whiche nowe is named Grecia or Grece, with all the Eest landes, and Constancius hadde to hym all the West landes; But he helde hym content with Gallia or Fraunce, and Spayne, with Brytayne, and graunted Italia vnto Galerius aforesayd. Then he subdued the Countre of Spayne, as before is touchyd in the Story of Coelus, and a part of Gallia, and after Soiourned and abode in this lande of Brytayne in guydynge & rulynge the same with great sobernesse, and ordeyned his sone gotten vpon Helayne to rule Gallia and Spayne.

But for to make this Story more apparaunt and opyn to the readers, & also to the herers, it is here to be noted that Dioclesianus or Dioclesian began his Empyre ouer the Romaynes, after most wryters, in the yere of our Lorde. CC.lxxx. and. vii. And he was Emperour. xx. yeres, and this Constancius[3] was sent into Brytayne from the Senat, as before is sayd, in the seconde yere of the sayd Dioclesian, or the yere of our Lord. CC.lxxx. and. ix.; which Constancius, after he had in due maner spede the nedys of the Empyre, as in subduyng this Lande of Brytayne, as before is sayde, he retourned agayn to Rome, where he was shortly after made Sesar, and so contynued his lyf, as before is touchyd.

And in ŷ tyme of his beynge thus Sesar and ruler of Brytayne vnder the Emperour, ŷ

[1] forenamed auctoure. [2] Constantinus. [3] Constantine, edit. 1559.

blessyd

eynt Alboon. blessyd and holy prothomartyr of Brytayne, seynt Alboon, at Verolamy was martyred, In the. x. persecucion of the Churche, as wytnessyth Policronicon; whiche persecucion began, as testyfie Eusebius and Beda, the. xviii. yere of ỹ fore named Emperours, Dioclesian & Maxymyan, & endured x. yeres, that is to saye, in the Eest vnder Dioclesian, and in the West vnder Maxymyan, ỹ whiche was so sharpe & feruent, that within the space of one Moneth, in dyuers places of ỹ worlde, were. xvii. M. holy men and women Martyred for Cristes fayth. And whenne the sayd Emperours lafte, or resygned theyr Imperyall dignytie, and ladde a pryuat lyfe, this sayd Constancius with his felowe Galerius, departid the Empyre attwene theym, as before is touchyd; So that he reygned as ruler of Brytayne, by the terme of. xvii. yeres, and more, or he were Emperoure, and after as Emperoure of the West partye of the Empyre, and kynge of Brytayne, xii. yeres and more: and so in all, the sayd Constancius Reygned ouer Brytayne xxx. yere, and lastly dyed and was buryed at Yorke, leuynge after hym ỹ foresayd sone called Constantinus, without moo that any mencion is made of.

¶ Capitulum. lxviii.

Fol. xxv. [Chap. 3. Pol. li. 4. caput. 26.] COnstantinus, the sone of Constancius, and of Helayne doughter of kynge Coelus, in the yere of our Lorde. CCC. and xix. was made kynge of Brytayne. Antoninus Archebysshoppe of Florence, and wryters' of Hystories, sheweth in the firste Chapitre of the. ix. tytle of his werke called Summa Antonini, that this Constantyne was made Emperoure, or beganne to rule the Empyre in the yere of oure Lordes Incarnacion. CCC. &. ix., whiche saiynge also affermeth Vyncent Historyall and other Auctours, wherof ỹ cause is that ỹ sayd Auctours accompt nat the yeres of the reygne of Constancius, but folowe the accompt of Galerius felowe of Constancius, whiche reygned as Emperour but. iii. yeres: after the whiche rule it must nedys folowe, that this Constantyne began his Empyre as the sayd Antoninus wytnessyth, and folowynge the other accompt it shulde varye.

Thanne to pursue or contynewe the Story of this Constantyne, it foloweth that at the tyme of the decease of Constancius his Fader, he was occupied in warres in Gallia and those parties: after whose dethe he by a certayne Terme ruled Brytayne, and the other landes, the whiche his Fader before helde in due maner. And albeit that at that daye he was a Myscreant and pagan, yet he vsed no Tyrannyes, nor compelled not the Brytons to refuse the lawe and to worshyppe Idollys, as other Tyrauntes at those dayes vsed. In this whyle that Constantyne ruled thus the West parte of this Empyre, one Maxencius, whiche was the sone of Herculeus Maxymyanus, somtyme felowe in the Empyre with Dioclesian, as before is shewed, was of the Knyghtes of the pretory declared Emperour. This Maxencius was there worste of all men, and as testyfyeth Eusebius and other, he firste beganne mekely to wynne therby loue and fauoure; but whenne he was stablysshed in Auctorytie, he excersysed all Tiranny, and pursued ỹ Christen* with all kynde of turment: Also he expulsed and put out from Rome and all honour, his fader Herculeus Maxymyanus ỹ ententyd agayne to haue been Emperoure. Of the Tyranny of this Maxencius, whenne Constantyne hadde wyttynge, he assembled a great hoste of Brytons and Gallis, for to oppresse the malyce of ỹ sayd Maxencius.

And for to rule & guyde this Lande of Britayne in his absence, he deputed and ordeyned a man of might called Octauius, the whiche Policronica nameth duke of Iewessis, that after were named west Saxons; and whenne the sayd Constantyne had all preparyd for his voyage, he betoke ỹ Lande of Britayne vnto the sayd Octauius, and after sped hym vpon his Iourney; and as he was towarde his sayde Iourney, he sawe in his slepe, the sygne of the Crosse shynynge in the Fyrmament, as it had ben a brennynge lyghte of Fyre, and an Aungell standynge therby and sayinge, "Constantyne Toicanata," whiche is to meane, "Constantyne by this token thou shalte wynne victory." Whenne he awoke he called this vicyon to mynde, and tolde vnto his Secretes, by whose Counsayll

Magni. Constātini.

' wryter. * All Crystyens.

he

he cõmaunded the sygne of the Crosse to be peynted, and sette in his Baners and penons, and of all his knyghtes.

¶ Capitulum. lxix.

WHenne Cõstantyne had thus ordeyned of[1] the sygne of ŷ Crosse, he spedde hym forthe towarde ŷ sayd Tyraunt Maxencius, and mette w̃ hym at a Brydge called Pont Milnium, where after longe fyght, chased the sayd Maxencius, and hym with a great parte of his Hoost drowned in the water of the sayde Brydge, when he hadde reyngned as Emperour vpon. v. yeres. After whiche victory thus hadde, the sayd Constantyne went vnto Rome, where he was receyued of the Senate with moost triumphe, and there caused the sygne of the Crosse to be paynted in the ryght handes of the Images, whiche the Senatours of olde tyme hadde areryd in worshyppe of theyr victories; and vnder the feet of the sayd Images, he caused to be wrytten, "This is the sygne and token of the lyuynge God, that maye nat be ouercomyn."

Soone after, this Constantyne[2] was conuertyd from his pagan lawe vnto Crists fayth, by vertue of the blessyd Vernacle as some haue ben, Or by ŷ good Doctryne of ŷ blessyd pope seynt Siluester[3], first of that name; the whiche was made pope[4] in the yere folowynge Cristes Incarnacion. CCC. and. xiii. Thenne Constantyne opened ŷ prysons and destroyed the Temples of fals goddes, and dedicat theym in the worshyp of God and his seyntes: He also opened theym that tofore were shytte and kepte close, and caused dyuyne seruyce in them to be sayde, and gaue to the Churche of Rome firste possessions[5]. And also he ordeyned ŷ Bysshop of Rome shuld be hedde of all bysshoppes, and all other to be obedyent vnto hym: He also bare claye vpon his shulders, to the foundacion of seynt Peters Churche, as wytnessyth Policronica and other.

Of this firste Indowement of the Churche, ar dyuers thyngs shewed, as rehersyth Gwaldus[5] Cambrensis, seynt Ierom and other, the whiche I ouer passe for lengthynge of tyme of this werke. And whyle that Constantyne was thus occupyed ī Rome, his moder Helayne, thanne beynge ferre from hym, and herynge that he was become a Cristen man, sent vnto hym letters of recõmendacõn that he hadde forsaken the worshyppynge of Idollys; but she dispraysed hym in that, that he worshypped a man ŷ was nayled vpon a Crosse: But after the receyte of thyse letters, he wrote answer to his moder that he shulde suffycyently proue that he byleued & worshypped hym that was firste Creatoure and maker of all the worlde, and nat oonly a man, but also God and man, with dyuers other poyntes touchynge the fayth, whiche I ouerpasse.

For resonyng and profe of this was after assygned. vii. score Iewes, & Siluester with a certayne nombre of Cristen clerkes, to dispute the Articules of Cristes faythe, where after dyuers myracles shewed, and good profe made by holy Scripture, the sayd Iewes were confoũded; and the sayd Helayne was cõuerted vnto the fayth of cristes Churche, and traueyled soone after to Ierusalem, where she by her Industry and labour, fande out the holy Crosse, with the. iii. nayles that oure Lorde was nayled with to the same crosse: Whercof she laft there a part, and the other dele was brought vnto Bizancium, nowe called Constantyne noble[6], whiche Cytie the sayd Constantyne greatly augmentyd with Excellent buyldynge; and therin also caused to be areryd a Churche of meruaylous beautie, and named it Sophia. [Whenne the Emperour hadde receyued the foresayd part of the Crosse, w̃ the. iii. nayles, He after some Auctours, put. ii. of the sayd nayles in

[1] "of" *omitted.* [2] Siluester B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] "the whiche was made pope," *omitted in edit.* 1542, 1559. [4] The edition of 1542, has this note in the margin. * "Note also, that "the space of. iii.C. yeares after Christe, yᵉ B. of Rome was of no more autorite then oure bysshopes: but "then being infected by Cõstãtyne with possessions, he began to swell in pride, & wolde be head ouer hys "brethren, cõtrarye to yᵉ vse of the prymatiue churche, & also cõtrary to Christes holye doctryne. Suche "is the nature of possessions, for aslong as he was poore & walked in the trade of yᵉ Apostles, he soughte no suche preemynence, &c." [5] Giraldus. [6] Constantynople, edit. 1559.

the

the brydell of his hors, whiche he vsed in batayll; and the thirde he caste or caused to be cast, as wytnessyth scynt Ambrose, in a Swalowe of ŷ see called Mare Adriaticum, whiche Swalowe was before that tyme, so perylous that vnnethes any shyp escapyd that daunger; and garnysshed the Crosse with many riche stones freit with golde, & after with great reuerence conueyde it to Rome, as in dyuers Hystories is declared][1]. Thenne this Constantyne remoued the Emperiall See vnto his Cytie of Cōstantyne the noble: and there for the more partie kept his Emperiall honoure: and other Emperours in lyke-
Fol. xxvi. wyse after hym: by reason wherof ŷ Emperoure longe[2] after called Emperoures of Cōstantyne noble. This man was so myghty and Marcial in his Feates and al his dedys, that for his more honour he had an addycyon put to his name, and was called for his great myght and power, Constantyne the great. He was also the firste Cristen Emperoure, and dyd many notable Actes for ŷ weale of Cristes fayth, amonge the whiche. vii. are noted by the forenamed Antoninus, in the. ix. tytle of the seconde parte of his werke before named, wherof

The firste, was, that Criste shulde be worshypped as God thorough ŷ Cytie of Rome.

The seconde, was, that whoso of Ihesu Criste spake any Blasphemy, he shulde be greuously punysshed.

The thirde, what parsone that dyd any Iniury or wronge to a Cristen mā, he shulde be depryued or put to the losse of halfe his gooddes.

The fourthe[3], that lyke as the Emperoure of Rome is hede of all temporall Prynces, Soo the Bysshop or Pope of Rome[4] is hede of all Bysshoppes.

The fyfte, that what parsone fledde to the Churche for his sauegarde, or suertie, ŷ he there shulde be defended from all peryll and daunger.

The syxte, that noo man shulde presume to buylde any Temple or Churche within any Cytie or Towne without the specyall lycence of his bysshop.

The seuenth, that euery Prynce shulde gyue the. x. parte of his possessions to the buyldynge & meynteynynge of churches. The whiche lawe he firste executed, and after with a Pykax or Mattoke, with his owne hande, breke the grounde, where as nowe standeth scynt Peters Churche. And. xii. Cophyns or Treys full of Erth he bare away vpon his shulders, as wytnessyth the foresayd Antoninus and other.

But after those manyfolde good dedys, he fyll into the heresy called Aryannys heresy, by meane wherof he was so blynded ŷ he than became an Enemy to Cristes Churche, and persecuted Cristen men, and exyled the Pope[5] Siluestre, or as some meane ŷ sayd Siluester fledde the Cytie for fere.

Constātyne. For this as wytnessyth Iacobus Philippus and other wryters, this Constantyne was smytten with the euyll of lepre; for curynge wherof. iii. M. Childer were brought to themperours Paleys to be slayne, that he in the blode of theym myght be bathed, and soo clensyd of his lepry: But whanne he sawe the Childer and the moders sorowynge for
Exemplum misericordie. theym, he was moued with pyte and sayd, The dignyte of Thempyre cometh of Myldnesse, for it is demyd that he shuld dye ŷ sleeth a Childe in batayll: Than what Crueltye were this to sle so many Innocentes wylfully, yet better it were to vs to dye and saue those Childers lyues, than to gette a cruell lyfe by the dethe of so many Innocents: for this myldnesse it is redde that scynt Peter and Poule apperyd to hym the nyght folowynge, warnyng hym to sende agayne for Siluestre ŷ Pope, and he shuld by hym be re-

[1] *Omitted in the edit. of* 1542 *and* 1559. [2] Emperours were long. [3] Here, in the margin of the edition of 1542, we have another note. * "Note the prompte readynes & wyckednes, & ambicion of the B. of Rome, that he wolde receaue thys tytle at ye hād of Constantyne, whō he knewe a nouesse in Christes fayth, & leaue the godly vse & example of ye primatyue churche. But suche is theyr nature, y^t if an infidel augmēte their pride & ambiciō it must be receaued as ye wholsome doctrine of the church. But & if a Christian prince do any thynge abate their pryde, he must be railed at, & called an heretyck, an infydell & enemye of holye church, and although he do it by thautoryte of Goddes holye woorde." [4] "or pope" *omitted* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] "the Pope" *omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

storyd to perfyght helthe, whiche was done, and he heled as the Legende of Seyntes bereth wytnesse[1].

Thus haue I shewed to you a parte of the dedys of Constantyne, whiche if I shulde contynue the hole processe of his reygne, that endured as Emperoure by the space of. xxx. yeres, I shulde therof make a large volume. But for it concerneth no thyng of thentent of this werke, as touchynge the Lande of Brytayne, therfore I woll retourne my style to Octauis[2], from whom I haue made a longe degression.

¶ Capitulum. lxx.

Octauius Trechery. [Cap. 3.]

IN this passetyme, whyle Constantyne occupyed hym in nedys of Thempyre as aboue is shewyd, Octauius beynge Lieutenaunt in the Lande of Britayne vnder Cōstātyne, ruled ỹ lāde to ỹ pleasur of the Brytons a certayne of tyme. But whanne he parceyued that he was in fauoure of theym, and that Constantyne was ferre from hym, castynge also in his mynde that the sayde Constantyne beynge than Emperour, wolde or myght nat lyghtly retourne into Brytayne; he therfore with helpe of his affynyte and frendes, withstode the Romaynes lefte in Brytayne of Constantyne, and vsurpyd the Rule and domynyon of the lande. Wherof whan certayntie came to ỹ knowlege of Constantyne, he in all hast sent into Brytayne a duke named Traherne, the whiche was vncle vnto Heleyne Moder of Constantyne. When this Traherne was arryued in Brytayne w̄ iii. Legions of knyghtes, anone Octauius made towarde hym with his Brytons, and wyth hym mette nere the Cytie than called Kaerperis, now called Port chestre or Porchestre; but more verely in a felde nere vnto the Cytie of Kaerguent, that now is called Wynchester, whiche felde than was named Maesurian. The. ii. hoostes mette with great Ire, & foughten longe whyle, but in the ende Traherne was compelled to forsake the felde, and after drewe with his Romaynes towarde Albania, or Scotlande: Wherof Octauius beynge warned, folowed hym, and in the Countree of Westmerlande gaue vnto hym ỹ seconde Batayll, where than Octauius was chasyd and Traherne was victour; the whiche pursued Octauius so egerly, that he cōpelled hym to forsake the lande of Brytayne, and to sayle into the Countre of Norway for his sauegarde.

But it was nat longe after, that the sayd Octauius gaderyd anewe people of Britons and Norways, and was redy to retourne agayne into Brytayne; in whiche tyme as testyfyth myne Auctour Gaufride, an Erle of Brytayne that entierly loued Octauius, by treason, slewe the sayd Traherne, a lytell before the landynge of the sayd Octauius. Thenne landynge, Octauius[3] subdued the Romaynes & ỹ lande to his owne vse. This shulde be after moost Concordaunce of wryters, when Constantyne with also the ayde of Traherne, hadde ruled this Lande of Brytayne by the terme of. x. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxi.

[Cap. 3.]

OCtauius Duke of the Iessis, otherwyse Westsaxons, began his reygne ouer ỹ Brytons in the yere of our Lord CCC.xxix.[4]; this in ỹ Englysshe boke is called Octauian, ỹ which as testyfyeth Gaufride, gaderyd, in short whyle after, so great plentie of Treasoure and rychesse that he feryd no man, and ruled this Lande in peasyble wyse; so that of hym or of his Actes is lafte lytell memorye, except that whanne he was fallen into age, by the Counsayll of the Brytons, he sent vnto Rome for a noble yonge man of thaly of Helayne, Moder vnto Cōstantyne, called Maximus[5], as after more playnely shalbe shewed. Albe it that some aduysed hym to make one Conan Merydok, his Cosyn, kyng after hym: But by ỹ Instant labour of Karadok, than Duke of Cornewayll, Octauius lastly sent vnto Rome, Mauryce, the Sone of the fornamed Karadok, to brynge or conuey the sayd Maximus[5], into Brytayne, for to marye the oonly Doughter of Octauius, and by rea-

[1] *This miracle is of course omitted in the edit.* 1542. 1559. [2] Octauius. [3] Whyche shortly subdued. [4] Two hundred and xxix. edit. 1559. [5] Maximianus.

son thereof, to enioy the Reame of Brytayne. This Maximus[1], is of some Auctours
Fol. xxvi. named Maximius, the whiche, as wytnessyth Gaufride, was ỹ sone of Leolyne[2], Brother to Heleyne, and vncle vnto Constantyne the great, whiche saynge affermeth also Iacobus Philippus, Auctour of a booke called Supplementum Cronicarum, wherin he nameth the sayd Maximinus[1] a knyght of the Bryton bloode.

Thenne it foloweth whenne the forenamed Mauryce hadde spedde his nedes, So that he came to the presence of Maximus[1], and shewyd to hym theffect of his Message, the sayd Maximus[1] to hym graunted, and in all haste preparyd for his voyage into Brytayn, and shortly after with a conuenyent cõpany landed at Southhampton. Wherof beynge warned, Conan Meridok with a certayne of knyghtes of his affynyte, was purposed to haue frayed with the sayd Maximus[1], and to haue distressed hym; for somoche as he well knewe that by hym he shulde be put from the rule of the lande. But this purpose was let by ỹ cõmaundement of the kyng, or otherwyse, so that ỹ sayd Maximus[1] was conueyed safely to the kynges presence, and shortly after, with consent of the more partie of his Lordes, gaue his Doughter vnto ỹ sayd Maximus[1], with possession of this Ile of Brytayne; the whiche Maryage solempnysed and endyd, the sayd Octauius dyed shortly after, but howe longe he reygned none of the foresayd Auctours testyfye, except dyuers of theym agre ỹ he contynued his reygne tyll the tyme of[3] Gracian and Valentynyan Ruled the Empyre, the whiche beganne to reygne the yere of our Lorde. CCC.lxxx. and ii., by whiche reason it muste folowe that the sayd Octauius reygned at the leest. liiii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxii.

[Cap. 4.] MAximus[1], or Maximius, the sone of Leolyne[2] & cosyn Germayne of Constantyne the great, was made kynge of Brytons[4] in the yere of our Lord. CCC.lxxx. &. ii. This in the Englysshe booke is named Maximian, the whiche, as testyfyeth Gaufride and other, was stalworth and mighty of his handes, but for he was crüell and pursued somdele the Cristen, he therfore of all wryters is called Maximius ỹ Tyrant: attwene this and Conan before named was stryfe and debate, and dyuers conflutes[5] attwene theym was foughten, in the whiche eyther of them spedde dyuersly. Albe it that lastly they were made frendes, so that Maximius[1] reygned a season in Quiete, and gaderyd richesse and treasour, nat all with out grudge. Lastly he was moued & exyted to warre vpon ỹ Gallis, thorow whiche coũcel he ỹ a great host of Brytons sayled into Armorica, that nowe is called lytell Brytayne, and bare hym soo knyghtly, that he subdued that Countre vnto his Lordshyp, and after gaue the sayd Countre to Conan Merydok, to holde of hym and of the kynges of great Brytayne for euer; and than cõmaundyd the sayd lande to be called lytell Britayne.

For this victory his knyghtes proclaymed hym Emperour, where thoroughe he beynge the more exaltyd in pryde, passed ferther in the landes of the Empyre, and victoriously Subdued a great parte of Gallia or Fraunce, and al Germania. For this dede dyuers Auctours accompte hym false and persecutyd[6], wherfore it shulde seme that before his departynge frome Rome, he was sworne vnto Gracian and Valentinyan, Emperoures, that he shulde neuer after clayme any part of the Empyre. And also for the brekynge of this othe, he was after chalengyd or blamed of Seynt Martyn bysshop of Turon; to whom he answered that he was compellyd of his knyghtes to take vpon hym as Emperoure, or ellys he shuld of theym haue ben slayne. Neuerthelesse the sayd Bysshop shewyd vnto hym that for his vntrouthe he shulde nat longe prospere or reygne.

After that worde was broughte vnto the Emperours, that Maximus[1] hadde with harde Batayiles thus subdued Gallia and Germania, Gracianus with a great hoost came downe to resyste hym. But whenne he harde of the marcyall dedys of Maximus[1], he was a drade & fled backe to the Cytie of Lugdon or Lyons in Frauce, where after ỹ sayd Gracianus

[1] Maximianus. [2] Leonyne. [3] that. [4] Brytayne. [5] Conflyctes. [6] periuryd.

was

was slayn, & his brother Valentynyan was compellyd to flee to Constantyne the noble. Thenne Maximus to haue the more strength to withstande his Enemyes, made his sone, named Victoure, felowe of the Emperoure. In this whyle that Maximus warred thus in Italye, Conan Merydoke, to whom, as before is sayd, Maximus had gyuen the Lande of lytell Brytayne, for somoche as he and his Knyghtes hadde no wyll to mary the doughters of Frenschmen, but rather to haue wyues of theyr owne blode, therefore this Conan sente Messengers vnto Dinotus[1], than Duke of Cornewall, and chief ruler of Brytayne, wyllynge hym to sende his Doughter Vrsula with a certayne Nombre of Virgyns, to be coupled to hym and to his Knyghtes in maryage, the whiche soone after preparyd accordynge to the Request of Conan, the foresayd Vrsula, accompanyed with. xi. M. Virgyns, and were sent by her said Fader towarde lytell Brytayne, as wytnessyth the Englysshe Cronycle, Gaufride and also Policronica. Undecim Millia virginum.

But it shulde appere by the sayinge of Antoninus, Iacobus Philippus, and other wryters, that this Vrsula with her Company shulde nat be sente forthe of moche Brytayne, nor martyred[2] aboute this time, but in the tyme of Marcianus beynge Emperoure, the whiche began his Empyre, after moost accorde of wryters, in the yere of oure Lorde. iiii. Hondred. li. Of the martyrdome of this[3] Maydens, dyuers Auctours wryte dyuersly. Wherfore I remytte theym that wyll haue farther vnderstandynge In this matier, vnto the Legende of Seyntes, radde yerely In the churche, where they maye be suffyciently taughte and enfourmed.

¶ Capitulum. lxxiii.

ANd as before is shewed, Maximus beynge occupyed in warres in Italy. ii. Dukes named Gwanus and Melga, the whiche, as Gaufride testyfieth and other, were sente from Gracian and Valentynyan Emperours, to punysshe and subdue the Brytons that fauoured the partye of Maximus, warred sore vpon the costes of great Brytayne, and occupyed a great parte of Albania, wherof whan Maximus hadde knowledge, he sente into great Brytayne a Knyght and Capytayne named Gracianus or Gracian. The whiche with. ii. Legyons of knyghtes, bare hym so knyghtly, that in shorte processe he chasyd ỹ sayd. ii. Dukes into Irlande, & helde the lande of Brytayne in good Peas to the behalfe of Maximus. [Cap. 4.]

In this whyle Maximus contynuynge his warre agayne the Empyre, & entendynge to be Emperour, Theodocius named the Elder, thanne Emperoure of the Eest parte of the worlde, herynge of the deth of Gracian, and chasynge of Valentynyan w a great power, spedde hym towarde the sayd Maximus, and shortly after at a Cytie in Italy named Aquilea, toke the sayd Maximus and hym beheddyd; whan knowlege of the deth of Maximus was cōmyn to Gracian, that than hadde the Rule of moche Brytayne, he seasyd the Lande, and made hym selfe by strength kynge of Brytayne, when or after that Maximus hadde gouerned the same, by most accorde of wryters, by the space of. viii. yeres. *Fol. xxvii.*

¶ Capitulum. lxxiiii.

Gracianus, ỹ which of Gaufride is called Municeps, that maye be taken for an hyred or wayged knyght, or for the keper of gyfts, or beryng the chief Rule of a Cytie, began to rule the Brytons, in the yere of our Lorde. CCC.lxxx. and. x[4]. the whiche excersysed all Tyranny & exaceyon vpon his Subiectes. For the whiche he was hadde in wonderfull hatered amonge ỹ Brytons, and amonge theym cast and sought many wayes & meanes for his destruccion; but he by dyuers meanes escapyd theyr[5] daungers, & punysshed grieuously all suche fautours. Wherfore lastly, as sayth Gaufride, they fyll vpon hym of an hole assent and kylled hym, whenne he had reygned, or more verely vsurped, by the terme of. iiii. yeres. [Cap. 4.]

[1] Dionotus. [2] Maryed. [3] these. [4] cccc. and xc. edit. 1542. [5] the. edit. 1542. 1559.

¶ Capitulum. lxxv.

[Cap. 4.] AFter that Graciã was thus slayne of the Brytons, the foresayd Gwanus & Melga knowyng the Brytons to be without hede or ruler, assembled also people, and retourned into moche Brytayne, wastynge & brennynge on euery syde, & destroyed great plente of Brytons, as wytnessyd Gaufride & other.

But Policronica sayth, that whanne the Romaynes knewe of the deth of Gracian, they sente a knyght called Constantyne to haue the Rule of Brytayne and other Countrecs there aboute; but he was after demed an Enemy to the Empyre, for harme and scathes by hym done in Fraunce; wherefore by cõmaundement of Honorius thenne Emperoure, a knyght or erle called Cõstancius was sent agayne ỹ forenamed Constantyne, and slewe hym at a place or Towne called Arelet; after this the Brytons were agayne vexed by the Pictes and other straunge Nacions, by reason whereof they were constrayned to sende agayne to Rome, requyrynge theym of ayde vpon condicion that they shulde alwaye be Subiect vnto Rome; the whiche request and promesse thus harde of the Senat, Honorius aforenamed was sente into Brytayne a Legyon[1] of knyghtes, whiche is. vi. thousande. vi. hondred. lxvi. The whiche Legion ẅ helpe of the Britons chasyd the foresayd Picts and other Enemyes, and taughte the Brytons to make a wall ouerthwart the lande from see to see, that is to meane from the water of Humbre to the scottysshe see, and ordeyned theym wardeyns and kepars of the walle, and after retourned to Rome. This walle, as testyfyeth Policronica, was made of Turuys, and strechid, from Pemiltonne or Penultonne vnto the Cytie of Acliut or Acliud: But for this wall was of small strengthe, the Enmyes before named distroyed certayne parties of this sayde walle, and ouer rode the Countre, & toke great prayes dayly, and dyd as moche harme as they hadde done before tyme. Wherfore the Brytons were constrayned to seke for newe socour to the Romaynes. Then dyd Foloaynes send an other Legion, the whiche agayne chased the sayd Pictes and other Enemyes, and made than a walle of stone of the thyckenesse of. viii. fote, and in heyght. xii. fote, in ỹ selfe place where before tyme Seuerus had made a dyke & walle of Turfs; and that done ỹ Romaynes comforted and exhorted the Brytons to be manly and corageous to withstande theyr Enemyes, shewyng to them ferther that they shuld truste to their owne strength, forsomoche as the Romaynes beynge so ferre frome theym, myght nat lyghtly come from so ferre with an armye of knyghtes, and also nat without great coste & trauayll. After whiche monycõn and exhortacion thus gyuen to the Brytons, by the mouth of the Archebyssbop of London, with other Instruccions apperteynynge to the feyts of warre, the sayd Romaynes toke leue of the Brytons as thoughe they shulde after that tyme no more retourne ĩto Brytayne.

De mure.

Of ỹ stone walle.

[Cap. 5.] Of the Pictes or Scottes.

But it was nat longe after that ỹ Romaynes thus departyd, that the Picts and Scottes beganne to breke out of theyr Dẽnes and Caues. Thyse. ii. Nacions after some Auctours shulde seme to be one, but by the declaracõn of Ranulphe in his. lviii. Chapitre of his firste booke they shulde appere to be. ii. maner of peoples, or at the leest dwellyd in. ii. sundrye Countres. As the Pictes in the Northe syde of Scotlande, or after Beda in the Southsyde, which cõteyneth Galeway & Lodeway, and ỹ Scottes by ledyng of theyr Duke Renda shuld possede[2] Irlande. Albe it after an arme of ỹ Northe part of the see passynge by Deyra, shuld departe the Pycts, but in ỹ tyme ỹ Saxons[3] ruled this lãde, the Scottes by maner treason[4], slewe the myghty men and Rulers of the Pictes, and so after kepte that Countre for theyr owne. Thyse. ii. Nacions discorde in maners, but nat in clothyng and in fayth, and[5] Couetyse of the shedynge of mans blode, they be one. Thenne as before is sayd, thyse Pictes and Scottes entred the lande, and breke the walle before made, and slewe the Wardynes thereof, and after spoyled and robbed the Countres, and chased so cruelly the Cõmons and other, that they were comfortlesse, by meane

[1] wyth a Legyon. [2] possesse, ed. 1542. 1559. [3] the Saxons. [4] Of Treason. [5] and in.

wherof ŷ Brytons were brought in suche daunger & Misery, that either of theym robbed & slewe other; and ouer this the grounde was vntylled and vnsowen, wherof ensued great scarsytie and hunger, and after hunger ensued deth.

Thus after one myschief one other[1], as deth vpon deth, and sorowe vpon sorowe, whiche fyll vpon theym by stryfe medlyd with the great hunger: the whiche mysery in this wyse contynuynge, the Chief of theym toke aduyse amonge theym selfe, and fynally concludyd, that for remedye of this myschief they wolde sende vnto Aecius thanne beynge kynge in Fraunce, which Aecius was Maister of the Chiualry of Honorius than Emperour, and occupyed in warres in a parte of Gallia. To this Aecius was sente wrytynge, wherof theffect was this. "To thy manhode Aecius be it vnderstandyn the myserie of the Brytons, the whiche straunge Nacyons chase vnto the See, and ŷ see dryueth vs agayne to straunge Nacions, of the whiche ensuyth. ii. maner of Caraynes, ŷ one by violence of the Enemyes swerde, and that other by wylfull drownynge," but all other[2] wrytyng was but in vayne. So that from the sayd Aecius, nor yet from the Romaynes hadde they no refuge nor comfort. In this while the hunger encreased, and the people were soo ouerset with theyr Enemyes, that many of theym were as yolden, and toke partye agayne theyr owne neyghboures: and the other that were of more power and dwelled ferther within the lande, diffendyd theym in theyr best maner. Lastly the noble and wysest of them, and specyally the Archebysshop of London with other of the lande, kept a Coũsayll at London; by the whiche it was concludyd that an Embassade shuld be made vnto the kynge of lytell Brytayne to Impetre and aske of hym ayde and cõfort in theyr great necessite: Of which Ambassade the said Archebysshop was appoynted for chief and pryncipall, the whiche is named of Gaufride, Gwitellinus, and of ŷ Englysshe Cronycle, Gosselyne. Whiche sayde Bysshop with the other vnto hym assygned, soo spedde theym, that in shorte and conuenient tyme they came vnto the presence of Aldroenus than kynge of lytell Brytaygne, and to hym declaryd the Effect of theyr Message, the whiche hauynge compassyon of the lamentable request made vnto hym by the sayde Ambassade, after aduyse taken of his Lordes, graunted vnto the Bysshop, vpon condycion that if God sent to theym victory of their Enemyes, that they shulde crowne his Brother kynge of great Brytaygne, the whiche he entendyd to sende thether with a conuenyent Armye; whiche condycion the sayd Bysshop with the other gladly acceptyd and fermely graunted.

Miseria Britonũ.

Fol. xxviii.

[Cap. 5.]

Soo that thus it is apparent vnto you that this Lande was longe without headde or gouernour, whiche length of tyme is of some Auctours determyned to be longe and of some but shorte: so that lytell certeyntie is therof lafte.

Wherfore I haue shewed and dryuen certayne reasons after myn Opynyon and dull mynde in the Treatyse of Latyn[3] before expressyd, wherin it shall appere vnder Correccion, that the sayd season and tyme of this Lande beynge without kynge, to rekyn from the laste yere of Gracian vnto ŷ firste yere of Cõstantyne nowe next ensuynge, was fully. xxxix. yere.

Finit Tributum.

Ye shall also furthermore vnderstande that here endeth fynally the Tribute and domynyon of ŷ Romaynes. For after this daye they hadde no Trybute to theym payde, nor no Romayne Prynce after this dayes ruled this lande of Brytayne: the whiche Trybute & Domynyon endured from the. ix. yere of Cassibelan vnto ŷ tyme of Seuerus by ŷ terme of. CC. and. lv. yeres. And from ŷ tyme of Seuerus vnto the firste yere of Gracian. C. lxxx. and. iii. yeres. And from the firste yere of Gracian vnto ŷ last yere of this Misery. xliii. yeres. So that frome the yere that Iulius Cezar made firste this Ile

[1] came another. [2] Theyr. [3] the Table.

of Brytayne trybutary vnto ŷ Empyre vnto the laste yere, or ende of this foresayd misery, flowyd. CCCC. xxxi. yeres. But Policronica sayth ŷ the Romaynes ruled and had Trybute of this lãde aboute, CCCC. lxx. yeres whiche saynge is full lyke to be true, if the ende of theyr Domynyon be determyned at the laste departyng of the Romaynes out of this lande.

ANd thus here an ende of the. iiii. part of this werke, forsomoche as the forenamed Gracianus was the last of Romayne kynge ŷ reygned in moche Brytayne, or that no Trybute was after this daye payde vnto the Romaynes.

[Wherfore in gyuynge thanks to that moste blessyd Virgyne, our Lady Seynt Mary, for the good exployte and spede had to this tyme, and opteyne her moste habundaunt grace, For the parfournaunce of the rest or other dele of the same, I here with al humblenesse salute her with the. iiii. Ioye of the forenamed. vii. Ioyes, ŷ whiche begynneth.

Gaude nexu voluntatis. &c.

O excellent pryncesse and Quene celestyall,
Be Ioyous and glad, for thou art' eternally
By knot of charyte, and dignitie pryncypall,
Art to the hyghest Ioyned celestyally,
That thou may impetre what is necessary
For thy seruauntes, thou virgyn moost pure
Of thy swettest Ihesu, and optayne it sure.][a]

THis. iiii. parte to be accompted from the firste yere of Seuerus, vnto the laste ende or yere of this Mysery, includeth of yeres. CC. & xxvi.[b]

Explicit Quarta Pars.

Fol. xxiv.

INCIPIT PARS QUINTA

¶ Capitulum. lxxvi.

HEre, accordynge to the promyse made by me i ŷ begynynge of this werke, I shal bryngē in and shewe vnto you the begynnynge of the Reygne of the Kynges of Fraunce, and sette theym in suche a direct ordre, that it shalbe apparant to the Reder that it shalbe certaynly knowen what kyng reygned in Fraūce, whanne suche a kynge reygned in Englande. And also I shall soudele touche the Actes and dedys of the sayd kynges of Fraūce. So that the Cronycles of bothe Realmes shall in this werke appere. And the names of the Prynces which at ones reygned in Englande & in Fraunce.

Thenne for the perfournaunce of the same. First is to be noted that after the Sub-

[a] Art. *omitted in* 1533. [b] *Omitted* in the Editions of 1542 and 1559. [c] "Two hundred and one and twen" dit. 1559.

uercion

uercion of Troye by the Grekes, as in the begynnyng of this werke is shewyd, dyuers Troyans beynge vnder the rule of nobles of the same Lygnage, as Helenus sone of Pryamus, Eneas, Anthenorus, and other, serchyd the worlde, and landyd in dyuers Countrees; as Helenus in Grece or Grecia, Eneas in Italia or Italy, and so of other; amonge the whiche nobles One named Turchus, & other named Franco, Cosyn Germaynes, as Turchus the sone of Troylus, and Franco or Francio the sone of Ector, whiche sayd. ii. Cosyns serchyng theyr aduenture, after many and dyuers daungers and Icopardyes, passyd by the see, lastly landed in a Countree called Tracea[1] or Tracia in Grece: and there with theyr company enhabyted theym nere vnto a Ryuer called Dion. And after they hadde contynued there a season of tyme, Turchus departed with a certayne of Troyans from his sayd Cosyne Francio, and sayled after into a Countre called Fazo the lasse; where he with his people dwelled longe tyme: whiche Fazo shulde be in the Coūtre of Sithia. Of this Turchus discendyd, as sayth the Frenche Cronycle. iiii. maner of Peoples, that is to saye, Austrogothis, Ipogothis, Wandalys, & Normans. And Francio or Franco remoued after with his Company into a Countre named Pānoma,[2] whiche coūtree nowe shulde seme to be a parte of Hungery or joynyng nere to it. There nere vnto a Ryuer called Thanais, they buylded theym a Cytie, and named it Sicambria, by reason wherof they were longe after called Sicambri. They were also named Fransci as saythe the Frenche Cronycle, after this man Francio. Turpinus that wrote the Gestes of the great Charles, saythe that whanne Charles hadde made the Countree of Spayne subiect, and was retourned into Fraūce, he made all the bonde men dwellynge aboute or nere vnto Paris, or in all Gallia, fre in ŷ worshyp of seynt Denis, and of Seynt Iames of Galis vpon condycyon that they shulde yerely offre. iiii. d. to this[3] werke of Seynt Denys Church, by reason wherof they were named Franci, as men freed that tofore were bonde. Policronica saythe they were named Franci, of Valentynyan. the Emperoure, as it were for fyersnes. But howe soeuer they came by that name Franci[4], as Frenschemen.

Origo Frācorum.

This sayde people were also named longe tyme Galli, and were tributaryes to Rome, and vnder theyr Rule tyll the tyme of Valentinyan Emperour aboute the yere of Criste. CCC. lxvi. This Valentynyan, hauynge the Rule of the West parte of the worlde, made warre vpon a people called Aleynys that dwelled nere vnto the forenamed Gallis. Thyse Aleynys were egre of fyght, and ouer that they were so closyd with Fennys & Marrys that ŷ Romaynes myght nat wynne to theym by force, wherof they often rebellyd agayne ŷ Empyre; wherfore in the ende, Valentynyan consyderynge the fyersnes of the Gallis with theyr nere dwellyng vnto the sayd Aleynes, couenaunted with theym, if they wolde Subdue the sayd people, they shulde haue Releace of. x. yeres trybute. Which Couenaunte well and sufficyently confermed to the Gallis, they in shorte whyle after by theyr knyghthode and policy subdued or vtterly chasyd the sayd Aleynys. For the whiche dede they contynued the foresayd. x. yeres without paying of any trybute: whiche. x. yeres ronne and expyryd, ŷ Romaynes agayne claymed the[5] former accustomed Tribute. To whome it was answered that they hadde redemed the sayde Trybute with the Pryce of theyr bloode, and oughte nat any more to be charged with any suche Trybute.

With which answere the Romaynes beynge sore discontented, made newe warre vpon ŷ sayd Sicambris, of whiche warre the Sicambris or Gallis had the worse, and were chasyd frome theyr Cytie of Sicambria. Thenne as wytnessyth Policronica & other, they drewe nere vnto the water of Ryne, and grewe in shorte processe to suche a Multitude, and of suche strength, that they in shorte whyle after, by ledynge of theyr. iii. Dukes named Marcomyrus, Somomus or Symon, & Genebaux, warred vpon the landes of the Empyre, & suche as are[6] subiect vnto ŷ same; wherof Theodosius surnamed the yonger, thenne Emperour beynge warned, he anone sente. ii. of his Dukes with a great hooste for to subdue

Fol. xxx.

Inicium.

[1] Thracea, edit. 1559. [2] [Pannonia.] [3] the, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] they were called Franci. [5] theyr, edit. 1559. [6] were.

the

the sayd Gallis or Sicambris: but they defendyd theym so knyghtly that the sayd Duke were chasyd, and as wytnessyth Maister Robert Gagwyne, a great nombre of the Romaynes slayne.

¶ GALLIE PROUINCIA.

¶ Capitulum. lxxvii.

AFter this victory thus opteyned by the Sicambris, they waxed so stronge that they wan frome ỹ Almaynes dyuers Townes & stronge holds win Germania, and after that they opteyned ỹ famous Cytie named Treueris; which as wytnessyth ỹ Auctour of Cronica Cronicarum, was firste foundyd in the Towne[1] of the Patryarch Abraham before the Incarnacion of Criste. M.ix.C.lxv. yeres: and so dayly wanne vpon the Nacions adioynynge to theym tyll they came to the Ryuer of Seyn, where they restyd them, and buylded ỹ Coũtre all there aboute; in somoche ỹ they than named theymselfe Franci, as men freed and out of all daunger of the Empyre of Rome, & theyr lande after theim they named Fraũce, which syne that tyme is greatly encreasyd. So ỹ at this daye it is a Countre of great welth & honour, and conteyneth many prouynces & lordshyppes as after the affirmaunce of Policronica is touchyd in the. xxvii. Chapitre of his firste booke: Where it is shewyd that Gallia, whiche now is Fraũce, hadde that name Gallia of whytnesse of people.

Gallie prouincia. This Gallia or Fraunce hath in the North syde Germania; in the Eest the Ryuer of Ryne; in the Southest ỹ Alpis or the hyghe mountaynes; and in the West the see Occean, whiche is called bothe Britannicum and Gallicum, whiche is to meane Englysshe see, and Frenche see, for it departyth Englande and Fraunce; in the South see of myddell Erth that wassheth aboute by ỹ prouynce of Narbon. In the tyme of Iulius Cesar Gallia was departed on thre; but for dyuers happys that befell after in that Lande, the Countree and lande that stretcheth from the Ryne to Seyne is nowe called Gallia Belgica, whiche is verey Fraunce, and that Coũtre that stretchyth from Seyne to the Ryuer of Leyr is called Gallia Lugdunẽsis, wherof the ouer part hyght or is named Burgundia, that is Burgoyne, and the nether parte is Neustria or Normandye.

Diuisio Gallie. And the Countree that Stretchyth frome the Ryuer of Leyr to the Ryuer of Gerounde, is called Gallia Aquitania, whiche is Gwyan, and stretchyth out of the Eest from ỹ Ryuer of Roon vnto the West Occean, wherof the ouer partie therof hyght Celica[2], whiche is to meane Heuenly or cause[3] because that hyghe mountaygnes be therin. Frome the water of Gerounde to the see of myddyll Erth, and to the Moũtaygnes called Montes Pireni or great Hylles of Spayne, is clepyd Gallia Narbonensis, and nowe a parte therof is called Gothia, and some Vascouia, whiche is to meane Gascoyne.

And so Gallia is closed aboute with. iii. noble waters; with the ryuer of Ryne In the North syde, with the Ryuer of Roone in the Eest, and with the Bryttesshe Occean in the West. In Gallia or Fraunce ben many noble Cyties: Wherof Paris is hede and pryncipall, whiche in the firste foundacion was clepyd Parides, after Parides a Troyan that departyd from Troy with Eneas & other, as wytnessyth Carinus and other wryters of Hystoryes. But ỹ Frensche Cronycle sayth it was firste Founded by the Sicambris, and named by theym Lucecia[4], before the Incarnacyon of Criste. CCC.lxxx. and xv. yeres. And in ỹ whyle that ỹ forenamed Marcomyrus, was as there chief hede and gouernour, he for the more beaute of the name, and also in mỹde of Paris sone of Pryam kynge of Troy, of the whiche he was lynyally discended, he therefore chaunged ỹ name and cõmaunded it to be called Paris.

In Gallia also be thyse prouynces and Lordshyppes folowynge, Braban, Flaundres, Normandy, Pycardy, Brytayne the lasse, Peytowe[5], Gascoyne, Guyan, Tolowse, Burgoyne,

[1] tyme. [2] Celtica. [3] Or cause, *omitted*. [4] Lutecia. [5] Poytowe.

goyne, Angeo, and Mayn, Prouynce, Champayne, and Aluerne: all whiche Signouries and Lordshyppes belonged or apperteyned vnto the Crowne of Fraunce. Albe it that dyuers of theym hath ben gyuen out by Mariage or otherwyse: so that the kynge of Fraunce claymeth to be chief Lorde of theym and at this day hath the possession of them, except Burgoyn, Flaundres, and Braban, & Normandy, for the whiche he is Tributarye vnto the kynge of Englande. Thenne it foloweth whenne thyse[1] sayd Gallis or Frenschmen hadde thus conquered thyse foresayd Countres, or the more parte of theym, or at leest made theym vnto ŷ sayd Gallis tributary, thenne the forenamed Marcomyrus, as theyr chief hede or gouernour, closyd Cyties with stronge walles, and buylded stronge holdes and Castellys, and after dyed, leuynge after hym a sone garnysshed with all knyghtly vertue, named Pharamũdus or Pharamonde. Tempus Dikordie.

¶ This is the olde Armys of Fraunce.

¶ Capitulum. lxxviii.

PHaramundus ŷ sone of Marcomirus, before named, was, after the deth of his sayde Fader, made or ordeyned ŷ firste kynge of Frenschmen, by the agrement of Hystoryes; and also, as affermeth Maister Robert Gagwyne, and other, in ŷ yere of our lords Incarnacion. CCCC. xx.: and of the worlde, or after the Creacion of the firste Adam, folowynge the accompte of this werke, as before is shewyd. v.M.vi.C. and. xix. after Brute beganne his domynyon in this Ile of Brytayne. M.v.C.&.lvi.: and the yere of mysery of the Brytons. xxvi. Francia. The olde Armys of Fraunce. Primus rex Francie. *Fol. xxxi.*

Of this Pharamonde is lytell thynge lafte in memory, except that myne Auctour Gagwyne testyfyeth that he made certayne lawes whiche longe tyme enduryd after. But for the names of the lawes and vse of them be derke to Englysshe vnderstandynge, therfore I ouerpasse theym, and folowe the Storye, which affermeth that whanne the sayd Pharamonde hadde ruled the Frenschmen well and nobly by the space of. xi. yeres, he dyed and laft after hym a sone named Claudio Crinitus, or Capellatus.

¶ Capitulum. lxxix.

CLodio the sone of Pharamoũde was made kyng of Fraunce in the yere of oure Lorde. CCC.xxxi.[2] And the. xxxvii. yere of ŷ foresayd Mysery of the Brytons: the whiche as before is sayd was surnamed Crinitus and Capellatus, by reason whereof the kynges of Frenschmen longe tyme after were called Criniti. This, to augment his Lordshyp, made warre vpon a people called Turynges, and by great and sore fyght made them at length subget to hym, whiche Coũtre as sayth the Frensche Cronycle is a part of Almayne. And at this daye or tyme of this Clodio his Reygne, the Romaynes hadde no more of the Lande of Gallia or Fraunce in theyr rule, thenne that whiche lyeth from ŷ Ryuer of Leir vnto the Ryuer of Ryne; whiche is called Gallia Lugdunensis. And whan he hadde thus subdued the Turynges, he than sent his Espyes ouer the Ryne to se what strength they were of that inhabited that Coũtre, and after report to hym brought of the sayd Espyes that the coũtre was fertyll and ryche, and the people therof but of small defence, he with his Army ouer spred the Coũtre, and after shortly beseged the Cyties of Cambrey and Turney and theym wanne. But in the cytie of Turney was a certayn nombre of Romaynes, whiche manfully defended ŷ Towne longe tyme. And whã they parceyued that they myght no lenger holde ŷ Towne, they than manfully issued out, & gaue to ŷ Frenschmen harde batayll, but fortune was to theim frowarde, so that they were distressyd. After whiche Countres and Townes thus goten by Clodio, with other victorious Francia.

[1] the. [2] iiii. hundred and. xxxi.

dedys by hym done he lastly dyed, whenne he had ruled ỹ frenschmen. xix. yeres without issue of his body.

[Cap. 5.] NOwe thene lette vs retourne vnto Tharchebysshop of London and the other Brytons beynge in Brytayne the lesse, the whiche vpon the promesse before reherced, receyued of Aldroenus, kynge of lytell Brytayne, his brother named Constantyne, the whiche w a certayne nombre of knyghtes shortly after landed at Totnesse in moche Brytayne, and gatheryd to theym the floure of ỹ Brytons, which before theyr lādynge were hydde in dyuers places of ỹ lande. By whose powers and mercyall knyghthod the Enemyes of ỹ Lande were shendfully chasyd and vtterly confounded, whiche victory thus by ỹ Brytons opteyned, they of one mynde conueyde theyr Cheuetayne[1] Constantyne vnto the Towne of Kaercegent, nowe called Cicestre, and there crowned hym, accordynge to the promesse made vnto his brother, kynge of this Ile of the more Brytayne.

Landynge of Constantyne.

¶ Capitulum. lxxx.

[Cap. 5.] Constantinus, the brother of Aldroenus kynge of lytell Brytaygne, was crowned kynge of moche Brytaygne in ỹ yere of our lord. CCCC.&.xxxiii. and ỹ. iii. yere of Clodio then kynge of Fraunce; the whiche guyded the lande with suche manhode & polyce, that he kept it frome dañgere of ennemyes, & for tyme of his lyfe helde it in good quyet & rest. Of this Constātyne is lytell mynde made or lefte in wrytinge, excepte that he receyued of his wyfe thre sones, the which he named Constant, Aurely, & Vter[2], or Constancius, Aurelius Ambrosius, & Vter, whiche was surnamed Pendragon.

But for he sawe and perceyued that his eldest sone named Constant was dull and Insolent[3] of wytte, he therfore made hym a Monke in the Monastery of Seynt Amphiabyll of Wynchester, which Monastery at this day is called seynt Swythynes abbey. And the other. ii. breterne he betoke vnto Gwitellinus Archebysshop to norysshe and brynge forth.

Constant made a monke.

In the Court of this Cōstantyne, as wytnessyth Gaufride, and[4] a Picte, that was moche loued and greatly fauouryd of Constantyne, so that he myght at all tymes come to the kynges presence, the whiche beyng a errant Traytoure, and sechynge[5] conuenyent tyme to execute his detestable treason, by a secrete meane slewe the Kynge in his Chambre, when he hadde ben kynge, after moost wryters. x. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxi.

[Cap. 6.] Constancius sone of Constantyne by meane of Vortygernus was made kynge of Brytayne in the yere of our Lord. CCCC.xliii. This as before is towchyd, for somoch as his Fader thought he was nat very apte to take so great a charge as to gouerne the Lande after hym, became a Relygious man in the Monasterye before named. Or as some wryters meane, the sayd Constance of pure deuocion that he hadde to God and seyn Amphiabyll, made hym selfe a Monke, vnwyttynge the kyng his Fader, and other his frends.

But how or ī what maner so euer he became a Monke, trouth it is ỹ Vortigernus or Vortigernus, after ỹ deth of Constantyne, founde suche meanes that he was taken out of the sayd Abbey and crowned kynge of Brytayne, by meane wherof the sayde Vortiger hadde all the rule of the lande; so that Constant hadde but oonly the name. This Vortiger thenne consyderynge the innocency and myldnesse of the kyng, cast in his mynde howe he myght be Kynge hym selfe. And amonge other meanes founde to haue aboute the kyngs parsone an hondreth Pictes, or, after some, Scottes, the whiche he ordeyned for a Garde for the kynges parsone; whiche done he bare hym in suche wyse agayne the Pictes, by meanes of great gyftes and other wyse, that they at lengthe had Vortiger in suche fauoure, that they feryd nat to say openly that Vortiger was more worthy

Monke made kynge.

[1] cheſe captayn, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] "and Uter," *omitted* in edit. 1533, 1542. [3] [indolent.] [4] was. [5] serchynge, edit. 1542, 1559.

to

to be kynge than Constant. In this whyle Vortiger gatte into his possession the kynges treasour, and what was of hym cōmaunded was done, thoughe other thereat murmured and grudged. And euer, in right and wronge, he fauouryd the foresayd Pictes or Scottes. The whiche at lengthe perceyuynge his corrupt mynde, whan they sawe ŷ they had conuenyent tyme fyll vpon the kynge, and hym slewe or murderyd.

After whiche cruell dede by theym done, they presented the hede of Constant vnto Vortiger, thenne beynge at London; wherof whan he was ware, to the ende that the Brytons shuld thynke that dede to be done agayne his mynde and wyll, wept and made semblaunt of all sorowe and heuynes, and caused the sayde. C. knyghts to be taken in all haste after, and theym by dome and lawe of the Lande to be beheddyd, by reason wherof he was taken nat culpable, or innocent of the kynges dethe. Whenne the kynges dethe was knowen to suche parsones as hadde the kepyng of the. ii. yonger bretherne Aurelius and Vter, they in all haste for the more sauegarde of theym fledde into lytell Brytayne, and there kept theym tyll it pleasyd God otherwyse to purueye for theym. And thus as ye haue herde was kynge Constant slayne, when he hadde reygned after moost wryters. v. yeres. Cautela. Fol. xxxiii.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxii.

VOrtigernus, Duke of ŷ Iuesses, or Vortigerus, Erle of Iewesses, after called West Saxons, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of oure Lorde. CCCC. and. xlviii. and the. xviii. yere of Clodio kynge of Fraunce, whiche after the dcth of Cōstant, by strength and otherwyse, was made kynge, and ruled the Lande, nat all without trouble. For it was nat longe, or the Pyctes, whiche hauynge knowlege of the deth and Iugement of theyr knyghtes and kynsmen, that they inuaded the northe partyes of the lande, doynge therin great harme & domage; and ouer that many & dyuers of the grete of the Brytons perceyuynge that the kynge Constant was nat murdered all without cōsent of the sayd Vortyger, rebelled agayn hym, and dayly sent and sayled ouer into lytell Brytayn to the ayde & assistence of ŷ foresayd childeren of Constantyne, whiche put the said Vortiger to great vnrestfulnesse, & ŷ more for that, ŷ he wyst nat, nor knew nat in whom he myght put his trust & cōfydence in. [Cap. 6.] Nota. Miserere.

With these parturbaunces was medeled plentye of corne and frute, that the lyke therof had nat ben sene many yeres passyd, wherwith was ioyned Lechery and Pestylence, with many other incōuenyencis. So that vyce was accompted for small or none offence, the whiche reigned nat only in the Temporaltye, but also in the Spiritualtye and hedes of the same, so that euery man turned the poynte of his spere agaynst the trewe & innocent man, & the Cōmons gaue theym all to dronkennesse & ydlenes: where thorough ensued fyghtyng, stryfe, & moche enuy. Of which foresayd myscheuys, ensued moche mortalytie & deth of men, that the lyuyng scantly suffyced in some Countres to bury ŷ deed. And ouer this the kynge was soo harde beset with the forenamed Enemyes, that he was constrayned, as affermeth Policronica, to send for peynems as the Saxons to helpe to withstande his Enemyes, and to defende his lande, and also he dayly feryd the landyng of Aurely and Vter. [Cap. i. li. 5.]

Vortiger thus beynge besette with many aduersyties in visytyng his lande, and then beynge for dyuers causes hym mouynge at Dorobernia, or Caunterbury, tydinges came to hym of the arryuynge of. iii. longe Shyppes full of armed men at the Ile of Tenet. Wherof firste he made cōtenaunce as thoughe he had ben in doute whether it hadde been the. ii. bretherne of Constant or none. But whenne the fame was blowen aboute that they were none Enemyes, anone he caused ŷ leders of theym to be brought vnto his presence, freynynge of theym the cause of theyr landynge, and of theyr Nacyon and Countre; the whiche answered vnto the kynge & sayd, they were of the Countree of Germany, and put out of theyr Countre by a maner, sorte or lotte at sondry tymes vsed within the sayde londe, the whiche was vsed for somoche as the people therin encreased [Gal. lib. 3. Cap. i.] Saxons first landyg.

so faste, that without such prouysyon hadde the Countre shulde nat suffyce for the people, the which was suche as foloweth.

That at sondry tymes whenne the sayd Countre was replenyshed of people, the Prynces & rulers therof wolde assemble at a certayne place & call before theym the lusty yonge folkes, of the whiche they wolde chose out a certayne nombre, and appoynte to theym certayne Dukes or leders, with all thynge necessary to the warre: and theym so garnysshed, wolde cõmaunde to serche theyr aduenture, and to wynne some lãde by theyr Knyghthoode, where they myght enhabyte theym selfe. By which vse and custome thus longe vsyd, nowe was fallen to theyr lotte to do as theyr fore Faders hadde done before theym. Wherfore syne Fortune hadde brought theym to this Lande, they besought the kynge that he wolde take theym to his seruyce, and they wold be redy to fyght for the defence of hym and his countree. And whenne the kyng had enquered ferther, he founde that they hadde. ii. leders named Hengistus and Horsus, & they and theyr people were called Saxons.

The kynge thus beynge assertayned of the maner of thyse straũgers, and that they were of ỹ Gentyle of Pagan lawe, sayd he was very heuy and sory that they were Myscreaunts, but he was ioyos and gladde of theyr cõmynge, for somoche as he had nede of suche Sowdyoures to defende hym and his lande agayne his Enemyes, and so receyued theym to his wages and seruyce, as is wytnessyd of Gaufride and other moo wryters.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxiii.

BEda the holy man sayth ỹ Vortiger sent for the Saxons stronge men of Armes that had no lande to dwelle in, the whiche came in. iii. longe Shyppes called Obilas and receyued a place of hym to dwell in, in ỹ Eest syde of Brytayne, called the Ile of Tenet, besyde Kent. Willms de Regibus, a wryter of Hystoryes, sayth that ỹ Saxons come out of Germany by wyll to wynne worshyp and lãde, and nat by lotte or compulcion; and also that they worshipped at that dayes a God named Woden, and a Goddesse named Fria. In the worshyp of the whiche God, the thirde Feryall daye in the weke they named wodnesday, whiche at this day we call wednysday. And in worshyp of the sayd Goddes they callyd the fyfth daye Friys day, the whiche we call now Frydaye.

Genus Saxon.

Of thyse foresayd people came thre maner of people, or. iii. maner of names, that is to say, Saxons, Anglys, & Iwets[1]. Of the Saxons came the Eest Saxons, West Saxons, and the Southe Saxons. Of the Anglis came the Eest Anglis, ỹ myddell Anglis, or Merceys, whiche helde myddell Englande, that stretchyth westwarde towarde the Ryuer of Dee besyde Chestre, and to Seuerne besyde Shroysbury, and so forthe to Brystowe, and Eestwarde towarde the see, and Southwarde to Thamys, and so forth to London, & Northwarde to Humber, and tourned downewarde and westwarde to the ryuer Mercea, and so forthe to the west See. And of the Iwets' come the Kentyshmẽ, and men of the Ile of Wyght.

Of the firste cõmyng of these Saxons ito great Britayne, auctours in party varrey, wherfore in the treatyse of Latyn[2] before named, it shall appere vnder correccyon, ỹ the forenamed Hengistus & Horsus ẅ theyr company first landed in ỹ forsayd Ile of grete Brytayne, in the yere of our Lorde. CCCC. and. l. and the thirde yere of Vortiger. Themne it foloweth thyse Saxons with the kynges power bete downe the Enemyes beforesayd and diffendyd the lande in moost knyghtly wyse. So that the kynge had the Saxons in great loue & fauour, whiche fauoure Hengistus well apperceyuyng, vpon a season when he sawe conuenyent tyme, he axed of the kynge so moche grounde as the hyde of a Bull or other beest wolde compace, whiche the kynge to hym graunted. After whiche graunt the sayd Hengyste to the ende to wynne a large grounde, caused the sayd beests skyn to be cut into a small and slender thonge, and with the same met out a large and great circuyt of

Fol. xxxii.

[1] Jewetes. [2] The Table.

groũde,

groũde, vpon the whiche he shortly after buylded and sette a large and stronge Castell: by reason of whiche thonge the sayd Castell was longe after named Thonge Castell, whiche was sette by thagrement of all wryters in the Countre of Lyndesey. After thyse, tydynges sprange into Germania of the plentie and fatnes of the lande of Brytayne, with other Cõmodyties perteynynge to the same, by meane wherof the Saxons dayly drewe to the sayd lande, & couenaũted w the Brytons, ẏ the Brytõs shuld entende theyr worldlynes and other necessaries. And the Saxons as theyr Sowdiours shuld defende the lande from Incursion of all Enemyes. For the whiche the Brytons shulde gyue to theym competent mete and wages.

Thonge Castell stãdyth within. iiii. Miles of Fe-uershame by Thamys syde, nat ferre from Quynburghe, whiche is now Forfaryn, and is called of the Borders tong Castell.

Then by the Sonde of Hengyste came with. xvi. sayles, Ronowen the doughter of the sayd Hengist, whiche was a Mayden of excellent beaute: after whose cõmynge Hengist vpon a day besought the kynge that he wold se his Castell, whiche he had newely edyfyed: to whose request the kynge was aggreable: and at the daye assigned came to the sayd Castell, where he was ioyously receyued, and there among other passetymes the foresayd Ronowen with a Cuppe of golde full of wyne presentyd the Kynge, salutynge and sayinge, "Wassayle." The kynge, whiche before that tyme had herde no lyke Salutacion, nor yet vnderstode what she ment, axed of her Fader what she ment by that worde wassayl: to whom it was answered by Hengistus that it was a Salutacion of good and gladnesse, and that the kynge shulde drynke after her, ioynynge therevnto this answere: "Drynke hayll;" wherfore the kynge as he was enfourmed, toke the Cuppe of the Maydes hande & dranke, and after behelde the wenche in such maner that he was wounded with the darte of the blynde God Cupide, ẏ neuer after he coulde withdrawe his loue from that wenche, but lastly, by Instigacion of the Deuyl, axed her in Mariage of her Fader, and by force therof, as wytnessyth Policronica, he put frome hym his laufull wyfe, of the whiche he had before tyme receyued. iii. noble sonnes called Vortimerus, Catagrinus, & Pascencius. Then the kynge gaue vnto Hengistus the Lordshyppe of Kent, thoughe Garangonus, then Erle therof, therat grudgyd, with many of his Brytons.

Ronowen.

[Li. 5. Cap. 1.]

For this, and for ẏ that the kynge had maryed a woman of vncowght beleue, well nere all the Brytons forsoke hym & his werkes. Neuerthelesse some there were, as wel nobles and other, that comforted the kynge in his euyll doyng. By whiche meane and other vnlefull dedys than dayly vsyd, the fayth of Criste began sore to apalle. And ouer that an heresy called Arianes heresy, began thã to sprynge in Brytayne: for the whiche ii. holy Byshoppes named Germanus & Lupus, as of Gaufride is wytnessyd, came into Brytaygne to refourme the kynge[1], and al other that erryd from the waye of trouth.

[Li. 3. Cap. 2.]

[Of this holy man, Seynt Germayne, Vincent Historyall, sayth, that vpon an euenynge, when the weder was passynge colde, and the snowe fyll very faste, he axed lodgynge of ẏ kynge of Brytaygne, for hym and his Comperys, whiche was denyed. Then he after syttynge vnder a busshe in the felde, the kynges Herdemen passyd by, and seynge this Bysshop with his company syttyng in the weder, desyred hym to his howse to take there such poore lodgynge as he had. Wherof the Bysshop beynge gladde and fayne, yode vnto the house of the sayd Herdman, the whiche receyued hym with glad chere; and for hym and his company wylled his wyfe to kyll his oonly calfe, and to dresse it for his Gestes souper, the whiche was also done. When the holy man had souped, he called to hym his hostes, wyllyng & desyrynge her that she shuld diligently gader togyder all the bones of ẏ deed calfe, and theym so gaderyd to wrappe togyder within the skynne of the sayd calfe, & then lay it in the stall before ẏ racke nere vnto ẏ dame; which done accordyng to the cõmaũdement of the holy man, shortly after the Calfe was restoryd to lyfe, and forthwith ete haye with the dame at the Racke. Of whiche meruayll all ẏ houshold was greatly astonyed, and yeldyd thankynge vnto almyghty god, & to that holy Bysshop.

Fabula.

Vpon the morowe this holy bysshop toke with hym this herdeman, and yode vnto the

An herde made kyng.

[1] People, edit. 1542, 1559.

presence of the kynge, & axed of hym in sharpe wyse why that ouer nyght he had denyed to hym lodgynge: wherwith the kyng was so abasshed that he hadde no power to gyue vnto ỹ holy man answere. Then seynt Germayne sayd to hym, I charge ỹ in ỹ name of my Lord God. that thou & thyne departe from this Paleys, and resygne it and the Rule of thy lande to hym ỹ is more worthy this rome than thou art. The which in all thynge by power dyuyne was obserued & done, and the sayd herdeman by the holy Bysshoppes Auctorytie was sette into the same dignyte. Of whom after descendyd all the kynges of Brytayne.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxiiii.

THis Story is also confermed of Antoninus, Archebysshop of Florence, and at lengthe by hym shewyd in the. xvii. Chapitre and. xi. day of the seconde part of his werke called Somma Antonini. But by whom soeuer this Storye was firste wryten, I thynke he was
Opinio. none that descendyd of ỹ Welshmen, nor yet of theyr blood, for they come all of Priamys blode and nat of an herdman, except that they fetche theyr lyne from Dauid the holy kynge and prophete. This storye semeth to be of more fame thenne of credence: for other wryters tell this Story to be done in the Regyon of Powys by Buly theyr kynge. And also forsomoche as ỹ foresayd Auctour maketh no mencyon of the more Brytayne nor of the lasse, it is doutefull whether this hap fyll in that one Regyon or in that other. Albeit in ỹ lyfe of seynt Germayne it is redde that the sayd seynt Germayne deposyd Vortiger & enhaūced ỹ herdeman, as before is declared, as affermeth Policronica. Thenne it foloweth in the Story, when seynt Germayne had restoryd some parte of Britayne to the trewe fayth, he retourned into Fraunce, fro whens he was before cōmyn. But in this sayd saying shulde appere discorde in Cronycles. For as at this daye was nat the fayth of Criste receyued in Fraunce, as after more clerely shall appere, wherfore no Bysshop of cristes fayth myght then kepe any See in Fraunce; and also as affermeth Iacobus Philippus and other, holy Remigius was the firste that tourned Fraunce to Cristes Religion, and that, after most concorde of wryters, to be in the yere of our Lorde. CCCC.lxxx. and. xix. and ỹ xv. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus Lewys firste Cristen kynge of the Realme of Fraūce.][1]

Then to furnysshe or perfourme the Story of Vortiger, nedefull it is or necessary to retourne to the matier where we before laft, and to shewe that forsomoche as the Brytons withdrewe theym from Vortiger, he was therfore constrayned to holde with hym ỹ Saxons, by whose Coūsayll he after sent for Octa the Sone of Hengist, the whiche
Fol. xxxiii. brought with hym an other company of Saxons. When the Lordes of Brytayne sawe and consyderyd the great multytude of Saxons, and theyr dayly repayre into this lande, they assēbled them togyder, and shewed to the kynge the inconuenyence and ieopardy that myght ensue to hym and his lande, by reason of the great power of thyse straūgers, and aduertysed hym in aduoydyng of greter daunger, to expelle & put theym out of his Realme, or the more parte of theim.

But al was in vayne, for Vortiger bare suche a mynde to the Saxons by reason of his wyfe, that he preferred the loue of theym before the loue of his owne naturall kynnesmen & frendes. Wherfore the Brytons of one wyl and mynde, crowned for theyr Kynge Vortimerus, the eldest sone of Vortiger, and depryued hym of all kyngly dignyte, when he hadde reygned, after moost concorde of Hystoryes. xvi. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxv.

Francia. MEroneus next of allie[2] vnto Clodio, last kyg of Fraūce, for so moche as of Clodeo remayned none Issue, he was made kynge of Fraunce in the yere of o' Lord. iiii. C. &. l, and the seconde yere of Vortiger, than kynge of Brytaygne, the whiche was stronge and

[1] The Miracle of St. Germayne, from the words, "Of this holy Man," in Cap. lxxxiii. is *omitted* in the editions of 1542, and 1559. [2] all, edit. 1542, 1559.

Marciall in all his dedes, and therunto right profytable for ỹ Realme; and amonge other notable dedes by hym done, he slewe ī one day of Hunys, the which by the cōmaundement of Attila inuadyd and dystroyed dyuers Coūtres, as Italy, Germany, & other, an Hundreth and. lxxx. M. as is wytnessid of maister Robert Gagwyne, compiler & gaderer of the Actes & dedes of Frenshemē. This forenamed Attila was kynge of Hunes, and led in one hoost. CC. M. men of warre, as testyfieth Policrōnica; and after dyuers batayls by hym wonne, he came into Feldes called Catulyntes, the whiche conteyned an Hundreth Legis in length and. lxx. in brede, wherof euery Lege conteyneth. iii. Englysshe myles: in the whiche Feldes or Playnes he was encountred with the power of the Romaynes, in whose ayde was the kynge of Fraunce, Meroneus the Kynge or Duke of Burgoyne, and other; wher after a longe fyght was slayne on both sydes the foresayd. C. &. lxxx. M. Of the whiche nombre the sayd kynge or duke of Burgoyne was one, as is more playnly shewed in the. xxxiii. Chapitre of the. iiii. boke of the sayd Policronicon, with other wonders, whiche I ouerpasse.

Of this Meroneus discēdyd all the kynges of Frenshmen tyll ỹ tyme of Pepyn, the whiche was Fader vnto Charles the great or Emperoure, and fynally dyed this Meroneus, when he had reygned after moost wryters. x. yeres, leuynge after hym a sone named Childerich or Hilderiche.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxvi.

CHildericus or Hildericus ỹ sone of Meroneus was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of oure Lorde God. CCCC. and. lx. And the. xii. yere of Vortiger than kynge of Brytayne, the whiche ensued nothynge the warres of his fader: but allied hym with all vyce and cruelnesse in suche extreme wyse, that he became odyble vnto his Subiectes. Wherfore the sayd Chelderich parceyuynge the murmure and grudge amonge the people, and ferynge his sodayne distruccyon, coūsayled with a frende and lorde of his, named Guynomadus or Guynemeus, by whose coūsayll in auoydynge gretter paryll, he auoyded secretely his lande, and yode vnto the kynge of Thurynge named Besyngne, of whom he was ioyously receyued. But at departynge of the Kynge from the sayd Guynemeus, he toke a pece of golde and breke it in. ii. peces; wherof that one pece he delyuered vnto ỹ kynge, and that other pece he kepte to hym selfe, saiynge to the kynge that whan socuer that he receyued from hym that pece of golde, that he shulde be suer to be restored agayne to his Regally and dignytie. Francia. Exemplum Amicicie.

After the kynge was departed his lande, the Frenshmen of one assent chase for theyr gouernoure and hedde a Romayne named Gilt, whiche at ỹ day hadde a parte of Gallia or Fraūce in his Rule, to the behofe of ỹ Romaynes, whiche part was named, or nowe is named Soisons. Whan this Gilt was stablysshed in his Auctorite, ỹ forenamed Guynemeus behauyd hym in suche wyse towarde this Gilt, that he hadde hym in speciall fauoure aboue all the nobles of Fraūce, & wold execute no thing of charge w̄ out his consent & Counsayll. Wherof the sayd Guynemeus beyng ware, & remembrynge howe he myght restore Childerich to his former dignyte, aduysed the sayd Gilt to sette more greuous taskis vpon the Frenshmen, enfourmyng hȳ further ỹ if any grudged there at, ỹ he shuld punysshe some of ỹ myghtyest of theym, by reason wherof he shulde fere the other. Cautela.

Whiche thus done accordynge to ỹ foresayd Counsayll, shortly after to brynge his purpose the better about, the sayd Guynemeus accusyd certayne Rulers of Fraūce, suche as he well knewe were great Enemyes vnto Childerich, ỹ whiche he caused to be taken & sent vnto Gilt, and Gilt vpon theym dyd sharp Execucion, in the whiche he so perceuered, that the Frenshmen for remedy complayned theym to Guynemeus. To whom it was by hym answered, that he greatly meruayled of theyr vnstablenes, that they had chosen to theym a kynge, and nowe so sodaynly wolde haue hym deposyd; shewyng

furthermore

furthermore that outher they muste call agayne Childerich that excersyd[1] his lyfe in voluptuousnesse of lyuynge, or ellys they muste dwell vnder the kynge whiche is cruell and full of blode shedynge, with dyuers other exortacions concernynge the agayne callyng of Childerich to his fourmer dignyte, whiche for lengthe I omytte and passe ouer.

Childerich restoryd.

By meane of whiche Exortacion, Childerich was secretely sent for, and receyuyd from his trusty frende the foresayd pece of golde, spedde hym hastely into Fraunce agayne, whom the foresayd Guynemeus in lyke wyse sped hym. So that they mette at a Castell in the Countree of Champion, where they with other to theym allied, gaderyd a great hoost, and made towarde ỹ foresayd Gilt or Gillion. The whiche hauynge knowlege of the sayde conspiracy, ordeygned an Armye of knyghtes, and yode agayne his Enemyes. But he was ouerset and compelled for his sauegarde to fle into the Countre of Soisons beforenamed, where he after endyd his naturall lyfe, and Childerich was agayne restored and made kynge.

Childerich than thus restored vnto his Regally, subdued soone after a Saxon prynce named Onager, and besegyd the Cytie of Orleaunce, and it receyued vnto his subiection; and after passyd the Ryuer of Leyr and subdued to his Sygnory the Countre of Angeo & Mayn.

Fol. xxxiiii.

Whenne the fame of Childerich was brought vnto Basyna, the wyfe of Besygne, kynge of Turrynges, she anone forsoke her owne Lorde, and spedde her into Fraunce, and so to the presence of Childerich whome he receyued with all gladnes: and whan he hadde of her frayned the cause of her cōmynge, she answered, for that that she knewe and vnderstode to be in hym more vertue and honoure than in any other man at that daye lyuyng; she was therfore comyn to hym to contynue the remenaūt of her lyfe in his company: addynge also therunto, that if in any Countree she knewe his better she wolde than serche, see, and lande to haue hym to her Lorde or husbande. But for she was assured that he had no pere, she besought hym to accept her to his company.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxvii.

Ingratitudo.

THen Childerich puttynge apart and forgettynge kyndenesse to hym before shewid by her husbāde Besỹge; maryed the sayd Basina yet beyng a Pagan. And whan the firste nyght was comyn ỹ they shulde go to bedde, she exorted hym that he shulde that nyght abstayne from all fleshly lykynge, and watche the Gates of his Paleys, and to make reporte to her of suche vysyons as he sawe there ỹ nyght; to the whiche he was agreable: where he so standynge, sawe firste a multytude of Vnycornes, Lyons, and Lybardes passynge foreby the Paleys gate: and within a shorte space of tyme after, he sawe a great company of Berys and Wolues rennynge after the other: and thirdly and lastly, he sawe a Multitude of Dogges and other small rauenous bestes, the whiche in his syght fyll vpon the other. ii Companyes, and vtterly deuoured theym all.

Visiones.

Whenne he hadde seen the fyne of this vysyon, nat a lytell astonyed retourned to his wyfe, shewynge to her what he hadde seen, to whome she sayd, syr of me ye shall receyue a sonne, the whiche in all his dedys shalbe noble and honourable lyke to the Vnycornes and Lyons shewyd to you in ỹ first vysyon. Of the which shall discende one other sone the whiche shalbe rauenous and shall sette his mynde all to Pyllage and Rauyne, lyke vnto the rauenous Wolfe & Bere. And after hym shal come a Childe or Childer, that shalbe of suche Insolency and wastynge, that lyke as ỹ rauenous Hounde stroyeth and wastyth all that he may tere with his teeth, so shall thyse parsones waste and destroye by theyr folyes all that other noble men hath purchased to their handes. And the Multitude which that ye sawe of other small rauenous beestes, betokeneth the Comon people, which in those dayes, for lacke of a good & wyse prynce, shall renne eyther vpon other, & robbe and sle eche other.

Explicatio Visionis.

[1] excersysyd.

Of

Of this Exposycion the kynge as somdele troubled, ȳt yet he reioysed of the Issue that shulde come of his body[1]. Thenne it foloweth, whanne this Childerich hadde ouercomyn some Bataylles in Almayne, and theym subdued to his Empyre, he lastly dyed, when he had reygned with the viii. yeres allowed to his reygne for the tyme that he was exyled, and with the resydue that he reygned before & after, in all. xxiiii. yeres, leuynge after hym a Sone, named[2] vpon the forenamed Basina, called Clodeo, or after moost wryters Clodoueus.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxviii.

VOrtimerus, ȳ eldest sone of Vortiger, was by assent of the Britons made kyng of [Cap. 2.] Brytaygne, in the yere of our Lord. CCCC. lxiii. And the. iiii. yere of Childericus thanne kynge of Fraūce. The whiche in all hast pursued the Saxons, and gaue vnto theym a great Batayll vpon the Ryuer of Darwent, where he hadde of theym victory. And secūdaryly he faught with theym vpon ȳ Foorde called Epifoorde, or Agliffhorp; in the whiche fyght Catrignus, Brother to Vortimer, and Horsus Brother to Hengist, or Cosyn, after longe fyght attwene theym. ii., eyther of theym slewe other, in whiche fyght also the Britons were victours.

The thirde Batayll he faught with theym nere vnto the see syde, where also ȳ Brytons chasyd the Saxons, & compelled theym to take the Ile of Wyght[3] for theyr suertie.

[This batayll, as wytnessith Alfredus, was more wonne by vertue of the prayers of the Miraculū. holy Bysshop seynt Germayne, than by myght of the Brytons. For whenne the holy man sawe the Brytons gyue backe, hȩ helde his handes towarde Heuen and cryed thryse Alleluya, whiche is to our vnderstandyng as moche to saye, as saue vs good Lorde; thorough whiche prayer the Britons, by dyuyne helpe, opteyned the victory of theyr Enemyes][4].

The fourth Batayll was nere vnto a Moore called Cole Moore, the which was longe and sore foughtyn by the Saxons, by reason that the sayd Moore closyd a parte of theyr Hoost so strongely, that the Brytons myght nat wynne vnto theym for daunger of their shot. Albeit that fynally they were chased & many of them of Cōstraynt drowned and swalowed in the sayd Moore.

And ouer & besyde these foure prȳcipall Bataylles, Vortimerus had w̄ the Saxons dyuers other conflictis, as in Kent, at Thetfoorde ī Northfolke, & in Essex nere vnto Colchestre, and lefte nat tyll he had byrafte from theym ȳ more part of suche possessions as before tyme they hadde wonne: and kept theym oonly to the Ile of Thanet, the whiche Vortimere often[5] greuyd by suche Nauy as he then had.

Whenne that Ronowen, Doughter of Hengiste, apperceyued the great myschief that her Fader and ȳ Saxons were in, by the marcyall Knyghthode of Vortimer, she soughte suche meanes that shortly after, as testyfyeth Gaufride and other, Vortymer was poysoned when he had ruled the Brytons after most concorde of wryters. vii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxix.

VOrtigernus, Fader of Vortymerus last deed, was agayne restoryd to the Kyngdome of [Cap. 3.] moche Brytaygne, in the yere of oure Lordes Incarnacion. CCCC. lxxi. and the. xi. yere of Childyricus thenne kynge of Fraunce, the whiche, al the tyme of the Reygne of his *Fol. xxxv.* sone Vortymer, had restyd hym in the Countre of Cambria or Walys; where in this passe tyme, after some wryters, he buyldyd a strong Castell in a place called Generon or Gwayneren, in the west syde of Walys, nere vnto ȳ Ryuer of Gwana in an Hylle or vpon an hyll called Cloarcius. But ȳ olde Cronycle before spokē of, sayth ȳ this Vortiger was kept somwhat vnder rule of certayn Tutours to hym assigned, in ȳ towne of Caerlegion or Chester, and demeaned hym so well towarde his Sone, in aydynge of hym with his

[1] The Paragraphs from, "And whan the firste nyght was comyn" to "that should come of his body." are *omitted* in the edit. of 1542. & 1559.
[2] begotten.
[3] Isle Tenet, edit. 1559.
[4] *omitted* in the editions of 1542. & 1559.
[5] was often, edit. 1542.

Counsayll and otherwyse, that the Brytons for it cast to hym suche a fauoure, that they after the deth of Vortymer made hym agayne kynge.

Hēgistus. It was nat lōge after that Vortiger was thus sette in Auctoryte, but that Hengistus percyd this lande with a great multitude of Saxons, wherof herynge, Vortiger in all haste assembled his Brytons and made towarde theym. And whenne Hengistus hadde experience of the great hoost of Brytons, he thenne ordeyned meanes of treaty and of peas; where lastly it was concluded that a certayne nombre of Brytons, and as many of Saxons, shuld vpon a Maye day assemble vpon the Playne of Ambrii, nowe called Salesbury; whiche daye certaynly prefixed, Hengistus vsyng a newe maner of Treason, charged all his Saxons by hym appoynted, that eche of theym shuld put secretly a longe knyfe in theyr hoose, and at suche season as he gaue to theym this watche or by worde, " nempnyth your Sexis," ẏ eueryche of theym shuld drawe his knyfe and slee a Bryton, nat sparynge any one except Vortiger the kyng. And at the day before appoynted, ẏ kyng with a certayne of Brytons nat ware of this purposed Treason, came in a peasyble wyse to the place before assygned, where he fande redy Hengistus with his Saxons, the whiche after due obeysaunce made vnto the kyng, receyued hym with a cōtenaunce of all loue; where after a tyme of Comynycacion hadde, Hengiste beynge mynded to execute his former purposed treason, shewyd his watche worde, by reason wherof anon the Brytons were slayne as shepe amonge woluys, hauynge no maner of wepyn to defende theym self, except that any of theym myght by his manhode and strengthe gette the knyfe of his Enemye. Amonge the nombre of thyse Britons, was an Erle called Edolf or Edolfe, Erle of Caerlegion or Chestre, the whiche seyng his Felowes and Frendes thus murdred, as affermeth myn Auctour Gaufride & other, he by his mandhode wañe a stake in the hedge or ellys where, ẇ ẏ whiche he knyghtly sauyd his owne lyfe and slewe of the Saxons. xvii. and fledde[1] the Cytie or Towne of Ambry, now named Salesbury: after whiche treason thus executed, the kyng remayned with Hengistus as prysoner.

Brytons disceyued.

Vanitas.

Of the takyng of Vortiger & sleynge of the lordes of Brytayne, an Auctour called Wilhelmus de Regibus sayth ẏ Hengistus agreed ẇ Vortiger and his Brytons that he shulde enioye the Castell by hym before made, with a certayne of lande therunto adioynynge, for hym and his Saxons to dwelle vpon; and whanne the sayde agremēt was suerly stablysshed, this Hengist entendynge treason, desyred ẏ kynge with a certayne nombre of his lordes to come to hym to Dyner within his sayd Castell; the whiche of the kynge was graunted; and at the daye assygned, the kynge with his Lordes came to the sayd Thongcastell to dyner, where he with his was well and honourably receyued and also deyntely serued.

Thong Castell, besyde Feuersam as is aforesayd.

But whenne the kynge and his Lordes were in their most Myrth, this Hengist badde cōmaundyd before that his owne knyghtes shulde falle at variaunce amonge theym self, whiche so done ẏ remenaunt of his Saxons, as it were in partynge of Frayes, shulde falle vpon the Brytons and slewe theym all, oute take oonly the kynge, the whiche was done lyke as ye haue before harde deuysed, and the kynge was holden as prysoner.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxx.

[Cap. 3.] HEngistus thanne hauynge the kynge as prysoner, and a great parte of the Rulers of Brytaygne thus as before is sayd subdued, was some deale exalted in pryde, & compellyd the Kynge to gyue vnto hym, as wytnessyth Policronica*. iii. Prouynces in the Eest part of Brytaygne, whiche. iii. prouynces shulde be Kent, Southsaxon or Sussex, and of Estanglis whiche is to meane Norffolke and Suffolke, as affermeth the Auctoure of the floure of Hystoryes; but Guydo de Columpna sayth that the foresayd. iii. Prouynces was Kent, Eestsaxon or Essex, & of Estanglis, whiche is Norffolke and Suffolke; of the whiche sayd Prouynces when Hengist was possessyd, he suffrede the kynge to goo at his lybertie, and

*[Cap. i. li. 5.]

[1] fledde to.

thenne

thenne Hengiste beganne his Lordshyp ouer the Prouynce of Kent, and sent other of his Saxons to bewelde the other. ii. prouynces, that is to say of Eestanglis & Eestsaxons, tyll he hadde sent for other of his kynnesmen, that he entendyd to gyue ŷ sayd prouynces vnto.

HENGISTUS.[1]

¶ The Kyngdome of Kent here begynneth.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxi.

KANCIE.

THus Hengistus, beynge in possession of this Prouynce of Kent, cōmaūdyd his Saxons to calle it Hengistus lande, wherof as some Auctours meane, the hole lande of Brytayne toke his firste name of Englande: but that sayinge shall appere contrary, as shalbe shewyd hereafter in the Story of Egbert, kynge of Westsaxons, the whiche after he hadde subdued the more partie of the Kyngdomes of Saxons, and made of all but one Monarchy, he thenne cōmaundyd this Lande to be called Anglia, & his Saxons Anglis, whiche after by corrupcion of speche was called Englande, and the people Englisshemen. The firste kyngdom of ŷ Saxons.

This Lordshyp or Kyngdome of Kent hadde his begynnynge vnder Hengiste, in the yere of our Lorde, after moost concordaūce of wryters, and by reason of the tyme. CCCC. lxxvi. and the. v. yere of Vortigernes laste reygne.

But Denys and other that accompt this Kyngdome to begynne in ŷ yere of our Lorde. CCCC. and lv. allowe the begynnynge therof to be whan Hengistus had first gyft of ŷ same, by reason ŷ Vortiger maryed his doughter.

This lordshyp conteyned the Countre that stretchyth frome Eest Occean vnto the Ryuer of Thamys, and hadde vpon the Southest Southerey, and vpon ŷ West London, vpon the Northeest Thamys aforesayd, & Eestsaxon nowe Essex; & this lordshyp conteyned also the Ile of Thanet, which lordshyp or Kyngdome endured after moost wryters from the tyme of the firste yere of ŷ Reygne of this Hengiste, tyll the. xxv. yere of Egebert before named, by the terme of. CCC. xlii. yeres, folowynge that acccompt, at whiche season the sayd Egebert, thanne kynge of Westsaxons, subdued Baldredus than kynge of Kent, and ioyned it to his owne kyngdome. *Fol. xxxvi.*

Albeit that the Auctour of Policronica affermeth it to endure by the space of. CCC. lxviii. vnder. xv. kynges, wherof Baldredus was the laste, whiche foloweth nere vnto the Accompt of Denys before named. The firste Christen kyng of this Lordshyp was Ethelbertus or Ethelbert, the whiche receyued ŷ fayth of Criste by that holy man seynt Austen or Augustyne, nere about the yere of our Lordes Incarnacion. CCCCC[2]. lxxx. and. xvi. The whiche Ethelbert caused soone after to be edyfied the Monastery of scint Peter and Poule, in the Eest syde or ende of the Cytie of Dorobernia, nowe Caunterbury. He gaue vnto this Austen and his Successours, Bysshoppes of Caunterbury, a place for ŷ Bysshoppes See at Cristes Churche, within the sayde Cytie, and endowed it with many ryche possessions.

This Hengiste and all the other Saxons whiche ruled the. vii. pryncipates of Brytayne, as after shalbe shewed, are called of moste wryters Reguli, which is to meane in oure vulgar or speche[3], as small or lytell kynges, so that this Hengist is accompted a lytell kynge; the whiche whan he had thus Rule of the foresayd. iii. Prouynces, he sent for moo Saxons, and gaderid that[4] were sparkled abrode; so that in thyse Prouynces the faythe of Criste was all quenchyd and in slepe.

[1] Hengistus, *omitted.* [2] Foure hundred, edit. 1533, 1542. Foure hundred and foure score, and syxetene, edit. 1559. [3] vulgar speeche, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] Them that.

Thenne Hengist with Octa his sone gaderyd a great strength of Saxons, and faught with the Brytons, and ouercame the Brytons, and chasyd theym in suche wyse that Hengist kepte his Lordshyp in peas and warre by the space of. xxiiii. yeres, as moste wryters testyfye.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxii.

[Cap. 3.] NOwe than lette vs retourne agayn to Vortiger; the whiche whan he sawe the Saxons in suche wyse encrease theyr strength, and the Brytons dayly discreace, for as wryteth myne Auctour Gaufride, the Saxons hadde the Rule of London, Yorke, Lincolne,or Lyndecolne, & Kaerguent that is Wynchester, w̄ other good Townes; wherfore as affermeth ỹ sayde Gaufride, the kynge for fere of the Saxons, and also for that that he was some deale warned of the cōmynge of the. ii. Bretherne Aurely and Vter, sōnes of Constantyne, he therfore consyderynge thyse many and great daungers, fledde into Cambria or Walys, and there helde hym for the more suertie, where, as wytnessyth the sayd Gaufride, he then buylded the Castell before myndyd, of the whiche buyldynge & impedement therof, and also of the gettynge or byrthe of Merlyn, and of his Prophecies, he maketh a longe werke; the whiche I passe ouer for dyuers consyderacyons and retourne agayne to Vortiger.

Intrant Fratres. Trowth it is that whyle Vortigernus was thus besyed[1] in Walys, the forenamed Bre-
[Cap. i. li. 5.] therne Aurely and Vter preparyd theyr Nauy and men of Armes, & passed the See, & landed at Totnesse as sayth the Englysshe Cronycle; wherof whan ỹ Brytons were ware, that were disparkled and seueryd in many coūtres, they drewe to theym in al hasty wyse. The whiche sayde Bretherne, whan they sawe that they hadde a competent nombre of knyghtes, they made towarde Walys for to distresse Vortiger.

Wherof he beynge warned, for so moche as he well knewe that he myght nat make suffycyent defence by strength of Knyghtes, he therfore garnysshed his Castell with strength of men and vytyal, entendynge to sauegarde hym self by ỹ meane: but all in vayne. For the sayde. ii. Bretherne with theyr Army, besegyd the sayde Castell, and fynally, after many assautes, with wylde fyre consumed the sayd Castell with Vortiger, and all that was[2] therin.

Of hym it is redde that he shulde lye by his owne Doughter, in truste that kynges shuld come of his blode, [for the which dede he was accursyd of seynt Germayne][3]. And lastely endyd his lyf as before is expressed, whan he had reygned now last. ix. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxiii.

AVrelius Ambrosius, ỹ seconde sone of Constantyne, and brother to Constācius, slayne by the treason of Vortiger, was kyng made of the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. CCCC.lxxx. and one, and the. xxi. yere of Childericus than kynge of Fraūce. Of this it is sayd that whan he harde of the deuysion that was in the Lande of Brytayne, attwene Vortiger & the Saxons, & in what maner the Saxons had subdued the Brytons, he in all goodly haste, with ayde of the kyng of lytell Brytayne, spedde hym into this lande, where
[Cap. 3.] after the abouesayd victory had of Vortiger, he sped hym towarde Yorke, as affermeth Gaufride, and there chasyd the Saxons that held the Cytie with Octa or Osca, sone of Hengiste, and toke the sayd Octa, and kept hym as a prysoner somwhat of tyme.

But howe so it was by treason of his keper, or otherwyse, he brake pryson; and he with his Fader gaderyd after a great hoost, & mette Aurelius and his Brytons at a place called Crekynforde, where was foughten a stronge & myghty batayll, to the losse of both parties: but the more losse fyll to ỹ Saxons: for of theym was slayne, iiii. Duks, & iiii. M. of other men, & ỹ other dele chasyd to theyr great daunger; yet this nat withstandyng, Hengiste contynued his Lordshyp in Kent, and Aurelius Ambrose, whiche the En-

[1] beseged, edit. 1542. [2] all his men, edit. 1559. [3] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

glysshe

glysshe Cronicle nameth Aurilambrose, kept ŷ Coūtre called Logiers, or myddell Englande, with Walys, and chasyd ŷ Saxons that dwelled in ŷ. ii. foresayd Prouynces of Eestsaxon & Eest Anglis out of those Countres.

¶ The seconde Kyngdome.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxiiii.

SOUTH SAXON.

Fol. xxxvii.

The seconde Kyngdome. [Pol. cap. 3. lib. 5.]

IN this passetyme, a Saxon named Ella, with his. iii. sōnes called Symen or Symon Plettynger, and Cissa, came with. iii. Shyppes called Obilas, and landed in the South partye of Brytayne, & slewe many Brytons at a place ŷ thēn was named Cuneueshore, & chasyd many vnto a wood than called Andresleger, and after occupyed that Coūtre, & enhabyted hym and his Saxons within the sayd prouynce, makynge hȳselfe kynge and lorde therof. By reason wherof by his myght and power, ŷ sayd prouynce or Countre was after named the Kyngdome or lordshyp of Southsaxons; ŷ which after most concorde of wryters shuld haue his begynnyng the. xxxii. yere after the firste cōmyng of Hengist, whiche, folowynge that accompte, shuld be in the yere of our Lorde. iiii.C.lxxxii. And in the seconde yere of Aurely than kynge of Brytayne.

This kyngdome or Lordshyp had in the Eest syde Kent, in the South ŷ See and the Ile of Wyght, in ŷ West Hampshyre, and in the North Southrey, & cōteyned, as wytnessyth Guydo, Southhamptoū, Somersetshyre, Deuynshyre, & Cornewayl. Of which said kyngdome, Ethelbaldus or Ethelwaldus was the fourth kyng, & the fyrst cristen kyng. Thys kyngdome endured shorteste season of all the other kyngdōes, & passed sonest into the other, for it ēdured not aboue an. C. & xii. yeres, vnder. v. or. vii. kynges at moste.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxv.

THenne to retourne where we lafte of,[1] Aurely, whiche, as before ye haue harde, helde and occupyed the myddell part of Brytayne, with Cambria or Walis, dyd his dilygence to repayre ruynous places, as well Temples and[2] other; and caused the seruyce of God to be sayd & doon, which by mean of ŷ Saxons was greatly decayde thorough all Brytayne. And after this Aurelius besegyd the Saxons in the Hylle of Badon or Badowe, where he slewe many of them. But dayly the Saxons encreasyd and landed in moche Brytayne, as after shall appere. For shortly after, a Saxon named Porth landed with his. ii. sōnes at an Hauen in Southsex, after whome, as some Auctours meane, that Hauen was after called Portismouth, whiche kepyth the name at this day: and in lykewyse they came to lande in dyuers places of Brytayn, so that Aurelius had with them many conflictis & battayellis, in the whyche he sped dyuersly, for he was sometyme victour and some seasō ouerset. It is wryton of hym in the Englesshe Cronycle & other, ŷ he by the help of Merlyn shuld fetche the greate Stones nowe stōdīg vpon the playne of Salysbury, and called the stone Hyenge, oute of Irelond, & cause them to be sette there as they now stonde, in remembraūce of the Brytōs ŷ there were slayne & buryed in the tyme of the cōmunycacion had with Engist and his Saxōs, as before in the story of Vortiger is touchyd. But Policronica alledgyth ŷ honour vnto Vter Pendragon his brother. In the tyme of this Aurelius as wytnessyth also the sayd Policronica, dyed Hengist in his bedde when he had reygned ouer ŷ Kentyshe Saxons xxiiii. yeres: after whose dethe Octa or Osca his sone ruled ŷ sayd Kyngdome other. xxiiii. yeres. Albeit ŷ the Brytyssh Bokes, & also the Cronycles of Englande, sheweth ŷ after that Aurelius had in Batayll slayn Hengist, he toke vnto his grace Octa his sone, & gaue vnto hym a dwelling place in ŷ Coūtre of Galewey for hȳ & his Saxons than lafte on lyue: which semeth nat to be treue, for matier

Stone hyenge. [Cap. 5.]

[1] "Of," *omitted.* [2] as.

that

that shall after ensue, & also for that, that before is touchyd of the Pictes & Scottes, in the tyme of the Misery of ŷ Brytons. Thenne it foloweth this Octa nother augmentid nor mynysshed his lordshyp, but helde hym therwith contented, as hys fader had to hym lafte it.

[Cap. 6.] Lastly, and in the ende of the Reygne of Aurely, Pascencius the yongest sone of Vortiger, whiche after the deth of his fader was fledde into Irlande for feare of Aurely, purchasyd ayde of Guillamoure kynge of Irelande, and with a great Army inuadyd this lande of Britayne by the Countre of Walys, in takyng the Cytie of Menenia, and in wastynge the sayd Countre with iron and fyre, in the which season and tyme Aurelius lay syke in his Cytie of Kaerguent or Wynchester. For whiche cause he desyred his Brother Vter to gather an hoost of Brytons, and to appease ŷ malyce of Pascencius and his adherentes. The whiche accordyngly preparyd his hoost, and at length ouercame the hoost of Pascencius, and slewe hym & the forenamed Guillamour in the same fyght.

In this whyle and season that Vter was thus gone agayne Pascencius, a Saxon or other straũger, feynyng hym a Bryton and a cũnynge man in Physyke, by the intycement of Pascencius came vnto Aurely, where he laye syke, & by his subtyle and false meanes, purchasyd such fauour with those that were nyghe vnto the Prynce, that he was put in truste to mynystre Medycines vnto the kynge. This is named of wryters Coppa, or of some Eoppa, the whiche whan he hadde espyed his tyme conuenyent to bryng aboute his false purpose, he gaue to Aurelius a porcion enpoysoned, by violence wherof he shortly after was dede, when he had reygned after most wryters vpon. xix. yeres.

¶ The thirde or fyfte.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxvi.

[Cap. 4. li. 5.] IN the tyme of the Reygne of this Aurelius, as wytnessyth the Auctour[1] Policronica* & other, the kyngdome of Eastãglis began vnder a Saxon named Vffa, aboute the yere of our Lorde. CCCC.lxxx. and. xii. and the. xi. yere of Aurelius. The which kyngdome conteyned Norffolke & Suffolke nowe called. This had in the East & North sydes the see, in the Northwest Cambridgeshyre, and in the West seynt Edmonds dytche and Hertfordeshyre, and in the South Essex. This Lordshyp was called firste Vffynys lordshyp, and ŷ kynges therof were named Vffynys, or after some Auctours the people. But fynally they were named East Anglis.

This kȳgdom is accõpted for the thyrde of som, but of Guydo for the. v.

The firste cristen kynge of this pryncipat was Redwaldus the thirde kyng; but he was nat so stedfast as belongyd to his Relygyon. His sone named Corpwaldus was more stedfast, which after was slayn of a mysbyleuyng man, & for Cristes fayth as some wryte. But Guydo sayth that Sebertus was firste Cristen kynge of this lordshyp, and that he made seynt Paulys Churche of Lõdon. This vnder. xii. kynges endured tyl the martyrdome of blessyd seynt Edmoũde laste kynge therof, the whiche was martyred nere aboute the yere of our Lorde. DCCC.lxix. By the whiche reason it shuld folowe that this Kyngdome shuld endure by the terme of. CCC.lxxvii. yeres, and of this lordshyp. At that[2] dayes was Elman or Thetforde ŷ chief Towne. But after Guydo, this lordshyp shuld begynne the yere of Grace. v.C.lxx. and than shuld it endure, but. CC.iiii. score and. xix. yeres.

Seȳt Edmounde.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxvii.

Fol. xxxviii.

Francia. CLodoueus the son of Childericus or Hildericus before named was after ŷ deth of his Fader ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lord. CCCC.lxxx. and iiii. and the thirde yere of Aurelius thenne kyng of Brytayne. This of some wryters is named Clodoueus Lowys. The whiche shortly after that he of this Realme was auctorysyd for

[1] Auetour of: [2] those, edit. 1559.

kynge,

kynge, herynge reporte of the beaute and great vertue of Clotildis neuewe to Cundebald kynge or ruler of Burgoyne, sente vnto hym a knight named Aurelius to treate a maryage atwene the kynge and Clotild or Crotild. The whiche Cundebald more for fere than for loue assented.

The cause wherof, as myn Auctor sayth, was, for that this Crotild was enheryto[r] vnto the sayd lande of Burgoyne; and that she by reason of that Mariage shuld recouer her ryght, and put hym from the Rule therof. This Crotild had before ỹ day receyued the fayth of Criste, and so cõtynuynge her Religion was maryed to Clodoueus than a Paynym; and so enduryd a certayne of tyme. But yet she lafte nat to enduce and tourne her Lord to the faith in all that she myght. Primus Christianus Rex Francie.

And after a certayne of tyme she was delyuered of a sone, the whiche, by meanes of ỹ holy man[1] Remigius, Bysshop of Raynes, and of the Quene Crotild, was cristened and named Clodomerus, ỹ whiche dyed within shorte processe after. For that happe the kyng said that his Goddes were discontented with hym that he hadde suffred his Childe to be cristened; and forwreth[2] therof hadde taken from hym his child. The Quene takynge the kynges sayinge in pacyence, conceyued the seconde sone, whiche also by the kynges agrement was also baptised.

This also after a certayne of tyme was vexed with a greuous sikenesse, in suche wyse that it was lykely to haue dyed. Wherfore the kynge was thanne more impacient, and blamed ỹ Relygion of his wyfe in moost impacyent maner, the whiche sayinges the Quene toke pacyently, and put all her confydence in God, to whome both she and seynt[3] Remigeus prayed so affectuously that the Childe was restoryd vnto perfyte helth.

Thus Clodoueus perseuerynge in his eronyous lawe, made warre vpon ỹ Almaynes; in whiche warre he beynge one daye occupyed in fyght agayne his enemyes, he with his people was put to the werse, wherof whanne Clodoueus was ware, hauynge great drede of hym selfe, called to mynde the often exortacion of his wyfe, and of ỹ great vertue of her Goddes lawe; and sodaynly lyfte his iyen towarde Heuyn and sayd: "God, the whiche Clotild my wyfe doth honoure, nowe helpe me. And if this day I may passe this Daunger and opteyne victorye, I shall euer after worshyp ỹ with true fayth;" the whiche prayer scantly fynysshed, the Frenschmen by dyuyn power were so vnyed and knyt togyder, and so knyghtly withstode theyr Enemyes, that in shorte whyle after they opteyned victory. Whiche victory had, the kynge with great tryumphe retourned into Fraunce; wherof whanne Crotilde was warned, she anone receyued hym with all ioye and gladnesse; thankyng her Lorde God of his great victory, but more for that, that he had forsaken his Idolatry, and was becomyn seruaunt of the oonly God fourmer of all the worlde.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxviii.

IT was nat longe after ỹ blessyd[4] Remigius was sente for: the which enfourmed ỹ kynge suffycyently in the faythe of Criste, and vpon an Eester daye folowynge, with great Solempnyte, baptysed the kynge. [In tyme of whiche Solempnyzacyon doynge, the holy Crisme or oyle, by neclygence of the Mynistres, or otherwise lackynge, a Doue discendynge from Heuen brught in her becke or byll a vyoll fylled with oyle of moost swetest sauour, and delyuered to seynt Remygius; the whiche was construed to be done by vertue of the holy Ghoost, and with this holy oyle whan the kynge was enoynted, ỹ surplusage therof was kept with moost reuerence. I haue herde reported that this oyle is kepte at the Cytie of Reynes or at Paris, and that it neuer fayleth or wastyth, and that all ryghtfull enherytours of the Crowne of Fraunce be therwith at theyr Coronacion enoynted; but & it happen any myghty man to vsurpe the Crowne by myght, when the Bysshop cõmeth for this holy oyle, he fyndeth ỹ vyoll or glasse drye, and ellis nat. To this report euery

[1] "the holy man" is *omitted* in the edit. of 1542, 1559. [2] for wrathe. [3] "Seynt" *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559. [4] "the blessyd," *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559.

man may gyue credence as hym lyketh. For I fande nat this wryten in the Gospell, nor yet in no booke of holy Scripture][1].

Thenne it foloweth after this Solempnytie done, the kynge had certayne wordes to the people in exortyng theym to leue theyr Idolatry, and to beleue in Criste and his fayth, by whose myght & power oonly he hadde venquysshed his Enemyes, by the whiche exortacõn and other meanes of the holy Bysshop[2] Remigius moche people were soone after conuertyd and baptised.

Thenne the kynge buyldyd certayne newe Monasteryes, and dedycat the olde Temples of Idollys in honoure of Cristes seynts, amonge the whiche one was nere vnto the Cytie of Paris, in the honoure of the Apostles Peter & Poule. It is wytnessyd of Maister Robert Gagwyne, ỹ before thyse dayes, all Frenche kynges vsed to bere in their Armes. iii. Todys, but after this Clodoueus had Receyued Cristes Relygyon. iii. Floure Delys were sent to hym by dyuyne power,[3] sette in a shylde of Azure, the whiche syns that tyme hathe ben borne of all Frenche kynges.

[The sayde Auctour myndeth also ỹ in a Monastery of Fraũce, called ỹ Monastery of seynt Bartylmewe, was somtyme kept a clothe of Redde sylke, whiche was named the Aurisflambe, & borne for a Baner in the felde agayne the Barbaris or hethen people, by vertue wherof the frenche Prynces wanne many victoryes; but after, whan this precyous Relyke or Aurisflambe was borne agayne Cristen Princes, the vertue therof seasyd, and lastly was lost, but yet the lyke therof is kept at seynt Denys, and had in great reuerence of the Bysshoppes and Abbottes of the same place.][4]

Nota.

Then it foloweth in the storye whan Clodoueus had set his Realme in due ordre, Clotylde callynge to mynde the treason dõne to her Fader, and also the wrongfull withholdynge of her ryghtfull enherytaunce by her vncle Gundebalde[5], exorted her Lorde Clodoueus to sende an Embassade, and to requyre restytucion of her sayd right, the which was soone after done. And whan ỹ kynge hadde receyued an answere that the sayd Gundebalde wolde nat restore the sayd ryght of his wyfe, he in all goodly wyse prepared an Armye, & made warre vpon the sayde Gundebalde, and after great waste and Distruccion of the coũtre, Clodoueus fynally besegyd hym in a Cytie, and after toke ỹ sayd Cytie by strength, and ỹ sayd Gundebalde within the same as prysoner. But by mediacion of Frendes, and great gyftes, with also a yerely trybute to be payde to Clodoueus, the sayd Gundebalde was releaced and sette at lybertie.

Fol. xxxix.

¶ Capitulum. lxxxxix.

THis voyage thus spedde & orderyd, the kynge lafte behynde hym an army of. v. M. knyghtes, vnder the gydynge of Gundefelf, Brother of the foresayd Gundebalde, and after retourned into Fraunce: But soone after the kynges departyng, Gundefilf, contrary to ỹ promesse before made, gaderyd a power of Knyghtes and made warre vpon his sayd brother, and lastly beseged hym in ỹ cytie of Vienne, wher vpon eyther parte was by skyrmysshes and assautes great people slayne: Albeit it in the ende Gundebalde wanne the Cytie, & his brother therin beynge, he afterward behedyd. Aboute this tyme great dissencion grewe atwene Clodoueus, & the kyng of Gothis, called Alericus, whiche variaunce by agrement of both parties, was put to the Iugemẽt of Theodoricus, than kynge of Longobardes or of Italyens, the whiche after the sayd causes warre well and sufficiently argued and debatid before hym and his Coũsayll, he fynally gaue sentence, that a knyght of Clodoueus shuld stãde vpon an Hylle, holdyng a spere vpright in his hande, & that the kyng of Goothis shuld throwe or lay so moche syluer as shulde in processe Couer the poynt of the sayd spere, whiche sentence, as testyfieth maister Robert Gagwyne, the Goothis

[1] *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559. [2] "the holy bishop" *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559. [3] "by dyuyne power" is *omitted* in the edit. 1542, 1559. [4] *omitted* in the edit. 1542, and 1559. [5] Cundebalde.

despised, sayinge that they had nat sufficient syluer within theyr lande to perfourme the sayd sentence; and for despyte of the same, certayne Goothis espiynge a Prynce of Fraunce named Paterne, beyng associat w̄ dyuers Frenshmen in a lofte or Chambre, the whiche Paterne had ben solicitour for ỹ Frenshe kyng in the foresayd matier, ỹ sayd Goothis, by crafty & false meanes, caused ỹ florthe of the sayd Chambre to falle, by whiche meane ỹ sayd Paterne was greuously hurte, and many of the other in lykewyse. and some slayne.

Wherof whan Clodoueus had wrytynge, he beynge therwith greatly amouyd, and also because the Goothis disobeyde the foresayd awarde, he gaderyd shortly after a great hooste, and [after certayne offerynges done to seynt Martyn, with also[1]] passynge the Ryuer of [Vian, by myracle and ledynge of an harte[2],] he lastly came to the syghte of his Enemyes. Thenne Clodoueus lodged his hoost nere vnto the monastery of seynt Hillary, where in ỹ nyght before the batayll he receyued tokens of victory, the which I passe ouer.

And vpon the morne he sette his people in aray, and made towarde his enemyes, and mette with theym in a felde called Noglodiene nere vnto the ryuer of Cleue or Clyue, where after sore & longe fyght, he slewe the abouesayd Alaricus kynge of Goothis, as sayth myne Auctour, with his owne hande.

But here shulde seme some discorde of tyme with other wryters; for Cronica Cronicarum, Iacobus Philippus, and other, testyfie that this Alaricus was dede many yeres before: for he shulde be kynge of Goothis, by theyr sayinge, in the tyme that Honorius, Brother vnto Archadius, was Emperour, whiche was aboute ỹ yere of our Lorde. CCCC. and. ix. that he beganne his empyre. Wherfore maister Robert Gagwyne, meaneth some other kynge of Goothis than Alaricus: for the sayd Auctours also affermyn ỹ this Alaricus dyed of sodayne sykenesse, at a Cytie named Cesancia, whanne he had reygned after moost wryters. vi. yere.

Thenne it foloweth in the Story, whan Clodoueus had thus opteyned victory of the Goothis, and set the Coūtre of Guyan in ordre, he sped hym agayne into Fraunce.

And when he was cōmen into the Countree of Turonne, he was encountred with Embassadoures of the Emperoure Anastasius, and presented from the sayd Emperoure, with gyftes of great pryce and honoure; and also admytted for a Consull of Rome, whiche at that dayes was a dignytie of moost honoure: whiche done, he remytted the sayde Ambassade with great gyftes. This sayinge is affermed of the other wryters, the whiche shewe this honour to hȳ to be done, for asmoche as he had ouercomyn ỹ Goothis, enmyes of Crists faith, but they name not ỹ kyngs name that then reygned ouer the Goothis.

[This besynesse ouer passed, Clodoueus contynued his iourney tyll he came to the Monastery or Churche of saynt Martyn, where, with great deuotion, accordynge to his former promesse, he offered his stede that he occupyed ỹ Iourney agayne the Goothis. And after for ỹ he entended to occupye the said Hors, if he hadde lyke nede, he redemed hym with a competent sūme of golde; but yet the hors myght nat be remoued; thenne the kynge addyd to an Hondreth pesys of golde, whiche at those dayes were named Goldyn Shyllynges, and so receyued his Stede; wherfore ỹ kynge sayd after in game, that Seynt Martyn was a good helper at nede, but he was Costelewe[3].]

Thus this noble and firste Cristen Prynce, cōtynued his lyfe in noble & marciall dedys, in augmentynge his Kyngdome by knyghtly bataylles, and other worldly prouycyons, and lastly dyed of Goddes visitacion, with al stedfastnes of faith, whan he hadde reygned. xxx. yeres, leuynge after hym. iiii. sonnes of Clotild his wyfe; that is to saye, Clodomyrius, Childebertus, Theodoricus, and Clotharius, or after some Latarius, and was buryed in the Monastery that he before nere vnto Paris hadde buylded, with suche Epitaphy or Superscripcion vpon his tumbe, as after shalbe shewed.

[1] *omitted in the edit. of* 1542, 1559. [2] *omitted in the edit.* 1542. 1559. [3] *omitted in the edit. of* 1542, *and* 1559.

But, or I procede to the declarynge of the foresayd Epitaphy, for somoche as I haue harde dyuers holde an oppynyon, that the fayth of Criste was receyued in Fraunce, or it were receyued in this Lande of Brytaygne, therfore I shall note here the tyme that this Clodoueus firste toke Baptyme, whiche was, as Ranulphe Monke, and other, testyfie in the. xv. yere of his Reygne, or nere aboute, whiche was the yere of our Lorde. CCCC. lxxx. and. xiv[1]; wherby it apperyth, considerynge the tyme of Lucius, firste Cristen Prynce that euer was of Brytaygne, as before is shewed, that Cristes faythe was by a longe tyme honoured in Brytayne, or it were honoured in Fraunce; except that such as holde the foresayd oppynyon, accompte the firste cõmynge of Cristes fayth into Brytaygne, at the firste conuersion of the Saxons, whenne it was prechyd [by the holy Monke[2]] seynt Augustyne, & his felawes, whiche is nat to the purpose. Than to ỹ foresayd Epitaphy or Superscripcion as foloweth.

Fol. xl.

Diues opum, virtute potens, clarus que trihumpho,
Condidit hanc sedem, Rex Clodoueus, idem
Patricius magno subliuis[3] fulsit honore,
Plenus amore dei, contempsit credere nullo,
Lumina qui variis horrent portenta figuris,
Mox purgatus aquis, & christi fonte renatus
Fragrantem gessit, infuso[4] crismate crinem.
Exemplumq; dedit, sequitur quod plurima turba
Gentilis populi, spretoq; errore suorum
Doctorem cultura deum, verumq; parentem,
Hiis felix meritis, superauit gesta priorum
Semper concilio, castris bellisq; tremendus
Hortatu dux ipse bonus, ac pectore fortis
Constructas Acies formauit in Agmine primus.

¶ The whiche verses maye be thus expowned in our moder tunge as hereafter foloweth.

Ryche of Goodes, stronge in vertue, in triumphe clere[5] shynynge,
Kynge Clodoueus, this temple bylt of stone.
Fader of comon prophete[6], cladde with honoure[7] excellynge,
Replenysshed with goddes loue, despysed[8] his olde foon,
And his Pagan law, with the straunge fygures echoon,
Purgyd with holy water, by Cristes font borne newe,
And holy Crisme enoynted, floured with vertue dewe.
Example gyuynge, hym foloweth many a man,
Forsakynge theyr erroure, and theyr false goddes all,
And by his techynge, honoure but one god than.
Thus by his merytes, he excelled his parentall,
And thoroughe his counsayll, made cytie and castell thrall.
He was a noble Duke, and therwith, of great myght,
And in Fronte of Batayll, was euer the firste knyght.

Capitulum. C.

VTer the laste or yongest sone of Constantyne, and brother of Aurelius, was made kynge of Brytayne in the yere of our Lorde. CCCCC. euen, and ỹ xvi. yere of Clodoueus than kynge of Fraunce. This, as before is touched, was surnamed Pẽdragon. The cause therof was, as wytnessyth ỹ Englyssh Cronycle, for so moche as Merlyn lykened hỹ vnto a Dragon vnder a sterre apperyng ī the Firmament, wherof there is made a longe

[1] CCCC. lxxx. and ix. *edit.* 1542, 1559. [2] *omitted in edit.* 1542, 1559. [3] sublimis. [4] infulso. [5] clere *omitted in edit.* 1542. 1559. [6] profete. [7] his honour, *edit.* 1533. 1542. [8] despised of, *edit.* 1559.

processe,

processe, and[1] by Gaufride in his Brytysshe boke also affermed, the whiche to me semeth of lytell credence; but trougthe it is, that after Vter was, as before is sayd, made kynge, he was enamowryd vpon ỹ Duks wyfe of Cornewayll, named Igwarne or Igorne, and for to opteyne his vnlefull luste, sought many and dyuers meanes, so that lastly he made warre vpon her husbande, named Garolus or Gorleis, and at length slewe the sayd Duke at his Castell, called Tyntagell, standynge in Cornewayll, and after maried his wyfe, and receyued of her the noble knyght Arthur, and a doughter named Amy, as sayth the Englysshe Cronycle. [Cap. 6. li. 5.] [Li. 6. cap. 2.]

More is nat lafte, of any wryter of auctoryte, in remembraunce of this Vter. Albeit that some testyfye ỹ he, by the helpe of Merlyn, shuld fetche Coria[2] Gigantum, otherwyse, called the Stone Henge, out of Irelande, as before I haue shewyd in the story of Aurelius; & of Gaufride is shewyd, that Vter also shuld wynne the foresayd Lady by the enchauntement of Merlyn, whiche is nat comely to any Cristen Relygyon to gyue to any suche fantastycall illusions any mynde or credence. Wherefore I passe ouer, leuynge all the other matyer, whiche also is there rehercid, of the warre attwene Vter and Osca, sone of Hengiste; for so moche as it is disacordaunt vnto other wryters: and fynally conclude that this Vter Pendragon dyed by force of venym, whenne he hadde ruled this Ile of Brytaygne by the full terme of. xvi. yeres, and after was buryed by his brother Aureli in Coria Gigātum, or Stone Henge, leuynge after hỹ the fore named Sone, the puyssaunt Arthur. Coria Gigātum.

¶ Capitulum. Ci.

FRANCIA.

LOtharius or Clotharius, the yongest Sone of Clodoueus, was made kynge of a part of Fraunce called Soisons, in the yere of our Lorde. v.C. and. xiiii., and the xiiii. yere of Vter, than kynge of moche Brytayne. Ye shall vnderstande, that after ỹ deth of Clodoueus, laste kynge of Fraunce, the lande by hym was deuyded to his. iiii. sōnes; that is to say, to the eldest sone Clodomyrus was appoynted ỹ Lordshyp of Orlyaunce, to Theodoricus, the seconde sone, Austracy, to Childebertus, the thirde sone, myddell Fraunce, or the Countre lyinge aboute Paris, and to this Lothayr the abouesayd Lordshyp of Soisons, of whiche sayd Lordshyppes eyther of theym possessyd, they were of theyr Subgettes called kynges, and so contynued in god reste a certayne of tyme: in the whiche season Clotild theyr Moder, berynge in mynde the vnnaturall deth of her parentes, wylled her sonnes to venge theyr deth, whiche deth, as testyfieth Vyncent Hystoryall, and also Antoninus, was ī this fourme folowing; Gundenchus the Graundfather of Clotildus had. iiii. sōnes, that is to say, Gundebaldus, Gondigisillus, Hilpericus, and Godomarus; to thyse. iiii. sōnes, Gūdenchus beset the Lande of Burgoyne, Gondigisillus and Godomarus dyed, wherfore the Lande of Burgoyne fylle to Gundebaldus & Hilpericus; then Gundebaldus for Couetyse of the hole Lordshyp, slewe his brother Hilpericus, and fastened a great stone to the necke of his wyfe, and cast her into a depe water; and of his. ii. doughters, whereof the eldest hyght Trona, he exiled in poore wede or clothynge, and the yonger he kept in seruage within his owne Court, the whiche after, as before is shewyd, was maryed agayne hys wyll vnto Clodoueus Fader to this Lotharius. Francia. *Fol. xlii.*

Thenne it foloweth whanne this Lotharius of Clotild[3] made sharpe warre vpon Sigismonde, sone of Gundebaldus, whiche than was deed; in the whiche warre, the eldest sone, Clodomyrus, was slayne, leuyng after hym. iii. sonnes named Theodaldus[4], Guntherus, or Guntharre, and Clodoaldus; whiche. iii. sōnes Clotilde[5] toke to her tuyssion, & guydynge. But the other brother maynteyned the warre agayne the Burgoynyons in suche wyse that fynally they opteyned the right porcion of their Moder Clotilde.

[1] as, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] [Chorea.] [3] soune of Clotild. [4] Theobaldus. [5] "Clotilde" *omitted.*

After this warre was fynysshed in Burgoyne, Childebertus, the thirde sone, herynge that Almarcus, kynge of Spayne, mysse entreated his Soster, made warre vpon hym, & lastly hym subdued, and sette his Suster in her former estate.

But whyle the sayde Childebert was thus in Spayne occupyed, Theodorus his brother toke from hym a cytie to hym belongyng called Mountclere; and slewe ŷ knyghts whiche Childebertus had lafte there to kepe ŷ sayd cytie. For this myscheuous dede arose great debate atwene thyse. ii. bretherne, but by medyacion of Frendes they were at length accordyd. Thenne Theodorus sought newe meanes of displeasur agayn his said brother, as wel treason as otherwyse, the whiche Childebert, by his policy and wysedome and with good fortune escapyd.

Childebert thanne castynge in his mynde how he myght wynne to hym the Patrymonye, or the Lordshyp that lately belonged vnto his eldest Brother Clodomyrus, toke Counsayll of his brother Clotharius, in suche wyse that they togyder, or of one assent, sent vnto theyr Moder Clotild for theyr neuewes, Childer of theyr Brother. And she no thynge mystrustynge theym, sent the sayd Childer vnto the sayd. ii. bretherne. But within shorte tyme of theyr commynge vnto theyr sayd vncles, as testyfyeth maister Robert Gagwyne, and also the frenche Cronycle, Lotharius tyrannously with his swerde slewe. ii. of the sayd Childer, and than the thirde fledde for his sauegarde vnto suche as hym fauouryd. He was after agayne taken, and compelled to make a solempne othe that he shulde become a relygyous man, and neuer clayme any parte of his ryght or enherytaunce; by whiche vnlefuł meane, the seconde Brother opteyned the hoole Lordshyp of Orleaunce, and partyd ŷ reuenues therof attwene theym: but that enduryd but a whyle, and here I passe ouer the sorowe that Clotilde made for the Childer of her sone Clodomyrus, and also the orderynge of the yongest sone called Clodoaldus, whiche escaped the daunger of his vncles, as before is shewyd, the whiche wolde aske a longe season.

¶ Capitulum. C.ii.

IT was nat longe after but that the seconde brother, kynge or Duke of Austracy, dyed of Goddes visytacyon, leuynge after hym a sone named Theodebertus, the whiche of his. ii. foresayd vncles was greuously warred by longe tracte of tyme, the whiche he defendyd thorough his Marcyall Knyghthode. And whan he, by dyuers meanes, hadde soughte pease and myght nat purchase it, he than founde suche meanes by riche gyftes, and otherwyse, that he wanne the Fauoure of his vncle Childebert, and cherysshed hym as his frende. Thenne fyll vnkyndnesse attwene Childebert and Lothayre, in so moche that eyther of theym assembled a great hoste to subdue that one the other. But the forenamed Theodobertus made all ŷ power he myght to ayde and assyste Childebert. So that vpon both parties was a great multitude of knyghtes armed redy to fyght. [Clotild than heryng of this mortal warre attwene her. ii. sõnes, and also consyderynge the lykelyhode of the great effusyon of mannes blode that myght ensue, by the reason of the ioynyng of thyse foresayd two hostes, in all hast yode vnto the Sepulture or Shryne of Miracuł. seynt Martyne, wherwith due deuocyon she made her specyall prayers, besechynge God and that blessyd Seynt, to sende by heuenly power some let or inpedyment that the sayd hoostes shuld nat ioyne in Batayll, by meane of whiche prayer, whan the sayd. ii. hoostes were in preparynge for to haue ronne togyder,][1] sodeynly fyll suche a tempest of wynde & hayll with thunder and lyghtnynge, that both hoostes were so greuously betyn with the sayd tempest and wederynge, that eyther of theym had moost mynde how they myght defende them self from daũger of the sayde wederynge; and ouer that, as testyfyeth the abouenamed Auctour, eyther of the hoostes thought in theyr myndes that they

[1] *omitted in the edit.* 1542 *and* 1559.

were

were chased of theyr enemyes, in suche wyse that eyther of theym fledde from other by a longe space.

After this, eyther of theym sent meanes of treatyse eyther to other, and at length conferred a pease attwene theym; the whiche pease, surely on bothe parties assured, Childebert exeytyd his Brother to warre vpon a people or Countre called Terra Conensis, in ỹ prouynce of Spayne, and besegyd the Cytie of Saragoũce, otherwyse called Augusta; and fynally, kept the cytesens so short, that they to appease theyr Enemyes, [caused the Bysshop of the cytie to opea the Sepulcre of seynt Vyncent, and gyue to Lothayr a parte of that holy Martyrs body][1].

But yet, that natwithstandynge, though the siege were withdrawen and the Cytie sparyd, yet the Countre thereaboute they pylled and wasted withoute[2], and after with great rychesse of praye retourned into Fraunce, where at Paris by Childebert soone after was buylded a Monastery [in the worshyp of God and of seynt Vyncent, where the foresayd relyke was set and reuerently kept[3],] which Monastery at this day is called Seynt Germayns de Pree.

In this whyle, I can nat sey by what happe, thyse. ii. Bretherne newely maligned agayn theyr neuewe Theodobert[4], the sone of theyr brother Theodorich, and entendyd by theyr malyce to byreue hym of the Lordshyp of Austracy, and to that entent, gaderyd theyr people to warre vpon the sayde Dagobert[4]; whereof whanne the sayd Theodobert was ware, consyderynge he coude nat so shortly assemble his peple to with stande the malyce of his sayd vncles, he in lowly and good maner rode agayne theym in a peasyble wyse, and to theym behaued hym so well in worde and dede, that alonly[5] forgaue nat his trespasse, but also sente hym agayne with great rychesse of gyftes. Exãpule of Pytee.

Soone after this tyme dyed Clotilde the wyfe of Clodoueus, the whiche, with great pompe, of her. ii. Sonnes was buryed by her said husbande; and shortly after dyed Theodobert aforenamd, leuynge after hym a sone named Theobalde. In this passe tyme Lotharius of his wyfe receyued. vii. sonnes and. ii. doughters; of ỹ whiche, Cramyris the eldest sone he sent into Quyan[6] to haue the Rule thereof vnder his Fader; but he, contrary his faders mynde, oppressyd the inhabytaunte thereof w grieuous exacoõns and tributes, wherefore his fader beyng dyscontent calléd hym thens. Cramyris with this beynge sore, amoued, in great angre departed his faders court and yode vnto Childebert his vncle, excytynge hym to make warre vpon his Fader, imagenynge fals occacions to brynge the. ii. Brethern at dystaũce, and made a solempne othe to his vncle that durynge his lyfe he shulde strength his partye agayne his owne fader; whiche assuraunce thus made, Childebert preparyd his hoost to warre agayne his brother Lothayr; but the sayd Lothayr of this beynge warned, for such lette as he then hadde, sent agayne his enemyes. ii. sonnes of his, named Gunthranus and Aribertus; and whyle thyse. ii. sõnes made towarde Childebert, he in that whyle made great waste in the countre of Champayne, and takynge great pryses retourned into his owne countre of myddell Fraunce; wherof herynge the forenamed Guntranus and his brother, and also that in Quyan[6] was moued warre by Cramyre, spedde theim thyder with all theyr people, but they dydde no thynge wordy memory or laude. In this season dyed the foresaid Childebert, brother to Lothayr, wout heyre, whan he hadde ruled myddell Fraunce. xlvii. yeres, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, and was entyred in the Monastery of seynt Vyncent, otherwyse called seynt Germayne de Pree. Innaturalis filius. Fol. xliii.

¶ Capitulum. Ciii.

AFter ỹ deth of Childebert, forsomoche as he dyed wout heyre, Lotharius forenamed, seasyd all myddell Fraunce into his possession; and after he had some dele sette it in an[7]

[1] scught meanes, *edit.* 1542 and *1559.* [2] without pytye. [3] *omitted in the edit.* 1542, *1559.*
[4] Theodobart. [5] They alonely. [6] Guyan. [7] an *omitted.*

ordre,

ordre, nat forgettyng the innaturall rebellyon of his sone Cramyre, chase vnto hym a puryd[1] company of knyghtes and of competent nombre, and in all haste made towarde Guyan, where the sayd Cramyre was than abydyng; but when he harde of the cōmynge of his Fader agayn hym, ẅ his chosyn army, he withdrewe hym to the vttermoost partiys of Fraunce, and requyred ayde of a kynge or duke to that partie adioynynge, named Gonobalde, the whiche to hȳ promysed ayde to his power.

Lotharius, of this affynyte beyng warned, pursued the sayde Conobalde so sharpely, ẏ he constrayned hym at length to take ẏ Churche of seynt Martyne, & to holde it for his sauegarde; but whan Lothayre had assayde by dyuers meanes, aswell by fayre promesse as words of manasses, & myght nat get ẏ sayde Gonobalde out of ẏ holy place[2], he sette the Churche on fyre & brent the Duke in the same, the whiche shortly after reedyfied[3] & made i more better maner than it before had been.

When Cramyrus was thus dispoynted of the ayde of Conobalde, he thanne fledde into lytell Brytayne, and requyred ayde of ẏ Erle thereof named Cenabutus, where, by comforte of the sayd erle, he assembled a great hoost to withstāde his Fader, wherof the Fader beynge asserteyned, drewe towarde hym; and whan both hostes were nere, the sone[4] sent messengers to the Fader to entreate a pease: but Lothayr included so many harde condycyons within the sayde pease, or as sōme wryters meane, Cramyris desyred suche vnlefull desyres of his Fader, ẏ the sayd Treaty myght take none effecte, & for truste ẏ he had in ẏ Brytons & in his strēgth, he was vtterly bent to trye his cause by dynt of swerde.

Lothayr hauȳge experience that Fortune of Battayll is in victory doughtfull and vncertayne, he therefore made his prayer to God besechynge hym of ayde agayne the innaturall and obstynat rebellyon of his sone; after whiche prayer endyd, he cōmaunded
A sharpe batayll. in ẏ name of God to sette vpon his Enemyes, which met with so great ire, ẏ shortly ẏ grene feld was dyed into a perfyghte redde, & many knyghts vpon bothe parties lay slayne & gruntynge vpon the erthe. The Fader comfortynge & callynge vpon his knyghtes, vpon that one parte, and the sone vpon his knyghtes vpon that other partie; eyther of theym entendynge the deth & vtter distruccyon of eche other; which in naturall batayll[5] hangynge in suspence to whether of theym the victory shulde turne, sodeynly the Brytons gaue backe, and gaue place to the Frenshemen, with the whiche the Frenshe partye beynge comfortyd, enforced the Brytons with so sharpe fyght, that they were compelled to forsake the Felde, & toke theim to flyght, whom the Frenshemen chasid and slewe without mercy.

Crudelis Pater. In ẏ whiche chase Cramyris, with his wyfe and Childer, warre taken and presented vnto Lothayr; the whiche shortly after settynge a parte all faderly loue, compassion and pyte, causyd a great fyre to be made, into the whiche he cōmaunded to be caste the sayde Cramyris, with also his wyfe and Children, or as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle, they were al enclosyd in an house, and the house and they togyder consumed with fyre.[6]

Thus the moost cruell Fader, without pyte, chastysed the inobedient sone, to the ensample and lernynge of other to bere dewe obedyence vnto theyr parentis. After this victory and cruell chastysement executed by Lothayre, he retourned[6] into Fraunce, and so to the Sepulcre or Shryne of seȳt Martyne, yeldynge to God and hym thankes of this victory, and offeryd there many and riche gyftes[7]; and after spedde hym to Soisons, where he as[8] kynge of all Fraunce, except the Lordshyp of Austracy, which Theobalde, sone of his Brothers sone[9] Theodorich, than helde The Fader of this Theobalde was Theodobert. Thenne Lothayre seynge his lande in reste and quyetnesse, gaue hym to huntynge and chace of wylde beestes, a game of great vse amonge all frenshe Prynces.

[1] pure, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] the sanctuarye, edit. 1542, 1559. [3] he reedifyed. [4] They.
[5] Thus this Battayll. [6] "He yelded thankes vnto almighty God and so retourned," edit. 1542, 1559.
[7] The circumstance of the Kings offering *is omitted in edit. 1542, 1559.* [8] was, edit. 1559.
[9] one of his brother sonnes, edit. 1542, 1559.

In whiche disport he beyng one day greatly trauayled, caught some surfet of the whiche ensued a mortall sykenes, so that he dyed shortly after, whenne he had reygned, as before is specyfyed, ouer the Lordshyp of Soisons and other by the terme of. I. wynter full: and was after buryed at Soisons with great pompe, leuyng after hym. iiii. Sõnes, Guntranus, Aribertus, Chilpericus, and Sigebertus.

It is testyfyed of Maister Robert Gagwyn, that Seynt[1] Radegunde, borne of the countre of Thurynge, of a pagan Fader, named Bernigarius, was wyfe to this Lotharius, whose vertuous lyfe Antoninus, in his boke called Summa Antonini, in the. viii. Chapitre and. xii. title of the seconde parte of his werke, sheweth compendyously. Sancta Radegunda.

¶ Capitulum. Ciiii. *Fol. xlii.*

Arthurus, the sone of Vter Pendragon, a strepelynge of. xv. yeres of Age, began his reygne, as kyng of Britayne, in the yere of oure Lorde. CCCCC. and. xvii. and ỹ thirde yere of Eotharius thenne kynge of Fraunce, or of a parte therof, as before is declaryd. Of this Arthur is, by Gaufride, recyted a longe Storye, and alowed by the Englysshe Cronycle, ỹ which from other wryters is greatly discordaunt; but yet all Auctours agreen that he was noble and victoryous in all his dedys. Anglia. [Li. 7.]

Fayne I wold declare the fame of this noble Prynce, to the comforte of other to folowe his marcyall dedys, so that I myght somwhat iustifie my reporte by some Auctour of Auctorite; but the more I am in dought because of the sayinge of Ranulphe, Monke of Chestre, whiche auowchyth it vpon Wyllyam, wryter of Historyes of kynges, as is reherced at length in the. vi. Chapitre of the. v. booke of Policronicon, whiche is there opyn to euery mã that is desyrous to knowe the sayd reporte or opynyon, the whiche for the length therof I ouerpasse. And somwhat to the honour of so great a chãpion as was this Arthur, I shall lay vnto the reder, that he may w̃ auctoritie shewe vnto the herers, and therwith gladde the Welshemen that he shuld descende of so noble a victour, whiche so many dedys of honoure executyd in his dayes. Auctoris opinio.

Then, as testyfieth Policronicon and other, Arthur faught. xii. notable bataylles agayn the Saxons, and of theym all was victoure.

Wherefore the firste was vpon the ryuer of Cleuy, and. iiii[or]. the next were foughtyn vpon the ryuer Douglis, which rennyth vnder the towne of Wygan, vpon ten myles from the ryuer of Merse in Lancassbyre.

The. vi. Batayll was vpon the ryuer called Bassa.

The. vii. besyde Lyncolne, in a wood called Celidone.

The. viii. and the ix. were foughten aboute Yorke.

The. x. was about Nycolt towne, whiche is named Warwyke, as after some wryters.

The. xi. was as at Bathe, where he longe besegyd Cerdicus, kynge of Westsaxons.

The. xii. and laste was at a place called Badon or Badowe Hyll, in whiche he slewe many Saxons; but that natwithstandyng he myght nat clerely voyde theym his Lande, but that they kept theyr Countrees, whiche they were before possessyd of, as Kent, Sotherey and Norffolk. Albeit that some Auctours testyfye that they helde these Coũtrees as tributaries vnto Arthur.

This noble warryour, as wytnessith holy[3] Gilda, slewe with[4] his owne hande in one daye, by the helpe of oure Lady Seynt Mary[4], whose Picture he bare peynted in his shelde. C. and. xl. Saxons; whiche Shelde he called Pridwẽ, his swerde was called Caliboure, and his spere was called Rone after the Brettysshe tunge or speche.

[1] Seynt *omitted in edit.* 1542, 1559. [2] iiii. of, edit. 1542, 1559. [3] "holy" *omitted in edit.* 1542, 1559.
[4] The edit. of 1542, and 1559 say "by the helpe of God."

¶ The

¶ The thirde or fourth.

¶ Capitulum. Cv.

WEST SAXON.

The. iii. kigdom of East anglis be admytted for the fifte. And ellys it must stande for ỹ fourth.

About ỹ. v. yere of this Arthure, after thagremẽt of moste wryters, beganne the lordshyp of Westsaxon, vnder ỹ Saxon called Cerdicus, and Kenricus his sone. For Denys and other wytnes, that this Lordshyp or Kyngdome shulde haue his begynnynge the. lxxi. yere after the firste cõmynge of Hengiste or the yere of our Lorde. CCCCC.xxii. whiche agreeth with ỹ. v. yere of Arthur forsayd.

This Lordshyp conteyned the West Countree of Englande; as Wylshyre, Somersetshyre, Berks, Dorset, & other, as Deuonshyre and Cornewayll, and hadde in the East syde Southhampton, in the Northe Thãmes the famous Ryuer, in the south and west the see Occean.

This foresayd Credicus, which of some Auctours is named Childricus, landed firste at Cerdysshor, whiche nowe is called Yermouth, an hauyn towne in the countie of Norffolke; and by helpe of other Saxons, thanne inhabyted in that countre, thenne called Est Anglis, the sayde Cerdicus at length obteyned the forsayd countre, and named it Westsaxon or Westsaxonia: & reygned therin as lorde or kynge a certayne of yeres, and Kenricus his sone after hym.

The firste Cristen kynge of this prouynce was named Kyngilsus, and conuertyd by meanes of that blessyd man Berinus, Bysshop of Dorchester, to whom Quichelinus, Brother of the foresayd Kyngilsus, gaue the said Cytie to make there his See; after he also had receyued Baptyme of the sayd Berinus. And as Guido wytnessyth, ỹ sayd Quichelinus gaue after to the Bishop of Wynchester. vii. myles compasse of lande to buylde there a Bysshoppes See; the whiche was accomplysshed and fynysshed by Kenwalcus his sone. This kyngdome enduryd longest of all the other, whiche were. vii. in nombre, or. vi. besyde this. Some wryters accompt the terme of the durannce of this kyngdome, from Cerdicus to Egbert, and some to the last yere of Aluredus; but Guido accomptyth the endurannce of this kyngdome from the firste yere of Cerdicus vnto the laste yere of Edwarde ỹ Confessour, by reason wherof it shulde endure. CCCCC. and. xliiii[a]. yeres. But moste accordyngly it shuld be rekened from the first yere of Cerdicus to the laste yere of Aluredus, for he made one Monarchy of al. vii. kyngdomes, in whiche tyme dydde floure[b] or passe. CCC.lxxviii. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. C.vi.

NOwe then I wyll retourne vnto Arthur, the whiche by a longe tyme dwellid in warre and mortall Batayle with ỹ Saxons, by meane of theyr dayly repayre into this lande; the whiche also allyed theym with Pyctes and other Nacions, and made their partye the strenger by that meane. But yet Arthur by his marcyal knyghthode, brought theym in such frame, ỹ he was accompted for chief Lorde of Brytayne.

Fynally, whenne he hadde by a longe tyme maynteyned his warres agayne the Saxons, and specially agayne Cerdicus or Childricus kynge of Westsaxons, he, for a fynall concorde, gaue vnto the sayd Cerdicus, as testyfieth Policronica in the. vi. Chapitre of his. v. booke, the. ii. Coũtres of Hampshyre and Somerset. And when he had sette his lande in some quyetnesse, he betoke the rule thereof vnto his neuewe Mordred, & with a chosyn army sayled, as sayth Gaufride and other, vnto Fraũce, wher, by ỹ reporte of Gaufride, he wrought wonders. For[c] the wryters of Frensche Cronycles touche no thynge of suche notable dedes; nor yet the wryters of Romaynes mynde no thyng of such actes done agayne theyr consull or emperour, called by Gaufride, Lucius Hibertus. Ther-

Fol. xliiii.

[a] liiii. yeres. [b] flowe. [c] but, edit. 1533, 1542.

fore I wyll spare all that longe matyer, remyttynge the Walshemen as touchynge that processe vnto ỹ sayd Gaufride, and here I wyll folowe Policronicon where he sayth,

That for asmoch as the forenamed Mordred was desyrous to be kynge, and feryd somdele the myghte of Cerdicus kynge of Westsaxons, he therfore drewe to hym the sayd Cerdicus by great gyftes, as of townes and castelles, and other meanes, where thorough the sayd Cerdicus to hym assentyd, so that Mordred was at London crowned kynge of Brytayne, and Cerdicus after ỹ vse of Pagans, was at Wynchestre, thenne called Kaerguent, crowned kynge of Westsaxons.

Whenne relacion came to Arthur of all this treason wrought by his neuewe Mordred, he in all haste made towarde Brytayne, as it is redde in the Englysshe Cronycle, and landyd at Sandwyche, where he was mette of Mordred & his people, whiche gaue vnto hym stronge batayll in tyme of his landyng, and loste there many of his knyghtes, as the famous knyght Gawyn and other; but yet this natwithstandynge Arthure at length wanne the lande, and chasyd his enemyes, and after the enteryng of his cosyn Gawyn & other of his knyghtes there slayne, he sette forwarde his hoost to pursue his enemyes. Mordred thus beynge ouerset of his vncle at the see syde, withdrewe hym to Wynchester, where he beynge furnysshed of newe sowdyours, gaue vnto Arthur, as saith Gaufride, the seconde fyght; wherein also Mordred was put to the worse and constrayned to flee. Thirdely and lastly, the sayd Mordred faugt with his vncle Arthure besydes Glastynbury, where after a longe and daũgerous fyght Mordred was slayne, and the victoryous Arthur wounded vnto the deth, and after buryed in the vale of Aualon, besyde Glastynbury beforesayd.

Of this last ende and buriyng of Arthur, in the Brytysshe bokes, are tolde many fables; but to oppresse the errours of Britons that thynke or byleue that Arthur yet lyueth, Policronicon shewith in his forenamed chapitre of his. v. boke, that in the seconde Henryes tyme kynge of Englande, ỹ bonys of the sayde Arthure and Gwaynour his wyfe were founden, and translated into the foresayd churche of Glastynbury, and there newe buryed, in the yere of our Lorde. xi.C.lxxx., and more specyally it is noted in the. xxiii. chapitre of the. vii. booke of Policronicon abouesayd. Wherfore to be a cõclusion of a fyne of this noble warryour, he was, as before is shewyd, slayne, or woũdyd to deth, whenne he hadde reygned ouer the Brytons by the terme of. xxvi. yeres; wyllynge before his deth that Cõstantyne, the sone of Cador, duke of Cornewayll, forsomoche as of his body remayned none heyre, that he shulde be his heyre & inheryte the lande of moche Brytayne after his deth.

ANGLIA.

¶ Capitulum. C.vii.

COnstantinus[1], ỹ sonne of Cador duke of Cornewayll, by assent of the Brytons, was of theym crowned kynge of moche Brytayne, in ỹ yere of Cristes incarnacõn. CCCCC.xliii., and the. xix. yere of Lotharius, then kynge of Fraunce. This was nere kynesman vnto Arthur, and was by the. ii. sõnes of Mordred greuously vexed, for so moche as they claymed the lande by the ryght or tytle of theyr fader, so that atwene hym and theym were foughten many and sundry bataylles, whereof nouther of place, nor of tyme is lafte any conuenyent memory, nor yet of the names of the sayde two sonnes. Anglia. [Li. 8. cap. 1.]

But, as dyuers auctours agreen, after thyse forsayd bataylles thus foughtyn, fynally the. ii. sõnes of Mordred were cõstrayned of pure force to seche stronge holdes for theyr refuge; wherfore that one toke London, and that other Wynchestre: whereof Constantyne beynge warned, lafte nat tyll he hadde slayne that one within the monastery of seynt Amphiabill at Wynchestre; and that other within a temple or churche of London, whiche temple is named of Gaufride an Hous of Freres; but that sayinge is doutefull,

[1] Constantius, edit. 1542, 1559.

for at that dayes it is to be supposed that there was none house of freres within London, nor by a longe tyme after.

Whenne Constātyne hadde thus subdued his enemyes, and thought hym selfe in a maner of suertie of his region, than Fortune, as she hadde enuyed his glory, arreryd agayn hym his owne kynnesman, named Aurelius Conanus, the which agayne hym made mortal batayll, and fynally or at the last slewe hym in the felde, whan he hadde reygned, after moost accorde of wryters. iii. yeres; the whiche was thenne buryed at Stone hyenge, by the sepulture of Vter Pendragon, with great solempnytie.

ANGLIA.

¶ Capitulum. C.viii.

Anglia. AVrelius Conanus, the cosyn of Constantyne last named, was crowned kyng of Brytayne in the yere of our Lorde CCCCC. xlvi., and the. xxxii. yere of Lotharius before named, thenne kynge of Fraunce. This was noble & lyberall, but he was a man that cherysshed suche as loued stryfe and discencion within his lande, and gaue lyghty[1] credence to theym that accused other were it with ryght or wronge; and, as testyfyeth Gaufride & other, he toke by strength his vncle, whiche of ryche[2] shulde haue ben kynge, and caste hym into stronge Pryson; and after slewe tyrannously the. ii. sōnes of his sayd [Cap. x.] vncle; but he reioysed his reygne but shorte whyle, for, as wytnessyth the sayde Gaufride, whenne he hadde reygned. ii. yeres he dyed, were it of the sonde[3] of god or otherAuctoris opinio. wyse, leuyng after hȳ a sone named Vortiporius, as hathe the auctour of the booke named the Floure of Hystories. Of this Vortiporius speketh no thyng the Englysshe Cronycle, but telleth of ii. kynges that shuld reygne next after Cōstantyne both at ones, wherof that one he nameth Adelbryght, and that other Edilf, wherunto none other wryter agreeth, except that he nameth theym for some of the kynges of ŷ Saxons; aboute[4] that tyme reygned in Kent, or soone after Ethelbert or Athelbert, whiche myght be taken of some for Adelbryght, and that other whiche he nameth Edilf or[5] Ella, kynge of South Saxons, but this Ella shulde nat, by concorde of wryters, be lyuynge, at this tyme. It myght with more conuenyency accorde, that it shulde be a kynge of Deira or of Northumberlande, named Ella, the whiche reygned more[6] aboute this tyme and season.

Fol. xliii. Of thyse tway kynges ŷ sayd Englisshe Cronycle tellyth a longe processe, the which, for I fynde noon auctor of auctorite ŷ wrytith or spekyth of the same, I passe it ouer.

Ye shall also furthermore vnderstande, that after this daye the Brytons dayly discreased of lordshyp and rule within Bretaygne, and drew them towarde Cambir or Walis, so that the countre aboute Chestre was the chife of theyr lordship within Bretaygne, for dayly ŷ Saxons landed with companyes, & occupyed the pryncipall partis of ŷ same, as shortlye here after shall appere.

THE FIFTHE PARTE.

¶ Capitulum. C. ix.

NORTHUMBERLANDE.

The fyfth kyngdom of the Saxons. [Li. 5. cap. 7.] IN ŷ tyme of the reygne of this fore named Aurelius Conanus, as witnessith Policronica, Guydo, & other, began the kyngdome or lordship of Brenicia vnder a Saxon namyd Ida, the yere of our Lorde. v. C. &. xlvii. and the seconde or laste yere of the sayd Conanus. This lordship was in the north parte of Brytaygne, & grewe in shorte whyle more and more, so that fynally it was named the kyngdome of Northumberlande. But ye shall vnderstande that this lordship was firste deuyded in two kyngdomes, wherof the firste, as aboue is sayd, was called Brenicia, and that other Deyra. The meris or markis of this kyngdome of Northhumberlande were[7], by easte & by west the occean

[1] lyghte. [2] ryght. [3] hande, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] for about. [5] might be taken for. [6] neare, edit. 1559. [7] were made, edit. 1559.

see;

tee; by south, the ryuer of Humbir, and so downwarde towarde the west by the endis of the shires of Notyngham & Derby, vnto the ryuer of Merse, or Mercia; and by northe the Scottishe see, which is callyd forth in Scottish, and in Brettishe ŷ werd.

The south syde of this lordshyppe was callyd Deyra, whiche is now callyd ŷ Bisshoprike of Durham; and the north syde was called Brenicia, which were than departyd or seuered by the ryuer of Tyne. Deyra conteynyd the land from Hūbir to the ryuer of Tyne; & Brenicia includid ŷ cōūtrey from Tyne to ŷ Scottishe see. In Brenicia regnyd firste, as is abouesayde, Ida, or Idas, and in Deyra regnyd firste, Ella, which lordshyppes began both within. iii. yeres; in processe of tyme bothe in one were namyd the kyngdome of Northhumbirlande, which so cōtynued sōme whyle vnder one kynge, and somme whyle vnder. ii. by the terme of CCC. &. xxi. yeres, as sayth Ranulphe munke of Chestre, and after furth contynued the name vnder Saxons, and Danes, tyll the cōmyng of Edredus, brother of Ethelstane, and sone of Edwarde the elder, the whiche Edredus in the. ix. or laste yere of his reygne, ioyned this to his owne kyngdom, by which reason it shuld seme that this kyngdome endurid vnder that name vpon. CCCC. &. ix. yeres.

The firste cristen prynce of this kyngdome was namyd Edwynus, ŷ receyuyd the fayth of seynt Paulyne, as testifyeth Guydo. In this lordshyp also were included theyse shyres and countreys nowe callyd Yorke, Notyngham shyre, or Snothyngham shyre, Derby shyre, the bysshopryke of Durham, Copelande, and other.

Amonge the many kynges ŷ reygned in this lordship, whiche after some wryters, were to the nombre of. xxiii. reygned one accompted the. viii. kynge, by Guydo, named Ethelfridus, & sone of Ethelricus, which Ethelfridus destroyed moo Britons than all the other kynges Saxons[1]. This was fader to seynt Oswolde, & Oswy, & slewe also many of ŷ Brytons at a batayle ŷ he had agayn them besyde Kaerlegion, or Chestre, &. ii. M. &. C. of mōkes of ŷ house of Bangor, as it is testifyed of Policronicon in the x. chapitre of his v. boke, the which monkes were comen thyder to pray for the good spede of ŷ Brytons. And ouer this foresayde nombre of monkes. I. fled, whereby they w̄ theyr leder named Brucynall were sauyd. Of such an vngly nombre of multytude[2] of monkes of one house myght be demyd a wonder: But the sayd Policronica, with Guydo, and other wryters, affermyn that in that house of Bangor were at those dayes for the more party three tymes. vii. C. monkes, ŷ whiche lyuyd by the trauayle of theyr handes onely.

The forenamed Oswye, was, after Oswolde, kyng of this prouynce, which gaue w̄ his doughter Elfleda, a nonne. xii lordshippes into ŷ church to buylde w̄. xii. monasteryes, whereof. vi. of the sayde lordshippes were in Brennicia, and. vi. in Deyra, as sayth Guydo; and also Ranulphe, in his. v. boke of Policronica, and. xvi. chaptre, affermyth the same.

¶ Capitulum. C. x.

Vortiporius, son of Aurelyus Conanus, after ŷ opynyon beforesayde was ordeynyd kynge of Brytaygne, in ŷ yere of our Lorde. v. C. and xlviii. and the. xxxiiii. yere of Clotharius, then kyng of Fraūce; of the which is lytle memory lafte in eny cronycler, or wryter, excepte that Guydo testifieth hym to be a victoryous knyght; shewyng brefly, that he in sondry batayllys scomfited the Saxons, and defendid his lande and Brytons frome the daunger of them and other that ŷ Saxons allyed theym with. Anglia. [Cap. x. Li. 8.]

In ŷ tyme of ŷ reygne of this kynge, a Saxon named Ella, the sone of Iffus, began to reygne in the Southe syde of the kyngedome of Northūberlande, called Deyra, as before is touchyd in the Chapitre of the sayde Kyngedome. Then it foloweth, whan this Vortiporius had rulyd the Brytons knyghtly by the terme of. iiii. yeres, he dyed and was put to his faders, leuyng noone heyre of his body.

For as moche as all wryters agreen that the kynges of Westesaxon at length subdued

[1] of Saxons. [2] Of such a nomber.

all the other kyngedomes, & made of the hole lande of moche Brytaygne but one kyngdome or monarchye; and all other, aswell of Brytons as of Saxons, faylyd, or lefte of, that allonly excepte; therfore I entende to brynge in ỹ name of euerychе kyng of West Saxon, frome the firste Cerdicus, or Childricus, and ioyne theym with ỹ kynges of Brytons for so long as hereafter the sayde Brytons contynued theyr reygne within any parte of Brytaygne.

¶ Capitulum. C. xi.

Anglia. Malgo, a duke of ỹ Brytons, and neuyewe of Aurelius Conanus, as sayth the auctour of the Floure of Histories, began his reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of oure Lorde CCCCC. lii. and the. xxxviii. yere of Clotharius, thenne styll kynge of Fraunce, and also the. xv. yere of Kenricus, the sone of Cerdicus, and second Kyng of Westsaxon
Fol. I. foresayd, accomptynge. xv. yeres of the reygne of his fader, as Guydo allowith. This Malgo, after the accorde of all wryters that make mencion, was ỹ comlyest & moost personable man of all Brytons than lyuyng, & therwith endowed ẇ knyghtly manhode, the whiche withstode the Saxons, and kepte theym of ỹ they damaged not ỹ lande, the which
[Cap. I. li. 8.] he then had possessyon of, and as witnessith Gaufryde and other, he by his manhod subdued the iles of Iselande, Orchades, or Orkeys, & Norway, with other.

[Lib. 5. Cap. 6.] In ỹ tyme of ỹ reygne of this Malgo, reygned in ỹ lordship or kyngdome of Kent, Ethelbertus, the whiche, as witnessith Policronycon, assembled an hoost of his knyghtis, and gaue battayll vnto Ceawlmus, sone of Kenricus, & then kynge of Westsaxon; the cause
The firste batayll atwene the Saxons. wherof is not expressyd; but this battayll was ỹ firste batayll that was foughtyne atwene ỹ Saxons, after ỹ they opteynyd lande & dwellynge within Brytaygne, which was foughtyn in a place callyd Wilbaldowne, and in the fyght was slayne. ii. dukes of Ethelbertus, & hymselfe with his people chasyd.

Also, it is witnessyd of ỹ sayd Policronyca, that ỹ yere folowynge Cutwolsus[1], the brother of Ceawlmus, before named, faught strongly ageyn the Brytons at Bedforde, and berafte them. iiii. Cyties or townes, named Liganbrogth, Eglesborgth, Besyngton and Euyshā.

Thē to retorne ageyn to Malgo kynge of Brytons, ỹ auctor of the Floure of Histories saythe, ỹ notwithstandynge the many vertues the whiche God had endowed hym ẇ, he lastely forgate God, forsakyng all vertue, & gaue hym to sondry vycis & synnes, wherof the odyble synnes of sodomy was one, wherfore fell to hym great persecution of his enemyes, ỹ Saxōs, as before somdele is shewyd & more ensueth.

It was not long after ỹ forenamyd batayll doon at Bedforde, but that the foresayde Cutwolphus dyed; but yet his sayde brother Ceawlmus, couetouse of worshyppe, maynteynyd his warre ageyne ỹ Brytons, so ỹ after he made a newe voyage ageyne theym, & made of theym a nother scomfiture, and toke from them ỹ famous cytie of Bathe, of Gloucetyr, & Surcetyr[2], which shuld be, by the meanyng of Ranulffe, aboute ỹ yere of the reygne of this Malgo. xxix.

Of all this spekyth nothynge ỹ Cronycle of Englande, but he makyth his processe of a kynge namyd Cortyf, by the which as it shuld seme by the reherceyll folowyng, that he makyth of Gurmunde, he makyth the Careticus[3], the whiche rulyd the Brytons nexte after ỹ deth of this Malgo, as when the tyme cometh more planlye it shall appere.

Then it folowith aboute the. xxxiii. yere of this Malgo, Ceawlmus, before named, gadered his Saxons, & foughte ẇ the Brytons at a place called Fechālege, where, after longe fight, Ceawlmus chasyd ỹ Britons, & wan of them victory; but his brother, callyd Cutha, was slayne in that fight, for whome he made great sorowe. This, in his latter dayes, Malgo beynge oppressyd & pursued his[4] enemyes, lastlye dyed when he had regned, after moost concorde of stories. xxxv. yeres.

[1] Cutwolfus. [2] Wurceter. [3] of Gurmunde that Careticus. [4] of his.

CHilpericus,

¶ Capitulum. C. xii.

CHilpericus, the thyrde son of Lotharius, or Clotharius, before named, began his reygne ouer that parte of Fraũce called Soysons, in the yere of our lorde God. v. C. xliiii. & the. xiiii. yere of Malgo, then kynge of Brytaygne. This not beynge content with suche as his fadre had hym beset, so soone as the obsequy & enterement of his fader was fynysshed, he spedde hym vnto Paris and possessyd hym of his faders treasour, wherof his. iii. bretherne beynge warned, purchasyd to them suche frenshyp of the nobles of Fraũce, that they, vnwetynge theyr sayde brother, had entre[1] into Paris, and lykely to haue takyn hym therein, if he had not ẏ soner haue escaped. Francia.

For this incõuenyence grete discẽcion was likely to haue growen atwene theyse. iiii. bretherne, had not been ẏ mediacion of frendes vpon both partyes, the which, by good and politike wayes, at length pacifyed all variaunces amonge them, and concluded for a fynall pease, that eyther of the sayd bretherne shuld holde hym cõtent with suche porcion as was before assygned to them by theyr fader; that is to saye, to the eldest brother named Aribertus, or, after sõme wryters, Cherebris, shuld falle the countrey that is lyinge aboute Paris, called mydle Fraunce; to Guntranus shuld falle the prouynce of Orleaũce; and to this Chylpericus ẏ prouynce of Soysons; and to Sygebertus, the yongeste Brother, shulde belonge the countrey of Mees, or of Austracy, which lordshyp begynnyth at Champeyne, as affyrmeth the Frenshe Cronycle, and stretchith to ẏ lordshyp or prouynce of Lorayne vpõ one parte, and to Almayne vpon that other parte: after which concorde and agrement thus fynysshed, eyther of ẏ sayde bretherne departed vnto his propre lordshyp. If I shuld here discryue the maners and condicions of theyse. iiii. prynces, or to expresse the vnlaufull lechery of ẏ eldest brother Aribertus, in refusyng his leful wyfe Ingebrida, or Ingeberta, or of the rauysshement of wyues & virgyns by hym doon, or yet the vnstablenesse of lyuynge ẏ was also in the seconde brother Guntranus, with vertues and vycis of the other, I shuld therof make a long werke, wherfore to brynge this story to some conuenyency, I thus begynne. Trougthe it is that this Chilpericus, or after sõme Hilpericus toke to wyfe the doughter of the kynge of Spayne, called Athanahildus, whose name was Golsanda, the whiche had to hir handemayden a mayde called Fredegunda, the whiche was of passynge beaute and shappe of body, but to hir was ioyned subtell wit & euyll cõdicions, contrary to hir lady & mastres, which was symple & of vertuous condicions. Fredegũda.

To the yongest brother named Sigebert was cowpeled in maryage the syster of the sayde Golsanda, named Brunechieldis, or after the Frenshe Cronycle Bruneheuste, a woman of peruers and wicked condicion, as after shall appere. Then it folowith, Chilperich within short tyme that he was thus maryed vnto Golsanda, caste vnlefull loue vnto hir woman Fredegũda, by reason wherof fell such vnkyndenesse atwene them, that lastly she was founden in her chambre dede and strangelyd ẇ a corde, which was doone by the hande of hir husbande, as testyfyeth the Frenshe booke. Brunechieldis.

Then secondly he maryed an other wyfe, named Audouera, a womã of great birth, how be it myn auctor, nor yet ẏ Frensh Cronycle declarith not hir progeny, ẇ the whiche he contynued, and kepte hir after hir honoure, but yet he withdrewe not his vnlefull loue from ẏ forenamed Fredegunde. In this passetyme cause of warre was moued atwene Sygebert the younger brether, and men of ẏ countrey of Sweuy; for the whiche ẏ sayde Sygebert requyred ayde of his brother Chilperche, at whose request he in all haste assembled his people & sped hym towarde hys brother, leuyng his wyfe great with chylde, in the kepynge of the foresayde Fredegunde, of the whiche wyfe, as testyfyeth ẏ Frensh booke, he had before receyuyd. iii. sonnes named Theodobertus, Meroneus, and Clodoueus. It was not longe after that Chilperiche, as before is sayd, in ayde of his brother was departyd, but that his wyfe was delyuered of a doughter; and when this chylde shuld be confermed of the bysshop, this Fredegũde entendyng to make a douorce atwene Chil- Fredegũda. *Fol. li.*

[1] entred, edit. 1542, 1559.

perich

perich and his wyfe by hir subtile and false coniectour, coũsayled the quene ỹ she shuld for the more honour cõferme hir owne chylde, & the quene trustynge her coũsayle, supposynge hir coũsayle had ben for the beste, confermed hir owne chylde.

¶ Capitulum. C. xiii.

IN this whyle the kyng with his brother occupyed ī warre agayne the Swytezers, or men of Sweuy, bare them so knyghtly that they subdued theyr enemyes, & after retourned into theyr coũtreyes, wherof whan Fredegũde was ware, she in secrete maner mette with ỹ kynge, & shewyd to hym all the demeanure of his wyfe, but nothynge of hir owne crafty workyng, wherewith the kynge was greuously discontente in shewyng of his outewarde coũtenaũce, & sayde if ỹ were true, she shuld frome hym be deuorcyd, and that she shuld be quene ī hir stede.

After this ỹ kyng cõmyng to his paleys, ỹ quene to thẽtent to be ỹ more accepted in his presence, not knowynge of the malicious werkyng of Fredegũd, brought ī her armes the yonge baby, to the which she was moder bothe naturally, and spiritually, & welcõmed ỹ kynge hir lorde in right humble maner, salutynge hym ẅ wordys of all comfort: but the kynge beynge warnyd of hir symple demeanure, &, as sõme auctours wryte, glad that he had occasyõ to fynde mater to hir of displeasure, blamed her ī grieuous maner, & cõmaũdyd hir out of his presence for ỹ tyme, & after, by coũceyll of spirituell men, caused hir frome hym to be deuorcid, & hir ẅ hir yonge doughter to be put into an house of relygyon, to the which he gaue possessions for the fyndyng of hir & of hir young doughter named Childeynda.

And when Chilpericus had thus fynysshed this foresayd busynesse, he shortlye after tooke to wyfe ỹ forenamed Fredegunde, not without grudge of sõme of his lordes and other. It was not longe after this maryage ỹ stryfe & discencion fell atwene this Chilperich & Sigebert his brother, the whiche grewe for certayne lande ỹ Chilperiche claymed to haue of his brother aforesayde. Then Chilperich assembled his knyghtes & made warre vpon the lande of his brother Sigebert, the which then was busyed in lyke warre agayne a people called Hunes, by reason wherof Chilperiche had ỹ more fordell, & wan by strengthe the citie of Reynys.

Fraternall warre.

But it was not longe after or Sigebert was warnyd of his brothers vnkyndnes; wherfore he after his enemyes wer by hym sõdele subdued, went with his army into the countrey of Soysons, belongyng to his brother Chilperich, & warred in lykewyse in ỹ lande as his brother dyd in his, & at leyngth tooke the cytie of Soysons, & therein the eldest sone of Chilperich, named Theodobert, & held hym as his prysoner. Then Chilperich heryng of the scõfiture of his people and takynge of his sone, was agayn his brother more feruently amouyd, & cast in his mynde all wayes & meanes howe he myght reuenge hym vpon his brother; but it was in vayne, for his brother at ỹ tyme had such auaũtage of hym, that he well apperceyuyd ỹ he had noo better meane than a treaty of peas, by meane wherof he shortly after opteyned his sone out of daunger. ẅ other thynges concernyng his profette, assurynge to his sayde brother by solempne othe that after ỹ day he shuld neuer bere armes, nor yet warrey[1] his brother.

This concorde and vnyte in due maner fynysshed, & suffyciently by both counsayllys stablysshed, yet Chilperiche, beynge alweyes myndyd to be reuengyd vpõ his brother Sigebert, sent his yongest sone named Clodoueus, and causyd hym to warre vpõ a cytie called Burdeaux, in the prouynce of Neustria, now called Normãdye; but by ỹ manhode of a capitayn of Sygebert, named Singulphus, ỹ sayd Clodoueus was ouercomyn and compellyd to voyde the countre, and so fled to Paris.

For this hap Chilperich was fyryd wit all malyce, and in all haste commaundyd his forenamed sone Theodobert, with a great armye to inuade the sayd countrey of Neustria or Normandye; the whiche accordynge to his faders cõmaundement sped hym thy-

[1] war wyth, edit. 1542, 1559.

der,

der, & there by his extort might and powar, toke many cyties and stronge holdis, not sparyng churchis, howses of religyon, as Nūnys & other, & robbed & spoyled ỹ coūtrey in moost cruell wyse; lastly, this persecucion thus doon, a cheuetayn, or duke, named Gondoaldus, of the erldome of Peitowe, assembled great powar, and withstoode Theodobert, and fynallye, slewe hym in playne batayll, & a great part of his people; wherof heeryng, Chilpericus gadered a great hoost, & yode into the countrey of Champeyn, wastynge & destroyinge the countrey with fyre and irne, to the vttirmoost of his powar, & at lengthe tooke the cytie of Reynes, & spoylyd it without mercy. The kynges sone slayne.

¶ Capitulum. C. xiiii.

Sigebertus aduertysyng and castynge in his mynde the innaturall dysposycyon of his brother, perceyuynge well that he entendyd his vtter destruccyon, prouyded in his best maner for to withstāde his malyce; and for to brynge his contynued malyce to a fynall ende, he gaderyd to hym a puysant powar, and after sped hym towarde his sayde brother, wherof Chilperich beynge aduertised by his couert meanes, soughte wayes of entreaty and peas in suche wyse, that or ỹ hostis met a peas was concluded.

Then theyse. ii. brethern thus accordyd, condescendyd in shorte tyme after to make warre vpon theyr brother Gunthranus. than lorde of Orleaunce, or the whiche signorye at that daye belonged to the countrey or prouynce of Burgoyne; ỹ cause of this warre is not expressyd, except that they enuyed theyr brother to haue so great lordshyp, but by medyatours on both partyes, after great aray purueyed on all sydes, a concorde and peas was concludyd in ỹ temple of Seynt Lowpe, at the cytie of Trois in Vyncent. When this sayd peace was fynysshed, ỹ sayd. iii. bretherne in syghte departyd as frēdes, eyther of them from other; but as peace sometyme cōtenith not soudyours, & specially such as delyte them i pyllage & robbery, right soo amonge ỹ knyghtys of Sygebert was sprōge a great rumoure, saying that they were not contente, and rewardyd for theyr great laboure and trauayle accordyng to theyr deserte, and specially for ỹ firste iourney of theyse. ii. hadde agayne his brother Chilperiche, thynkynge the peace with hym made was nothynge honorable, consyderynge the great doublenesse and vntrougth that i hym was proued: for the whiche they excytyd Sygebert, in all that in them was, to breke those bondys of peace, and to make newe warre vpon hym. And in lyke maner, some euyll disposyd to the sayd warre were more aggreable than to peace[1] vpon the partye of Chilperiche, and murmured in lykewyse & for they thought to haue been better rewarded of Sigebert thā they were of theyr owne mayster. They therefore lefte hym and yode to the host of Sygebert by whose defamy[2] and report, Sygebert was more kyndelyd to set vpon his brother. *Fol. lii.*

Chilperiche hauynge noticion of his brothers purpose, ẇ also the murmoure and departynge of his knyghtes, and hauynge in the other some mystruste, he anon with his wyfe and chyldren, and chiefe of his treasoure, went vnto the cytie of Tourney, entendynge to kepe that for theyr and his sauegarde. But whan Sygebert knewe thereof, he was nothynge in the pursuynge of hym founde slowe, but followed streyght after, and closyd hym within the sayd cytie ẇ a stronge siege, where Chilperiche beynge[3] in a maner dispayre of the welfare of hym and his Fredegūde. And[4] she that was replenysshed of all iniquyte called to hir. ii. wyckyd persones, and promysyd vnto theym great gyftes, if they wolde by venym, or otherwise, slee hir brother Sygebert; the which. ii. felowes dissayuyd with ỹ fayre speche & great gyftes of the sayde Fredegunde, tooke vpon theym that vnleful charge, and by theyr subtell and false imaginacyō brought their cursed purpose to an ende, but to theyr owne confusyon; for after they had wounded the kynge Sygebert to deth, & wolde then haue escapyd, the kynges knyghtes espyinge theyr treason fell soone vpon them and to hewe theym[5]. And whan the deth of ỹ kynge was knowyn, a great Fredegūdis iniquite.

[1] Some euyll dysposyd persons were more agreable to warre then to peace. [2] encytynge. [3] was. [4] But. [5] all to hewed them.

noyse

noyse & cry was areryd in the hoost, by meane wherof the kynges deth was blowen into the cytie, and after to the heeres of Chilperiche, whereof he was not a lytyll amerauyled, nor wolde to it geue ferme credence tyll he was enfourmed of his wyfe Fredegunde of all hir subtyle workynge.

It was not longe after. or the knyghtys, or sōme of the capitaynes of the hoost of Sygebert presented them vnto Chilperich, besekyng hym of hys grace and pardon, the which he gladlye acceptyd: and when he had set his chargis in ordoure, he then commaunded prouysion to be made for the beryng of his sayd brother, within ỹ monastery of seynt Medarde of Soysons: and when all that busynesse after a kyngelye maner were fynysshed & endyd, he then exylyd Brunechieldis and Chyldebert, the wyfe and sone of his brother Sygebert, vnto the citie of Roane, takynge from them great treasoure that they were possessyd of. But shortly after ỹ sayd' sone of Sygebert, by helpe of Gūdebalde, or Gundealde, duke of Peitowe', here before named, was delyuered from the daunger of the sayde Chilperich, and sent into his owne lordshyppe of Austracy, which his fader Sygebert was Lorde of.

In this passetyme he had sent his sone Meroneus into a countrey called Buturynges, to appease certeygne rebellions there arreysyd; but when he harde of the deth of his vncle Sygebert, and of the beyng of his wyfe Brunechielde at the cytie of Roan, he set a parte all the charge of his fader, and sped hym streyght thyder, kepynge cōpany with hyr, in whome he toke suche consolacion and pleasure, that lastlye he maryed hir, and kept hir as his wyfe. And when his fader was thereof warnyd, he feryd leste by the counsayll of his sayde wyfe, he wolde aryse agayne hym; wherfore he i all haste assembled his people and sped hym toward Roane.

Cōcupiscenciam carnis inspice.

When tydynges came to Meroneus of the cōmynge of his fader w so great araye, and he as then vnpurueyed of strength of knyghtys to resiste his fader, for his moost surety, fledde with his valefull wyfe to ỹ temple or church of Seynt Martyne, takyng the preuylege therof for theyr defence. And whan Chilperich had temptyd by many sondrye meanes to haue theym out of the sayde preuylege, & myght not without brekynge of the same, he, to bynge aboute his cawtelous purpose, made to theym assuryd promesse, that if they wylfully wold renounce the sayd place and put them in his grace, he wolde vtterlye pardon theyr trespace, and suffer theym from that tyme forthe to contynue theyr lyfe togeder as man and wyfe, vpon whiche promesse the sayd Meroneus with his wyfe renounced the sayd preuylege, and put them hooly in the kynges merey, the which theym receyuyd with all countenaūce of loue and fauoure, and them festyd, and cherished louynglye by the space of two dayes oonlye; but the thyrde daye the feaste was fynysshed, for than he sent his sone vnto Paris vnder sure gydes, and there causyd hym to be professed in an howse of relygyon, but by the meanes of his vncle Gunthranus he was after taken thens, and so restoryd to his former knyghthode; for the which his fader hym newely pursued, & constrayned hym to take for his sauegarde the churche of Seynt Martyne in Turon, and whan he was warned that his fader parforce wold take hym thens, he than fled vnto a cytie of Champayne, accōpanyed with vi. seruauntis oonlye, where he was in soo great fere to be taken, & in suche despayre to opteyne grace of his fader, that he cawsyd one of the sayde vi. persons to sle hym with his swerde; the' forcsayde Brunechieldis his wyfe put in sure kepynge.

Cautela ad Meronei cōfusionē.

Desperacio.

¶ Capitulum. C. xv.

CHilpericus then beynge assertayned of ỹ deth of his Sone Meroneus, and of the sure kepynge of Brunechieldis, he thoughte hym selfe somedele assuryd, for the mystruste that he had in them many tymes inquyeted hym. But yet he was not in quyete or reste; for shortlye after, the people of Turon rebellyd agayne hym. Agayne whome he sent his

[a] "sayd" *omitted.* [b] Paytowe. [c] and the.

sone Clodoueus, and a noble man of his court named Desiderius, ŷ which he sent as a gyde and a coũsayloure of his sayd sone, and vpon the party of his enemyes was a capytayne of the kynge Gunthranus. Forsomoche as the sayd Gũthranus claymed parte of those londes about Turon, this capitayne, named Momeleus, herynge of the commyng of the foresayd hoost, with a chosen company made towarde them, and gaue vnto Clodoueus a great sharpe fighte, and not withoute great losse of his men wan of hym the feelde, and cõpellyd hym to forsake that countrey.

Thus Chilperich was wrapped in warres and trowbles of the worlde, sõmetyme ẅ righte, and sõme whyle with wrong; so that he sõme tyme wan worshyp, & otherwhyle he loste; whereof to tell all the circumstance I thynke it shuld be tedyous both to the reders & also to the herers; wherefore I passe ouer in abrydgynge and shortynge somedeale of this Storye. Then folowith in the storye, after Chylperiche hadde by intycement of Fredegunde wrongfullye turmentyd tharchebyshop of Roan, named Pretest, and hym after the sufferaũce of many vylaynes exylyd, for ŷ which and other, God sent vnto hym sõme correccyon in takynge awaye by sodeyne deth the chyldren that he had by Fredegunde; he then began to knowe God, and toke great' repentaũce in promesynge to God amendement of his lyfe: and to thentent ŷ he myght haue the more prayers of the comyn people to stande ĩstate of grace, he firste releasyd a greuous trybute, or imposicion that he had lately set vpon all vynes' thorough his region. And that doon, he reedified olde churches, and sõme he made newe and endowed them with great possessions: and ouer this he releuyd greatly the poore people, by enlargyng of his libcrall almes, and became very hũble & meke, where before tyme he was righte sterne and cruell. But lyke as often it happeneth that hote loue is soone colde, so this sodeyne deuocyon was soone aswaged, for lyke as his trowbles began to aswage, and his prosperyte to encreace, right so his olde condicions began in hym to reuyue and quycken, soo that at length he retournyd to his olde accustomed vycys.

Nota principis inconstanciam.

Fol. liii.

In this tyme a people called Longobardes[1], & now Italyens, warryd sore vpon the Lãdes of thempyre; wherfore Mauricius then beynge emperour of Cõstãtyne ŷ noble[2], for so moch as he thought ŷ the Frensh kynges myghte was lesse coste & peyne to subdue them[4], than he myght beyng soo farre frõ them, he therfore sent to hym a great sũme of golde, with letters of recõmendacion, exortynge hym, in the defence of the churche of Rome, to assemble his people and to withstande ŷ sayd Longobardys, and not to cease therof tyll he had expellyd theym from the lãdes of the empyre; which sõme of golde he goodlye receyued, promisynge to the bryngers thereof, that he with all diligence shuld execute the vttermoste of his power to accomplysshe the request of the emperoure. And accordyng to a parcell of his sayd promesse he assembled a great people, and made toward the sayde Longobardys, of whom the sayd Longobardys feryng the great myght, made meane of entreaty, offerynge to hym great sũmes of money, by reason wherof he lefte them in reste and so returnyd into Fraũce. When Mauricius had vnderstãdyng that the foresayd enemyes remaynyd styll in the foresayde landes, and contynued in theyr malyce, he sent ageyn to Chilperich, requyrynge hym owther to perfourme his promesse, or elles to restore his money whiche he had taken for the perfourmaunce of the same; but all was in vayne, for he wold nowther execute that one, nor that other. But at lengthe, as affermeth myn auctor, he was by goddes ordenaunce compelled for to restore ŷ sayd money, or a great parte therof, by meane of his suster with hir childe that was as a prysoner to the sayd emperour; which suster was beforetyme maryed vnto ŷ kynge of Spayne.

Infidelitas.

[1] The editions of 1542 and 1559, read "*wynes*". [2] In the margin of the Edition 1559, the editor has inserted this Note:
"The Italians are called Longobardes, forasmuch as most commonly thei use to weare longe beardes."
[3] Constantynople, edit. 1542, 1559. [4] "for so muche as he then thought that the Frenche kynge myghte wyth lesse coste and payne subdue theym then he myght," edit. 1542, 1559.

¶ Capitulum. C. xvi.

CHilpericus, thus encreasynge in vyce and dishonoure, lastlye repugned agayne God, so ỹ he fell into ỹ detestable heresye of the Arians, & cōmaunded certeyn artycles of the same towchynge the denision of the Trinite to be prechyd thoroughe his region. But the holy bisshop of Towres withstoode that precepte, and blamed hym greuouslye for that dede, albeit the sayd bisshoppe named Gregory, with great assystence of the other bysshoppes of Fraunce, had great laboure to remoue hym from the sayde opynyon.

Pernerce Fredegūd.

This with many other crymes passed by Chilpericke, Fredegunde which euer encreasyd in peruerse and malycyous purpose, soughte many vnlefull meanes howe she myght brynge to cōfusyon the thyrde sone of hir husbonde; knowynge well that whyle he lyued, hir chyldren shulde neuer enheryte the crowne of Fraunce. For this purpose to brynge about, many and dyuerse[1] she attemptyd, whiche were longe to reherce; but fynally she causyd hym wrongefullye to be accused, and by meane therof to be caste in pryson, where he soo beynge, she hyryd a felon to sle hym, and after shewyd to hir husbonde that the sayde Clodoueus had slayne himselfe, in profe whereof she had appoynted ỹ foresayd murderer to leue a swerde stickyng in hym, as thoughe he hadde wylfully slayne hymselfe vpō the same swerd; whiche when the kynge sawe, he demed hym gylty of suche offence as before was put vpon hym.

Ye haue harde before of the sone of Sigebert named Childebert, ỹ was delyuered from the handes of Chilperich, his vncle, by the meanes of Gundoald duke or erle of Peitowe; the whiche in this tyme was growen to mannys stature, and ruled at this daye his enheritaūce of Austracy, not without great stryfe had atwene hym and his sayde vncle, which were to longe to wryte the circūstaūce therof, whereof at this day some deale was vndiscussyd; albeit they at this day vsyd eyther other as frendes. About this tyme ỹ other vncle of Childebert, callyd Gunthranus, sought occasyon agayn hym for cause of a bisshop named Theodorus, and bisshoppe of Marcyll, or Marsile, the whiche was put from his see by Gunthranus and receyued of Childebert, and by hym ageyne restoryd to the sayd see of Massyle, for the which Gunthrane was sore amoued, and entendyd to make warre vpon hym; but by medyatoures it was somedeale appeasyd, and set in quyete vpon certeygne condicions to be obserued & also perfourmed vpon the party of Gūthranus, ỹ which after were not vpon his syde kepte nor perfourmed; wherefore after requeste to hym made for reformacion of all such poyntes, and answere ageyne of[2] receyued of none reformacion, Childebert to haue his partye the strenger, and also for that, that he well knewe that his vncle Chilperich bare towarde the sayd Gūthranus not very fraternall loue, he therefore sent vnto hym a noble man of hys courte named Gyllon, requyryng hym of ayde agayn his vncle, ỹ which by many seasons had aswell broken promesse agayn hym as now he had agayn Childebert. Of this, Chilperich beyng right fayne, assentyd to ỹ desyre of Gyllon, and after in all haste preparyd theyr hostis, and by. ii. sondry cōpanyes inuadyd ỹ coūtreyes of Orleaunce, wherof Guntranus was kynge or ruler, but the inhabytauntis of that prouynce deffendyd theym in so stronge maner ỹ theyr enemyes had of them litle auauntage. In which meane season Gūthranus assembled a myghty hoste, & sped hym towarde his enemyes at a place callid Madiolañ; he supprysed a parte of his sayde enemyes, and after drewe nere to ỹ great nōbre of both hostis, where was made preparacion on both sydes to haue foughten: but as before tyme ye haue often hard that by discrete and wyse men the fyght was put by, & meanes of accorde was foundyn, so now at this tyme by laboure of good & wyse prelatis & other, theyse. iii. kynnesmen were set in vnytye, and departyd without great shedynge of Cristen bloode.

In this passetyme, deth whiche sparith no creatour, berafte Chilpericus a sone borne of Fredegunde, & named Theodorus; for the which the kynge and also the quene tooke

[1] dyuerse wayes. [2] "of" *omitted.*

great

great heuynesse; but as she that was prompte & redy to all euyll, cast in her mynde that this chylde was slayne by poyson, or by some other purposyd malice, for the which lastly was accusyd a baylyfe, or lefe officer, callyd Monuole, with dyuerse witchis and sorseryes[1] that shulde imagyn this chyldis deth, the which she peyned and turmentyd in suche wyse, that lastly the sayde wytches confessyd that they had destroyed ỹ chylde, and not without cōsent of the sayd Monuole, wherfore she after causyd the sayd sor- *Fol. Hiii.*
seressis to dye by cruell deth, as by fyre and otherwyse; and the sayd baylyffe to be so tourmentyd, that he dyed soon after. The Frenshe Cronycle sayth, that by the meane of the takynge awey of ỹ lyfe of ỹ kynges chylde, a chylde of the sayd Monuole was restoryd to helth, whiche before was in great ieoperdy, which is for folys to beleue. This sorowe and heuynesse of Chilperich, and Fredegunde his wyfe, was somdeale asswaged by the byrth of a sone, shortly after borne of the sayde Fredegunde, which the kyng let calle Lotharius, or Clotharius: for ioy wherof, the kynge let open the prysones, and suffered the prysoners to goo at theyr lybertye, and specially suche as concerned causes touchynge hym selfe for dette, or otherwyse with other thynges concernynge his honoure. But lyke as dame fortune is accustomed to medle hir ioyes of this world with some bitternesse, so did she nowe with Chilperiche; for where he[2] nowe in great tranquyllitye and reste, and thoughte to haue lad the resydue of his lyfe in pleasure, sodeynly worde was broughte vnto hym that his brother Gunthranus, and his neuyewe Childebert was allyed and fermely accordyd to make warre vpon hym, for the which they had assemblyd a great armye in releef; wherof he[3] in all haste cōmaundyd all his treasoure and chiefe iewellys to be hadde to the cytie of Cambria, where he with his wyfe and frendes entendyd to contynue the resydue of his lyfe: and that doon, sped hym thyder in all haste, and fortifyed the sayd cytie in suche wyse, that he feryd lytle or nothynge his enemyes, where he so kepte hym within ỹ sayde cytie a certeygne of tyme, and when he sawe nor harde not of the cōmynge of his sayde brother nor neuyewe, he then walkyd more at large, and sportyd hym in hawkynge and chase of the wylde beestys, as wolues and other, whiche at those dayes was greatlye vsed of the kynges of Fraūce, and yet is contynued.

Vpon a daye as he was purposyd towarde this dysporte, and all thynge redy preparyd for the same, so that ỹ quene thoughte verylye he had be goone[4] out of the paleys, for what happe I cannot tell, the quene yode into hir chaumbre, and there restid hir vpon hir bedde, where she so lyinge, the kynge passyd by and with a lytle wande which he bare in his hande, in maner of game, strake the quene with it vpon the backe: the quene supposynge the kynge had been goon to the feylde, and not lokyng vp, sayde Laundrye why darest thou this[5] stryke me. This Laundrye was a great man in the kynges courte, and hadde been paramoure to the quene longe tyme; but the kynge herynge theyse wordis, made semblaunt as he had not herde theym, and soo passyd on his waye. *Spousebrech discouered.*

¶ Capitulum. C. xvii.

Fredegūda apperceyuynge, and after seynge it was the kynge to whome she had thus sayde, sore was abasshed, and in great fere and agony; and after she hadde by a longe season coniectyd in hir mynde what remedye she myghte fynde for this myshap, she lastlye deuilishely determyned to sle hir sayde husbande & lorde; & this to bryng about, she sent in all haste for ỹ sayd Laūdry & shewyd to hym in ordre all the circumstaunce of ỹ foresayd mater, whereafter he was striken with suche a fere, that his witte and coūsayle fayled hym to deuyse in such a case eny remedy, wherfore ỹ quene as she ỹ was fully determyned to execute hir detestable and cursed purpose, sayde to hym boldelye, Laundrye, thou seest well that this case is brought to so strayte a poynt, that owther thou must

[1] sorseresses. [2] he was. [3] Wherfore he. [4] been gone, edit. 1559. [5] thus.

thynke to destroy my lorde & husbonde, or ellys thou & I muste both be shamefully confounded, of whiche thou well knowest our owne is moost to be regardyd, therefore dispose the to do after my counsayll.

Thou knowist well, that the kynge is accustomed to cõme late from his disporte, wherfore prouyde to the a certeyne that thou well trustyste, & in the euenynge whan he retournes, asspy thy tyme, and fall vpon hym sodeynlye, and soo ridde hym: and after make an out crye, and sende to serche about as thou woldest take the homycidys, & cause some of thyne owne company to flee from the, as thoughe thou shuldest theym pursue.

Laundry herynge this cursyd counsayll, allowed it well, and thereunto assentyd, and incõtynently went about the perfourmaũce of the same; and when he had purueyde his accessaryes, he towarde nyght assembled them, gyuynge to them informacion howe they in ỹ myschiefe shuld behaue theym in that thynge takyng of them assuryd othes for kepyng of his counsayll.

The kynge not mysdemynge eny thyng of this cõspyred treason, toke his delectation and pleasure in folowynge of his game, so ỹ he loste moche of his cõpany, & toward nyght, as he beforetyme was accustomed, w̃ fewe accompanyed, drewe homeward; whereof Laundry beynge warned, met with the kynge, salutynge hym, and sayinge that he was comyn with his cõpany to cõdute hym home, for so moche as he doubted how he was garnysshed of his meyneyall seruaũtis, or other.

What shulde I lenger make delaye, or farther rehersayll in this matier, or to telle the circumstaunce of this purposyd treason; but fynallye, when the kynge was nere his paleys, or as reherceth the Frenshe Cronycle, within ỹ courte of his paleys, as he light from his horse, he was sodeynlye woundyd to the hert, that he streyght fell to the erth dede.

Mors regis. After which murder thus cõmytted, a great crye was arerid, the kynge is slayne, so that this Laundrye made in great haste to be called certeyn persones to attende vpon the corps, whyle he, with other, pursued suche as were dempte gylty of this offence; but lastly, he retourned, and sayde that this dede was doone by the knyghtes of Childebert, the which by the derkenes of ỹ nyght were escapyd.

To shewe here the vayne and dissymulyd sorowe that Fredegunde made for the kynge, it were but lettynge of tyme, for euery wyse man knowith well, that all suche as been of that disposycion, can feyne righte well in suche semblable casis. But to my purpoos; when the kynge was thus slayne, and at that tyme nouther the quene, nor yet Laundrye suspectyd, prouysyon was made for enterynge of the corps, the whiche was shortlye after shypped at the nexte ryuer, and so conuayed vnto saynt Germayns de Pree, before spoken of, & ther with great solempnyty buryed, when he had reygned, as before is sayd, xxiiii. yeres, leuynge after hym, a sone before mynded, callyd Clotharius, or Lotharius.

Thus, as affermyth myn auctour, mayster Robert Gagwyn, endyd Chilperich miserably his lyfe, which in pryde and mysery before tyme it cõtynued, and where in his lyfe he cherisshed noo freende, at his ende he fande fewe or noo frendes. This gaue *Fol. lv.* the patrymony of ỹ church to lewde and symple clerkys, and was an enmye to all holy religious placis[1]; and fauored more suche as had lately been cõuerted to the feyth, than he dyd theym that had contynued by holy lyfe a longe season therin, & gaue vnto such persones ỹ rule of Crystes churche, amonge ỹ whiche, one there was of perfyght lyuyng & bisshop of Paris, ỹ garnysshed his tombe w̃ this epytaphy as after in meter foloweth.

[1] In the edit. of 1542, & 1559, "the holy religious places" are *omitted*.

Ecclesie

Ecclesie speculum, patrie vigor, ara reorum,
Et pater & medicus, pastor amorque gregis,
Germanus virtute, fide, corde, ore beatus:
Carne tenet tumulum, mentis honore polum,
Vir cui dura nichil nocuerunt fata sepulcri.
Viuit enim, nam mors quam tulit ipsa timet.
Creuit ad huc pocius, iustus post funera: nam qui
Fictile vas fuerat, gemma superba micat.
Huius opem ac meritum mutis data verba loquntur;
Redditus & cecis, predicat ore dies.
Núnc vir apostolicus, rapiens de carne tropheum,
Iure triumphale confidet arce throni.

The which versys, in our mother tunge, may thus be expounded in meter as folowith.

Myrrour to the churche, and of the countrey the strength.
Compassion of gylty, to them shewynge mercy,
A fader & a leche, an herd and louer at length
Of his people; cosyn to vertu and of allye
In feyth and in hert, and eke in mouth holy;
Of whom the flesshe nowe holdith this sepulture.
But the spirite is in heuen euer to endure.
To this nothynge noyed, nor faute of sepulture.
He lyueth southly, for deth which he not drede,
Hath hym hense tane, but yet he hoped sure.
This rightwyse man, thoughe sometyme he were ladde,
As a bryttell vessell which with the erth was cladde,
And sōme whyle felle, yet efte he rose a noone,
Wherefore he nowe shyneth as doth an orient stoone.
By helpe and meryte nowe hath the dumbe his speche,
Of this blessyd man, and to the blynde his sight,
Restorid of God, as this daye doth vs teche.
And he of the flesshe hath gotten nowe the fyght,
And vpper hande with a triumphant myght:
By vertue whereof he lyke a conquerour,
Of the highe heuyn nowe sitteth in the tower.

Thus may ye wel apperceyue & know, that as erthly men fauoure, so wol they wryte, as nowe shewith by this superscriptiō; but to God all thyng is manyfestyd & knowē, & nothyng to hym hyd, whatsoeuer erthly man wryteth or demyth, to whom all ȳ pmysses I remyt.

¶ Capitulum. C.xviii.

CAreticus or Lareticus, after the wrytyng of Guydo, of whome nother ȳ progeny, nor yet other additiō of honour is of wryters of hym remēbred, began to rule ȳ Brytons the yere of our lorde. v.C.iiiixx. and. vi., as the sayde auctoure recordith, and the. xxii. yere of Chilperyche than kynge of Fraunce, & also the. ix. yere of Ceawlmus then kynge of West Saxons. This, as witnessith all wryters, was a louer of cyuyle batayll, and was worste of all men, so that he was odyble to God & his subiectis, in suche wyse that they excyted the Saxons to warre vpon hym, as testifyeth Guydo, and chasyd hym from cytie to citye, and frome towne to towne, tyll they had berafte hym the moost parte of suche lande as his predecessoure Malgo had holden before hym. Anglia. [Cap. 2. li. 8.]

But Policronycon, Gaufryde, and other, adde more therunto, & sayen that forasmoche as the Saxons knew of the dissencion atwene Caretycus & his Brytons, they in all

Gurmundus. all haste sent into Irelande for the kynge callyd Gurmūdus Affricanus, ŷ whiche, of some wryters are named. ii. persones, as Gurmūdus & Africanus, but by ŷ rehersayll that Ranulffe, monke of Chestre, makyth in the. xxiii. chaptre of his first boke of Policronycon, it shuld seme that he shulde be named Gurmundus; the whiche by his meanynge shulde warre in Brytaygne and Fraūce, whyle his brother Turgecius regned as kyng in Irelande; &[1] in ŷ sayde chaptre is more at lengthe declared: which sayde Gurmūdus, with the strength of the Saxons, warryd so sore agayne the Brytons, ŷ lastlye the sayde Careticus was fayne to take ŷ towne of Kaersegent, now callyd Sichestre, & therin besegyd hym with his Brytons by a certayne of tyme, where by dayly skyrmysshes & assautes he loste moche of his people. When Careticus had a season assayed & prouyd the strengthe of his enemyes, and sawe ŷ they increasyd, & his knyghtis lassed and mynysshed, he sodenly lefte that towne, and with a certaine of Brytons tooke ouer Seuarne water, and soo into Walys seth[2] callyd Cambria; whiche shulde be after moost accorde of wryters, the thyrde yere of ŷ reygne of this Careticus. [About this tyme, as meanyth Antoninus, the great Gregory then beynge a monke, & after pope, sawe at Rome chyldyr of Anglis or Saxons to selle at Rome; and when he had axyd of them what coūtrey they were of, and it was answered to hym that they were named Anglis, he sayd that Alleluya shuld be sunge in ŷ countrey ŷ so feyre chyldren were borne in. Alleluya before in the. iiiixx. &. viii. chaptre rehercid is there takyn after the exposicion of seynt Austyne for ayde and helpe of God, but here it is ment for louynge & preysynge of God, as to hym that laude & thankys shulde be geuen vnto, ŷ sendith to men so fayre frewte; wherefore, as after shal be shewyd, the sayd Gregory beynge pope, sent that holy man Augustyne with other for to preche to the sayd Anglis the faythe of Cryste.[3]]

Gregorius magnus.

Then to retourne to Careticus, whom the Englyssh Cronycle namyth Cortif, trough it is that after he ẅ his Brytons were dryuen into Cambria or Walis, yet he lefte not cōtynually to make reyses and assautis vpon ŷ Saxons nexte to hym adioynaunt.

In this tyme, or soone after, ruled Ethelfridus the North Saxons; for, as witnessith the foresayde auctor Guydo, he began the reygne ouer Deira and Brenicia, in the yere of our lorde. v.C.lxxx. and. xiii. This is Ethelfrydus, sone of Ethelricus that pursued so sore the Brytons, and slewe so great a nombre of ŷ munkys of the towne of Bangor, as is before rehercyd in the. C. &. ix. chapitre of this werke; the whiche daylye warred vppon the Brytons & the Brytons vpon hym, so that he destroyed or subuertyd moche of Crystis feythe, with the helpe of the foresayde Gurmunde, thorough Loegria or myddle Englād; insomoche that the bysshoppes of London and Yorke, with other mynistreres of the churche, with suche goodes & relykes as they myght cary, fled into dyuerse countreys, so that theyr church dores were shytte after theym, or ellys occupyed in worshyppe of theyr false goddes.

Monkys slayne

Fol. lvi.

Thus the feythe that had endured in Brytaygne frome the tyme of Lucius, firste christen kynge in Brytaygne, tyll this daye, nor[4] vpon the season of foure hundred yeres and odde, & was well nere extyncte thoroughe all the lande[5]. And when the forenamed Gurmunde had fynysshed his tyranny within ŷ lande of Brytaygne, he then sayled into Fraūce, where he was after slayne, as witnessith Policronicō: albeit ŷ Frenshe Cronycle spekyth no thyng of eny suche man durynge this persecucion, as witnessith Guydo. The church or monastery before buylded in Verolamy, nowe callyd seynt Albanes, was by the sayde myscreauntes beten downe, which there was buyldyd of ŷ Brytons in the honoure of that holy prothomartyr seynt Albon, with dyuerse many other, the which are loste out of memory.

[1] as. [2] then. [3] *Omitted in the edit. of* 1542. *and* 1559. [4] nere. [5] In the margin of the edit. of 1542, we have "note that the fayth of Christ was receaued in Englande. iiiiC. yeares before the commyng of saint Augustyne.

Durynge also this trouble atwene the Saxons and Brytons, the Lordshyppe or Kyngedome of Eastsaxon began to take place, as after shalbe shewed.

¶ Capitulum, C.xix.

IN this tyme also, after thaccorde of moost wryters, as witnessith Polycronyca & other, Ethelbertus regned in Kente, and by knyghthode & great myght, bare hym and behaued hym so victoryously, ỹ he enlarged his kyngdome to the boundis of Humbyr: in which tyme Gregory whiche, for his notable dedes, was surnamed great, was made pope[1] of Rome; the whiche, as before is touchyd in the presedyng chapitre, hauynge cõpassyon ỹ the countrey, from whẽs so fayre chyldren came as he before had seyn, shuld be inhabyte w̃ Pagans, or people of mysbeleue, sent into Brytaygne that holy man Augustyne, with other of his bretherne, to preche to the Anglis the fayth of Cryst. For[2], as witnessith Antoninus in the. iii. chapitre and. xii. tytle of his foresayde werke, when Augustyne was. iii. dayes iourney gone & passed, such a sodeyne fere entrid in hym & his felaushyp, ỹ they turned agayne; then Gregory cõforted the sayd companye, & sent them with letters to the bysshop Arelatensis, wyllynge hym to helpe and ayde Austyne in all that in hym nedid, ỹ tenour of which letters, & other sent to Ethelbert kyng of Kent, which[3] answers are wrytten with other questions in the regestre of Gregory, and in the bookes of Beda and other. [Cap. 4. li. 8.] [li. 5. cap. 9.] Holy. Holy Augustyne. Ethelbertꝰ.

Augustyne thus cõfortyd, sped his iourney, & landed in ỹ East syde of Kent, in the Ile of Thanet w̃. xl. felawes; wherof some were interpretours, or such as cowde speke all languagis, the whiche Augustyne sent vnto Ethelbert, sayinge that they were sent from Rome for the hele and saluacion of ỹ kynge & of his realme: the kynge that[4] before tyme had herde of ỹ feyth of Cryste, for he had to wyfe, as seyth Policronicon, a Frenshe womã that was cristened, & had receyuyd hir vpon condicion that he shuld suffer hir to lyue after hir lawe.

Than after a certeyn tyme the kyng spoke with Augustyne, but that was without ỹ house, after the maner of his lawe. Ageyne his cũmyng he arreryd a baner of the crucifixe, and sange ỹ lateny[5], & prechyd to hym the worde of God. Then ỹ kynge sayd, it is fayre that ye promyse, but, for it is to me vncowth & newe, I may not so soone assent to you; but for ye be cõmen so farre for my sake, ye shalbe fayre entreatyd, & haue all thynge ỹ is to you necessary; & we graunt to you leue to torne of our people whom ye maye. Whẽ they had receyued this cõforte of ỹ kyng, they went w̃ processiõ to ỹ cytie of Dorobernia or Caũterbury, syngyng Alleluya, where they lad theyr lyues as holy faders dyd in the begynnyng of ỹ churche, as in fastynge, prayinge, watchynge, and prechynge of the worde of helth, and sange masses, and cristened such as they conuertyd in ỹ Easte syde of the cytie, in the olde chyrche of seynt Martyne, vnto ỹ tyme that the kynge was conuertyd. The place beforenamyd where holy Augustyne landed; nere vnto it stode, at those dayes, the manoyre or palayes of the sayde kynge Ethelbert, wherof at this day apperyn some of the ruynous wallys, and is callyd of the inhabitauntis of that Ile & Rychbourghe. It is apparent betwene the ile and the towne of Sandwyche, vppon a myle and a halfe from the sayde towne Estwarde from Caunterbury.* The kynge conuertyd.

At length when the kynge had well consyderyd the conuersacion and holy lyfe of Austen and his felowes, he harde them more gladlye, and lastly, by theyr good exortacions & gostly loue, was by them cõuertyd and cristened, in the yere of oure lorde, after moost accorde of wryters, v.C.lxxx.xvi., & the. xxxvi. yere of his reygne, as affermyth Polycronycon.

Then he gaue to Austen a place for his Bisshoppes see at Crystis churche in Dorobernia, & buylded ỹ abbey of seynt Petir & Paule in ỹ Eest syde of ỹ sayd cytie, where, after, Austen & all ỹ kynges of Kent were buryed. That place is nowe callyd seynt Augustyne. In this whyle Augustyne sayled into Fraũce to the bysshope Arelatensis, and was of hym sacryd archebysshop; whan holy[6] Gregory was certifyed of ỹ good expedicion of

[1] bishop, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] But. [3] wyth theyr answers. [4] "That" *omitted* in edit. 1533. 1542.
[5] sange the lateny *is omitted in edit.* 1542. *and* 1559 [6] "holy" *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.
* *Inserted in the text of the later Editions.*

Augustyne,

Augustyne, he sent then to hym moo helpers, as Melytus, Iustus, & Paulynus ẅ bokes & relyks of holy seyntes[1], & answers to seynt Augustynes questions, ẏ was, ẏ all suche goodis as fell to ẏ churche shulde be deuydyd in. iiii. partis : ẏ is to meane ẏ firste shuld goo to ẏ houshold of the bisshoppes house, & charge of ẏ same; the seconde to ẏ clarge; ẏ thyrde to ẏ amendement of churchis; the. iiii. to the relyef of the poore people & other dedis of mercy.

When Austen hadde baptized a great parte of ẏ kyngdome of Kent, he after made two archebisshopes by the cōmaundement of seynt[2] Gregory, as witnessith Policronicon, ẏ one at London, & that other at Yorke; & by the helpe of Ethelbert, he assemblyd and gatheryd together ẏ bisshoppes and doctours of Brytaygne ẏ were before disperbled[3]. The place of assemble was callyd longe after Austenys oke, which is expowned to be Austenys streyngth, and is in ẏ marche of Wykeres, & of the Weste Saxons.

Augustynys actis.

In this place he charged the sayd bisshoppes ẏ they shuld with hym preche the worde of God to ẏ Anglis; & also that they shuld amonge them selfe amende certayne erroures then vsyd in the chyrche, and specially for kepynge of theyr Ester tyde, where agayne ẏ bisshoppes of Brytayne helde opynyon, tyll Austen by his prayers shewyd there a myracle by a blynde Angle or Saxon; after the which myracle shewed, ẏ sayd bisshoppes applyed them to ẏ wyll of Austen in ẏ cause. But for all this, there was of them ẏ sayd ẏ they myght not leue ẏ custome whiche they so longe had cōtynued, without assent of all suche as had vsyd ẏ same. Then he gaderyd a synode, to the whiche came seuen bisshoppes of Britons, ẅ the wysest men of that famous abbey of Bangor: but firste they toke counsayle of an holy man & heremyte[4], whether they shulde be obedyent to Austen or not. The heremyte[5] sayde, if ye fynde hym humble or meeke, as to Crystes dissyple belonged, ẏ than they shuld assent to hym, whiche mekenes they shulde perceyue in hym, if he at theyr cōmynge into ẏ synode or coūceyl arose agayne theym. When the sayd bisshoppes entred the sayd synode, Austen sate styll in the chayre & remouyd not; wherfore they were wrothe, & disdayned hym, & wolde not obey to his requestes. Then he sayde to them, sen ye woll not assent to my hestes generally, assent ye to me specially in thre thynges.

Statuta ecclesie.

The firste is, ẏ ye kepe Esterdaye in due fourme and tyme as it is ordeygnyd.

The seconde, ẏ ye geue christendome to the children in ẏ maner ẏ is vsed in ẏ chyrche of Rome[6].

And the thyrde is, that ye preche vnto the Anglis ẏ worde of god, as a fore tymes I haue exortyd you, & all the other deale I shall suffre you to amende & refourme within your selfe; but they wold not therof: then Seynt Augustyne sayde vnto them, and warnyd them by maner of inspyracion, ẏ sene they wolde not receyue peace of theyr bretherne, they shuld of other receyue warre and wrecche; the whiche was after put in experience by Ethelfridus kynge of Northūberland.

Pol. lviii.

Longe it were to tell the circumstaunce of the lyfe of this blessyd man, wherfore I passe ouer. Lastlye, when he had in one day christened. x.M. of Saxōs or Anglis in ẏ west ryuer, ẏ is called Swale, besyde Yorke, and knew that he shuld shortly dye; after, he ordeygned a successour named Lawrence, whyle he lyued, for the state of holye Churche in Brytayne was as yet but rude and boystyous; but in that doynge he folowed the ensaumple of Peter that was firste pope, and[7] made Clement by his lyfe helper and successoure[8]. Also this Austyn made Melitus byshoppe of London, and of the Estsaxons, whiche, after moost wryters, were then newely entred ẏ land; the

[1] "the relyks of holy seyntes" *are also omitted* in the edit. of 1542. and 1559. [2] "seynt" *omitted* in edit. 1542. [3] dysperkled. [4] "& heremyte" *omitted* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] "and he" edit. 1542. 1559. [6] These latter words "in the maner that is used in the Church of Rome" are *omitted* in the edit. of 1542. and 1559. [7] which, edit. 1533. [8] The "ensample of saint Peter" *is unnoticed* in the edit. of 1542. and 1559.

ryuer of Thamys departyd them and Kent; & after dyed, and was buryed in the monastery, before reherced, without ỹ wallys of Dorobernya or Caunterbury.

¶ Capitulum. C.xx.

EThelbertus, than cõfermyd in the faythe, amonge other costlye deedys, began ỹ foũdacion of Poulys churche, within the cytie of Lõdon, and ordeyned it for the byshoppes see of London: for the archebysshoppes see, that before tyme was at London, was by Austyne and Ethelbert, at ỹ prayer of the cytezyns of Dorobernia, translated to the sayde cytie, as in the. lix. chaptre of this treatyze, it is more at length declared. But of the buyldyng of this church of Seynt Poule, dyuerse opynyons been had of ỹ foũdaciõ[1]; for some wryters testyfy ỹ it was buylded, or begon to buylde, by Sygebertus kynge of Estanglis, but more verily kynge of Eastsaxons or Eastsex. This Ethelbert also foũdyd ỹ churche of Seynt Andrew in the cytie of Dorubres in Kent, now called Rochestre, of ỹ whiche Iustus was bysshop, ordeyned before of Seynt Albane. About that tyme, or a season after, the forenamyd Ethelfridus, which in the Englysshe Cronycle is named Elfryde, foughte with the Brytons at ỹ cytie of Legystestre or Chestre, and slewe of the Brytons a great nombre; at which tyme and season, a great nombre of the monkys of Bangor were also there assembled for to praye for the good spede of the Brytons, wherof whan Ethelfrydus was warned, he fell also vpon them, & slewe of them at ỹ tyme, as witnessith dyuers auctours*, xii.C.[2], as it is before shewyd in the. C. &. ix. chapter of this booke.

Poulys churche.

*Fol. lxii.

Monkis of Bangor.

[*Pol. cap. x.li. 5. Beda li. 2. xxii.C.]

This* forenamed Ethelbert excyted a dweller or cytezen of London to make a church or chapell in the worship of Seynt Petyr, in the west ende of Lõdon, than called Thorney, and not[3] the towne of Westmynster, ỹ which that tyme was forgrowen with busshes & bryres excedynglye, where the sayde cytezen began and buylded the firste churche of Westmynster in ỹ honour of Seynt Peter, was[4] after by Seynt Edwarde the Confessour enlarged or newe buylded; but of the thyrde Henry, when he reygned as kynge of Englande, it was new edefyed and made, as it now is, a beauteous monastery, and rychely endowed both with possessyon, & relykes, and ryche iewellys.

[*Poli. li. 5. cap. 2.]

Westmynster Churche.

It is shewed in the Englysshe Cronycle of Englande, that this Ethelbert shuld be slayne in a fyght atwene hym and Ethelfryde, kynge of Northumberlande; but Polycronycon sayth, ỹ he dyed & went to heuen, when he had regned ouer the lordshyp of Kent. lvi. yeres, and the. xxi. yere after that he had receyued Cristendome.

¶ Capitulum. C.xxi.

EEST SAXON.

The kyngdõe of Estsaxons begynnyth.

Durynge also ỹ foresayd persecucion of ỹ Brytons, or any ruler of theym were specially named, begã his[5] reigne of Est Saxon, as witnessith Policronicõ, vnder Sebertus theyr firste kynge, nere about ỹ yere of our Lordis incarnaciõ. vi.C. &. xiiii. Albeit that Guydo de Colũpna sayth, ỹ it began nere about the tyme & season when ỹ kyngedome of Eestanglis began; but I folowe Polycronicõ, for he leyith holy Beda for his Auctour in moch of his werke. This kyngdome, which is to meane Essex, had in ỹ east syde ỹ see, in ỹ west Myddelsex & London, in the south riuer[6] of Thamys, & in the northe Suffolke; & endured, after moost wryters, by ỹ terme of. CC. & odde yeres, but by the sayinge of Policronica it shuld not endure ouer. CC. yeres; neuerthelesse, it shuld appere by the story of Edwarde, the eldir sone of Aluredus, ỹ it shuld contynue vnder ỹ Danes & otherwyse, tyll ỹ. viii. yere of his reygne, & by ỹ reason it shuld endure. CC. iiiixx. &. xiii. yeres, the cõtynuaunce therof is more dought-

[1] "had of the foundation" *omitted in the subsequent editions.* [2] xxi.C. [3] now.
[4] which was. [5] the. [6] the riuer.

full to be iustly determyned, for so moche as wryters be of dyuerse opynyons for[1] the begynnynge thereof. Albeit ỹ Policronicon in the. li. chaptre of his first booke sayth, ỹ it began vnder Sebertus, & lastyd[2] vnder. x. kynges tyll Egbertus kyng of Westsaxons subdued it, and ioyned it to his owne kyngdome.

The first cristen kyng of this lordshyppe, was the forenamed Sebertus, cõuerted by meanes of Mellitus, bysshop of London, as sayth Guydo; but after his sayinge this Sebertus shuld be the thyrde kynge of Essex. All wryters aggreen that the kynges of this lordshyp were more comynlye named vnder kynges, & for the[3] more subiecte to other kynges, and chefelye vnto the kynges of Mercia or Mercherike.

Inter regnum. Then to retourne agayne vnto the Brytons, which, by all this season, occupyed a parte of Cornewayll, and the cõutreys of Cambria, as Venedocia, which now is called, Northwalis, and Demecea, which now is called Southwalis, & there helde them in makynge assautes vpon the Saxõs, as before is touchid, some whyle in one cooste, and [* Cap. 4. li. 8. cap. 1. li. 9.] sõme whyle in that other, vnder sundry dukes, as witnessith Gaufride*, & also the Englysh Cronycle, the which so contynued, after moost accorde of tyme, & to accorde this hystory with other, by the terme of. xxiiii. yeres, ouer and aboue. iii. yeres allowed for the reygne of Careticus aforesayde, so that from the first yere of Careticus, to ỹ laste of theyse. xxiiii. yeres, expyred, or flowed. xxvii. yeres; at which tyme the Brytons, of one assent, chase for theyr hede, or ruler, the duke of Venodocia, or Southwalis, named Cadwanus.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxii.

Frãcia. COtharius, or Clotharius[4], the sone of Chilpericus, and. ii. of that name, was made kyng of a parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lord. CCCCC. iiiixx. &. viii., & ỹ. ii. yere of Careticus, than kyng of the Brytons. This Clotharius, by the reporte of Mayster Robert Gagwyne, is notyd to be discendyd of Clodoueus Lowys, (firste crystened *Fol. lviii.* kynge of Fraũce,) and not expresly to be the sone of Chilperiche; but for so moche as in the Cronycle of Chilperich I haue shewed to you sumwhat of the deedys of Fredegunde, wyfe of Chilperich, and perfightlye endyd the resydue of hir lyfe[5], therefore I entende in the declarynge of this story of Clothayre to expresse ỹ remenaũte in Fredegũda. as short wyse as I goodly may. And fyrste, ye shall vnderstande ỹ after this Fredegunde had, as before is shewyd, causid hir lord to be slayne, she feryng that at length hir vnrowth shuld be discouered, with all hir goodys she i short tyme after yode vnto Paris, & there in the monastery or howse of our lady helde hir, & for fere[6] she wolde be in more suretye, & also hir sone, ỹ sayde Clotharius shuld be the strenger in his domynyon & kyngedome; therefore she sent messengers vnto Gunthranus, kynge of Orleaunce, & brother to hir lorde Chilperich, requyryng hym of fauoure and ayde, & that he wolde of his goodnesse be tutour and defẽdour of hir yong sone Clotharius; ỹ which, not denayinge the requeste of Fredegunde, sped toward Paris in all haste, where, with thassent of other nobles of the realme, he toke the gydyng of the yong kyng, by whose aduyce & cõmaundement, ỹ sayd Clotharius was conueyed, and shewyd through many of ỹ chefe cyties of his lande. But, in lykewyse, as Gunthranus with other besyed themselfe, to strength Lotharius in his right, yeuen so were other of the nobles of Fraunce by the manes[7] of Brunechieldis wyfe sõme tyme of Sigebert, yõgest sone of Lothayre ỹ first, (ỹ which Sigebert receyuid of his sayd wyfe. ii. sones, named Chilperich & Childebert, of the which. ii. Childebert[8] suruyued ỹ other,) this ỹ sayd Brunechieldis dyd all hir entent to promote to the porcyon of his fader, ỹ Chilpericus, fader of Lotharius, occupyed after ỹ deth of Sygebert, forenamed. Here discordith ỹ Frensh Cronycle frõ myne auctor Gagwyne; for there it is sayd, ỹ Brunechieldis, w̃ ỹ other of hir assent,

[1] "for" *omitted.* [2] "lastyd" *omitted.* [3] and were. [4] Clotharius, or Lotharius. [5] "and perfightly endyd the residue of her life," *omitted.* [6] "fere," *omitted.* [7] meanes. [8] Chilperich.

wolde

wolde then by theyr meanes haue prefarrid a bastard sone of ỹ forenamed Sigebert, callid Theodoricus, to ỹ kyngdome of Fraũce; an other auctor sayth ỹ this Theodorich was the sone of Childericus aforenamed, whiche was ỹ sone of Sigebert; but to folowe master Gagwyne, this Childebert, whiche, by ỹ former sayinge reherced in ỹ. C. &. xiiii. chaptre of this treatyze, was delyuered frō ỹ hādes of Chilperich his vncle by meanes of ỹ erle of Peitow[1], named Gūdebald: this ẅ a small cōpany came vnto Paris, where of ỹ cytezēs he was kept out, for the which sone after sent[2] a nobleman of his, named Gyllonne, ẅ other, as ambassiadours vnto Gunthranus, & where, amonge other thynges of hym requyred, they axed of hym Fredegunde to suffre deth, for ỹ she had by hir subtilitie caused to be murdered, both Sigebert father to theyr kyng, & also Chilperich hir owne husbond. It was of hym vtterlye denyed, wherfore this sayd Gyllonne sayd vnto Gūthranus, syr kyng, knowe y[u] for certayne, sene[3] y[u] haste refused this peace to ỹ offered of thy neuyewe, ỹ the deth of thy brother shall cleue to thy hede. With thyse wordes the kyng beyng greatly amoued, cōmaunded ỹ ambassiadours to be put out of his courte, & when they were in the strete all fylthe and ordoure to be caste vppon them, as enemyties & variaũces thus kyndeled atwene theyse. ii. kynges. Gūthranus soon after sent Fredegūde into Nēstria, or Normādy, & causyd hir there to be kept not far frō ỹ cytie of Roan; whyther to hir came many noble men of Fraunce in cōfortynge hir, & also mouyng hir for ỹ trouble she was in, promysyng to hir ayde to ỹ vttermost of theyr power: but whan ỹ Fredegūde apperceyued ỹ great fauoure that Brunechilde stoode in of the nobles of Orleaunce, or Fraũce, she enuyinge hir welth & honour, called to hir an homyside & a felon callyd Holderiche, to whom ỹ sayd Fredegūde promysed great treasoure, if he cowde by venyme, or otherwise, brynge to deth ỹ sayde Brunechyeldis; by meane of which promesse he graunted to brynge her entent about, & shortlye after drewe vnto ỹ court of ỹ sayd Brunechieldis, where he fyll in such famyliaritye with dyuers of hir courte, ỹ he came many seasons to the presence of the quene, but by what hap I can not saye; lastly, he was taken ī suspecciō, & so turmentyd & pyned, ỹ he confessyd the cause of his thyder cōmynge, & by whom he was sent, with all the other circumstance of the mater; after which cōfession so made, he was all to betyn and arrayed in moost vyle maner, & so sent agayne to Fredegunde; & when he was comyn to hir presence, & shewyd what tourment he had suffered for hir cause, she incontynent in fulfyllyng of hir malicious purpose, cōmaũded ỹ his handis & feete shuld be stryken of, and so let goo, to ỹ ende ỹ it shulde be thought ỹ she had not desyryd hym to ỹ busynesse. About this tyme & season arose a yong man in a corner of Fraũce, ỹ whiche by his subtyle wytte, named hymselfe to be ỹ sone of ỹ first Lotharius, & brother vnto Gūthranus, ỹ which by ỹ[4] synystre meanes & crafty, gate the fauoure of ỹ lordes of Quyan[5], & by other[6] assistence helde & occupyed a great parte therof; & after some deale of his counsallys to Gūthranus by his espyes disclosyd, this sayde yonge man beyng named Gūdoaldus, sent vnto Gūthranus an ambassade, & requyred hym to be restored to a porcyō of his faders goodes, addyng thereto ỹ if he denyed, ỹ sayde Gundoaldus wold with a stronge armye repayre out of Quyan[5] & gete his right with strength; & that to bryng about he shuld haue great ayde of Childebert, his neuewe, aboue named. Whā kyng Gūthranus had at leyser hard ỹ message, he in disdaynynge the same, cōmaũded them to be set vpō horse backes, theyr facis toward the tayle, and so with betynge and vylanye to be dryuen thoroughe the towne. It was not longe after ỹ a daye was appoynted atwene Gunthranus and Childebert, at which daye both prynces met with great cōpanyes & lordes, and when they were set in theyr counsayll, Gunthranus cōmaundyd the foresayd messyngers of Gūdoaldus to be brought to fore them, and there agayne to rezyte theyr foresayde message, whiche doon, they[7] shewyd furthermore, that the sayd Gundoalde hadde beforetyme dispoylyd the doughter of Chil-

Ambassiadours rebuked.

Crudelitas.

[1] Poytow. [2] he sent. [3] synnes. [4] "the" *omitted*. [5] Guyan. [6] theyr. [7] He.

perich, named Rygōd, of all suche rychesse as she with hir cōueyed, when she went toward Spayn to be maryed, of the whiche sōme lordes of Childebert were of counsayll, which vnto the sayde. ii. prynces was thought trewe, for so moch as the sayd lordes thā accusyd, were absent from that great counsayll.

¶ Capitulum. C.xxiii.

AFter many & great actis concluded by̆ this coūsayle atwene theyse. ii. foresayd prynces, Gunthranus in opyn audyence admytted his neuewe Chyldebert for his heyre, for somoche as he had noon heyre of his body, cōmyttynge ŷ rule therof to hym before all that were there; and after tooke hym a parte, & shewyd to hym whiche of his nobles he shulde take to counsayll, and which he shuld refuze; and specyallye he warnyd hym to be welware of his moder Brunechieldis, for that he knewe in hir soo great vntrowthe & subtylty, and also of Gylion the bysshop, the which he also sayd, he was not not to be trusted. When he had thus aduertyzed his neuewe, they both retourned vnto the place of
Fol. liix, coūceyll, where by them and theyr counceyllys certeyn thynges concernynge the comon wele were set in an order; and that doon, ŷ sayd coūceyll was fynysshed, and puruoyaunce for theyr dyner prouydyd, the pryncis w̆ theyr barony went vnto dyner. In the season of which dyner, the sayde Gunthranus sayde vnto the great nombre of lordis beyng present, "Ye my lordes and nobles of Fraūce, the which to me haue euermore been true and dere, here is myn neuewe, the which myn[1] heyre I haue allowed and ordeygned, whome I praye you to honoure, & w̆ true fayth be vnto hym obedyent as to your kyng; for of the great worthynes that of hym is to come, I am in great hope, which is allyed with myght and vertue," and to the augmentacion of theyse wordis shortly after restored to hym all such cyties as Chilperich by his lyfe had withholden from hym, and soone after eyther from other in most humble and louyng maner departyd.

Of this peace atwene thyse. ii. prynces thus stablysshed, the fame ran wyde; wherfore certeygne lordes beynge vpon the party of Gūdoaldus refused hym, and went vnto the party of Gunthranus. Soone after, with his people, Gundoaldus resortyd vnto a cytie ouer the ryuer of Gerounde, named Conuena, wherfore[2] the strength thereof he thoughte to abyde his fortune: wherof whan Gunthranus was warned, he in goodly speede made thyderwarde, and layde his people nere vnto ŷ sayd cytie; but when he had espyed the strength therof, and knewe well it was daūgerous for to opteyne, he then vsyd gyle where strengthe myght not preuayle, and deuysed or forged certeyn letters in the name of Brunechieldys, wherein was feyned, that the sayde Brunechielde shuld desyre Gundoaldus in
Gunthrani fraus. all hasty wyse to resorte vnto the cytie of Burdeaux; of whiche fraude, Gundoaldus no thyng suspectyng, cōmaundynge[3] his treasoure with other his stuffe vnder saufe gydynge thyderwarde to be conueyde, wherof the knyghtes of Gūthranus hauyng knowlege, with a strong cōpany made ouer the foresayd water of Geronde, & layde suche watche for them, that they encoūtred the sayde people ŷ caryed the sayd treasoure and stuffe, & parforce toke it from the knyghtes of Gundoaldus, & presentyd it vnto Gūthranus.

Lyke as before ye haue harde that certeygne lordes of the hooste of Gūdoalde fled vnto the hoost of Gunthranus, so in this passe tyme. iiii. capytaynes or rulers of the hooste of Gunthranus fled vnto Gundoalde, the whiche myne auctour nameth Desiderius, Mōmolus, Bladascus, and Sagittarius, whiche. iiii. after theyr cōmyng to Gūdoalde, stood with hym in such fauoure, that he was by theyr coūceyll moch what aduyzed and gyded. It was not long after that the knyghtes of Gunthranus had this[4] wonne the foresayd treasour & stuffe, that Gundoalde was so sore pursued, ŷ he was fayn to close hym within a strōg cytie, the which Lendegilsus mayster of the hoost of Gūthranus, assayled by dyuerse feates of warre to wynne; but whan he sawe his laboure loste, than he cautelously[5] fande ŷ meane to speke secretlye with one of the foresayde. iiii. capitaynes named

[1] as myne. [2] where for. [3] commaundyd. [4] thus. [5] cauteously, edit. 1542, 1559.

Mōmolus,

Mōmolus, and ẅ hym treatyd of the betraying of the cytie; the which after many and longe exortacions, with thassuraunce of theyr lyues and other graūtyd vnto the sayd treason; wherof ŷ maner shuld be thus; this sayd Mōmolus, with the forenamed Bladascus and other of that affynytie, shulde set a fyre an olde temple within the cytie, and when the people of the cytie were besyed to quenche ŷ fyre, the sayd Mōmolus with his adherentes to open the gates, and so to lette in Lyndegylsus and his knyghtes. But yet this treason set aparte, Mōmolus goith to Gundoalde, & shewith to hym ŷ great daūger ŷ he standith in of his enemyes, wherfore he coūceyllis hym that he, with the other the rulers oboute hym, goo vnto the tentis of Gunthranus, and yelde them all vnto his grace and mercy; and also to thentent that he shuld there shewe and proue ŷ he was the indubitat sone of ŷ first Clothayre, the which to the kynge & all his hooste was very doutfull, and the more, because he so fledde from them. Whan Gundoaldus had at leysoure harde the coūceyll of Mōmole, gyuynge to hym credence, for somoch as by his counceyll before tymes he had fortheryd his causes, and also by comfort that he reportyd to haue by meanes of Lyndegylsus before named, he, settynge a parte all fere, with certayne nombre in peasyble wyse issued the cytie; and whan he hadde a lytle space goon. ii. erles of Gunthranus hooste, named Bole and Boson, receyued hym, and delyueryd hym to ŷ powere of Lyndegylsus: and Mōmole retourned with the other of his confederey vnto the cytie, and closyd fast the gatis atwene the cytie & ŷ pauyllyons of Gūthranus, where was a lytle coppyd hyll, to ŷ heyght wherof whan Gundoalde was comyn, the sayd Boson hym sodeynly threwe downe, and as he was rollyng downe the hyll, with a great stoone he strake hym on the hede, by vyolence wherof, he was forthwith slayne or dede; & Mōmole, the which as before is towchyd, was reentryd ŷ cytie first, dispoylyd ŷ goods of the sayde Gundoalde, and after fell vpon the cytezyns, and robbed & spoyled them in lyke maner, not sparynge prestys nor other, & after brent chyrchis, temples, & houses without pytye. Whiche doon, he sped hym vnto the tentys of Lyndegylsus; but he, not beynge sure of the sauegarde of ŷ sayd Mōmole and his company, frome the murmoure of his knyghtes, or more verely, for he wolde not be a knowen of ŷ prouyded deth of theym, cōmaundyd the sayd Mōmole with his adherentys to tary without, and not to cōme in the prese of his knyghtes tyll he had some deale pacifyed them, which was doone, but not all woute stryfe; for sōme there were ŷ began to quarell ẅ hym & his: but whē Lyndegylse sawe ŷ this Mōmole & his cōpany were somedeale ẅdrawyn frō his pauylion, he made a tokyn to his knyghtes, wherby they knowynge his mynde fell vpon hym and slewe hym. Sagittarius, one of ŷ foresayde. iiii. of that company, the whiche myne auctor reportith to be a bysshop, fled to haue sauegardyd hym selfe, but in his flyght he was slayne. And when thyse enemyes were thus brought out of lyfe, Gunthranus commaunded the goodes of the sayde Mommole to be brought vnto his tresory, which were of great valure, and after were egallye deuydyd atwene hym and Childebert his neuewe. It was not long after, but certeyne tokyns and fygures appered in the firmament, the which by astronomers were iudged the fyne of sōme prynce, whiche, after a yere, shewyd to be true, for the sayd Gunthranus dyed vpon a yere folowynge the sayde fygures or sygnes, when he hadde been kynge of Orleaunce by the terme of. xxxvii. yeres; and was buryed with great pompe in the cytie of Cabilon, within the prouynce of Burgoyne, in the monastery of seynt Marke, whiche he before had buyldyd, and lefte for his heyre of that kyngdome his neuewe the foresayde Chyldebert.

Treason wrought.

The deth of Gūdoald.

Signa vel prodigia.

¶ Capitulū. C. xxiiii.

CHildebertus than hauynge ŷ rule & possession of his owne enheritaunce, that is to say, of Austracy, & also of Orleaūce, cast then[1] in his mynde how he myght be reuengyd of Fredegund, the which, as before is shewyd in the. C. and. xiiii.[2] chapitre of *Fol. lx.*

[1] Castynge. [2] C. and xiii. edit. 1533.

this libell, slewe his fader Sygebert, called vnto hym his olde freende and coũceyllour Gundebald erle of Peitowe[1], and than cõmaunded that he shulde with his powar inuade the countrey of Soysons, the whiche was in the rule of Clotharius. Whereof Fredegunde beynge warned, assemblyd to hir ŷ lordes of ŷ coũtrey, and exortyd theym to withstande the malyce of theyr enemyes, shewynge to them furthermore, that ŷ thynge they shulde of iustyce & equyte doo, conciderynge that theyr kynge Clotharius was yet tendre of age, and had as yet no knyghtlye prowesse to defende hymselfe and his lande: and after a longe exortacion[2] to them made, she with hir sone preparyd to goo agayne ŷ sayd enemyes. And when all thynge to the warre was preparyd and redy, she with a great army made towarde the hoost of Gundebalde, and when she knewe she was nere vnto the sayde hooste, she cõmaundyd hir capitaynes to reste & fortyfye hir people vpon all partys for brekynge of hir enemyes; and agayne nyght she callyd to hir Lawndry, hir olde paramoure, with other, wyllynge them that in the dede of the nyght they wold manfully set vpon the other partye, for so moche as she sayde to theym ŷ she was certeynly enfourmed by hir espyes, that hir sayde enemyes were sore weryed by reason of that dayes laboure: after whose counceyll, the sayde Laundry with other, wrought and supprysed theyr enemyes so vnwarelye, ŷ of theym they[2] slewe a parte and chasyd the remenaunt, and ŷ doon, sped them vnto Champeyne, nere vnto Reynes, and spoyled and brent a parte of ŷ coũtrey. This feat of warre thus compassyd by the subtyle wit of Fredegunde, was nere to a place called Truet. Then Childebert entendyd, after certentye had of the ouerthrowe of Gundebalde, for to haue made newe warre vpõ Fredegunde, but he was let by meane of ŷ Longobardis, which thã made warre vpon hym, of the whiche warre he had somdeale his entent, and more shuld, if Mauricius, emperoure of Constantyne the noble, hadde kepte all promesse with hym before made; after the which warre in party endyd, he retourned into his owne countrey. Shortlye after he & also his wyfe dyed, & not without suspeccyon of venym, leuynge after hym. ii. sones named Theodobert & Theodorich, gyuynge to the eldyst the lordshyp of Austracy, and to the yonger the prouynce of Burgoyne. About this tyme the Hunes brake out of theyr places, and warryd vpon certeyne partyes of myddell Fraunce, & dyd therein great harme; but lastlye by meanes of great gyftes by theym receyuyd, they lefte ŷ countrey & drewe towarde Soysons agayne, whom Fredegunde gaderyng a great powar, sent Clotharius hir sone & kyng, to thẽtent to defẽde ŷ sayd Hunes, ŷ they shulde not, after victory had of Clotharius[3], inuade theyr coũtreys. The forenamed sõnes of Childebert ẅ great poware came to ŷ feelde, where after long and sharpe fyght, the Frensh men were victours, and chased the Hunes in such wyse, that the more parte of them were slayne & taken, for the which victory Fredegunde made excedynge ioye to hir sone Clothayre, and receyued hym with great pleasure and excedynge gyftes; after the which passyd not longe whyle, but that she fell syke & dyed, and than buryed by hir husbond Chilperiche. Whan the forenamed bretherne had knowlege of the deth of Fredegunde, they, by the exortacion and styryng of Brunechieldis theyr graũdmother, callyng to mynde the wronges to theyr aũcestres, doone by Fredegũd, and somedeale by Lothayre, assemblyd a great powar & met with Lothayre & his powar at ŷ riuer of Arrune or Aruenne, in ŷ whiche place was soo sore fyght, and so many slayne, that ŷ cource of the riuer was let by the multitude of the caryens or dede bodyes that were therein castyn. But the more parte fell of the knyghtes of Lothayre, soo ŷ he was forcyd to forsake the feelde, and thens to flee to the cytie of Meleon, & from thens to Paris, whome the sayde bretherne folowed, & cõpellyd hym to make peas after theyr pleasure; the effecte of whiche peas was this; Theodobert the elder brother of thyse. ii. shulde enioye all the lande lyinge atwene the ryuer of Seyn & Leyr, vnto the Brytisshe occean, or the see of Lytle Brytaygne, and Theodoriche, the yonger brother, to haue all the lande from ŷ sayd ryuer of Sayn, vnto ŷ ryuer of Isayr, to the

Fredegũda Austicia.

Fredegundæ obitus.

[1] Poytowe. [2] she. [3] "After victory had of Clotharius" *omitted.*

brynke of the see, and to Clothayre shulde remayne. xii. prouynces, which the sayd. ii. ryuers of Isayr and Sayne flowen by or thoroughe: which peas thus cõfermed and graũted, Theodobert, to whom Nenstria or Normandye belonged, sent thyder a cheuetayne of his court called Berthalde, to defende the sayde countrey. But Clothayre, of this former accorde, beynge nothyng cõtentyd, sent his sone Meroneus, vnder the gydyng of Laundry, prefect or ruler of his paleys, into Nenstria to warre in that countrey; and for soo moche as Berthalde sawe well he lacked powar to withstande so great an hoste, he therefore toke the cytie of Orleaunce tyll he hadde gadered more company. Than Laũdry seased that parte of the countrey, and after, the sayde Berthald', and whan he came to the wallys of the cytie, by dyuerse wordis of reproche, excyted hym[1] to gyue batayll to hym in the playne felde, the which he refusyd, because of the egalytie[2] of nombre of knyghtes; but he offered to issue out of the cytie, and to fyght with Laũdry hand to hand, with ŷ he myght be assuryd agayne his people, ŷ whiche offre Laũdry refused. It was not longe after or bothe kynges with great hoostys drewe into that countrey, and at the ryuer of Stampis met, where atwene thẽ was foughten a stronge batayll, but by the polycie of Theodobert, Lothayre was put to a disauntage; for whyle the sayd Lothayre, was cõueyinge his people ouer the ryuer at a narowe passage, Theodobert began so[4], that the people of Clothayre came not two partes of them to the feelde; neuerthelesse the fyght cõtynued by a longe season, in whiche tyme Berthald encountred many tymes Laũdrye, and prouoked hym to batayll, but euer that other refusyd: lastly, he seynge and knowynge well that he shuld wynne great worshyp, & also profyte, if he myght slee or take this Laundry, for the whiche cause he put hym selfe in the more daũger of his enemyes, and fynally of them was slayne. Theodobert in pursuynge Lothayre, and in cõfortynge of his knyghtes, bare hym soo well that he caused his enemyes to lese grounde, and at length put theym to flyght, the whiche he folowed to the gates of Paris, to the great damage of the people of Lothayr. In this chace was taken Meroneus the sone of Clothayre, with many other, but Laundry was goten within the cytie: And whã Theodobert had thus goten the victory of his enemyes, he list no lenger to tary aboute theym at that season, but shortlye after retournyd to his countrey.

In the court of Theodoriche, brother of this Theodobert, was at this daye dwellyng an Italian named Prothadyus; the whiche, as myne auctor sayth, was paramoure vnto Brunechielde beforesayd, the which Brunechielde, by hir meanes, had exaltyd from poore estate vnto highe auctorytie; the which was of a subtyle & far castynge witte, and therewith excedynge couetous, & in great fauoure of the kynge, but to all his lordes odyous and hatefull, for the whiche vnlefull meanes by hym to the nobles and cõmons of the lande vsed. It is also to be remembred that for the ille cõdicions[5] and bad counceyll that Brunechielde and this Prothadius vsed within the court before dayes of Theodobert, for ŷ which he banysshed theym both, as well of his lande, as of his court, wherfore euer after they malygned agayne Theodobert, and for thexecucion of theyr malycious purpose, they tolde vnto Theodoriche, that his enemy and not brother Theodobert had wdrawen frome hym the cheef of his faders treasour; aledgyng also that he was not the sone of Childebert his fader, but goten of a gardener, and wyllyd hym therfore to sende vnto hym, and to aske restytucion of the sayde goodes. By the whiche wycked counceyll Theodoriche was so lad, that he sent vnto his brother, and in suche wyse so vexyd and styryd hym, that dedely malyce was kyndelid atwene them, in so moch that eyther of them assembled great hostys, and lastly met nere vnto a towne named Carysse, where the sayd hoostys beynge redye to haue runne togyders, the lordes of Theodobert so demeaned them vnto hym, that by theyr wyse cõũceyll he aggreed to sende to his brother, & to haue a cõmunycacion of peas. And whan the embassade was comen to the pauylyon

Brunechieldis paramour. *Fol. lxi.*

[1] "And after the sayde Berthald" *omitted.*
[2] the sayde Berthalde.
[3] inequalyte.
[4] so fyersly, and kepte the passage so streyt,
[5] And for the yll condycyons.

of

of Theodorich, and there had shewyd ỹ vnkyndnesse of this warre with the ieopardyes that myght ensue of ỹ same, anone the foresayd Prothadyus tooke vpon hym the answere, and sayd, " It is not requisyte so lyghtly to graũt peas, but necessary it is to attempte ỹ wyll of oure enemye by batayll, whether he woll be agreable to cõdescẽde to our desyres:" The whiche wordis thus expressyd of hym, anon the more party of the lordes disdaygned it, and conspyryd ẅin themselfe howe they myght put hym to dethe, and forthwith aroos amonge theym suche a mormure, that the kynge apperceyuyd well that they entendyd some harme to Prothadius, for the whiche he called vnto hym a knyghte named Vselyne, chargynge hym to goo vnto the lordes, cõmaũdynge them that they in no wyse shuld do eny harme to Prothayde, the which Vselyne, beyng of ỹ mynde of the other, sayde that the kynge wolde that they shuld sle Prothayde: after which message doon, they ranne ī all haste and hym slew as he sate playinge at dyce or tables with one Peter a visiciõ[1], and that doon all hoolly ranne vnto ỹ kynges tente, besechynge hym to take noo displeasure of the deth of so euyll a man, that, as well was knowen, was enemy to all frendship & peas: but for Theodorich apperceyued well that he cowde not reuenge his deth without ponyshment of a multytude, he therefore tooke pacience, and suffred the offence to passe vnponysshed.

Dedignacio.

Per aerta legacio.

¶ Capitulum. C.xxv.

AFter which man thus murderid, both prynces, ẅout notable acte, departed eyther into his coũtrey[2]. To this day Theodorich had taken no wyfe, albe it ỹ of his cõcubyne he receyued. ii. sõnes: he therfore by thaduertysement of his frendes, set his mynde to mary sõme noble woman, and soon after sent certaygne ambassadours vnto Berthricus, then kyng of Spayne, wyllyng to graunte vnto hym Memberge his doughter in mariage: the whiche, vpon certeyne condicions, was perfourmed, and with great rychesse to hym shortlye after sent and maryed, and by a certeygne tyme well entreatyd & cherisshyd. But that season ronne and spent, Brunechielde soo tournyd the kynges mynde frome the quene, that lastlye he, with such treasoure and iewellys as he of hir receyued, sent hir home agayne; the which iniury Berthricus hir fader toke at herte greuouslye, and shortlye after sent his messengers vnto Clothayre, kynge of Soysons, requyrynge hym of ayde to warre vpon Theodorich, which hadde doon vnto hym great displeasure: and ỹ rather for ỹ warre ỹ ỹ sayd Theodorich ẅ his brother lately made ageyn hym, the which, ẅ both theyr strẽgthes, they myght them well reuẽge. To whom Clotharius graũted, & to haue his partye the strõger, he sent vnto his neuew Theodobert, and brother to Theodoriche, to styrre hym agayne his sayd brother; wherof whã Berthricus had receyued knowlege of his sayde messyngers, he then sent vnto Agon kynge of Longobardys, or more verylye Adoaldus the. v. kynge after Alboynus, requyryng hym in lyke maner, and he desyrous of wreche, made faste and sure promyse to gyue ayde to the vttermooste of his power. Whan Theodoriche was warned of the conspiracy of thyse. iiii. kynges, that entendyd to warre ioyntly vpon hym, he was therewith greatlye amoued, & prouyded for his defence ī his best maner. Then Theodobert, trustynge the appoyntment before made, assemblyd a great hoost, and made spede first toward the place atwene them appoyntyd, which was nere to ỹ castell of Salas; but or eny preparacion was made towarde batayll, a meane was foũde ỹ the forenamed. ii. bretherne shuld mete eyther with other, accompanyed with. x. thousand knyghtes. But Theodobertus, entendynge to dissayue his sayd brother, & to force hym to graũte to his pleasure, brought with hym ferre aboue that nombre: wherfore Theodoricus beynge ouer sette with strengthe, graunted all his brothers wyll, which was, that ouer certeygne thynges and appoyntmentis cõcludyd atwẽne Berthricus and hym, Theodobert shuld holde to hym & his heyres two lordshyppes called Champayne and Turon, which conclusyon fynysshed, eyther takynge leue of other, departyd vnto

Fratrũ discordia.

[1] physicyon. [2] *The 125th chapter begins here in the subsequent editions.*

theyr

theyr coũtreys, but not ẅout great vnrestfulnesse of the sayde Theodoriche, beryng in mynde the wrong doyng of his brother: wherfore he shortlye after made meanes to his neuewe Clothayre desyryng hym that he wolde not assyste his brother ageyne hym, but to suffre his quarell to be demyd by dynt of swerde atwene them two. This requeste Lothayre, by thaduyce of seynt[1] Columbane, munke of Irelande, than beyng in those costis, graũted; and ẏ Frensh Cronycle sayth, that he was warned of this foresayde holy[2] munke and abbot, that he shulde not medle atwene ẏ sayd two bretherne, for so moche as it was prouidyd of God that he shulde be heyre to theym both. Whan Theodorich had receyued this answere, he gaderyd his strength, and sped hym vpon his iourney to the cytie of Langresse, & frome thens to Verdune or Verdoun. Theodoberte hauynge thereof knowlege of his malycyous brothers purpose, gaderyd in Austracy a great hooste, and so sped hym tyll he came to the cytie of Toull, where both hoostys shortely after met, and, in the feldys or playnes nere to that cytie, foughte a stronge batayll, in the whiche was slayne great people vpon bothe sydes, but the more parte vpon the syde of Theodobert; wherfore he fynally was compellyd to forsake the feelde, and fled vnto Coleygne, where he gaderyng a newe powar, fought agayn with his brother: in the which fyght he had lyke fortune, & was agayne chasyd to his great shame & losse, whome Theodoricus, as his mortall enemy, folowed, fyrynge and wastynge the countreys as he went, in so moch that the inhabytauntis of ẏ coũtreys fell before hym, besechynge his grace, ẏ for the offence of one man, he wold not destroye so many innocentis; assurynge hym furthermore, that they wolde become his liegemen, and holde theyr lande of hym for euer. All[3] whiche requeste he sayd gladly he wold to them graunte theyr peticion, with[4] ẏ they wolde present to hym the hed of his brother; after the whiche answere by them of Theodorich receyued, they among themselfe appoynted out a certeyne of persones mooste apte to theyr purpose, and wyllyd them to goo vnto Theodobert to execute theyr entent; the whiche sped theyr iourney tyll they came to the presence of Theodobert, and shewyd vnto hym that if he wold be aggreable to departe ẅ suche stuffe and iewellys as he had of his faders, so that Theodoriche myght be partener there of, he shulde haue perfyght amytie and rest with hym: to ẏ whiche wordes he geuynge confidence & truste, called with hym the sayde parsones, & brought them into the howses where the sayd stuffe & iewellis lay; & whyle he was busied to deuyd out & appoynte the porcion of his, one of the sayd parsones slewe hym sodeynlye, and after of one aggrement strake of his heed, and in secrete wyse causyd it to be conueyde vnto his brother. Whan Theodoriche had receyuyd the heed of his brother, he sped hym to Coleyne, where this treason was wrought, and receyuyd ẏ cytie into his possession, with all the kyngdome of Austracy, to his brother belongynge; and when he had there ordryd his nedis after his mynde, with. ii. sõnes, and an excedynge fayre doughter of Theodobert, he sped hym vnto Mees, the chefe cytie of Austracy, where with hym met his graundmoder Brunechielde, the whiche perseuerynge in all malyce and myschefe, causyd the sayde two sõnes to be shortly slayne. Theodorich then restoryd or deliuered vnto Clothayre all whiche[5] landes as to hym he had before promysyd. Theodoriche thus endynge his warre, ẏ which, by a longe season, spent his tyme in kepynge of concubynes, was nowe rauysshed ẅ the beautie of his brothers doughter, the whiche he had brought from Coleyne; but that doynge Brunechield withstode ẅ all hir powar, because ẏ mayde was so nere of his kynne, for the whiche he beynge ẅ hir sore discontent, sayd: "O thou moost wycked and false woman, dyd not thou make me to beleue that Theodobert was not the sone of my fader, but that he was the sone of a gardyner; for what cause hast thou caused me to persecute my brother, & lastly to slee hym;" after ẏ whiche wordis, he wolde haue slayne hir, if he of his lordes had not be letted; which dede not forgotten of this vngoodlye woman, euer after imagened howe she myght brynge Theodoriche out of lyfe; & lastlye, she hyryd suche as were about hym to

Batayll.

Fol. lxii.

Treason.

[1] "seynt" *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] "holy" *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] at. [4] if. [5] such.

consent to hir iniquytie, so that vpon a season, whā he came out of his stewe or bayne,
Mors regis. he axyd drynke, by the force whereof he was poysoned, and dyed soone after, whan he had reygned. xviii. yeres. Howe be it Antoninus, in the. vi. chapitre and. xii. tytle of ỹ secōde parte of his werke, saythe, that he was brent with fyre by the dyuyne powar.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxvi.

NOw that I haue shewed vnto you ỹ fyne & ende of theyse two bretherne, by reason of whos deth the hoole pryncypate of Fraunce, fell vnto the abouenamed Clothayre, I shall nowe expresse vnto you the dedis by hym doon, after he had all the rule only. So it was that the forenamed Brunechield maligned euer agayne Lothayre, and to the forther-aūce of hir malyce she behaued hir in suche wise with sōme of the rulers & lordes of Austracy, ỹ she caused them to admytte one named Sigebert to be rightfull enherytour of that land; but for that some of them had good experyence of the ille disposicion of this woman, they therfore sent. ii. noble men of that land, named Pepyn, & Arnolde, vnto Clothayre, wyllyng hym to sende hastely into that prouynce; after the which message by theyse. ii. lordes reported, Clotharius shortly after sped hym into Austracy, and at a castell called Cathomat he lodgyd hym with his people; wherof herynge, Brunechielde sent vnto hym, and gaue vnto hym monycion ỹ he shuld voyde the lande, for somoch as Sigebert
Brunechieldis iniquytye. the eldest sone of Theodorich was therof rightfull enherytour. Ye haue harde before that Theodorich vsyd lemmans, of the which he receyued. iiii. sones, that is to sey Sigebert, Corbe, Childebert, & Merone; wherfore ỹ foresayd Brunechielde entendyng to distourbe Lothayre, and all the land, fortefyed ỹ sayd Sigebert to clayme the lande of Austracy: and when Clothayre had receyued knowlege of this maundement frome Brunechielde, or Brunehenst, he sent to hir answere that he wolde assemble ỹ lordes of Austracy, & be demed by theym, whether this lande belonged to hym, or Sigebert. And she ferynge that sentence, excyted the people of the prouynce of Germany to strenght hir party with all the people that she myght make of the sayd coūtrey of Austracy. And ỹ to brynge aboute, she sente one Garnery, and other' Albon. Of this Garnery she hadde suspeccion that he shuld fauour the party of Lothayre, wherfore to Albone his felowe she sent letters ỹ he shuld put ỹ sayd Garnery away: whā Albone had ouer rad ỹ letter, he brake it in peacis, & threwe them from hym, and afterward a freende of Garneryes, gaderyd ỹ peaces, and so ioynyd them that he cōceyuyd[4] the sentēce of the letter, and forthwith shewyd it vnto Garneryc. Whan Garnery perceyuyd the malicious entent of Brunechield, he kept it secrete to hymselfe, albeit that he by his secrete meanes caused the Germanyes ỹ they shuld take no party with Brunechielde, and that doone, he retourned into Burgoyne, where with hir and in[5] hir cōpanye, he solycited so the lordes of Burgoyne, that some of them abhorred the crudelitie of that woman. And when Garnery had in this wyse cōpassed his maters, he sēt vnto Lothayre & shewyd, that if he myght haue his grace & safecondwyte, he wold come to hym, & shew to hym thynges cōcernynge his aduaūt-
Treason. age, all the whiche was graūted. Then Clothayre, by coūceyll of the sayd Garnery, assembled his powar, & shortlye sent a strengthe of them into Chāpeyn and Cathaloyne, where it was shewed that Sigebert hadde gaderyd great strengthis. Then forsooke the party of Sigebert many nobles of Austracy; amonge the whiche myn auctoure nameth Rucco, Sigoldus, and Enulanus, and yelded theym to the mercy of Clothayre. Then shortlye after
Fol. lxiii. the hoostis of Clothayre & Sigebert met, where Garnery, by tokens atwene hym & dyuerse of ỹ capiteynes of Sigebert before assygned, the sayd capytaynes w̄ theyr people withdrewe them, so ỹ Sigebert with his. ii. bretherne Corbo & Meroneus gaue backe whyle they came to the ryuer of Sigoune, where, after lytle resistence, ỹ foresayd. ii. brethern were taken: but the Frenshe Cronycle sayth, that all. iiii. bretherne were there takyn. Albeit mayster Gagwen saythe, that Sigebert, by the vertue[4] of his horse escapyd, so that

[3] an other. [4] conveyed. edit. 1542. *by mistake.* [5] in, *omitted.* edit. 1542, 1559.
[4] strengthe edit. 1542, 1559.

he

he was not after that day seen. And soone after this victory, Brunechieldis, which also of ỹ Frensh Cronycle is named Brunchenste, was brought as prysoner vnto the presence of Lothayre, with a suster of Theodorich, which Garnery or Garney had taken in the tentis of his enemyes: thā Lotharius forthwith cōmaūdyd Corbo to be behedyd, & preserued Meroneus, for so moche as he was to hym godfather, and euer after cherisshed hym as his kynnesman. Lotharius thus hauynge ỹ victory of his enemyes, made great ioye; & after he had sōmedeale set that coūtrey and other in quyete, he then toke aduyce of his lordes how he shulde be demeaned w̄ Brunechield, that had been auctorice of so manyfold mischefes, and crymynous dedys, ỹ whiche, of one consent and mynde, condescendyd and aggreed, that she shuld be put to moost peynfull and vyle deth: & fynally after sore betynges, she was set vpon an horse, and so conueyed thoroughe the hoost ỹ all men myght beholde and se hir, & after brought ageyn to the kynges presence, where then the kynge reherced vnto hir a longe processe of all hir murdures, cōspiracis, & wicked dedys; affermynge that she had been the occasyon & cause of the dethe of. x. prynces, besyde other meane persones; & whan he had sayde his pleasure, he then cōmaundyd hir to be boūdyn to a wylde horsetayle by ỹ here of hir hed, & so to be drawen whyle she were dede: and whan this iugement was executed, she, by the lycence of the kyng, was buryed in an house of religyon within the cytye of Hosdonne, ōr Osdonne, that she before tyme had buyldyd in the honoure[1] of seynt Martyne, besyde other many that she ī hir lyfe buyldyd in dyuerse other placis, endowynge theym with great and ryche possessyons.

Execucio Brunechieldis.

¶ Capitulū. C. xxvii.

THus dame fortune fauoured of[2] partye of Lotharyus that this kyngdome, whiche had from the tyme of Clodoueus Lewes, contynued vnder. iiii. gouernours or rulers, for ỹ more party, now was fallen to hym, so that he had all vnder his obeysaunce & rule. Then anone made[3] Garnery prefecte & mayster of his paleys, & released vnto the Longobardis, or Lumbardes, a trybute of. xii.M. li. yerely payde to the kynges of Fraūce; the which was first set vpon them by Gunthranus his vncle, & ī this whyle to his more encreace of worldlye ioye, he receyuyd of his wyfe Bergeruda a sone, the whiche he named Dagobertus; the whiche whan he came to couenable age, he betoke to the lore[4] of Arnold, then bysshop of Mees: & whē the first wyfe of Lotharius was dede, he maryed a seconde named Sichilde, of whom he receyued a chyld, & named it Haybert. Whan Dagobert ỹ first sone was comyn to a leefull age, [after an vsuell custome of all prynces of Fraunce, he gaue hym moch to ỹ chase of wylde beestys; and as by chaunce one day he folowed the chace of an hert, and tryed it soo sore that he broughte hym to a bay in a place that then was called the strete of Catulyen, in ỹ which streete was than an olde lytle chapell to the which the foresayd hert entred, & there helde hym, & albeit ỹ a great nōbre[5] entryd hym & sued, forthere thē ỹ chapell dore noon of them wold enter, but there stoode bayinge: and when Dagobertus came after and behelde the maner of the houndys, & dyd what he cowde to cause them to entre ỹ chapell & myght not, he thus departed without more doinge at ỹ season, not without great meruaylynge in his mynde. In this[6] it was not longe after ỹ][7] Clothayre, consyderynge the frowardnesse of growynge in his sone Dagobert, assigned to hym a tutoure or lerner of worldlye and knyghtlye maners, whose name was Sadragesyle; & for his sone shuld haue hym in the more awe & fere, ỹ kynge gaue vnto the sayd tutoure the dukedome of Quyan.[8] But so it was one day ỹ for a cause this Sadragesyle wolde haue chastyzed this Dagobert, wherof he beyng ware, associate vnto hym certeyn wanton persones, & bete his mayster, & after in waye of despyte caused ỹ berd of his tutour to be shauyn of: for the which dede Lothayre was agayne hym greuouslye displeasyd, & in great ire & haste sent for his sone Dagobert. But he feryng punysshement

Occasyon of fyndyng of seynt Denys body.

Diuisio.

[1] "In the honour" *is omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the. [3] thys Lotharius made. [4] lorde, edit. 1542. 1559. [5] of houndes, edit. 1533. [6] "in this," *omitted* in the edit. 1533. [7] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Guyan.

w̄ drew hym, [& went vnto the forenamed chapell, trustynge verily, ỹ where tofore a beest was shewed such comfort, ỹ he by holy prayer shuld there be cōforted,][1] tyll suche tyme as he myght atteyne vnto ỹ grace of his fader.

Seynt Denys foundyn.

[Ye shall vnderstande ỹ before tyme after he had experience of ỹ wonder shewyd by ỹ hert, he lernyd ỹ the holy martyrs, seynt Denys, & his. ii. felowes, Rustycus & Eleutherius, shulde be buryed wīn the sayde chapell; the whiche were martyryd in the persecucion of Domyciane the emperoure, about the yere of Crystis incarnacion. iiiixx. and. xvi.: in the honoure of the whiche martirs the foresayde poore chapell was arreryd, as witnessith the Frensh Cronycle, by the meanes of a deuout Frensh man, whose name is not expressyd. Thus Dagobert in this chapell abydyng in prayer, in the firste nyght, he beynge in slepe, apperyd vnto hym. iii. olde faders, sayinge vnto hym, " Yonge man, we be those martyres which many yeres passyd were slayne for ỹ fayth of Cryste, & buryed in this place by Catula ỹ good womā, which place is not duely nor sufficientlye honoured, nor yet ỹ people of Fraūce hath not vs in due reuerence & worshyppe; and therfore whan thou arte of myght & poware, then remembre vs, & helpe this place to be otherwise buyldyd, which shall not be long to, and for thou shalt not take this for a dreme or fantasy, dygge hereafter this grōūde, and thou shalt fynde our thre bodyes hoole & vncorrupte, & vpon euerychē of vs our names, with letters fresshely writtyn;" and after this appered and fynysshed, and vanysshed awey.[2] Whan Dagobert awoke, he called well to mynde this vysyon, promysyd[3] inwardlye atwene God & hym, that if he were recounsylyd to his fader, as to hym they had promysed, he wold fulfyll that they had desyryd. After this, ỹ fader beyng warnyd ỹ Dagobert was in this chapell, sent vnto the place certeygne of his knygbtes to pull or take hym thens perforce; and whan they came within a myle of the sayde chapell, they were so astonyed, that they myght not goo one foote forwarde to do ỹ best they cowde. Whan they had longe stryuen withoute preuaylyng, they retourned to ỹ kyng, & shewed to hym the trouth in all thyng as they had doone. The kynge beynge discontent with theyr reporte, blamed them, & sayd that they feryd his sone, for whiche cause they had feyned that excuse, and incontynently sent fourth an other cōpany, ỹ which were delte with in lyke maner as the other were. Lotharius somedeale trowbled w̄ the reporte of his seruaūtis, consyderyd the chapell to be nere vnto Paris, where he than laye, cōmaunded his horse to be brought, for he wolde proue the mater hymselfe: but lyke as his seruauntes were seruyd, euyn soo became of hym, soo that he myghte goo or ryde frowarde or sydewarde, but towarde the chapell myght he in nō wyse atteygne. When this was knowen to the kynge, he consydered well it was the handywerke of God; wherfore by fayre and easy meanes he called home his sone and recouncilid hym, and forgaue all trespace: to this accordith the legende of the lyfe of seynt Denys, with more that shall after folowe in the storye of this Dagobert.][4] After this recoūciliation, Lotharius ordeygned vnder hym his sone Dagobert to be ruler of the signory of Austracy; but whether it were by the elacion of his owne mynde, or by bad counsayll, he shortlye after rebellyd agayne his fader, & wold haue reteygned that prouynce to his owne vse. For this were chosen. xii. noble men of Fraunce to arbytre & deme betwene the fader and the sone; the which lordes, after they had longe debated this matier, by fayre entreatyze cōtentyd so the fader, that he gaue vnto the sone the sayd lordshyp of Austracy. Soone after this accorde, Clothayre made warre vpon the Gothis or Saxons, & them at length subdued: for it is to be knowen, that lyke as the sayde Saxons inuadyd moche Brytaygne or Englande, in lykewyse warryd they in Fraūce, and lastly subdued the prouynce of Nenstria, and named it after them Normandye, as after in ỹ story of Charles ỹ Symple, shall more euydently appere. Of this victory of Saxons is made a longe rehersayll, & howe lastly when Clothayre had slayn the kyng or ruler of

Fol. lxiiii.

Concordia.

[1] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] and after thys they vanyshed awaye, edit. 1533. [3] and promysed, edit. 1533. [4] *omitted* in edit. of 1542.

them,

them, named Berthrand, he after yode into the coūtrey of Germany, and slewe man & chyld that passed the length of his swerde: of this, & other dedis, by this Lothayre doon, I myght make a long werke, but I passe ouer. Than it folowith, whan Lothayre had set his coūtrey in sōme reste, he assembled his lordes at a cytie or towne callyd Traacas or Trecas; and after diuerse maters discussid and endyd, he axed of theym perfyght allegeaunce and fydelyte to hym and his heyres to be kepte; the whiche by ŷ sayd lordes fermely promysed & assuryd, he cōmaundyd euerych of them to repayre to theyr owne coūtreys; and soone therafter he made an assemble of his bysshoppes & spirituell men, at ŷ cytie or towne of Troys, by whose counsayllys he orderyd thynges and maters cōcernyng ŷ wele of ŷ churche; and shortly after was vexyd with grieuous sykenes, wherof he fynally dyed, whan he had reygned, after mooste wryters. xliii. yeres, leuynge for heyre the forenamed Dagobert, the whiche enteryd his fader with great pompe at the abbey of seynt Vyncent without ŷ wallys of Paris, ŷ which abbey is at this daye called seynt Germayns.

The foresayde yeres accompted for the reygne of Lothayre, be accomptid from the first day that he was ordeygned kynge of Soysons, vnto the daye of his deth, wherof he reygned, after sōme wryters, ouer a parte. xxvii. yeres, and ouer all Fraūce. xvi. yeres, which make the full of. xliii. yeres.

¶ Capitulū. C.xxviii.

CAdwanus or Cadwā, ŷ whiche, of Guydo, is namyd duke of Venedoyce, or of North-walis, was by one assēt of ŷ Brytōs, lastly, made theyr souerayne or gouernour, in ŷ yere of our Lord. vi.C. and. xiii., & the. xxv. yere of ŷ second Clothair, kynge of Fraūce, & also ŷ firste yere of Colwolphus then kynge of Westsaxons, accomptynge for ŷ reygne of Ceawlinus, kynge of the sayde Westesaxons. xxxi. yeres, and for Colricus next succedyng hym. v. yeres. Ye haue before hard what discorde & trowble was amonge the Brytons in the tyme of Careticus laste kynge, and longe after, by reason wherof the Saxons wan ŷ more land, and, as before is reherced in the. C. &. xx. chapter, howe Ethelfryde, kynge of Northūbyrlande, ouerset the Brytons at ŷ cytie of Chestre, and forsyd them to take ouer Seuarne, and so into Walis, where they then chase this Cadwan to be theyr duke and ledar, the whiche, after he was put in auctorytye, assemblyd his Brytons, & came agayne into Brytaygne, & gaue batayll vnto the sayde Ethelfryde, in the whiche they shped[1] dyuerslye, so that sōme season the Saxons wan, and sōme whyle ŷ Brytons; but the Brytons helde Chestre, & other good townes, whiche they had recouered sene[2] theyr laste commynge. Anglia. [Cap. x. li. 9.]

It shuld seme, by the meanynge of Polycronyca, that this Cadwan or Cedwall shuld at length sle the sayd Ethelfryde & Osricus, both kynges of Brenicia and Deyra; but Guydo and also Gaufryd witnessen, that after this Cadwan had the better of Ethelfryde, by mediatours it is[3] aggreed, that Ethelfryde shulde enioye all the lande ouer and beyonde Humbre vnto Scotland, and Cadwan shuld haue ŷ lande from Humbre towarde the sowth; to the whiche sayinge aggreeth the Englysshe Cronycle, affermyng also that he shuld be ŷ sone of Brucyuall, kyng of Leyceter, the which of other wryters is not testifyed. Concordia.

It is also there shewyd, ŷ after ŷ sayd accorde atwene Ethelfryd & Cadwan confirmed, ŷ they cōtynued duryng ŷ lyfe of Cadwan as. ii. especyall louers & frendes. And duryng the reygne of this Cadwan, ŷ. ii. sonnes of Colricus, Kyngilsus & Quichillynus, after the deth of theyr faders brother, Colwolphus, ruled ioyntly the pryncipate of Westsaxons, the whiche in theyr begynnynge faughte agayne the Brytons at Ampton, besyde Oxinforde, & wan of them the towne and other holdes, whiche the Brytons in the[4] coūtrey occupyed; but, by aggrement of wryters, this Cadwan was not at this cōflicte, nor yet medelyd hym

[1] spedde. [2] at. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] was. [4] that.

so farre ẅ in the lande; but, as it shulde seme by Guydo, theyse Brytons shulde be sōme cōpany that shulde lyue vnder trybute or patysement[1] of the Saxons, ẏ which, for the manhode ẏ they harde reported of Cadwan, rebellyd agayn ẏ Saxōs. Then it folowith, whan this
Amicicia. Cadwan had thus cōtynued his amyte ẅ Ethelfryde, a chaunge fell ẏ this Ethelfryde for hatered or otherwyse put frome hym his wyfe, beynge great ẅ chylde, and tooke to hym an other; wherfore this woman, beynge reedlesse[2], callyng to mynde ẏ great loue ẏ was atwene hir husbonde and Cadwan, she went vnto hym, and specyally besought hym to recounsyle hyr lorde and husbonde, that she myght be restoryd to his companye: but for Cadwan, after many meanes & requestes, myght not brynge that aboute, he therefore tenderynge hir necessite, kepte hir in his owne courte tyll she were lighted, the which at tyme brought fourth a man chylde, whome she let calle Edwyn. And soone after was the wyfe of Cadwan delyuered of a sone, whome the fader callyd Cadwalyn. But the auctor of the Floure of Historyes sayth, ẏ thyse. ii. children were longe borne before this tyme; the which shulde seme to be true; forsomoch as this Cadwalyn was of lawfull age to bewelde his lande when his fader dyed, the whiche he coulde not doo if he had nowe be borne: but, as affermeth Polycronycon, it shulde seme lyke to a fable, all the rehersayll that
Fol. lxv. Gaufryd makyth in the ende of his booke, aswell for this Cadwalyn and Edwyn, as for the other circustauce of ẏ matier there rehersyd: whiche varyeth frome other wryters bothe for ẏ tyme, and also for matier, as somedeale is more in the hystory hereof before made mencion, and also by the cōtynuance of this story; for as Giraldus Cābrensis and other seyen, this Edwin was ẏ sone of Elle or Ella, kynge of Deyra, the which was persecuted of Ethelfrydus before named, than kynge of bothe prouynces, that is to meane Brēnicia and Deyra, soo sore, ẏ he was compellyd to flee to Redwaldus, than kynge of Estanglis, the whiche for mede or fere of the sayd Ethelfryde, was lastly consentyng to haue betrayed Edwyn: of which daunger the sayd Edwyn was delyueryd, by warnynge of
Visio. a frende of his. After this escape as Edwyn sat vpon a tyme in a great studye alone, a straunger apperid to hym sodeynly, and sayde: I knowe well the cause of thy thoughte and heuynes, therefore if thyn enemyes were slayne and thou restoryd vnto thy kyngdome, and set the[3] in better maner than eny of thy forefaders, woldist thou not admit suche one for thy freende, and assent & do by his rede and counceyll; yes trewly, sayd Edwyn; and that I surely and fastly promyse ẏ: thā this man layde hand vpon Edwynes heed, and sayde to hym, "Edwyn whan this tokyn is brought to the, than haue thou mynde of this tyme of trybulacion, and of this promesse ẏ thou hast made;" and anon as this was spokē, this man vanysshed out of his syght sodeynlye.

Victoria Edwini. In a conuenyent season after, Edwyn assemblyd his hooste, and gaue batayll vnto Ethelfryde in the countrey of Mercia by east the ryuer of Idle, & slewe hym in that fyght, with a great nombre of his knyghtes, and then seasyd in his possession both the fore sayde pryncipates; and was kynge of Northumberlande by ẏ terme of. xvii[4]. yeres. Ye shall vnderstande that the forenamed Ethelfryde had. iii. sōnes, whiche are myndyd[5] besyde other; the firste and eldeste was named Eaufricus, the. ii. Oswaldus, and the. iii. Oswye. The firste was of laufull age, soo that he myght helpe & shyfte for hym selfe, but Oswalde was but. xii. yeres of age, and Oswy far yonger; wherefore theyr wardeyns, immediatly after theyr faders deth, sent thē into Armorica or lytle Brytayne, there to be brought vp, or more verelye into Albania or Scotlande.

¶ Capitulū. C.xxix.

MERCIA.

ABoute this tyme & season, as witnessen Policronica, Guydo, and other, began ẏ kyngdome or lordshyp of Mercia, vnder the strōg Paynym & Saxon, called Penda, the

[1] "or patysement" *omitted.* [2] remedylesse. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *the omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] xviii. edit. 1559. [5] mencyoned. edit. 1542. 1559.

which

which Mercia or Mercherike conteynyd Huntyngdonshyre, Hertfordshyre, Glowcetyr shyre, with dyuers other, and was grettest & largest of all the other, & was closed in the weste syde with the ryuer of Dee, stretchynge to Chestre & Seuarne, & so to Shrouesbury & Brystowe; in the eest it was closyd w̄ the see occean, in ẏ south with Thamys vnto Lōdon, and in the north w̄ the ryuer of Humbir, & had his begynnynge vnder the forenamed Penda, as thaccorde of dyuers auctours witnessyn, in ẏ yere of our Lordes incarnacion. vi.C.xxvi. & after the firste commynge of Hengiste. C.lxxvi. yeres. Albeit that of ẏ first kyng thereof dyuerse opynyons there been, wherof a cause maye be for so moch as this lordshyp, ī ẏ first begynnyng, was departed in. iii., ẏ is to sey, the first was callyd eest Mercia, the. ii. was named myddell Mercia, & ẏ. iii. west Mercia; but after it was broughte to one pryncipate, & called Mercheryke, or of some wryters, myddell Englande. Of this lordship ẏ first cristen kynge was called Wolpherus, ẏ was the sone of ẏ forenamed Penda; but of all ẏ kynges of this kyngdome of Mercia, which were. xviii. in nombre, as testifyeth Polycronica, Offa was of mooste myght & powar, as after shall more playnly appere. This lordshyp endurid, to recken moost certeynly, in[1] ẏ yere of our Lorde. viii.C.lxxvi. in ẏ whiche yere Alurede or Alhered, thā kyng of West Saxons, ioyned it vnto his owne kyngdome, which by ẏ accōpte shuld be. CC.l. yeres. Albeit ẏ sōme accompt ẏ enduraūce therof or[2] the laste yere of Burdredus ẏ was put out by the Danes, by whiche rekenynge it shuld thā endure. iiii. yeres lesse; & some wryters acōpte ẏ terme therof whyle the tyme of Edwarde called the eldir, which after ẏ deth of his fader Alured, put out ẏ Danes from the sayde lordeshyppe, & ioynyd it agayne to Westsaxō, & by ẏ accompt it shuld laste. CC.iiiixx. yeres & odde; ye shall also vnderstonde ẏ in this kyngedome reygned dyuerse holy kynges, whiche nowe be allowed by the churche for seynţes, as Offa, Kenelphus, Kenelmus, & other, as hereafter somedeale shall appere.

I haue seen an olde regestre within the churche of Paulis of London, wherein is conteyned many thynges concernynge the firste foundacion of that churche, with certeyn olde cronicles of this lande: amonge the which it is there notyd, that in the tyme & season whan this Cadwan was kynge or ruler of the Brytons, that ī the same moment & tyme reygnid ī dyuerse parties of this lande, thyse vii. kyngdomes* vnder wrytten: as first, Sebertus that thā was kyng of Est Saxons now Essex; Redewaldus was than kynge of Estanglis now Norff. & Suff.; Ethelbertus was thā kyng of Kent; Ethelwaldus was kyng of Southsex; Kynegilsus was kynge of Westsaxōs; Pēda was kyng of Mercherek; & Ethelfridus was then kynge of the north coūtrey or Northū. all whiche regestre this warke accordith with, if the storyes of this Cadwan, Careticus and Cadwall be duly serchyd.†

¶ Capitulū. C.xxx.

LEtte vs than retourne to the perfourmaūce of the story of Cadwan, & of suche dedes as were doon ī his dayes. About ẏ. xiiii. yere of his reygne Quichellinus ẏ was brother vnto Kyngylsus, & w̄ hym, as before in the. C. &. xxviii. chaptre is touchyd, ruled there[3] Westsaxons, sent vpon an Ester daye a swerdeman to sle Edwyn kyng of Northūbirland. This swerdmā came to a citie besyde ẏ water of Darwēt ī Derbyshyre & wayted his tyme, & lastly, fand ẏ kyng smally accōpanyed, & entended to haue ron thorough ẏ kyng w̄ a swerde enuenemyd; but one Lilla ẏ kynges trusty seruaunt, disgarnysshed of shylde or other wepyn, to defende his mayster, start betwene ẏ kyng & the swerde, & was stryken thoroughe ẏ body & dyed, and the kyng was woūdyd w̄ the same stroke, and after he woūdyd the thyrde, & was taken & cōfessyd by whom he was sent to werke ẏ treason. That[4] other knyght ẏ was secondly woūdyd dyed, & the kyng laye after longe syke or he were holyd. And the same nyght folowyng the quene was delyueryd of a doughter, ẏ which kyng Edwyn causyd to be christened of Paulinus bisshop, in token ẏ he wolde fulfylle all suche promyse as he before had made, & she was named Enfleda & halowed vnto God. And after Whitsontyde the kyng beyng scantly hole of ẏ woūd, assemblyd his houst & made toward ẏ kynges of Westsaxon, & after a great & soore fyght, venquysshed theym & theyr hoost; but Edwyn for all this victory & other thynges gyuen to hym of God, as he ẏ was ī welth[5] of ẏ world, forgate his former promesse, & had lytle mynde thereof, except ẏ he by the prechynge of Paulinus forsoke his maumentry, & for his excuse sayd, ẏ he myght not clerely renye his olde law ẏ his foreſaders had kept so longe, & sodeynly be cristened wout auctoryte & good aduyse of his coūccyll. He also re-

[1] till. [2] to. [3] the. [4] the. [5] helthe.
* kynges. † This is inserted in the text of the work in the later editions.

ceyuyd

ceyuyd letters of exortacion & cōfort to take ŷ baptym frome the. v. Bonyface, than Pope[1], the which also sent to ŷ quene lyke letters, with a myrrour garnysshed with syluer and a combe of iuory, and for ŷ kynge a shyrte wrought in sondrye places with letters of golde. But all this preuayled nothynge, [then Paulinus made his speciall prayers to God, and badde it shewed to hym by reuelaciō of ŷ token ŷ was gyuē to Edwyn in tyme of his trybulaciō; after ŷ which knowlege badde, Paulinus shortlye after came vnto the kynge, and laying his hande on his heed, frayned of hym whether he had eny lyke remembraūce of eny lyke token: the whiche whan the kyng had confessyd, the holy bisshop sayd vnto hym, " Lo thou hast ouercomen thyne enemyes, and wonne thy kyngdome, & holdest it in mooste large wyse, therefore parfourme thy promesse, and be trewe to hym that hath holpen the."]² It was not longe after that the kynge assemblyd his counceyll, and by theyr agrement he was of the sayde Paulinus, bysshop of Yorke, baptyzed within the sayde cytie, the. xi. yere of his reygne, & ŷ yere of grace, as testyfyeth Guydo. vi.C.xxvii. He was the first christen kynge that reygned in that cuntrey; and after hym many of his lordes and subiectes were also christened of ŷ sayd Paulinus, and ŷ flamyns, or byshoppes of theyr false goddis, were turned to Crystis faythe, in token wherof they armed theym as knyghtes, & bestrode good horses, where before, by theyr law, they myghte vse noone armoure, nor ryde but onely on a mare.

A pressande.

Fol. lxvi.

Edwyn baptyzed.

From ŷ tyme forthwardys, by ŷ terme of. vi. yeris, durynge the lyfe of kyng Edwyn, Paulinus cristened cōtynually in both prouynces of Deyra, & in Brēnicia, in ŷ ryuers of Gweuy & Swala, whiche he vsed for his fontes, & prechyd in ŷ shyre of Lyndesey, & buylded there a church of stone at Lyndecoln or Lyncolne. In this tyme was so great peace in ŷ kyngedome of Edwyn ŷ a womā myght haue goon from one towne to an other wout grete or noyaūce; & for ŷ refresshyng of wey goers, this Edwyn ordeygned at clere wellys, cuppes or dysshes of iron or brasse to be fastened to postys standyng by the sayd wellys sydes, & no man was soo hardy to take awey those cuppes, he kept so good iustyce. And with ŷ he was knyghtlye of his dedes: he was ŷ first ŷ wanne this ile of Eubonia, now called the ile of Man, & by his meanes Orpewaldus or Corpewaldus, the sone of Redwaldus, kynge of Estanglis or Norphis, to whome, as before is touchyd, Edwyn had fled for socoure, was cōuertyd to the true feyth, and a great parte of his men with hym. And for this Edwyn excellyd ŷ other kynges, they enuyed at hym, and specyally Penda kynge of Mercia, the which excyted Cadwan kyng of Brytōs ageyn hym, soo ŷ they two assemblyd a great hoost agayne Edwyne, & lastly, met in a place called Hatfelde, and after sharp fyght on both sydes, there Edwyn was slayne, whan he had reygned ouer the Northumbirs. xvii. yeres, in ŷ yere of our Lord, as sayth Guydo. vi.C.xxxiii. When theyse two kynges, Cadwan or Cedwalla & Penda, had thus ouercomen the kyng, & hym slayne, & moche of his people, they became so cruell to men of ŷ countrey, ŷ they destroyed therin moche people, as men, women, & chyldren, as well relygious as other; wherefore Paulinus tharchebysshope beholdynge theyr cruelnesse, tooke with hym the quene & Enfleda hir doughter, & fled by water into Kent, & for ŷ bysshopriche of Rochestre was than voyde by reason ŷ Romanus, ŷ last bishop was a dreynte Paulyne was there ordeyned & made bysshop of ŷ see, & there dyed, & also lefte there his paull. And as affermeth Policronicon and other, the archebisshoppes see of Yorke was voyde. xxx. yeres after. But ŷ quene which was namid Etherberga, became a menchon, & saylled into Gallya or Fraunce, where in an Abbey called Brydgēce or Briggēce, she lyued an holy lyfe & dyed: & hir doughter Enfleda contynued hir profession, & was afterwarde abbesse of Strēshalt in the vale of Whitby. After the deth of Edwyne, Osricus ŷ was ŷ sone of Elfricus, which was brother of Ethelfridus, toke vpon hym to be kyng of Deyra; & Eaufricus ŷ eldest sone of Ethelfryd, as before in ŷ. C.xxviii. chaptre is touchyd, was made kyng of Brennicia, the which turnyd them both from Crystes feythe, & became mys-

Cuppes of iron.

[Cap. 5. li. 9.]

Mors Edwini.

[1] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in the edit. of* 1542. 1559.

creaūtis,

creatis, for the which Goddis wrethe fell vpon them in short whyle after, for they were bothe slayne in the yere folowyng of ỹ forenamed Cadwan & Cedalla[1]; & whā theyse sayd. ii. kynges were thus slayne, Oswalde the seconde sone of Ethelfryd began his reygne ouer the prouynce of Brēnicia, as chife of that kyngdome of Northūbirlande, & had the rule of Deira in lyke wyse, wherof whā Cadwan or Cedwalla was ware, gatheryd[2] his Brytons, & thought to sle Oswalde as he had before slayne his brother Eafricus: but Oswalde, whā he was warned of ỹ great strength of this Cadwā, he made his prayers to God, and besought hym mekely of helpe to wstāde his enemyes, [& or he yode to prayer, he arerid a crosse of tree, before the which he knelyd a long whyle, ī a feeld, which long after was callyd Heuynfeeld, and at this daye is had in great worshyp. That place is nere vnto ỹ towne or church of Agustalde, in Brennicia, the whiche church was there buyldyd by Oswalde after the wynning of that battayle, & of the spones of ỹ crosse ar tolde manye wounders, the which I ouer passe.][3]

Than after Oswold had prayed for ỹ saluaciō of his people, ỹ. ii. hosts met ī a feelde named thā Denysborne, or Denyslake, where was foughten a stronge batayll, but fynally Cadwan, whiche Polycronyca nameth Cedwalla, was slayne, & his people chasyd, which were farre excedynge the nombre of Oswoldus hoost, whan the sayd Cadwā had reygned ouer ỹ Brytons, after moost accorde of wryters, and also of tyme, by ỹ terme of. xxii. yeres; leuyng after hym a sone, as affermyth Gaufryde, named Cadwallus, or Cadwalyn. Victoria Oswoldi.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxxi.

DAgobertus, the first of that name, & sone of Clothayre, before rehercyd, begān his reygne ouer the hole monarchy of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde. vi. C. xxxi., & the. xviii. yere of Cadwan, thā kynge of Britōs; the which, at tyme of his faders dethe, was in the prouynce of Austracy, geuen to hym by his fader, as before is shewid in the. C. xxvii. Chaptre precedyng. But anon as worde came to hym of his faders disease[4], he sped hym, well accōpanyed, into Fraūce, & whē he was comen to the citie of Reynes, thyder came vnto hym many nobles, as well out of Burgoyne as out of other partyes of Fraūce, & dyd vnto hym fcauty & homage. It is shewed. C. xxvi. chaptre of this werke, how Clothayre had by his secōd wyfe a sone named Heybert, ỹ which claymed his part of the kyngdome of Fraunce, & for the same began to make some styrynge; but by the good polycy & meanes of one Brunulphe, vncle to the sayd Haybert, & brother to Sichild his moder, the matier was appeased; so that he had vnto hym certeyne citeys assyngned, with landes ī Quyan[5], wh the which he was cōtentyd, & ordeyned Tholouse for the chefe cytie of his pryncipate. And after that peace confermed, Dagobert was in quyete by the terme of. iii. yeres folowyng: but the. iiii. yere the Gascoynes rebellyd agayne hym, the whiche, by his māhode he shortly subdued. And whan he had set his lande in a quyetnesse, [he called to mynde the promyse before tyme whiche he had made to seynt Denys & his felawes, wherfore he with great solempnyte caused the grounde where theyse holye bodyes lay to be openyd, and with great reuerence to be taken vp; vpon ỹ which bodyes he fande fresshely wryten eyther of theyr names, so that he myght perfyghtly knowe that one from that other, & thē caused them to be layde in a sumptuous shryne, & ouer them, in the sayd place, he buylded a royall mynstre of lyme and stoone, and couered it with platis of syluer ī stede of sclate or leade, & assignid vnto the preestes & mynystres therof great & ryche possessions: and for so goodly a temple ỹ was of suche beautye outwarde, shulde not lacke of garnysshyng within, he therefore causid hāgynges to be made to hange within the same temple, of ỹ which tapettis, suche as seruyd for the quere were garnysshed and set with dyuerse stones in those dayes vsed, and by the foresayde place or shryne, where the holy martyrs bodyes lay, he ordeyned a cheste, or trunke of clene syluer, to thentent ỹ all suche iuellys and ryche gyftes as were offryd to the holy seyntis, shuld therein be Frācia. Translacio sancti Deonisii et aliorum. *Fol. lxviii.*

[1] Penda. [2] he gathered. [3] The edit. of 1542 and 1559 merely say "for the saluacyon of hys people." [4] decease. [5] Guyan.

kepte to the vse of the mynystres of the same place: and ouer that endowyd ỹ same place with many great lyberties and pryuyleges. And this place thus fynysshed, he causyd a crosse of golde to be made, and to be garnisshid with most precious stones of a great bygnesse and value, and causyd it to be set ouer the high auter, within the sayd monastery. This trāslacion of theyse blessyd sayntes shulde be, as witnessith ỹ Frensh Cronycle, in the. v. yere of ỹ reygne of ỹ sayd Dagobert, which made the yere of our lorde. vi. C. xxxvi. the which whā he had clerely w̄ all honour & due reuerēce fynysshed,][1] he then vysyted & circued his lande ī ministryng iustyces to all persones, and ordeyned such meanes as byllys of supplicacion, and other, that the causes & matiers of poore men myght come to his knowlege; by meane whereof he gate great loue and fauoure of his comons. But amonge his many notable dedes, one dede by hym was cōmyttyd, the which somedeale longe after blemysshyd his honour: and that was, that he without iudgement, or processe of the lawes, causyd to be slayne the forenamed Brunulphe, vncle vnto Haybert his brother, for malyce that he bare to hym for the fauourynge of the sayde Heybartis party. After this, the kynge was deuorsyd from his wyfe named Gertrude, for that she was bareyne, & brought forthe no frute; & was after maryed to a fayre wenche named
A marueil. Ranetrude, of ỹ which he receyuyd at conuenyent tyme after, a sone ỹ was named Sigebert. [Of this chylde it is tolde, that whan he was brought to the holy bissop Amandus to be confermed, beyng than of the age of. xl. dayes, and the bisshop sayde ouer hym certeyn prayers concernyng thoffyce of confirmacion, and noon of ỹ circūstauntis, by neglygēce, gaue an-
Primi. swere vnto the bysshop, at conuenyent tyme ỹ chylde, by dyuyne powar, sayd Amen in so lowde maner, that all the people aboute standynge myght well vnderstande it; wherof the bisshop and all ỹ people were howgely ameruaylid.][2] Thā it folowith, this Dagobert all this passe tyme was ruled by a noble mā of Fraūce, or more propirlye of the prouynce of Austracy, named, in the Frenshe booke, seynt[3] Arnulph, bishop of Mees; and by Pepyn, which was ruler of the kynges paleys; by which season, he, & also his lande were in great honour & prosperyte, but[4] the deth of the forenamed Arnulph, which dyed about the season that the kyng began to alter & chaūge his condicions to the hurte of his commons and of his lande.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxxii.

DAgobertus ỹ before exersysed hym in all honour & vertu, began now to exercyse in iustyce & tyrannye, in pyllynge his cōmons by exacciōs and trybutis, in suche wyse, that those that dwellid in the outward partyes of his realme, & nere vnto the Turkys & other straūge londes and naciōs, were fayner to be vnder the rule of theym than of theyr owne naturall prynce: [but how soeuer he bare hym agayne his subiectes in pyllynge and takyng from them what he myght, yet he euer had such a fauour to Seynt Denys, that he gaue to hym what he myght purchace, were it with right or otherwyse; cōtynuyng which seasō he
Crudelitas. went into ỹ coūtre of Poytiers, & robbyd and spoylyd there ỹ church of seynt Hyllary of many great iewellys, and after toke with hym ỹ bodye of that blessyd man, and causyd it to be had into the monastery of seynt Denys, and there shrynyd hym:][5] and that doone, he destroyed the countrey of Poytiers with iron and fyre, and the wallys of the cytie he made playne with the grounde, and for the more cruelty or terroure to the people to be shewyd, he eryd the stretis of the sayd cytie, and sewe theym with salte, for a sygne and token that he wolde haue that cytie subuertyd for euer, ỹ which ruyne to this daye appereth; for there where ỹ olde cytie stood, is nowe callid the olde Poytiers, & where that other standith nowe is callyd the newe cytie of Poytiers. The cause of this dystruccion of cytie and countrey, as saythe master Robert Gagwyne, was for that that the earle of Poytiers rebellyd agayne the kyng. Thus this man that whylome was a lambe, was now turnyd to a tygre, & ouer his cruelnesse he was gyuen to all sensuall luste of his body,

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] seynt, *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] Tyll. [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

in

in so moche, that where so he rode, he had folowynge hym a cumpanye of strūpettis, besyde such as he kepte in dyuerse placis of his realme, appareylyd and fed lyke vnto quenes. For this rule & other vycis vsyd by ỹ kyng, Pepyn, thā master of the paleys, was put in great wyte and blame of dyuerse lordis of the lande, thynkynge that by his coūceyll & sufferaunce, the kynge was so lad & guyded. This was the first Pepyn: ỹ seconde was master of ỹ paleys in the[1] tyme of the seconde reygne of the firste Theodoricus, and was surnamed Vetulus and Breuis, whiche is to meane olde & lytle; and the. iii. Pepyn was sone of Carolus Marcellus. The firste Pepyn was graundfadir to the seconde by the moders syde, and the. ii. was graūsyr to the. iii. by the mannes syde, whiche. iii. Pepyn was, by hole assent of Frenshemen, ordeygned kynge of Fraūce, as after shall appere, & was fader vnto the kyng named Charlis the great, and emperour of Rome: all which Pepyns discendyd of ỹ bloode of Austracy, & had great possessions w̄ in ỹ prouynce. Whan ỹ fore named Pepyn vnderstode ỹ grudge & murmour of ỹ lordes, whiche they bare agayne hym for the kynges demeanour, he by theyr aduyces tooke vnto hym a nother great lord, named Martyn, to be vnto hym assistent, & ouer ỹ he causyd ỹ blessyd man[2] Amādus to accōpany ỹ kyng; by whose coūceyll the kynge somedeale refraynyd hym frome vyce, but not all as ỹ good bysshop hym aduertyzed. In this tyme Heybart ỹ kynges halfe brother dyed, & also his sone shortly after, named Chylperiche, by reason of whose dethes ỹ lordship & coūtrey of Tholouse, fell to ỹ possession of Dagobert. It was not longe after ỹ a people called Asclauons, or Sclauons, made warre vpō ỹ coūtrey of Austracy; thyse also are callyd Bulgaris, & ioyne vpō a parte of Austracy: of thyse tydynges whan Dagobert was lerned, he sped hym into Austracy, & there assembled a myghty hoost of knyghtes, and soo sped hym tyll he came nere his enemyes; but the sayd Sclauons hauyng knowlege of ỹ kynges great hoost, aggreed, by oratours to hym sent, to contynue the trybute that they before tyme payde, the whiche was yerelye fyue. C. oxen, where thorough ỹ warre was appesyd for that tyme, and newe allyaūce vpon both partyes cōfermed. After the which peace thus stablysshed, the kynge[3] his sone Sigebert as kyng & ruler of that lordship of Austracy, assygnynge to hym ỹ bisshop of Colayne, named Cōbert[4], & the erle Palatyne, named Agasyle, to be his tutours and rulers contynuynge his yeres of youthe; and that doon ỹ kyng retourned into Fraunce, where, soone after, he receyuyd of his wyfe a sone, & named it Clodoueus, the whiche of many wryters is called Lodouicus, or Lowes. To this Lowes, the fader, at couenable tyme after, gaue the coūtyes of Burgoyne, and Nenstria or Normādy. Then ỹ kyng graūted to the house of seynt Denys a fayre, to be kepte yerely in ỹ moneth of Iuyn in a feelde nere vnto the sayde monastery, and that no marchaunt of Paris, nor good towne thereabout, shuld sell any marchaundise, but only in ỹ fayre, with many other customes, to the great auauncement of that house. And after the kyng had subdued the Gascoynes & the Brytōs of Armoryca, or lytle Brytaygne, [he then assemblyd a multitude of bisshoppes, for to dedicate & halowe the monastery of seynt Denys ī moost solempne wyse, where a great miracle was shewyd of the clēsyng of a lepar, or lazar, that durynge the nyght laye within the sayde churche, and there beyng in his deuoute prayers, sawe our sauyour Cryste accompanyed with Peter and Paul; & also the holy martirs seynt Denys, w̄ his. ii. felawes entre ỹ churche by one of the wyndowes, and after halowyd the sayd churche, which after came to ỹ sayd lazar, & cōmaundyd hym to shewe vnto the bysshoppes, ỹ he ī propre parsone had halowed ỹ sayd church, & for a token & knowledge of ỹ same he had receyuyd his helthe; & for more recorde of ỹ trouth of this matier, our sauyoure Cryst, as witnessith master Robert Gagwyn, & also ỹ Frēsh Cronycle, drewe of ỹ skynne of ỹ face of ỹ sayde lazar, & threwe it agayne a stone where it remaynith at this day to be seen; the which token, whā Dagobert & his bisshoppes vpō ỹ morne after behelde & sawe, they beynge greatly ameruayled last[5] of any forther busynesse touchyng the dedyfy-

Pepyn the firste.

Sanctus Amādus.

Fol. lxviii.

Dedicacio.

Mirum.

[1] that, edit. 1533. 1542. [2] blessyd man, *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] the kyng made. [4] Cunbert. [5] laſt, edit. 1533.

ing of ỹ sayd churche; for this myracle great concourse of people yerely in the. vi. kalendis of Marche cõmith with great deuocion vnto ỹ sayd monastery, there makyng theyr oblacions, fermly beleuyng ỹ the sayd churche was halowed with Crystis owne hande. Whan Dagobert had this busynesse ẇ other perfytyd & endyd,[1] he then callyd a great counceyll of his lordes spirituell & temporell at his cytie of Biguage, where he beyng set atwene his. ii. sõnes, Sigebert & Clodoueus, he made a longe preposicion & oracion cõcernynge ỹ allegiaũce which he exortyd his lordes to owe & bere to hym for ỹ terme of his lyfe, & after tyll[2] his. ii. sõnes there beyng present; and then he exortyd his. ii. sõnes charitably to loue, & that they shulde in mooste fraternall wyse cõtynewe theyr lyues. The whiche preposycion fynysshed, he there in ỹ presence made his
Testamẽtum. testament, ỹ before he had causyd to be writtẽ in. iiii. sondrye skynnes endentyd, to be rad, & thã sealyd ẇ certeyne of theyr sealis, wherof ỹ one he wyllid to be kept in the tresory of Seynt Denys; the. ii. in the tresoury of the cytie of Lyons; the. iii. in ỹ tresory of Mees ĩ Austracy, which now is named Loraygne; & the. iiii. in ỹ kynges tresory. And when ỹ kyng had orderyd his matiers somedeale to his purpose, he dissoluyd this coũceyll, & cõmaũdyd euerych estate vnto his owne coũtrey, & after was somewhat busyed with ỹ rebellyon of ỹ forenamed Brytons & Gascoynes, & such other matiers, ỹ whiche I passe ouer for lengthe of tyme. Then ỹ kyng lastly was syke of ỹ flyx, and was brought by his desyre vnto the monastery of Seynt Denys, where after he had cõmytted his wyfe Nantyld, with hir sone Clodoueus, vnto the guydynge and tuyssyon of a noble man of Fraũce, & then master of his paleys, named Agaynus, he dyed; whẽ he had reygned. xiiii. yeres, & was buryed with great pompe in ỹ forenamed monastery.

[Of this Dagobert is reportyd, by myn auctor, & also in the Frenshe Cronycle, besyde
Visio. other wryters, that an holy ancre or heremyte of Fraũce, beinge in his medytacions shulde see a company of feendes, which beynge in the see shuld haue among them in a bote the soule of Dagobert, & were cõueyinge it toward peyne; but this spirite ceasyd not to cry, & to call to seynt Denys & his felawes for helpe, ỹ which lastly came clad ĩ whyte vestemẽts, & delyueryd ỹ sowle from ỹ peynes of his enemyes, & conueyed it vnto euerlastynge ioy, as more at lẽgth, & ẇ more circũstaũce, it is declared ĩ ye bookys beforesayd.][3]

¶ Capitulũ. C. xxxiii.

Anglia. [Cap. 5. li. 9.] CAdwallus, or Cadwalyne, the sone of Cadwan, lastly spokẽ of in ỹ Cronycle of moch Britaygne, as testyfyeth Guydo, Gaufryde, and other, began his reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of Crystis incarnacion. vi. C. &. xxxv. & the firste yere of the first Dagobert, then kynge of Fraunce; and also the. xxii. yere of Kyngylsus & Quichillinus, then kynges of Westsaxon. This Cadwall was stronge and myghty, & warryd strongly vpon the Saxons nere vnto hym, and wan from them both castellys & townes, and draue theym backe into ỹ lande towarde London; wherof heryng, Penda, kynge of Mercia, he assemblyd his Saxons, and made towarde Cadwall, but he was in ỹ ende distressyd, & fayne to seche and purchace the fauoure of Cadwall, and lyue vnder his tribute. This Penda after this was in great fauour with Cadwall, in so moch that he tooke party with Cadwall
Berinus secũdus. agayne his other Saxon kynges, as after shall appere. About this tyme, Kyngylsus, one of the kynges of Westsaxons, was, by ỹ doctryne of that blessyd man Berinus, conuertyd to the ryght beleue, & crystenyd of hym at the cytie of Dortyke, or Dorchestre, & Oswalde, kynge of Northũbirlande, was his godfader, & weddyd his doughter afterwarde, & thã ỹ cytie was geuyn to ỹ bysshop, to the ende ỹ he shuld there ordeyne his see, where ỹ sayd Berinus sate. xiiii. yeres after, & there was buryed, tyll Beda bysshop of Wynchestre trãslatyd his body to ỹ cytie of Wynchestre. Albeit ỹ ỹ chanons of Dorchestre sayen ỹ ỹ sayd bodye of holy Beryne was not takẽ thens, but a nother in the stede of hym, & yet in tokẽ therof a beer of wõder warke, stãdith at this day ouer ỹ graue where ỹ holy man was firste buryed. It shulde seme that this cytie of Dorchestre is nowe callyd

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] to. [3] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

Dorset.

Dorset. This See was, in the tyme of Wylliam Cõquerour, chaũged to Lyncolne. About this tyme Sigebertus, or after some, Segebertus, kynge of Eastenglande, or Norfolke, which reygned there nexte his brother Corpwaldus, ordeygned letters to be lernyd, & set scolys in dyuerse placis of his kyngdome; and ordeygned ouer them scole masters & pedagoge, as he sometyme hadde seen in Fraunce. The which Sigebert was cõuertyd to Crystis feyth by ỹ doctryne of an holy man, named Felix, ỹ which he was firste acqueynted w̃ in Fraũce or in Burgoyne; the which Felix came, soone after ỹ acqueyntaunce, into Eastanglia, or Norfolke, where ỹ kynge made hym bysshop of Dũwych, now called Thetford. Lastlye the kynge betooke his kyngedome vnto his neuewe Egritus, & became a mũke ī an abbey which he hymselfe buyldid: but whē Pẽda, kyng of Mercia warrid after ī ỹ coũtrey, ỹ sayd Sygebert, was, agayn his wyll, pullyd out of ỹ sayd monastery, & went in armes, or, as some testyfy, vnarmed, w̃ a whyte rodde ī his hand nycely, & so was slayn, & well nere all his hoost of knyghtes ỹ came w̃ hym to ỹ feeld. By this rehersayll apperith here discorde of wryters, of the begynnyng of this sayd kyngedome of Estanglis: for if it were true, ỹ this began, as witnessith Polycronicõ, in ỹ. iiii. chapter of his. v. booke, in ỹ yere of grace. iiiiC. lxxx. &. xii. as before also I haue shewed, in ỹ. lxxx. and. xvi. chapitre' of this werke, than myght it not aggree w̃ cõueniẽcy of tyme, ỹ this Sygebert, or Sebert, shulde reygne as kynge at those dayes now myndyd. Wherefore, ỹ sayng of Guydo is more cõcordaunt, whiche shewith this kyngedome to haue his begynnyng in ỹ yere of grace. v.C. lxx. as in ỹ ende of ỹ foresayd chaptre, it is there shortly touchyd. Than it folowith in ỹ story; after ỹ deth of this Sigebert, Anna was made kynge of Estanglis: & durynge the reygne of Sigebertus, befell ỹ wondir ỹ is tolde of ỹ holy man, Furceus; as is shewyd at length, in ỹ. xiii. chaptre of ỹ. v. boke of Policronicõ, aforesayd; & in ỹ. xiii. tytle of ỹ. vi. chapitre of ỹ secõde parte of ỹ famous werke, callid Sũma Antonini. And about this seasõ, reygned, or began to reygne ỹ cursyd secte of ỹ detestable & false prophete Machomet: ỹ which, syn ỹ tyme hath so enfectyd, ỹ it hath enfectyd.[1] ii. pryncypall partis of ỹ worlde; as Azia, & Affrica; & ỹ more partye of ỹ. iii. named Europa; & dayly winneth vpon ỹ Cristẽ people, great lãdis & possessiõs. Aboute the. vii. yere of this forenamed Cadwall kynge of Brytons, reygned in Kent a Saxon kynge, named Ercõbertus; the which had ỹ pryncipate. xx. yeres nobly; & amonge other of his famous dedis, he reuyued and quickened agayn the fayth of Crist, ỹ in some placis of his kyngedome was sore appallyd: for he destroyed ỹ temples of false Goddis, thoroughe ỹ coũtrey, & ordeygned, by thaduyse of his clergy, ỹ tyme of Lent to be fastyd. He weddyd the doughter of Anna, kyng of Estanglis, named Sexburga, of whom he receyuyd a doughter, & named hir Eukengoda[2]; ỹ which, after, was a menchon, or nunne in ỹ abbey of Bridgẽce in Fraunce, before mynded: where Ethelburga the wyfe some tyme of Edwyn kyng of Northũbirlande, serued God, as in the. C. &. xxx. chaptre precedyng, it is shewed. And eyther of them was abbesse of ỹ same place. And thoughe at those dayes there were many abbeys ī this ile of moch Brytaygne, yet many bothe of men & of wemen saylid into other landes, as Fraũce & Burgoyne & other placis, because ỹ cõuersacion & lyuynge of those coũtreys were of more fame, & of perfeccion than was thã vsyd in this ile of Brytaygne. Aboute this tyme, as it were aboute the. viii. yere of Cadwall, dyed Kyngylsus, kyng of Westsaxons, whã he had reygned w̃ his brother, & alone. xxxi. yeres; and Kenwalcus his sone was kyng after hym: the which, in ỹ begynnynge of his reygne, wold not be cristened; & forsoke his wyfe ỹ doughter of Penda, & tooke to hym a nother: wherfore Penda, in aduengynge his doughter, gaderyd his hoost, & chasyd Kynwalcus out of his kyngdome, & kept hym thens. iii. yeres. By whiche season was Anna kynge of Eastanglis, & there cõuertyd to ỹ feyth of Cryste, & cristened of Felix aforenamed, thã bysshop of Dũwyke or Thetforde; and after, he recouered his kyngdome by ỹ ayde & assistence

Kyng made mũke.

Fol. lxiii.

Anna rex.

Inicij secte Machometi.

Penda rex.

[1] In the foure score and. xvi. & twenty chapter. edit. 1559.

[2] corrupted. edit. 1542, 1559.

[2] Eukendoga. edit. 1542, 1559.

sistence of the sayd Anna. Whā Kenwalcus was restoryd to his land, he made a bisshoppes see at Kaerguēt or Wynchestré, & ordeynid there a bisshop named Agilbert, a Frēsh man of byrth, but he was callyd out of Irelande. The which, whan he had sitten there a certeyn of tyme, he was put thēs, I ne wote for what cause; & in his place was
Wynchestre. set an other, named Wyn. Of this Wyn, as sayth Policronicon, ŷ towne of Wynchestre toke ŷ name, as he declarith ī ŷ. liii. chaptre of his first boke, as it were, Wynnes cytie. But he was also put thens, & then was Leutherius bisshop; & after Leutherius, succedyd Cedda; & after, Theodorus, tharchebisshop of Caunterbury, ordeyned. ii. bisshoppes to ŷ prouynce of Westsaxon: ŷ one at Wynchestre, & to ŷ was subiecte. ii. coūtreys, Southrey & Southampshyre; & that other see he ordeygnyd at Shyreborne, to the which, were subiecte. vi. coūtreys; that is to sey, Berkshyre, Wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, Dorsetshyre, Deuenshyre, & Cornewall. But in Wyllyā ŷ Cōquerours tyme, ŷ see of Shyreborne was turnyd to Salesbury, ẅ the see of Rāmysburye. It was not longe after, ŷ Kenwalcus was warreyd ẅ the kyng of Brytons, ŷ which fought ẅ hym at a place, called White Gosheborough, and were of hym there ouercomyn; thā Cadwall assemblyd a newe hooste of Brytons, & met with Kenwalcus at a place called the hyll of Pent, where, after longe fyght, ŷ Brytons were put to flyght.

¶ Capitulū. C.xxxiiii.

YE haue harde before howe ŷ blessid man Oswall, ŷ sone of Ethelfryde, was ordeygned
[Ca. 6. li. 9.] kyng of Northūbirlande, ŷ which contynued his lyfe in iustyce & vertue as kyng by ŷ terme of. ix. yeres; but Penda, kynge of Mercia, ŷ to hym & to all Cristen men had great disdaygne & enuye, about ŷ. ix. yere of Cadwall, made warre vpon Oswald, & slewe hym
[* Burne.] in a feelde callyd* Meserfeelde ŧ where, after his dethe, God shewed for hym many myracles. But after one yere of his deth, Oswy his yonger brother recoueryd ŷ kyngdome, & buryed his heed ī the churcheyarde of Lyndesar: for ŷ bodye was conueyed by the Pagans & deuyded ī sundry peacis: [but it is sayd ŷ the heed is nowe at Durham, betwene seynt Cutbertus armes, & the other parte of the body, which was longe after foundyn, was had to the abbay of Burdeaux, by Ostrida, doughter of Oswye, & quene of Mercia, where straūgenesse was made by the ruler of ŷ hous for the receyte of those relykes, tyll a myracle or dyuyne tokē there was shewyd: but after the sayd body & bones were broughte to Glowceter, to an hous of chanos[1], & one of his armes is at Petirborowghe, hoole of flesshe & fell, as some haue & tellen.][2] Whan Oswy had a season rulyd his kyndome, he fand vnlefull meanes to sle Oswyn ŷ was kynge of Deyra: this Oswyn was the sone of Eaufricus, eldest brother of Oswald, which Oswyn was good of cōdicion, & therewith both meke and mylde. Whan this Oswyn was slayne by the concent of his neuew Oswy, then Oswy tooke to hym, as felowe of ŷ kyngedome, his broders sone, Odylwaldus, the sone of Oswald. This Oswald gaue vnto Cedda, bisshop of Wynchester, before namid, a grounde in a place of the north coūtrey in the hygh hylles Lastyngay[3], for to buylde vpō an abbey which he there buyldyd, & after there taught his brother Chymbyllus howe he shuld rule ŷ place. Penda kynge of Mercia, which forgate not the strengthynge & fauouringe ŷ Anna, kynge of Estanglis, had shewyd to Kenwalcus, his doughters husbonde, & his enemye, gaderyd a powar of knyghtes, and yode agayne the sayd Anna, & slewe hym in playne batayll. And ŷ same yere one Botulphus buyldyd an abbey besyde Lyndecolne or Lyncolne, in a place ŷ hyght Icanno. And as witnessith Beda ī the. iiii. chaptre of his thirde booke, this yere, which shuld be ŷ. xxi. yere of ŷ reygne of Cadwall, Penda, that of this former victory was supprysyd with great pryde, came with
[Ca. 6. li. 9.] his hoost into the boūdis of Northumbirlande, entendyng to sle Oswy, as before he had slayne his brother Oswalde: whereof whan Oswy was ware, he assemblyd his knyghtes, &
Fol. lxx. made towarde hym; and for affynite of maryage that was atwene theyr children, as after

[1] Chanons. edit. 1533. [2] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] called Lastyngaye.

shall

shall be shewyd, and other causes, Oswy offeryd to hym many great offirs, to thentent to haue had[1] refusyd ỳ batayll, & to haue had peace with hym. Whan Oswy perceyuyd the obstynacy & pryde of Penda, & sawe ỳ by no resonable offirs he myghte of hym wynne no peace; he sayd, sen this Paynym cannot receyue our gyftes & proffers ỳ we haue offeryd to hym, we shall offre thē to hym ỳ can receyue them. And anon, he made his auowe vnto God that if he myght haue victory of his enemyes, he shulde offre his doughter Elfleda to hym, with sufficient possessyons for to buylde. xii. abbayes; & after ioynyd in batayll with ỳ sayd Penda in ỳ coūtrey of Lædis, not farre frome Yorke, which was so sore foughtyn, ỳ the lyke thereof was not seen many yeres beforne. But fynally Pēda was slayne, &. xxx. of his chefe capitaynes with hym, & yet he had thryes the people ỳ Oswy had, and those ỳ scaped the shot, & the swerd, were for the more party drowned in ỳ ryuer of Wynwed, which was nere vnto ỳ place of ỳ batayll; & amōg the prysoners ỳ were takē at this feeld, the wyfe of Penda was one, & hir sonnes vncle, named Egfridus, was an other. Than Oswy yelded his thankes to God, & accordyng to his former promesse, he offryd his doughter Elfleda or Enfleda, of the age of. iii. yeres, vnto God, and tooke hir to ỳ lore[2] of Hylda, abbesse of Hertsey or Hertis ilande: & after ỳ the sayde Hylda remoued to the abbay of Stremshalte, in ỳ vale of Whitby. xxx. myle frome Yorke, where she was after abbesse. & ỳ sayd Elfleda also. And Oswy as he had promysed gaue lādes & rētys to buylde. xii. abbeys, wherof. vi. were in ỳ prouynce of Brēnicia, &. vi. in ỳ prouynce of Deira; & to one of Pēdaes sonnes, as he had dyuers[3] by accorde of wryters, that is to meane Wolferus, Weda, and Egfrydus, besyde other not myndyd. To this second sone Weda, Oswy had beforetyme maryed a doughter of his by consent of Penda his fader: ỳ whiche Weda, by helpe of Oswy, was made kynge of Southe Mercia, the whiche lordshyp is seueryd frome the North Mercia, by the ryuer of Trent, and cōteyned, by recorde of holy Beda, fyue. M. housholdis. This Weda also promysed, whan he maryed the sayde doughter of Oswy, ỳ he shuld become a Cristen man, the which he perfourmyd after the deth of his fadir; but whā he had scantly regned. iii. yeres ouer the sayd Southmarcis, he was by ỳ treason[4] of his wyfe slayne: and after that kyngedome fell to Wolferus the other brother, the which hadde weddyd the doughter of Ercombert kynge of Kent, named Ermenylda. This Wolferus was shortly after cristened, or before; so that he is accompted for the firste cristenyd kyng ỳ reygned in Mercia. This was fader to Kencredus, and to that holye virgyn and menchon Wereburga. And for it is longe that I spake of Kenwalcus kynge of Westsaxons, it is to be notyd that after he hadde ouercōmen the Brytons as before is shewyd, and at that tyme hadde not perfyghted the bysshoppes see of Kaerguent or Wynchestre, he then busyed hym thereabout; and accordynge to the wyll of Kyngylsus his fader, he gaue to the sustentacion of the sayde see, which laye[5] within. vii. myles of ỳ sayd cytie, as affermeth ỳ auctor of ỳ floure of hystoryes, & fynysshyd[6] somedeale to his purpose. But all thoughe[7] let no man thynke ỳ it was buylded as it is nowe, for nother ỳ nor none other ben at this day stādyng, monastery, paleys, nor other, but ỳ they haue ben sen those dayes alterid, & new chaunged, & some clerely throwen downe, & some newe buylded: albeit ỳ many stāde vpō theyr first foūdaciō, as this yet doth. Soone after ỳ Kenwalcus had endyd this werke, he made warre vpō Wolpherus of Mercia; but in that iourney fortune was not to hym fauourable, for he loste thereby, and was nothynge of his entent. It was not longe after, ỳ Ercōbert kynge of Kent dyed, & his sone Egbert was kynge after hym. ix. yere: and soone thereafter fell great mortalyte & sykenesse in this lande of Brytayne, ỳ which cōtynued and encreasyd more and more, duryng the lyfe of Cadwall now kyng of Brytons, & of Cadwaladyr his successoure, or sone, after some wryters: in ỳ which season, and begynnynge of this mortalyte & sykenesse, dyed many bisshopes in this lande, in so moche that Vital-

Oswy victoria.

Kenwalcus.

[1] had hym. [2] lorde. edit. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.* [3] instead of "And to one, &c." the subsequent editions read, "This forenamed Penda hadde dyuers sonnes." [4] by reason. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] all the lande whyche laye. [6] fynyshed yt. [7] althoughe. *omitted* in the later editions.

canus

Holy Benet.

canus than beyng pope,[1] ordeyned Theodorus archebisshop of Caũterbury to haue the rule of the churches of Brytayne. Somewhat before this tyme, Benet that was ī good fauour with kyng Oswy, and discendyd of ryche kynne, forsooke seruyce and howse, and all his kynred, and became Crystis seruaunt. He went. v. sythes to Rome and came agayne, and at euery tyme he brought with hym relykes or bokis of Crystys lore, and lastly he was made munke, & buyldyd. ii. abbeys, ẏ one ouer agayne that other vpon the ryuer of Wyre, ẏ rēneth in ẏ coũtrey of][2] This Benet was the firste that broughte the crafte of glasynge into this lande; [& he was abbot of both the foresayde abbayes][3]

Glasynge brought firste into Englande.

and tooke to his lore Beda, whā he was but. vii. yeres of age, & taughte hym durynge his lyfe. Of the vertue & pacience of this holy munke & bisshop, Benet, I myght make a longe rehersayll; but [for the holynes of his lyfe is declaryd in the legende of seyntes & other bookis of auctorite, here for lengthynge of the tyme I ouer passe it, and][4] wyll retourne agayn to Oswy, ẏ whiche when he had longe reygned ouer the Northumbirs, he made Cedda ẏ was abbot of Lastyngaye, archebisshop of Yorke, more by wyll than by skyll, and put out Wylfryda ẏ archebisshop, that he had before, out of ẏ see. But it was not long after ẏ Cedda was depryued of that dignytie by auctorite of tharchebisshope Theodorus, as he depryued dyuerse other that tyme, which came to theyr beneficis agayne the ordenaunce of the holy lawes of Crystis churche, and made hym by great instaũce after this, bisshop of West Saxons. And about the. xxx. yere of the reygne of Cadwall, Cissa, that was fader to Ine, kynge of West Saxons, buyldyd ẏ abbey of Abyndon. In theyse dayes the munkes and clergy of Brytaygne, set all theyr myndis to serue God, and not the worlde, ẏ herte and not the wombe; wherefore they where than had in great reuerēce and honoure, so that they were than receyuyd with all worshyp; and as they went by the stretys and wayes, men ẏ sawe them, wolde ronne to them and desyre them[5] blessynges: & well was hym that thā myght gyue vnto them possessions, and buyldyd to theym houses & churches. But as they encreased in ryches of the worldly treasour, so they discreacyd in heuenly treasour, as, in the dayes of Alurede, somedeale began, & sethen that tyme hath sprong, not all to the pleasure of God, wherof all is to be commytted to his pleasure. Then they plyed no thynge that was worldly, but gaue them to prechynge and techynge of the worde of our sauyour, & folowed the lyfe that they prechyd, by gyuyng of good exaumple; and ouer that they were so voyde of couetyze, that they receyuyd no possessions but if it were per force.

Monachorum vsus antiquus.

Fol. lxxi.

¶ Capitulū. C. xxxv.

[Polī. lib. 5. cap. 18.]

OSwy kyng of Northumbirland dyed, and Edfrydus his sone was kynge after hym xv. yeres. His fader had regned with his felawes Oswynus & Odilwald.[6] xxviii. yeres. Edfridus or Egfridus had to wyfe that holy woman Ethelfryd, that before was the wyfe of Tonbertus, prynce of the southe Eyrwayes, the which whan Egfrydus had holden. xii. yeres as his wyf, & myght not in ẏ whyle haue leue of hir to deale ẇ hir carnally for prayer nor great gyfte, he then gaue to hir lyeēce to be a menchion at Colud under Aebba ẏ than was awnte unto hym: & after she remeued to Ely, & there was abbesse, & lyued in great penaũce & abstynēce, & dyed there after she had been seuen yere abbesse. And Kenwaltus[7] kynge of Westsaxon dyed about the yere of the reygne of Cadwall kyng of Brytons the. xxxix. when he hadde reygned ouer thē. xxx. yeres; & his sone Kenewinus succedid hym, after ẏ Sexburga his mother, or wyfe to his fader, had ruled ẏ prouynce one yere. Cedda the bisshop of Westsaxons dyed, & his deken Wenfrede was his successour; & whā he was put downe, the abbot of Medāpstede, ẏ nowe is callyd Petirboroughe, was there bisshope after hym. Soone after this tyme dyed Wyna bisshop of

Feie cōstācia Ethelfryda casta.

[1] Bysshop of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.
[3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Theyr. edit. 1542. 1559.
[6] Odyswald. [7] Kenwalcus.

London, after whom was bisshop Erkenwalde, the which was brother to Ethelburga or Aliboroughe the menchen, & after abbesse of Berkyng ī Essex. This holy bisshop Erkenwalde foundyd the monasteryes of Chertsey in Southrey & Berkyng aforesayd, which place hath been preserued sen the first foūdacion, but ȳ of Chertsey was throwen downe by ȳ Danes, & reedifyed by Edgar kyng of Englond, as after folowed[1]. After ȳ deth of Wolpherus, kyng of Mercia, reygned his brother Etheldredus, and ȳ wyfe of Wolpherus named Ermenilda was made a menchon at Ely, & Wereburga his doughter was also made a nonne at Trikyngham, [& dyed at Hāburgā, where she laye in ȳ erth. CCC. yeres hole & sounde, & after that she was cōueyde to Chestre.][2] This Etheldredus kyng of Mercia hadde. iii. holy doughters, that is to saye, Mylburga, Myldreda, & Mylguyda, & a sone of great holynesse named Meresyn. But after some wryters, all theyse foresayde chyldren shuld be the chyldren of Wolpherus, & not of Etheldrede; & Wolpherus also had. ii. holy susters, named Kynedda & Kyneswyda, both nonnes, & buryed at Petirborough; there seynt[3] Ethelwolde buyldyd after an abbey of maydens. Ye haue harde before howe Wylfryd was put out of ȳ see of Yorke, wherfore he went to Rome, & complayned hym to Agathon the Pope, & was well allowed in some thynges; but the kyng & Theodorus had there such protectours & freendes that he retournyd without spedynge of his cause: wherfore he retourned vnto the South Saxōs and buyldyd an abbey in Silesey, and prechyd to the South Saxons. xv. yeres, & conuertid moch people, & [shewed there a great wōder; for where by ȳ terme of. iii. yeres before his cōmynge there fell no rayne vpō ȳ groūde, by his prayer God sent to them rayne, & the groūde began to burgen & wax grene, ȳ before was bareyne and dryed for lacke of water. He also][4] taught to them the crafte of fisshynge. Egfrydus kynge of Northumbirlande claymed ȳ lande ȳ Etheldrede kynge of Mercia helde, for the which dyuerse assēbles of treaty atwene them were had, but all were dyssoluyd without agremēt; wherfore eyther party gathered his strēgth, & met vpō a playne nere vnto ȳ ryuer of Trent, where was foughten atwene theym a longe and sharpe fyght, in the whiche, amonge a great nombre on bothe parties, was slayne ȳ brother of Egfryde, named Elswynus; but Edfryde or Egfryde had ȳ better. Than after this batayll meanes of peace were agayn treatyd, so ȳ fynally Edfrydē had great sūmes of money in recompencement of his brothers deth, and so restyd the sayd. ii. kynges accorded. [In this batayll was taken as prisoner a knyght of Egfryde, the which, after his takynge, was solde to one Fryson by ȳ knyghtes of Ethelfrydē; this Fryson to thentent to haue his prysoner the shortlyer redemed, kept him in bādes of iron, which prysoner had to his brother a preest & a vertuous man, ȳ for ȳ delyuere of his brother prayed daylye, by meane of whose prayers as oftē as ȳ sayd preest sange masse, so often were ȳ bandes of iron lowsyd from ȳ prysoner duryng the tyme of ȳ masse, the which so cōtynued tyll he was clerely delyuered, and his raūson payde.][5] And in this yere apperyd Stella comata, a blasyng sterre, which betokeneth deth or mortalyte of the people, & in the yere folowying dyed of the epedemye sikenesse, the holy abbesse of Ely, seynt Etheldrede: hir suster Sexburga, ȳ some tyme had ben wyfe to Ercobert kynge of Kent, was hir successour. And this yere also dyed Heida, the holy abbesse of Whytby, before spoken of; she was neuew to Edwyne, some tyme & lately kynge of Northūbirlond. In this abbey were also bretherne vnder the rule of Hylda, as theyse dayes been at Syon, vnder the abbesse there, wherof[6] sondry of them were made byshopes, as Besa, Wylfryde, and other. Amonge theyse bretherne was one named Cedman, a man of great perfeccion, the which by inspiracion was taught to make dyties & Saxōs[7] to moue men to deuocion, wherin he passyd all other at those dayes. Miraculū.

Soon after this tyme Theodorus, for dyuerse causes, kepte a synode or coūceyll of bysshoppes & other men of the church, at Hatfeeld, by auctoryte of which coūceyll he

[1] foloweth. [2] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. [3] Seynt, *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. [5] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542, and 1559. [6] Wherfore. [7] Songes.

deuyded ỹ prouynce of Mercia, ỹ Sexwolphus then rulyd alone, into. v. bysshopriches: ỹ is one to Chestre, ỹ second to Worcetyr, the thyrde to Lichefeelde, the fourth to Cedema ī Lyndesey, & the. v. to Dorchestre. About ỹ. xlvi. yere of the reygne of Cadwall, [Osricus, & vnder the kynge of Mercia buyldyd an abbaye at Glowceter, and he made Kenelborough abbot thereof',] Kenewynus, kyng of West Saxons, had occasyon of warre agayne ỹ Brytons, so ỹ they met nere vnto ỹ west see, where after a sharpe skyrmysshe ỹ Brytons were chasyd: & soone after Egfridus, kynge of Northūbirlande, made warre vpon ỹ Pictis or Scottis, because they fauourid greatly ỹ Estanglis agayne hym; but lastly by coloure or fleynge backe, they brought Edfryde into a streite among hyllys & moūtaynes, & slewe hym there with a great parte of his people, & after his deth, a bastarde brother of his named Alfridus notus, was kynge of Northūbirlād, & reygned there. xviii. yeres, as witnessith Wyllyā wryters[2] of storyes of kynges; and shortly after dyed Cadwall or Cadwalyn, kyng of Brytons, when he hadde reygned, as testifyeth Galfryde, Guydo & other. xlviii. yeres. But nother Polycronica, nor noone of ỹ other auctours of auctoryte, which Policronica[3] shewith any lyke actes of this Cadwall as Galfryde doth, nor yet ỹ he shuld be buried to ỹ terrour & fere of ỹ Saxōs, or an image of brasse set of hym vpon an horse ouer ỹ west gate of Lōdō, called Ludgate, or yet ỹ church of Seynt Martyn, there now stondyng, shuld be buyldyd by ỹ Brytōs, to ỹ ende to pray for ỹ sayd Cadwall & his frendes; or that Cadwaladrus, which of Beda is named Cedwalla, shulde be his sone, as of the sayde Gaufryde is affermed.

¶ Capitulum, C. xxxvi.

Fol. lxxii. Fráncia.

CLodoueus, ỹ yonger sone of Dagobert & of Nautylda his wyfe, began his ryegne ouer the myddell parte of Fraūce & other parte therof, in the yere of our Lord. viC. xlv. & the. x. yere of Cadwall, then kynge of Brytons: & his elder brother Sigebert was made kynge of Austracy or Lorayn, accordyng to the wyll of Dagobert theyr fader. This as before is sayd of some wryters, is callyd Lowes, the which was guydid by his mother & by the coūceyll of Agaynus, than master of his palays, to whom the fader had by his lyfe commytted hym: for he at this day was yonge of age & of discrecion: & shortly after he was made kyng, all suche porciō as belōged to the ryght of his brother Sigebert, which was ỹ thyrd of his faders treasour & iuellys, was to hym delyuered: which distribucion made he sped hym to Orleaunce, & thyder called to hym the lordes of Burgoyne, & receyuyd of them feauty & homage, & ordeyned there for his leutenaunte or deputye a noble Burgoynyō named Flantass',[4] & gaue to hym in mariage the neuew of his mother Nautylda, named Ranebert; and after with a due charge to hym gyuen for guydyng of the sayd countrey, sent hym and the other lordes into Burgoyne. But win a season of tyme after, Wilibaldus, a great man of birth and of myght, enuyed this Flātass' in suche wyse ỹ he had hym in disdaynynge, and began to dystourbe ỹ coūtrey, & the kynges peace; wherof herynge, Clodoueus in all hast cōmaūded ỹ sayd Wilibaldus to appere betore hym. But whyle Wilibaldus sent an erle & a bisshop to ỹ kynges courte to purchace hym frendys about the kynge, he was in ỹ whyle slayne by the guyle of his enemy Flantass'. About ỹ. iiii. yere of ỹ reygne of Clodoueus, dyed his mother Nautylda, a woman of great wisdome & of vertuous cōdiciō, and was honorably buryed by Dagobert hir husbond, in ỹ church of Seynt Denys. And sone after ensued such scarcety of corne, that whete & other graynes were at an excedyng pryce, & after ỹ rate of money nowe currant, a quarte[5] of whete was worth. ii. marks & a halfe, by meane of which scarcetie moche poore people were famysshed & dyed for defaute; wherefore ỹ kyng entēdyng a remedy for ỹ nedy people, causyd ỹ house or church of Seynt Denys, ỹ his faders before tyme had coueryd with plates of syluer, to be rased of & coueryd w̄ lede, & ỹ siluer to be distributyd amonge the poore comōs, to socoure them agayne ỹ great & huge famyne ỹ then reygned. Albe it

Great derth.

[1] *Omitted in the later editions.* [2] Wryter. [3] Policronica allegyd. [4] Flantās. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Quarter.

ỹ this

ỹ this dede was somedeale ẇstanden by Agulphus, abbot of ỹ place for ỹ tyme, about ỹ viii. yere of his reygne. The firste Pepyn ỹ than ruled the house of Sigebert kyng of Austracy dyed, & soone after dyed Agaynus master of ỹ paleys of Clodoueus; for which. ii. pryncis in eyther cõutreys that they rulyd, great dole and sorowe was for theym made: after ỹ deth of which sayd pryncis, a noble man & cosyn to Dagobert late kynge, was chosen master of the paleys with Clodoueus. Thus kynge Clodoueus, otherwise called Lowes, contynued his reygne in great peace & prosperyte, [tyll lastly it fell in his mynde that he wolde vysyte the sepulcre of Seynt Denys, where after he had doon certeyne obseruaũces & made his prayers, he wolde nedely se the holy relykes & hãdle them, ẇ ỹ doyng wherof it semed ỹ holy martirs were not cõtẽtyd, for immediatly ensued such a derknes, ỹ the kyng & all ỹ were about hym were ẇ it greatly astonyed, & aferde; in so moche ỹ the kynge lost ỹ use of reason, and went from hymselfe more than two yeres folowynge. It is wrytten of some auctours, that the kynge handelyd the body of Seynt Denys so rabbysshely, ỹ he brake one of his armes; but ỹ Frenshe booke & master Robert Gaygwyne sayen, that he disseueryd one of the armes frome the sayde holy body, the which he after, whã he was somdeale resteryd to his helth, closyd in golde and precious stoone, and resteryd it to the sayde monastery, and lyued vpon, ii. yeres folowyng ỹ he was amendyd, but not lyke vnto his former beyng, so ỹ][1] he lastly dyed whan he had regned syke and hoole, by ỹ terme of. xvi. yeres; not without vyce, as glotonys, lechery, and excedynge aueryce; and was buryed by his parentis in the monasterye forenamed, leuynge after hym. iii. sonnes named, Clotharius, Childericus, & Theodorich: after whose deth, his wyfe, named Batielde, becam a nonne in the monastery of Corbye, ỹ she before tyme had newelye renued or reediſyed, & endyd there in holy lyfe[2].

Mors primi Pipini.

Vindicta.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxxvii.

CLotharius, the eldest sone of Clodoueus, was ordeygned kynge of Fraunce in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. vi. C. lxii. and the. xxvi. yere of Cadwall, thã kyng of Brytõs: the which anon, as he was somewhat stablysshed, he made ỹ master of his palays, a mighty man, and tyrannous of condicion, named Eboryn,[3] as shall appere by his cõdicions ensuynge, whan the tyme conuenyent of ỹ expressement of them shall come; but of this Clotharius is lefte no thynge in wrytynge of worthy memory, except that the Frensh Cronycle sayth that he regned. iiii. yeres.

Francia.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxxviii.

THeodoricus, the seconde sone of Clodoueus, began his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in ỹ yere of grace. vi. C. lxvi. and the. xxx. yere of Cadwall, than kyng of Brytons, the which, by counceyll of his lordes, sent his yonger brother Childericke into the lordshyp of Austracy or Lorayne, to guyde that cõutrey, ẇ the ayde and assistence of Wolphanus, a noble man of that countrey: for Syge[4], laste kyng of that prouynce, was before this tyme dede, ẇoute heyre of his body. This Theodoriche gaue hym all to slowth and rest, so ỹ the gouernaũce of the realme was all in the powar of the master of the paleys, whiche was styll contynuynge the fornamed Eboryne, the which amonge other cruell dedis by hym done, he enprysoned the holy bisshop of Oston, called Leodegayr; and lastly, after many tourmentys, & vylanyes to hym doone, he raced his eyen out of his heed. This dede, with many other, to the kynges dishonoure, he comysed[5], which all were layde to the kynges charge; for soo moche as the kynge kepte mooste what his paleys, excepte that one season of the yere, in ỹ moneth of May, he shuld be brought with great pompe into a place where ỹ people shuld beholde hym, and gyue & offre vnto hym gyftes, and retourned vnto the paleys that he was broughte fro, & there to reste all

Tirannus

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] her lyfe. [3] Elboryn. edit. 1559. [4] Sigeberte. [5] "he comysed," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

ỹ yere folowyng. By meane whereof, Eboryn dyd what to hym was lykyng, and vexyd & trowbled the people greuously; wherfore, as[1] by one assent, ỹ lordes assẽbled theym, and by auctoryte depryued the kynge of all dygnytie, & closyd hym in a monasterye, there to contynue the resydue of his lyfe, when he had borne the name of a kynge, without execucion of ỹ acte thereunto belongynge. iii. yeres, and ỹ cruell Eboryn they exyled to Luxon or Luxunborgh, in the prouynce of Burgoyne, and not to departe thens vpon payne of his lyfe.

¶ Capitulum. C. xxxix.

Fol. lxxiii. CHildericus, or Hildericus, the thirde sone of Clodoueus, that was sent to rule the prouynce of Austracy, was ordeygned kynge of Fraũce, in the yere of grace. vi. C. lxix. & the xxxiii. yere of Cadwall, before named, of the which dede ỹ sayd lordes shortly after repended[2] them: for this Childeriche, which was yonge & of light maners, oppressid his subiectes greuously, & vsed the lawes of his progenitours after his pleasure & wyll, and wolde nothinge be aduertyzed nor ruled by Wolphanus, before named, ỹ which was, before tyme, assygnyd to hym for his counceyllour & guyde. But in augmentynge his malyce, he caused a nobleman of his realme, named Bolyde, wout gylt or trespace, or greuous offẽce doynge, to be bouden to a stake, & there betyn tyll he yelded the spirite; for ỹ which crueltye & other, the lordes with the comons murmuryd soore agayne hym, ferynge lyke punyssyon without deseruynge: wherfore they conspyryd agaynst hym, and moost specially two noble men of byrth & of myght named Iugebert & Amabert, which. ii. ẇ other, awayted theyr tyme & season whã they myght fynde tyme cõuenyent to bryng the kynge out of lyfe. And upon a day, whan the kynge, with his wyfe & small company with them, were in the wood in theyr disport and game, the sayde. ii. lordes, accõpanyed, purposely fell vpõ hym and slew hym there, and his wyfe also great ẇ chylde, the which ranne atwene hir lorde and them, to the entent to haue sauyd hir lorde and husbonde frome the dynt of the swerde. The whiche dede was doon whan the sayd Childerich had reygned ouer the Frenshemen, after mooste wryters, two yeres.

Crudelitas.

Necatur rex.

¶ Capitulum. C. xl.

THeodoricus before deposyd, was, by ỹ lordes of Fraũce, agayne restoryd to his former dygnytie, in the yere of our Lorde. vi. C. lx. &. xi. and ỹ. xxxv. yere of Cadwall, forenamed; wherof, whan Eboryn was warned, he anon, drew vnto the kynges presence, by whose fauoure, and his owne strength, he was agayn restoryd to his former dignytie and honoure; so that he was in lyke auctorite as he before tyme had been. Then he gaderyd to hym great strengthe, and chasyd Lyndesile than master of the paleys, vnto a place named Boccauile, & shortlye after was possessyd of the kynges treasory; after the whiche season this Eboryn, feynynge loue and amytie vnto the sayd Lendesyle, trayterouslye slewe hym. And whã Eboryn had thus delyueryd Lyndesyle, he thought he myght the better exercyse his olde tyranny and wilfull actes, so that then he exylid dyuerse prelatis & men of the church, & set in theyr placis such as hym lyked; wherof ỹ nobles of Fraunce beynge aduertyzed, & specially Martyn & Pepyn, two of the moost nobles of the region, they callyd to theym assistence to withstande the tyrannye of Eboryn, the whiche, if it myght be so sufferyd, shuld distroy the comon wele of the lande. Than this Pepyn, (which after ỹ rehersayle before made, in the. C. and. xxxii. chaptre, shuld be the seconde of that name, and surnamed Vetulus and Breuis: also yet by cõuenyency of the tyme, to me it semeth to be one man that ruled in the tyme of Dagobert; and now, albeit, the Frenshe Cronycle meanyth. ii. sondry persons:) with the forenamed Martyne assemblyd a great hooste, and gaue batayll vnto the sayd Eboryn; but that was to theyr harme, for they lost the feeld, and were coactyd to flee, ỹ one to the cytie of Laon,[3] &

Eborin the tyraunt.

Opinio auctoris.

[1] "As" *omitted in the later editions.* [2] repented, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Loan, edit. 1542. 1559.

that

that other to Austracy. And Eboryn, which amonge vsed his accustomyd treason, vnder dissymylyd loue, slewe ȳ sayd Martyn, as he before had slayne Lendesyle. In this tyme flowryd Harmefreditus, a nere kynnesman of ȳ holy bisshop Leodegayre, ȳ Eboryne before had martyred, as before is shewyd; the whiche Harmefreditus, beryng in mynde ȳ passiō of his sayde kynnesman, waytyd his tyme, & slewe ȳ sayd Eboryne; after whose deth discēsion grewe amonge ȳ Frenshemen for the admyssyon of a master of the paleys: albe it, that after ȳ sayde varyaūce, one Graccon was chosen & admytted; but it was longe[1] after, that, Gyllomarus his sone, put his father frome the rule therof. This after he had a whyle occupyed, he dyed of sodayn deth; after whō succedyd agayne his father Graccon or Garacon, the whiche also dyed shortlye after. Than began new questions amonge the nobles of Fraunce, for this office, so that lastlye, they chase a man of lowe byrth & vnmete to that rome, named Bethayr or Barthayr. But Pepyn, which by all this season, was in the countrey of Austracy, & hard of the cōtrauercyes & dyuerse opynyons of the Frenshemen, assēblyd to hym a stronge hooste, & sped hym towarde the kyng, entendynge to haue the rule of hym, rather than such other ȳ were of lasse auctorite & hauoure[2]. Wherof, the kyng, being warned by the prouision of Barthayer foresaied, he gadered his army and met with Pepyn, and after a sharpe fyghte atwene bothe hostis had, Barthair was slayne, & the kyng chased, & fynally was forced to admit Pepyn for the master & gouernowre of his palayes. Butte for as moche as Pepyn had than the rule of Austracye, and myghte not well ouerse bothe chargis, he therefore purnayed vnder hym a substitute, named Nordobert, whyle he retornyd into Austracy or Lorayne. And shortly after dyed the kyng, when he had borne the name thereof by ȳ terme of. xix. yeres, leuyng after hym. ii. sonnes, named, Clodoueus and Childebertus. Eborya slayne.

¶ Capitulum. C. xl.

CAdwaladrus, of ȳ[3] the reuerēt Beda is named Cedwalla, began to aryse and rule the Britons, and also the West Saxōs, in the yere of grace. viC. lxxx. and thre, and the. xii. yere of Theodoricus than kyng of Fraūce, and also the last yere of Kenewinus or Kentwinus, than kyng of West Saxon. This of Galfryde and other auctours, with ȳ Englysshe Cronycle, is callid ȳ sone of Cadwall; but Wyllyam, that wrote the actis & dedis of kynges, sayth, that he was the sone of Kenebrygh̄t, and discēdid lynyally of the bloode of Cerdicus, ȳ first kynge of West Saxon. The whiche Cadwaladir or Cedwalla, made warre vpon Lotharius kynge of Kent, and destroyed moche of that prouynce & wan the Ile of Wyght, and gaue the. iiii. deale there of vnto saynt Wylfryde, in the whiche sayde. iiii. parte were accōpted. CCC. housholdis. The whyle that Cadwaladir was busied in one parte of Kent, his brother, named Mulkyn, w̄ a certeyne of knyghtes, was besegyd, and lastlye brent in a nother parte thereof; in reūegemēt wherof, Cadwaladir of newe distroyed a more parte of ȳ sayd prouynce: contynuynge in the whiche warre, Lotharius forenamed, was woundyd and dyed; after whom Edricus was kyng, the which reygned but a shorte season. About this tyme seynt[4] Cutbert was bisshop of Hagustalde or Durham, & after bisshop of Lyndefarn; but lastly he refusyd that, and became an anker in ȳ Ile of Farn & there dyed. This ile now is called Holy Ilande. Thā Cadwaladir made warre apō Athelwold, kyng of South Saxons or South Sex, & slewe hym in playn batayle, and after made his prouynce thrall to hym; but this aggreith not with the former sayinge, rehersyd in the. lxxx. and. xiiii. chapiter of this werke precedyng, where it is sayd, that the kyngdome of South Saxons endured but. C. and. xii. yeres, by which reason this Ethelwolde or Athelwolde shulde not, at this season, be kynge of South Saxons: for ȳ terme of a C. and. xii. yeres was expyred more than. lxxx. and. viii. yeres before this day. But ye shall vnderstond, ȳ this foresayd terme of a. C. and. xii. yeres, is ment for the contynuance of this kyngedome or they were subdued, and the kynges therof, namyd vnder- [Ca. 6. li. 9.] Cutbert. *Fol. lxxiiii.*

[1] not longe, edit. 1559. [2] Honoure. [3] that of. [4] "Seynt" *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559.

kynges,

kynges, as this Ethelwolde was. Thā it folowith, whan Cadwaladir hadde rulyd the Brytons, and also the West Saxons by the terme of thre yeres, as witnessyth Ranulphe, munke of Chestre, he than, of pure deuocion, renouncyd the pompe & pryde of the worlde, & yode in pylgrymage to Rome; where of the first Sergius, then pope[1], he was confermyd, & after made a whyte munke, and contynued there his lyfe tyme in parfyte holynes. Of this Cadwaladyr or Cadwalla, many and dyuerse opynyons are writen of auctors, both of his reygne, and also of the contynuance thereof. And ouer ŷ of that[2] tyme, when he forsoke his lond, wherein is great varyaunce, as I haue shewed in the treatyce[3] made ī Laten[4] in the begynnynge of this symple werke, so that it shulde seme that theyse. ii. names shuld soūde to be sondry persones: wherof the contrary is a certayned by ŷ foresayd Ranulph; where, as he sayth, ŷ Cadwaladrus or Cedwalla was but one parsone, the which was laste kyng of Brytons and kyng of West Saxons; also for so moch as they ioyned next vnto Cambria or Walis. If I shulde here brynge in the cause of the auoydyng of this land by Cadwaladir, as is rehersyd by Galfryde, it wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme: & also to me it apperith ŷ more doutfull ŷ it is not testyfyed of the auctor of Policronycon, considerynge the great nombre of auctours whiche he sought and allegyd for his auctorite, as it shewyth in the firste chapitre of his firste booke; and specially syn that holy Gyldas and Bede is a monge the sayd auctours accomptyd: the whiche tooke great dylygens in serchyng of ŷ dedys and actis of the Brytons. [And of the aūgelis monicion that to hym was geuen, with also the prophecy of Merlyn, that the Brytons shuld not recouer this lande, tyll the relykes of Cadwaladyr, with other of holy sayntes, were broughte hyther oute of Rome: I holde ŷ for no parte of my beleue, though many Welshemen it doo.][5] Wherefore to folowe the moost auctoryte as before is sayd, whan this Cadwaladir had reygned. iii. yeres, he went to Rome, & there lastly dyed, & was buryed in ŷ churche of Seynt Petyr, with this epythaphy or superscripcion vpon his toumbe, as folowith in metir.

Auctoris opinio.

Colmen[6], opes[7], sobolem, pollencia regna triumphos,
Eximias proceros[8] menia, castra, lares,
Queq; patrum virtus, & que congesserat ipse,
Cadwald armipotens, linquit amore dei.

The which versis may be Englysshed in maner as folowith:

Worshipfull riches, kynred, tryumphes assuryd,
Plenteous welth with clothes rychely dyght,
Howsis, castellis, and townes strongely muryd,
And other honours, which by his parentis myght,
And his was wone[9], this merciall vertuous knyght,
Cadwald the stronge, discendyd of kynges[10] bloode,
For Crystis loue renouncyd all his good.

And thus here endith the lyfe & rule ŷ[11] tho Britons nowe callyd Welsshemen, which toke that name of theyr duke or ledar, as sayth Guydo, called Wallo, or Guallo, or elles of a quene of Walys named Galaes or Walaes; but howe so ŷ name came first to them, now are they callyd Walshe men ŷ some tyme were namyd Brytons or Brutons, discendyd first of Troyans & after of Brute, & lastly of Dūwallo Moliūcius or Molumcius[12] Dūwallo. Albe it, they were greatly myngelyd or medelyd ẅ other naciōs, as Romaynes, Pictes, & other, as by the redynge of the premysses ye maye well perceyue and know; as now be the[13]

[1] Bishop, edit. 1542, 1559. [2] the. [3] Table. [4] "in Lateu" *omitted in the later editions.* [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [6] Culmen. [7] opus, edit. 1533. 1542. [8] proceres. [9] And his owne. [10] Knyghtes, edit. 1542. 1559. [11] of. [12] Molmucius. [13] and now be they Englysshe.

Englysshe,

Englysshe, that in theyr begynnynge were namyd Saxõs or Anglys. But yet for so moche as Walshemen extolle so hugely theyr blood & allyaunce, fetchynge it from Pryam, but not from Eneas; & regardyd so lytle the progeny or lynyall dissent of the Saxons or Anglis; therefore, to the entent to kele somwhat theyr hyghe corage, or to oppresse in partye theyr brutisshe blastis, I wyll bryng in here ỹ sayinge of Guydo & other, that auaunce the blode or dissent of the Saxons to be farre aboue the Brytons, as they that are discendid of goddes & men immortall; where the Brutons clayme the offsprynge to come of men, that were mortall, and not moost to be allowed in honoure, if they thynke vpon Eneas vntroth & treyson. Than to folowe the foresayde auctor Guydo, ỹ saythe, Woden, of whome the Saxons takyn theyr originall, was the sone of Frealoffe, ỹ sone of Fredewolfe, the sone of Flyn, the sone of Flokwald, the sone of Geta, ỹ was the sone of Minos, ỹ is next in honour to Pluto, god of hell, & chefe iudge of his infernall iurisdiccion. Genelogia Saxonũ.

Therfore ye Welshe men here after nurture lerne[1],
And dispyse not Saxons that ben to God so nere.

Thus than apperyth by the conueyaunce of this werke, ỹ the last or thyrde yere of Cadwaladir, was ỹ yere of grace. viC. lxxx. &. vi. which makith the yere of the worlde. M M M M M. viii. C. lxxx. & v. by which reason it apperith ỹ the Brutons had the rule of this londe for the more party, to rekyn from ỹ first cõmynge of the duke or ledar, Brute, by the space of a. M. viiiC. &. xxii. yeres.

And thus here an ende of the. v. parte of this werke, for ỹ cõsideracion before rehersyd, that Bryton kynges, after this daye, reygned none in this realme, and the Saxons or Anglis begã fully to haue dominion thereof. [Werefore, as before tyme, I haue vsed & doon, so now, to thentent in the ende of the other partyes specifyed, I here agayne salute & gyue thankys to ỹ moost excellent vyrgyn, our lady saynt Mary, with the. v. ioyes of ỹ forenamed. vii. ioyes begynnynge. Gaude mater miserorum, &c.

Thou mother to wretchis & other disconsolate,
Hayll and be glad, for God of worldes all,
To them that here in this present state
Doon to the worship, he reward shall,
With condigne meryte passynge all temporall,
In heuen to be stallyd with moost felicite,
Euermore to reygne with thy sone & the.][2]

This. v. parte to be accomptid from the last yere of the mysery of Brytons, or ỹ firste yere of Constantyne, brother to the kyng of Armorica, vnto the thyrde or laste yere of Cadwaladyr, includyth of yeres. CCliii.[3]

After that Cadwaladir was thus departyd the londe, as some auctours meane, this londe of Brytaygne was in great discension, by meane of ỹ Brytons and Saxons by the terme of a. xi. yeres; & ouer that the mortalyte, before spokyn of, encreasyd so hugely, & therewith great hũger & famyne ouer sprad the lande, ỹ by occasyon of one & other, the people of this realme was wonderfully mynysshed, & lassyd so ferforthlye, that, as witnessith Galfryde, & also the Englisshe Cronycle, the quicke bodyes suffysed not to bury the ded. But in so moche as of this spekyth not the mũke of Chestre, nor other auctours, as before is shewyd in the treatyse of Laten,[4] the whiche I remytte to the coreccyon of suche as be lerned, & not oonly to Englysshe reders as there is fortherly declarid. I therefore, as before is sayde, folowe the sayd Ranulphe, mũke of Chestre, where he saythe, *Fol. lxxv.*

[1] lere, edit. 1542. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Thus endyth the fyfte parte, edit. 1533.
[4] In the forsayde Table.

that

that Iew or Iue was kyng of West Saxons, next after ỹ forenamed Cadwaladir; the whiche I shall firste shewe the story of, & so of the successours of hym in that kyngdome: for that they subdued lastly, all the other kyngdomes, & somedeale touch of the other kyngdomes or lordshypes, as tyme conuenyent shall requyre, in expressynge of the storyes of the sayd West Saxon kynges, tyll the londe be brought agayne to one monarchy.

And for the diuision of the sayd kyngdomes stande somedeale far a sonder, so that to the reders it were somwhat peynfull to serche for euerychе of theym, I therefore haue set them out in ỹ compasse folowynge; that it may appere to the reder the begynnynge of euerychе of theym, & how longe a season or tyme eyther of the sayd kyngdomes contynuyd or induryd; ỹ names also of euery kyngdome,* and in what parte of this lond euery lordshyp was stablysshed for the tyme and sette.

Finit quinta pars.

INCIPIT PARS SEXTA.

¶ Capitulū. C. xli.

IVE or Iewe dyscendyd of the blode of Saxons, was ruler or kynge of Westsaxons, next after that the forenamed Cadwaladyr had renouncid the pompe of the worlde; the which, to folowe the opynyon of Polycronycon, began his reygne the yere of grace. viC. lxxx. and. vii. and the. xvi. yere of ỹe seconde Theodoricus, thā kyng of Fraunce; and rulyd the Westsaxons knyghtly, and maynteyned such warre agayne the Kentysshe Saxons, ỹ the men of Dorobernia or Caunterburye, grauntyd vnto hym to haue pease; and also for a recompensement of the dethe of Mulkynge, brother to Cadwaladir, before slayne, as is shewyd in the precedynge capitre, by the sayde Kentisshe Saxons, & gaue vnto hym, for the sayd consyderacions. MMM. li. about the yere[2] of the rayne of Iue. The holy man Cutlake, about ỹ. xxiiii. yere of his age, renoūcyd the pōmpe and pryde of this worlde, & toke ỹ order of mūkys in the abbey of Repyndon, & the. iii. yere after he went to Crowlande, & there lad for the whyle an holy ankers lyfe, [and dyd there many myracles[3],] and there fynallye was buryed; in which ile & place of his buryinge stondith nowe a fayre abbey, the whiche for the great resorte of gestes that thyther drawith, and for the good and frendlye chere ỹ gestes there reseyue & take, the sayd place hath purchasyd a surname, & is named Crowlande the curteys, ỹ which is a place of good fame: & there lyeth also ỹ holy confessoure, Neotus, some tyme dissyple of Erkynwalde, bysshop of London. In the. xi. yere of the reygne of Iue, befell the wonder and meruayle that is tolde of Bryghtwaldus, ỹ which after he had ben a longe whyle ded, was restoryd to lyfe agayne; & tolde many thynges of great wonder, to many men, whereby he causyd great almys, & many other dedes of charite to be executyd: and after the disposycion of his owne goodis, by the agremēt of his wyfe, he went vnto the abbey of Maylroos, & there in great holynes cōtynued ỹ resydue of his lyfe. About ỹ. xvi. yere of ỹ reygne of Iue, Etheldredus, before mynded in the. C. &. xxxv. chapter, kynge of Mercia, forsoke this worldly honour, and became a munke at Bardeney,

[Li. 5. ca. 22.] Mirum.

* they. [2] the vi. yere. edit. 1559. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1548. 1559.

whan he had longe tyme rulyd the men of Mercia or mydle Anglis. His brother Kenredus was kynge after hym; the whiche also after he had reygned. v. yeres, lefte his kyngdome vnto Colredus, ŷ sone of his vncle; & he w̄ Offa ŷ sone of Iue, now kynge of Westsaxons, & with Egwinus bisshop of Wykcies or of Wyke, which see is nowe at Worceter, w̄ this foresayde cōpany, this Kēredus yode vnto Rome ī pylgrymage, & there endyd his lyfe. And about ŷ. xviii. yere of ŷ reygne of Iue, dyed the holy bysshop Aldelme, which firste was mūke & abbot of Malmesbury, & ŷ last bisshop. Of hym it is wrytē, ŷ whā he was styryd by his gostly enmy to ŷ syn of the flesshe, he wold do ŷ more turmēt of hym selfe & of his body, hold[1] wīn his bedde by hym a fayre mayden by soo longe tyme as he myght saye ouer ŷ hole sauter, albe it ŷ such holynes is no article of seynt Benetlis lore, nor yet for dyuerse incōuenyence moost alowed by holy doctours. And amōge many of his virtuous & holy dedes, Ranulph, mūke of Chestre, shewith, that for the fame of his holynes sprang wyde, & for[2] Sergius, ŷ first of ŷ name, beynge pope[3], sent for hym to Rome: in which season of his there beyng, the sayd Sergius was accusyd or defamyd of ŷ gettyng of a chylde, the which, ŷ. ix. daye of the sayd chyldys age, was broughte to holy Aldelme to be cristened, by vertue of whose prayer, ŷ sayde chylde answeryd vnto certayne questions, & cleryd ŷ pope[3] of ŷ cryme ŷ was before put apō hym. Nere aboute ŷ. xxiii. yere of Iue, Colredus, thā kyng of Mercia, for cause of varyaūce betwene hym and Iue, vnremembred of mynde Arture[4], assēbled his knightes, & begā to warre vpon hym; whereof that other hauyng knowlege, in lyke wyse gathred his power, & lastly met, to both theyr harmes, at a place callyd Wodynsburgth; where, after longe fyght, eyther of them sped so vnhappyly, ŷ it was not knowen whether hoost had moost domage. And nere about the. xxvii[5]. yere of Iue, as wytnessith holy Beda, seynt Iohan, of Beuerlay, ŷ than was bisshop of Yorke, dyed, & was buryed in ŷ porche of ŷ mynyster of Deyrwood, or Beuerlay. Thā Iewe or Iue callyng to mynde ŷ coūceyll of holy Aldelme, ŷ before tyme had coūceylyd hym to buylde an abbay at Glastēbury, begā ŷ sayd warke, about the. xxxiii yere of his reygne, & foundyd there an abbay, the which cōtynuyd prosperously tyll ŷ comynge of Danys[6], by whose cruelte, it was thā sore blemysshed, but afterward, by ŷ helpe of seynt Dūstane, in ŷ tymes of Edmond and Edgare, it was agayne sufficiently repayryd, & so cōtynued tyll ŷ comyng of ŷ Normans: after which season, it was agayne beset with hard happes, but now, at this day it standith a place of great welthe and honour. Than it folowith, whan Iue had rulyd the Westsaxons nobly, by the terme of. xxxvii. yeres, by the assyduat laboure of his holy wyfe Ethelburga, as she ŷ long had labourid hym to leue the worlde, & cowde not brynge about hir purpose, vppon a season whan the kynge & she had restyd them in a fayre paleys richely behangyd, & were vpō the morne thens departyd, she by hyr cōmaundement causyd the sayd palays to be replenysshed w̄ all kynde of fylthe, and dūge, & hoggys, & vyle bestis therein to be layde, as well in the chaūbers, as other housys of offyce, [& besought ŷ kyng to vysite the sayde palayes;][7] [& when she knew that this palayes was thus deformyd,][8] & whā she had brought hym thereunto, she sayd to hym, "I praye you, my lorde, beholde now this house, where are now the ryche tappes[9] & clothis of golde, & of silke, & other ryche apparell ŷ we lefte here this other daye, & where be the delycys, & plesaunt seruytours, & costly dysshes ŷ you & I lately were seruyd with? Be not all theyse passyd and goon? My lorde, in lyke maner shall we passe; & sodenly as ye se theyse worldly thynges ben passyd, & our bodyes, which nowe ben delycately kepyd, shall fall & turne into fylthe of the erthe: wherefore haue ī mynde my wordis ŷ before thys tyme to you I haue often shewyd & tolde, & busy[10] to purchase that palays ŷ euer shall endure in ioy, without transmutacion." By meane of theyse wordys & other, the

Aldelmus sanctus. [Li. 5. ca. 22.]

[Ca. 23. li. 5.]

Iohnne of Beuerlay.

Fol. lxxvi.

[Ca. 24. li. 5.]

Astuciam mulieris.

[1] wolde hold. [2] "and for" *omitted.* [3] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] myn authour. [5] xxv. [6] the Danys. [7] [8] *In the subsequent editions these sentences are transposed.* [9] Tappets, edit. 1542. 1559. [10] busy you.

quene turnyd so ŷ kynges mynde, ŷ shortlye after he resigned the gouernaunce of his kyngedome vnto Ethellardus, his neuewe, & he, for the loue of Cryste, toke vpō hym thabyte of a poore man, and settinge a parte all pompe & pryde of this worlde, accōpanyed hym in ŷ feleship of poore men, & yode vnto Rome ī pylgrymage, with great deuocion, whan he had ben kynge of the Westsaxons, as before is sayde. xxxvii. yeris. After whose departynge ŷ foresayd Etheldreda[1], his wyfe, went vnto Barkynge. vii. myles frome London, wherein the abbay, before of Erkynwalde foundyd, she contynued & endyd an holy lyfe, whē she had ben abbesse of the same place a certeyne of tyme. It is sayde & testyfyed of Wyllyam, wryter of kynges, ŷ this Iue was the firste kynge that grauntyd a peny of euery fyre house thorowe this realme to be payed to ŷ court of Rome, whiche at this day
Of Peter pens. is callyd Rome scote, or Petyr pens, & yet is payed in many placis of England. But why it was graūted the cause is not here shewyd, howe be it hit shall be shewyd after.

¶ Capitulum. C. xlii.

Francia. CLodoueus, the thyrde of ŷ name, and sone of ŷ second Theodoricus, began his domynyon ouer ŷ realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. viC. lxxx. &. x. and the thyrde yere of Iue, then kynge of Westsaxon. Of this Clodoueus is, of wryters, lefte noone maner of memory soundyng to good or euyll; but Pepyn, before named, cōtynued as master of the paleys by all the tyme of the reygne of the sayd Clodoueus, the whiche, after that he had borne the name of the kyng by the space of iii. yeres, he dyed, and without issue was buryed by his father, by reason of whose deth, ŷ sayd kyngdome fell by successiō vnto his brother Chilbert[2].

¶ Capitulum. C. xliii.

CHildebertus, ŷ secōd sone to Theodorich, and brother of Clodoueus foresayd, began his domynyon ouer ŷ realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. vi. C. lxxx. and. xiii. and the vi. yere of Iue, thā kyng of Westsaxons: in tyme of whose reygne also the foresayd Pepyn cōtynued as chefe ruler of ŷ kynges house; albe it that he for suche other charge as he had of ouerseynge of the realme, set in his place a substitute, or depute, as his sone Grimonart & other. This Pepyn, contrary to ŷ lawe of churche, helde, besyde his lawfull wyfe callyd Plectrude, a woman named Alpayd, for the whiche ŷ holy bisshop of Treet, named Labert, blamynge and rebukynge the sayde Pepyn, of the brother of the forenamyd Alpayde, which is callid Dodon, or Dodoin, was slayne and martyred, in the yere of our Lorde. vi. C. lxxx. &. xii., as testefyeth Antoninus, in the. vi. Chaptre of the. xiii. tytle of the seconde parte of his warke, caled Sūma Antonini; &, as affermith the sayd Antoninus, & also the Frenshe Cronycle, the sayd Pepyn reseyuyd of the sayde Alpayde a sone whome he namyd Charlys, which Charlis was after surnamyd Marcellus, & was right profytable to the realme of Fraunce, as after shall appere. Of ŷ foresayd kyng Childebert is nothyng lefte ī wrytyng worthy memory, except that he reseyuyd of his wyfe, a sone namyd Dagobert, and kepte the name of a kynge by the terme of. xvii[3]. yeres, as sayth ŷ Cronycle in Frenshe, and than dyed, & was buryed ī ŷ abbey of Caus, ī ŷ church or chapell of seynt Stephan.

¶ Capitulum. C. xliiii.

DAgobertus, the seconde of that name, & sone of Childebert be fore namyd, began his reygne ouer ŷ Frensh men in the yere of grace. viiC. and. x. & the. xxiii. of Iue, thā kyng of Westsaxons, the whiche was vnder ŷ rule of Plectrude, the wyfe of Pepyn, than deed, and of Theoldowalde than master of the palays. This Plectrude, as before is

[1] Ethelburga, edit. 1559. [2] Childebert. [3] xviii, edit. 1559.

shewyd,

shewyd, was stepmother to Charlys, sone of Pepyn & of Alpayde. Wherfore she berynge malys to ŷ sayd Charlys, causyd hym to be holden as prisoner within Coleyn: where he so as prysoner remaynynge, the foresayde Theoldowalde exersysed such tyrannys, & put vpō the people such exaccīōs, that dyssensyon grewe by twene hym & the lordes of Fraunce, so that dyuerse conflictes and skyrmyshes were had amonge the nobles of Fraūce, for partyes that[1] were taken vpon eyther sydes, whereby the kynges partye at lengthe was wekyd: and fynally, ŷ sayd Theoldowalde was depryued of rome[2], & one Rangasredus[3] was made master of the paleys. The which, beynge accompanyed with conuenyent strengthe, tooke with hym the kynge, and cōueyed hym thorowe the forest of Charbonnur tyll he came vnto the ryuer of Mense, in ŷ which passetyme the forenamyd Charlys beynge, as aboue is sayd, prysoner, by fauour of his kepars, or otherwyse, brake pryson and escapyd: & shortlye after dyed the kynge, whā he had reygned, or borne the name of a kynge, as other of his progenitours had doon, by ŷ terme of. xi. yeres, leuynge after hym nowther chylde, as than knowyng[4], nor nere of ally, which was cause of mysorder of the tytle of Fraūce, as afterward shall appere.

¶ Capitulum. C. xlv.

Fol. lxxvii.

DAnyell, that of the Frenshmen was after named Chilperych, was, by assent of theym made kynge, in the yere of grace. viiC. and. xxi. and ŷ. xxxiiii. yere of Iue, than kynge of Westsaxons. Thus[5], as testyfyeth master Robert Gagwyne, & also the Frensh Cronycle, was a preest, or clerke, & for his wysedome was cherisshed before tyme in the kynges palays, in the whiche tyme and season he suffered his corne[6] to be ouer growyn; or ellys, after Antoninus, this Danyel, after ŷ deth of Dagobert, for so moche as he left after hym none of the royall bloode, the Frenshe men supposynge hym to be apte for the rule of the londe, for suche experyence as before tyme in hym had be prouyd, kepte hym secrete a sertayne of tyme, tyll his heyre was fully growen, and thā declared hym to be the brother of Dagobert, and chaūgyd his name, and callyd hym Chylperyche, and so by one assent admytted hym for kynge of Fraunce. Charlis, before spokyn of, sone of Pepyn, beynge escapyd the daunger of prysonement, sought and compassyd, by all maner of wayes, how he myght obteyne ŷ rome that sometyme his father occupyed; & this to brynge to effecte, he purchasyd to hym a yonglynge of fayre & goodly maners, and stature, named Clothayre, and sayd that he was descendyd of the royall bloode of Fraunce, by meane wherof, ī short tyme he gaderyd to hym grete strength. Wherof heerynge, Chilperich cōmaundyd Rangafrede to assemble his knyghtes, to wistonde[7] the purpose of Charlys. And sone after, bothe hoostis met, nere vnto the forenamyd ryuer of Mense, where was foughte a stronge and cruell batayll, of ŷ which Rangafrede was victor, and cōpellyd Charles to forsake the feelde. But he shortly afterwarde assemblyd, and gaderyd agayne to gyder, all suche as before were disperblyd[8], and fought ofte ẅ the sayd Rangafrede, at a place callyd Ablane, of ŷ which batayll, with great difficulte, Charlis was lastly victour, & chasyd Rangafrede, & his hooste greatlye demynysshed & lassyd. Than thyrdly, these. ii. hostis met in a felde callid the wyne feelde, where also was present the sayde Danyell, or Chilperiche, bauyng in his ayde, amonge other pryncez, the duke of Gascoyn, and there foughte a sore and cruell batayll, whereof lastly was victor the sayde Charlis, & cōstraynyd the kynge with the sayde duke to fle vnto Orleaūce, where they, takynge with them suche treasoure as belonged to the kynge, fled from thens vnto the duchye of Gascoyne. Whan Charlys conceyuyd that the kyng was escapyd his daunger, and knewe that Raganfrede was in the cytie of Aungiens, he sped hym thether in all haste, and compassyd ŷ cytie with so strōg a syege, that fynally he obteyned ŷ cytie, with all ŷ was therein: but it was not longe after, that Charlis shewyd vnto Ragāfrede suche benyuolens, that

[1] "that" *omitted.* [2] hys rome. [3] Rangafredus, edit. 1533. 1542. [4] knowen. [5] Thys, edit. 1542, 1559. [6] Crowne. [7] wythstonde. [8] dysperklyd.

he was set at his lyberte & fredome. The next yere folowynge, the duke of Gascoyne, before myndyd, hauynge parfyte informaciō, by ambassade or otherwyse, ẏ Charlis entēdyd to make sharpe and cruell warre vpon ẏ Gascoynyes, for ẏ that they fauouryd & kepte with them Danyell, or Chilperiche; he, in avoydynge the sayde daunger of warre, in shorte tyme after, sent vnto Charlys, vnder sertayne cōdicions by twene them agreed, the sayd Chilperich ẇ all such treasour & iuellys as to hym or to ẏ crowne of Fraunce belongyd. In this passe tyme & season, dyed the forenamed Clothayr, that Charles before had made kyng, wherefore, to the more restfulnes of the realme, he allowed ẏ forenamed Chilperiche for kyng, & he as master of the kynges palays, as other his predecessours, rulyd the land of Fraūce. Thā Charlis hauynge thus the rule & gouernaunce, rulyd it well & substancially, and defēde[1] it from all enmyes duryng the lyfe of the sayd Chilperiche, and after the which, Chilperich, whā he had contynued as kyng by the terme of. v. yeres, he dyed, & was buryed, as saythe the Frensh Cronycle, in ẏ cytie of Noen, or Noyen, without issue of his body.

¶ Capitulū. C. xlvi.

Li. 5. ca. 24.] EThelardus, the neuewe of Iue, begā his reygne ouer the Westsaxons in the yere of grace. viiC. and. xxiiii., & the thyrd yere of Danyell, otherwyse callyd Chilperich, thā kyng of Fraunce. This, after some wryters, is namyd Etheldredus. In the tyme of his reygne Ofricus as kyng reygnyd in Northumbirlande, to Tholohom[2] holy Beda wrote ẏ story, callyd Historya Anglicana, or more veryly to his successour Colwolfus. Of the whiche Beda, & of his warkys, Raynulph, mūke of Chestre, shewith a compendyous processe, in the. xxiii. Chaptre of his. v. Boke, callyd Polycronycon. The foresayd Ofricus is named in the Englysshe Cronycle Osbryght, of the whiche in the sayd Cronycle is rehersyd a longe warke; but for I se no auctour of auctoryte afferme ẏ same, I therefore in this warke passe it ouer. It shuld appere also by ẏ meanynge of Policronicon, that about this tyme, dyed Etheldredus, before touchyd, kynge of Mercia, the which whā he had longe tyme rulyd that countrey, he lastlye renouncyd the pompe of this worlde, & was shorne a munke at Bardony. Of the foresayde Ethelarde, kyng of Westsaxon, is lefte no memory of any actis or dedis by hym done. But, as agree many wryters, he dyed, whan he had reygned. v. yeres, without issu of his body. And in Northumbirlande, after ẏ forenamed Ofricus, reygned Colwolphus, after whom Egbertus, and after whō Oswolph, & after Oswolphe reygned Ethelbalde, or Ethelwalde, albe it that dyuers auctours of theyse namys of kynges, and contynuaunce of theyr reygnes, dyuersly and sundrely reporte and wryte.

Kyng made mūke.

¶ Capitulū. C. xlvii.

THeodoricus, the whiche, of mayster Robert Gagwyne, is allowed to be the sone of the seconde Dagobert, began his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in the yere of grace. vii. C. and. xxvi., and the seconde yere of Ethelardus, than kynge of Westsaxons; the which was from his yonge and tender age fosteryd and norysshed in a house of nonnys, in womans clothynge, and lastly aspyred, & by concente of Charlys, master of the palayes, admytted for kynge. After the which solempnyte fynysshed, Charlis herynge of the rebellyon of a people, callyd the Sweuys, or Swetesers, assemblyd an hooste, and lastly them subduyd; which done he turnyd hym towarde an other parte of the Almaynys, and in lyke wyse ouercame them, and after retornyd into Fraunce with great tryūphe and ryches that he hadde wonne at those. ii. iourneys. It was not longe afterwarde, that Charlys had thus subduyd the foresayd people of Almayne, with also a great parte of Germayny, but that tydynges came to hym that Endo, duke of Gascoyne, rebellyd agayne the kyng of Fraunce; wherfore he in all goodly haste preparid his army, & sped hym into Gascoyne, where he made so

Fol. lxxviii.

[1] defended. [2] whom.

cruell

cruell warre, that he in shorte tyme damagid greatly the coũtrey, & helde the duke Endo so streyth, that he was compellyd to hyde hym in secrete places of the coũtrey, where, after the[1] great serche he myght not be fond. Wherfore he setyage the countrey in some restefulnes, retornyd hym into Fraunce. Whan Endo was sure of the retorne of Charlis into Fraunce, for so moche as he had prouyd the marciall knyghthode of hym, and knewe well he myght not of hymselfe withstõde his knyghtlye powar, he therefore allyed hym with the kynge of Spayne, than beynge a pagan, or myscreauunt, & named Abyderamus, and excyted and styred hym to make warre vpon the lond of Fraunce, promysynge to hym not all onely victory, but also the[2] lond to hym and to his heyres for euer. Vpon comforte of whiche promyse, and also ayde of the sayde Endo, this forenamed Arbideramus, thirstynge cristen mannis bloode, & entendynge vtter desolacion and distruccion of the realme of Fraunce, assemblyd an excedynge hooste of people, and with theyr wyues and chyldren & catayll, entryd the londe of Fraunce, and what they wan they enioyed it as theyr owne; and so in processe came vnto the cytie of Burdeaux, the whiche, after a certeyne tyme of the cytesens defendyng, the sayde myscreauntis wan into theyr possessyon, and dystroyed the people therof, wyth all theyr churchys, and temples of the same. And frome thens passynge the countrey in wastynge it with iron, and with fyre, lastlye came vnto Poytiers, which citie, as before ye haue harde in the story of the firste Dagobert, a C. and xxxii. chapter, was by hym subuertyd, and at this daye newely reedyfyed. This citie also of theym possessyd, they in lyke maner as they had dalt with Burdeaux, soo dyd they with this, not sparinge that holy place of seynt Hyllary, but dyd vnto it great shame & vylany: and frome thens yode[3] vnto Towers, wastynge and sleyng the people without mercy, by all the way that they passyd, & banysshed[4] that cytie as they had doon the other. In the which passe tyme, Charlys, heryng of the cruelte of this Arbidera[5], assemblyd his powar, & shortly met with hym nere vnto Towers, where he bare hym so knyghtly that he slewe of the Paganys an excedynge nombre[6], to be accordaunt with reason. But for I se it testyfyed of soo many wryters, it boldith me to expresse the nombre, whiche was. CCC. lxxx. and v. M. and odde. And of the Frenshmen were slayne but. xvC. oonly. For the which victoryous acte, the sayd Charlis obteynyd a sur name, and was callyd after that day, Carolus Martellus, the which is to meane Charlis the hamer. For lyke as the hamer makyth all metallys plyable, so Charlis made his foos or enmyes plyable to his hestis; & as the hamer cuttith, brekyth, or disseuerith iron and other harde metallys, so dyd this Charlis dismembre and cut or breke the enemyes of Fraunce throughe his hyghe prowesse. It is shewid in the Bookis callyd Cronyca Cronicarum, Supplementum Cronycarum, Polycronica, and other, that this victory was obteynyd by Charlis of the Sarasyns, but not as inhabytans or incolers of Spayne, but that they were issuyd out of Affryca, and than warryd and had wonne great countreys in Spayne, the which is more accordaunt with hystoryes. For in the Plegys or Rehersayllys of the names of kynges of Spayne, I fynde no kyng of that name. Than it folowith in the story, whan Charlis Martell had thus obteynyd victory, he commaundyd all the pyllage to be brought to one place: that doon, he deuydyd it amonge his knyghtes; & shortly after, Guydo[7] knowlegyng his offence & sekyng meanes of mercy, was agayn restoryd to the londe of Gascoyne.

Paganorum crudelitas.

¶ Capitulum. C. xlviii.

CHarles Martell hauynge the Duke of Gascoyn thus recounciled, sent hym with a certeyne of knyghtes agayne the rest of the sayd Sarazyns; the which, by his manhoode,

[1] "the" *omitted.* [2] that. [3] they yode. [4] wasted, edit. 1542.1559. [5] Arbideramus. [6] to excedynge a nomber. [7] Endo.

he

he oppressyd and subduyd, and clerely voydyd the lande of them. Than soon vpon this began the Burgonyons to rebelle, & made sharpe warre vpon the Frenshemen, next adioynaunt to them, and dyd vnto the countrey and inhabytauntes of the same, great harme: the which warre the sayde Martell that therin toke great payne, not without great difficulte', lastly it appeasyd and them subduyd. In tyme of the whiche warre so contynuyng, Guydo, before rehersyd, duke of Gascoyne, dyed; wherefore Charles, to set that prouynce in an ordre and due obeysaunce, yode thether, where he beynge busyed about the nedes of the same, tydynges to hym were brought, that the Wandalis, whiche been of the kynde or lynage of the Hunys, before towchyd, had entred the lande with an huge powar: and in wastynge the countrey, approchid the cytie of Senons or Sens, and it enuyroned, or be clypped with a stronge siege. But by the vertue and strengthe of the archebysshop of that cytie, named Eba, Ebbe, or Obbo, with the sistence of the cytczyns of the same, the sayd cytie was defendyd, and delyueryd from the powar of the sayd Wandalys, and the powar of them abbatyd and subduyd. For theyse manyfolde incursyons and assautis of enemyes, & rebellyon of the countreys that were subgecte to the crowne of Fraunce, the treasour of Fraunce, and specially of the temporall people was sore mynysshed and wastyd: wherefore in defence of all the lande, Charlys Martell made request to the spirituall men, & with great difficulte, had it grauntyd, that he myght leuy certayne dymys to wage therwith souldyours, and prepayre other necessaryes for the warre. [Thus[2], after the opynyon of some wryters, was the firste tyme that euery spirituall mannys money, within that realme, was occupyed to temporall vse. Wherefore, as it is reportyd of dyuerse cronyclears, the sayd Charlis, whan he was deed, was seen by the bisshop of Orleaunce named Ethereus, to be in great payne and turment.[3]] Than Charlis moued his hooste toward the Burgonyons; that agayne were of newe styred & exortyd by dyuerse parsonys to newe rebellion; and after his comynge thyther dyd execucion vpon such parsones has he founde culpable; and not without batayle, set the country agayne in quyet, and than retornyd into Fraunce. But he rested not long there, or he harde worde that the Almaynes, whiche dwellyd ouer or beyonde the ryuer callid the Ryne, breke ouer into Fraũce. Theyse people are namyd in the Frenshe boke Sesues; the which dyd great domage vpon the countreys adioynynge to the sayd ryuer: but it was not long after or he had them chasyd, and subduyd, with also an other people callid the Hunys or Gothis, that he before had also vaynquysshed: the whiche after this seconde scomfyture assosiat vnto them the kynge of Longobardis, namyd Luytprandus, by whose assistens and powar the foresayde Gothis wan the cytie of Auynyon, & other stronge holdis, to the great hurt of the Frenshmen. And for at this season, Charlis was greued with syknes, he therfore sent his brother, named Childebert, to withstande the sayd
Fol. lxxiv. enemyes, the which bare hym so manfully, that he chasyd the sayd enmyes. But this sayinge discordith w other auctours, whiche shewyn that atwene this Charlys & Luytprand was cõtynuall amyte and frẽdship, in so moche that Luytprand aydid & assisted the sayd Charlis to auoyde ỹ Sarasyns that were entryd a countrey of Frauñce, called than Gallia Cisalpina. In this tyme that Fraunce was thus wrappyd in these harde happes & bataylles, dyed the kyng Theodoricus, whan he had occupyed the name only of a kynge. iiii. yeres.

¶ Capitulũ. C. xlix.

[Li. 5. ca. 24. & 25.] CVtbertus, the neuewe of Ethelardus, began his reigne ouer the Westsaxons in the yere of grace. viiC. & xxix. and the thyrd yere of the seconde Theodoricus, thã kyng of

[1] payne. edit. 1533. trouble. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Thys. edit. 1533. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

Fraũce,

Fraūce, in tyme of whose reygne Colwolphus reygned in Northūbirland, to whom, as before in the story of Ethelarde is towchyd, holy Beda wrote the story callid Hystoria Anglicana. About the. ii. yere of ỹ reygne of this Cutbert, apperyd in the firmament. ii. blasynge starrys, or. ii. starrys with crestis, & cast, as it were, brennynge brondis towarde the north. And about the. vi. yere of the reygne of Cutbert, dyed the foresayde holy man Beda: the whiche in his tyme made and wrote. lxxviii. bokys, ouer & besyde his manyfolde werkys of vertue that he vsed by all his lyfe tyme. It is tolde of hym, ỹ in his later dayes, when he was blynde, he was brought by the frawde of his leder vnto a great hepe of stonys, the which his leder shewyd to hym was an assemble of men & women ỹ were thether comyn to here hym preche the worde of God. Than he thynkynge this reporte to be true, anon with great deuocion began there a colacion, and therof when he came to the ende, the stonys by dyuyne powar, in lykenes of a great multitude of people, sayd, "Amen," or after the sayinge of Antoninus, "Deo gracias." He was so noble of lernynge, & excellent in connynge, that the firste Sergius, pope[1] of Rome, sent for hym to assoyle questions there made in the popes[2] vnyuersyte: also his cunnynge is apparent in the bokes which he wrote, super Genesim, super Thobiam, super Esdriam, super Neemiam, with other which wold aske a longe tracte of tyme to reherse; with also the Omylies, made vpon the Gospellys. But I passe ouer. Whan he was dede he was buryed at the abbey of Gyruy: albe it ỹ comynyng is, that he restith nowe with saynt Cutbert of Durham. [Aboute the. ix. yere of this kynges reygne, the holy virgyn saynt Fredeswyd dyed. Of hir it is sayd, for velanye, that to hir shulde haue byn doon by a kynge in Oxynforde, that kynges of Englande, at the seasons syn, haue sparyd to entre that towne, for drede of mysshape. Whoso wyll knowe the circumstaunce of the mater, and the holynes of hir lyfe, let hym serche ỹ warkys of holy Gyldas, where he shall be suffycyently informed[3].] Soon after this tyme and season, Colwolpus, kynge of Northumbirlande, whan he had reygned. viii. yeres, he resygned his domynyon to his cosyn Egbertus, and was shorne a monke in ỹ abbey of Geruy, or after some wryters, in the abbey of Lyndefar, or holy Ilond. This[4], for as moche as lytle is shewyd of the dedys of Cutbert kyng of Westsaxons, therefore I haue made the more rehersayll of other thynges doon in his tyme: for of hym is no thynge lefte in wrytynge worthy to be remēbryd or myndeyd, sauynge, that he otē and many tymes made warre vpon Ethelwalde kynge of Mercia, and sped therein dyuersly; and lastlye dyed, when he had reygned, after mooste wryters. xvi. yeres.

¶ Capitulū. C. xlix.

Hildericus or Childericus, the second of that name, and sone of Theodorycus, began his reygne ouer ỹ Frenshemen in the yere of our Lordes incarnaciō. vii. C. and xl. and the. xi. yere of Cutbertus than kynge of Westsaxons: of the which, for his dulnesse and his other enormytes in hym exercysyd, lytle or no thynge of his actes or dedes are put in memorye. Ye haue before, in the story of Theodoryche, harde of the puyssaūt & strong dedis of Charlis Martell, the whiche styll, durynge his lyfe, contynued in great honoure, to the great suretye of ỹ realme of Fraūce, and to the great terroure & feere of theyr enemyes; whereof to reherse all the circūstaūce, it wolde occupy a longe tyme: wherfore shortlye to conclude, lastlye, after his manyfolde trauayllys, susteynyd for the weale of the realme of Fraunce, he dyed, leuyng after hym. iii. sonnes, that is to wytte, Charelmayne, Pepyn, and Gryffon, to the which he bequethid his possessions & goodis. But for ỹ yongest, named Gryffon, held hym not contentyd with suche bequeste as his fader to hym gaue, he therfore made warre vpon his other. ii. bretherne; the which behaued them so wysely that withoute notable batayll, they toke theyr sayde brother, and

Caroli Marcelli obitus.

[1] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] his, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Thus.

put

put hym in a safe kepynge: and that doon, the sayd. ii. bretherne assemblyd theyr knyghtes and sped them agayne Hanualde duke of Guyan, than rebelling agayne the crowne of Fraūce, ỹ which duke, with the countrey, brought[1] vnder theyr firste obeysaunce. After the which victory of the sayd countrey opteynyd, the sayd. ii. bretherne sped them to the cytie of Poytiers, where they, by aduyse of the nobles of the lande, consyderynge the vnablenesse of Hilderich the kynge, that he was vnsufficient to rule so great a charge, dyuydid ỹ lond of Fraūce atwene them; so that eyther of theym shulde, vnder the kynge, rule and gouerne suche porcyon as then there was to them appoynted. After ỹ which porcion, Charlmayne, herynge of the dyuycion & stryfe among the Almayns, as thynge belongynge to his charge, sped hym thyther in all haste; and after a parte of that countrey wastyd and spoylyd, and dyuerse of theyr strouge holdys caste playne with the erthe, he brought theym to due subieccion. And soon after he went agayn the Bauarys, the which he by his knyghtlye strengthe appeasyd in lyke wyse. In all whiche tyme and season, Pepyn, his brother, was occupyed in defendynge of the other parties of Fraunce.

Emperoure made mūke. Than this foresayde Charlemayne [steryd by dyuyne inspiracion, or as some auctoures meane, as he before tyme hadde auowyd[2],] sodeynlye renouncyd & gaue ouer all worldly prosperyte and domynyon, and with pure deuocyon yode to Rome; wher of the pope[3], than named Zacharias, he with all honoure and ioy was receyuyd, & of hym shorne a mūke, & dwellyd a season in an abbey of hymselfe buyldyd in the Mount Sarapt. But for he sawe that daylye drewe to hym many great lordes of Fraunce, by meane wherof he was let from his dyuyne seruyce and contemplacyon, he therfore yode thens to the Mounte Cassyne, and there endyd his naturall lyfe. After whose thus departynge or guydynge ouer[4], the sayd Charlemayn, Pepyn as all[5] onely ruler, toke vpō hym the charge of the hoole realme. In this passe tyme, Gryffon, the yonger brother, was enlargyd frome pryson, and by fauoure of his bretherne, was assigned to such possessyons as to hym was demed suffycyent, to lede an honorable lyfe. Howe be it, whan he sawe that his brother Pepyn had all the rule and he nothynge, disdaygned his sayde brother, & thoughte no lenger to contynue in that maner, but to be partener of the rule of the londe, as Charlemayne his brother had ben. And this to brynge to his purpose, he fled vnto the Saxons, which, as after shall appere, were named Normans; and with the prynce of theym, made alyaunce, so that with theyr ayde he mouyd warre agayne his brother, & assemblyd a stronge hoost. Wherof Pepyn beyng warnid, gadered his people & passinge thorow, came to the riuer of Sunaha, or after ỹ Latē tonge, Sinussaha; and Gryffon sped hym tyll he came to a ryuer called Onacre. Whan these. ii. hoostys were thus nere, meanes of treaty were sought on bothe partyes, durynge whiche communycacion, Gryffon hauynge suspeccion to ỹ Saxons that were on his partye, leste they wolde betraye hym, and yelde hym into the handes of his brother, made, for that tyme, a sleyght agremēt, and shortlye after departyd from the sayd Saxons, and fled to the Bauarys, or into Bayon, where he allying him with dyuerse nobles and barons of Fraunce, vexyd and dystourbed soore the duke and lorde of that coūtrey, called Tassylon, and lastly disceasyd hym of that lordeshyp. Wherof Pepyn beyng warnyd, sped hym thether w̄ great strength, and so bare hym, that he had the better of his brother, and restoryd the sayde Tassylon vnto his ryght, and after retornyd into Fraunce, ledyng with hym his brother Gryffon as his prysoner. But it was not longe after, that, by medyatours, the sayd Gryffon was recoūsyled to his brother: and for he shulde be content, and haue no more cause to vary w̄ his brother, there was assygned to hym, as witnessith the Frenshe Cronycle & other. xii. erldomes, with ī the realme of Fraunce; with the which boūteous gyfte, he not beyng content, ỹ selfe same yere fled vnto the Duke of Gyan, named Gayffer, and with hym newely conspired agayne his sayd brother; but lastly he was there slayne, as after shall appere. Pepyn than consyderynge in his mynde in what daunger and trowble

Fol. lxxx.

Concordia.

[1] they brought. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] geuinge ouer of. [5] "all," *omitted.*

his father, before hym, had rulyd the lande, and he nowe for his tyme in lyke agonye & trowble; and the kynge, to whom belonged all the charge, kepte his paleys and folowed all his delytes and pleasures, without takynge of any payne: wherefore, consyderynge the premysses, & for a reformacion of the same, sent his ambassade to the pope[1], then beynge Ambassade. Zachary, before named, askynge his aduyse, whether it was more necessary or welfull for the realme of Fraunce that he shuld be admytted for kynge, ỹ dyd no thynge but applye his mynde to all pleasure of his body, without care or charge takynge vpon hym for the guydynge of the londe and the people of the same, or he that tooke vpon hym all the charge & payne in defence of the lande, & kepyng of ỹ people in due subieccyon? To this the pope[1] answerde and wrote vnto Pepyn, that he was best worthy and mooste profytable for the realme to be admytted for kyng, that ruled welle the cominaltye by iustice & prudence, and the enemyes thereof defēdythe and subduethe by his policy and manhodde. The whyche answere thus reseyued frome the pope[1], and declared vnto the lordes and barons of the realme, and annone, they, of one assentte and mynde, proceded and wentte to the deposynge and puttīge downe of theyr kynge and gouernowre Hylderyche; and ī shorte space after, closed hym in a monastery or house of religion, where[2] he had ben occupyer of a kynges rome by ỹ name only. x. yeres: and that doon, the Frenshemen electyd and chase Pepyn for theyr soueraygne and kyng. In the which Hylderich or Childerich, endyd the lyfe or progeny of Meroneus, of whom the Frenshe kynges lynyally discendyd, by cōtynuaunce of tyme, as folowith.

Meroneus	x. yeres.
Childericus	xxiiii. yeres.
Clodoueus	xxx. yeres.
Dagobertus	xiii. yeres.
Clodoueus	xvi. yeres.
Clotharius	iiii. yeres.
Theodoricus	iii. yeres.
Childericus	ii. yeres.
Lotharius	l. yeres.
Chilpericus	xxiiii. yeres.
Lotharius	xliii. yeres.
Clodoueus	iii. yeres.
Childebertus	xvii. yeres.
Dagobertus	xi. yeres.
Danyell	v. yeres.
Theodoricus	xiii. yeres.
Theodoricus	xix. yeres.
Hildericus	x. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. C.l.

SIgebertus or Sigbertus, the cosyn of Cutbert, laste kynge of the Westsaxons, began his reygne ouer the sayd Saxons in the yere of ỹ incarnacion of Chryst. D. CC. and xlv. & the. v. yere of Hildericus, than kynge of Fraunce. He was cruell and tyrannous to his subiettes, & turnyd theyr[3] lawes and customes of his forefaders after his owne wyll & pleasure: and for that, one of the noble men of his domynyon, somedeale sharply aduertysyd hym to chaunge his maners, and to haue[4] hym more prudentlye toward his people, he therfore malyciously causyd hym to be put to cruell deth. About this tyme, Egbertus, after the yonger Wylfryde, was made archebisshop of Yorke, the whiche brought

[1] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] when. [3] the, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] behaue.

agayne thither the pall that his predecessours hadde forgoon, syn the tyme that the first Paulinus had lefte that see, and fled to Rochestre, in Kent, and there lefte the sayd pall. This Egbert was brother vnto Egbert, kynge of Northumbirland, by whose assistence and comforte he dyd many thynges for the weale of ỹ see, and made there a noble library. Thã it folowith for soo moche as the kynge Sigebert contynuyd in his ill malyce, & cruell cõdicions, his subiectis conspyryd agayn hym, and put hym from all kyngly dignitye, soo that he fell after to great dissolacion and mysery, in such wyse, ỹ he was founden after in a wood or desolate place, wandryng alone without comforte: where he beynge so founden by a swyne herde or vylayne, some tyme belongynge to the erle Cõbranus, that he before tyme wyckydlye had slayne, in auengement of his sayd lordes deth, slewe hym in the sayd place. Which sayde Sigebertus was thus depryuyd from all honoure, when he, after mooste wryters, had reygned or tyrannysyd two yeres.

¶ Capitulum. C.li.

[Li. 5. ca. 25.] KEnulphus, of the lyne or bloode of Cerdicus firste kynge of Westsaxons, began his domynyon ouer ỹ sayd Westsaxons, in the yere of grace. DCC. &. xlviii. and the. vii. yere of Hyldericus, than kynge of Fraũce. The vertue of this man passid his fame; for after he had with thagrement of the Westsaxons, depryuyd Sygebert, theyr kynge, from his auctorite, & regally, he firste appeasyd dyuerse murmures & grudgis ỹ kyndelyd amonge his subiectis, and set his lordeshyp in great quyetnesse and rest, touchyng theyr cyuyle discorde. About the. viii. yere of the reygne of this Kenelphus, Offa slewe a tyrant Beoruredus[1], that before had slaine Ethelwalde kyng of Mercia: after whos dethe the sayde Offa, as neuew to the sayd Ethelwald, reygned as kynge of that prouynce.

Fol. lxxxi.

Offa dedis.

Of this Offa is told many notable dedes, whereof somwhat I entende to shewe. He had warre with the Northumbres, and theym for a tyme subduyd: he also had warre with Etheldrede, kynge of Eest Anglys, and with Egbert, otherwyse callyd Pren, kynge of Kent, whõ he toke prysoner, and led hym bounden with hym into Mercia. Thã after thyse victoryes, Offa buyldyd ỹ church of Wynchcom, in tyme of the whiche buyldynge, in presens of. xiii. bisshops, and many other great astatis, kyng Offa enlargyd the sayd Egbert of imprysonement. In tokẽ whereof, ỹ people beyng there present, made suche an exclamaciõ of ioye and gladnes that the churche thereof range. This kynge Offa hadde suche displeasure vnto the cytezens of Cauntorbury ỹ he remoued the archebysshopes see, by the agrement of the first Adryan than pope[2], vnto Lychefeld. He also chasyd ỹ Brytõs or Welshemen into Walys, and made a famous dyke atwene Walys and thevtter bondys of Mercia, or mydle Inglond, the which, to this day, is namyd Offedych: & after buyldyd there a churche, which longe tyme after was callyd Offekyrke. [This Offa also, by angelycall inspyracyon, translatid the holy prothomartyr seynt Albon, and was firste founder of that famous monastery, ouer that holy body; the which, syn the firste foundacion, hath, by sundry tymes, been peryssbed and hurte by Danys and other, and newely, syn that tyme, reedyfyed. This holy Albon was martyred, as before apperith in the. lxvii. chaptre, and story of Constancius, aboute the yere of our lord. CC. lxxx. and xvii. by which reason he shulde lye, or he were translatyd, ouer. CCCC. lx. yeres[3].] This Offa also maryed one of his doughters to Brigthricus, that was kynge of Weste Saxons. And for that in his tyme was varyaunce between hym & the Frenshemen, that passage of marchauntes was forbodyn; therfore he sent that famous doctor, Anselmus, vnto Charlis the great, then kyng of Fraunce, to comon the means of a peace, which Charlys had, after, this Anselmus in suche fauour, that he became his disciple. Than retourne we to Kenelphus, the which, before tyme, had[4] often warre with Offa, & with hym many conflyctes & lastly agreed. About the. xi. yere of this

Translacio sancti Albani.

[1] named Beoruredus. [2] Bishop. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [4] had had.

Kenelphus,

Kenelphus, Egbert, kynge of Northumbrys, renoũcyd his kynglye dignyte, and became a mũke. And lastly, the sayde Offa, when he had reygned ouer Mercya. xxxix. yeres, as sayth Guydo, he lefte the kyngedome to his sone, also namyd Kenelphus, and yode to Rome. And this Kenelphus, kyng of Westsaxon, kepte strongly his lordeshyp agayne [Li. 5. ca. 27.] the powar of all his enemyes, & had his subiectes in due ordre of obedyence. Lastly, Kenulph was supprysed with the loue of a woman ỹ he kepte at Merton, and haũtyd hir more secretlye than stoode with his honoure. Whereof hauyng knowlege a kynnesmã of Sigebert, late kynge, entendyng to reuenge the deposyng of his kynnesmã, awaytid ỹ tyme, & beset ỹ house where Kenulph & his paramoure was, smally accõpanyed: but so soone as Kenulphe had espyed his enemyes, he set vpõ thẽ, whiche, as sayth Polycronycon, were. lxxx. in nombre; and foughte with them a longe whyle; but in the ende he was slayne of Clyto or Clyton his enemye. It was not longe after, or worde sprang of the kynges deth; wherefore Offricus, master thã beynge[1] of ỹ kynges knyghtis, tooke with hym a sertayne of ỹ sayd chiualry, and pursued vpon the sayde murderars, and lastly encountered with them, & slewe the sayd Clyto theyr capytayne, with the moor parte of hys company. And that done, he retournyd to Merton, & there toke the corps of Kenulphe, and with great solempnyte conueyed it vnto Wynchestre; and[2] it was with all reuerence enteryd, whan he had rulyd the West Saxons, (albeit that of hym the Englysshe Cronycle makyth no mencion,) xxxi. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. C.liii.

PIpinus, the seconde sone of Charlis Martell, begã his reygne ouer the Frenshe men in the yere of grace. CCCCCCC. and. l. & the second yere of Kenulphus, than kynge of Westsaxon. This, as before ye haue harde, was electyd to that honoure, by assent of pope Zachary[3], and the cõsent of the noblys of Fraunce; and, after, he was confermyd of the seconde Stephã, whan he sat after as pope[4]. The firste yere of his reygne, the Saxons, otherwyse called Danys, or Normannys, began to warre vpon hym; the whiche he incountered at the ryuer of Isayr, and them knyghtly ouercame, and chasyd & brought them fynally vnder his subieccion. And in his retornynge into the coũtrey of Fraũce, worde was brought to hym of the deth of his brother Gryffon, the which, as before is sayd, fled vnto Gayferus, duke of Guyan, & there helde hym, to the ende for to haue causid the people of Guyan to haue rebellyd & to make warre agayne his brother Pepyn: whereof whan some of theym consyderyd the malicious and vnstable cõdicions of hym, in auoydyng more daũger to theyr[5] countrey by his meanys myght ensue, fell[6] suddenly vpon hym, & slewe hym. Whan Pepyn was retournyd into Fraunce, he, by the aduyse of Remygius then bishop of Roan, amendyd the state of the church, & causyd Goddis service to be songe, and[7] ỹ before tyme had byn with lytle deuociõ and reuerence doon and vtteryd: and other spirituall thynges ỹ before were misorderyd, causyd[8] them to be set in a better fourme. And, shortly after, Stephan, abouc named, confermyd this Pepyn & his heyres for kynges of Fraunce; and of hym axyd ayde and assystẽce to withstond the powar of Aystulphus, than kynge of Longobardis, ỹ which then warryd vpon certayne landes belongynge vnto the Church of Rome; the whiche kynge Pepyn to hym with good wyll grauntyd. And in the begynnynge of the nexte yere folowyng, with a great hooste enteryd the boũdys of Italy, and into[9] the same made sharpe and cruell warre: in defence whereof the sayd Aystulphus made his beste prouysyon, and defendyd the straytes and mountaynes; by the which ỹ Frenshe men shulde haue further entre into hys londe, & there gaue vnto his enmyes a stronge fight. Albe it, he with his people was forcyd to gyue backe; & for his refuge toke the cytie of Papye, whereof Pepyn hauyng informacion, beclyped the sayd cytie with a strong syege. Whan Aystulphus had a season de-

[1] then beynge mayster. [2] where. edit. 1533. 1542. [3] Zachary bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] bishop. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] that to their. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] they fell. [7] "and," *omitted* in the later editions. [8] he caused. [9] in.

fendyd his cytie, and sawe, by experyence, dayly, his enmyes encreace, & his power mynysshe and feble, ī avoydyng of extreme daunger, he sought meanes of peace; and in suche wyse pursued the same, that he fynallye hadde peace to hym graũted, vpon cõdicion that he by a day lymytted shuld restore to ỹ pope[1] all ryght to his church belõgyng, ỹ he, or any for hym, held, or before tyme had withholdyn, w̄ other thynges concernynge the sayd peace. And for the parfourmaunce of the sayde condicions, he delyueryd immediatly good hostagys & pledgis. After whiche peace thus substancially confermed, Pepyn with his hooste with great tryumphe retornyd into Fraunce; but notwithstondyng this assuryd peace by[2] confyrmacyon of othe, & other circumstaunce before shewyd, the nexte yere folowynge, he trustynge vpon better fortune of warre, denyed and reuokyd all his former graũtis, and refusyd to do as before he had fermely promysed. For this vnstablenes and vntrewthe, to remedy, the pope[3], of newe, made requeste vnto Pepyn: the which, without longe taryinge, reassemblyd his knyghtes & made good spede towarde Italy, and not without daunger passyd the mountaynes, & fynallye besyegyd Aystulphus within the fore sayde cytie of Papy, by meane whereof he lastly was constraynyd to restore sertayne cyties, and other possessions that before tyme he had takyn from the pope[3]. After the whiche agremēt endyd and perfyghted, withī a shorte terme ỹ sayd Aistulphus beyng in his disporte of huntyng, fell from his horse, or with his horse, by vyolence whereof he was soo broysyd that he dyed shortlye after, whan he had rulyd the Longobardis, Lumbardis, or Italyons. viii. yeres. After this victory thus obteyned by Pepyn, the lordes and prynces that dwellyd about hym feryd, and drad hym, & sought to hym for allyaunce, and amyte: amonge the whiche, Tassylon, duke of Bayon, before spokyn of, that newly had conspyred agayn hym, yelded hym to ỹ kyng, and became his trew lyege man, and sware to hym and to his two sonnys feawte. But the Saxons, which in the Frenshe boke are namyd Soysons, cowde neuer holde them content without distorbynge of the Frensh men: wherefore kynge Pepyn assemblyd a great hoost, & made toward thē, & had w̄ them dyuerse cõflyctes, & bataylys; so that at lengthe they were dryuen to ask peace, vpon condicion that, yerely after, they shulde yelde vnto the kynge of Fraunce. CCC. good horsys in way of trybute. And that doone, he retournyd into Fraunce, and immediatly after ordeyned, by the aduyse of his counceyll, a court or counceyll, the whiche at this day is called the parlyament of Fraunce; and is lyke vnto the court of requestys, nowe at this day holden in Englonde. How be it that is of moche gretter resorte of people, and therewith veray delayeous; in soo moche, that as I haue herde credyble persones say, some one mater hath hangyd there, in dispucion[4], ouer. xx. yeres: the whiche parlyament at this daye is kepte at Parys, at Roan, and other. ii. placis of the londe. And for iugys of this cõuceyll or parlyament is deputyd, of ỹ kynges coste in euery place where it is kepte, an hundred parsonys, what of one, & what of a nother. Thā it folowith: Gayfer, duke of Guyan, before myndyd, of wyll more than of reason, set a trybute, or imposycion, vpon the spirituall londis within his land, without agrement of the clergy: wherefore the bisshoppes, for a redresse and remedy, complayned them vnto kyng Pepyn. Then Pepyn sent vnto hym, & monesting hym ī fayre & goodly manner, that he shuld exchew and forbere suche doynge; and, for the duke wolde not abstayne for the kynges cõmaundement, he in shorte whyle assemblyd his army, and entred the terrytory of Guyan, in wastyng and spoylynge the countrey; & in so short whyle after, put the duke in suche feere, that he was fayne to aplye hym to the kynges mynde, and pleasure, and bounde hym to restore to the clergy, all that he hadde before takyn by extort power. But whā the sayde duke was assuryd of ỹ kynges retorne into Fraunce, he gatheryd a strength of knyghtes, and sent theym to the cytie of Chalours in Burgoyne, and dydde that he cowde or myghte, to the domage of that towne & countrey. In which season the kynge was at the towne or cytie called Dury, whyder, & to the whiche towne tydynges were brought to him of the vn-

Fol. lxxxii.

[1] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the. [3] bishoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] disputation.

trew dealyng of this foresayde duke, wherewith he beynge sore discontent, retournyd with his people into Guyan, & therein bete down many strong holdis & castellis, & took or wonne, at lengthe, Burbon, Cancaruyle, & Cleremoũt. And from thens wastyng the countrey with iron and fyre, yode tyll he came to Lymoges; &, for that wynter came on hande, ŷ kyng for ŷ case and sauegarde of his people, strēgthyd these foresayd cyties, townys, & holdis, that he before had wonne: and than yode to a place callyd Cause or Caus, and there kept his Cristmas & Ester. And whan the new season was come, not forgettynge his former purpose, reentryd the foresayde duchy of Guyan, in wastynge the lōde, as he before had doon; & after toke by strength, the cyties of Burgies and Towrs: in which season and tyme, ŷ duke wolde neuer appere in playne felde, but kepte hym in strōge holdys; and as one was wonne, ay' fled into an other. This warre thus contynuynge, the countrey and people were sore empouerysshed: wherefore, they lastly consyderynge the obstinacy of theyr duke, with also the great daunger which they stoode in, murderyd theyr sayd duke, & after yeldyd thē to the coũtrey, to ŷ kynges obeysaũce, with all suche treasure and iewellis, as to the sayde duke belongyd; whereof, Pepyn offerd a great parte of theym vnto seynt Denys. This warre thus endyd, with many other notable werkys, whereof the rehersayll in order wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme, this victorious prynce Pepyn was vexyd w̄ greuous sykenes; wherefore, in all haste, he sped hym vnto seynt Martynes, where he made certeyne oblaciōs & prayers, & thens, his sykēnes encreasyng, was cōueyed vnto Parys, where he shortly after dyed, whē he had reygned as kyng by ŷ terme of. xviii. yeres, leuynge after him. ii. sonnes, that is for to say, Charlemayne, and Charlys.

¶ Capitulum. C.liiii.

CArolomanus and Charlys, sonnys of Pepyn, began theyr reygne ioyntly ouer the Frenshmen, in the yere of our Lord. DCC. ixviii., and ŷ. xx. yere of Kenulphe, than kynge of Westsaxons: soo that Charlemayne had to his parte, myddle Fraunce, and Charlis had Austracy, w̄ ŷ other deale of Fraunce. Of the elder brother, Charlemayne, lytle is lefte in memory, for he dyed whan he had reygned lytle ouer. ii. yeres; wherefore to Charlys fell the hole realme of Fraunce, the whiche, of all ŷ nobles was ioyously admytted. It was not long after Hunyldys, whō Pepyn by his lyfe had ordeygned ruler of Guyan, rebellyd agayne ŷ kyng; wherefore Charlis preparyd anon his army, and sped hym thyther, and in proces of tyme, constrayned the sayd Hunildus to forsake ŷ coũtrey, and for his tuyssyon to flee vnto Lupus, than duke of Gascoyne, wherfore Charlis beyng aduertysed, sent his message to the sayd Lupus, wyllynge and cōmaũdynge hym, ŷ he in spedy maner shuld sende to hym his rebell Hunyldus, or ellis he wolde, with his army, inuade and spoyle his people and countrey. Vpon resseyt of whiche message, Lupus, by counceyll, *Fol. lxxxiii* condescendyd to the kynges pleasure, so that he causyd Hunyldus to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace and mercy; wherewith the kynge was so well contentyd, that vpon assūraũce takyn of the sayd Hunyldus, that there after he shulde be of good aberynge to warde the kyng, he clerely forgaue vnto hym all his former offence: and after he had set that countrey in a rule & order, he retornyd into Fraũce, where to hym, soone after, came an embassade frome the firste Adryan, than pope[2], requyryng hym of ayde agayne Desyderius, than kynge of Lōgobardys, the which thā had taken from the Churche of Rome, many cyties & other possessions. Than Charlys acceptynge the popes[2] requeste, or he began any warre agayne the sayde Desyderius, sent vnto hym an embassade, wyllynge & requyryng hym in all honorable[3] wyse, to restore vnto the Churche of Rome, all suche possessions as he from the same Churche before tyme had takyn, & yet with helde; & also to refrayne hym from all suche warre as he dayly made vpō the londis of the sayde

[1] he. [2] B of Rome, edit. 1542, 1559. [3] moste humble wise, edit. 1559.

Churche,

Churche. But for he sawe no frute ensue of that message, he made prouysion for all thynge nedeful to suche a iourney, and shortlye after passyd the mountaynes, not all without batayle, and in processe cõstraynyd Desyderius to take the cytie of Vercyle, where, after he had refresshed his Italyens, he gaue vnto the Frenshe men, a sharpe and cruell batayle: but in the ende Desyderius was compellyd to forsake the feeld, and fled after to the
Historia. forenamyd cytie of Papy, where he kepte hym, as after shall appere, a longe whyle. And for to shewe you somewhat of the foresayde batayle, ye shall vnderstõde that for the great occision[1] of men that there was slayne, the place was callyd long after Mortaria: that is to meane, in our vulgare, or mother tonge, ỹ place of deth. In this fyght were slayne, amonge other. ii. knyghtis greatly fauryd, Amys and Amylyon, of whõ some fablys are reportyd, because they were so lyke of semblaunt. These. ii. knyghtes, as wytnessith the Frenshe story, and also Antoninus, were brought vp in the courte of the foresayde Charlis, and with hym well cherysshed, and fynally here slayne, and buryed, after some wryters, in the two chapellys, whiche in the foresayde place were buyldyd to praye for the great multytude of the soulis of these knyghtis that there were slayne. But who that is desyrous to knowe the whole lyfe of these. ii. foresayde knyghtes, let hym ouer se the thyrde Capytre of the. xiiii. tytle of Antoninus, and he shall there fynde a compendyous and goodly story, the which for length I ouer passe, and retorne my style agayne to Charlys; the whiche whan he was ware that Desyderyus had takyn this cytie of Papy, and it greatly strengthyd both with men and vytell, in suche wyse that he well vnderstoode ỹ it myght not be shortly wonne, he therefore leyde about it a stronge syege, with the ouer syght of sure and wyse captaynys, & after yode to Rome to vysyte the holy apostles Petyr and Poule, and also to speke with the pope[2] for dyuers maters, where he taryed a great parte of the wynter folowynge, and after retornyd vnto Papy, whiche as yet was not delyuerid nor gyuen vp. But it was not longe after his retorne ỹ the cytie was wonne, wherein was takyn as prysoner the sayde Desyderius, with his wyfe and chyldren. The whiche, to make shorte processe, he at lengthe forcyd hym to restore vnto the pope[2], all suche possessions as he before tyme hadde takyn frome his Churche, and addyd more there vnto the two cities of Spoletys and Beneuent; and fynally depryued hym of all kyngly honoure, and lad hym as prysoner into Fraunce, and as a prysoner or exyle from his naturall cõtrey, kept hym at ỹ cytie of Lyons, as wytnessith Cronyca Cronicarum, Iacobus Philippus, and other: and after, by agrement, ỹ pope[2] gaue that kyngedome vnto Pypynus, his sone, the whiche contynued so in the Frenshemens rule and possessiõ, ouer the terme of. CC. yeres. For this victorious dede, thus obteynyd by Charlis, the forenamyd pope[2] grauntyd vnto hym many great pryuylegis; amõge the nõbre wherof, one was, that no pope[2] duryng the lyfe of Charlis, shulde be I no wyse electyd or chosyn, tyll there came from hym
Historia. a cõmaundement to go to that eleccion; and also he graũtyd vnto hym inuestiture of benefycis spirituall: which grauntis and pryuylegys were confermyd, and auctorysyd in a synode of an hundreth and. liii. bysshoppes kept in Fraunce, by cõmaundement of the foresayde Adryan. Of this Charlis, longe and tedyous it were to tell the hole of his actes & dedys, wherfore I entende to towche but a parte of them; and for the other deale, I remytte to them ỹ haue further desyre of knowlege, vnto the bookys of Turpyn, and Egyueaux, chaplayn to the sayd Charlis, or ellis to the sayde bysshop Turpyn, which wrote a longe werke of his vertuous dedys.

¶ Capitulum. C.lv.

This Charlys Marcyall[3], after his retorn into Fraũce, without there longe tarying, sped hym agayne to ỹ forenamyd people callyd Soysons, or Saxõs, which newlye rebellyd, and warryd sharpely vpõ them, and fought with them sondry batayllys: amonge the whiche. ii.

[1] occasyon, edit. 1542. [2] B. of Rome, edit. 1542, 1559. [3] Martell, edit. 1542, 1559.

ben

ben specially notyd, whereof ỳ one was foughten at a place callyd Onacre, and that other at the ryuer of Esam or Hesayre, by which. ii. batayllys the Saxōs lost moche of theyr people, and were so sore feblysshed, that they were fayne, shortly after, to put them in the mercy of Charlis, by reason wherof he bonde them vnto certayne lawys and ordynauncis, were of speciallye one, as pryncypall of theym was, that they frome ỳ day forth shulde renounce and forsake theyr worshipynge of idollys, and false Goddis, and beleue in ỳ fayth of Crystis churche; with many other. For the parformynge of the which couenauntis, the kynge toke of theym good pledgys, and hostagys; and moreouer to ỳ ende to mynysshe & make lesse theyr strengthe, he chase out of them. x. M. of ỳ moost apte men for the warrys, and cōueyed them with hym into Fraunce; & after he had clothyd them with the mantell of baptym, takynge of them assuryd othe to be trewe to hym, and to his heyres, he after inhabyted them in dyuerse placis of his realme, of the whiche people, as affermith myn auctor, discendyd the Flemynges, & Brabāders, & thus endyd ỳ warre of ỳ Saxōs, or Soysons, ỳ had contynuyed by the terme of many yeris passyd. And forthwith, by assent & aduyse of his cōceyll, he preparyd all abilimētis & ordynaūce of warre, to goo agayn ỳ Hunis ỳ thē had wonne great groūd in Spayne; and for to brynge this warre to the more effectuall ende, he chase. xii. perys, which, after some wryters, are callyd dozeperys, or kyngs, of ỳ which. vi. were bisshopys, and. vi. temporall lordes, whereof, thre were named dukes, &. iii. erlys bisshopes, or. iii. arche bisshopes, and. iii. bisshopes[a], of ỳ tēporall lordes. iii. were dukes, & thre erlys; that is to saye, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Nenstria, or Normandy, and the duke of Guyan: and for. iii. erlys, the erle of Palātyne, the erle of Tholouse, and the erle of Chāpeyn, of the whiche also some wryters, that ỳ famous knyghtes, Rowlande & Olyuer, were. ii. as Roulande, erle of Palantyne, and Olyuer, erle of Tholouse. Whan Charlis had preparyd all thynges necessarye to this great iourney, he fyrste made his pylgrymage vnto seynt Denys, and there offerd ryche and great gyftes, and after procedyd towarde his iourney; & fyrste besyegyd the cytie callyd Papilonia[1], the which, after. iii. monethys, he subdued to his obeysaūce. This cytie stoode i the entre of Spayne, in the montaynes callyd Montes Pireni, after ỳ obteynyng of which cytie, [& by miracle of saynt Iames,][+] as sayth Antoninus, Charlis commaunded all such as to Crystes fayth wolde be conuertyd, shulde be sauyd, & ỳ other to passe by sentēce of ỳ swerde. And after he had wonne the fyrst cytie, he wan all the countrey adioynynge to the same, by reason wherof, he caste great fere vnto the miscreauntis, and wan by his strengthe, and by appoyntment, so that they became his trybutaryes, these cōtreys and prouynces hereafter ensuynge. That is to say, as wytnessith Vyncent Historiall, Antoninus, & other, ỳ lāde of Laudeluffe, the lande of Pardis, the lande of Castyll, the lande of Mawrys, ỳ prouynce of Nauerne, the coūtrey of Portyngall, the londe of Byscaye, & the londe of Palarge, and distroyed i them all idollys, and buyldyd in theym churches and monasteryes, and broughte the more partye of them to Crystis relygion: & moost specially the church of saynt Iamys he buylded in Compostella w̄ sumptuous coste, and gaue therevnto great possessyons to the meynteynynge of the dyuyne seruyce of God, & the mynysters of the same. And ouer ỳ, with the treasoure that he gate i these foresayde countreys, he buylded many dyuerse churches, as well in other placis as there. Longe it were to tell all the circumstaunce of this vyage, & victoryes of the same, wherefore I passe ouer. And when Charlys had sped his nedys, he had good wyll to retourne in to Fraunce, in the which retorne Charlys castynge no dought nor parell, by the treason of Gauelon, a knyght or ruler of Gascoyne, ỳ which Gauelon had receyuyd of a Paynym kynge, namyd Marsyll, great & ryche gyftes for to betray the hoost of Charlis, was dyssauyd, as after shewith. This Gauelon, ỳ better to compasse and bryng to effecte his purpose, aduysed Charles, with a sertayne of his people, to passe the porte of Cesayre, and to leue

Fol. lxxxiiii.

Twelue peerys.

Historia.

Treason.

[a] Of the whyche bysshoppes thre were named dukes, whych were archbyshopes, and thre erlys, which were byshoppes. [1] affermc. [2] Pampilona. [+] *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

be

be hynde hym ī the rerewarde Rowlande and Olyuer, with. xx. M. of the resydue of his hoost; and when the kynge was passyd with his hooste, he gaue warnynge vnto ỹ forenamyd Marsyll, & other, that they shulde close the sayde Rowlande in the place cailyd Rounceuale, the which, accordynge to that false cõceyll, with an hoost of. lx. M. or moo, beclypped Rowlande and his people on euery syde, and there fell vpon the Cristen men, & slewe theym withoute mercy or pytye, in the whiche fyghte, notwithstondynge the great slaughter that they made of the Sarasyns, fynally was there slayne the sayde Rowlande, Olyuer, & many of the nobles of Fraunce. But this Gauelon scapyd not without punyshemẽt, for he was after taken, and with other to hym cõdescẽdyng, were put to moost cruell dẽth, at ỹ cytie of Aquysgrany. Of this great victory of Charlys, in subduynge of Spayne, are dyuerse oppynyons; for ỹ Frenshe Cronycle & Antoninus agreen that it shulde be after that Charlis was ennoynted emperoure of Rome: but master Robert Gagwyn, and other, saye that it was before he was emperoure. Thus this victorious prince retornynge into Fraũce, subdued than after dyuerse countreys, as Gallia Narbonencis, Campania, or Champeyn, and Bencuentana, and other, which of one mynde had rebellyd agayne hym. About the. xxxi. yere of his reygne, as mooste wryters agre, sertayne personys of Italy cõspyred agayn Leo the .iii., than pope[1] of Rome, & hym vngoodlye entretyd; but he lastlye escapynge theyr daunger, cam vnto Charlys, and requyryd hym of his comforte and ayde, wherof he was not daungerous. But whan he had well serchyd, and vnderstoode that the pope[2] had susteyned wronge, he with all diligence sped hym thether, and after he had subduyd the popes[3] enemyes, he restoryd ỹ sayd pope[4] to his former dygnyte, for the which dede, and other that he had done for the defence of the Churche of Rome, he was, by the sayd pope[4] Leo, or Leon, sacryd or enoynted emperoure of Rome.

¶ Capitulum. C.lvi.

CHarlis than thus sacryd as emperoure, in the yere of our Lord. DCCC. and one, whan he had accomplysshed his nedys for the weale of the Churche, and the pope[3], he than with great gyftes retournyd into Fraũce. In this tyme, or soone after, as witnessith the Frensh Cronycle, landed in Fraũce, ỹ famous clerkys Alcinnus, or Albinus, Rabanus, and Iohannes, and other of the dyscyples of Beda, the which Charlis receyuyd with great honour; and by theyr counsaylys instytude[5] & ordeyned, firste, the scole of Parys, and an other at Papia, in Italy, before myndyd. Wherfore it shulde seme ỹ the sayd Alcinnus[6] was not sent for any entreatyse of peace a twene the. ii. realmes of Fraunce and great Brytayne, as, in the story of Kenulphus, before is shewyd. After this tyme and season, many great and noble dedis were doon by this sayde Charlis, & by his sõnes & capytaynes vnder hym, and by his cõmaundement. And for the parsonage of so noble a prynce shulde be had in mynde, therefore dyuerse auctours testyfye, that he was fayre and welfarynge of body, and sterne of looke and of face: his body was. viii. foote long, and his armes and leggys well lengthed and strengthed after the proporcion of ỹ body; his face of a spanne brede, and his berde very longe. Of his strength wonders are tolde: he wolde at one meale eat an hole hare, or. ii. hennys, or an hole gose, or lyke quãtite of other meete, & drynke therto a lytle wyne mynglyd with water. Amonge his other notable dedys, he made a brydge ouer the ryuer of Ryne, of. v. C. pace long, by ỹ cytie of Magũce; and he buyldyd, as witnessith Antoninus, and other, as many abbayes or monasteryes, as there ben letters in ỹ crosse rowe of the. A. B. C.: and in the fronte of eyther of the sayde abbayes, after the tyme of theyr foundacion, he pyght or set a letter of golde of the value of an hundred pounde turnoys, which is nere to the value of Englysshe money now eurraunt. xx.

Statuta Caroli.

Historia.

Fol. lxxxv.

[1] Byshop, edit. 1542. 1559.
[2] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559.
[3] Bysshops, edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.
[5] Instytuted, edit. 1533. 1559.
[6] Alleuynus, edit. 1559.

mai

marke for a pounde turnoys, is moche lyke. ii.s. viii.d. starlyng; & a. li. Parysyen is nere vpon. xl.d. starlynge; but it stōdith at no sertente for heyghtyng, & lowyng of theyr coynes. He also buldyd, or new reedyfyed the cytie of Aquysgrany, & endowid the church of our lady there, with many great gyftes and presyous relykes, whiche yet remayne there to this daye: in whiche cytie, and nere about, he vsyd moche to abyde and lye. And for his great dedis & victoryes he deseruyd to be namyd Charlis the great, & for all his great myghte and honoure, yet that not withstōdyng, he was meke and lowly in his herte, and mylde and gracious to the poore, and marcyfull to wretchis and nedy, and set his sonnes to lerne, as well letters, as marcyall & knyghtlye featis; and his doughter he set to spynnynge and woll warke. And he was experte in all spechis, so that he nedyd none interpretours to explane or expresse to hym ŷ messagys of straūge ambassatours: and in the tyme of his dyner or meales, he vsyd to haue radde before hym lessons and pystellys; and specially of the warkys of saynt Austen, de Ciuitate Dei. In hym was no thynge to be dyscōmendyd, but that he helde his dougter so longe vnmaryed. This noble man Charlis, iii. yeres before his deth, he had peace with all coūtreys, as well suche as were obeysaunt vnto the empyre, as suche as longed to his domynyon of Fraūce. In the which tyme of rest, amonge other godlye and vertuous dedis, he made his testament, and distributyd his tēporall moueable goodis in. iii. partis; wherof, ii. partis he gaue to maynteynyng of bisshopis and other mynysters of the churche, and for the reparacyon of churches & necessaryes to the same, and to ŷ maynteynynge of the dyuyne seruyce of God, with also the ayde and fedyng of poore and nedy people; and the thyrde parte to his children and other of his allye. Ye shall vnderstonde this Charlis had ī his treasory specyally notyd, before his other iewellys. iiii. tables or bordys, whereof. iii. were of syluer, and ŷ. iiii. of golde. In one was grauyn the lykenes of the cytie of Constantyne the Noble; the whiche he bequath to ŷ Church of Rome. In an other was grauyn or wroughte, ŷ lykenes of the cytie of Rome; & that he gaue to ŷ bisshop of Reynes, & to his church: & the. iii. table of syluer wherein was grauyn ŷ Mappa Mundi, and the. iiii. of golde, he gaue to his sonnes. Many thynges there were, and causys of the exaltynge of ŷ fame of this prynce. But amonge other, one is specyally remembryd of myne auctour Gagwyne, ŷ the kynge of Percy than rulynge a great parte of ŷ Oryent, sent vnto Charlys an ambassade honorable w̄ many ryche presentis: among ŷ whiche was an horologe of[1] a clocke of laten, of a wonder artyficiall makyng, that at euery oure of the daye & nyght, whan the sayde clocke shulde stryke, imagys on horse backe aperyd out of sondrye placis, and after departyd agayne by meane of sertayne vyces. He sent to hym also tentis of ryche sylke, & baulme naturall, with certayne olyfauntys, requyrynge hym of amytye & frēdshyp: & in lyke wyse dyd the emperoure of Cōstantyne ŷ noble. Albeit ý he, ī his mynde, was not well cōtentyd ŷ the pope[2] had in ý wyse deuyded the empyre, & set such a man of myght in ŷ rome therof. This Charlis had dyuerse wyues; but of ŷ secōde, namid Eldegard, he reseyuid. iii. sonnes: ŷ that is to say, Lewys, Pepyn, & Charlis; ŷ whiche Pepyn he made kyng of Lōgobards or Italy, as before is shewyd of his notable dedys.[3] What shuld I lōger hold processe of this great cōqueroure? for lyke as I before shewyd, of his notable dedis myght I make a great volume if I shulde of thē shewe the clerenesse, and ŷ circūstaūce of euery conqueste that he in his tyme acheuyd. But deth ŷ is to all persones egall, lastlye tooke hym in his dymme daūce, whā he had ben kyng of Fraūce, with his brother, and alone. xlvii. yeres; of the whiche, he rulyd ŷ empyre, as before is shewyd. xiiii. yeres: in the yere of his age, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycles. lxxii. and was buryed at Aquysgrany with great pompe, in ŷ yere of our Lordis incarnaciō. DCCC. and. xv. with this superscription vpon his toumbe: "Caroli Magni Cristianissimi Imperatoris Romanorum corpus sub hoc sepulcro conditum est," which may be Englysshed as folowith:

[1] or. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] "of his notable dedys," *omitted* in the later editions.

Of Charlis the great, and emperoure mooste cristen
Of Rome, the body is hyd this toũbe within.

Of the fore named sonnys of Charlys, suruyued the eldest Lowys by name; and the other. ii. Pepyn and Charlys, dyed before theyr father.

¶ Capitulum. C.lvii.

[Li. 5. ca. 27.] BRigthricus, of ỹ bloode of Cerdicus, firste kyng of Westsaxõs discended, begã his reygne ouer the sayde Saxons in ỹ yere of our Lord. DCC. &. lxxviii. and the. x. yere of Charlys the great than kyng of Fraunce. This before tyme had maryed one of ỹ doughters of Offa kynge of Mercia, as before is touchyd; by whose ayde and powar he put out of his rule, Egbert the sone of Alcumundus: ỹ whiche Egbert at that day was an vnder kyng or ruler, in ỹ lordeshyp of Westsaxon; which Egbert was discendyd of the bloode of the holy Gengulphus[1], of whom some parte of the story is declaryd in the xxv. Chaptre of the. v. booke of Polycronyca. And after he was thus of Brygthrycus expulsyd, he saylyd into Fraũce, and there exercysyd hym selfe in featys of warre with the knyghtes of Charlys courte, durynge the lyfe of ỹ sayd Brygthrycus. Aboute the. ii. yere of this Brygthrycus was seen, in great Brytaygne, a wonder syghte, for sodenlye as men walkyd in the strete, crossys lyke vnto bloode fell vpon theyr clothis, and blood fell from heuyn lyke droppis of rayne: this after some exposytours betokened ỹ cõmynge of the Danes into this londe; the which entred shortly after. For as witnessith Policronica, aboute the ix. yere of Brygthricus, the Danes fyrste entryd this londe; in defence whereof this sayde kynge sent forth his stewarde of house holde with a smalle company, and was[2] slayne: but by the strengthe of Brygthrycus, and[3] other kynges of Saxõs, they were cõpellyd to voyde the lande for ỹ tyme and season. Brygthricus thus well and knyghtly rulyng his lande, his wyfe, namyd Ethelburga, not with hym contentyd as she oughte to be, soughte dyuerse wayes & meanes how she myght bryuge hir lorde out of lyfe, so that fynally she poysonyd hym w̃ many other of his housholde meyny: wherefore, she feryng punysshement, fled into Fraũce, & by suche frendshyp as she there had, was well cherysshyd in Charlis court, surnamyd the great. Of hir it is tolde, ỹ whan he had hadde some informacyon of the vnstablenes of this womans condicions, he, at that season beynge a wydowar, vpon a season in passynge of the tyme with hir, sayde, "nowe I put to youre choyse, whether you woll liaue me vnto your weddyd lorde, or ellys my sone stondynge here in youre presence; and hym that you chose, hym shall you haue and enioye for your husbonde;" but she chase the sone, and lefte ỹ father. Than sayde the kynge: "if thou haddyste chosyn me, thou shuldyst haue had my sone; but for thou haste forsakyn me, thou shalt haue nouther of vs." And after he closyd hyr in an abbey, where ỉ processe a lewde man kepte w̃ hir suche cõpany, that she was voydyd that place, and[4] demeanyd hir so viciously, that in processe of tyme she fell in such pouerte, that she dyed in great penury & misery. For the whiche mysse demeanure of this woman, that she had innaturally slayne hir lorde and husbonde, the kyng [of Anglys, and specially][5] of West Saxons, wolde not suffer the wyues to be callyd Sueuys[6], nor yet suffer them to set by them in placis of great honour, or kyngely sete, by a longe tyme after. Thus, as before is shewyd, by the impoysonynge of his owne wyfe, dyed the kyng Brigthricus, whã he had rulyd ỹ Westsaxons, after moste cõcorde of wryters, by the terme of. xvii. yere.

Womans choyce. Fol. lxxvi.

¶ Capitulum. C.lviii.

[Li. 5. ca. 28.] EGbertus, the sone of Alcumundus, as before is shewyd, began his reygne ouer the West Saxons in the yere of grace. vii. C.[7] lxxx. &. xv., &.[8] xxvii. yere of Charlis the great, than kyng of Fraũce. This, as before is sayde, was dryuen out of ỹ londe of Brytayne by

[1] Genulphus. [2] whych shortly was. [3] and the. edit. 1533. 1542. [4] and after. [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1559. [6] queenes. edit. 1559. [7] viii. C. edit. 1559. [8] and the. edit. 1533. 1542.

the

the strengthe of Brygthricus; but he had[1] knowlege of his deth, he sped out of Fraunce, and[2] so knyghtly wyse hym demeaned that he obteynyd the regyment and gouernaunce of the abouesayde kynge[3]. Bernulphus, kynge of Mercia, hadde this Egbert in derysyon, and made thereof dyuerse scoffys and iapynge rymes, the which he susteynyd for a tyme. But whan he was somedeale stablysshed, & had prouyd the myndes & hartis of his subiectes, he lastly assēblyd his knyghtes, & gaue to hym a batayle in a place callyd Elyndome, in the prouynce of Hampton, and albe it that ī that fyght was great dyuercyte of nūber, as. vi. or. viii. agayn one, yet Egbert had the victory; for his knyghtes were lene, megre, pale, and longe brethed, so that they myght not[4] endure to fyght: for fatte[5], corpolent, & shorte breth, but[6] were sone ouercome with swete and short labour. Here is to be notyd, that after the deth of Offa, kynge of Mercia, or myddyll Englonde, of whome somewhat is towchyd ī the story of Kenulphus, reygned his sone Egfertus, & after Egfertus reygned Kenulphus, or Kenwolfus, ẏ which Kenwolphus was father to the holy martyr Kenelme & to. ii. fayre vyrgyns, Quindreda, and Burgenulda or Ermenilda. And after Kenwolphus succedyd the foresayd Kenelme, & after Kenelme reygned Colwolphus, & after hym succedyd Barnulphus, before namyd. Than to retorne agayne to Egbert, the whiche whan he had, as before is sayde, ouercome Bernulphus, he seasyd that lordshyp into his honde, and that doone he made warre vpon the Kentyshe Saxons, and at lengthe in lyke wyse of them opteynyd victorye; and, as witnessyth Polycronyca, he also subdued the Northumbrys, and causyd ẏ kynges of these. iii. kyngdomes to lyue vnder hym as trybutaries, or ioyned theym to his kyngedome, as testifyeth the auctor of ẏ Flowre of Hystoryes. This Egbert also wan frome ẏ Brytons, or Walsshe men, the towne of Chestre that they had kept the possession of tyll that daye: for the which victoryes thus by hym opteynyd, he shortly after callyd a counceyll of his lordis at Wynchester, & there by theyr aduysys, crownyd hym kyng and chefe lorde of this londe, ẏ to fore this daye is callyd Brytaygne, & sent then out in to all costis of this londe his cōmaundementes and cōmyssions, chargynge straytlye, that from that day forthward the Saxons shulde be callyd Anglys, and the londe Anglia. About the. xxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egberte, which shulde be the yere of our lorde, as menyth Polycronyca. viii. C. and. xix., Kenelmus, before myndyd, the sone of Kenwolphus, was admytted for kynge of Mercia, beynge then a chylde of the age of. vii. yeres: the whiche by treasō of his syster Quendreda, was slayne in a thycke woode, by a tyraūt callyd Hesbertus, [and his body after founde by a pyller of ẏ son beame, or of lyghte dyuyne that shone frome his bodye to warde, heuyn. It is also rad of hym, that a coluer bare a scrowle wryten in Englysshe, thā vsyd, and let it fall from hyr vpon the auter of seynt Petyr, in Rome, whereof the wordys were these: "At Clent ī Cowbacch Kenelme Kenebern lyeth vnder thorne, hewyd, beheuyd;" whiche is to meane in Englysshe, nowe vsyd, at Clent in Cow vale, vnder a thorne, lyeth Kenelme, hedles, slayne by fraude. Whā this holy body was foūde, and was borne towarde ẏ place of his sepulture, his forenamed syster entendynge some derysion, or other vylanye to be doon to the corps, lent out of a wyndowe whereby the corps shuld passe, and to bryng hir malycious purpose aboute, I note by what sorcery she ment, there she rad the Psalme of ẏ Sawter, begynnyng "Deus Laudem," backwarde; but whatso hir entent was, she there incontynently fell blynde, and hir eyen dystylled dropes of blode ẏ fell vpō the Sawter booke, the which, in token of Goddes wretche, in ẏ boke remayne at this day to be seen. Of the holynes of this martyr and of his vertue, the legende of sayntes reportith the surplusage.][7] In ẏ. xxix. yere of ẏ reygne of Egbert, or after the Englysshe Cronycle, Edbryght, ẏ Danys with a great hoost entered the seconde tyme this lōde, and spoylyd the Ile of Shepey, in Kent, or nere to Kent: wherof heryng kynge[8], Egbert assemblyd his

Historia

Anglia. [Li. 5. ca. 29.]

Sictus Kenelmus.

Danys wyn londe. [Li. 5. ca. 36.]

[1] hauynge. [2] and in. [3] kyngedome, edit. 1559. [4] myght endure. [5] But Bernulphus knyghtes were fatte. [6] so that they were. [7] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [8] the kynge.

people, and met with theym at a place callyd Carrum. But he wan of that fyght lytell worshyp, for the Danys compellyd hym and his knyghtes to forsake the felde. And by presumpcion of that victory they drewe westwarde, and made a confederey with the West Brytons that lyued in seruage, by whose power they assayllyd Egbertys landes, and dyd moch harme in many placys of his domynyon, and ellys where: so that after this daye they were contynuallye abydynge in one place of the realme of Englande or other, tyll the tyme of Harde Kynytus, last kyng of the Danys blood, so that many of theym were maryed to Englysshe women, & many that now been, or in tyme passyd, were callyd Englysshe men, are discended of them. And albe it that they were many and sondry tymes dryuen out of that lande, & chasyd from one countrey to a nother, as after ye shall here; yet that natwithstādynge, they euer gaderyd newe strengthis and power, so that they abode styll within the londe of the kynge. Of these Danys, and of what people they be discendyd, dyuerse opynyons of wryters there be, which nowe I passe ouer, for soo moche as I entende to shewe some what of theym in this warke folowynge.

Fol. lxxxvii. Than it folowith in the story: the tyme contynuyng of the persecucyon of these foresayde Paganys & Danes, Egbert, or Edbryght, dyed, whan he had well and nobly rulyd the Westsaxons, and other, ỹ more parte of Englond, by the terme, after moost wryters, of. xxxvii. yeres, & was buryed at Wynchester, as sayth Guydo, and lefte after hym a sone, named Athenulphus.

¶ Capitulum. C.lix.

Historia. LOdouicus, the first of that name, and sone of Charlis ỹ great, begā his reigne ouer ỹ realme of Fraūce, & also his empyre ouer ỹ Romaynes, ī ỹ ycre of grace. DCCC. and. xv., and the. xx. yere of Egbertus, thā kyng of Westsaxōs. This for his mekenes was callyd Lewys the mylde, or meke. In tyme of his fathers dyssease he was occupyed in Guyan, the whiche he before tyme had the rule and domynyon of. by cōmaūdemēt of his father; but whan he was aduertysed of his fathers deth, he anon sped hym towarde Aquysgrany, so that the. xxx. daye after his departynge out of Guyan, he came vnto the foresayd cytie, where he was met with all the nobles and barons of Fraunce. And firste, or he medlyd or tooke vpon hym any cure, or charge of his owu busynes, he with moost deuocion causyd great obseruaūcis, & moch dyuyne seruyce to be doon about ỹ sepulture of his father, which obseruaūce and prayers fynysshed and endyd, the sayde Lewys cōmaundyd to come before hym dyuerse ambassatours, ỹ frome dyuerse prynces were sent vnto his father, Charlis; and to them gaue answers concernynge theyr legacions and messagys, and than procedyd vnto the nedys of his realme, for ỹ weale thereof, and of his people: wherein he beynge busyed, worde was brought to hym of an ambassade royall that was comen from Michael, than emperour of Constantyne the noble, agayne the which he sent certayn of his lordes to receyue them, & so with all honour to bryng them vnto his presence. Of whose cōmyng the entent was to presente hym with certayne ryche gyftes, and to desyre hym of his amyte and frenshyp. Also soon after came vnto hym messyngers from the Beneuētanys, offerynge vnto his magnyficēce, obligaciōs & bōdis to be his trewe lieges, and to pay to hym yerely in way of trybute. vi. M. dukatis of golde. A dukat is of sōdry valuys, but ỹ lcest ī value is. iiii.*s.* iii.*d.* ob. & the best. iiii.*s.* vii.*d.*

Soysōs, or Saxons. Thā the Soysons, or Saxons, that were soo dyuerse of condicion, began to murmoure and rebell them agayne this Lowys: wherfore, or he wolde assemble any people agayne theym, he sent thyder certayne parsons to knowe the cause of theyr rebellyon, and when he was enformed ỹ it was for the takynge awaye from them of certayne landis and possessiōs by his father, he then restored agayne the sayde landes, and so recounsylyd the coūtrey to his subiecciō. For this dede some of his lordes grudgyd, & sayde that such myldenes was not to be vsyd to people of suche obstinacy and sternesse, but to haue forcyd thē by dynt of swerde to haue lyued ī dewe obedyēce. In this passe tyme dyed pope[1] Stephā, the

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

fourth

fourth of ẏ name, after whose deth was elected to that dygnyte, the firste Pascall, withoute consent or knowlege of this Lewes, and some deale to the discōtentyng of his mynde & pleasure; but in shorte tyme after, he receyued suche wordis and presentis frome the sayde pope[1] that he was well satisfyed & pleasyd. And for at those dayes in Fraunce was vsyd of prestes, & men of the Church, precious and shewynge vesture, and goldyn and ryche starynge gyrdellys, with rynges, and other ornamētis of golde, the sayd Lewys purchasyd of ẏ pope[1], a correccion for all suche as vsyd such disordynate apparell, and causyd them to vse and were browne, and sad colours, accordynge to theyr honours and sadnes. This Lewys had. iii. sonnes, ẏ is to saye, Lothayre, whom he made felowe of the empyre; Pepyn, the second, whome he made duke of Guyan; and Lewys, the thyrd, to whome he betooke the rule of Bayon. To this yongest sone worde was brought, that Barnarde, a ruler in Italy, had assemblyd a great powar, and with the aydys of. ii. other capitaynys, namyd Iylys & Reyner, the which Charlis ẏ great by hys lyfe greatly fauouryd, occupyed the strēgthis of the mountaynys, and entendyd to kepe the coūtrey of Italy from the subieccion of his father the emperoure: whereof he geuynge his father knowlege, stronge powar was gaderyd, as well by the father as by Lothayre his sone, & sped theym towarde the mountaynes. But whan the sayde Barnard was ware of the emperours cōmynge with so great a strengthe, and consyderyd his lacke of powar to mayntayne his purpose, with also the great mercy and pytye that he knewe to be ī the emperoure, submyttyd hym hooly to his grace and mercy, & dyscoueryd to hym the auctours of that rebellyon, ẏ which this Lewys causyd vnder safe kepyng to be had vnto the cytie of Aquysgrany, of ẏ which rebellys the bisshop of Mylayne, the bysshop of Cremoun, & the bysshop of Orleaunce were there. Than[2] the kynge passed all the wynter folowynge at the foresayd cytie, & lastlye causyd to be broughte before hym ẏ foresayde transgressours, and examyned the syrcumstaunce of the foresayde treason, and after remytted them to the rygoure of Lewys: where by processe they were condampnyd to dethe as many of them as were tēporall men. Thā the emperour hauyng compassion of the forenamyd Barnarde, for so moche as he was the sone of Pepyn, last kyng of Italy, & his nere kynnesman, transmutyd the sentence of deth vnto perpetuyte of pryson, & losynge of his syght. But for the sayd Barnarde, Reyner, & other, chase rather to dye than to lyue in pryson with ẏ dysformyte, they passyd by dinte of the swerde, and were beheddyd within, or nere to the sayd cytie of Aquysgrany, and ẏ sayd bysshoppes were depryued of theyr dignyties, and put into pryuate houses of relygyon. And whyle this Lewys was occupyed in lytle Brytayne, in subduynge of that countrey, Lothayre, the eldeste sone of this Lewys, was sent to rule the londis of the empyre, where he bare hym right nobly, and executyd dyuerse actis for the weale of the empyre. But in this season. ii. frendes of his father & his, were for certeyn crymes to theym put, moost cruelly cōdempnyd to vyle deth, within the cytie of Rome: whereof herynge, Lothayre, than beynge at ẏ cytie of Papy, sent worde therof to his father in all hasty wyse, the which was lyke to haue turnyd the pope[1] to great trowble, if he by polytyke & wyse meanes had not shortly pacyfyed the mater. That one of the foresayde. ii. parsonis so condempned, was scrybe to the pope[1], and that other was donar. Ye shall vnderstande ẏ this Lewys had. ii. wyues: by the firste he had the forenamyd. iii. sonnes, and of the seconde he receyuyd a sone, and namyd hym Charlys, the whiche, whan he came to mannys stature, was surnamed Charlys the bolde. He loued entierly this Charlis, & wolde often kysse hym in ẏ presence of his bretherne, for the which they enuyed theyr sayde brother, & also dysdayned theyr father, as here after shall appere. Thus, in processe of tyme, Lewys gaue vnto this Charlys, the coūtrey of Nenstria, or Normandy, the which causyd great dissencion amonge the bretherne, and also, for this, and other causys, Lotharius tooke partye agayne his father.

Correccio sacerdotū.

Eligitur mors.

Fol. lxxxviii.

[1] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1659.

[2] "Than" *omitted.*

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. C.lx.

THis seconde wyfe of Lewis was namyd Indith[1], the whiche was accusid to ỹ pope[2] to be within suche degre of allyaunce to hir husbonde, that she myght not lawfully contynewe his wyfe. Wherefore, cõtrary the[3] wyll of Lewys, by the laboure of some bisshopis and other lordes of Fraunce, she was deuorcyd from hym, & put into a house of nunnys, and there straytly kept. Lewys[4], for a tyme, susteynyd this iniuryes, to the ende that he myght knowe whether his sonnes fauourid the cause or not. But in processe of tyme, whan he had experyence of his frendis, & of his sone[5], he thã assemblyd to hym a strong hoost, and recoueryd his wyfe, malgre to all his enmyes: for the whiche dede, Lothayre, with dyuers of the barons of Fraũce, assemblyd theyr people, and entendyd to depryue Lewys frome all imperiall & kyngly dignyte. Wherfore Lewys, ferynge his sone & his assistẽs, & also for the entẽte ỹ he myght assẽble ỹ strengthe of ỹ empyre, he yode vnto Magunce, and after he had purueyed and garnysshyd his retynewe, he retornyd towarde Fraunce, & met with some of his enemyes, & them subduyd: & soo kepte on his iourney tyll he came to Aquysgrany, where he restyd hym & his people. Thus contynuynge this dissencion, the sonnis sent wittynge[6] to the pope[7], than beynge namyd Gregory ỹ fourthe, requyrynge hym of ayde & coũceyll to deuyse a concorde & peace atwene theyr father and theym: at whose requeste, and for to cause a naturall charyte to be quyckenyd atwene ỹ father and his. iii. sonnes, he came ĩ his propre parsone into Fraunce, and endeuoryd hym, to the vttermost of his wyttes, to agree to the sayd partyes. In the tyme of this entreaty this[8] made by the pope,* I cannot saye for what cause, many of the lordes, on the partye of Lewys, forsooke hym, and fled to ỹ sonnys partye, so that ỹ emperoure was in great feere of hymselfe, & of his parson. Whan Lewys had seen his frendes thus in tyme of his nede, refuse & flee frome hym, and lefte hym in great feere and daunger of straungers, he than thoughte better for hym to put hymselfe vnder the rule and tuycion of his owne chyldren than to abyde ỹ doute of the sayde straungers: wherfore he sent vnto his sayde sonnes, requyrynge them to prouyde for his safegarde, and assurynge of his person, and that he were not there oppressyd or murdryd. And within shorte space after sent this message to theym, the whiche, withoute answere of them agayne receyuyd, rode towarde theym smally accompanyed; whereof than, Lothayre & his brother had[9] warnyng, ĩ all hombly wyse encoũtrid hym, & receyuyd hym vpon theyr knees, & so cõueyed hym with all reuerẽce vnto theyr pauylyon or tent. And after for a begynnynge of a place[10] to be stablysshed atwene hym and them, he to satisfye theyr myndes, refusyd ỹ forenamed Indith, & closyd hir ĩ a place of religiõ callyd Torton, as testyfyeth myn auctour, master Robert Gagwyne; but the Frensh booke sayth, that this dede was doon by Frederyke, bisshop of Vtrike. Wherefore he was after piteously slayn by suche as fauouryd the quene, & not all without hir concente, as witnessith the sayde Cronycle. And whan Lowys had in this and other thynges agreed vnto his sonnes, and thought hymselfe to be in surete of theyr amyte and fauours, sodeynly he was conueyed vnto the monastery of seynt Medyrd[11], or as sayth the Frenshe boke, he was cõueyed to a towne, callid in Frensh, Melanguy, with his yonge sone Charlys; and that doon, the sayd. iii. sonnes deuydyd theyr fathers possessions amonge them. iii. that is to saye, Lothayre the eldest, had to his porcyon the londys of the empyre, Pepyn the countrey of Guyan, & to Lowys ỹ yongest fell ỹ coũtrey of Bayon. Whiche mysery of ỹ emperour, whan the pope[12] had beholdyn and seen, he with great mornynge returnyd into Iuly[13], and so vnto Rome: in whiche tyme of prysonement of ỹ emperour, the sayd Lowys made dyteys, and pystyllys, of great sorowe and lamentacion, to the

Historia.

Cõcordia.

Suprysonatur Imperator.

[1] Iudith, edit 1559 [2] Bysshop, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] to the. [4] But Lewys. [5] sonnes. [6] wrytyng. [7] Bysshop of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [8] this, *omitted*. [9] hauynge. [10] Peace. [11] Mildrede, edit. 1559. [12] Bishop, edit. 1542. 1559. [13] Italy, edit. 1542. 1559.

exaumple of all erthlye prynces, & to the entent that his sonnes shulde of hym haue the more compassion & pytye: the whiche I ouer passe for lengthe of tyme, and the rather, for in tyme of prysonement of Edwarde the seconde, callyd Carnaruan, was by hym made a lyke complaynt, where of, whē tyme and place commyth, I entende to expresse some parte there of. Whan Lowys had thus a season remaynyd in pryson, for so moche as ẏ cōmons shuld not thynke that this shulde be doon by the auctoryte of the. iii. sonnes onely, therefore they causyd a counsayll to be callyd at the citie of Compeyn, & there, by theyr meanys and labourys, causyd theyr father, by auctoryte of spirituall and temporall lordys, to be dyschargyd of all rule & dominyon, as well as of the empyre, as of the realme of Fraunce, by auctoryte of the sayd counsayle or parlyamēnt; & after causyd hym to renounce all his tēporall habyte, and to become a munke in ẏ mouastery of seynt Marke, where he was lefte of his sone Lothayre. not without sure watche and kepynge. But full often it is seen, that whan the erthlye power of man faylyth or wekyth, God, of his great marcy, the repentaunt synner to grace callyth, and hym, by his dyuyne powar, aydeth & strengthyth: & so he dyd this Lowys; for after this mysery and tribulaciō thus to hym fallen, the people ī dyuerse placis of this lōde, murmuryd and grudgyd very soore agayne the inmaturall dealynge of the sonnes agayne theyr father. In theyse dayes was a great ruler in Fraūce, namyd Guyllyam, and stuarde or cōstable of that londe: the whiche, with one Egebarde or Edgare, a man of great byrth and allyaunce, counsaylyd to gydyr for the enlargyng of the emperour, and lastly, with ayde of theyr freendys, assemblyd a great people, & then drewe vnto theym ii. noble men of Burgoyne, callid Barnarde and Gueryn, ẏ which some tyme had ben well cherysshed ẇ the emperour Lowys. All this season Lothayre had restyd hym for the more partye at Aquysgranye; but when he harde of the assemblynge of these foresayd lordis, he sped hym towarde Parys. And whan he was thyther comyn, the foresayde lordes sent vnto hym. ii. noble men, Rowland *Fol. lxxxiiii.* and Gantelyn, ẏ which made requeste vnto Lothayre in the name of the other lordes, ẏ it wold lyke hym to restore his father vnto his former dygnyte, with other thynges cōcernynge theyr legacion: to the whiche two lordes Lothayre gaue answere, ẏ of his fathers restorynge to his first or former dygnyte no man lyuynge wolde be thereof more fayne than he wolde; but the deposyng of hym was doon by the hole auctoryte of the land, wherefore, if he shulde be agayne restoryd, it must be by the same auctoryte, & not Restitucio. by hym onely. Albe it ẏ they myght knowe of his benyuolence and fauoure ẏ he bare towarde his father, he wyllid them to stōde a parte whyll he had some cōmunication of his lordes for ẏ same mater: by reason whereof, were it for fere or for fauoure, the emperoure was shortly after put at his lybertye, and restoryd to all his firste honoure and dignyte; & than ẇ great honoure cōueyed to a cytie or towne called Ciriciake, where met with hym his other. ii. sonēs Pepyn and Lewys, and there restyd hym certayn dayes in makyng all feest and ioye; and after roode vnto Aquysgrany, and there restyd an other season. In which tyme of his there beyng, was brought vnto hym from ẏ place where she had ben prysoner, his wyfe Indith; but whan Lotharyus knewe that his father had hir agayne receyuyd, contrary to hys mynde and pleasure, he in wrath and displeasure entryd the coūtrey of Burgoyne, & made in it sharpe and cruell warre, & executyd them[1] many spolynges and other inordynate dedis: the which crueltye to withstond and let, his fader with his sone, Pepyn, with a great hooste, sped them[2] thyther warde, but anon, as he had knowlege thereof, mystrustynge his strengthe, he yelded hym vnto his fathers grace & mercy, whom the meke father receyuyd & forgaue to hym his trespasse. And after[3] of hym and dyuerse of his lordes, he had taken assuryd othes, and other suretyes, he than sent the sayd Lothare into Italye, with a certayne nombre of knyghtes, to defende ẏ coūtrey frome daunger of enmyes, and strengthyng of the straytes and moūtaynes: and that, with other thynges, orderyd and doon for ẏ weale of his realme, Lewys than toke

[1] therin. [2] hym. [3] after that.

vpon

vpon hym to ryde about his londe, to the entente that he myght be somwhat enformyd of the rule of his offycers, and how the coũtreys were rulyd by the rulers of them. And, where he founde any mysgouernaunce, he punysshed the executours therof as well the bysshops as other, as farre as his auctoryte in ỹ behalfe stretchyd. Than Indyth consyderynge the emperoure fell into great age, and hir sone & his, Charlys by name, had as yet no suffycient landis nor possessyons to maynteyn any astate with, she cõpassyd many wayes in hir mynde how she myght acheue hir entent, & to bryng it to good purpose; where fynally, by counceyll of hir frendis, to the ende to purchase the loue and fauoure of Lothayre, she axyd of hir lord and husbonde, that ỹ sayd Lothayre myght be tutour and gyder of his yong sone Charlis. Of this request the emperour was very glad, & graũtyd hir hir peticion. And so it fell soone after, certayne messyngers came to the emperour from Lothayre his sone, to the whiche, whan Lewys had gyuen answere to suche maters as they were sent fore, and geuen vnto theym other instrucciõs, he sent them forthe agayn, and with theym, certeyne other to wylle his sayde sone to come vnto hym, in as goodly wyse as he myght. But at that season he excusyd hym by sykenesse, & when he was recouerde, he feyned an other excuse. In this meane tyme, word was brought to the emperour, that his sone Lothayre had greuyd the Church of Rome, and takyn frome it certayne possessions, wherewith Lewys beynge before amoued, sent vnto his sone, commaundyng hym in sharpe wordes, that he shuld haue in mynde the othe before by hym made, & that he shulde, in exchewynge his displeasure, make restituciõ of all thynges that he before had takyn from the churche; the whiche cõmaundement Lothayre promysed to obey in all wyse. And where Lewys was determynyd to haue goon vnto Rome to haue seen the sayd promesse fulfylled, and also to haue spokyn with the pope[1], for dyuerse maters nedefull for ỹ church, he was let by occasyon of Danys or Normannys, ỹ than had newely inuadyd the londys of Fraunce, the which he shortly after expellyd and droue out of his sayd londis. And that doon, the emperoure yode vnto Aquysgrany, where by the frẽdes of Indith & other of the nobles of Fraũce, the emperour gaue vnto his yongest sone Charlys a porcion of ỹ empyre, which after shall more clerely appere. And soone after, at a coũsayle holdyn at Carysyake before namyd, in the presence of his sone Lewys, he gaue to hym ỹ ordre of knyghthode, & anournyd[2] hym with kyngys clothynge, & ouer all this, in the presence of many lordes of Fraunce, he gaue to the sayd Charlys the hoole countrey of Nenstria[3], that nowe is namyd Normandy. Of whiche honoure and gyftes, thoughe his moder were ioyous and glad, yet his brother Lewys was therewith no thynge contentyd, which of Indith and of hir frẽdys was well apperceyuyd and knowen: wherefore, as she beforetyme had don, thã of new she made requeste vnto hir lord & husbande ỹ he wolde, of his moost especiall grace, graũte vnto hyr, that Lothayre myght haue the gouernaũce of hir sone Charlis, the whiche of hym was the seconde tyme grauntyd. Vpon whiche graunte thus to hyr made, the emperoure sent vnto his sone Lothayre plesaunt letters, wyllynge hym, in all goodly hast, to resorte vnto his courte: the whiche obeyinge his fathers cõmaundement, retornyd into Fraunce shortlye after the resayte of the sayd letters, and came vnto his father to the cytie of Vernayse, of whome he was ioyously receyuyd. And after he had a seasone dwellyd with the emperoure, he gaue vnto hym ỹ coũtrey of Austracy; the which countrey, as shall after be shewyd in this Lotharius story, was, after his name, namyd Lorayne: but a parte of the sayde prouynce or countrey ỹ stretchyd toward Hungry, the sayde Lewys gaue vnto his yongest sone Charlys. And immedyatlye after this gyftes, before many lordis confermyd, the emperoure, in presence of the sayd lordes, toke Charlis by the honde, and delyuerid hym vnto his brother Lothayr, wyllynge and straytly chargyng hym ỹ he shold take hym vnto his cure, and be to hym as curyous as he wolde be vnto his owne chylde, and to guyde hym & his possessions, as ỹ father shulde guyde ỹ chylde. And to Charlys he cõmaunded that he shulde take and obey hym as his father, and

Caroli Calui exaltacio.

Liberalitas.

[1] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] adournyd. [3] Neustria.

loue

ioue and worshyp hym as his brother: the which vpon eyther party was promysed to be obseruyd. And shortlye after the sayd Lothayre, with his brother Charlis, toke coungy[1] of father & mother, and retornyd agayne into Italy. About this tyme dyed Pepyn, the seconde sone of Lewys, & duke of Guyan; the which, if all shulde be expressyd, put his father to great trouble & vexacion: wherefore for hym was made the lesse mournynge. This lefte after hym a sone namyd Pepyn, of whome somewhat the story spekyth after; but nowe I wyll retorne to Lewys the thyrde[2] of the emperoure.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxi. *Fol. lxxxx.*

TRothe it is, that whan the yonger brother Lewys sawe the bountye of his father so largely extende towarde his. ii. bretherne & to hym nothyng, he was therwith in his mynde greatly discōtent; albeit that for the tyme he kepte it secrete to hymselfe. But whan he was de- Inobedientia.
partyd from his father, & retorned to his owne lordshyp, gadered[3] amyghty power, and begā to make warre vpon the dwellers nere about the Ryne, wherefore the emperoure with a conuenyent power approchyd vnto the citie of Dodaynge, and sent from thens vnto his sayd sone wordis of reconciliacion, by meane whereof the sayde Lewys put hym holy in the grace of his father, and was to hym reconsyled without shedynge of mannys blode. But whyle ỹ emperoure was besyed at the cytie of Cleremoūt, in the countie of Auerne, to set a dyreccyon among the Gascoynes, for oppynyons that were reryd amonge them for the sone of Pepyn, there latelye kynge, or duke, dissessid, which sone, as aboue is sayd was also named Pepyn, and there about had taken great peyne & labour; thyder to hym tydynges were newlye broughte, that his sayd sone Lewys, had with the Saxons, or Soysons, and with the Thorynges made alliannce, and was entryd into Germany, and therein made warre in moost cruell wyse: with whiche tydynges Lewys was soo greuously passyonyd, ỹ to his great age, was, by meane of this vnkynde anger, fyxyd a syknes, that lafte hym not whyll he lyued. After yet this, notwithstandynge, he lyke a strōge hartyd knyght, shewyd forthe a good and coūfortable countenaūce; and after he had ī knyghtly wyse preparyd all thynge necessarye to the warre, he sped hym towarde Almayne, and cōtynued his iourney tyll he came vnto Thoryng, where a seasō he restid hym & his people tyll he might be better assurid where his sone Lewis restyd hym. But ỹ sone hauynge knowlege of the great powar of his father, & also beynge in dispayre of purchasyng of mercy, consyderynge his many offēcis, fled by the country of Sclauony, and so by that costys retorned to Bayon, or Bauary, and so escaped the daūger of his father. Than the emperoure beynge surely enformyd of the scape of his sone, helde on his iourney tyll he came to Magoūce, and after came vnto the citie of Vermayse, where he called a a counsayll of his lordes spirituall & temporall, and ordeyned there dyuerse thynges for the state of the empyre, & more entēdyd to haue doon; but syknes increasyd so sore in hym, ỹ by the space of. xl. dayes he toke no temporall sustenaunce, but in that tyme he vsyd often to take the blessyd sacrament, the which, as he often sayde, strengthyd bothe the soule and the body. Than he sent for Lothayre to come vnto hym, the whiche w̄ out taryynge, obeyed his cōmaūdement, and abode styll w̄ hym. Of this Lewys Policronycō makith a short rehersayll, and sayth that by his first wyfe, namyd Hermyngarde, he hadde. iii. sonnes, Lothayre, Pepyn, and Lewys. The fyrste, beyng felawe with his father of the empyre, was crowned of pope Pascall[4] vpō an Ester dayc, and he was also kynge of Italy; and Pepyn he made duke of Gascoygne, and Guyan; and Lewys was made ruler of Bauary. And by his seconde wyfe, namyd Indith, & doughter of the duke of Bayon, he had Charlys the ballyd, to whoare he gaue ỹ coūtrey of Burgoyne, as the sayde Policronica sayth. And for this Lewys was mylde, he was often troubled of his owne men & of

[1] lycense. e lit. 1542. 1559. [2] thyrde sonne. [3] he gaderyd. [4] Pascal, B. of Rome, edit. 1552. 1559.

other, tyll he delte with theym more sharpely and wysely, and rulyd ỹ people more straytly. It is there also shewyd, that whā this Lewys had promotyd a yonge man, namyd Frederike, to the se of Vtrik, and to hym had gyuen sad and good exortacyon that he shuide folowe the stablenes of his antecessours, and that he shuld purpose the sothe & trowthe withoute accepcion of parsonys, and ponysshe mysdoers, as well the ryche as the poore, the sayd bysshop shulde answere to hym, & saye, "I beseche thy magestye, syr emperour, to take in pacience, that I may disclose to ỹ that thynge that hath longe walowyd and turnyd in my mynde." "Saye thy pleasure," sayde the emperoure. "I pray the, syr emperoure, shew me thy mynde, whether is more accordynge that I attayne this fysshe here presente, firste at ỹ hede or at the tayle." The emperoure answeryd shortly, and sayd, "at the hede the fysshe
Cōcilium. shall be fyrste attamyd." "So it is, lorde emperoure," sayd the bysshop, "that cristen fayth may cause the to cease of thyn erroure, that thy subiectes be not boldyd to folowe thy mysdoynge: wherefore fyrst forsake thou thy vnlawfull wedloke that thou haste made with Indith, thy nere kynneswoman." By meane of those wordis ỹ kyng was recounsylyd, and lefte the company of his wyfe, tyll he had purchasyd a lycence of ỹ pope[1], and the emperoure forgaue[2] all trespassys. But ỹ woman hyryd, ii. knyghtes, that slewe the sayd bysshop, in vestmentes, whan he had endyd his masse. After this the empresse was falsely accusyd of wronge cryme, and made a monchon; but the same yere the emperoure delyuerd hyr from that abyte[3], whan he had sufficiently prouyd ỹ sayd cryme to be false.

Thā to retorne where I lefte. Whā this Lewys had long lyen in this agonyous sykenes, and knewe well that he amendyd nothynge, but feblyd more and more, he cōmaundyd his iewellys to be brought before hym, whereof w̄ them[4] by his owne hande he gaue a parte vnto the Church of Rome; and to Lotharius his sone, there present, he gaue his crowne and his swerde, cōmaundynge hym straytlye vpon his blessynge, that he shuld haue in honour his moder Indyth, and ỹ to Charlys, his brother, he shulde owe trewe loue and amyte, and that he shuld hym & his londes dyffende to the vttermoste of his powar. Than the lordys spirituall and temporall, and specially ỹ archebysshop of Meaws, made a lamētable requeste to the emperoure for hys sone Lewys, that he wold accepte hym to his grace and mercy, & to forgyue hym hys insolent & wanton wylde dedys: whereof whan the emperoure harde, he fell in such wepynge that he myght not speke of a good whyle after. And whā he had refraynyd hym thereof, he remembryd to the lordes the many and great benefytes that he had doon to hym, and the innaturall vnkyndenes that the sayde Lewys had agayne shewyd vnto hym, and howe often tymes he had perdonyd his vnkynde sonnes tres-
Misericordia. passe, and fynally, all this not withstondynge, he was at that oure in pariyte charyte with hym, and forgaue hym as he trustyd to be forgyuen; prayinge the lordes there present, and specially chargynge the sayde bysshop that he wold shewe vnto his sayde sone ỹ great daūger that he was in agaynste God for the displeasurys doon to hym, & specyally that he was a cause of the abrygement, or shortynge of his dayes. Than to brynge this storye to effecte, whereof, if I shuld declare ỹ specialtyes thereof, wolde aske a longe tyme; for ye shall vnderstonde that theyse. ii. storyes of the great Charlys, and of this Lewys, occupy in Frēshe, of lenys of great scāteleon[5], ouer. lxiiii.: wherefore I conclude that he dyed lyke a good cristē prynce, whan he had ben emperoure of Rome, and kynge of Fraunce, by the terme of. xxvi. yeres, & was buried with great solēpnite at Meaws, or at Mettis,
Fol. lxxxxk. by his mother Hyldegarde, as sayth maister Robert Gagwyne, in ỹ yere of his age. lxiiii.: leuynge after hym ỹ foresayd. iii. sonnes, Lothayre, Lewys, and Charlis the ballyd.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxii.

Anglia. ADeulphus, or Ethelwolphus, ỹ sone of Egbertus, began his reygne ouer ỹ Westsaxons,

[1] Bysshope of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] forgaue the sayde Byshop. [3] habyte. [4] "w^t them" *omitted* in the later editions. [5] scantlyn. edit. 1542. 1559.

er Anglys, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. DCCC. and. xxxii. and the. xvii. yere of Lewys ỹ mylde, thā kyng of Fraunce. This in his youthe was wyllynge to be a preeste, and was enteryd the ordre of subdeakyn; but there after by dispẽsacion of Pascall, the firste of that name, pope,[1] he was maryed to Osburga, a woman of lowe birthe; by whom he had. iiii. sonnes: that is to meane, Ethelwalde, Ethelbert, Etheldrede, and Alurede; the which after theyr father reygned as kynges of Englonde, that one after that other, as after shall apere. This Adeulphus, after he hadde a certayne tyme be[2] kynge, he went to Rome, and toke with hym his yongest sone Alurede or Alphrede, and taryed there by the space of a yere: in the which season, he repayryd the Saxon scole, the whiche before tyme was there foundyn, by Offa kyng of Mercia, as Guydo sayth, and other; but more veryly of Iue kynge of Westsaxons, as sayth the auctor of the Floure of Hystoryes: and for that he grauntyd of euery house of his kyngedome. i.d. as in his story is before shewyd. But this scole was sore decayed, and the house thereof lately brent; the whiche this Adeulphus newly repayryd, & set it in better ordre than it before was vsyd. This kyng also to reformẽ the greuous correccyons that he sawe there, executyd to Englysshe men for spirituall offencis, as in werynge of irons and gayues, he graũted of euery fyre house of his lande. i.d. as Iue beforesayde had done. By the which sayinge it shuld seme that by theyse. ii. kynges shuld be graunted vnto Rome. ii.d. of euery fyre house thorough theyr lond. But that may not be so vnderstõde; for this Rome scot is gaderyd of euery house. i.d. without more: wherefore it muste folowe, that it is mysse taken of wryters that allege this dede to that one kynge, for ỹ other. How be it, it may stonde by reason, that Iue made the firste graunte, and this kynge after confermyd the same. But the auctor of Cronyca Cronicarũ sayth, that this Adeulphus graũtyd to seynt Petyr, theyse sayde Peter pens, & spekyth no worde of Iue nor of none other. It is also shewyd of this kynge by Polycronyca*, that he shulde for the acquytynge of the churchis of Englonde of all maner of kynges tribute payde yerely to Rome. CCC. markys: that is to meane, to saynt Peters churche. C. markys; to ỹ lyght of seynt Paule. C. marke, and to the popys[3] tresory. C. marke: and ouer all this, of his pure deuocion, he offred to God and to seynt Peter ỹ. x. parte of his moueable goodys. And also one cronycler sayth, that this kynge foundyd firste the vnyuersytye of Oxynforde, whiche was lykely to be doon by Offa kynge of Mercia; for so moche as in his dayes flowryd that famous clerke Alcumus, or Albinus, the whiche, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, was firste founder of the scole of Parys, and of Papya, as is before shewyd in the story of Charlis the great, in the thyrde chapyter of the sayde story. Whan Adeulphus had thus sped his busynes [and pylgrymage][4] at Rome, he retornyd by Fraunce, where at that tyme was kynge of that londe Charlis the ballyd, of whome he was ioyouslye receyuyd: & after he had dysportyd hym there a season, he spousyd the doughter of the sayde Charlys, in the. xx. yere of the reygne of the sayde Adeulphus, as testyfyeth Polycronyca in the. xxx. Chapitre of his. v. booke, which shuld be the yere of the reygne of the sayde Charlis the. xi. But of this maryage is no thynge towchyd in the Frenshe Cronycle. Than Adeulphus takynge leue of the kynge, tooke shyppynge, and landed in Englande with his wyfe Indith by name; and for that he, contrary the lawe made in the tyme[5] Brygthricus, set his wyfe in ỹ kynges trone, and magnyfyed hyr lyke a quene, the lordis of his londe arose agayne hym, and pullyd from hym a great parte of his domynyon, and made his eldest sone ruler thereof: whiche all was doon in reproche of Ethelburga, whiche slewe hir lorde Brigthricus as before is shewyd. Lastly the mater was appeasyd, and he to his kynglye honoure restoryd. [Aboute this tyme Bertulphus, kynge of Mercia, slewe wyckydlye in the holy tyme of Penthecoste, saynt Wylstone, whose holy body was buryed at Repyngedon; and in the place where this holy Wylston was slayne, stoode a pyller of lyght. xxx. dayes after;

[Li. 5. ca. 30.] Rome scot. [* Li. 5. ca. 30.] Indignatio.

[1] Bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] bene. [3] B. of Rome's. edit. 1542. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] time of.

and[1]] in the yere folowynge, dyed the sayde Bertulphus, after whose deth Burdredus was made kynge of Mercia, or myddle Englonde: the which before tyme, hadde spousyd the doughter of kyng Adeulphus. In ỹ later dayes of this Adeulphus the Danys dyd moch harme in Lyndesey and also in Kente; and frome thens came to London, and robbyd & spoylyd the cytie: wherefore Adeulphus gaderyd his people, & lastly met with them in Sotherey vpō a downe callyd Ocles, and there dyscomfyted theym, not without shedynge of great plente of the Anglys bloode, and forsyd theym to take the see: so that after they londyd in East Anglia, as after shall appere. Than lastlye dyed this good kynge Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus, whan he hadde rulyd his subiectis nobly, by accorde of mooste wryters, fully. xxii. yere, and was buryed at Wynchester, leuynge after hym. iiii. sonnys aforesayde.

¶ Capitulum. C.lx.iii.

Sol. lxxxiii.

Francia.

CHarlys, the yongeste sone of Lewys the mylde, begā his reygne vnder[2] ỹ chefe parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lord. DCCCC. and. xli. and the. ix. yere of Adeulphus, than kynge of Westsaxons; the whiche, as before is sayde, was surnamyd Ballyd. Anone as his father was buryed, his brother Lothayre, to whom the father, as ye before haue harde, had commyttyd ỹ guydyng of this Charlys, by the entysyng of his brother Lewys, malygned agayne this Charlys, & sought many wayes to put hym from such lōdes as his father had gyuen hym. This sayde Lothayre was, after the deth of his father, emperour, and Lewys the yonger brother was duke or knyght of Bayon; but for Charlis was yongest, and had to his parte the pryncypall porcion of Fraūce, which was callyd myddell Fraūce, therefore his. ii. bretherne, & specyally Lewis, malygned greuously agayne hym: whereof this Charlys, beyng somedeale enfourmed, bare hym so wysely and so egally to his subiectys, that he hadde theyr louys and fauours, & trustyd alwaye by theyr good ayde, that he shulde be of powar to withstonde theyr vnkynde malyce. And lyke as the hydde[3] in processe breke[4] oute and shewith great lyghte & flammy blase, euen so dyd this couerde malyce at ỹ last breke out to great ire & opē wrath: for after. iiii. yeres was passyd, the sayd two bretherne, withoute defyaunce or groundly cause of warre, assigned or assemblyd a great hoost, such lyke before this daye had not ben seen, and entryd the lymyttys of kynge Charlys. Than Charlis assemblyd in all the haste his lordis, & requyryd theyr aydes & cōsayll to withstonde the malyce of his bretherne; and whan he had knowlege of theyr good myndes, anon theyr knyghtes were gaderyd, and all thynge was redy to the fyghte. Nowe in this whyle, the. ii. bretherne with theyr people, were comyn to a place callyd Fountayns or Fountanet, where[5] Charlys sped hym, and whan both hoostis were nere, eyther party made prouysyon to subdue his enmye. Than were the batayles on both partyes orderyd and assygned to theyr standardys and capytaynes, and the wynges set to the mooste auaūtage. What shulde I lenger processe of this ordynaūce make? Fynally the shote of arblasters begā on both sydes, which ouer threwe many an horse and man, and specially ỹ fore rydars ỹ put themselfe in prese with theyr lōge and sharpe launcys to wynne thē firste brunte of the feelde. Pytie it was to beholde the goodly bryght armyd knyghtes lying and walowyng with theyr great stedis in the feelde, with dedlye woundis gapynge agayne ỹ son; that were slayne at the firste encoūtre. But whan ỹ shote was spent and the sperys to shateryd, than bothe hoostis ran to gyther with Rowlandys songe, so ỹ in shorte whyle the grene feelde was dyed into a pariyte redde: for there was heddys, armys, leggys, and trunkys of dede mennys bodyes, lyinge as thycke as flowres growe in tyme of May in the florysshynge medowys. Myserable & pyteous it was to beholde the parsons[6] halfe lyuyng and halfe deed with theyr grysely woundes, pyteously gronyng and cryinge withoute comforte: so that there was shewyd all rygoure without mercy, & all crueltyes

Mortall batayll.

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] ouer, edit. 1533. 1542. [3] hydde fyre. [4] breketh. [5] whereto, edit. 1533. 1542. [6] persons.

wout

wout cõpassyon. Thus durid this mortall fyght by a lõge season, that doutefull it was to knowe which party had thauauntage of ōther. Howe be it, Charlys was put to an after deale by. ii. meanys: the first was for so moche as Charlys entẽdyd to haue forborne for the reuerence of the hygh feest as the daye of the assẽcion of our Lorde, and that day not to haue foughten; and the. ii. was ỹ he was farre lesse in nõbre; whiche. ii. causys of dysauauntage not withstondynge, yet in the conclusyon he wan the honoure of that iourney; but not withoute great losse of his people & many of the noblys of his lond: whereof the Frensh booke rehersyd ỹ namys; but for they be to vs vnknowen I passe them ouer. And as yet is testyfyed of many wryters, there was slayne that daye mo Frenshemen thā was slayne at any[1] euer before that daye, whereof the nombre is not expressid, for it was so great. Thā Lothayre was forcyd to take Aquisgrany for his safegarde, and Lewys ellys where; but Charlys, with a small cõpany that to hym were lefte, folowed his bretherne, & cõstraynyd Lothayre to forsake that cytie, and thens to goo vnto Lyon; a cytie that stõdith at this day in the vttermoste border of Fraũce: and after to Vyenne, to ỹ whiche cytie of Vyen shortlye after came vnto hym his brother Lewys, where they. ii. assẽblyda newe hoost. In the whiche passe tyme, as Charlis was comyng toward his bretherne, messyngers met with hym, sent from his bretherne to comon of a peace: so that fynally, he was accordyd that the realme of Fraunce shulde be deuydyd in. iii. as the father had before disposid it. That is to meane, Lothayre shulde enioye ouer the londys belongynge to the empyre the countrey of Austracy; the which, in processe of tyme, was callyd Lothayre or Lotharyngia, Historia. whiche is to meane Lorayne after his name: and to Lewys shulde remayne the prouynce of Germany, with ỹ coũtrey of Buyan or Benery: and to Charlis shulde remayne the coũtrey called myddle or chefe Fraunce, with the prouyncis of Normandy and Burgoyne; whiche sayd myddle Fraunce is reportyd to be in space from the oceyan of Brytayne to the ryuer of Mowze. The whiche concorde thus fermely stablysshyd and fynysshid, eyther of other toke theyr departyng & resortyd vnto theyr owne lordshippes; but Lothayre dyed shortly after, leuynge after hym. iii. sonnys, namyd Lewis, Lothayre, & Charlis. But this deth of Lothayre is take[2] for temporall dethe: for it is sayd, that he forsoke the trauayle of the worlde and became a monke, at the abbay of Prumy, and lyuyd there a solytary lyfe many yeres after.

¶ Capitulum. C.lx.iiii.

CHarlis the Ballyd thus beinge in pesceable possession of the chefe parte of ỹ realme of Fraunce, and guydyng it with all sobernesse and indifferent iustyce, was well drad and also beloued of his subiectes. In processe of tyme, as vpon. viii. yeres after that Lothayre, abouesayde, renounsyd the pompe of ỹ world, dyed first Charlis, the yongeste sone of the thre of the forsayd Lothayre, and after dyed Lothayre the seconde sone: so ỹ the sayd first Lothayre, sone of Lewis the mylde, suruyued[3]; but the eldest sone namyd Lewis onely, which was after his father enoyntyd emperoure. When Charlys, kynge of *Fol. lxxxiiii* Fraunce, knewe certaynly of the deth of theyse. ii. foresayd bretherne, and that withoute issue, anon he assemblyd his powar, and entryd ỹ prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne, the whiche his brother Lothayr had geuē to Lothayre his sone; and in shorte whyle after crownyd hym kyng of that prouynce, within the churche of Seynt Stephan, of the cytie of Meaws, chefe cytie of that lordshyp and kyngedome. With the whiche dede Lewys his brother & kynge of Germany & Bayon was discontentyd, thynkynge hymselfe more ryghtfull enheritoure than Charlys, for so moche as he was the elder brother, and also brother to the firste Lothayre of father & of mother; where as Charlys was but halfe brother, and Entẽcio. by the fathers syde onely. For this the sayd Lewys sent to Charlis ỹ Ballyd certayne messyngers, gyuyng to hym monycio that he shuld calle to memory the couenauntis atwene theym before tyme stablysshed, and that he shulde not meddle hym, nor haue to doo

[1] any felde. [2] not taken. [3] so that the sayde Lewys onely suruyued.

within

withiu the lõdis of his cosyn latelye deed, vnto suche tyme as it were determynyd by theyr both cõsayles whether of theym had the better right, and this to be obseruyd vpon payne of excomunycacion or cursyd[1]. But for to Lewys was well seen ẏ his brother Charlis no thynge absteynyd hym from the occupyinge of ẏ forenamyd coũtrey; he therefore gaderyd an army to warre vpon his sayde brother: in the whiche passe tyme, Charlis toke to his seconde wyfe, a woman namyd Rychent or Ricent, the whiche he before tyme had vsyd as his cõcubyne or paramoure. And soone after the Danys or Normannys inuasid the londis of Charlis: the whiche, for that tyme, he was fayne to appease and please with ryche gyftys and other pleasurys. Than Charlis receyuyd from his brother a seconde ambassade or message, the which shewyd vnto hym, excepte he wolde voyde his knyghtes and strengthis that he hadde set and put in dyuerse placis of the londe of Austracy, he shuld be sure to haue of his sayde brother an enmy, and that in all haste he wolde entre his londe with great force & warre. Whereopon was suche answere sent, ẏ, by bothe theyr agrementys, the mater was had in suche comunycacion, that fynally it was agreed, that the sayde londis shulde egally be departyd atwene theym, whiche conclusyon perfyghted, Lewys with his people retornyd into Germany. But it was not longe after, that Lewys repentyd hym of his agrement, so ẏ newe legacions were made vpon bothe partyes, & lastly with moch peyn newely agreed: after which agrement and accorde fynysshid, Lewys the emperoure, and sone of the firste Lothayre, sent an ambassade to bothe the forenamyd bretherne, admonestynge and warnynge them that nother ẏ one nor the other shulde intremet w the foresayd londes, for so moche as the right thereof belongyd to hym as nexte heyre to his brother, and not to theym that were a degre forther. The answere of this was deferryd by Charlys: howe be it, his brother Lewys, as sayth myne auctor, gaue ouer his parte shortly after to Lewys the emperoure. In this passe tyme, Charlys, the sone of Charlys the Ballyd, by his firste wyfe, whome the father had made ruler of a countrey callyd Belge, had rulyd hym insolently, and done in that countrey dyuerse outragyous dedes; for the whiche, he beinge complaynyd of, was brought vnto his father, and so by hym cõmaundyd to pryson: but shortlye after he was delyueryd at the requeste of some nobles of Fraũce, & kepte after in his fathers courte, where he cõtynued but a shorte whyle; for within a lytle season after, his father beynge at Lyons, he departyd from the sayd courte, and gaderyd to hym a wylde company of euyll disposyd persones, & went agayne into the sayde countrey of Belge, and dyd more harme thã he had done before season, and so contynued a long whyle, but lastly he was taken & caste agayne in pryson, where after longe punysshement he was pryuyd[2] of his syghte, and than sent vnto the monastery of Corbeuyke, there safelye to be kepte. But at lengthe, by the entycement of his vncle Lewys, kyng of Germany, & the treason of. ii. monkys of that place, he scapyd thens, and fled vnto the sayde Lewys his vncle: in the which tyme Charlis his father was occupyed in the defence of the Danys or Normannys ẏ than by strengthe had wonne the cytie of Angiers, & done therein moch harme, whom the kyng closyd within the sayd cytie with a stronge siege, and fynally cõpellyd them to seke meanys of peace at the kynges pleasure. After whiche peace concludyd, and the sayde Danys auoydyd, the kynge repossessyd ẏ sayd cytie.

Panicio filii.

It was not long after, that tydynges were brought vnto Charlis, of the dethe of Lewys the emperoure: after knowlege whereof, the kyng sent his other sone namyd Lewys into Austracy, to haue the rule and ẏ guydyng of that contrey, & after other thynges orderyd for the weale of his realme, he with a stronge company of men of armys, passyd the mountaynes, and so into Italy towarde Roue. But Lewys his brother, and kynge of Germanye, beyng thereof warnyd, sent, in all haste, his sone Lewys with a stronge hooste to let his passage; but howe it was for feere or other mean, the sayd Lewis yeldyd him to his vncle Charlys the Ballyd: wherewith the father beynge greuously displeasyd, sent his

[1] cursyng. [2] rcued.

secõde

secõde sone namyd Charlon, to withstande the passage of the sayde Charlys. But this for feere or other cause that he sawe, that he myght not preuayle agayne his vncle, retornyd hym agayne to his father: after whose retorne, for so moch[1] as ỹ sayd Lewys, kynge of Germany, well perceyuyd that his brother Charlys was paste his daunger, he than, with a more nombre ioynyd vnto his sonnys hoost, entryd the londe of Fraunce in domagynge it to the vttermoste of his powar. In whiche season, Charlys the Ballyd kypte on his iourney towarde Rome: whereof herynge, the. viii. Iohñ. than pope[2], sent agayne hym certayne parsonnys of honoure, & welcomyd hym as Augustus or emperoure: and after his comynge thyther, the sayde pope[2] receyuyd hym with great reuerence, and crownyd hym with ỹ imperyall dyademe, and denouncid hym as emperoure.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxv.

CHarlis ỹ Ballyd, thus beinge auctorysed for emperoure, exercysyd hym for a tyme for the nedys of ỹ Churche of Rome, and after toke his leue of the pope[2], and retorned vnto Papye, a cytie of Italy: where, he callynge a generall counceyll of the lordis of the empyre, and other, he, by theyr aduyses, prouyded & ordryd dyuerse thynges for the weale of ỹ sayd empyre. And ouer that, by theyr agrementis ordeyned, for his lyefe tenaunt or debyte of the sayd empyre in his absence, a noble man, brother to his wyfe Recent, namyd Besonne or Beson,[3] and assygned to hym suche people as was thoughte necessarye and conuenyent. Whan Charlis had sped his nedys in Papy, he hyed hym into Fraũce; but or he came within the terrytory thereof, worde was brought to hym ỹ his brother Lewis was retornid into his owne coũtrey withoute great damage done to the realme of Fraunce. In processe the emperoure came to Parys, where he was receyuyd *Fol. lxxxxiiii.* of the cytezens with mooste tryumphe and ioye, & kepte his Ester tyde at seynt Denys. It was not longe after that Charlys was thus returnyd into Fraũce, but ỹ he receyuyd messyngers from his brother, kyng of Germany, ỹ which, I his name, claymyd his parte of ỹ empyre as his right & enherytaũce. Which answere, for that tyme, was deferryd with plesaunte wordys: so that at the nexte worde that he hadde from his sayde brother, was that he was dede and buryed in the chyrche of saynt Nazer, in Frankebourgth. Whereof whan Charlys was asserteynyd, anone he yode vnto Fountenays, and sent his messangers to ỹ lordes of the countrey, cõmaundynge theym that they shuld meete hym at the cytie of Mettis. This foresayde Lewis lefte after hym two sonnys, namyd Lewys and Charlon, as before is towchyd: the which deuyded atwene theym theyr fathers patrymony; so that Lewis had Germany, and Charlon hadde Bayon.

This Lewys, herynge his vncle Charlys, gaderyd to hym a stronge powar of Saxons and *Discordia.* of Thorynges, and, in the tyme of theyr assemble, he sent an ambassade of certeyne bysshoppes, and tẽporall lordes vnto his vncle Charlys, prayinge hym of his loue & fauoure, with other requestys to hym made, of the whiche they myght purchase no graũte: whereof whan they were retournyd, he hadde[3] by theym knowlege. The sayd Lewys in contynentlye, with his hooste, drewe nere vnto the Ryne. But this Lewys was not so couert in his werke and assemblynge of his people, but that his vncle had thereof wyttyng, and purueyed his people as faste vpon that other syde, so that he with an hooste was redy to fyght with the sayde Lewys. Whan Lewys was ware of the great powar that the emperoure hadde assemblyd, he made no haste to passe the water, but houed and causid his people to falle vnto prayer. And Charlys, also herynge his neuewe, vnder a coloure sent allegacion of entreaty, duryng the which entreaty, the emperoure cõtrary[4] his honoure led his people by a secrete waye, thynkynge to haue fallen vpon his neuew sodeynly, & by that meane to haue distressyd hym; but Lewys, beinge ware of his vncles treason, prouyded soo for his people, & kepte theym in suche araye, that they receyuyd theyr foo-

[1] he for so mych. [2] bysshop of that see. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] hauynge. [4] contrary to.

men

men vpon theyr sperys poyntes, and to theyr great damage: for where the great rayne and todyousenesse of the harde & strayte wayes which they had passyd hadde sore tyred and weryed them, thā the fresshe fiersnes of theyr enemyes, which they thought they shuld haue taken slepynge and vnpurueyed, abasshed them in such wyse, that they were soone ouercōmen, and fled from ȳ feelde, as shepe flee from the wolfe. By meane of the which flight, great slaughter of theym was made, and many nobles and great astatys of Fraunce bothe slayne and taken prysoners, and the emperour hymselfe scapyd with great daūger. And of the prysoners that were takē, they were so nere spoylyd, that they were fayne to take vyne leuys to couer with theyr secret mēbrys. Ye shall vnderstōde ȳ this warre atwene the emperour Charlys ȳ Ballyd, and his brothers sone Lewys, was for ȳ prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne, the whiche some tyme belonged to the emperoure Lothayre, and halfe brother to Charlys; the which coūtrey, after this batayle, was by medyatours set in an order. Than the emperoure, w̄ great trauayll, came to a towne callyd Tyguy, and Lewys kept his waye to Vandonyquyke; and frome thens to Ayes ȳ Chapell. In this whyle the Danys or Normannys, knowynge that Charlys was occupyed in the warre agayn his neuewe, apparaylid them a stronge hoste, and entred efte the londes of Fraunce. But for Charlys was at that tyme lettyd with chargeable busynesse, he therefore sent a noble man agayne theym called Comard, vnto the ryuer of Sayne[2] to withstande ȳ sayd enemyes. And also to hym was gyuen counseyll to haue with them cōmunycaciō to make a peace if he myght. And to this trowble immedyatlye was ioyned another: for in this tyme and season, a cytie belongyng to ȳ Church of Rome[3]: wherefore to withstōde theyr malyce, the pope[4], than beynge Iohū, the. viii. of that name, sent messyngers to Charlys for the defence of the sayde londys and other. And soone after the pope[4], for to haste the sayd emperour, or ellys to quyeken his deputie before namyd to assemble the Italyens and other people there adioynaūt, came downe to the cytie of Papye, & taryed there the emperours cōmynge. Charlis, than beset with trowbles, assemblyd his knyghtes, and sped hym towarde Italy. And whan he passyd[5] the mountaynes, worde was brought to hym of the popys[4] beyng in Papye: wherefore he sped hym thyder with all dylygence. In this tyme and season Charlone the brother of Lewys, and sone of Lewys kynge of Germany, (whiche Charlone, as before is shewyd, was duke of Bayon or Bayary,) gaderid a stronge hoste, and entred ȳ boūdys of Italy. Whereof herynge, the pope[4] and the emperoure, than, as before is sayd, beynge at Papye busyed in a great coūseyll, dyssoluyd the same, and the pope[4] in cōtynently toke feue of the emperour, and departyd agayne to Rome; and Charlys, with a great power that he had gaderyd, as well of Italyēs as of his owne people, made towarde his neuewe. Wherof herynge, the sayde Charlone turned agayne by ȳ waye ȳ he had comen, tyll he came to his owne countrey: as sayth myne auctor & also the Frensh boke: but more verely Charlone kepynge togyder his hooste, & hauynge fauoure of dyuerse lordys of Italye, the emperoure Charlys remouyd to the cytie of Mantue, where he was grudgyd with a feuoure; for remedye whereof, he toke a pocion of a physycion Iewe named Sedechias, whiche was intoxicat, by meane of which venemous pocion, he dyed shortlye after, whan he had reygned as kynge and emperoure, after moost accorde of wryters, by the space of. xxxvii. yeres: whereof he reygned as emperoure. iii. yeres, leuyng after hym a sone named Lewys, whiche, as before is shewyd, was ruler of the coūtrey of Austracy or Lorayne. Whan this Charlys was dede, his frēdys entēdynge to haue caryed ȳ corps into Fraunse, and[6] causyd it to be seryd and enoynted with ryche and precyous bawmys, and other oyntmentis, and aromatykes; but all myghte not stoppe the intollerable ire of his body: so that they were fayne to bury hym at Vercyle, within the monastery of sayut Euseby,

Bellum.

[1] Enemyes. edit. 1542. 1559.
[2] Spayne. edit. 1542. *by mistake.*
[3] of Rome rebellyd.
[4] byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.
[5] was passyd.
[6] "and," *omitted.*

where

where he laye ouer. vii. yeres after; and then taken vp, & conueyed to saynt Denys in Fraũce, and there honorably buryed.

Capitulum. C.lxvi.

IN the tyme of this Charlis the Ballyd, as witnessen many wryters, began the erle- *Fol. lxxxxv.*
dom of Flaũders, the which euer before theyse dayes, the ruler there of was callyd the forester of the kynge of Fraunce, whiche erledom had his begynnynge by this meane.

Ye haue harde before, in the story of Adeulphus kynge of West Saxons, howe, in his Flaũdrie initium.
retornynge from Rome, he maryed the doughter of Charlis ŷ Ballyd, named Indith, the which Indyth, after ŷ deth of her sayd husbõde, retornyd by Flaũders towarde Fraunce, thynkynge to passe without daũger, because the sayd countrey was vnder the obedyẽce of her father; but at those dayes was ruler or forester in that partyes, a noble yonge amerous man, callyd Bawdewyne, the whiche herynge of the great beautye of this Indyth[1], gaue attẽdaũce vpon her, and receyuyd her in his best maner, makynge to her all ŷ chere that to hym was possyble, and fynnally cast to her suche loue, that whan she supposed to departe, and to haue goone into Fraũce, he delayed the matyer in such curteys and wyse maner, that he wan suche fauoure of her, that she made no great haste to departe from hym: albeit that moost auctours agre that he kepte hir perforce. Whan Charlys had wyttynge that Bawdewyn thus helde his doughter Indith[1], he sent to hym, straytelye chargynge hym to sende home his doughter, but that holpe not ŷ mater. Than he purchasyd agayne hym the censures of holy churche, & accursed the sayde Bawdewyn. But whan the kynge conceyued that the yonge man had such loue to Indith, that he set not by that punysshemẽt, and also was certeynly enformed that hir harte was gyuen vnto hym, he, ĩ processe, by ŷ meane of some bysshoppis, and frendys of ŷ sayd Bawdewyn, agreed that he shuld take her to wyfe, and, in the name of hir dowar, he shulde holde and enioye the sayd countrey of Flaunders; and for he wolde haue his doughter to be the more honoured he creatyd the sayde Bawdewyn an erle, and cõmaunded hym to be callyd, after that day, erle of Flaũders. [It is also shewyd in ŷ Frẽsh Cronycle, and of other wryters, that thre dayes before his deth his spirit shuld be rauysshed from his body, and vnto places of A vision.
payne & turment, where this Charlis, by the ledynge of an aungell, shulde se hyllys and moũtaynes brenne, and pittys full of sulphyr, pytche, and hotte boylyng lede; in which paynes the sayde Charlys shuld se many of his progenytours, and bysshoppys that coũceylyd prynces to debate, or stryfe, or gaue counsayle to them to rayse of theyr subiectys vnlefull taskys, or imposicions, with many other thynges which I passe ouer for length of the mater.][2]

¶ Capitulum. C.lxvii.

EThelwaldus, or Ethelwoldus, ŷ eldest sone of Atheulphus, began his reygne ouer the Angliã.
West Saxons, or ouer the more partie of Englonde, in the yere of our Lorde. viii. C. lv. [Li. 5. ca. 34.]
and the. x. yere of Carlys the ballyd, than kynge of Fraunce; the which became so vnhappy, that he maryed that womã which his fader had sometyme kepte or holden for his concubyne, as witnessith the auctour of the Floure of Historyes: but Policronicõ sayth that he wedded his stepmother, which disacordith with the sayinge of other wryters, whiche testyfye his stepmother to be maryed to Bawdewyne, erle of Flaunders, as in the story of Charlys laste before is shewyd. This it is not expressid[3] by what happe he dyed, whã he had regned one yere, as sayth Polycronyca, but another Cronycle berith witnesse, that he was slayne [as a martyr][4] of Hungar and Hubba, prynces of Danys. [About this tyme the holy kynge seynt Edmũde cõtynued his reygne ouer the East Anglis, or Nor- Seynt Edmunde.
folke.][5]

[1] Iudith. edit. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Thys Ethelwolde, though it be not expressyd. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

¶ Capitulum. C.lx.viii.

[Li. 5. ca. 32.] EThelbertus, the seconde sone of Adeulphus, began his reygne ouer the more partye of Englonde, in ỹ yere of our Lord. viii. C. l. vi., and the. xi. yere of Charlis ỹ Ballyd, than kynge of Fraunce, in whose tyme the Danes, ẅ more strengthes, entred the West parte of this lond, and robbyd and spoylyd the countrey before theym tyll they came to Wynchester, and tooke the cytie by strengthe, and dyd therein what they wolde. But the kynge made suche prouysyon, that by hym & his dukis they were forsid to forsake the cytie, and, as they yode towarde theyr shippes, they were foughte with, and a grete parte of theym slayne and taken. Of this kyng is no thynge ellys lefte in memory more than before is shewyd, but that he dyed, whan he had reygned, after mooste wryters. vi. yeres, and was buryed at Shirborne, leuyng after hym noon issu of his body: wherefore the rule of the lāde fell to his brother Etheldrede.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxix.

Fol. lxxxxvi. [Li. 5. ca. 32.] ETheldredus, the. iii. sone of Adeulphus, began his reygne ouer the West Anglis, and the more parte of Englōde, in the yere of our lorde. viii. C. lxiii., and the. xviii. yere of Charlis the Ballyd, than kynge of Fraunce. In the begynnyng of this kynges reygne the Danes landed in East Englād, or Norff. & Suff., but they were compellyd to forsake ỹ countrey, and so toke agayne shyppynge, and saylyd northwarde, and londed in North-ūberlond, where they were met with of the kynges thā there reygnynge, called Osbryght and Ella, which gaue to theym a stronge fyghte; but that not withstandynge, ỹ Danys, with helpe of suche as inhabyted that countrey, wan the cytie of Yorke, and helde it a certeyne of tyme. Thā the people of Northumberlande varyed within them selfe, and had more leuer ayde the Danys, than to reygne vnder the kynge of Westsaxōs; for here is to be notyd, that all suche kynges as reygned there after Egbert, which, as before is sayed, subdued that prouynce, & other, reygned as trybutaryes to ỹ kyng of West Saxons, or Anglis: wherefore Etheldrede, herynge of thauauntage ỹ the Danys than had, assembled his people, and sped hym thytherwarde, & sent vnto the foresayde. ii. kynges, cōmaūdynge theym also to prepare theyr people agayne his cōmynge. But howe it was, or the kyng came with his hoost, the Danys so prouokyd the Northūbrys to batayle, that they met i playne felde, and foughte a long batayle, but fynally the Danys wan the pryce, and slewe bothe the foresayde kynges with a great multitude of theyr people: after whiche victory they subdued moche of the sayd countrey, and destroyed the towne of Aklynt, or Aclynde, ỹ which, as testyfyeth Beda, was sometyme one of the strongest townes of the North. Whan Etheldrede had preparid all thyng for the warre, & was purposed toward the North, for concideracion aforesayd, worde was brought vnto ỹ sayd kyng Etheldrede, of the dyscomfyture of the Northumbres, and also of dyuerse of ỹ sayde Danys, with other that were cōmyn to Mercia, & had wonne the towne of Snotyngham, or Notyngham, which tydynges lettyd hym of his forth spede in that iourney; but this saying is disagreable vnto Polycronycon, for he saythe that the Northumbres were yet' of theyr kynge Osbrutus, or Osritus, after some auctors, and chase vnto them a tyraūt, named Ella, by meane whereof great dissēcion grewe amōge them to the great hurte of the coūtrey. But whan the Danes had passyd the countrey, & wonne the cytie of Yorke, that than was febly wallyd, than by constraynt and of fere for the defence of theyr coūtrey, they were fayne to agree, and to gather strengthe on all sydes, so that bothe the foresayde kynges went agayne the sayde Danys, & bothe were slayne. After whiche scomfiture, the people as desolate, some fled the countrey, and some made peace with the Danys, and lyued vnder

Denorū victoria.

* were wery. edit. 1559.

they

theyr tuyssyon: and so the Danys kepte the possessyon of that countrey in suche wyse, that no Angle had rule thereof tyll the tyme of Adelstone, or Ethelstone, or, after some wryters, tyll the tyme of Edredus, so that at the laste where[1] they helde the possessyō thercof, ouer the terme of. lx. yeres. Than the Danys beynge thus possessyd of ỹ Northe countrey, manned ỹ same, & fortifyed the stronge holdys hereof: and the other of them came downe into Mercia, or myddell Englande, and wanne a parte thereof, with ỹ foresayd towne of Notyngham, and dwellyd there ỹ more parte of ỹ yere folowynge. Wherefore kynge Etheldrede, w ayde of Burdredus, thā kyng of Mercia, layd seage vnto the towne, the whiche, whan the Danis perceyuyd shulde be wonne, they refusyd the towne, and tooke the towre, or castell, and defendyd it in so stronge maner, that they helde it tyll a peace or apoyntment was concludyd atweene the. ii. kynges and them; which was ỹ they shulde goo free where they wolde, and cary with them theyr horse and harnesse without any pyllage. And whan this peace was thus made, eyther of the kynges departyd to theyr owne, and the Danys retornyd vnto Yorke, and dwellyd there the yere folowynge. And the yere folowyng that sayde yere, a parte of the sayd Danys takyng shyppynge in the Northe, entendynge to sayle towarde Easte Englonde, met in the see with a flote of Danys, wherof the capytaynes, or ledars, were named Hynguoar and Hubba, the which, by exortacyon of the other cōmynge out of the North, made all one course, and lastly lāded ī East Englāde, or Norff., and in processe of tyme came vnto Thetford. Thereof herynge Edmunde, thā kynge of that prouynce, assemblyd an hooste, and gaue vnto them batayll; but Edmunde and his hoost was forsed to forsake the felde, and the kynge with a fewe persones fled vnto the castell of Framylyngham, or Framyngeham, whome the Danys pursued. But he in shorte whyle after yeldid hymselfe vnto the persecucion of the Danys, and for this blessed man, Edmūde, wold not renye or denye Cryste and his lawys, they therefore moost cruelly bond hym vnto a tree, and causyd hym to be shot to deth; and lastly causyd his hede to be smytten from the body, & caste among the thycke of the busshes. [But whan his freendis came after to bury this holy treasoure, and lackyd ỹ hede, and made for it busy serche; the hede beynge in the clawys of a wylde wolfe, spake, & sayd, thre tymes distynctly, "here, here, here," by reason of whiche speche they came vnto the place where the hede, in the sayde beestys kepynge, laye, which sayd wolfe, cōtrary to his kynde, anone as he sawe ỹ people, fled from the hed, and suffred theym to take it vp, and folowed them after a sertayne of tyme as he hadde ben tame.][2] Diuus Edmundus.

Thā they[3], with great solempnyte, caryed the body and hede vnto Eglidon, or Eglisdon, now callyd saynt Edmundes Bury, & there buryed hym about ỹ yere of our Lord, as wytnessenne Polycronyca, Guydo, and other. viii. C. lxix., as before it is shewyd, in ỹ Chapytre of this werke foure score and. xvi., for whom dayly God shewyd there many myracles.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxx.

WHan this blessyd Edmunde was thus martyred for the loue that he bare towarde his master, Cryste, and his lawys, his brother, named Edwoldus, settynge a parte the lykyng and pleasure of the worlde, [albe it that to hym belōgynge to[4] the right of that kingdom][5], toke vpon hym the habyte of an heremyte, and lyued onely by brede and water, at the abbay of Cernne, in the countye of Dorset, by the clere welle that saynt Austynne, by his prayers, made to sprynge, whan he conuerted first the Saxons of that prouynce to the faythe of Cryste. *Fol. lxxxvii.*

Of this sayd abbey of Cernne, Policronica sayth, that it was after thyse dayes riche

[1] "at the laste where," *omitted* in the later editions. [2] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [3] his friends. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] belongyd. edit. 1533. [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

and right welthy; but the gouernours therof mysspent the patrymony therof in excesse, glotony, & nat amonge the seruauntes of God.

Wherfore he sayth, farther, that couetyse and pryde had so chaunged all thyng in Englande in thyse dayes, that all thynges that before tyme were gyuen to abbeys, were than more wasted in glotony, and outrage of owners[1], than in substaunce[2] and ayde of nedy men & of gestes or nedy waye goers. Albe it he sayth the firste doers or gyuer lose nat theyr rewarde, for theyr wyll and entent is full euenly paysed in a balaunce before hym, that is the rewarder of all good. But though Treuysa, ỹ was the translatour of this boke of Policronicon, out of Laten ito our vulgar tunge, report this to be done or this misordre to be vsed in this[3] dayes, whiche lyued in the tyme of that honorable prynce, Edwarde the thirde, if he now lyued, he wold nat in no gouernours of mõkes, blacke or yet whyte, no suche[4] outrage. For nowe at thyse dayes, pryde and glotony is clerely banisshed from their monasteries and cellis; and in the rome of pryde, with his frende disobedyence, haue they nowe lodged humylyte, with his suster obedyence; and in the stede of glotony and vnclennesse of lyuynge, haue they nowe newly professed theym vnto all chastytie, temperaunce & abstynence; auoydyng all slowth and idelnesse; & exarcise theym in goostly study, and prechynge of the worde of God with all dylygence. So that now ỹ holy rules and ordynaunces made by ỹ holy fader & abbot, seynt Benet, which, by[5] ignoraũce, haue lõge tyme slept, now by grace of good gauernaũce, are newly reuyued[6] & quickened. And here an ende, leste I be accused of dissymulacion. Than to retourne vnto ỹ Danys, from whom I haue made a longe digression. Treuth it is, that whan they had, as before is sayd, martyred the blessyd man Edmonde, & robbed and spoyled that countre, they toke agayne theyr shyppes, and landed agayne in Sothery, and there contynued theyr iourney tyll they came to the towne of Redynge, & wanne the towne with the castell. Policronica sayth, that the thyrde daye of theyr thyther cõmynge, Hyngwar and Hubba, as they wente in purchasynge of prayes, were slayne at a place called Engelfelde: whiche prynces of Danys thus slayne, the other dele of theym kepte hole togyder in suche wyse, that the West Saxons myght take of theym none auauntage. But yet vin fewe dayes after ỹ Danys were holden so short, ỹ they were forced to issue out of the castell, & to defende theym in playne batayll. In the whiche, by comfort of kynge Etheldrede and of Alurede his brother, the Danys were discomfyted and many of theym slayne. Wherof the other beyng ware, fled agayne to the castell, and kepte theym within the same a certayne of tyme. Thanne the kynge cõmaunded Ethelwolde, thanne duke of Barok or Barkshyre, to attende with his people vpon that castel, and to se that the Danys breke nat out at large, he[7] went in other costes of that countre to subdue other of the sayd Danys. But whan the Danys knewe of the kynges departure, they brake out sodaynly anone of theyr holde, and toke the duke vnpuruayed, and slewe hym, and moche of his people, and caused the other to wdrawe theym farther from that towne or castell. Thanne thyse Danys drewe theym to other that were theyr lordes in that countre, and enbatuled theym in suche wyse that of theym was gaderyd a stronge hooste.

Auctoris opinio.

[Li. 5. ca. 33.]

Danys be chased.

It was nat longe after that duke Ethelwolde was slayn, but the kynge was ascertayned therof; the whiche renued his heuynesse, and made hym ful heuy to consyder the losse of his frende, and the encreace and multyplyinge of his enemyes. For the daye before reporte of thyse tydynges, as affermeth an olde Cronycle, worde was brought to hym of ỹ landynge of a Dane named Osryk, which of Policronica is named kyng of Denmark: the whiche in short tyme after, with assystens of the other Danys, had gaderyd a great hoost, and were enbatuled vpon Aysbedowne. To this batayll Alured was forced, by great nede, to come before his brother the kynge, that thanne was herynge of a masse with great deuocion, nat knowynge of ỹ hasty spede of his brother, where the kynge

[1] the owners. [2] sustenaunce. [3] his. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] laye no suche. [5] by, *omitted* in edit. 1542. [6] rceaued. edit. 1542. [7] whyle he.

thus

thus beyng in his medytacions, ỹ hosts of Anglys and Danys strake togyders with huge violence. And howe be it, the Danys hadde wonne the hyll, and the Cristen men were in the valey, yet by grace [and vertue of the kyngs holy prayers[1],] and manhod of them selfe, they at length wanne the hyll of the Danys, and slewe theyr duke or kynge, called Osryke, or after ỹ Englysshe Cronycle, Oseg, &. v. of theyr dukes with moche of theyr people, and chaced the other dele vnto Redynge towne. Wherfore ỹ Danys resembled theyr people, and gaderyd a newe hoost: soo that, within. xv. dayes, they met at a towne called Basynge Stoke, and there gaue batayll vnto the kynge, and had the better. Than the kyng gaderyd his people, the which at that felde were chaced and disparbeled[2], and, with fresshe soldiours to theym accompanyed, met the Danys within two monethes after, at a towne called Merton, & gaue to theim a sharpe batayll: so that moch people were slayne as well of the Cristen as of the Danys; but in the ende the Danys had the honoure of the felde, and the kynge of Angles was wounded, and fayne to sauegarde hymselfe by polyse whenne myght fayled. After thyse two feldes thus won by the Danis, they opteyned great sircuite of grounde, and distroyed man & childe that to theym were inobedyent, and churches and temples they tourned to vse of stables, and other vyle occupacyons. And to the[3] sorowe was added an other; for where the kyng hoped well to recouer his losses by ayde of his subiects, as wel of other parts of his lāde, as of his owne of West Saxon, whan he had sent his cōmyssyons into Northumberlāde, into Mercia and Eest Anglia, he had of them small or lytell comforte; so ỹ ỹ coūtre of West Saxon was brought in great desolacion: for the kynge was beset with enemyes vpon euery syde, & ouer that his knyghts and soldyours were tyred and palled with ouer watche and laboure. Whiche manyfolde aduersyties and troubles, synkynge in the kynges mynde, with broser[4] or hurte ensuynge of the wounde before taken at ỹ batayll besyde Merton, shortened his dayes: so that he dyed whan he hadde reygned in great persecucion of the Danys, after most wryters. viii. yeres, without issue of his body; by reason wherof the rule of ỹ lande fyll vnto his brother Alured.

Bella. Miseria.

It is wytnessed of some cronycles, that nat withstādynge the great trouble & vexacion that this kynge Etheldrede had with the Danys, that he foūded the house or colage of Chanons at Exetour, and was buryed at the abbey of Wynbourne or Wobourne.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxi.

ALuredus, the. iiii. sone of Adolfus, & brother to Etheldredus, laste kynge, began his reygne ouer the Westsaxons & other prouynces of Englande, in ỹ yere of our Lord. viii. C. lxxii. and the. xxxi. yere of Charles, forenamed, than kynge of Fraunce. This Alured, or after some wryters, Alphred, was. xii. yeres of age or he were set to scole. But for all that he sped sǫ well his tyme, that he passed his brother and other, that were longe sette forth before hym. And by the counsayll of Neotus or Notus, he ordeyned the firste grāmer scole at Oxenforde, and other free scoles, and fraunchaysed that towne with many great lyberties, and translated many lawes, as Marcian lawe and other, out of Bryttessh speche vnto Saxon tunge. He was also a subtell maister in buyldynge and deuysyng therof, and excellent connynge in all huntynge; fayre he was of stature, and moost beloued of his fader of all his children.

Anglia. [Li. 6. cap. 1.] Fol. lxxxviii.

Longe tyme it wolde aske to reherce all his vertuse; but, for he was in his youth disposed to the synne of ỹ flesshe, and therby letted frome many vertues purpose, he lastly after many resistences by hym doon, to auoyde ỹ temptacion therof, besought God entyerly that he wolde send to hym some cōtynuell sykenes in quenchynge of that vyce, and that he were nat vnprofitable to worldly besynesses, and serue God ỹ better.

Than at Goddes ordynaūce he had that euyll called fycus, with the whiche sykenes he

[1] *Omitted* in edit. *1542. 1559.* [2] dysparklyd. [3] this. [4] brose.

was

was greued many yeres; and lastly cured of ỹ holy virgyn saynt Modwenna, thanne dwellynge in Irelande. But after this cure by her done, she came into Englãde, for so moch as her monastery or churche ỹ she there dwelled in was destroyed. Wherfore Adulfus, fader to Alured, knowynge the vertue and holynesse of this mayden, gaue to her grounde to buylde vpon. ii. abbeys of maydens, that is to say, one in Ardernne, at a place called Pollysworthã, and that other at Strenesalte in the Northe. But this holy mayden dyed in ỹ ilande of Andresee besyde Burton, after many yeres of the buyldynge of thyse sayd two abbeys. And after. vii. yeres that she had ben closed within stone walles, in the ile before named.

Historia. Whan Alured was cured of this sykenesse, to hym fyll another: the whiche contynued with hym from ỹ. xx. yere of his age tyll the. xlv. yere of his sayd age. But, that nat withstandynge, he wedded a noble womã named Ethelwydã: of the whiche he receyued. ii. sõnes, Edwarde, surnamed ỹ elder, and Egelwarde; &. iii. doughters, Elphleda, that after was Lady of Marcia, Ethelgota a menchõn or nonne, and the thirde was named Elfrida; the whiche he caused all aswell doughters as other to study the arte or scyence of gramer, & to be norysshed with all vertue. And when this Alured was admytted to be kynge, he well consyred[1] the great daunger that his lande was in. Wherfore he gaderyd to hym his lordes, & suche as he myght nat wynne without stryfe, he wanne with great iustyce and fayre hestes; so that he shortly assembled a stronge hoost, and in the seconde moneth that he was made kyng, he mette with ỹ Danys besyde Wylton, and yelded to theym batayll, but nat without great losse of men on both parties. Than he remeuyd his people, and in sondry places faughte with the Danys in that firste yere. vi. tymes: by mean wherof, his people were so sore mynesshed & wekyd, that he was forsed to take peas w̃ his enemyes, vpõ couenaunt that they shulde auoyde the countres and prouynces that he hadde domynyon of. Vpon whiche agrement fermely cõcluded, the Danys for a tyme voyded those countres, and drewe towarde London, and rested theym about that coost the more parte of the yere folowynge; and from thens to Lyndesey, in robbynge and spoylyng the townes and vyllages as they went, and holdyng the cõmon people vnder theyr seruage: and so contynued ouer the terme of two yeres. But or ỹ thirde yere were ended, they yode vnto Repindon, and there put downe or slewe Burdredus, than kyng of Mercia, and betoke that kyngdome vnto a seruaunt of his, named Colwolphus, vpon condicion that he shuld kepe it to theyr behofe. And thenne they beseged a towne therby called Hãbourgth, and assawted it right sharpely: wherfore [ỹ people therof, beynge in great drede and fere, toke the body of that holy virgyn seỹt Werbourgth, by vertue of whose body ỹ enemyes were somwhat put abacke, & after for a more suertie][2] the inhabytañces of ỹ towne of Hamburgth, [with that holy treasure,][3] fled vnto Westchester[4], [where at this daye she lyeth honorably shryned.] Than the kynge made efte peas w̃ the Danys, in truste wherof he rode with the fewer people: wherof they beyng ware layde busshemẽts for hym, and set so nere hym that they slewe a great parte of his company in a nyght, as he rode towarde Wỹchester. For this treason ỹ kyng was sore amoued agayne the Danys, & in as secrete maner as he myght, he assembled a chosen company of knyghtes, and, as wytnesseth Guydo, fyll vpon theym sodeynly and distressed many of theym, and lefte theym nat tyll he had chased them to Chester, or after an other auctour, to Exetour; and there kynge Alurede kept the Danys so short, that he cõstreyned them to gyue to hym pledges to kepe the peas, and to dwelle no lenger there thanne they myght purueye shyppyng at the next porte to sayle into Denmarke.

After whiche accorde thus fynesshed, the kynge retourned vnto Mercia or myddell Englãde; and for he harde ỹ Colwolphus was ded, to whome the Danys hadde taken that lordshyp to kepe, he therfore seased that kyngdom, and ioyned it to his owne of

[1] consyderyd. [2] *Cmitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559. [4] Winchester. edit. 1542. 1559.

West

West Saxons, by whiche reason the kyngdome of Mercia surseased, that had contynued frome theyr firste kynge named Penda, as in the chapter of this werke. C. xxix. pretendynge[1], is more at length declared.

Aboute the. v. yere of the reygne of Alurede, the Danys, as affermeth Policronica, sayled fro Warham towarde Exeto', in the whiche iourney they loste. vi. score of theyr smal shyppes by a tempest in the see: but some of theym occupyed the towne of Chepynham, and the countree therunto adioynynge, and chased the Angles, or made theym as subgettes to the Danys. And so sore the power of theym augmented, that the Angles loste dayly, and they encresed: and the more by reason of ŷ landyng of a prynce of the Danys, named Gutteron or Gowthram, whiche is named kynge of Denmarke.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxii.

ALurede, beynge thus ouerset in multytude of enemyes, as affermeth Policronica and other, ladde an vncertayne lyfe, and vneasy, with fewe folks aboute hym, in the wode countree of Somersetshyre, and had ryght scante to lyue with, but suche as he & his people myght purchase by huntynge and fysshynge. [In whiche mysery, he thus by a certayne of tyme contynuynge, he was, by a vysyon to hym shewed of seynt Cutbert, comforted as foloweth. Vpon a tyme whan his company was from hym departed and besyed in purchasynge of vytayle, and he for a pastyme was redynge on a boke, a pylgryme came to hym, & requyred his almes in Goddes name. The kyng lyfte vp his handes to warde heuen, & said, I thanke God, ŷ of his grace he vysyteth his pore man this daye by an other poore man, and that he woll wytsaue to aske of me that he hath gyuen to me. Then the kynge anone called his seruaunt, that hadde but one lofe and a lytell whatte of wyne, and bad hym gyue the halfe therof vnto the poore man: the whiche receyued it thankfully, & sodaynly vanysshed from his syght, so ŷ no step of hym was seen in the nesshe fenne or moore that he passed thorough. And also all that was gyuen to hym was lafte there by, in suche wyse as it was to hym gyuen. Shortly after his company retourned to theyr maister, and brought with theym great plenty of fysshe that they hadde than taken.

Regis penuria.

Fol. lxxxxix.

A vysyon.

The nyght folowynge, whan ŷ kynge was at his rest, one apered to hym in a bysshoppes wede, & chargynge[2] hym that he shuld loue God, and kepe iustyse, and be mercyable to the poore men, & worshyp preestes; and sayd moreouer, Alured, "Criste knoweth thy conscyence and thy wyll, and now wyll put an ende of thy sorowe and care: for to morowe stronge helpers shal come to the, by whose helpe thou shalt subdue thyne enemyes." "Who arte thou?" sayd the kynge. "I am Cuthbert," sayd he, "the pylgryme that yester daye was here with the, to whom thou gauest both brede and wyne, I am besy for the and thyne: wherfore haue thou mynde hereof, whan it is well with the." But howe he had his pylgram in mynde after, by the fredam that he gaue with ŷ possessions vnto Doreham churche, it is well and euydently seen.][3] Than Alured, after this vysyon[4], was well comforted, & shewyd hym more at large. So ŷ dayly resorted to hym men of Wylshyre, Somersetshyre & Hamshyre, tyll ŷ he was strongly cõpanyed. Than ŷ kyng put hym in a great ieopardy, as sayth William de Regibus, for he dyd on hym ŷ abyt of a mynstrell, & with his instrument of musyke he entred the tentes & pauylyons of the Danys, & in shewynge there his enterludes & songes, he espyed all theyr slouthe and idelnesse, and harde moche of theyr counseyll, and after retourned vnto his company, and tolde to theym all the maner of the Danys.

Thanne the kynge, with a chosen company, fyll vpon the Danys by nyght, and dystressed & slewe of theym a great multytude, and chaced theym from that coste. And whan the

[1] precedynge. [2] chargyd. edit. 1533. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Notwithstandynge at length he. edit. 1542. 1559.

kyng had thus chaced the Danys, by cõsell of his knyghtes, he buylded ther a toure, and named it Edelynge; which is to meane, i our speche, a toure of noble men. Out of whiche toure he and his soldyers made many assautes vpon theyr enemyes, and dyd to theym moche harme & scath, and clerely[1] ỹ countre of them bytwene that and Selwoode. This Edelynge or Ethelyngysseye it stondeth in a great marys or moore, so that men may nat wyn to it without shyp or bote, and conteyneth no great grounde. But yet therin is venyson and other wylde beestes, & fowle, and fysshe great plente.

Thus kynge Alured dayly pursuynge[2] his enemyes by helpe of God, and his subgettes, whiche, herynge of his victoryes and manfull dedes, drewe to hym dayly out of all costes, by whose powers and assystens he helde the Danys so shorte, that he wanne from theym Wynchester and many other good townes, and forced theym lastly to seche for peas; the whiche was concluded vpon certayne couenauntes: wherof one and pryncipall was, that theyr kyng named, as before is sayde, Guttrun or Gowthram, or, after the Englysshe Cronycle, Gurmunde, shulde be cristened, and a certayne of his dukes with hym. And for the kyng wolde haue the Danys banysshed out of the west parties of Englande, he graunted to hym East Anglia to abyde and dwell in.

Condiciões pacis.

Thanne this prynce of Danys, accordynge to the couenauntes, was cristened at Wynchester, and. xx. of ỹ grettest of his dukes. And to this sayd Danys prynce, Alured was godfader at the founte stone, and named hym Athelstane. And after he had a season feasted the sayde Danys, he, accordyng to his promyse, gaue vnto theyr kynge the countree of East Anglia, whiche than cõteyned Norffolke and Suffolke, and parte of Cambrydgeshyre. And also, as wytnesseth Polycronica, he graunted to the sayd Danys[3] the countre of Northumberlande. And the other that wolde nat be cristened, departed ỹ lande, and sayled into Fraunce, where they rested them with theyr cosyns and kynsemen, that, at those dayes, wasted the lande of Fraunce, as the[4] Frenshe storyes is somwhat apparent. Whan this Danys kynge Athelstanne had ỹ possession of thyse sayd countrees, ye shall vnderstande that all suche Angles as dwelled there, and within ỹ precynct of them, were his[5] obedyence. Albe it that he helde the sayd prouynce as in fee of the kyng, and promysed to dwell there as his liege man, yet, that promyse nat withstandynge, he contynued lyke a tyraunt by the terme of. xi. yeres ful, & dyed in the. xii.

In the whiche tyme, kynge Alured amended the cytie of Septonne that now is called Shaftesbury, and other townes and stronge holdes, that by the Danys were sore abated & enpayred. And, as wytnesseth Guydo and other, he buylded the howse of nonnes at Shaftesbury, or was firste founder therof.

He also founded an howse of relygyon in the aboue named place of Ethelyngesey, and another in Wynchester, that was named the newe monastery, in the whiche he was after buryed. And ouer this he endowed the churche of seynt Cuthbert in Doreham, as before is touched, aboute the. xv. yere of the reygne of Alurede. The Danys, whiche before, as ye haue harde, sayled into Fraunce, retourned into Englande, and landed in Kent, and so lastely came vnto Rochester, and beseged that cytie, and laye there so longe, that they buylded a towre of tymber, and nat of stone, agayne the gates of the cytie. But by strength of ỹ cytezeyns that tower was destroyed, and the cytie defended tyll kynge Alurede rescowed theym; the whiche hadde made suche puruyaunce for the dystressynge of theym, by water and lande, that they were so nere trapped, that for fere, they lefte theyr horses behynde theym, and fledde to theyr shyppes by nyght. But whan the kynge was therof ware, he sent after theym, and toke. xvi. of their shyppes, and slewe many of the said Danys. After this iourney the kynge retourned to London, and repayred certayne places therof, that before tyme hadde ben hurte or febled with the Danys, and betoke the

[Li. 6. ca. 3.]

[1] clerely voyded. [2] pursued. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] the Danys that were crystened. [4] in the. [5] were under his obedyence.

guydynge therof vnto Etheldredus, than erle or duke of Mercia, to whome as wyfe, he had gyuen his doughter Elfleda.

Aboute this tyme dyed Dunbartus, than bysshop of Wynchester, and the kynge made Dunwolfus bysshop after hym; the which, as sayth Polycronica, the kynge fande in ỹ wodde kepynge of beestes, in the tyme whan he hym selfe kepte the woddes for fere of the Danys.

Aboute the. xxi. yere of the reygne of this kynge Alurede, the Danys landed in. iiii. places of this lande, that is to wytte, in the East Englande, and the North & in ỹ West, in. ii. places. But for ỹ kynge, before theyr landynge, had warnynge of ỹ deth of Athelstanne kynge of Danys of Eest Englande, and of other complayntes of the Danys, he therfore yode thyther, in whiche tyme of his there beynge, thyse tydynges came vnto hym.

¶ Capitulum C.lxxiii.

WHan kynge Alurede was assertayned of thyse tydynges, for so moche as some of the sayd Danys were landed in that coste, and knewe well that the ferther they drewe vnto those[1] parties the more they shuld be ayded & strengthed, he therfore sent mesangers *Fol. c.* in all haste vnto Etheldrede, erle or duke of Mercia, chargynge hym to assemble an host of the men of Mercya, and the border there aboute, & to make resystens agaynne the Danys landed in the West, tyll his cõmynge[2]. And that doon, the kyng sped hym towarde his enemyes, and pursued theym so sharply, that in the ende he draue theym out of Eest Anglia: the whiche than landed in Kent, whether ỹ kynge with his people spedde hym, and in lyke maner draue ỹ Danys from thens. Howe be it, of any specyall fyght or batayll auctours therof leue no memory. After this, agayne the Danys toke shyppynge, Danorũ persecutio. and sayled into North Wales, & there robbed and spoyled the Brytons, and from thens retourned by the see into Eest Anglia, and there rested theym, for so moche as the kynge than was gone Westwarde. In this whyle, some of the foresayd Danys had wonne the towne of Chester; but for the countres adioynaunt presed so sore vpon them, the said Danys were compelled to kepe theym within the sayd towne or cytie, and to defende theym by that maner. But that holdynge of the towne lasted so longe, that the Danys were compelled to ete theyr horses for hunger; but by apoyntement they lastly gaue ouer the towne, and went thens into Northumberlande. And in the whyle that the kyng with his hoost spedde hym thytherwarde, they, leuynge the stronge holdes and castell garnysshed with men and vytayll, toke agayne shyppynge, and fet their cource in suche wyse, that they landed in Sussex, and so came vnto the towne of Lewes; and from thens towarde London, and buylded a tower or castell nere vnto the ryuer of Lewes[3]. But ỹ Londoners, herynge of theyr doynges, manned out a certayne nombre of men of armys, the which, with assystens of ỹ men of ỹ countre, put the Danys from that tower, and after bette it downe to the grounde. Soone after the kynge came downe thyther, & for he thought that ryuer shuld be a meane to brynge enemyes esle sones into that countre, therfore he cõmaunded that streme to be deuyded into dyuers stremes, soo that by reason therof, there[4] a shyp myght sayle in tyme afore passed, than a lytell bote myght scantly rowe. Than by presence of ỹ kynge, ỹ Danys were forsed to flee that coũtre, and from thens toke agayne way towarde Walys, and kept a parte of the ryuer of Seuarne, and vpon the border therof buylded theym a castell nere vnto Walys, & so rested theym there for a tyme: so that. iii. yeres after, this lande was vexed with thre maner of sorowes; with warre of the Danys, pestylence of men, and moreyn of bestes. Whiche trowbles and aduersyties natwitstandynge, he[5] knyghtly and manfully resysted the malyce of his enemyes,

[1] these. [2] tyll his cõmynge, *omitted* in edit. 1542. [3] [Lee?] [4] where. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] the kyng.

and thanked God alwaye, what trowble so euer fyll to hym or to his realme, and susteyned it with great humylyte and pacyence.

It is tolde of hym ỹ he deuyded the daye and nyght in thre parties, if he were nat lette by warre or other great besynesse. Wherof viii. houres he spente in study and lernynge of scyence; and other. viii. he spente in prayer and almes dedes, with other charytable dedes; and other. viii. houres he spent in his naturall reste, sustaunce[1] of his body, and the nedes of the realme: the whiche ordre he kepte duely by waxen tapers kepte by certayne persones.

Virtutes Aluredi.

Thus this marcyall knyght contynuynge in all prowesse and vertue, lastely dyed, whan he had reygned ouer the more parte of this lande by the terme of. xxviii. yeres full, and was firste buryed at Wylton, and after certayne yeres, remoued and caryed vnto Wynchester; leuyng after hym a sone named Edwarde, surnamed Edwarde the elder: for the other brother called Egelwarde dyed before his fader.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxiiii.

Francia.

LOwys the seconde of that name, and sone of Charlys the Bawled, beganne his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in the yere of our Lorde. viii. C. lxxviii. and the. vi. yere of Aluredus, than kynge of the more parte of Englande. This was named Lodowycus Balbus, whiche is to meane Lewys ỹ Stamerer, for somoche as he had an enpedyment in his tunge. Ye haue before, in the story of Charlys the Bawled, herde how Charlonne, ỹ neuewe of Charles foresayd, with his host had entred Italy, and entented[2] towarde Rome; the whiche, after the deth of his sayde vncle, Charlys, kepte on his waye, and lastly came vnto Rome. But for the pope[3], than beyng Iohnne the. viii. of that name, fauoured ỹ aboue named Lowys Balbus, & entended to make hym emperoure, therfore he refrayned the ennoyntynge of ỹ sayd Charlonne: for ỹ whiche dede he fynally was compelled to auoyde the towne and countre, and fle[4] into Fraunce; where he beyng honourably of Lowys receyued, declared and admytted hym for emperour, as sheweth the cronycles of Rome. But after two yeres of his reygne, or short tyme of this admyssion to ỹ dygnytie, this Lewys dyed. Wherfore the sayd pope[5], to enioye his papasi[6] in rest, retourned to Rome, and anoynted the forenamed Charlonne, and crowned hym with the imperiall diademe: the whiche in ỹ Romanne Cronacle is named Carolus Tertius, the thirde emperour, that is to meane, of ỹ name.

[Li. 5. ca. 32.]

But of all this speketh no thynge the Frenshe Cronacle, except that it is there testyfyed that he was of the sayd pope amytted[7] for emperour. Polycronicon sheweth that the seconde Lowys, kynge of Fraunce, was accursed of the pope[8] Nicolas, the firste of that name, for somoche as he refused his lawfull wyfe, and toke to hym his concubyne named Waldrada. But that is vnderstande by Lowys the seconde emperoure of that name, whiche was sone of Lothayr, whiche Lothair was eldest sone of Lowys the mylde, as in the story of Charlys the Bawlyd appereth. And for the genelogy of Charlys the conquerour, or of his ofsprynge, maye the clerclyer appere, and also ỹ the reder maye haue the more certeynte of the names, which were Emperours, which kynges of Fraũce, & which were kynges of Germany, I shal, in the story of Lowys the. v. in whome, for a tyme, surseased that blode, make a remembraunce of euery emperoure and kynges of Fraunce and Germany, that reygned from ỹ sayd Charlys the grete, or conquerour, tyll Hugh Capet: the which Hugh vsurped the crowne of Fraunce, as after shall appere.

De Genolgia.

Than it foloweth in the story, that for partycyon of the lande of Austracy or Loraynne, grudge and varyaunce contynued alway attwene the kynges of Fraũce and Germany, whiche bothe kynges at this daye were named Lowys. Albe it, that the kynge of Fraunce

[1] sustenance. [2] entended. [3] the byshope. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] fled. [5] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] Byshopricke. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] admytted. [8] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

was

was surnamed Balbus, as before is shewed. For the whiche varyaunce, by labour of frendes, thyse two kynges mette at the cytie or place called Gundeuyle, where, after longe cõmunycacyon, it was fynally agreed that the sayd prouynce of Austracy shulde than be deuyded, as it somtyme had been parted attwene Charlys ỹ Balled and Lowys the kynge of Germany, theyr both fathers.

After whiche peas thus concluded, eyther parted from other in frendely wyse, and Lowys Balbus yode vnto Ardernne, where he halowed the feest of Cristemas, and from thens he yode vnto Compeynge, where he herynge[1] of the rebellyon of a marques of his realme, called Barnarde, or more verely after the Romayn story a marques of Italy. For this Barnarde, with one Helberde, had before tyme taken from the churche of Rome certeyne possessyons, whiche, by meane of this Lowys, the[2] sentence of the churche denounced agaynne theym by the fore sayd pope Iohnne[3], they were agayne restored, and the parties also reconsyled. Of the whiche nowe[4] of newe this Barnarde nowe rebelled[5], wherfore the pope[1] as to Lowys, for ỹ defensoure of the Churche of Rome sent for ayde, as before I haue shewed you. This Lowys of the sayd pope Iohnne[1] was auctorysed for emperoure; but for he was nat crowned at Rome with the imperall dyademe, he is nat accompted amonge the emperours. For this newe rebellyon of Barnarde, Lowys assembled his armey at Compayne foresayd, and fromè thens rode to the cytie of Troyes in Vincent, where he was taken with sodayne malady, of the whiche he dyed shortly after, nat without susspeccyon of venym; whan he had been kynge of Fraunce fully two yeres, leuynge after hym two sõnes, that is to saye Lowys & Charlys, or, after some wryters, Charlemayne. *Fol. Ci.*

¶ Capitulum. C. lxxv.

LOwys and Charlys, the sonnes of Lowys Balbus, or Lewys ỹ Stamerer, began theyr reygne ouer ỹ Frenshemen, in the yere of oure Lordes incarnacyon. viii.C.lxxx., & the yere of ỹ reygne of Alurede, than kynge of Englande, the. viii. yere: the whiche, for they were yonge of age, were put vnder tuyssion and gydyng of Barnarde, the erle of Aunergii[6], to whom ỹ fader, by his lyfe, had theym cõmytted. Wherfore the sayd Barnard, with other of his affynytie, assembled shortly after at Meaus in Loraynne, and thyther called vnto theym the lordes of the lande, to treate matyers for the cõmon wele of the same.

In those dayes was a man of great myght in Fraunce, named Gosseleynne, the whiche enuyed the foresayd erle Barnarde and other, for certayne armes[7] to hym by theym done in tyme before passed, in auengynge wherof the sayde Gosseleynne intended to put hym and other from the rule of the lande, whiche he knewe well they shulde occupye, whyle the sayde. ii. chyldrenne had rule of the same.

And this euyll purpose to brynge to effecte, he wentè vnto Conrade erle of Parys, and shewed to hym moche of his wyll; and amonge other thynges lette hym wytte, that if Lowys, kynge of Germanye, myght with his helpe be made kynge of Fraunce, that he shulde by hym be greatly auaunced: by whiche meanes he caused the sayde Conrade to take his parte, soo that he and other of his affynytie, whan they came vnto the foresayd counsayll at Meawse, sayd that Lewys, kynge of Germany, was more apte to rule the lande of Fraunce than any other was. And also after some wryters, thyse Lewys and Charlys aforesayd, were nat ỹ legyttimat sõnes of the forenamed Lowys Balbus, but gotten in baste of a cõcubyne of the sayd Lewys.

This matyer thus debated and argued amonges the counsayll, lastly by most in nombre, it was agreed, that Lowys, kynge of Germany, shuld be by ambassade requyred to come and take vpon hym the rule of the lande of Myddell Fraunce: the whiche with small request was agreable, and in shorte tyme after came vnto the sayde cytie of Meawse, &

[1] herde. [2] and the. [3] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] but now. [5] Barnarde rebelled agayne. [6] Auergii. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] harmes.

Legacio. after to Verdune: but assone as ỹ knowlege was come to Barnarde, and other of his affynyte, by counsayll of Hugh & Terry, two nobles of Fraunce, the bysshop of Orlyaũce, with an erle and other, were sente to Verdune, vnto the sayd kyng of Germany, with his[1] message, that if he were content to take vnto hym all suche parte of the prouynce of Loraynne as Charles the Bailed kepte from his fader Lowys, without more clayme of ỹ lande or realme of Fraunce, he shulde gladly haue it, and if nat he shulde abyde the iugement of Mars and his batayll. With whiche offer Lowys was wele contented, and beyng of it in a suertie, departed agayne into Germany. Thorough that doynge, the forenamed Gosselynne and Conrade, with other of theyr frendes were with it sore dyscontented of ỹ departure of Lowys foresayd. They[2], in goodly haste after, conueyed the sayd. ii. children vnto the cytie of Ferrer, and there crowned and proclaymed theym for kynges, as wytnesseth maister Robert Gagwyne; but the forenamed Gosselynne and Conrade, nat leuynge so the matier, sent messangers vnto the quene of Germany, complaynynge theym vnto her of the vnstablenesse of her lorde and tymerousnesse, wherby he had nat alonely loste ỹ possessyon of the realme of Fraunce, but also he hadde put theym and all their frendes in great fere and daunger. Wherof heryng, the quene in her mynde was sore dyscontented with her lord and husbande, and, as she durste, shewed it to hym as his reproche and dishonour, and fynally to satysfye the myndes of the sayde Gosselynne and Conrade, she sent into Guyon her brother named Boso, by whose aydes and assystence he was of that prouynce proclaymed kynge.

Endurynge whiche trowbles, the Danys entred the lande, and came vnto the ryuer of Lyger, and robbed and spoyled the countree without mercy: wherfore the kynges assembled theyr people, and gaue to them batayll nere vnto the ryuer or[3] Vyen, where they Historia. distressed this sayd Danys, and slewe of theym. ix.M., and drowned of theym ouer that a great multytude in ỹ sayd ryuer. After whiche victory by the kynges opteyned, a newe vexasion and trowble was to theym ascerteyned, that Lewys, kyng of Germany, with a great puysaunce, was cõmen vnto a place called Ducy, and to hỹ was gone the forenamed Gosselynne & Conrade, with al the power that they myght make; and by theyr ledynge was from thens conueyed vnto Rybemount. But how so it was, for lacke of perfourmaunce of promyse, made by the sayd two erles vnto ỹ kynge of Germany and nat obserued, he herynge of the kynges of Fraunce drawynge towarde hym with a stronge hoost, cõcluded a peas, and retourned into Germany, and the. ii. bretherne rode togyder vnto the cytie of Damens or Dameus, where they deuyded the lande of Fraunce attwene theym; so that Lowys helde to hym the countre nere and aboute Parys, with ỹ prouynce of Neustria or Normandy, and Charles had vnto his parte Burgoynne and Goyon, ẏ promyse made and assured on eyther pertye, that eyther of them shulde ayde and assyste other.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxvi.

AFter this partycyon attwene the. ii. brethernne thus made, by ỹ meanes of Lowys kyng of Germany, the fore sayde erles Gosselynne and Conrade were vnto the sayd brethernne recõsyled and agreed; and for to theym redy worde was brought, that Bose[4] before named, kyng of Guyon, had wonne the cytie of Vyen, and therin lefte his wyfe, *Fol. C. ii.* whyle that he occupyed the hylles and mountaynes beynge there aboute, they ioyntly assembled theyr knyghtes, and sped[5] thyther, and layde theyr seage aboute the sayd cytie. But, durynge this siege, the Danys eft enwasted ỹ lande of Fraũce: wherfore Lowys ỹ elder brother departed from that siege, leuynge there his brother Charlis. But or the said Lowys myght wyn to the sayd Danys, as tyrauntes and cruell enemyes to Cristes fayth, they had spoyled many churches and temples, and a monastery of seynt Peter in Corby,

[1] thys. [2] but the sayd Barnarde with other of his syde. [3] of. [4] Boso. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] sped them.

& throw-

& throwen it downe to the grounde; after whiche vyle and cruell dede by theym done, Lewes gaue vnto theim batayll, & slewe of them great nombre, & chased the remenaunt.

But after this victory ensued a great wonder; for whan ỹ cristen had, as before is sayd, chased the Pagans or Danys, they retourned as confused and dysparkled[1] lyke as all the hoost of Danys had theym pursued, so that well was hym that myght ronne fastest and hyde hymselfe from the daũger of his enemye: for it was thought to theym, and apparent to theyr syght, that theyr enemyes folowed at theyr backes with all keynde of wepyn, and yet folowed theym no man. The whiche fere & flyght of Frenshemen, as sayth myn auctoure, was sente to theym by dyuyne ;[2] forasmoche as they so often before tyme had wonne thenne the pryce of theyr enemyes, and hadde nat therfore gyuen due thanke vnto God, but referred it to theyr owne strengthes and vertue.

Than the Danys herynge of this disparblynge[3] of the cristen hoost, reassembled theyr power, and prepayred theym to newe fyght. Wherfore the kynge called togyder his knyghtes, so, as before is sayd, disparbled[1], and mette with theym nere vnto ỹ aboue named ryuer of Lyger; but whan both hoostes were within a daye iourney, the kynge was aduysed by some of his counsayll that he shuld nat as than fyght with them, for the whiche cause he yode vnto Compeynge, and there kept the feest of Cristemas.

And whyle the kynge was lodged in Compeynge, he delyuered his host vnto a noble mā of his lāde, named Theodorych, wyllynge hym to go agayne the Danys, of whose exployt or spede myne auctour maketh no mensyon; but sayth, that soone after the foresayd feest the kynge spedde hym to Turonne, where he sent to rayse the Brytons of lytell Brytaynne to withstande the foresayd enemyes. In the whiche passetyme he was there taken with a maledye, & from thens, in a lytter, caryed unto seynt Denys, where he dyed and was buryed, or, as sayth Maister Gagwyn, he died at Turonne, and was after conueyed vnto seynt Denys, and there buryed. But for al wryters ioyne the reygne of thyse. ii. brethernne in one, thereof[4] I woll now shewe vnto you the fyne or conclusyon of ỹ other brother, called Charlys or Charlemaynne, the whiche all this whyle mayntayned the siege aboute Vyenne, where his brother, as before is touched, lefte him: to whome the lordes of Fraunce sent in all hast gyuynge to hym knowiege of the deth of his brother, and also of the grat daunger that the lande was in by reason of the Danys: wherof whan the sayde Charlys had thus wrytynge[5], he lefte a parte of his people at the sayd siege, and with the other dele he sped hym towarde Champaynne, forsomoche as he was enfourmed that the Danys were drawen towarde that cost. And as he was in his iourney, worde was broughte vnto hym, that Vyenne was delyuered vnto suche persones as he hadde there left to mayntayne the siege: and after this came another messanger, whiche shewed to hym that the Danys had destroyed dyuers churches in Champayne and other places, and howe the bysshop of Meaus, ỹ agaynne them had lad an hoost of people, was of them slayne, & his people chased: & ouer this, at the foresayd ryuer of Lyger, an other host of Danys, with theyr leder called Hastynges, was assembled, the which in ỹ perties wasted ỹ countre as ỹ other in other places dyd, whiche somdele appalled the herte of the kynge Charlys; howe be it, by the comforte that he dayly[6] reseyued from the lordes of Fraũce, he kepte on his iourney, & made towarde the nexte of his enemyes.

Historia. Mors Lodouici. Danorum Malicia.

But whan he drewe nere vnto theym, were it for his awne cowardyse, or of the counseyll of his lordes, he fell to a cõmunycacion of pease; and fynally concluded, that Godfrey, ỹ prynce of Danys, to confesse the fayth of Criste, and to be cristened, shulde enioye ỹ hole prouynce of Fryse; and within the same, he, with his Danys, to inhabyte theym. The whiche condycyon of peas was the begynnynge of great sorowe and losse vnto Fraũce, as after shall appere. For all be it, that the sayde Godfrey, to dyssayue ỹ

[1] dysparkled. [2] dyuyne perueaunce. [3] dysparklyng. [4] therfore. [5] wyttynge. [6] hadde dayly, edit. 1542. 1559.

Frenshemen,

Frenshemen, shewed outwarde countenaunce to be a cristen man for a whyle: he shortly after, with an hoost of xl. M. Danys, entred the lande, & wastynge the countre tyl he came to Parys, and layde there his syege aboute the same cytie; but, by the archebysshop of Parys, than named Iosselynne, and the inhabytaunces of the same, the cytie was manfully defended, so that he, with his Danys, was fayne to breke his siege, and from thens yode to the cytie of Laonne, & wan it by strengthe, and after it spoyled and robbed, & after brent. And fro thens to Soysons, in pyllynge and destroyinge the countre, as they went, in so cruell wyse, that the bysshoppes & preestes fled from their churches with relyques and anournamentes or ornamentes belongynge to the same: as the bodyes of seynt Germayne, seynt Remygius, and diuers other.

In the tyme of this persecucyon, lyke as the lande of Englande was in great daunger, so also was the lande of Fraunce, by meane of thyse Pagans or myscreaunces Danys: the whiche resorted from that one realme to that other, and releued theymselfe in that one lande, whan they were chased out of that other. But one myshap, amonges other, befell in Fraunce at thyse dayes: for Charles, their kynge, was taken from theym in suche wyse that no wryter leueth of hym any mensyon howe he dyed, nor whanne he dyed, nor mencyon[1] is made in the Frensche Cronycle, nor of myne auctour, howe longe whyle he and his brother Lowys reygned. Albe it Vyncent Historyall, and Antonyus[2], whiche groundetli hym upon ỹ said Vyncent, and Iacobus Philippus, saye, that thyse. ii. foresayd bretherne reygned, togyder and alone, by the terme of. v. yeres without more.

And the Frenshe Cronycle, & also myn auctour, sayen, that Lowys dyed without heyre; & that Charles lafte after hym a sone, whiche was named Lowys, and after, for his symple dedes, surnamed in Laten Nichil faciens, or in Frenche Rienfezant, which is to meane in our speche nought doynge. But who that lysteth wele to aduertyse and remembre the ordre of this cronicle, he shall fynde in this latter saynge, some disorder[3]. For where it is sayd that this Charles shuld leue a sonne after hym, to me it semeth, that, consyderynge his youth, he shuld nat be of any lawfull age to get a chylde: for, by all lycklyhode of conuenyence of the storye, if all be veryfyed as it is before declared, he coude not pas the age of. viii. yeres, at ỹ moste.

Auctoris oppinio.

Wherfore, it must folowe, of a congruence, that other they reygned lenger tyme, or ellys this childe, or heyre, Lowys aboue named, was ỹ sone of some other man. But to folowe myne auctour, I shall procede as foloweth.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxvii.

Fol. C. iii.

LOwys the. iiii. of that name, and sone of Charlys, as before is said, began his reygne ouer the Frenchemen in the yere of our lord. DCCC. lxxx. vi. and the. xiiii. yere of Aluredus thane kynge of Englande. Of this Lowys, it is testifyed of dyuers wryters, that he shulde enamoure hymselfe vpon a menchon, of the monastery of Chyell, and her drawe out by force, and mary her vnto his wyfe: for the whiche dede and other, he purchased the abouesayd name, and was called Lowys noughte doynge.

In his[4] tyme the Danys, contrary theyr promyse before made, made newe warre within the lande of Fraunce. Wherfore the Frenshemen hauynge lytell hope in theyr kynge, sent vnto Charlon or Charlys the emperoure, sone of Lowys kynge of Germany, as before is shewed, requyryng hym, in all hamble wyse, to vysite the realme of Fraunce, and to defende it from the persecucion of the Danys.

In thyse dayes also was lyuynge in Fraunce the forenamed Hugth, which, as ye before haue herde, mayntayned ỹ quarrel of Lowys and Charlys, laste kynges, agayne Lowys kynge of Germany. The whiche Hugth, of some wryters is called Hue le graunde, that is Hugh the great. This man gaderyd an hoost of Frenshemen, and gaue batayll vnto the Danys, and slewe of theym a great nombre.

[1] nor no mencyon. [2] Antoninus. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] dyscorde. [4] this.

It

It shulde seme by the wryters of the Frenshe story, that thyse noble men of Fraunce, as this Hugth and other, shuld haue the rule of the spirituall possessions of abbeys and other houses of relygion: for of myn aucto' Maister Gagwyne, they are in Laten named Abbates, and in the Frenshe boke Abbis, whiche is to meane Abbottes.

And also it is testyfyed of the sayde wryters, that this Hugth and Robert erle of Parys, were the firste that laite the distribucōn of those spirituall goodes vnto their knyghtes, and gaue ouer that name of abbot: the whiche in some other astates contynued tyll the dayes of Robert kynge of Fraūce.

Than it foloweth, accordynge to ỹ request made vnto the emperour, as aboue is shewed, he gaderyd a stronge hoste of Italyons, & perced the lande of Fraūce, and bare hym so victoryously agayne the Danys that he forced theym to obey to all theyr former promyse & condycions. But Eusebyus and other that wrote the actes of the emperours, sayen that this Charlys, whiche they name the thirde of that name, and also Grossus, that is, great, subdued the Danys of Fraunce, and compelled theyr leder or prynce, named there Rodefredus, to take the habet of Cristes relygyon, and receyued hym at the colde water. In whiche tyme, or soone after, wherof the tyme is nat duely ascertayned, dyed the forenamed kynge Lowys surnamed nought doynge, whan he had reygned, after moost wryters, viii. yeres, leuynge after hym a sone, named Charlys: the whiche after, was surnamed symple. But for he was to yonge to take vpon hym suche a charge, the lordes put hym vnder good and conuenyent guydynge, and chase another, as foloweth, to gyde ỹ lande tyll he were comen to his lawfull age, whiche was named Eudo.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxviii.

EVdo, the sone of Robert, erle of Angeowe, began his reygne ouer ỹ Frenshmen in ỹ yere of our Lord. viii. C. lxxx. &. xv. and the. xxiii. yere of Alurede, than kynge of Englande. Ye shall vnderstande ỹ the aboue named Robert, erle of Angeow, was as tutor & guyder vnto ỹ fore named kynges of Fraunce, Lowys and Charlys; & lastly was slayne of the Danys: the whiche Robert lafte after hym. ii. sonnes Eudo and Robert. Whiche Eudo, for the great fame that he was of, and also for the great trouthe ỹ in hym was prouyd and knowen, the lordes of one assent, chose hym to be kynge of ỹ lande, for the terme of his lyfe; and as affermeth the Frenshe booke and other, he was crowned of Walter, thanne archebisshop of Senys. How be it, this is somdele doutefull to be gyuen credence vnto, for dyuers reasons that therunto myghte be made. Maister Gagwyne sayth that he hathe sene some auctours that testifie this forenamed Charles the symple to be the lawfull sone of Lowys Balbus, and the foresayd Lowys and Charlys, late kynges of Fraunce, to be the bastarde sōnes of the sayd Lowys Balbus.

Thanne to folewe the matyer, this Eudo, in consyderacyon ỹ the sayd Charlys the symple was insuffycyent to guyde the lande, he was put vnder the guydynge of this sayde Eudo, and he was made kynge in his stede; the whiche myghtely defendyd ỹ lande from all daunger of enemyes. And ouer that he caused the sayd Charlys the symple to be norysshed & broughte vp with moost dylygensi, so that he was infourmed and exarsysed with all vertues doctryne, and other thynges necessary vnto a prynces sone. And fynally, whan this noble and vertuous knyght Eudo knewe that he shulde dye, he called before hym the lordes and nobles of Fraunce, the whiche he charged by solempne othe, that after his dethe, they immedyatly shulde crowne Charlys for theyr kynge; and dyed soone after, whan he had reygned, as affermeth auctours, by the terme of. ix. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxix.

EDwarde, surnamed the elder, and sonne of Aluredus, began his reigne ouer the more parte of Englande, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C. & one, & the. vii. yere of Eudo, than kyng Historia. [Li. 6. ca. 4.]

kyng of Fraũce. This was lower than his fader in letter and cõynge; but he was hygher in honour and worshyp. By his firste wyfe he had a sone named Ethelstanne, the whiche was kynge after hym. By his seconde wyfe he had. ii. sonnes, Edredus and Edwynus; and. vii. doughters. And of the thirde wyfe he receyued two sonnes, Edmunde and Edrede; and two doughters, Edburga and Edgina.

The firste of thyse. iii. wyues hyght Edwyna, the seconde hyght Edgina, & the. iii. was named Etheleswyda. Of the forenamed. vii. doughters, whiche he had by his seconde wyfe, one named Alunda or Almyda, was maryed to the firste Ottho, the emperoure; & an other, named Algina, was maryed to Charlys the symple, kyng of West Fraunce; and the yongest of his doughters, as saythe Policronica, he wedded vnto Lowys, kynge of Guyanne. But therof speketh no thynge the Frenche Cronycle. [And the suster of her, borne of the same moder, and named Edburga, the whiche nowe lyeth shryned at Wynchester[1].] He sette his sonnes to scole, and his doughters he sette to woll werke, takyng example of Charlys the conquestour.

Historia. By auctorytie of Formosus the pope[2], he made. vii. bisshoppes in Englãde, wherof he ordeyned. v. in West Saxon, i. in South Saxon, &. i. in Marcia, at Dorchester. He also for[3] monkes of Wynchester, that sayd ŷ his fader Alurede walkyd, caused hȳ to be remouyd vnto the newe abbey. Aboute the. v. yere of his reygne, Clito Ethelwaldus, a *Fol. C. iiii.* ner kynnesman of his, rebelled agayne hym, & occupyed the towne of Wymborne, besydes Bathe, and toke thens by force a nõne, & went thens vnto ŷ Danys, dwellyng in Northumberlande, and excyted theym to ryse agayne kynge Edwarde. But the kynge pursued hym so sharpely, that he was constrayned to leue that countre, & sayled into Fraunce, and lafte the nonne behynde hym. The whiche ŷ kynge caused to be restored agayne to the house ŷ she was taken fro.

The next yere folowynge the sayde Clyto, with his company, landed in Eest Englande, and gaderyd to hym the Danys of that countre, and with theyr ayde destroyed and pylled ŷ countre aboute Crekynforde, Cryklade[4]; and then passed ŷ ryuer of Thamys, & spoyled the lande to Bradenestoke: and so from thens retourned in Eest Anglia, that is, Norfolke & Suffolke.

The kynge folowed his enemyes, and spoyled of theyr landes whiche they held by composicõn from ŷ ryuer of Owse to the bordure of seynt Edmundes lande; cõmaundynge his knyghtes of his host, that none shuld dragge or tary after his hoost for fere that they were nat beclypped of theyr enemyes: but the Kentysshe men whiche trusted to moch in theyr owne strength, disobeyed that cõmaundement. Wherfore ŷ Danys awaytynge theyr praye, fylle vpon theym by busshementes, and slewe the more partye of theym, wherwith ŷ kynge was sore discontented.

Soone after bothe hoostes met, where, after longe fyghte, Clyto, with many of the Danys, was slayne, and the remenaũt constrayned to seche peas: the whiche was graũted vpon certayne condycions; that they shuld holde theym within the boũdes to theym lymytted, and, ouer that, paye yerely a certayne money in waye of trybute. After which peas with them stablysshed, he repayred cyties, townes, & castellys, that by the sayd Danys were shatered and broken. And about the. viii. yere of his reygne, kyng Edwarde repayred the walles, and also the cytie of Kaerlyon, that nowe is called Chester: to the whiche were great helpers, Etheldredus duke of Mercia, and Elfleda his wyfe, doughter of Alurede, as before is shewed, and suster of this kyng Edwarde. And that done, the kynge buylded a stronge castell at Herforde in the egge of Walys; and he enlarged so greatly ŷ wallys of Chester, that the castell, whiche before tyme, was without the wall, is now within.

[1] *Omitted* in the later editions. [2] Bysshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *for* that the. [4] and Criklãde.

And the. ix. yere of his reygne Etheldredus, duke of Mercia, by counsayll of his wyfe, translated the bonys of the holy kyng Oswalde from Bradony to Gloucestre; and there buylded a fayre monastery in the worshyp of seynt Peter.

In the. xii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne, the Danys repentynge theym of theyr couenaumtes before made, myndynge and entendynge ŷ breche of the same, assembled an hoost, & met w̄ the kynge in Stafforde shyre, at a place called Toten halle; and soone after at Wodenesseylde; at whiche. ii. places the kynge slewe. ii. kynges. ii. erlys, and many thoushādes of the Danys ŷ than occupyed the countre of Northumberlande. And soon after dyed the noble man Etheldredus, duke or erle of Mercia or myddell Englande; after whose deth, the kynge, for so moch as he had often prouyd her wysdome, he betoke the rule of that countre to his wyfe Elfleda, London alonely excepted; the which he toke vnder his owne rule. [Li. 6. cap. 5.] Historia.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxx.

OF this noble woman Elfleda, if I shulde shewe all the vertues, it shuld aske a longe tyme and laysour[1]; but amonges other of her noble dedes, she buylded and newly repayred many townes, cyties, & castelles: as Tomworth besyde Lichefeld. Stafforde, Warwyke, Shrowesbury, Watrysbury, Eldisbury, in the forest besyde Chester, that nowe is ouer tourned & destroyed. Also she buylded a cytie with a castell in the northe ende of Mercia vpon the ryuer Merce, that in those dayes was named Runcofanne; but now it is called Runcornn. And she also buylded a brydge ouer ŷ ryuer of Seuernn; whiche is, or was named Brymmysbury Bridge. This strōge virago fauour[2] of cytezeyns, and fere of enemyes, halpe moche the kynge her brother in gyuynge of counsayll, and buyldynge of cyties. Of her is tolde that whanne she had ones assayed ŷ wo and sorowe that women fele and suffre in berynge of a childe, she hated the enbrasynge of her husbande euer, and toke witnesse of God, and sayde, that it was nat conuenyent or semely to a kynges doughter to vse suche flesshely lykynge, wherof such sorowe shuld ensue or folowe. [Li. 6. cap. 5.]

In the. xiii. yere of ŷ reygne of this Edwarde a great nauy of Danys, which, in ŷ tyme of Alured, were dryuen īto Fraūce, now retourned agayne and sayled aboute ŷ west coūtre, and landed in dyuers places, and toke prayes, and went to theyr shyppes agayne: and at one tyme amonges other, robbed and spoyled at a place called Irchynfeylde, they toke a Bryttysshe bysshop, and caryed hym to theyr shyppes: and fynally raunsomed hym at. xl.li. But assone as kyng Edwarde had knowlage of their beyng, he assembled his knightes, & sped hȳ westwarde by lande, and sent a nother hoost by shyp to encoūter the Danys vpon the see: wherof herynge, the sayd Danys fled into Irelande, & by that course voyded the lande, and hādes of ŷ kyng.

Than the kynge for strengthynge of the countre, made a castell at ŷ mouth of the water of Auene; and a nother castell at Bokyngham; and the thirde faste therby, that is to mene, vpon eyther syde of the ryuer of Owse one. And after retourned īto Northātonshyre, & Bedfordshyre, & faught there w̄ ŷ Danis of thyse coūtres, & at length subdued theym w̄ theyr leder or duke called Turketyllus.

Aboute ŷ. xvii. yere of this kynges reygne, Elfleda, lady of Mercya, before mynded, gaderyd her knyghtes; & where the Brytons or Walshe men brake into the lande about Brekenoke, she with her people withstode theym, and, amonges other prysoners & prayes, toke there the quene of Walshemen. And the yere folowynge, kyng Edwarde buylded or newely reedyfied the townes of Towsetour and Wygmore, & destroyed the castell that ŷ Danys had made at Temesforde. And that yere the noble Elfleda wan the towne of Derby from the power of the Danys, where he[3] put her in suche aduenture, that foure knyghtes, whiche were called gardeyns of her corps, were slayne fast by her. Mulier fortis.

And the. xviii. yere of his reygne, dyed that noble pryncesse Elfleda, in ŷ moneth of

[1] Leasure. [2] through favour. edit. 1542, 1559. [3] they.

Iunii, and was buryed in the monastery of seynt Peter, whiche her lorde and she before tyme had buylded within the towne of Gloucetour, as aboue is touched, [of[1] the bones of that holy kynge seynt Oswold;][2] whiche monastery was after throwen to grounde by the Danys: but Aldredus bysshop, both of Yorke and of Worceto', made there an other which is now chefe house or abbey of ỹ towne or cytie.

Whan Elfleda was dede, her doughter named Elswyna helde the lordshyp of Mercia a season. But for ỹ kynge consyderyd it to be to great a thynge for her to rule, he therfore dyscharged her therof & ioyned it to his kyngdome; but nat all without stryfe: for
Historia. dyuers townes kept[3] of the kyng for a tyme; as Snotyngham or Notyngham, Tomworth, Derby, and other, supposynge ỹ doughter wolde haue defended theym as the moder by
Fol. Co. her lyfe had doon. But suche wyse that of theym was gaderyd[4], fynally they came to the kynges subiection.

Henry, archebysshoppe[5] of Huntyngdon, that wrote moche of the Cronicles of Englande, in prayse of this noble woman Elfleda made dyuers dyties, of the whiche some been expressed as foloweth:

Cezers tryumphis were nat so moche to prayse,
As was of Elfleda that sheldes so ofte dyd rayse.
Agayne her enemyes, this noble venqueresse
Virago and made, whose vertue can I nat expresse.

WHan Edwarde had reconciled thyse foresayd townes, he thanne buylded a newe towne, for[6] agayne the olde towne of Notyngham, on ỹ south syde of the ryuer of Trent; & made a brydge ouer the sayd ryuer attwene the sayd two townes. And, as wytnessyth Policronica, the yere folowynge, in the sayde towne or cytie of Notyngham. ii. kynges, that is to saye, of Scotlande and Walys, yelded them vnto kynge Edwarde: by[7] the cause why, nor of warre attwene theym to be contynued, is nat of hym expressyd.

Howe be it in dyuers bokes of wryters of Cronicles of Englande, as of Maryanus ỹ Scot, Will'm of Malmesbury, Henry of Huntyngdon, and other, it is shewed ỹ this Edwarde subdued the kynges of Scotlande and of Cumbrys, aboute the. ix. yere of his reygne. And of ỹ said auctours it is also testyfyed, that aboute the. xx. yere of the reygne of the sayde Edwarde, thyse sayde kynges of Scottes & Cumbrys shulde chose this kynge Edwarde for theyr chief lorde and patron, which shuld be about this season before expressed.

Than this noble prynce Edward, after thise thinges, be set[8] hym in an ordre. He in the north ende of Mercia, by the ryuer of Merce, buylded a cytie or towne, & named it Thylwall, and strengthyde it with knyghtes; and after repayred the cytie of Maynchester, that sore was defaced with warre of the Danys. After whiche notable dedys by the puyssaunt prynce fynysshed, with the maryage of his childer and many other, whiche I omytte and passe ouer for lengthe of tyme; fynally, this noble man dyed, whan he had reygned with great trauayle, by the terme of. xxiiii. yeres, at Faryngdon, & from thens conueyed to Wynchester, and there enterid, in the monastery of seynt Swythyne; leuynge after hym dyuers sonnes, as before is shewed, of the whiche Ethelstane was eldest.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxi.

CHarlys, surnamed the Symple, and sone of Lowys ỹ. iiii. or Ryen Fayzande, began his reygne ouer the Frenshmen, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacõn, as wytnessith Iacobus Philippus and other. ix.C.iiii.; and ỹ thirde yere of Edwarde thelder, than kynge of Englande; in tyme of whose reygne the Danys, whiche contynuelly ouer the terme of. l. wynter, that is to saye from the. x. yere of Charlys the Ballyd, somtyme kynge of Fraunce, vnto the sayd dayes, had wasted and spoyled the lande; natwithstandyng[9] the agre-

[1] ouer. edit. 1533. [2] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] she kept, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] "suche wyse that of theym was gaderyd," *omitted* in the later editions. [5] [archdeacon?] [6] ryghte, edit. 1559. [7] "by," *omitted* in the later editions. [8] set by. [9] not wythstandyng.

mẽtes made attwene Charlys the emperour and theim, as before in the story of the. iiii. Lowys is shewed, yet they with great hoostes aryued in the countre of Nenstrya[1] or Normandy, and robbed and spoyled ŷ countre before theym, and slewe the people therof without pytie: and from cytie to cytie kepte on theyr iourney, tyll they came vnto the cytie of Roan: wherof the bysshop, beyng ī great drede of subuersion of the cytie, and distruccion of the cristen people within the same, delyuered ŷ cytie by appoyntemẽt, that he with the people myght departe thens without bodely harme, whiche vnto the sayd Danys was a great strength, & hurte to the lande of Fraũce.

Historia.

Of this host of Danys, was ruler and leder a myscreaunt named Rollo, the which was a mã of lowe byrth, but he was of great strengthe; the which whan he had a season rested hym and his hoost, and refresshed theym with[2] the cytie of Roan, he than sette forthe his waye; and cõmaundynge his vawnewarde to kepe their iourney towarde Paris: and for the more spede to be made, he shypped his Danys right there, and one parte he sent by the ryuer of Sean, the seconde by the ryuer of Lyger or Leyr, and ŷ thirde by the water Geronde.

Persecucio vel malicia Danorum.

Thanne the Danys, that passed by the ryuer of Leyr, came at length to the cytie of Nauntes, and wanne that cytie by strength, and slew therin moche people; and the bysshop of the same, named Guymert, beynge at masse they slewe at ŷ alter. And whan they had spoyled that cytie, and the coũtre there aboute, than yode they to the cytie of Angyérs, and brent & robbyd it most cruelly. And that done they yode vnto Towres, and layde siege to that cytie, [the whiche by the presens of ŷ holy body of seynt Martyne, whiche, at that tyme, was within that cytie, it was a whyle preserued; but soone after the munkes, ferynge the swerde of ŷ Danys, fled the cytie secretly, and toke the body with theym. And soon after ŷ Danys had the towne at theyr wyll,][3] & brent the abbey before the towne, or standyng without the towne, and spoyled & robbed the cytie and townes throughe ŷ coũtre of Guyan.

Whan the Danys had thus subdued the more part of Nenstria[4] or Normandy, they, w̃ theyr duke Rollo, by the ryuer of Seynne, drewe towarde Parys, and firste entrede the landes of Burgoyn & Auerne, & Effette[5] to Senons; wherof herynge, the monkes of the monastery of Flory,[6] [where ŷ body of seynt Benet than rested, tooken that holy treasoure, and bare it vnto Orlyaunce, and layde it in the churche of seynt Anyan tyll the persecucion were ouerpassed. Of this monastery was at that dayes lyuynge a defensour, by promyse before made, whose name, ī Laten, is called Sigillosus, &, in Frenshe, Sigillophes, an erle, which was taken for patron of the same abbey, to whome in the nyght folowynge that the monkes were fled, as before is sayde, seynt Benet apered and blamed hym that he none other wyse had defended the place of his sepulture; with whiche vision the sayd erle beyng feryd, gaderyd vnto hym, vpon the daye folowynge, suche small power as he thanne myght make, and set vpon the Danys, & draue theym backe, and slewe of theym a great nombre, and the prayes that he there wanne he offered to God and seynt Benet, by whose prayers he knewe well that he opteyned that victory.][7]

In tyme that the Danys thus persecuted the countre of Fraunce, and the kyng was nat[8] of power theym to resyste; for so moch as Charles knewe well that the bysshop of Roan, named Franke, was in good fauour of Rollo, he therfore sent hym in ambassade to the sayde Rollo, to requyre a trewe or trewse for. iii. monethes, the whiche was graunted. The whiche trewse ended, the sayd Rollo beseged the cytie of Chartrys, durynge whiche siege, the duke of Burgoyn named Richarde, w̃ his retynue, assayled the Danys; in tyme of whiche fyght, Ebalde, erle of Peytowe,[8] was present, & draue backe the Danys, [wherwith the bisshop of the cytie beynge vncoraged, tooke with hym the smocke of our lady,

[1] Neustria. [2] within. [3] *omitted* in the edit 1542. 1559. [4] Neustria. [5] in effecte. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] fled. *is added* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [7] *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Poytowe.

whiche at those dayes was kept there with great reuerence, and with the cytezeins and other issued out of ỹ cytie,][1] & made vpon the Danys a great scomfyture, so that by ỹ prowesse of the foresayd. ii. temporall lordes, [and assystence of this spirituall man,][2] Rollo was compelled to fle and forsake his siege, & nat wout huge slaughter. Rollo then hauynge great disdayne and displeasure of this ouerthrowe & scumfyture of his Danys, reassembled them that were abrode scatered, and cõmaunded theym to ouer ryde the countre, & to distroye it in all that they myght: After whiche cõmaudement thus to theym gyuen, this cruell people slewe man, women, and childe, that were nat apte to do to theim seruyce, and brent the churches and temples, and rauysshed virgyns aswell relygyous as other: so that miserable it was to beholde ỹ great abhomynacion of thyse tyranous Danys, that brent, robbed, and slewe ỹ innosent people without mercy. The lordes and cõmons, thus beset with cruell fury of theyr enemyes, assembled theym by sondry companyes, & went vnto the kynge, shewynge vnto hym theyr mysery, and blamed as they durste his ferefulnesse and neglygence, that he, nor none for hym, otherwyse withstode the crueltye of the Danys, that had destroyed a great parte of his lande.

Fol. C. vi. Historia.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxii.

CHarlys, herynge this exclamacion of his subgettes, & cõsyderynge his lacke of power to wstãde ỹ malyce of his enemyes, was right pensyfe and heuy in his herte; & castyng in his mynde many sondry wayes, he lastly determyned to sende agayne the aboue named Frank, bysshop of Roan, vnto Rollo, prynce of Danys: shewyng hym, that, if he wolde renye his Pagan lawe, and become a cristen man, he wolde to hym gyue, in maryage, Gilda, his doughter, with the hole coũtre of Neustria, for her dowar.

Whanne Rollo had receyued this tydynges from ỹ kynge, by the mouthe of his frende Frank, he somwhat attempred his fury & crueltie, and condescended to a trewe, by the counsayll of his lordes, for the terme of. iii. monethes. In the whiche tyme he myght haue some cõmunycacyon with the kynge for ferther processe of this matyer. So that after it was concluded by the coũsayll of both prynces, that their metynge shuld be vpon the ryuer or flode named Ept; where, shortly after, the sayd prynces had cõmunycacyon the one with the other, their people standynge vpon eyther syde of the sayd ryuer; where it was cõcluded, that Rollo shuld forsake his pagan lawe, and take vpon hym the lyuerey of Cristes baptym, & after to mary the fore named Gilda, & to receyue with her, as is aboue shewed. Which cõclusyon thus taken, eyther fro other departed. And shortly after, at the cytie of Roan, all ỹ foresayd couenaũtes were executed & fulfylled. And whan ỹ said Rollo was cristened, his name was chaunged, & called Robert, after the erle of Peytowe[2], whiche receyued hym at ỹ fonte stone.

Of this Rollo or Robert discended lynyally duke William of Normandy, whiche conquered Englande, as after shalbe more clerely shewed. Than this Robert, thus cristened, was seased of the countree of Neustria; whom the kynge created duke, and named hym duke of Neustria.

Normanorum Origo.

But it was nat longe after, that this name of Neustria was chaũged and called Normandy, after the name of Normayns, or men cõmynge out of the northe; or of Nor, that is to mean north, and Menn, two[3] selables togyder make Norman, or a man of the north.

Whiche Normans or Danys, after the exposicion of Maister Gagwyn, shulde be descended of the nacyon called the Gothes; whyche Gothis of the cytie or menne of Sithica been descended. The whiche Gothis, in the dayes of the great Constantyne, for theyr feersnes and crueltie, were dryuen from theyr countre then by theym inhabyted, nere vnto ỹ ryuer called Thamays, in the northe parties of Europe, and nowe ben inhabyted in Dacia, whiche in our speche is called Denmarke. And where some men holde an opynyon that Danys and Saxons shuld be one maner of people, it may congruly folowe: for Saxons

Historia.

[1] *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Poytowe. [3] whyche two. edit. 1542. 1559.

ben

ben of the coūtre of Germany, and contayne the lande, after the sayinge of Strabo, in the west parte of Germanya, from the flodde called Vystergus or Wisera vnto the famous ryuer called ỹ Ryne; and Dacia or Denmarke is in the northe parties. Than to retourne to this Rollo or Robert: the story sayth that he became a good Cristen man; in tokyn wherof, as affermeth the Frenshe boke, he gaue vnto dyuers churches & monasteries of Fraūce great gyftes, aswell of possessions, as of mouable goodes; and contynued his pease with the kynge, as he before had promysed. After whiche pease thus stablysshed atwene the kynge and the Danys, Robert, brother vnto Eudo, last kyng of Fraunce, contrary his trouthe and allegyaūce, seased certayne cyties and other holdes of the kynges enherytaunce: wherfore the kynge, seynge that he coulde nat retourne hym of that errour by no meanes of entreaty or other lyke wayes, assembled an hoost, and met with hym in playne batayll, in the whiche the sayde Robert was slayne. This Robert had a suster, whiche was maryed vnto Hebert, erle of Vermendoys; whiche erle, herynge of the deth of his brother in lawe, by enticement of his wyfe, as the story demeth, met the kynge at the retourne of the felde; and requyred hym, in moste humble wyse, that he wolde vouchesafe to lodge with hym, in his manour, called the castell of Peronne.

The kynge, castyng no parell, thanked hym of his kynde request, and graunted to go whym, where he was receyued and fested with all honour. But whan this erle had conueyed the kynges frendes and strength from hym, he than kepte hym there as a prysoner, or murdered hym: so that he neuer came at large after. Whiche tydynges certaynly knowen, Algina, wyfe vnto the sayd Charlys the Symple mystrustynge the Frenshemen, with fewe accompanyed, toke secret shyppynge, and with her yonge sone named Lowys sayled into Englande, there to be comforted of her fader Edwarde, surnamed ỹ elder. And thus ended the reygne of this Charlys the Symple, whan he had reygned, after the saying of Vyncent Historyall, and other, by the terme of. xvi. yere full, leuynge after hym ỹ foresayd childe, named Lowys. Treason.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxiii.

RAdulphus, the sone of Richarde, duke of Burgoynne, began his reygne ouer the Frenshemē in the yere of our Lord. ix. C. xxii.; and ỹ. xxi. yere of Edwarde thelder, than kyng of Englande. Here is to be noted, that forsomoche as Algina, wyfe vnto Charlys the Symple, was thus secretly voyded the lande of Fraunce, with her sone Lowys, and that the lande myght nat be wout a ruler, the lordes assembled at Parys, and therotoke theyr counsayll for the amyssyon[1] of an hedde or kynge of ỹ lande. Whiche lordes, after longe debatynge of this matter, fynally agreed ỹ this abouenamed Radulphus or Raafe, sone of the duke of Burgoynne, as aboue is sayd, as next heyre to the crowne, shulde be admytted for kyng, and so was admytted. Of the whiche lytell of his dedes are put in memory; except, that in the tyme of his reygne, the Sarazens entred the lande of Burgoynne with a great army, and dyd moche harme in that duchy; wherfore the kynge, gaderynge his host, met with theym at a place called, in Laten, Carrolas, and in Frenshe, Callo the lasse, where the Frenshemen were victours, but nat wout great losse of theyr people. Than it foloweth, whanne this Rauffe had ruled the lande of Fraunce by ỹ space of. xii. yeres, he dyed, without issue male; and was buryed in the churche of saynt Calumb, in the prouynce of Senys. *Fol. C. vii.*

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxiiii.

EThelstanne, the sone of Edwarde the elder, began his reigne ouer ỹ more parte of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. ix C.xxv., and ỹ thirde yere of Raufe than kyng of Fraūce. [In the firste yere of the reygne of Ethelstanne, the holy childe Dunstane was borne, in the countre of Glastenbury, whose lyfe shone after with many myracles. This Anglia. [Li. 6. cap. 6.]

[1] admyssyō. edit. 1542. 1559.

was

was somtyme abbot of Glastenbury, and lastly archebysshop of Caunterbury; whose holynesse and prophecyes are shewed at lengthe in the vi. Chapiter of the. xvi. Tytle of ŷ werke called Somma Antonini, and in the Legende of the Churche also.]¹

In the seconde yere of the reygne of Ethelstanne, for an vnytie and a peas to be had atwene the kynge & the Danys of Northumberlande, he maryed to Sythyricus, theyr kyng, his suster, but after. v. yeres this Sythyricus dyed. After whose deth, he seased the countre into his owne hande, and put out the sone of the foresayd Sythyricus; and whanne he had thus accorded with the Danys of Northumberlãde, he shortly after made subiecte to hym Constantyne kynge of Scottes. But the sayde Constantyne meked hym so lowely to the kynge, that he restored hym to his former dignytie; wherfore the sayd Constantyne sayd in prayse of ŷ kyng, that it was more honour to make a kynge thanne to be a kynge: whiche acte was done by the affirmaũce of Polycronycon, in the yere of grace ix.C.xxvi., whiche than after that saying shuld be the seconde yere of the reygne of this Ethelstanne. It is testyfyed of Policronica, that this Ethelstanne shuld mary one of his susters, named Editha or Edith, vnto Ottho ŷ first of ŷ name, emperour of Almayne, & receyued from hym many precyous iewellys & relyquys; but of this speketh nothynge the Cronycles of Romaynes. Howe be it, it is shewed there that the foresayd Ottho, or Otto, had a wyfe named Alunda, whiche as before is sayd in ŷ story of Edwarde the Elder, myght be the doughter of the sayd Edwarde and of Edgina his seconde wyfe: but Vincensius historialis saith, that Henry duke of Saxony, whiche was fader vnto the first Ottho, sent vnto Ethelstanne, requyryng of hym his suster, to mary vnto his sone Ottho, by whiche reason it maye folowe, that this Ottho maryed ŷ suster of Ethelstanne, but nat Edythe.

Of thyse foresayd iewellys sent by Ottho, one was a presious vessell of stone called Onechynus, whiche was of such clereuesse, and also so subtely and craftely wrought, ŷ it appered to mannes syght as grene corne had growyn within it, and moued and waued as corne dothe standynge in the felde; moreouer in it appered vyuys burgenynge and berynge fruyte, and men also to syght mouynge and styrynge. He also receyued the great Cõstantynes swerde, wherin was grauen with great letters of golde the name of ŷ awner, & the hyltes therof were couered with great plates of golde, and one of the nayles was fastened to the crosse of the sayde swerde, that Criste suffred with his passyon. But in this reporte or saynge, Polycronicon varyeth from his former saynge, where he reporteth. ii. of ŷ sayd nayles to be spent vpon the brydell of the sayde Constantyne, and the thyrde nayle to be casten into a daungerous swolowe of the see, as before is rehersed in the. lxix. Chapitre of this werke. He also receyued the spere of Charlys the Grete, whiche, after the oppynyon of some wryters, was the spere that Longeus opened with Cristes syde; and the baner of seynt Morys, [a relyque of great pryce;]¹ with a parte of the holy crosse, and a parte of the crowne of thorne of our Sauyour.

Historia.

Of the whiche iewellys, kynge Ethilstanne gaue a parte vnto seynt Swithunys of Wynchester, and some he gaue vnto the abbay of Malmesbury.

I haue seen a Cronycle of Englande whiche testyfyed, that this Ethilstanne was the first kynge that euer was enoynted in this lande; albe it I fynde therof lytell auctorytie, except that Guydo and other testyfyen that he was crowned at the kynges towne, nowe called Kyngstone. x. mylys from Londonne, of Athelyne than archebysshop of Caũterbury: but that proueth nat or argueth hym to be the firste for that reason, for ryght so was his fader Edwarde crowned of Plemounde, archebysshop of the sayd see. But Guydo foresayd affermed ŷ Alurede, graũdfader to this Ethilstanne, was anoynted kynge by auctorytie of Leo the. v. then pope²: wherfore it argueth³ better that he shulde be the firste.

Oppinio.

Than it foloweth in the story, that aboute the. viii. yere of the reygne of this Ethilstanne, dyed Frystanne bysshop of Wynchester, and Brystanne was bysshop after hym;

Mirabile.

¹ *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. ² byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. ³ agreeth.

of

[of whom it is radde ŷ he sange, euery day, masse for all cristen soules; and as ŷ bysshop Brystanne wente vpon a nyght aboute a churche yerde, and sayd his deuocions for all cristen soules; and lastly said, "Requiescant ī pace," he harde a voyce as it had ben of a great host of people saying, "amen."][1]

Soone after, Constantyne, kynge of Scottes, brake couenaunt w̄ kyng Ethilstanne; wherfore he assembled his knyghtes, and made towarde Scotlande, & in his way he tourned to seynt Iohnne of Beuerley, and offered there his knyfe vpon the alter, sayinge that, if he retourned with victory, he shulde redeme his knyf with a noble pryce; and that doon, proceded vpon his iourney, & in conclusion scomfyted the Scottes, and brought theym agayne vnto dewe subieccion. And after, accorded to the promyse before made, he retourned to Yorke, & so to the churche where the corps of seynt Iohnne of Beuerleye laye, redemynge his knyfe worthely as he before had promysed.

In the. vi. Chapitre of the. vi. Boke of Polycronycon it is remēbred that kynge Ethilstanne, after this subduynge of the Scottes, beynge w̄ his lordes and famulyers nere vnto ŷ castell of Dunbar, prayed to God and seynt Iohnne of Beuerleye, that in that countree he myght leue some remembraūce or token, that those ŷ then were lyuynge, and also such as shuld come after, myght knowe that the Scottes, by ryght, shuld be subiectes to Englysshe men; and soone after, w̄ his swerde, smote vpon a great stone, standynge nere vnto the sayd castell, with which stroke the stone was ryuen to an elle ī length, that, in the tyme of Edwarde the thirde, was there remaynynge to be sayde[2]; and whether at this daye it is so, that I am in doute. Ye haue harde before that kyng Ethilstanne, after the deth of Sytherycus, kynge of Northumberlande, seased that lande or prouynce into his owne handes, and put out his sone, whiche after allyed hym with Constantyne, kyng of Scottes, and maryed his doughter; by whose styrynge and exortacōn he gaderyd a company of Danys, Scottes, and other, & entred the mouthe of Humber with a stronge nauy.

Wherof herynge, Ethilstanne, in all goodly haste prepared his army, and at length mette with hym, and his people, at a place called Brymforde, where he had a great & solempne victory; for as it is shewed in the foresayd chapiter and booke, after the kynge by helpe of God [and seynt Aldelyne,][3] had defended the subtyll assaute made vpon hym, by night, of his enemyes, he vpon the morne, by helpe of his brother Edmunde, and Odo the archebysshop, chased his sayd enemyes, and slewe there Constantyne kynge of Scottes, and. v. small or vnder kynges, and. xii. dukes, with the more partie of all the straunge nacyons at that tyme there gaderyd: whiche batayll shuld be done, by ŷ meanynge of ŷ sayd Policronicon, aboute ŷ last yere of his reygne. Bellum. Fol. C. viii.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxv.

IT is also testyfyed of dyuers wryters, that Ethilstanne, after this victory thus optēyned of ŷ Danys and Scottes, or Scottes and Danys, he also subdued the North Brytons that dwelled at Herforde and there aboute, and compelled theym to bere[4] to hym yerely for a trybute. CCC.li. of syluer, xxv. hondred hede of nete, and xx.li. in golde: but Guydo sayth ŷ kyng Ethilstanne caused to come before hym at Herforde cytie, the rulers of all ŷ North Brytayne, and there had with theym suche cōmunycacion, that he forced theym to graunte vnto hym as a yerely trybute. xx.li. of golde, CCC.li. in syluer, and of heddes of nete. xxv. hondred, with dogges and hawkys to a certaynne nombre. After whiche victories he went vnto Exetour, and repayred it and the walles therof sufficient[5]. Dane Iohnne Lydgate, a monke somtyme of seynt Edmundes Bury, made a goodly Treatyse of this kyng Ethilstanne, shewynge that he was in so great persecucyon of the Danys, that he was cōstrayned to call at Wynchester a great counsayll of his lordes; where after longe debatynge of the matier, and dyuers ambassades and messages sent aboute the Historia.

[1] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] sene. [3] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] pay. [5] sufficyently.

kynge

kynge and the Danys, it was fastly concluded that ỹ kynge shuld puruaye hym a champyon, to fyght with Colibronde or Colbronde a geaunt and Dane, whiche the Danys had appoynted for theyr cheuetayne: wherfore ỹ kyng, enserchynge thorugh his landes for suche a knyght, & myght none fynde, was in great daunger and distresse and heuynesse, and, for somoch as he well perceyued that mānes power fayled, he by the aduyce of lordes spirituall and temporall, fyll to fastynge and prayer, and contynued therin by a certayne of tyme with parfyte and cherytable deuocyon. Colbronde.

In tyme of whiche sayd abstynence, a vysyon was shewed vnto Ethilstanne confortynge hym, and also cōmaundyng hym that erely vpon the next mornynge, he shulde stande at ỹ north gate of the cytie of Wynchester, and there he shulde fynde, amonges the porayll, a pylgryme[1] clade in palmers wede, whome he shulde chose for his champyon. After whiche vysyon thus to hym shewed, he dyde accordyngely, and founde a man of goodly stature & somdele stryken in age, and clade as he was monysshed by the vysyon: wherof he firste gaue vnto God thankynges, and after made request to this pylgryme[2], ỹ he wolde take vpon hym this batayll for the defence of the lande, whiche layde for hym many resonable excuses, aswell for his age as otherwyse. Nota.

Howe be it, that, fynally he graunted the kyng to fulfyll his request and commaundement, and at the daye before lymytted and assygned, mette in the felde with the forenamed geaunt called Colbronde, without the gate of the cytie, in a medowe or pasture, called hyde mede, where, attwene theym two was faughtyn a longe and cruell fyght, so that the kynge was in great fere of his champion. But fynally, by helpe of God, the pylgryme[3] wanne the honoure of that fyght, and slewe that geaunt that was of excedynge stature, and therunto of great & passynge strength; whiche victory by ỹ pylgryme[3] thus by grace opteyned, the kynge, with his barony, fette hym into the cytie of Wynchester with solempne procession, and conueyed hym vnto the cathedrall churche of ỹ same, where he thanked God with great deuocion, and offered there the axe with the whiche he had slayne the Danys champion. After whiche oblacion with dewe reuerence, and other obseruaūces by hym and other fynysshed, the kynge caused hym to be cōueyed vnto his court, where he taryed that nyght with moche daūger; and vpon the morne erely he made suche meanes that he wolde nedely departe, and that, in the same apparell that he came thyther. Whan the kynge was aduertysed that his pylgryme[3] wolde so hastely departe, whome he entended to haue holden with hym in his court, and to haue endowed with riche possessions, he cōmaūded hym to be brought vnto his presence; and whan he sawe he coude nat cause hym to tary, he requyred hym to shewe his name; wherof also he besought the kynge to pardon hym. Wherfore the kynge, consyderynge his hasty departynge, with many other thynges in hym to be cōsydered, was the more desyrous to haue of hym some knowlege. And for that he was affectuse in his desyre, whanne the pylgryme[3] perceyued that he coude nat, with the kynges pleasure, departe, without dysclosynge of his name, he sayde he myght nat discouer his name within the walles of the cytie, without the offence of his conscyence: wherfore the kynge graūted to go with hym tyll he were in ỹ brode feldes; vpon whiche graunte thus made, the kynge cōmaunded dyuers great gyftes to be to hym presented, whiche all he vtterly refused. Shortly to conclude, the kynge, with a certayne of his lordes, conueyed this sayde pylgryme[3] vnto the townes ende, and whan he was thyther cōmyn, he there requyred of the perfourmaunce of the promyse; where this pylgryme[3], syttynge one his kne, besought the kynge of his especyall grace, that he wolde put aparte his lordes and other, so that he myght shewe vnto hym his name oonly: whiche doon he, in moost humble wyse, besought hym, that he wolde kepe his name secret for the space of xxiiii. houres, wherof ỹ[3] kynge affirmaūce to hym fermely made, he shewed vnto hym that he was his naturall liege man & subiecte, and that his name was Guy of Warwyke: of whiche tydynges the kynge was very ioyous, and Guy of Warwyke.

[1] "a man," edit. 1542. 1559. [2] man. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] by the.

offered hym than of newe many ryche rewardes and gyftes; but all was in vayne, for he wolde nothynge receyue, soo that the kynge & he lastly departed with wepynge iyen. And after, as affermeth my sayde auctour, nat ferre from Warwyke, in a wyldenesse, he purchased, by Goddes puruyaunce, a lodgynge in an heremytage, where by the terme of. ii. yeres and more he dwelled & kepte an harde lyfe; and herynge that dame Felyce his owne wyfe fed dayly. xiii. poore men for Cristes sake, he went thyther sundry tymes, and fet there his almes, his sayd wyfe than lyinge at the castell of Warwyke, nat knowynge of any man what he was, tyll lastly he was vysyted with so sore sykenesse, that he knewe well that he shulde dye.

Wherfore he sente his weddynge rynge vnto his wyfe, requyrynge her in all haste to come and speke with hym, which she obeyed in humble wyse, and spede her vnto the sayd heremytage with all womanly dylygence, and fande hym deed at her cõmynge, whome she besprent with many a salte tere, and, as she was enfourmed of the messanger, she buryed hym[1] right there; and more ouer, as sayth my sayd aucto', he monysshed her by the sayd messanger that she shulde prouyde for her selfe, for she shulde also alter her mortall lyfe the. xv. daye folowynge, whiche all she obeyed and made such prouysyon *Fol. C.lv.* that she was in that place buryed by hym; all whiche matyer ỹ said Dane Iohnne Lydgate affermeth, that he toke out of the boke of Girarde Cambrese, which wrote moche of the dedes and storyes of the prynces of Englande, as Policronica and other auctours testyfyen, and as ỹ sayde Lydgate in the ende of his sayde treatyse wytnessith, as by the matier folowynge apperyth.

For more auctoryte as of this matyer,
This translacion, suche as in sentence,
Out of Laten, made by the cronycler
Called of olde, Gyrardus Cambrence.
Which wrote the dedes, with great dylygence,
Of theym that were in West Sex' crowned kynges,
Greatly cõmended for the[2] knyghtly excellence,
Guy of Warwyke, in his famous wrytynges.

AL whiche sayd treatyse is shewed at length, in meter of. viii. stanys after the maner of ỹ precedentes, by the dylygent laboure of the sayd Dane Iohnne Lydgate, the whiche I haue here sette in, forsomoche as it concerneth matier that was done in the tyme of the reygne of this Ethilstanne; the whiche, after the accorde of moost wryters, brought this lande agayne to one monarchy, and reygned as kynge therof by the full terme of xvi. yeres, and was buryed at the monastery of Malmysbury, leuynge after hym no childe, wherfore the rule of the lande fyll vnto Edmunde his brother.

Capitulum. C.lxxxvi.

LOwys, the sone of Charlys the Symple, beganne his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in the yere of our Lord. ix.C.xxxiiii., and the ix. yere of Ethilstanne than kynge of Englande. Ye haue harde before in the ende of the story of Charlys the Symple, howe Elgina the quene, with Lowys her yonger sone, was fled into Englande to her fader Edward the elder; wherfore the lordes of Fraunce, nat knowynge where she with the childe was gone, chose the forenamed Raufe for theyr kynge. After whose deth the sayd lordes of Fraunce, beynge ascertayned of the beynge of the sayd Lowys in Englande, sent vnto hym the archebysshop of Senys, and Hugh surnamed le Graunde, desyrynge hym to retourne into Fraunce, & take therof possessyon.

Than Algina, herynge the message of the lordes, and trustyng vnto theym, by counsayll of her frendes, made her redy with her sone, and sayled shortly after into Fraunce, where

[1] as he dyed she buryed hym. [2] theyr.

she was receyued with moche honoure, and shortly after crowned her sone Lowys kynge at ỹ cytie of Laonne.

Contcla. This Lowys is named the. v. Lowys, in the thirde yere of whose reygne fyll a scarcytie of corne and vytayll, by reason wherof ensued a great famyne, in somoche that people voyded the realme, and many dyed for defaute; for as wytnesseth the Frenshe Cronycle, a quarter of whete was than worthe. xx.li. of that money whiche is of value after sterlynge money. l. s. or there aboute.

This kyng, berynge in mynde the murder and treason doon agayne his fader by Hebert, as before in the story of Charlys the Symple is declared, cast and imagyned in his mynde howe he myght, without shedynge of blode, reuenge the deth of his fader; and after many imagynacions & thoughtes reuolued in his mynde, he lastly dyuysed a letter, the whiche he charged a seruaunt of his to brynge to his presence, whan he was sette amonge his lordes in counsayll. Whan kyng Lowys had compassed this in his mynde, he, for nedes of his realme, called a great counsayll of his barony at Laonne, whyther, amonges the other, the sayd Hebert, erle of Vermẽdoys, was warned to come; and whan the kynge was ascertayned of theyr cõmynges, he appoynted a secrete[1] company in harneys to be in a secrete chamber, nere vnto the place of the sayd counsayll, and at conuenyent tyme after yode vnto the same, and all his lordes with hym; and whan he had a season cõmoned with his lordes of suche matyers as hym lyked, sodeynly came one to hym, and sayd that a man was cõmen with a letter directed to his grace out of Englande, the whiche he commaunded to be brought vnto his syght. Whan the kynge had vnfolde to[2] letter, and radde a parte therof, he smyled; wherof the lordes beynge ware, purposed[3] the kyng to haue receyued some iewellys or ioyous nouellys out of Englande. Whyle the kynge was aboute to delyuer this letter to his scribe or secretory, one of his lordes said vnto hym, "Sir, we truste ye haue some iocande and mery tydynges out of Englande, ỹ ye haue cause of smylynge." "I shall shewe the cause to you," sayd ỹ kyng: "there is dwellynge in Englande a kynsman of myne named Harman, the whiche is a man of great myght, and myne especyall frende; he sheweth me by this letter that an husbandman or a vileyne bad or requyred his lorde vnto his howse to denyer[4], and vnder the colour therof he slewe his sayd lorde; and for the sayde Harman thynketh the lawe of that lande to fauourable for suche an haynous dede, he therfore wryteth to me to haue myne aduyce in this matyer: wherfore syne ye be all present, I praye you shewe to me your oppynyons in this matyer:" which with one voyce sayd ỹ the murderer was worthy to suffer ỹ most shamefull and cruell dethe, and to be hanged & strangled in a rope. But for the kynge wolde be certaynly enfourmed of the cõsentes of them all, he began at ỹ hyghest & so persued theym tyll he came to Hebert erle of Vermendoys, ỹ whiche alowed the sentence as the other hadde doon.

Than the kynge made a token to the Walshemen, by twene hym and them before appoynted, so that anone they were present and sette sure holde vpon the sayd Hebert; to
Fol. C.x. whom the kynge sayd, "Hebert, thou arte the husbondman or vilayne that I haue spoken of, whiche slewe his lorde vnder colour of byddyng or gestynge hym in his howse, for traytoursly requyeddes[5] my lorde and fader vnder thyne house or castell of Peronne, and there nat remembrynge ỹ kyndenesse to the by hym before dayes shewed, nor thyne allegiauntes and trouthe that towarde hym thou shuldest haue borne, kept hym lyke a prysoner, and lastly murdered hym to thy great daunger agayne God, and to the world shame; wherfore accordynge to thy desert, and after thyne owne sentence and iugement, take nowe thy rewarde and guardon."

Executio. After whiche sentence thus gyuen by the kynge, the sayde Hebert was by the executours ladde vnto an hylle without the cytie of Laonne, and there moste shamefully hanged; whiche hylle, for that cause, was named Hebertes hyll, longe tyme after.

[1] certayne. [2] the. [3] supposed. edit. 1559. [4] dyner. [5] thou dydeste requyre.

Aboute

Aboute this tyme, ỹ seconde duke of Normandy, named William Longa Spata, the son of Rollo or Robert, first duke of Normandy, was slayne by treason of one Arnolde, erle of Flaundres, for encheson that ỹ sayd William ayded a noble man of Pycardy, named Herloynne, agayne the sayd Arnolde.

This William lafte after hym a sone, named Richarde, whiche, at the tyme of his faders deth, was nat of suffycyaunt age to rule so great a dukedome. Wherfore Lowys, kynge of Fraunce, desyrous of that prouynce, whiche of late dayes belonged to his antecessours and progenytours, sought besely the wayes and meanes to haue this childe Richarde vnder his tuyssion and gydynge. And this to brynge to effecte, he sped hym vnto Roanne, callynge there before hym the lordes and rulers of the countre, hauynge vnto theym many plesaunt and fayre wordes, in promysynge to them ayde and assystaunce to reuenge ỹ deth of theyr lorde and duke, and, in the cōclusion, desyred of theym that he myght haue the norysshynge and bryngynge vp of the childe tyll he came to his lawfull age.

Whiche thynge thus by the kynge desyred, the lordes anone coniectured in their myndes that he desyred the kepynge of theyr yonge lorde, to ỹ ende that he myght the more easyerly optayne the possession of that dukedome. For the whiche the lordes and other of the cytie were in a great rumour and grudge agayne the kyng; wherof he beynge monysshed [by Adanoys Lorde][1] to appease the multytude, the kynge toke the childe in his armys, and so bare hym into the place of the assemble of the people, and there shewed vnto theym, w̃ affirmaūce of great othes, that his entent was oonly for the wele of the childe and for defence of his countre, and nat to clayme any ryght or tytle of the duchy, except oonly the homage therof, whiche belongeth to hym by iuste tytle.

By the meane of whiche fayre speche, the kyng optayned his purpose, and caryed the childe with hym into Fraunce; nat forgettynge the vnkynd dealynge of the Normayns. Whan Arnold, erle of Flaundres, vnderstode that ỹ[a] kyng of Fraunce the gydynge of the yonge childe was cōmytted, ferynge that he, with the power of the Normayns, wold ronne vpon hym, in reuengynge of the childes faders dethe, sent vnto the kynge. x.li. weyght of golde; wherof euery pounde conteyneth. xii. ounces, and euery ounce in value of fyne golde. xl. *s*. Soo that after this rate, his presande shulde be in value to the sūme of. CC. xl. li. Albe it maister Gagwyne sayth, he sent vnto hym but. xl. marke, besechynge hym to be his good and gracyous lorde, and nat to gyue to hasty credence to his accusours; for he in suche wyse wolde declare hymselfe, and delyuer vnto the kyng ỹ murderours of duke Wyllyam, by meane wherof he shuld a certaynly knowe ỹ he was innocent of ỹ sayd dukes deth. And ouer this he made a frēde aboute ỹ kynge, whiche spake good wordes for hym; and put in the kynges mynde the great hurtes and iniuryes that he and his progenytours had sustayned of ỹ Danys or Normans. By meanes wherof this mourdour was forgoten, and more and more the kynge malygned agaynst the Normayns, and to the childe lie bare nat so good mynde as some men thought that he wolde doo.

Vpon a daye whan the kynge was retourned from his disport of huntynge, a light complaynt was brought to hym of the childe Richarde, of an offence that he had cōmytted; for the whiche he rebuked hym otherwyse than was syttynge with his honour, and called hym obprobriously, and thretened hym greuously, and after that caused hym to be kept more straytely than he before had vsed to be.

To this childe, Richarde, was assygned a maister or a techer, named Osmunde; whiche Osmunde had a famylyer, named Iuonne. Thyse. ii. apperceyuynge the kynges indignacōn that he bare towarde the childe, studyed for his enlargynge, and lastly counsayled hym that he shulde fayne hymselfe syke: the whiche was done in suche wyse, that all suche as awayted vpon hym supposed hym to be very syke; by reason wherof, his kepers toke the lasse cure of hym.

[a] *Omitted* in the later editions. [1] to the.

Wherof Osmunde beynge ware, and also beynge sure of the kynge, made a great trusse of herbys or grasse, wherin he wrapped the childe, and so cõueyed hym out of the cytie of Laonne, & there receyued an horse redy for the rode[1], and so sped hym vnto Consy[2], and delyuered the childe to the capitayne of that towne. And from thens he rode all nyght tyll he came vnto Senlys, and there shewed all his doynge vnto the erle of that coũtre, named Barnarde, whiche was nere kynnesman vnto the yonge duke.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxvii.

Historia. BArnarde, hauynge knowlege of the escape of his kynsman Richarde, sent in all haste vnto Hugh le Graunde, erle of Parys, for to haue his ayde & assystence. The whiche, without tarying, assembled his knyghtes, & cõuayed the childe from Consy[3] to Senlys or Saynlys, to his neuewe Barnarde; where he was receyued with moche ioye and honoure.

Whanne Lowys was asserteyned of ỹ scape of Richarde, and howe he was in the guydynge of Hugh the Grete or Graunte, anone he sent vnto hym, gyuynge hym in cõmaũdement that he shulde restore the childe to hym; the whiche excused hym, and sayd, that the childe was in the kepynge of erle Barnarde, and nat his.

The kynge seynge howe he was deluded, sent for Arnolde or Arnulfe, erle of Flaunders, whiche, at his cõmaundement, counsayled the kynge to wynne Hugh le Graunde with ryche behestes & gyftes. After whose coũsayll, worchynge, kyng Lowys wylled the sayd Hugh to mete with hym at the Crosse of Compeynne, where the sayd Hugh shortly after mette with the kynge: to whom ỹ kynge promysed great parte of the duchy of Normandy, with that that he wolde refuse the partie of the Normayns, and take his parte agayne them. By meane of whiche promysses, this erle Hughe was ouercomen, & agreed with the kynge to warre vpon one parte of the coũtre, whyle he warred vpon that other: and forthwith receyued an army of the kynge, and spedde hym to Bayonne, and made cruell warre vpon that countre: and kynge Lowys entrede vpon the prouynce of Caux, and wasted and spoyled that coste in all that he myght.

Fol. C.xi. Whan Barnarde the Dane, and also Barnarde erle of Senlys, conceyued the vntrouthe of Hugh le Graunt, and also the great hoostes that they were beset w, by theyr counsaylles & other, they sent vnto the kyng certayne messangers, gyuynge them in cõmaũdement to say, that in vayne the kynge hadde entred that countre with his army, for the cytie of Roane and all the prouynce was at his cõmaundement; besechynge hym nat to waste nor spoyle the countre, but to ayde & helpe defende it agayne theyr enemyes.

Of this message the kynge was ryght fayne, & forthwith sped hym tyll he came to Roan, wher he was, accordynge to his honoure, receyued. For the whiche cause he sent in all hast vnto Arnulfe erle of Flaunders, manassynge hym that he sease of his warres in Bayon tyll he receyued farther knowlege.

The kynge, thus restyng in Roan, deuysed his matyers at his pleasure, so that the Normayns obeyed theym to al his requestes; and for the good aberyng that Barnarde ỹ Dane was of agayne the kynge, he graunted the gydynge of the yonge duke. And whan he shuld departe, he ordeyned, as his deputye, one named Raoulf or Raufe; the whiche, after the kynges departure, behaued hym so cruelly to ỹ Normans, that they were very irke of hym. And ouer this, the foresayd Barnarde, ferynge the kynges retourne & other more greuous punysshement than they before had susteyned, sent his messãgers vnto Grolle, kynge of Denmarke, thanne beynge at Chierbourc, wyllynge hym to assemble his people, and to make of them two hostes, wherof to sende that one by lande, and that other

[1] iourney. [2] Cosuy. [3] Cousy.

by

by water; and so to enter the countre of Normandy in wastyng and spoylynge it, by reason wherof he myght brynge the kynge to some cõmunycacion, whiche all was done as ỹ said Barnarde had deuysed. Whan the kyng had wyttynge of the Danys, that with so great multytude were entred the prouynce of Normandy, he assembled his hoost, and sped hym thytherwarde; and in processe of tyme, came vnto the cytie of Roanne, where, by his counsayl, it was condiscended that a metyng and frendly cõmunycacion shulde be had attwene the kynge and the sayd Grolle, at a place, called in Frenshe, Herlycum: where at the daye appoynted both prynces mette, with both hostes stondynge or houynge[1] a lytell dystaunce of. And whyle the two prynces were there in cõmunycacion of the deth and murdoure of duke William, a Dane, markynge Herloynne, for whose cause, as before is shewed, duke Will'm was slayne, and with a spere wounded hym so greuously that he died forthwith. Whiche dede, his brother, called Lambert, with other of the Frenshemen, entendynge to reuenge, with theyr wepons fylle vpon the Danys, whiche them receyued with great violence. So that of afraye[2] ensued a skyrmysshe, and after the skyrmysshe a sore batayll, for bothe hoostes ioyned on bothe sydes, & faught cruelly eyther ỹ other a longe whyle. But in the ende the Frenshemen had the worse, and were compelled to flee; and the kyng to saue his lyfe, fledde also: whiche, by reason of his vntrusty horse, was taken, and kepte secrete a certayne of tyme by his taker. But lastly he was discouered and brought to the cytie of Roanne as a prysoner. The kyng thus beyng in holde, vnder the kepynge of the Danys, Eugeberge his wyfe, makynge for hym great dole and sorowe, toke her iourney to the kynge of Germany, whose doughter she was, besechynge hym to prouyde for the delyuerye of her lorde and husbande; but of hym had she no socour but rather discomfort, shewyng to her, that the trowble that her husbãde susteynyd, he had well deserued, for his vnstedfastnesse that he agayne William the duke and Richarde his sone had vsed.

Wherfore the quene, beyng thus answered of her fader, rode vnto Hugh le Graunde, besechynge hym of helpe in this great nede. The whiche, at the request of the quene, sent vnto Barnarde, erle of Senlys, requyrynge to moue some wayes to the Danys for the enlargynge of the kyng; by whose labour and meanys, lastly a coũsayll was kept at seynt Clere vpon the ryuer of Ept: where after many argumẽts and reasons made, fynally it was agreed that the kyng shuld be enlarged tyll another day of cõmunycacion, layinge for pledges his sone and heyre, named Lothayre, the bysshop of Senlys and the bysshop of Beauuayze. Which doon, the kinge was set at large, and forthwith rode vnto the cyte of Laon, where he abode the other daye of cõmunycacion, whiche after was holden at the foresayd ryuer of Ept; and concluded a peas, whiche lasted but a short whyle after.

This peas thus confermed, Grollo, the kynge of Danys, with great gyftes was retourned from whens he was desyred; and Richarde the yonge duke, toke vpon hym the rule of his owne signory, and grewe & encreased forthwardly. Wherof Hugh the Graunde takynge hede, & beholdynge his wyse demeanure & conuersacion, made suche labour and meanes vnto Bernarde, erle of Senlis, that he maried to hym his doughter, named Emmacet. Wherof beynge enfourmed, the Frenche kynge caste in his mynde this great alyaunce atwene the yonge duke and. ii. great perys of his lande, thought[3] that those. iii. knet ī amytie and alyaunce shulde disturbe hym whanne them lyked. Wherof he called to hym Arnolde, erle of Flaunders, by whose coũsayll he sent the sayd Arnolde vnto Ottho kynge of Germany, requyryng him of ayde to warre vpon the Normayns, and to breke this affinytie of this yonge duke, and of Hughe le Graunde, and of Barnarde, erle of Senlys; and for his laboure he shulde haue to hym, and to his heyres, the prouynce or lordshyp of Loraynne.

Ottho, with this couetous promesse deceyued, assembled his knyghtes, and at the day

[1] houering. edit. 1559. [2] that afraye. [3] and thought.

and

and place appoynted, met with the kynge, and with theyr people sped theym to Roan, and layde siege vnto the cytie. And whyle ỹ kynges were occupyed in wastynge and brennyng the vylages nere vnto the cytie, to put ỹ Normans in the more fere, Ottho sente his neuewe with a certayne of his people in secret wyse, to the gates of the cytie. But whan he was cõmen to the gate that opened towarde the ryuer of Saynne, and thought there to wynne his enterpryse, the cytezens issued out vpon hym sodeynly, and gaue to hym batayll, and slewe hym and many of his company, and the remenaũt they chased from the walles of the cytie.

Whan Ottho had wytynge of the ouerthrowe of his men, and deth of his neuewe, whom he entyerly loued, he made inwarde heuynesse, & cast in his mynde how he myght reuenge the dethe of his neuewe. But whan he aproched the cytie, and behelde the strength therof, with also ỹ fyersnes of the Normandes, he repẽted hym of enterprysynge of ỹ iourney, and tourned all his hatered vnto Arnolde, erle of Flaunders, by whose sterynge and counsayll that vyage was firste begon, in so moche that he sought the meanes to brynge the sayd Arnolde into the handes of ỹ Normayns.

Wherof Arnolde beynge warned, trussed his stuffe and harneys secretly, and in the nyght stale away, and so retourned into Flaũders with his retynewe. The which thynge knowen to the two kynges, in as secrete wyse as they myght, departed also from the siege; but yet therof theyr enemyes beynge ware, pursued theym and slewe many of theyr company. And or the yere that this was done in had rõne his full compas, Lowys the kynge dyed, and was buryed in the temple of the holy[1] bysshoppe seynt Remygius, within the cytie of
Fol. C.xii. Raynys, whanne he had reygned in great trouble. xxi. yeres, leuynge for his heyre a sone named Lothayr.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxviii.

[Li. 6. ca. 7.] EDmunde, the brother of Ethelstanne, and sõne of Edwarde ỹ elder & of Ethelswida the thirde wyfe of ỹ sayd Edwarde, began his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C.xl. and the. vii. yere of ỹ. v. Lowys, than kynge of Fraunce. In the firste yere of his reygne, the Danys of Northumberlande rebelled agayn hỹ. And for to make theyr partie ỹ stronger, they sent for a prynce of Danys, named Aulaffe, than beyng in Irelande: ỹ whiche brought with hym an other prynce or ruler of Danys, named Reygnalde, with a great hoost of Danys, and other straunge nacyons, & entred the foresayd countre, and warred vpon the next borders in wastynge and spoylynge the inhabytaũtes of the same.

Wherof whan kyng Edmunde was warned, anone he assembled his people, and sped hym towarde that countre; and lastly faught with the two sayd prynces of the Danys, or at the leest chaced theym from towne to towne, tyll he forsyd theym ỽ all theyr company of straunge nacyons to forsake vtterly that prouynce, and bet down that countre of Cumberland, ỹ had moch fauoured & ayded ỹ sayde enemyes agayne hym: and toke therein great prayes, & deuyded theym amonges his knyghtes. And ỹ done, other for ỹ good seruyce that Malcolynne, kynge of Scotlande, had in this vyage done vnto the kynge; or for the trowth and allegiaũce, ỹ he, in tyme folowynge, shuld bere vnto hym; or for both; the kynge gaue there to the sayd Malcolynne the countre of Cumberlande, and seased all the resydue of the kyngdome or lordshyp of Northumberlande, and ioyned it vnto his owne kyngdome. But yet the Danys retourned agayn in the tyme of Edredus the nexte kynge, as after shalbe shewed: so that as yet, the fyne or ende of this kyngdom is nat acompted. [In this Edmundes dayes, the auctour of Policronyca sayth, that, whan Edmunde had ended his iourney and sette that countree in an ordre, he toke with hym the bonys of the holy abbot Colfridus, and of that holy abbesse Hilda, and brought theim vnto Glastenbury, and there shryned theym [or lafte bothe].[2] This Colfryde was abbot

[1] "holy," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *omitted* edit. 1533.

of

of Bedaes abbey, or of the abbey of Gyrwye; and Hylda was abbesse of Strenshalt or Whytby; as[1] affermeth the sayd auctour, bothe places ben in the northe partys of Englande.][2]

Whanne this kynge Edwarde had a noble woman to wyfe, named Elgina, he receyued ii. sõnes, named Edwyne and Edgar. And, as testifyeth Henry, archedekyn of Huntyngdon, this Edwarde had ofte warre with the Danys; the whiche, as he affermeth, helde thanne many good townes in myddell Englande, as Lyncolnne, Notygham, Derby, Staffforde, & Layceto': the whiche, by his knyghtly manhode he wanne from theym. And [by the helpe of holy Dunstane he][3] amended many thynges within his realme, that had ben longe tyme misordered by meane of the Danys.

Of the ende or fyne of this Edmũde, dyuers opynyons there be. For Marianus the Scot saith, that whyle this kyng Edmunde endeuered hymselfe to saue his sewer from ŷ daunger of his enemye, that wolde haue slayne hym at Pulkerchyche, the kỹge in ryddynge of the fraye, was wounded to the deth, and dyed shortly after.

But William de Regibus sayth, that ŷ kynge, beynge at a feest at the foresayd towne or place. vpon the daye of seynt Augustyne, espyed a felon syttynge in the halle, named Leof, whiche he before tyme, for his felony, he hadde exyled; and lepte ouer the table, and plucked that theſe by the here of the hedde to the grounde; in whiche doynge the sayd felon with a knyf wounded the kyng to the deth, and also ẅ the same knyf wouñded many other of the kynges seruauntes; and at length was all to hewen and dyed forthwith. If this be trewe, it shuld seme that kynges at those dayes vsed nat the honour that they nowe haue and exersyse.

But whiche of thyse two meanes was vsyd in the kynges deth, by aggrement of all wryters, this kynge dyed whan he had reygned. vi. yeres and more; and was buryed at Glastenbury, the whiche before he had sumptuously repayred: and lafte after hym two yonge sonnes, as before is remembred, Edwyne & Edgare. But for they were to yonge to rule the lande, therfore the rule thereof was cõmytted to Edredus theyr vncle, and brother to theyr fader.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxix.

EDredus, ŷ brother of Edmunde, & sone of Edwarde the elder & of Ethylswyda his thirde [Li. 6. cap. 8.] wyfe, began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande in the yere of our Lorde. ix.C.xlvii. and the. xiii. yere of ŷ fift Loyes than kynge of Fraunce: the whiche, as before is towched, was admytted kỹge by auctoryte of his barony, for so moche as the two forenamed childer of Edmunde, Edwyn, and Edgar, were thought to yonge and insufficient to take vpon them so great a charge.

The whiche Edrede was enoynted kynge of Oddo archebysshop of Caunterbury, in the towne of Kyngestowne; & soon after, he warred vpon the Danys that then were reentrede into Northumberlãde, or after some wryters, there dwellynge vnder trybute of the kynge, subdued before of Edmunde his brother: and bet theym downe, and caused them to holde and obeye vnto their former couenaũtes. And the Scottes, that[3] began to varey, he also brought vnto due obedyence.

After a certayne terme, ŷ Danys of Northumberlande, (whiche euer contynued ful of gyle and dowblenesse, nat beynge content to holde the couenaũtes before made, & promysses vnto Edredus the kynge,) called vnto theym theyr olde accessaryes and helpers, and bereued from ŷ kynges subiectes, the cytie of Yorke and other stronge townes & castelles to the great hurte of the coũtre, and vtter displeasure of the kynge. Wherfore, he beynge therof aduertysed, in goodly and conuenyent haste, assembled his people, and sped hym thyther, & destroyed moche of the lande; and in ŷ fury brent the abbey of Rypon, whiche

[1] and as. edit. 1533. [2] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] than began to varye, which he also brought.

the Danys kept for a fortresse & strengthe: and wanne frome theym moche of the strengthis, that they tofore hadde wonne, and brought theym agayne vnder his subgeccion.

Whan this kynge Edrede had thus sped his iourney, and was retournynge into Englande, nothynge suspectynge the sayd Danys, a company of them, by the exityng of Hurkus a kynge or prynce of ŷ Danys, than folowed the kynges hoost: and on this halfe Yorke fyll vpon the kynges rerewarde, and destroyed & slewe many a man. For the which doynge, the kyng was sore amoued; and tourned his people agayn entendynge to haue destroyed ŷ countre vtterly.

Danys subdued.

Wherof ŷ Danys beyng ware, so lowly meked theym vnto hym, and gaue to hym suche gyftes, that the kynge refrayned hym of ŷ great yre ŷ he had purposed to theym. But amonges other artycles that he boũde theym vnto, one was, that they shulde banysshe and vtterly refuse theyr fore sayd duke or kynge called Hyrcus; whiche thynge, with dyuers and many other, graunted and fermely bounde to kepe, as well by hostages taken, and[1] other suertye, the kyng retourned into Englande, ioynynge this kyngdom to his other. So that here is rekened the ende of this kyngdome, whiche shuld endure, as before is shewed in the. C.ix. Chapitre of this werke, by the terme of. CCCC.ix. yeres. In ŷ same yere that the kynge had thus subdued the Danys, a stronge sykenesse toke hym. [Wherfore he sent for holy bysshop Dunstanne to come vnto hym: the whiche Dunstanne, in goynge towarde ŷ kynge, harde a voyce saye vnto hym, "Nowe resteth kynge Edredus in peace." At tyme of whiche voyce thus sayinge, the horse of that holy bysshop fylle to the grounde, and dyed without hurtynge of his maister. Thanne this holy man contynued his iourney, and fande the kynge deed at his cõmynge, whome he buryed with great reuerence,][2] in the [monastery, or][2] cathedral churche of the cytie of Wynchester, in the. xxviii. yere of his age; and the. x. yere of his reygne, as testefyeth Guydo, and other.

Act. C.xiii.

Finis Regni Brenicie.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxx.

LOtharius, the eldest sone of ŷ. v. Lowys, began his reigne ouer the Frenshemen in ŷ yere of our Lordes incarnacyon. ix. C.lv. and the. viii. yere of Edredus than kynge of Englande. This Lothayr, by meanes of Thebaude or Theobalde, erle of Charthris, toke partie agayne Richarde, duke of Normandy: and for to haue agayne hym some groundely cause, he sent vnto the duke, monysshynynge hym to haue in mynde the fayth and allegyaunce that the dukes of Normandy ought to bere vnto ŷ kynges of Fraũce. And for maynteynynge of the same, and for other matyers that he had to speke with hym of, he wyllyd hym to come to a place appoynted, where all such matyers myght haue farther expedycyon; all whiche cõmaundement or request was graunted of the duke. Whan the kynge had receyued this answer frome the duke, wherof he demyd before ŷ contrary, he sent for Arnolde erle of Flaundres, Godfrey erle of Angewe, & Theobalde before named; by whose coũsaylles, after many argumentes made, the kynge agreed to calle the duke vnto the ryuer of Isayr, & there to betraye hym. Whiche daye and place apoynted, the duke, with a conuenyent company, came vnto the sayd ryuers syde, there abydyng the cõmyng of Lothayr vpon that other syde, whiche lastly came thyther with a great people; wherof whanne the duke was ware, he fered treason: for ŷ whiche cause, he sent espyes to knowe of the kynges entent. And they, as wyse men, espyed all the purpose of the hoste; and shortly retourned, and shewed to the duke, that he was in great daunger; the whiche shortly after appered; for the Frenshemen began to passe the ryuer in great nombre. Than duke Richarde, consyderynge that he was of so lytell myght to withstande the great power of the Frenshe host, sent a parte of his men to defende the passage, and with the remenaunt retourned vnto the cytie of Roanne; wherof the kynge beyng ware

[1] as. [2] the edit. of 1542 and 1559, *instead of the passage in brackets, merely say,* "so that he dyed and was buryed."

that the duke was hym escaped, called agayne his people, and with great displesure retourned vnto Laon. It was nat longe after, that the kyng assembled a great hoost of Burgonyons and Frenshemen, and entred into Normandy, and beseged the cytie of Bayon, and lastely wan it by the reason[1] of one Gylberde a smyth, belongynge vnto erle Theobalde, aboue named. Whan the kynge hadde thus wonne the cytie of Bayon, he betoke ŷ kepyng therof vnto the sayd erle; the whiche puttynge therin a strengthe of knyghtes, yode vnto a castell called Harmauyle, and beseged it with a certayn of knyghtes. In whiche season, the kynge, for nedes of his realme, retourned into Fraunce.

Whan duke Wyllyam[2] was ware of the kynges departure, he with his people passed the water of Saynne, and costed the country, and fyll sodaynly vpon erle Theobalde lyinge at the foresayd siege, and slewe of his men. vi. C.xl. persones, and put the erle in suche a fere that he scaped with great dañger, and fled with small company, tyll he came to his owne cytie of Charterys.

Whan duke Richarde, consyderyng the great malyce of his foon, & strength of theym, sent vnto the kyng of Denmarke than named Erarde, requyryng hym of ayde or helpe for to withstande ŷ malyce of his enemyes; the whiche Erarde receyued gladly that message, & promysed to them all theyr request; and shortly after sent to ŷ sayd duke a great army of Danys, whiche spedde theym by the see, tyll they came to ŷ place where the water of Saynne falleth into the see. Wherof the duke beynge aduertysed, in shorte space drewe vnto theym with his people: and so with theym entred ŷ countre of the erle of Chartrys, in wastynge and destroyng it without mercy. And after entred the landes of Fraunce, in [pyllynge, robbynge, brenaynge, and][3] wastynge it, and slewe the people without mercy and pyte.

For this mysery and tyranny thus exercysed by the Danys, the kynge, beynge therwith confused, sent for the bysshoppes of his lande, to haue theyr aduyce. Amonges the whiche the bysshop of Chartres, beynge present, was by the hole counsayll admytted to go to the duke, and know the cause, why that he, beynge a Cristen man, made suche distruccyon of the Cristen people, and occupyed the lande of Cristen men with so manyfolde harmys and scathes: and to conclude a trewe or trewce for a certayne of tyme. The sayd bysshop, accomplyssynge the kynges pleasure, was answered of the duke ŷ this vexacõn ŷ he put to ŷ lande of Fraũce was for the iniurye that the kynge had before tyme done vnto hym, and yet contynued the same in holdynge frome hym his cytie of Bayon, the whiche he had gyuen to his great enemye the erle of Chartres; so that in conclucyon a restreynt of warre was graunted, vpon condycyon that by a daye assygned, the kynge wolde apoynt a daye of cõmunycacion, and in ŷ meane tyme restore vnto hym his cytie of Bayon.

Whan ŷ kynge had receyued the answere frome the duke, he made suche meanes that ŷ duke receyued his cytie of Bayon, w all dyspleasure forgyuen agayne ŷ fore named Theobalde, whiche was done by medyacion of a relygyous monke, as affermeth the Frensshe boke. And after the daye of metynge was appoynted, at a place called Gindolfosse, where the duke made ordynaunce for receyuynge of the kyng, and cõmaunded the Paynyns and Danys to behaue theym reuerently agayne the kynge and his people: the whiche was obeyed in all due maner, and the kynge, there receyued with moche honour, had vnto the duke many goodly wordes, requyrynge hym to forgette all his former vnkyndnes, trustynge to shewe vnto hym suche pleasures in tyme to come, that shulde recompence all the former displeasures and vnkyndnes by hym before cõmytted. With whiche fayre speche, the duke, takynge it without dissymulacion, was wele satysfyed & content; so that after asuraunce of amytie and peas atwene theym stablysshed, eyther gynynge vnto other great and ryche gyftes, they departed as frendes, the whiche peas contynued durynge theyr lyues.

[1] treason. [2] Rycharde. [3] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxi.

Fol. C.xiiii. LOthayr, thus beynge in loue and amyte with ŷ Normans, caste in his mynde how he myght wyñe from his ñeuewe Otthon, kyng of Germany, the prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne, that, in tyme passed, was belongynge[1] to his progenytours; and this to effecte, he gaderyd, in right secret wyse, a chosen hoost of Frenshemen, and with theym passed the countre, in whiche[1] wyse that he was entrede the cytie of Aquisgrani, or any great fame or noyse were therof made. Wherwith Ottho beynge dismayde, fledde for that season, & suffred the sayd Lothayr, for that tyme, to execute his pleasure; so that the sayd Lothayr spoyled the kynges paleys and other places, to the great enrychynge of hym and his hoost. And whan he had taryed there a certayne of tyme, he retourned wout batayll, w̃ great pompe into Fraunce.

It is shewed before, in the begynnynge of the story of Ethelstanne, kynge of Englande, that Henry duke of Saxony, the which is ment for Germany, sent vnto the sayd Ethilstanne to haue his suster Alunda to mary vnto his sone Ottho [or Otthon.][2] Ye shall vnderstande, this Henry is of some wryters admytted for emperour; but his sone Ottho, forenamed, was emperour in dede, whose sone this Otthon was abouenamed, and called the seconde of that name, and emperoure after his fader, & sone of the forenamed Alunda, suster to Ethilstanne.

Than this seconde Ottho, emperoure and kynge of Germany, beyng thus, as ye haue harde, surprysed of his neuewe Lothayr, kynge of West Fraũce, gaderyd a stronge hoost, & entrede the realme of Fraunce. And as wytnesseth Girardus, wryter of historyes, destroyed the countre of Soysoyns, and lastly came vnto Parys, and brent the suburbes of that cytie, and had a great parte of his wyll of the sayd Lothayr. But the Frenshe Cronycle varyeth from this sayinge, & sayth that Lothayr, by the helpe of the duke of Burgoyne, and of Hugh Capet erle of Parys, after the sayd Otthon had fyred the suburbes of the cytie of Parys, he issued oute of the towne, and faught with the emperoure, and compelled hym to gyue backe & fle; whome the kynge pursued tyll he came to the ryuer of Isayr or Sue, where eyther host encountrede with other, and faught cruelly, but at length the emperoure was forced to forsake ŷ felde, and moche[3] slayne and drowned within the sayd ryuer: and so great nombre, as affermeth the Frenshe storye, that the countre[4] of the water was stopped, and ouerflowed the feldes nere vnto the sayd ryuer.

But this victory natwithstandynge, as wytnesseth Mayster Gagwyne, the kynge, contrary the mynde of the duke of Burgoyne, and also of Hugh Capet, released vnto the emperoure the tytle & ryght of Loreynne; the whiche was cause of couetynge of the realme by ŷ sayd Hugh, and vsurpynge of the same, as affermeth the sayd auctour. Whiche agrement attwene the. ii. prynces stablysshed & ended, eyther retourned into his owne countre. After the whiche season, no notable dede is put in memory of the sayde Lothayr: so that he fynally sykened & dyed, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C. lxxx. vi. whan he had ruled his pryncipat vigurously, by the ful terme of. xxx. wynter, and was buryed in the mynster of seynt Remigius, in ŷ cytie of Raynes, leuynge after hym a sone named Lowys.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxii.

[Li. 6. ca. 8.] EDredus or Edwyn, the eldest sone of Edmunde, brother of Ethilstanne, beganne his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C.lvi. and the seconde yere of Lothayr, than kynge of Fraunce. This Edwynne was crowned kyñge at Kyngistonne or Kyngestowne, besyde London, of the archebysshop of Caunterbury; the whiche selfe

[1] such. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542, 1559. [3] myche of his people slayn. [4] course.

daye

daye of his possessyon[1] or coronacion, broke sodeynly from his lordes, and entred a secret chamber, and there occupyed hym selfe synfully with a nother maunes wyfe; [wherof seynt Dunstane hauynge knowlege, rebuked hym, and blamed greuously, and caused the woman to be voyded from his bedde & compan y,][2] whose husbande, as one auctour testyfyeth, he slewe, for to haue the vnlawfull vse of her beaute, nat consyderynge the allyaunce of affynyte of kynred atwene theym, as affermeth ỹ sayd auctour. Guydo, wryter of storyes, saith, that Edwyn, contrary the lawes of the churche, helde a woman as his concubyne: herfore holy[3] Dunstane accused hym vnto Oddo, archebysshop of Caũterbury, by whose power the kyng was caused to refuse and forsake the company of that woman. For the whiche dede Edwyne bare great malys vnto the holy[3] man Dunstane, and, at lengthe, by his export[4] power, banysshed hym his lande, and forced hym, for a season, to holde hỹ in Flaunders; and for the malyce that he bare towarde hym he dyd moche displeasure to all blacke moukes of Englande, in so moche ỹ at Malmysbury, he put out the monkes, and set in seculer preestes in theyr stedde.

It is radde of hỹ, that he also toke [from the churche what he myght, and specially from the blacke monkes, in so moche, that][5] such precyous iewellys as Ethilstanne had before receyued from Othonne the emperoure, and gyuen vnto Wynchester and Malmysbury, he toke theym thens and gaue them vnto alyauntes and straungers: and was[6] nat alonely vnkynde to God[7], but also he vsed suche tyranny and other vnlefull meanes to his subiectes, that lastly they rebelled agayne hym, and specyally the inhabytaũtes of the countre of Mercia or Myddell Englande, and also of Northumbers, and put hym clerely from all kyngly honoure and dignytie, whan he had reygned, after moste wryters, the full terme of. iiii. yeres; and was buryed after, in the cathedrall churche of Wynchester, leuyng none heyre of his body: wherfore the rule of the lande fyll vnto Edgar, his yonger brother. [Antonius, archebysshop of Fraunce[8], in this werke often before mynded, amonges many myracles and vertues actes which he, in the. vi. Chapitre of the. xvi. tytle of his boke called Somma Antonii[9], reherseth of this holy man Dunstanne, sayth, that whan he hadde vnderstandynge of the dethe of this Edwynne, by reuelacyon or otherwyse, he made his speciall prayer to God, to knowe what state the soule of Edwynne was in; to whom, after his prayer made, appered to the sayd Dunstanne a great company of fendes, turmentyng the soule of the sayd Edwynne, and ledynge it vnto the places of payne: the whiche, whan this holy man had seen, he fell to great wepynge and sorowe, besechynge God, with moost deuocyon, to haue pyte & compassion of that soule. And whyle he was occupyed in his prayer, the sayd company of fendes returned with yellynge and cryinge, shewynge to hym that thorough his prayer, the aungelles of God hadde byrafte from theym the soule of Edwyn.][10]

¶ Capitulum. C. lxxxxiii.

EDgar, the seconde sone of Edmunde, and brother of Edwynne laste[9], beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Englande in ỹ yere of our lorde. ix. C. lx. and the. v. yere of Lotharius, than kynge of Fraunce; the whiche, of dyuers writers, is wytnessed to be of the age of. xvi[10] yeres, thanne[11] he was admyted for kyng, [and that he was nat crowned kynge][10] tyll he had reygned ỹ full terme of. xii. yeres; whiche terme ended and expyred, he was enoynted and crowned kynge in the cytie of Bathe, vpon a Whytsondaye, fallynge thanne vpon the. xv. day of May, of Dunstanne and Oswolde, bysshopes, that one of Caunterbury, and that other of Yorke. Anglia. [Li. 6. ca. 9.] Fol. C.xc.

In the begynnynge of his reygne, he called home holy[3] Dunstanne, that before was

[1] professyon. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] "holy," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] extorte. [5] thys was. [6] the munkes. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] Antoninus, archebyshop of Florence. edit. 1533. [8] Antonini. edit. 1533. [9] laste kynge. [10] xv. edit. 1542. 1559. [11] when. edit. 1542. 1559.

exyled of kynge Edwynne; [whiche Dunstanne harde aungellys synge, peace be to the lande of Englysshemen.][1] Than he made Dunstanne, ỹ was abbot of Glastynbury, bisshop of Worceter, and vnyed and knyt into one the prouynce & lordshyppes of Englãde, and made of them one monarchye and kyngdom. In many places he put a way clerkes & preestes that lyued vycyously, and sette there, for theym, monkes. And as witnesseth Guydo, Policronica, and other, he buylded & repayred to ỹ nombre of. xl. houses of relygyon, wherof Abyndon, Peterburgh, Thorney, Ramesey, and Wyltonne, were parcell of theym. And at Wynchester, in the newe abbey, he put in monkes, where, before dayes, were seculer preestes; ỹ cause wherof was, for so moch as the preestes fled or neclegently slowthed the deuyne seruycc of God, and sette vykers in theyr places, whyle they lyued at theyr pleasure in other places, and spent the patrimoney of that churche after theyr sensuall wyll.

Than kynge Edgar gaue to ỹ vykers the lande that before belonged to the prebendaryes, trustynge therby, that they wolde do theyr duetyes. But it was nat longe to, or the sayd vicaryes were as neclygent as the other. Wherfore, fynally, the kyng, by auctorytie of pope Iohnne[2] the. xiii. of that name, voyded clerely the preestes, and ordeyned there mõkes, though some of his prelates were nat therwith cõtented. This Edgar kepte suche iustyce, and dyd so sharpe execucyon, that neuer before his dayes was vsed lasse felony or robberyes. And for he wolde haue ỹe rauenous bestes destroyed thorugh his lande, he caused Ludwallus, prynce or kynge of Walys, to yelde to hym yerely, by waye of trybute, CCC. wolnys, by meane wherof, within the space of. iiii. yeres after, in Englande & Walys, myght scantly be founden one wolfe a lyue.

It is wytnessed of dyuers auctours, that Kynadus, kyng of Scotlande, dispysed Edgar for that that he was lytell of stature. Wherof Edgar beyng warned, desyred the sayd Kynadus to dyner, and made to hym good countenaunce: after which dyner ended, he toke the sayd Kynadus by the arme, and so with hym helde company tyll they came in the feldes, where, beynge disseuered from bothe theyr seruauntes, Edgar drewe from vnder his garment. ii. swerdes, and desyred Kynadus to take the choyse of theym, & sayde to hym, "Now thou hast good laysour to asaye thy strength with myn, that, before tyme, thou hast so moch dispysed; and let vs nowe proue which is more worthy to be subget to other: it is nat syttyng for a knyght to make great boste at the borde, and to do lytell in felde." Whan ỹ Scottysshe kynge harde ỹ kyng thus chalenge hym, he knewe well his wordes, before spoken, were dysclosed to the kyng, wherof he was nat a lytell abasshed; but for to a peace the kynge, he behaued hym so lowely, and gaue to hym suche plesaunt wordes, that the kynge forgaue the trespace.

This Edgar, amõge other of his polytyke dedes, vsed, in the somer tyme, to scowre the see with certeyne shyppes of warre, and agayne the wynter he prouyded to laye the sayd shyppes in sure hauyns, and had redy in his owne seruyce, and in his lordes houses, a certayne nombre of soldyours, that were alwaye redy whan ỹ kynge had nede of them; and his shypmaisters were in wayges with hym, thorough the yere, that euer attended vpon the shyppes, to se that nothyng fayled that vnto theym was necessary: by meane wherof, he kept his lande in great quyet for outwarde enemyes. And for[3] the wynter he vsed to ryde ouer ỹ lande, & to se how his offycers entreated the people, and if any were accused of extorcion or other crymes, and agayne them suffycyently proued, he dyd, vpon all suche, sharpe correccion.

A payne for moche drynkynge.

And for so moch as, in his dayes, great multytude of Danys dwelled in dyuers places of Englande, whiche vsed many vyces, and specially great drynkynge, wherof ensued dronkennes & many other vyces, to the euyll example and hurte of his cõmons & subgettes, he therfore ordeyned certayne, cuppes with pynnes or nayles sette in theym, and ordayned and made a lawe, that what persone dranke past that marke at one draught, shulde forfayte

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Iohn, B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] in.

a cer-

a certayne peny, wherof ỹ one half shuld fall to the accusour, and that other half to ỹ ruler of the borugh or towne that ỹ offence was done in. It is tolde of this Edgar, by dyuers auctours, ỹ he, vpon a season, beyng at Chester, entred the ryuer of Dee, and there syttynge in a bote, toke the rule of ỹ helme, and caused viii. kynges, whiche of Guydo are called reguli, which is to meane small or lytel kinges, or vnder kynges, the whiche he commaunded to rowe hym vp and downe the ryuer, vnto seynt Iohnnes churche, and from thens to his owne paleys, in token that he was lorde and kynge of so many prouynces. Auctoris

This noble Edgar had. ii. wyues. By the firste, that was called Egelfleda the whyte, he had a sone that was named Edwarde: he was after kynge, and slayne by reason of his step-moder Alfritha, called, in the Englysshe Cronycle, Estrylde. And vpon his seconde wyfe Alfrida or Estrylde, he gat a sone named Egelredus, or after ỹ Englysshe boke, Eldrede, whiche was kynge after Edwarde the martyr, as after shalbe shewed. And of seynt Wylfryth, whiche, of some writers, is accõpted for a mẽchonne, he had a doughter named seynt' Edyth in processe of tyme; but this was of bast and nat in wedloke. For as Guydo and Policronicon testifyen, this virgyne Wylfryth, knowynge that the kynge caste to her vnlaufull loue, put vpon her the habet of a nonne, thynkyng therby to withdrawe the kynges loue; but ỹ natwstandyng, she was at length broughte to ỹ kynges bedde: for whiche dede he was greatly blamed of the holy[1] bysshop Dunstanne, and dyd therfore. vii. yeres penaunce, by the heste or byddyng of the sayde Dunstanne. And the forenamed Wylfrith, after that childe borne, lyued so relygyously, that she is nowe compted for a seynt in heuen. Of her doughter Edyth it is radde, that at laufull age, she was at Wyltonne shorne a nũne, [where she vsed more gayer appareyl than was thought conuenyent to her relygyon; for the whiche, she beynge blamed of the holy bysshop Ethelwold, answered, Goddes dome, ỹ may nat fayle, is pleased oonly with conscyence; wherfore I truste, ỹ, vnder thyse clothes, may be as clene a soule as vnder other ỹ been of lasse shewynge.]; many vertues[4] ben rehersed of this holy virgyn Edyth, in ỹ. ix. chapitre of ỹ. vi. boke of Policronicon, the whiche I passe ouer for lengthe of the matyer.

¶ Capitulum. Clxxxxiiii.

EDgar, thus rulynge the lande, after the deth of his first wyf Egelfleda, worde was brought to hym of the beautie of Alfrida or Estrylde, doughter of Orgarus, erle of Deuenshyre; wherfore he sent a knyght of his court, named Ethelwolde, to espye whether the mayde were of suche beautie as she was reported of or nat, chargynge hym, if she were so beautyous, that than he shulde aske her to wyfe for the kynge. Deceptio vel Fraus militis cõtra Regẽ suũ pro muliere maritanda. [Li. 6. ca. 11.]

But this knyght, hauynge syght of this mayden, was so wounded with the darte of the blynde god Cupide, that he forgat his trouthe and allegiaunce that he shulde owe to his maister and soueraygne; & retourned, shewynge to the kynge ỹ she was nothyng of the beaute that she was reported of, but of meane fayrenesse as other women were. Wherfore he besaughte the kyng, consyderyng she was her faders heyre & a good maryage, that he wolde be so good lorde to hym, as to wryte vnto her fader, that he myght haue her to wyfe; the whiche grace he opteyned, and at length was maryed vnto her. In processe of tyme, the fame of the beaute of this woman sprange so wyde, that lastly, it came to the erys of Edgar: wherwith, ỹ kynge, in his mynde, beyng sore discontented with Ethilwolde, which hym had so disceyued, yet kept good countenaunce, and made semblaunt as though he had nothynge forced of ỹ matyer, & vpon a tyme, as it were in game, warned this Ethilwolde, that than was an erle, by reason of his wyf or otherwyse, that he wolde lodge one nyght in his howse, and appoynted the daye whan it shulde be. With this *Fol. C.xvi.*

[1] "seynt," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] "holy" *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] verses, edit. 1542. 1559.

monyssyon,

monyssyon, the erle, beyng nothyng contented, ranne home, nygh dede for fere; & prayed his wyfe of help in ỹ tyme of nede, & ỹ she wold, I al ỹ she myghte, make her selfe as fowle & as vnsemely as she coude, & shewed to her all the resydue of the matyer. Than the woman caste in her mynde the great displeasure that myght ensue thereof towarde her agaynne God, to make that fowle which he had made goodly and fayre; and also to her lorde & husbande agayne the kynge, thynkynge that he shulde cause her thus to do, to ỹ ende to mocke and disceyue hym. Wherfore, in consyderacion of ỹ premysses, she anourned her in moste costly and shewynge aparayll; and ouer that, if Dame Nature had any thynge forgoten or mysprynted in her, she lafte nat ỹ by womans helpe myght be amended or refrounied[1]: &, at the kynges cõmynge, receyued hym w all ioye and gladnesse, by whiche meanes this yonge amerous kyng was soon caught in the Deuyles snare, so that he sette reason aparte, and folowed his own sensualytie. And for to brynge his purpose the better aboute, he kept forth a countenaunce as he had ben wele contented w all thynge, & desyred the erle ỹ he wold with hym ryde on hũtynge into ỹ wood of Welwerley, that nowe is called Horewood; where he, awaytyng his season and tyme, strake the erle thorough the body with a shafte, so that he dyed soon after. And thanne he maryed this Elfrida or Estrylde shortly, and had by her Egelredus, as before I haue shewed.

For the whiche dede, sayth Ranulfe, this Elfrida boylded an howse of nũnes at Warwell. But other auctours say it was for the sleynge of her stepson, Edwarde; also the Englysshe Cronycle sheweth, that this Ethilwolde was slayne by an other meane, and nat
[Li. 6. ca. 10.] by the kyng. Aboute this tyme dyed Oddo, archebysshop of Caunterbury, that was of the nacyon of Danys. Of hym is tolde a longe processe, in the. x. Chapiter of the. vi. Boke of Policronycon. And after hym Bryglynus, that than was bysshop of Wynchester, was made his successour, but for he was nat suffycient for so great a charge, he went agayne to Wynchester. And holy[2] Dunstañ, bysshop of Londõn, and of Worcetour, was sacred archebisshop of Caũterbury, and went to Rome, and receyued the palle of pope[3] Iohñ, the. xiii. of ỹ name. This Dunstañ was firste abbot of Glastynbury and bysshop of Londõn & Worcetour, & lastly archebysshop of Caunterbury. In his dayes, ỹ order of monkes was relygyous, and full of vertues, for it had relygyous rulers, clere of scyence and of clergy, so that then men were lad as moche with other[4] dedes and godd examples of vertuous lyuynge, as by theyr famous and vertuous prechyng. Than Edgare, as before is sayd, was crowned kyng at the cytie of Bathe, of Dunstañ, archebysshop of Caũterbury, & Oswolde archebysshop of Yorke, whan he had ruled this lande. xii. yeres. The cause why it was so longe or this Edgare were enoynted, was, as testyfyeth Guydo, for his vnlefull lechery, and specially for the offence done with Wylfride, for the whiche dede he was of Dũstanne ioyned to. vii. yeres penaunce, the whiche penaunce durynge, he was kept from the sayd enoyntement, as affermeth the sayd Guydo. But for what cause soeuer it was, by agrement of dyuers wryters, he was nat crowned tyll he
[Li. 6. ca. 11.] had reygned. xii. yeres. It is also tolde of this Edgare, that he, beynge vpon a season at the towne of Andeuir, he was enamoured vpon a noble mannes doughter, whiche was of passynge beautie, and made such meanes, by force, or otherwyse, that the parentes were agreed that ỹ kynge shuld haue his pleasure. But the moder subtel of wyt, bethought her of a wyle, and sent a seruaũt of hers, whiche was both comely and fayre, to ỹ kynges bedde. In the mornynge, whan the daye began to wax clere, the woman began to styrre, & wolde haue departed from the kynge; but the kyng refrayned her, and asked ỹ cause of her so hasty departynge. For I muste be at my werke with my felowes, sayd ỹ woman, at myn houre, to kepe my taske. And whan the kynge had questyoned with her further, he lerned that she was a bonde woman, and asked of the kynge fredam for that nyght seruyce.

The kyng at this had good game, and cherysshed that damosell so after, ỹ he made her

[1] refourmed. [2] "holy," *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [3] "pope" *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [4] theyr. edit. 1542. 1559.

lady of lordes. For thyse insolent and wanton dedes, it is sayd, that, by the counsayll of ỹ holy[1] Dunstañ, he buylded and repayred so many abbeys, and hooses of relygyon, as aboue is reherced. Thus this noble Edgare, passynge his tyme in vertu, medled with vyce, lastly had wyttynge of the rebellyon of ỹ Iry aynes, or Walshemen. Wherfore he assembled his knyghtes, and entrede the lande, and dyd theym great harme & waste. And, amonges other prayes, spoyled the countree of Glamorganne, and also toke or spoyled the countre of Ono; [and toke the bell of sayt Eltutus, whiche serued for his churche, that was taken by vyolence with other stuffe, & hanged it aboute an horse necke: puttynge it to temporal seruyce to the displeasure of ỹ sayne. But for ỹ vyolent takyng therof, as Ranulfe expresseth, in an vndertyd, whan kyng Edgarre was layde to take his rest, the sayd Eltutus apered, & smote the kyng vpon the breast w a spere, so ỹ the kynge awoke with that stroke, and charged that the belle shuld be restored to the Churche of saynt Eltutus, and all other thynges that were taken with the same.][2] But the kyng dyed within. x. dayes after, whan he had reygned, after moste wryters, the full terme of. xvi. yeres, and was buryed at Glastynbury, leuynge after hym ii. sonnes, Edwarde the Marter, and Egelredus, by. ii. sondry wyues. Henricus, the histographer, made of hym thyse verses folowynge.

Ayder of the poore, and punyssher of trespasse,
The gyuer of worshyp, kyng Edgarre is now gone
To ỹ kyngdome of heuē; which lyke to prayse was
As Salamon, that for wysdom aboue all shone.
A fader in peas, a lyonne to his foone;
Founder of temples, of monkes stronge patrone;
Oppresser of all wronge, & of iustyce guardone.

[WIllelmus de Regibus testyfyeth, that in the yere of our Lorde. M. lii., whiche was after the deth of this noble kyng Edgarre. lxxvi. yeres, an abbot of Glastynbury, named Aylewarde, dygged the graue of this noble man vnreuerētly, at which tyme ỹ body was founden hole, and so full of flesshe, that ỹ body wolde nat entre into a newe chest without pressynge, by reason wherof fresshe droppes of blode issued out of the same body. Thanne the abbot foresayd fyll sodeynly madde, and went out of the churche, and brake his necke, & so dyed. Than the body was put in a shryne ỹ he, before tyme, had gyuen to that place, & sette vpon the auter, with the hede of saynt Apolynare, and other relyques of seynt Vyncent, the whiche that kynge Edgare before dayes had brought thyther, and gyuen to that howse. Wherfore it may wele appere to all that rede this story, that what, lyuyng, this man was demed of, that he purged hym in suche wyse, by penaunce, that he made seth and amendes to Goddes pleasure.][3] *Fol. Cxviii.*

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxv.

IN the story of this noble prynce Edgare, I fyde wryten a story, the whiche is alledged, by the auctoure, that it shuld be done by a kynge of Syrie, named Cambyses, in the tyme of the reygne of this Edgare. But in ỹ sayinge, he varyeth from other auctours & wryters very farre, as Vincencius Historialis, Antonius[4], Ranulphus, and other. For albe it the said acte was done by the sayd Cambyse, as the forenamed aucto' affermeth, yet it was by the said Cambyses executed, longe before the incarnacion of Criste. For this Cambyses was the sone of Cirus, kyng of Parsis & of Medys, which reygned ouer those prouynces, aboute the yere of the world. iiii. M. lxx.; before the commynge of Criste, folowynge ỹ accompte of this werke. xi. C. yeres and. xxix. But it myght be that the whyte monke that *Modus iudicii.*

[1] "holy," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Antoninus.

was

was auctour or wryter of this acte, to ỹ story of Edgare, what[1] moued for the great iustyce that he radde in the story of this Edgare, thynkynge to enhaunce it by the reason hereof, where he sayth, that in the tyme of this Cambyses, a iuge was to hym accused, & conuicte vpon the same accusacion, that he had gyuen a wronge sentence, by meane of takyng of mede. Wherfore this Cambyses, to ỹ terrour and fere of other, cõmaunded ỹ sayd iudge to be flayne quycke, and the skynne to be spred ouer the place or stole of iugement: and that done, made the sone of the foresayd iuge to sytte as iuge in the place where his fader before satte, with thyse verses wryten vpon the face of the sayd place of iugement, as foloweth.

Sede sedens ista iudex inflexibilis sta,
A manibus reuoces munus, ab aure preces.
Sit tibi lucerna, lex, lux, pellisq; paterna,
Qua recedes natus pro patre sponte datus.

Whiche verses maye be englysshed in maner and fourme as foloweth.

Thou that syttest in this iudiciall place,
Sytte vp ryght, and holde thyne handes from mede,
Thyne erys from prayer, and fauoure from the chace,
Let lawe be thy gyde, kepe iustyce in thy rede.
Thy faders skynne whiche doth thy chayer sprede
Haue in thy mynde, fall nat to lyke offence,
Leste for thy faute thou make lyke recompence.

AS I haue before shewed, this acte was put in execucõn, ỹ. xi. C. yere & odde before ỹ cõmynge of Criste; and, syns ỹ sayde cõmynge or incarnacion, haue expyred xv. C. yeres and more, which all maketh ouer. ii. M. vi. C. yeres: in all whiche tyme I haue nat radde in any Cronycle of this lande, nor otherwhere, that any iudge hathe been put to lyke sentence.

Wherfore it is to presubpose, that in ỹ lawes, both spirituall & temperall, all iuges haue wele borne thyse verses in mỹde, and exercysed theym in myñystryng of dewe iustyce as perfytely, as theyr cusshons had ben fresshely lyned with the foresaid skynne; and enprynted so naroly thyse verses in ỹ boke of theyr conscyence, that they in all theyr iugementes sette asyde all percyalyte and fauoure, and holde theyr handes from all medes and rewardes; so that now it is thus ẁ more, or ellys thus it shuld be.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxvi.

[Li. 6. ca. 22.] EDwarde, the sone of Edgare, and of his firste wyfe named Egelfleda, the whiche began his reygne ouer this realme of Englande, in ỹ yere of our Lorde. ix. C. lxxvii., and the. xxii[2]. yere of Lothayr, than kyng of Fraũce. Ye shall vnderstande, that after ỹ deth of Edgare, stryfe arose amonges the lordes for admyssion of theyr kyng; for Elfrida, or Estrilde, with Alphrede, duke of Mercia, made dyuers frendes to haue her sone Egelredus promoted to that dignitie, a childe of. vii. yeres of age, that she and he myght haue the rule of the lande. But holy[3] Dunstañ, with ayde of other bysshoppes, and of the erle of Eest Englande, or Essex, withstode so that doynge, that he crowned this Edwarde kynge, at the towne of Kyngestowne, to the greuous displeasure of his sayd moder, Elfrida, and other of her affynyte. In ỹ tyme of this Edward, appered stella cometa, a blasynge sterre, wherafter ensued many inconuenyence, as well to man as to beste, as sykenesse, hunger, moreyñ, & other lyke myseries. But none of this fyll in the dayes of this Ed-

[1] was. [2] xii. [3] "Holy," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

warde

warde, but after his deth. The forenamed Alpherus, duke of Mercia, whiche, in all thynges, fauoured moch the dedes of ỹ quene, put out the monkes at Wynchester, that kynge Edgare, as before is shewed, had there set in, and brought in for theym wanton clerkes; or, as Ranulphe sayth, clerks with concubynes. But Dunstanne, and the erle of Essex withsayde that doynge, and helde agayne the duke, and suche as fauoured his partie; for the whiche arose great stryfe atwene the prestes & the monkes of Englande. For the clerkes that were beforetyme put out by Edgare, sayde that it were a wretched and cursed dede, that a newe comon cõpany, vnknowen, shuld put out olde landysmen from theyr place. Nor it shuld[1] be pleasynge to God that had graũted the place to the olde woñer; nor no good man ought to alowe suche doynge, for the example ỹ thereof myght ensewe. The monkes sayd that Criste alowed nother the olde dweller, nor yet the persone, but who so wolde take ỹ crosse of penaunce vpon hym, and folowe Criste in vertuous lyuynge, he shuld be his discyple. For this was holden a generall counsayll of byshoppes, and all the clergye of the lande at Wynchester, [where holy[2] Dunstanne helde with the vertuous. And whyle they were there in great argument for this matyer, as dyuers wryters testyfyen, a rode there beynge, or standynge in the walle, spake myraculously and said, that Dunstans waye was good and trewe;][3] but for all this the stryfe seased nat. In somoche, that a newe assemble of the clergye and other, was apoynted after at a place called the strete of Calue, where the counsayll was kepte in an vpper lofte. In this coũsayl, Dunstanne was greuously despysed & rebuked of some vnskylfull men, but yet he kept his opynyon, grounded vpon iustyse and vertue; & whyle they were there ī this great dyuysion and argument, whiche way shuld be admytted and alowed, sodenly the ioystes of the lofte fayled, and the people fell downe, so that many were slayne and greuously hurte, but holy[2] Dunstanne escaped with fewe other that toke his partie vnhurte. This wonder, with the other, caused sylence amonges theym that entended to mayntayne this foresayd quarell, so ỹ Dunstanne had all his wyll.

Miraculũ.

Punicio.

Fol. C.xviii.

Thus passynge the tyme of the reygne of Edwarde the kynge, he came vpon a season from huntynge in the forest or wodde, after some wryters, nere to ỹ castell of Corfe in ỹ west countre, where he, losyng his cõpany & seruauntes, resorted vnto the castell beforesayd, where at that tyme his moder, with her sone Egelredus, kepte her howsholde. Whan the quene was warned of his cõmynge, anone she called to a seruaunt of hers which she moche trusted, and tolde to hym all her counsayll, shewynge to hym ferther howe he shuld behaue hym in accomplysshynge of her wyl and mynde. And that done she went towarde the kynge, and receyued hym with al outwarde gladnes, and desyred hym to tary with her that night; but he in curteyse maner excused hymselfe, and for spede desyred to drynke vpon his horse syttynge, the whiche was shortly broughte.

And whyle the cup was at his mouthe, the seruaunt, before of the quene enfourmed, strake hym to the herte w̃ a swerde, or a longe dagger sharpe on bothe sydes: after whiche stroke by the kynge receyued, he toke the horse with ỹ spores, and ranne towarde the place that he was cõmen fro, or ellys suche waye as he supposed to mete of his company; but he bled so sore that for fayntnes he fyll from his horse, his one fote beynge faste in the styroppe, by reason wherof he was drawen of the horse ouer wayes and feldes, tyll he came to a place named than Corysgate, where he was founden deed; and for the maner of his deth was vnknowen, and also he for kynge nat knowen, was buryed vnworthely at ỹ towne of Wareham, and there rested by the terme of. iii. yeres after: in which tyme and season God shewed for hym dyuers myracles, as syght to the blynde, helth to the syke, & herynge to the defe, with dyuers other whiche I ouer passe.

Treason or murder.

Wherof herynge, his stepmoder began to take repentaũce, and entended to vysyte hym by waye of pylgrymage; but how, or for what cause she entended inwardly, I can nat saye: but the horse or beste ỹ she rode vpon might nat nygh the place by a certayne space, for

[1] shulde not. [2] "holy," *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

betynge or any other thynge ỹ to hym myght be done by mā; but after this by her meanes he was trāslated from thens to Septonne that nowe is called Shaftesbury, and there buryed with great honoure. But syne that tyme, parte of his body was translated to the abbey of Leof, besyde Hereforde, in the egge of Walys, & some parte therof to Abyndonne; and it is reported ỹ[1] at Shaftisbury remayne his lunges, [and been shewed][2] in the place that is called Edwardysstowe.

Satisfaccio. For the murder of ỹ blyssed man, it is sayd, as before is shewed in the story of Edgar, that his stepmoder founded. ii. monasteryes of women, that one at Ambrysbury, & that other at Warwell: in the whiche place of Warwell, in her latter dayes, she, refusynge the pompe of the worlde, helde there a solytary and strayte lyfe, and ended her lyfe with great penaunce and repentaūce, and was there buryed whan she dyed. Thus, as ye haue harde, was this vertuous yonge kynge Edwarde martyred,[3] whan he had reygned, after moost wryters. iiii. yeres, leuynge none issue; wherfore the rule of the lande fyll to Egelredus his brother.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxvii.

[Li. 6. ca. 13.] EGelredus, the sone of Edgare and of Elfrida or Estrylde his last wyfe, began his reygne ouer England in the yere of our Lorde. ix.C.lxxxi., and the. xxvi. yere of Lothayr than kyng of Fraunce. This is named of some wryters Etheldredus, & in ỹ Englysshe Cronycle Eldrede: in whose begynnynge the grounde waxed bareyne, and all myseryes before bodyd by thapperynge of the blasynge starre, in ỹ dayes of Edwarde [the Marter][2] nowe began to take place, and encreace vpon the erthe. This, as the other of his progenytours, was crowned kynge at Kyngstone, of ỹ holy[4] archebysshop Dunstanne, and of Oswalde, archebysshop of Yorke. To whom, as it is redde in the lyfe of seynt Dunstanne, amonges his prophecyes, that, in the day of his coronacion, he shulde saye vnto the kynge, "For thou comest to this kyngdome by the deth of thy brother, in whose deth, Englysshe men conspyred with thy wykked moder; they shall nat be without blode shedynge and swerde, tyll there come people of vnknowen tunge, and brynge theym into thraldome, and this trespas shall nat be clensed wout longe vengeaūce." Of this Egelredus, wryters agreen that he was goodly of shappe and of visage, but that was mynged with lechery and crueltie. It is also redde, that whan holy[4] Dūstanne shuld cristen hym, as he helde hym ouer the fonte, he felyd the holy lyker with the fruyte of his wombe.[4] Wherfore holy[4] Dunstanne swore by God and by his moder, "This shalbe vnkynde to God and his churche:" whiche fayled nat in his forth goynge; for he was vngracyous in his begynnynge, wretched in the myddell of his lyf, & hateful to men in ỹ ende therof.

In the seconde yere of his reygne, a clowde was seen in Englande, the which apered halfe lyke blode, & the other halfe lyke fyre, and chaunged after into sundry colours, and disapered at ỹ laste. In the thirde yere of his reygne, the Danys aryued in sundry places of his lande, as in the Ile of Thanet, besyde Kent, in Cornewall and Sussex; and dyd in those costes moche harme. And after, some of them came to London, but there they were put of: howe be it, that they destroyed a great parte of Chestershyre.

And, in the ende of the same yere, a grete parte of the cytie of London was wasted with fyre; but howe it began myne auctour myndeth nat. But ye shal vnderstande that, at this day, the cytie of London had moste howsynge and buyldynge from Ludgate towarde Westmester; and lytell or none where the chefe or herte of ỹ cytie is nowe, except, in dyuers places, was howsynge, but they stode wout ordre; so ỹ many townes & cyties, as Caunterbury, Yorke, and other dyuers in Englāde passed London in buyldynge at those dayes, as I haue seen or knowen by an olde boke sometyme in ỹ Guyldehall of London, named Domys daye: but after the conquest it encreaced, and shortly after passed and excelled all the other.

[1] this. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] murdred. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] he fylled therein. edit. 1542. 1559.

Aboute

Aboute the. viii. yere of this kynges reygne, the kynge maryed erle Egbertus doughter named Ethelgina, or Elgina; of the whiche, in processe of tyme, he receyued a sone named Edmunde, whiche after was surnamed Ironsyde, and. ii. other sõnes named Edwynne and Ethilstanne, and a doughter named Edgina. In this pastyme dyed seynt[1] Ethilwalde, bysshop of Wynchester. He was borne in Wynchester, and norysshed vader holy[1] Dunstanne at Glastynbury, and there shorne monke, and after was chosen abbot of Abyndon, in the tyme of the reygne of kynge Edrede: and, in ŷ tyme of Edgare, he was sacrede bysshop of Wȳchester, where he made an abbey of nũnes, [& trãslated seȳt Swythynes body out of the erth.][1] After which sayd Ethelwalde, holy[1] Alphegus, abbot than of Bathe, was sacrede bysshop of Wynchester; ŷ which after was archebysshop of Caũterbury, & martyred hastely of ŷ cruell Danys[2], as after shalbe shewed.

Aboute the. ix. yere of Egelredus, for stryfe that was attwene the bysshop of Rochester and hym, he with his knyghtes beseged the sayd cytie. Wherof, holy[1] Dunstanne sent to the kynge, amonestynge[3] hym that he shulde refrayne hym of that crueltie, and suffre the bysshop & his cytie in peace, [oonlesse that he offended seynt Andrewe, patronne of that cytie;][1] but this message mylded nothyng the kynges courage. Than this blessyd[1] man sent to hym. C. li. in golde, wyllynge hym to refrayne of that outrage; the whiche he receyued, and brake ŷ siege. [Then blessyd[1] Dunstane sent this message to the kynge: "For thou haste preferred golde before God, and syluer before the apostle, and couetyse before me, ryght so euyll happes shall come vnto the, but nat whyle I am in lyfe." But the kyng toke lytell regarde to those wordes, but cõtynued in his insolent and cursed dede.][1] *Fol. C. xix.*

Aboute the. xi. yere of his reygne dyed that blessyd[1] archebysshop Dunstanne, of whom Ranulfe, in the. xiii. Chapitre of his. vi. Booke of Polycronycon, maketh rehersall of dyuers of his vertues and myracles, the whiche I passe ouer, and the rather, bycause his legende or lyfe is manyfest. Siricus was archebysshop after hym, and after hym Wulricus, and after Wulricus, blessyd[1] Elphegus was archebysshop of ŷ see.

It was nat longe after the deth of holy[1] Dunstanne but that the Danys perced Englande in many and sundry places of the lande, in suche wyse, that the kynge was to seke to which coste he shulde go first, to withstande his enemyes, and in conclusion, in auoydyng of more harme, was compelled to appease theim with great sũmes of money; but whan that money was spente, they fyll to newe robbynge of the people. Danorum persecutio.

Thanne the kyng graunted more money; but for all that, the Danys robbed and spoyled the countre of Northumberlande, and besieged London at the laste; and for augmentacyon of the kynges sorowe, Elfricus, that than was mayster or admyrall of the kynges nauy, fled as a false traytour, and after that reconsyled, fled the seconde tyme to the Danys. Wherfore ŷ kynge, in wreche of the fader, cõmaunded the ienne of his sone Algarus to be plucked or done out of his hede.

But whyle this persecucion thus contynued, by meanes of the holy[1] bysshop of Wynchester, Elphegus, a peas was concluded for a tyme, atwene the kyng and the Danys; and the prynce or chief capitayne of theym, named Aulafe, so[4] exorted by ŷ sayd holy[1] bysshop, that he became a Cristen man, to whom the kynge was godfader. So that after the sayd Aulafe retourned to his owne with[5] doynge of more harme; so that for a whyle the warre of Danys seased. But whyle that rested, the blody flyx, with a brennynge feuer, vexed the people thorugh the lande, that moche folke therof dyed. Contynuynge with[6] mysery the Danys agayne assayled the lande, and dyd in dyuers places great harme. Soo that for lacke of a good hede or gouernour, many thyges in the lande perysshed: for the lordes were at suche dissencyon that one ẅ that other, that whan they were assem-

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] and was cruellye slayne of the Danes. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] amonyessynge. [4] was so. [5] without. [6] whyche.

bled to speke or treate of peace attwene that one lorde and that other, and if any good thyng were deuysed for the hurte of theyr enemyes, anone ỹ Danys were warned therof by some of ỹ same cõsayll, wherof were suspected Elfricus & Edricus. And to this sorowe was ioyned hunger and penury amonges the comons, that eueryche of theym was constrayned to plucke & stele from other. So that, what by the pyllage of the Danys, and by inwarde theuys & brybours, this lande was brought in great mysery and myschefe.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxviii.

EGelredus, than wrapped in mysery, laft nat to gader of his subiectes what he myght as well by vnlawfull meanes as otherwyse. For, as sayth Ranulphe, myne auctour, he wolde, for fayned or smal causes, diserit men of their possessyons, & after cause men to redeme their owne for great sũmes of money. And ouer that, he walowed in lechery, giuynge hym to all vicious and inconuenyent[1] lyfe of his body; by which vngracious meanc, he brought this lande in such ruyne, that what he myght nat helpe by strength, he warred
[Li. 6. ca. 13.] with money. So that, from the firste entre of the Danys, testifyeth[2] Polycronyca, in ỹ. xviii. Chaptre of his. vi. Boke, and also Guydo, w̃ other auctours, that from the first trybute of. x. M. li. he brought it at the laste, in processe of. v. or. vi. yeres, to. xl. M. li. the which yerely, duringe his lyfe, and after, to the commynge of seynt Edwarde, was leuyed of his subiectes, and named, for the contynuaunce therof, Dane Gelt; whiche is, or was
[Li. 6. ca. 14.] to meane money payde to ỹ Danys, or shortly, Dane money. In this tyme, as it were about the. xv. yere of his reigne, dyed seynt[3] Oswalde, the archebysshop of Caũterbury; and soone after dyed Ethelgina ỹ quene, [and the body of seynt Cuthbert was translated from Haly Ilande to Doreham, in the whiche ile he helde an ankers lyfe, as it is before shewed, in the story of Cadwalader.][3]

[Li. 6. ca. 15.] Thus contynuynge in this lande, vnder the greuous tribute of the Danys, and also by susteynynge of many vylanyes and iniuries by the Englysshemen of the sayd Danys, as after somdele shall apere, this Egelredus, by counsayll of his famylyers, aboute ỹ. xxi. yere of his reygne, maryed Emma, the doughter of Richarde, duke of Normandy, before mynded in the story of Lowys the. v. and Lothayr his sone, kynges of Fraunce. The whiche Richarde was the. iii. duke of Normandy, and the firste of that name, and also was surnamed Richarde without fere, or the hardy, as more of hym shalbe shewed in ỹ story of the. vi. Lowys, kynge of Fraunce.

By reason of maryinge of this Emma, whiche, in the Frenshe Cronycle, is named the flower of Normandy, this Egelredus was greatly enhaunced in his owne mynde; by presumpcion wherof, he sent into al gode burghes, cyties, and townes of his lande, secrete and strayte cõmyssions, chargynge the rulers, that they, vpon a certayne day, that is to say, vpon the daye of seynt Bryce, at an houre assygned, in euery place of his lande, the Danys shulde be sodeynly slayne. And so it was doon, and as ỹ cõmon fame telleth, this murder began for that coste[4], at a lytell towne in Hartefordeshyre, within. xxiiii. myles of London, called Welewynne or Welwynne, for the whiche dede, it toke firste that name. As who wolde wene that wele[5] of the countre was there firste wonne. But who that well consydereth the sequell of this story, shall fynde lytell wynnynge or weale ensuyng of this dede.

But or I procede further, here I wyll touche some what of the pryde and abusyon of the Danys, that they exercysed in Englande in some parte therof, as I haue seen in an olde cronycle, wherof the auctour is vnknowen. There it is shewed that the Danys, by strengthe, caused the husbande men to ere & sowe the lande, and do all other vyle laboure that belonged to husbandry; & ỹ Dane helde his wyfe at his pleasure, w̃ doughter and

[1] incontynent. [2] as testifyeth. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [4] "for that coste" *omitted.*
[5] the wele,

seruaunt;

seruaunt; and whan the husbandmā came home, he shuld scantly haue of his owne, as alowys or seruaūt had[1]: so that the Dane had all his cōmaundement, and ete and dranke his fyll of the best, whan ỹ owner had scantly his fyll of the worst. And ouer that, the comon people were so of them oppressed, ỹ for fere & drede, they called them, in euery such house as they had rule of, lord Dane.

But in processe of tyme the Danys[2] were voyded ỹ lande. This worde lorde Dane was, in dyrision and despyte of the Danys, tourned by the Englysshemen into a name of opprobrie, and called Lurdayn, whiche, to our dayes, is nat forgoten; but whan one Englisshe man woll rebuke an other, he woll, for the more rebuke, call hym Lurdayn. Nota. Fol. C.xx.

Than to retourne to our firste matyer, truthe it is, that whanne the Danys were thus murdred thorugh Englande, tydynges therof sprange into Denmarke, whiche kyndeled in theym suche a fury, that the kynge therof, named Swanus, assembled shortly a great host and nauy of Danys, and, in short processe after, landed in Cornewayll; and by treason of a Norman, named Hugh, by[3] fauour of ỹ quene Emma, was made erle of Deuenshyre, the sayd Swanus toke Exetour, and after bette downe the walles.

Than he entrede further into the lande. In whiche season the kynge sent vnto Edricus, chargynge hym to assemble the West Saxons, and to withstande ỹ further entre of the Danys; the which, accordynge to his cōmyssion, assembled the West Saxons, and made good countenaunce to withstande the sayd enemyes. But whan the hostes shulde ioyne, were it for fere or for treason, he fayned hym syke, and fled from his people. The whiche, for lacke of an hede, were fayne to gyue backe to their hurte, and to their enemyes great auauntage and cōforte.

Wherfore ỹ Danys resorted than to Wyltonne and Shyrbornne, and anone spoyled both those townes, and there refresshed theym. But for Swanus had wyttynge that the kynge was cōmynge towarde hym with the power of his lande, he therfore departed thens, and retourned with great pyllage to his shyppes, and sayled aboute the lande, and lastly landed in Norfolke; where he, wastyng and spoylynge the countre, came, in processe, vnto the cytie of Norwyche, & robbed & spoyled it, and after yode to Thetforde, and dyd lykewyse to that towne, and fyred it, and destroyed the countre nere there aboute.

But soone after, a noble man of that countre, called duke Vskatell, mette with the hoost of Danys, and gaue vnto theym an harde and sharpe batayl, & slewe many of the enemyes, and put them backe. For this, and for hunger that than assayled this lande, Swanus retourned efte vnto his shyppes, and departed agayne into Denmarke, and taryed there all the wynter folowynge, in whiche season he made great prouysion to reenter the lande of Englande.

¶ Capitulum. C.lxxxxix.

ABoute the. xxvi[4]. yere of the reygne of Egelredus, the forenamed Swanus, with a stronge army, landed at Sandwyche, and spoyled all the countre nere vnto the see syde, & rested hym there tyll he harde of an armye cōmynge agayne hym, and whan he was ware therof, he retourned to his shyppes agayne, and herynge the kynge was farre westwarde, he landed in Sussex, and spoyled it wonder sore. And whan he there was warned of the cōmynge of a batayll of Englysshemen, anone he toke shyppynge agayne: so that whan the Englysshemen wende to haue met with theym in one coste, than wolde they sodaynly lande in a nother. And whan the kynge prouyded to mete with theym vpon the see, other they wolde fayne to flee, or ellys they shuld, w̄ gyftes, blynde ỹ admyral of ỹ kynges nauy. [Li. 6. ca. 15.]

By whiche subtylytie and crafty meanes, they weryed and tyred the hoost of Englysshemen; & where euer they went, they slewe, brent, and robbed without compassion and pyte. The kynge than beynge at Shrewesbury, & herynge of the great sleyght & cruelte of

[1] as seruaunts had. [2] after the Danys. [3] whyche by. [4] xxv. edit, 1559.

the Danys, called his coũsayl to rede what were best to be done for ỹ defence of his enemyes; where it was concluded, that the kynge, to haue peace with ỹ Danys, shuld paye vnto theym. xxx. M. li. But whyle *this* was in doynge, the Danys destroyed a great parte of Baroke or Barkshyre.

Whanne this peace was thus made, Swanus with his company retourned into Denmark, and that yere folowynge, the kynge made Edricus, forenamed, duke of Mercia. This Edricus was of lowe byrth, ryche of tunge, falce, and subtyll of wytte, softe and eloquent of speche, vntrusty and false of thought and promyse, as of hym some dele before is shewed, and after more shall apere. In the. xxvii. yere of Egelredus, a prynce of Danys, named Turkyllus, landed in Kent, the which so greuously warred in that countre, that the Kentysshmen were fayne to make theyr peace, and so departed.

And yet the persecucyon of Danys seaced nat: for in one countre of Englande or other, they euer in wylys robbed and pylled the Englysshmen; so ỹ a longe the coste[1], from the North parte of Englande vnto the Ile of Wyghte, was by theym destroyed or hugely sette a backe. And whan the kynge entended to make prouysion for to withstãde theym, euer Edricus wolde coũsayll hym to ỹ contrary, shewyng hym that he shulde spende his treasour, and trauayle his people in vayne. By meane wherof, ỹ Danys entred. l. myles wiu ỹ lande, & brent & robbed, by dyuers tymes, many vylages and townes, so that they encreased & waxed passyng ryche, and the Englysshe men nedy, bare & poore. Thus contynuynge this misery, Swanus, or, after ỹ Englysshe, Swayne, than beynge in Denmarke, and herynge of the encreace of his people within Englande, repented hym of his former couenauntes, and thought that the hole domynyon of Englande shulde belonge to hym of ryght: for the whiche he prepayred his armye and nauy in moost defensyble wyse, and spede hym in to Englande, & so into the ryuer of Humbre, and landed in Nortumberlande, where the erle or ruler of that coũtre, with all the rulers of the same, sware feaute vnto the sayd Swanus, and promysed to kepe that countre vnto his vse. And whan he had done his wyll in that coste, he entred agaynne the water, and by the ryuer of Trent, he passed to Gaynysburghe, and so by North Watlyngstrete, & subdued the inhabytaũtes of that coũtre, & forced theym to gyue vnto hym pledges, which pledges, w also his nauy, he betoke vnto Canutus, his sone, whyle he went ferther into the lande; and that done, he with his people kept on his iourney tyll he came into Mercia, kyllynge and sleynge the men of that prouynce, and reserued the wymen to vnclene lyuynge, aswell the relygyous as other; and toke, by strength, Wynchester and Oxenforde, and dyd in theym what he lyked. And after he had thus passed ỹ lande, he drewe the nexte waye towarde London; but in passynge the ryuer of Thamys, he loste some parte of his people, other for lacke of a brydge, or for ieopardynge theyr passage vnauysely: and so, in processe, he came vnto London, where, at that tyme, kynge Egelredus was. Wherfore Swanus lafte the cytie, and drewe into Kent, and so towarde Caunterbury without lette, weldynge ỹ countre at his wyll, and lastly beseged that cytie; the which manfully defended theyr enemyes, by the space of. xx. dayes, which syege began vpon the daye of seynt Mathewe, in the moneth of Septembre, & endured as is abouesayd, & than taken by ỹ treason of a dekyn, named Almaricus, ỹ which, before tyme, blessid[2] Elphegus, than archebysshop of that see, had preserued from deth. Than the Danys fyred ỹ cytie, whan they before had spoyled it, and toke the archebysshop, & put hym in streyte pryson, and the monkes of seynt Augustynes abbey they tythed, that is to meane, they slewe. ix. by cruell turment, and ỹ tenth they kepte a lyue; the whiche after was solde and set to all seruyle labour.e. And as wytnesseth Antonius[3], or Vincent Historyall, they slewe and brought in seruage ouer the sũme of. ix. C. persones of relygion, and[4] slewe of men, women and children beyonde the nombre of. viii. M. as, with moche more crueltie, it is shewed, in the. vii. Chapitre of ỹ xvi. title of the werke of the sayd Antonius[3]: and fynally, for this blessyd

[Ll 6. ca. 16.]

Fol. C. xxii.

Note,

[1] so that all the country alonge the coste. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Antoninus. [4] they.

man

man' Elphegus wolde nat condiscende to gyue vnto theym, as sayth Policronica, iii. M. li. after they had kept hym in harde pryson by the space of. vii. monethes, vpon an Ester euen, they, after many vylanyes to hym doone, at Grenewyche, within. iii. myles of London, they stoned hym to deth, where he laye in ŷ felde, vnburyed a certayne of tyme, and after caryed to London, and buryed reuerently in the churche of seynt Paule: but afterwarde, in ŷ tyme of Canutus, he was taken vp agayne & caryed to his owne churche. Of this blyssed[1] Elphegus, Antonius[2], and also Policronicon, shewen many vertues & miracles, the whiche I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme. Nota de morte Alphegi Archiepiscopi Cantuariensis.

¶ Capitulum. CC.

IN this pastyme, kyng Egelredus, ferynge the ende of this persecucion, sent Emma, the quene, with her. ii. sonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto Richarde, the seconde of that name, than fourth duke of Normandy, whiche was brother vnto the sayd Emma, with whom also he sent the bysshop of London.

Aboute the. xxxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egelredus, the Danys, whan they had wonne a great parte of ŷ countre of West Saxon, they returned agayne towarde London, wherof herynge, the Londoners sent vnto theym certayne gyftes and pledges. In all this season myn auctor maketh no mynde that euer the kyng gaue vnto ŷ Danys any notable batayl; but kept hym in holdes or places for his owne sauegarde, and lytel frute or profyte for[4] his lande.

At the last he was chaced vnto the Ile of Wyghte, where with a secret company held[5] hym a great parte of the wynter, and fynally, without catall or comforte, sayled ouer to his wyfe into Normandy, and there helde hym a certayne of tyme.

Whan Swanus was ascertayned of the departynge of Egelredus out of the lande, he was enflamed with excedynge pryde, so that he arered excedynge inposicions of the people, & greued theym wonderfully, and amonges other of his tyrānyes, he asked a great sūme of money of seynt Edmundes landes, whiche the rulers denayed; for somoche as they claymed to be free of all kynges trybute. For this he entred the terytory of seynt Edmunde, and wasted and spoyled the countree; and ouer that, despysed that holy martyr with manassyng of the place of his sepulture. Wherfore the men of that countree, feryng this tyraunt, gaue theym to fastyng and prayer: so that shortly after he was stycked in an euenynge, amonges his knyghtes, with the swerde of seynt Edmunde, in the towne of Thetforde, as sayth Guydo; but after Policronicon and other, in the towne of Gaynesborough, where he dyed, with yellynge and cryinge, the thirde daye after. Vindicta diuina.

In fere wherof, Canutus, his son, after that he was kyng, closed in the lande of that holy martyr with a depe dyche, and graunted to the inhabytauntes therof great fredam, and quyt theym of al kyngly[6] taske or tribute; and after buylded a churche ouer the place of his sepulture, and ordeyned there an house of monkes, and endued them with fayre possessions; and after it was vsed that kynges of Englande, whanne they were crowned, sente, for an offerynge, their crownes vnto seynt Edmūdes shryne, and redemed theym afterwardes with a condygne pryce. Whan Egelredus had wryttynge of the deth of [Li. 6. ca. 27.] Swanus, by procuremēt of his frendes, he made meanes to retourne to his owne, by whose menys he was sent for, with condycion that he shuld refourme his olde condicions: and for perfourmaūce of the same, he sent his sone Edwarde into Englande before hym, and in ŷ [illegible] folowynge the kynge canne hym selfe, & with his people sped hym towarde Lynde[illegible]cre Canutus was at that tyme resseaunt, nat prouyded of the kynges so hasty cōmyng.

Wherfore he beyng nat purueyed to withstande the kynge, fledde into Sandewyche in Kent; and for he there proued suche persones as before tyme his fader & he had taken pledges

[1] bysshop. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Antoninus. [4] to. [5] he held. [6] knightlie. edit. 1542. 1559.

of, and fande theim nat perseuerañt in theyr premysses[1], he made to be cut of all the noses and handes of the sayd Englisshe people, and sayled into Denmarke whan he had doe, and retourned the next yere with a great nauy, and sayled aboute the lande, and toke prayes in the South countre. Wherof the kynges eldest sone, named Edmunde, made prouysyon, with the ayde of Edricus, to go agayne hym; but whan he shulde haue mette with Edricus at a place assygned, and his hoost, he was of hym disceyued, wherfore he was compelled to gyue place to his enemyes; and as it was after knowen, the said Edricus had promysed his fauoure and ayde vnto the sayd Canutus.

By reason wherof, Canutus entred the coũtre of West Saxon, and forsed theym to swere to hym feauty, and to gyue vnto hym pledges; & other countrees adioynynge dyd the same.

In this season, Egelredus, beynge at London, was taken with a greuous sykenesse and dyed, and was there buried in the churche of seynt Paule, where at this daye, in North ile, behynde ŷ quere, apperith, in ŷ walle, a token of his sepulture, whiche reygned, or as saith Polycronicon and other, beseged England by the terme of. xxxvi. yeres full, leuynge after hym a sone, named Edmunde Irnsyde, ouer Alphrede and Edward sõnes of Emma.

¶ Capitulum. CC.i.

Francie. LOwys, the. vi. of that name, and sone of Lothayr, began his reygne ouer Fraũce, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. ix. C. lxxxvi. and the. v. yere of Egelredus, than kynge of Englande, of the which, other for his youth, or for the shortnesse of his reygne, lytell of his dedes is laft in memory; excepte that the Frenshe boke wytnessyth, that for he had none issue, & Hugh Capet, before, in the story of Lothayr, mynded, was his famulyer and chief counceler, he shulde therfore ordeyne and admytte the sayd Hugh for his heyre. But more verely, as before is touched in the aboue named story, and in ŷ ende therof, this Hugh was strõge & myghty, and in the latter dayes of Lothair coueted ŷ rule of ŷ lande. Wherfore, after the deth of this Lowys, for so moche as he lafte no childe after hym, he than hauynge the chief rule of Fraunce, by strengthe and power, made hym selfe kynge.

But for I promysed, in the story of Egelredus, somwhat to shewe of Richarde, the firste of that name, and thirde duke of Normandy, I shall somdele length this story,

Fol. C.xxii. with the story of ŷ sayd Richarde.

This Richarde, as afferme all wryters, was named Richarde without fere, and for this cause[2], as testyfieth the Frenshe boke, he vsed moche to byd his bedys for all Cristen soules. Vpon a nyghte, whan he had longe watched, he entred a churche, where stode

Fabula. a corps vnburyed, and no man watchynge it, and whyle he sayd his orysons for that soule and other, he layed his gloues vpon a deske by hym, and, whan he had ended his deuocions, he went out of the churche forgettynge his gloues behynde; but shortly after he remembred hym of theym, & retourned towarde the churche, for to fetche his sayd glouys. Whan he came at ŷ churche doore, he foũde ŷ corps there standynge with his armys sprade abrode, and makynge great noyse and crye; wherfore the duke made the sygne of ŷ crosse in his forhede, and coniured the corps that he shuld reste; but all was in vayne, wherof ŷ duke drewe his swerde & strake at the corps, and, to his thynkynge, parted hym in. ii. peces; and that done, entred the churche, fet his glouys, and so departed. [redacted] for this

Narracio. chaunce, he ordeyned after, thorough his realme, that a corps shuld be wate[redacted] firste nyght or lenger, as men had deuocion; whiche gyse was somtyme vsed in Eng[redacted]de, and begon of the Normans, as men may coniecture, after they had first conquered this lande. Policronicon sheweth, in the. vii. Chapitre of his. vi. boke, that[3] a monke of the howse of

[1] promysses. [2] this cause that foloweth. edit. 1533. 1542. [3] that thys duke Rycharde dremed on a nyght, that, &c.

seynt

seynt Audoenus, in Roan, as he went towarde his lemman by nyght, fyll besyde a brydge, & was drowned, whose soule after was in stryfe atwene an angell and a fende; the which, after longe stryfe, condescended to put the iugement in duke Richarde. Than the duke gaue sentence, that the soule shulde be restored agayne to the body, and then the body to be set vpon the brydge that before he was fallen fro; and if he than went to his lemman, he shulde be the feendes, and if nat he shulde than be saued. And whan this sentence was put in execucyon, the mōke fled vnto the churche therby. Vpon the morne whan the duke awoke, and called this vysyon to his memory, to knowe the certaynte therof, he went vnto the sayd churche, and fande the monke there, his clothes yet wete; and after went to the abbot of that place, and tolde to hym al this dede, aduertysyng hym to take better ouer syght of his flocke.

To thyse narracions the herers may gyue credence as them lyketh; for they be nother in the pystle nor yet in ŷ gospell. Albe it, that Antonius*, archebysshop of Florence, whan he reherseth any lyke narracions, whiche he thynketh somwhat doutefull, he ioyneth thyse wordes, and sayth "pium est Credere." The thirde narracyon is tolde of this duke, whiche, by all presumpcyon, was regestred of some women scribe. This duke, with Gūnore his wyfe, lyued longe whyle a dishonest lyfe, and contrary to the lawys of the churche, wherof his people murmured sore: so that at length, by the holsome doctrine of some of his clerkes or spirituell men, he maryed her to his lawfull wyfe. The firste nyght after the weddynge, were it in game or otherwyse, the duchesse tourned her buttocke in the dukes lappe, as she before tyme had neuer done. Whan the duke frayned the cause of her soo doynge: "For nowe," sayd she, "maye I do what me lyketh, where before I myght doo but what you lyked." Vpon this Gūnore he gate, besyde other childer, Emma, that was the wyfe of Egelredus, as before ye haue harde, and dyed, whan he had ruled Normandy by the terme of. lii. yeres.

Narracio. Mulierum audacie.

Than to retourne to the. vi. Lowys, kynge of Fraunce, from whome we haue made a longe digression; as wytnesseth Maister Gagwyn, he dyed in the yere of our Lord. ix. C.lxxxix. whan he had reygned. iii.[2] yeres, and was buryed at Compaynne. Ye shall vnderstande, that this Lowys was the laste kynge of the blode of Pepyn; and for I promysed before to shewe the discent of the sayd Pepyn, to the ende ŷ ye may ŷ better know this story, and also to knowe the kynges of Fraunce from the kynges of Germany, which both discended of this Pepyn, hereafter I shall more clerely sette it out in braunches. But firste I wolle expresse the kynges of Fraunce, as they reyned lynyally, and ioyne to eyther of theym the terme that he reygned; that therby it may appere how longe this blode contynued in the howse of Fraunce, or it were enpeched by Hughe Capet, as after apperyth.

PEPYN.

The yeres.

Pepyn	xviii·
Charlys	xlvii·
Lowys firste	xxvi·
Charlys ballyd	xxxvii·
Lowys balbus	ii·
Lowys and Charlys	v·
Lowys the Fourth	viii·
Eudo	ix·
Charlys the symple	xvii·

* Antoninus. [2] iiij. yeres. edit. 1542. 1559.

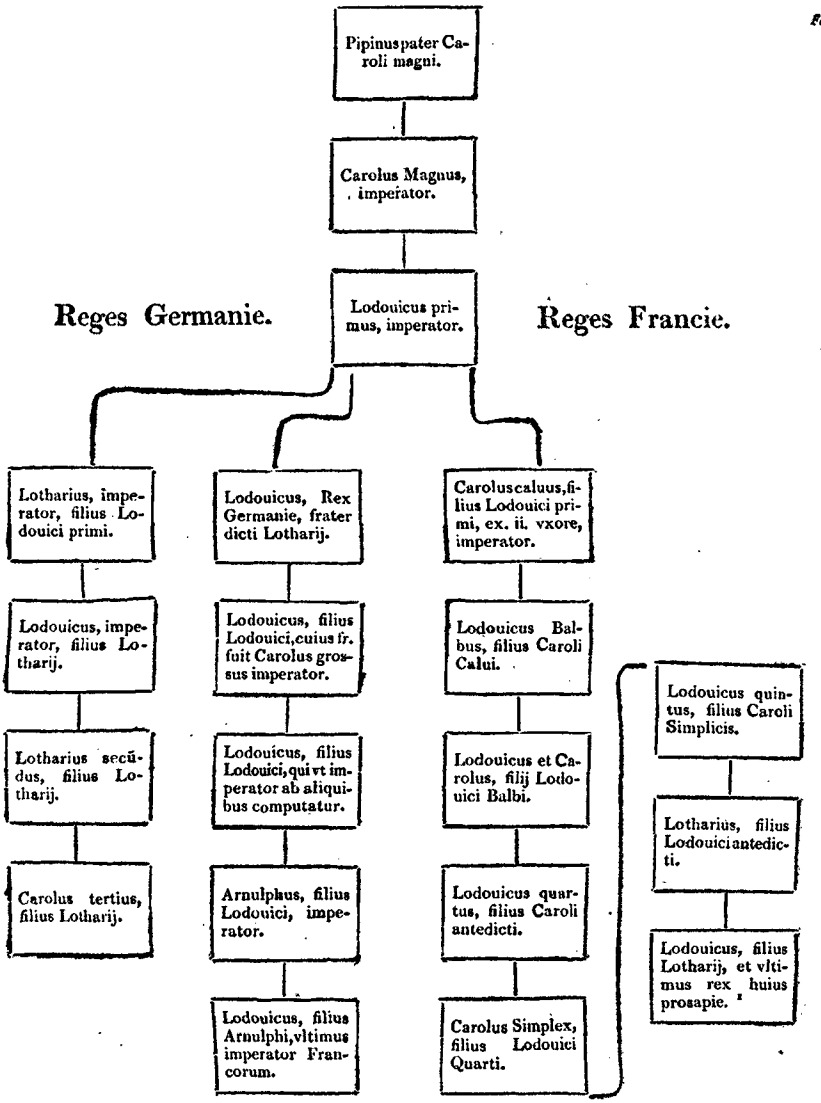
Yeres.

Radulphus	xii.
Lowys vnus[1]	xxi.
Lotharius	xxx.
Lowys the sixte	iii[2].

OF the which kynges. ii. were nat of that blode, as Eudo and Radulphus, but admytted of the barony of Fraunce to rule the lande, tyll. ii. of that progeny, that is to meane, Charlys the Symple & Lowys the. v. were comen to theyr lawfull age. So that, from the firste yere of Pepyn, whiche began his reygne in the yere of grace. DCC. l. to the first yere of Hughe Capet, that began his reygne in the yere of our Lord God. ix. C.lxxxix. expyred or passed. CC.xxxix. yeres.

[1] [quintus?] [2] iiij. edit. 1559.

Fol. C.xxiiii


Pipinus pater Caroli magni.
Carolus Magnus, imperator.
Reges Germanie.
Lodouicus primus, imperator.
Reges Francie.
Lotharius, imperator, filius Lodouici primi.
Lodouicus, Rex Germanie, frater dicti Lotharij.
Caroluscaluus, filius Lodouici primi, ex. ii. vxore, imperator.
Lodouicus, imperator, filius Lotharij.
Lodouicus, filius Lodouici, cuius fr. fuit Carolus grossus imperator.
Lodouicus Balbus, filius Caroli Calui.
Lodouicus quintus, filius Caroli Simplicis.
Lotharius secũdus, filius Lotharij.
Lodouicus, filius Lodouici, qui vt imperator ab aliquibus computatur.
Lodouicus et Carolus, filij Lodouici Balbi.
Lotharius, filius Lodouici antedicti.
Carolus tertius, filius Lotharij.
Arnulphus, filius Lodouici, imperator.
Lodouicus quartus, filius Caroli antedicti.
Lodouicus, filius Lotharij, et vltimus rex huius prosapie. [1]
Lodouicus, filius Arnulphi, vltimus imperator Francorum.
Carolus Simplex, filius Lodouici Quarti.

[1] *In the later editions, this Pedigree is given in English.*

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. CC.ii.

HVgh, the sone of Robert ỹ Tyraunt, descended of Hughe le Graunde, began to take the rule, or to vsurpe the crowne of Fraũce, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C. lxxxix, and ỹ. viii. yere of Egelredus, thanne kynge of Englande. This, as wytnesseth ỹ Frenshe Cronycle, was erle of Parys, [and marshal of Fraunce;][1] & as saith Antonino[2], he maryed one of ỹ doughters of Edwarde the elder. This also was named Capet, for so moche as, in his youthe, he vsed in game to laye a syde his felowes hoodes. In whose begynnynge, Charles, that was the brother to Lothayr, & vncle vnto Lowys the. vi., laste kynge, herynge of the deth of his neuew Lowys without issue, as nexte heyre, with ayde of some lordes of Fraunce, and also of Loreyñ, the whiche than he was lorde of, gadered an army, and entrede Fraũce, and than came to the cytie of Laoñ, within whiche cytie, he, with his wyfe & people, by the treason of the bysshop of the same cytie, was taken, and delyuered with his wyfe and childer into the handes of his enemyes,* the whiche sent them to Orleaunce, there sauely to be kepte.

Than this Hugh was crowned in the cytie of Rayns, and welded the lande with more suerte. Howe be it the erle of Flaũdres, named Arnulphus, or Arnolde, before spoken of, wolde nat be vnder his obedyence.

Wherfore this Hugh assembled his knyghtes, and by his strength toke from hym the countrey of Artoys, with many stronge holdes and castelles: and lastly forced ỹ sayde Arnolde to flee into Normandy, to aske ayde of Richarde, the firste of that name, before spoken of in the story of the. vi. Lowys.

By whose meanes, after some wryters, William Longa Spata, fader to the sayde duke Richarde, was slayne; but that natwithstandynge, by frendshyp of the sayde duke Richarde, this Arnolde was reconsyled vnto the kynge, and contynued after as his subiecte.

Chaunge of fortune.

In the cytie of Rayns was archebysshop at this daye, a noble prelat, named Arnolde, sone of bast of Lothayr, and neuewe to Charles, than prysoner, as before is touched; the whiche, for malyce that the kyng bare vnto hym for cause of the forenamed Charles, called a coũsayll of the clergy of his lande, and layde agayne hym suche obieccions, that he, by theyr assent, put hym[3] from that benefyce, and sent hym to Orleaũce, there also to be kepte in pryson, and set[4] one Gylbert, or after the Frenshe Boke, Gerbres, a connynge man in phylozophy, & had before tyme ben tutor, or maister to Robert, sone of the sayd Hugh; but after. iii. yeres, pope[5] Iohñ, the. xvi. of that name, sent downe his maundement vnto Guyon, archebysshop of Sens, chargynge hym that he shuld remoue the sayd Gerbres, and restore the sayd Arnolde to his proper see: whiche was doone shortly after. And the sayde Gerbres was after this preferred by one of the Othons, emperour, vnto the Churche of Rauenne, and contynued there tyll the dethe of the. xvii. Iohñ, after whose deth he was electe pope of Rome[6], and was named the seconde Syluester, and lyued [as pope][7] iiii. yeres.

Than it foloweth in the story, whan this Hugh had reygned full. viii. yeres and more, he dyed in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C. lxxxxiii. and was buryed at seynt Dennys, leuynge after hym a sone, named Robert.

¶ Capitulum. CC.iii.

Fol. C.xxiii.

RObert, the sone of Hugh Capet, began his reygne in the yere of our Lord. ix. C. lxxxxviii., and ỹ. xvii. yere of Egelredus, than kyng of England. This was cũynge in many scyences, & a man of good maner & vertue; he made dyuers impnes[7], sequenses,

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Antoninus. [3] was putte. [4] in hys place. [5] the bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. * *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [7] Hymnes.

and

and respondes, as "O Iuda et Ilrrm," "O Constancia Martyrum," "Assit nobis scī spiritus gratia," or more congruely, "Scī spiritus assit nobis gratia," with dyuers other.

In the begynnynge of his reygne, whyle Bowcharde, erle of Meleoñ, was at the kynges courte, Galtier, or Walter, a knyght & seruaunt of the sayde Bowcharde, to whome the sayd Bowcharde had delyuered his castle of Meleoñ to kepe in his absence, for great gyftes the sayde Walter had delyuered the sayd castle vnto Eudo, erle of Carnotense; wherfore the kynge, at the request of the sayd Bowcharde, sent streyght cōmaundement vnto the sayd Eudo, chargynge hym in all goodly wyse to restore the sayd castle vnto Bowcharde, the whiche cōmaundement he vtterly refused to obey. For the whiche the kynge, beynge so amoued, sent for Richarde, ỹ seconde of that name, than. iiii. duke of Normandy, and with their both armyes besyeged the castell vpon euery parte, and at length wanne it, and toke the sayde Walter wiñ the same; whom the kynge, for his vntrouth, cōmaunded soone after to be hanged vpon a gybet, and the castell to be restored vnto the forenamed Bowcharde, and after retourned euery man to his owne.

In the tyme of the reygne of this Robert dyed Henry, than duke of Burgoyne, the whiche, for lacke of issue of his body, bequethed his dukedome vnto kyng Robert; but the Burgonyons withstode that legacy, and drewe to theym for an hede and capitayne Lawdry, erle of Neuers, and with hym helde by strength, or for a strength, the cytie of Anxerre.

Wherof herynge, kyng Robert sent for the foresayd duke of Normandy, and so to spede[1] theym towarde Burgoyne, and besieged the foresayd cytie; but at lengthe the cytie was yolden, and Lawdry put at the kynges grace. And that doon, the kynge with his hoost besieged another stronge cytie called Aualoñ, and, nat wout great dauñger, wan it also at lēgth, & after receyued the countree with dewe obeysaunce, and ordered it at his owne pleasure, and so retourned into Fraūce.

Barnarde[2], Erle of Sens, vsed great tyranny amonges the bysshoppes and mynystres of the Churche. Wherfore Leophricus, bysshop of that see, thorough the ayde & counsayll of Regnallde, bysshop of Parys, put out the sayde Arnolde, and delyuered the cytie vnto kynge Robert.

Butte the brother of the sayde Arnolde, with a certayne of his knyghtes, fledde to the castell, and it helde with strength; wherfore the kyng layde siege to the sayd castell, and at length wanne it, and toke the brother of Arnolde, named Fromonde, and sente hym to Orlyaunce, there to be prysoned, where he dyed shortly after. This Robert, as sayth the Frensshe Boke, buylded firste the castle of Mountfort: he foūded also dyuers monasteryes and temples, and at Orlyaunce, the temple of saynt Anyañ, at Stamps, a churche of oure lady, and dyuers other in dyuers places of his realme. And he endowed the churche of seynt Denys with many great lyberties, and hadde especyall deuocyon to seynt Ypolyte ouer all other seyntes.

It is radde of this kyng Robert, that vpon a season whan he had longe whyle lyen at the siege of a castel nere vnto Orlyaunce, and sawe it was defuse, to wynne by strength, [he, vpon the daye of saynt Anyan, yode vnto Orliaunce, and there, in the quere, bare a cope, and dyd helpe to synge the diuyne seruyce. And after, whan he was in his deuocyons in the masse, whyle whan the preest was at the consecracion, and sayd thryse "Agnus dei," the walles of the castell fyll without stroke of gunne or other engyne, and his enemyes submytted theym to his grace. Many vertues myght I showe more of this vertuous prynce, the whiche I passe ouer for lengthe of the tyme, and conclude thus: that][3] whan he had reygned, after moost accorde of wryters, and ruled his land nobely. xxx. yeres, he dyed, and was buryed in the howse of seynt Denys, leuynge after hym, of his firste wyfe, Constañce, a sone named Henry, and one other named Robert; and of his seconde wyfe. ii. sōnes, named Symonde and Almaryche; but it shuld seme by the se-

[1] And so sped. [2] Arnolde. [3] The edit. of 1542 and 1559 *merely say* "He founde the meanes to take the same by polycye."

quele

quele of the next story, that Constaunce shulde be the laste wyfe, and the other ỹ firste, and deuorced from hym for some cause, so that her childer shuld nat be legyttymat. Albeit the auctour of this maketh no mencyon.

Howe Edmunde Ironsyde and the Danys faught togyder.

¶ Capitulum. CC.iiii.

Anglia. [Li. 6. ca. 17.] EDmunde Ironsyde, ỹ sone of Egelredus, and also Canutus, the sone of Swanus, kyng of Denmarke, began to rule the Englysshemen in the yere of our Lorde. M. xvi., and the. xix. yere of Robert, thanne kynge of Fraunce. For the Londoners, with assystence of some of the lordes of Englande[1], but the more party of the lordes fauoured Canutus, and specyally the spyritualtie that, before tyme, had sworne feautie to his fader; and he, than beyng at Southamptoñ, swore to theym to be vnto theym a good and trewe iustyce, and to entrete the people soberly & right wysely. Than Edmunde beynge of the archebysshop of Yorke crowned at London, and the solempnytie fynysshed and ended, he sped hym into West Saxon, and subdued that countre. In whiche tyme Canutus, whiche, in the Englysshe story, is called Knough, drewe with his people to London, and wold there haue entrede; but that was hym forboden of the Londoners, for the whiche he layde his ordenaunce about the cytie, entendynge to haue entrede parforce: but it was nat longe or he was fayne to breke his siege, and to departe thens. Whanne Canutus was thus put of from London, he drewe Westwarde, and mette in processe with Edmunde in Dorsetshyre, besyde Gyllyngham, where atwene theym was foughten a stronge and cruell batayll. But, in the ende, Canutus was ouercomen and compelled to forsake the felde. After this they mette agayne in Worcetour shyre, where they fought a more stronger batayl: for this was so strongly bydden by, that men coude nat iudge whiche parte had the better, or whiche ỹ worse: but, as wytnesseth Polycronica, eyther of them departed frome other, outher for werynesse of fyght, or for lak of the daye.

But vpon the morue folowynge, both hoostes ioyned agayne & fought egerly, contynuyng with[2] fyght, Edricus espyinge Edmunde to be at auauntage of wynnynge of the felde, sodaynly pyght a deed mañys hede vpon a spere hede, and cryed to the hoost of Englysshemen, "Fle, fle ye Englysshe men, and saue your selfe: loo here is the hede of Edmunde your kynge." But Edmund therof beynge warned, sped hym towarde that parte of the felde, and behaued hym so comfortably amonges his men, that by his knyghtly courage his people recouered that they before had loste, and contynued the batayll tyll nyght, in suche wyse that he had rather the better than the worse, and caused Canutus to refuse that countre, and to retourne towarde London agayne. Than Edmunde beynge aduertysed that Canutus was retourned towarde London, he folowed hym, and passed the ryuer of Thamys, and delyuered the cytie from daũger of the Danys; and afterwarde encountered the Danys at a place called Brentforde, where with theym he hadde a cruell fyghte, and scomfyted theym at length.

Fol. Cxxv.

In this passe tyme, Emma ỹ wyfe of Egelredus, feryng the fortune of the warre, sent her. ii. sonnes, Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto her brother Richarde, the seconde of that name, and fourth duke of Normandy. Edricus than, whiche, as before is sayde, was euer subtyle of wytte, consyderynge the good fortune of Edmunde and his knyghtly courage, thought that at length he shulde ouercome the Danys. Wherfore to saue his lande, and also to brynge aboute his malycyous treason, sought[3] the wayes and meanes how he might stande in his grace and fauoure; and at length optayned his entente, and swore to hym to be his trewe subiecte.

Dissimulatio.

Whanne kynge Edmunde hadde a season sourgoyned at London, he than made towarde the Danys, that then were in Kent, & mette with theym at a place called Okefforde

[1] "of fauoured Edmunde" *is added in the later editions.* [2] whyche. [3] he sought.

or

or Otforde, and there scomfyted theym, & chased Canutus to the Ile of Shepey; there Canutus toke shypyng and sayled aboute the lande, and entrede, lastly, in the coũtre of Mercia, & spoyled a parte therof.

Than the. ii. hoostes met soon after, at a place called Asshedowne, where after longe fight, Edricus with his retynewe fledde, to the comforte of the Danys, by meane wherof kynge Edmundé was put to the warse: for many noble men were slayne vpon his partie, amonges the whiche, the bysshop of Lyncolñ and the abbot of Ramysey were two, that thyther were comen to treate a peace atwene both prynces. But whan this was layde to the charge of Edricus, he, by his vntrewe meanes, so excused hym, that noo man myght charge hym with any defaute. Thus contynuynge this mortall warre bytwixt thyse. ii. marcyall prynces, to the great disolacion and mortalytie of the people, one of the knyghtes of the partye of Edmunde, gatte hym to an hyghe place where he myght be somwhat harde of the hoost, and spake in this wyse; "Dayly we dye, and noo man hathe the victory; for Edmunde may nat be ouercome for his great strengthe, and Canutus may nat be ouer- Verba militis.
come for fauoure of fortune. What shal than be ỹ fruyte of this cõtynuall stryfe? None other, but whan the knyghtes been all slayne on eyther partyes, than the dukes, compelled by nede, shall accorde, or ellys they shal fyght alone wout knyghtes. Than syn[1] this shalbe ỹ ende, why do they nat one of thyse two. If they accorde, why is nat this kyngdom suffycyent for twayne ỹ somtyme suffysed for. vii. If their couetyse of lordshyppes be so great that eyther hathe indygnacion to take and haue parte with other, or ellys that one be vnder that other, thanne lette theym fyght alone, that woll be the lordes alone lefte. If all men fyght, all men be slayñ, by meane wherof, no men shall be lafte to be vnder theyr lordshyp, or ledynge of dukes; nor yet to defende ỹ kynge agaynne strõge[2] enemys or nacions."

The which wordes[3] were ryght wele alowed of bothe hoostes: for, as affermeth myne auctour, at this tyme a trewe was made attwene bothe prynces, for a certayne tyme. After whiche peace ended, were it by occasyon of thyse wordes or otherwyse, the sayd. ii. dukes, Edmunde & Canutus, agreed to trye theyr quarelles bytwene them two only, and for this was assygned, by theyr bothe agrementes, a lytell ile called than Olney nere vnto Glowcetour, or after some wryters, named Olenege, bycleped with the water of Seuarne; in whiche place, at the daye apoynted, the. ii. champyons mette, without company or assystence, within the sayd ile, but the hoostes of both parties standyng without the ile, and there abydynge the fortune of this batayll.

There eyther proued other firste with sharpe sperys and after with kene and cuttyng swerdes. What shall I of this make lenger processe? and eyther had other wele proued and assayed, by receyuynge of harde and sore strokes, by the firste mocyon of Canutus, as moste wryters testyfyeth, they lastely accorded and kyssed togyder as louers, to the great comforte of both hoostes; and shortly after, by the aduyce of bothe theyr counsaylles, condessended vpon partycion of the lande, whiche immedyatly was done to bothe theyr agrementes, and loued after as. ii. bretherne, duryng theyr naturall lyues. But the serpent Idre of enuy and false conspyracy, whiche euer burned in the harte of Edricus, was kyndeled so sore, that of pure force it must breke out vpon a lyght flambe. So what he myght nat accomplysshe by his owne persone, he fulfylled by his sone, as testyfyeth dyuers auctours. For, as affermeth Guydo, this sone of Edricus, awaytynge his tyme, espyed whan the kynge was at the withdraught to purge nature, and with a spere strake hym into the foundement, and so into the body; wherof kyng Edmunde dyed shortly after at Oxin[5]. The kynge thus beynge slayne, anone Edricus thynkynge therby to be greatly Nõ
exalted, sped hym in all haste vnto Canutus, & saluted hym as kynge; and shewed hym of this treason oonly for his loue done. Whan Canutus had wele vnderstandynge ỹ confes-

[1] seynge. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] straunge. edit. 1559. [3] these wordes thus spoken. [4] when.
[5] Oxford. edit. 1559.

sion of Edricus, lyke a dyscrete and ryghtues prynce, said vnto hym in thyse wyse: "For thou haste, Edricus, for the loue thou berest vnto me, slayne thyne naturall lorde, whiche
Iudiciū. I moost loued, I shall exalte thyne hede aboue all the lordes of Englande," and forthwith cōmaunded hym to be taken and his hede to be stryken of, and pyght on a spere hede, and after sette vpon the hyghest gate of London. But Maryanus the Scotte telleth, that Edmunde dyed at London by natural sykenesse, aboute the feste of seynt Andrewe; and the Englisshe Cronycle affermeth the forenamed treason, but by another maner of doynge. But howe soeuer this noble prynce dyed, trouth it is, after aggrement of moost wryters, that he ended his lyfe whan he had reygned one yere and more, as moche as from the moneth of Iunii vnto the ende of Nouember, and was buryed at Glastinbury, by his graundefader Edgare. Policronicoñ sheweth, in the. xviii. Chapiter of his. vi. Boke, that Canutus, after the deth of Edmunde, gaue vnto Edricus ŷ lordshyp of Mercea, and by his counsayll, exyled the brother of Edmunde, called the kynge of chorles; and thorough his counsayll executed many cruell dedes. Of this Edmunde remayned. ii. sonnes, that is to wytte, Edmunde & Edwarde.

Fol. C.xxvi.

¶ Capitulum. CC.v.

[Li. 6. ca. 18.] CAnutus or Knougthe, after the Englysshe Cronycle, sone of Swanus, as before is touched, & yonger brother, as apperyth by the story folowynge, began his domynyon alone ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde. M. xix. and the. xxi. yere of Robert, than kynge of Fraunce: the whiche anone, after the deth of Edmunde, assembled a counsayll at London, where, amonge other thynges in that counsayll debated, a questyon was put, whether in the composicion made bytwene Edmunde and Canutus, any specyall remēbraunce was made for the childre or bretherne of Edmunde for any partycyon of any parte of the lande.

Wherunto it was answered of the lordes, naye; affermynge farthermore with oth for the kynges pleasure, that they, to the vttermoste of theyr powers, wolde put of that blode of Edmūde in all that they myght.

By reason of whiche answere and promyse, they thought, many of theym, to haue standen in ŷ great grace and fauoure of ŷ kyng; but it tourned all other wyse: for many of theym, or the more partie, suche as Canutus apperceyued and knewe, that they before tyme were sworne to Edmunde and his heyres, and also were natyfe Englyssemen, he mystrusted and disdayned euer after; in so moche, that some he exyled, and some were slayne, and some, by Goddes punysshement, dyed sodaynly.

But among all, Edricus, with his sugred wordes, contynued in the kynges fauoure, as sayth Marianus, before mynded; by whose coūsayll and ōther, he shortly after outlawed the foresayd brother of Edmunde, surnamed kynge Charlys, as before is touched: but he afterwarde was reconcyled to the kynges fauoure, and lastly slayne of his owne seruauntes. Canutus also, by the sayd counsayll, sent the. ii. sonnes of Edmunde, named, as before is sayd, Edmunde and Edwarde, vnto his brother Swanus, than kynge of Denmarke, to be slayne, after the oppynyon of some wryters. But he, aborrynge that dede, sent theym to Salamon, than kynge of Hungary, as wytnesseth Guydo and other; where, in processe of tyme, Edmunde dyed, and his brother Edwarde, in tracte of tyme, maryed Agatha, the doughter of the. iiii. Henry, than emperoure of Almayne. Of ŷ whiche, Edwarde & Agatha proceded Margarete, that after was quene of Scotlande, and Crystyañ, that was a menchone, and a sone named Edgar, and surnamed Ethelynge. This
Edwarde Outlawe. Edwarde, of the Cronycles of Englande, is named Edwarde the outlawe; for so moch as he neuer retourned into Englande, as sayth the sayd Englysshe Cronycle, after his first exyle. Than to retourne vnto Canutus, the whiche, after some thynges ordered in his lande, deuyded his sayd lande in. iiii. partes, that is to meane, the firste pryncypall, whiche, at those dayes, was West Saxoñ. He helde vnder his owne gydynge Estenglande

glande, whiche cõteyned Norffolke and Suffolke, he betoke to the rule of the erle Turkyllus a Dane, of whome some what is in the. iii. Chapiter of the story of Egelredus. Mercia he betoke to the subtyll erle Edricus: and the. iiii. Northumberlande vnto a Dane, named Hircius. But lyke as the man of Inde, at no tyme, chaungeth his coloure, so this Edricus chaunged neuer his false maners: but natwithstandyng the great benefytes that he dayly receyued of his prynce, there, as he to other hadde been false and dysceyuable in dayes past, euen so nowe he demeaned hym agayne Canutus.

Wherfore he, beynge accused and proued with defaute, was cõmaũded of the kynge to haue iugement, the whiche was done immediatly, & his hede, for dyspyte, caste into a fowle and fylthy place. But Ranulfe sayth that he was slayne, by the kynges agrement, within his paleys at London, and his body with the hede throwne after into ỹ towne dyche. Thus with shame he ended, that in falshode and dissymylacion had contynued moche of his lyfe.

Aboute the. ix. yere of his reygne, Canutus called a parlyament at Oxenforde, where, amonges other thynges, it was enacted that Englysshe men and Danys shulde holde the lawes of Edgar, lately kynge.

In this pastyme dyed Swanus, brother to Canutus, kynge of Denmarke, without issue; wherfore that lande fyll to Canutus: for the whiche cause, he with a stronge army sayled thyther to take ỹ possessyon and to sette the coũtre in an order. Or after some wryters, to apeas and wstande of the Wandalys, that than had persed that lande and done therin moch harme; where Goodwynne the erle, whose doughter Edwarde the Confessour after maryed, with a certayne nombre of Englysshe men, fyll vpon the Wandalis by nyght, and dystressed theym in suche wyse, that Canutus hadde of theym his plasure. For this dede, the kyng had erle Goodwynne euer after in good fauoure, and loued Englysshe men more specially. And whan he was retourned into Englande, he shortly after, or before, maryed Emma, the wyfe lately of Egelredus; of the whiche he receyued, in processe of tyme, a son, and named hym Hardicunitus, or after some, Hardykynitus, and after the Englysshe boke, Hardyknough.

[And, aboute this tyme, fyll voyde the see of Lyndesser or Durham, to ỹ whiche, by dyuyne inspyracion and knowlege, receyued by a voyce from the tumbe of seynt Cuthbert, blessyd Edmunde, after. iii. yere of vacacyon, was elected to that see. But ye shal vnderstande that this was nat seynt Edmunde of Pounteney, for he was archebysshop of Caũterbury, in ỹ dayes of Henry the thirde.

¶ Capitulum. CC.vi.

CAnutus aboute the. vii. yere of his reygne, by exortacion of Egelnothus, then archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, translated the body of seynt Elphegus, late archebysshop of the said see, martyred[1], as before is shewed, in the seconde Chapiter. C. lxxx. and xvi. ca°. of the story of Egelredus, of the Danys, and shryned hym in his owne churche of Caũterbury foresayd.][2]

In the tyme also of this Canutus, aboute the. xvi. yere of his reygne, the Scottes rebelled agayne hym. Wherfore he, with a great army entrede Scotlande, and at length ouercame the kyng of that lande, named than Malcolyne, and brought theym agayne to his subieccion, as is recorded in the bookes of Marianus[3] the Scotte; by reason of whiche victory, Canutus was then kyng of. iiii. kyngdoms, of Englande, of Scotlande, of Denmarke & Norwaye. Than, as wytnesseth diuers auctours, after he had betaken [Li. 6. ca. 20.] this lande of Englande to the gydynge of Leofricus, Egelnothus, and other, he than retourned into Denmarke, and from thens he yode to Rome in the. xv. yere of his reygne, [and made there great offeringes to seynt Peter and Paule,][2] and redemed the scole of

[1] by the Danys. edit. 1533. [2] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542, 1559. [3] Marcianus. edit. 1542, *by mistake.*

Saxons, fre of all former trybute graũted, as before, in the storyes of Iue and Offa, and other kynges of Saxons, is somdele more touched; whiche redempcyon of trybute, as sayth Guydo, was called Rome Scot. But it shall seme in that sayinge some douteth; for somoch as at this daye, in dyuers places of Englande, as in Northamptonshyre & other, the Peter pens are yet gaderyd. Canutus also after he had in Rome accomplisshed his purpose, he, in his retourne towarde Englãde, executed wonderfull dedes of almes in releuynge of the poore, & other goostly werkes; and payde great good for raunsom of Cristen prysoners. Amonges other of his dedes, it is wytnessed that he shulde agree with the pope[1], that than was called Benet the. viii. of that name, and paye to hym certayne summes of money, that his archebysshoppes, after that daye, myght haue the pall without payinge of money therfore.

Fol. Cxxvii.

[And whanne he was cõmen to the cytie of Papia, in Italy, in his waye homewarde, he there bought the arme of seynt Augustyn the doctour, for. C. li. of syluer, and a talent of golde. And here is to be noted, that there be thre maner of talentes; the firste & grettest is of ỹ weyghte of. vi. xx. li. weyght, the seconde of the weyghte of lxxii. li. and the thyrde & leest of. l. li. weyght; than if we rekẽ this talent with the leest, in a pounde of golde after troye wayghte is. xii. vncis, and in. l.li. is vi. C. vncys, & euery vnce of fine golde is worth. xl. *s.* by whych reson this talent shulde be in value to the summe of xii.C.li. This precious relyque the kynge gaue vnto his trusty frende Leofricus, the whiche he moche loued and trusted, and remayned at Couentrye many yeres after.][2]

Talentũ.

Whyle Canutus was occupyed in this iourney, complaynt was brought vnto hym of some mysdemeanures and rules that were occupyed and exercysed in his absence within this realme. Wherfore he wrote home letters to the lordes, chargynge theym straytely, thar all suche défautes were redressed agayne his cõmynge home. This kyng, as wytnesseth Guydo, was of great magnyfisence, and vsed such iustyce and temperaunce, that in his dayes, in the west parties of the world, was no prynce of renowne as was Canutus; and ouer that, he was greatly beloued and dradde of his subiectes. [In the tyme of this Canutus, as testyfyeth Will'ms de Pontificibus, a monke of Glastenbury, named Bryghtwolde, whiche was after bysshop of Wylton, beyng in his cõtemplacion and prayer, bethought hym on the lynage of Englysshe kynges, and in that thought fyl into a slumber, in whiche tyme of his slepe, he sawe seynt Peter thapostle standyng by hym and holdynge in his hande Edwarde, ỹ sone of Egelredus, whiche than was in Normandy; the whiche, to his thynkynge, he sawe seynt Peter saker the sayde Edwarde as kynge of Englande; and shewed to hym farther, howe holy this Edwarde shulde be in his lyuynge, and how he shulde reygne as kynge. xxiii. yeres.

A vision.

Thanne this monke frayned seynt Peter of the ofsprynge of this Edwarde, and who shulde be kynge after hym. To the whiche questyon was answered by Peter, the kyngdome of Englysshmen is the kyngdome of God.

Wherfore the kynges therof shall stande at Goddes puruyaunce. And also another doctour, called Henry of Huntyngdon, sheweth, that an holy man warned Englysshmen, that a lorde, whiche they thought nothynge vpon, shuld come out of Fraunce, & bryng theym ryght lowe. In the tyme also of this Canutus, by agrement of many wryters, fyll one thynge worthy mynde & memory. In a towne of Saxony, named Calbis, in the diocesse of Magburgh, and parysshe of seynt Magii.; xviii. men and. xv. women, vpon the euen of the natyuyte of our lorde, began a daunce aboute the churche yerde of seynt Magii foresayd, the persone or other preest beyng than at masse within the same churche; whiche beyng troubled with the noyse of ỹ mynstrellys, and also the dynne of the sayde men and women, sent vnto theym in monyssynge theym to seace of that doynge:

Mirum per maximum.

[1] Byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

but

but all was in vayne, for they wolde nat seace of theyr dysporte for any cõmaundement that to theym was gyuen. Wherwith the preest beyng discontented, that they none otherwyse reuerenced ŷ sacrament nor yet ŷ solempne season, besought God and seynt Magii that they shuld contynue theyr daunce by the space of an hole yere; the which prayer was harde in such wyse, that they contynued the same songe and daunce tyll that day twelue monethes, & neuer ete nor dranke nor rested theym in all that season: & more ouer, dewe nor rayne fylle vpon theym in all that yere, nor garment nor no thynge that was aboute theym was impayred, shoo nor other.

At the yeres ende, Horobertus, archiepiscop of that diocesis, came vnto ŷ sayde place, and lowsed theim of that bonde whiche the preest hadde bounde theym in; and before the awter of the churche theym recõsyled. Of the whiche, a preestes doughter and. ii. other dyed forthwith, and the remenaunt yode to reste, and slepte by ŷ space of. iii. dayes and. iii. nyghtes folowynge, where after some of theym dyed, & suche as lyued fell lame of theyr lymmes, and one of the same. xviii. men, beyng named Vbertus or Hupertus, wrote this wonder with his owne hande, for a more recorde of the trowth.][1] Than let vs re- Stultícia.
tourne to Canutus, of whome it is redde[2], ŷ after his cõmynge from Rome, he began Stultícia Kanuti.
somdele to presume in pryde, and let more of[3] hymselfe than good wysdome wolde. In tyme of whiche exaltacion of his mynde, he went vnto ŷ Thamys syde, and behelde howe the water swelled or flowed: and so standynge nere ŷ water, the water touched his fete. Than he charged the water that he shulde flowe no hygher, and that, in no wyse, he shulde towche his lordes clothes; but the water kepte his course, and wette, at length, the kynges thyes: wherwith ŷ kynge abasshed, sterte backe and sayde, "All erthly kynges may knowe that theyr powers be vayne, and that none is worthy to haue the name of a kynge but he that hath all thynges subiecte to his hestes, as here is shewed, by worchynge of his treature by this water. [And for this, as wytnesseth Policronicon and other, he offered his crowne to ŷ rode of Wynchester, and neuer bare it vpon his hede after.][1]

It is also wytnessed of the sayd auctour, ŷ Canutus maryed his doughter, hadde by his laste wyfe, vnto Henry, sone of Conradus the emperour, the seconde of that name, as also it is testyfyed of the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum.

And he repayred many monasteris, and specially suche as before tyme were hurte or throwne downe in the tyme of his faders persecucion; and began and ended the monastery of seynt Edmundes Bury, & endowed it with ryche possesyons, as before is towched: and dyed fynally at Shaftisbury, and was buryed at Wynchester, whan he had reygned. xix. yeres, leuynge after hym. ii. sõnes of his wyues. The eldest was named Harolde, and ŷ yonger Hardykinitus, the whiche, lyuynge his fader, was made kynge of Denmarke.

¶ Capitulum. CC.vii.

HEnry, ŷ sone of Robert, began his domynyon ouer the Frenshemen in the yere of Francie.
our Lorde. M. xxix. and the. x. yere of Canutus, than kynge of Englande. To the which Henry, Constance[4] ŷ moder was so vnkynde, that she, by her meanes, wolde haue preserued[5] her yonger sone Robert, duke of Burgoyne, to the rule of the lande before this Henry; so that by her meanes, both cyties & castellys were with holden from hym, and was by her, and suche other as toke her parte, so ouer lad, that he was forced to resort to Robert, than duke of Normandy, for to aske helpe of hym to withstande his enemyes.

Ye shall vnderstande that this Robert was the. vi. duke of Normandy, & sone of Richarde, the seconde, and also father vnto Willyam Bastarde that conquered Englande. This Robert was lyberall and noble of condicion, but defamed of the deth of his elder *Fol. Cxxviii.*
brother Richarde the thirde; for ŷ whiche mordre, as wytnessyth dyuers auctours, the.

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Of Canutus it is redde. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] set more by.
[4] Constantyne. edit. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.* [5] preferred.

vii. yere of his dowchery, he went to Ierusalem, and dyd in that pylgremage many honourable and lyberall actes; the which, in good ordre, ben remembred in the. xix. Chapiter of ỹ. vi. boke of Policronicon.

This Robert receyued kynge Henry with all honour, and gaue vnto hym great and ryche gyftes, and sent for his frendes and knyghts: so that the kynge had, by his ayde, a great and myghty hooste, and retourned agayne into Fraunce, and in short whyle after recouered from his sayd moder both cyties, townes and castelles, that she & her fautours from hym withholde: and fynally agreed so with her, that he and she contynued frendes theyr lyfe tymes endurynge. After whiche accorde, about the. v. yere of his reygne, he made warre vpon Eudo erle of Champayñ, & vpon Baldewyñ erle of Flaundres; and, in processe of tyme, wanne from theym certayne cyties and castelles, the which Cõstance his moder had before tymes gyuen to theym in tyme of dissencyon. In this warre was slaynne Eudo, erle of Champaynne, wherfore his. ii. sõnes, Stephen & Thybaud, maynteyned ỹ warre agayne the kynge; but to theyr both harmys in ỹ ende: for Stephan lost therby the cyties of Charthres and Towers, and Thibaude the cyties of Troyes and Maulx, with other.

Whan Henry had ended this warre, and set his lande in some quyetnesse, he than buylded a monastery of seynt Martyne, called Des Champs, besyde Parys, and sette therin seculer preestes.

In this passe tyme, Robert duke of Normandy, moued in concyence to vysyte the holy sepulture of our Lorde, called before hym his lordes of his lande, wyllynge & cõmaundynge theym to owe theyr trewe allegeaunce vnto his yonge sone, Wyllyam; & to take hym for theyr lorde & duke, if he retourne nat agayne. And to this he caused to swere, Robert, than archebysshop of Roan, with ỹ other of his lordes, and after departed vpon the sayd iourney, and dyed in the cytie of Bethenia, as he was cõmynge homewarde.

Will'i procreatio. Wherof the lordes of Normandy, beynge asserteyned, accepted the foresayd Wyllyam to theyr lorde and soueraigne.

Of this Wyllyams procreacion, it is wytnessed of Vyncent Hystoryall & other, that his fader passynge by ỹ cytie or towne of Faloys, in Normandy, he sawe a company of maydens daũsynge by the strete, amonges ỹ whiche was one of passynge beautie, called Arlet, and doughter to a skynner; to the whiche duke Robert caste vnlefull loue, in such wyse, that he caused her to be brought to his bed the nyght folowyng, and helde her to his concubyne a certeyne of tyme after, and begat on her this Wyllyam. Whan his moder was with hym conceyued, she dremed that her bowellys were sprade ouer all Normãdy and Englande; and whan he was borne of his moders wombe, he fylle to the grounde, and closed his handes with powder of ỹ flore or pauement: therfore the mydwyfe made an exclamacyon, and sayde, "this childe shall be a kynge."

Than it foloweth, whan this Wyllyam was thus admytted duke, some of his lordes, by ỹ meane of the kyng of Fraũce, began to withdrawe them from hym, in somoche, that erle Gylbert, to whome duke Robert hadde betaken his yonge sone to gyde, was slayne, & other that were especiall frendes to the childe. There was fyghtynge, and manslaughter, and the countre fowle faren with, by reason of the opynyons that were amõges themself. Wherof Guy, a Burgoyn, was one of the chief causers; for he, with his adherentes, sayde alwayes, that they wolde haue no bastarde to be ruler of them.

This Guy, as saith the Frenshe boke, was nere kynsman vnto the yonge duke, descended of the doughter of the seconde Richarde, and entended to haue ben duke hym selfe. For the whiche he ensensed the kynge of Fraunce agayne hym in all that he myght; but at lengthe duke Wyllyam toke hym, and put hym to deth.

Thus the Frenshe kynge, forgettyng the kyndenesse shewed to hym by duke Robert his fader, toke partie agayne hym to the vtermest, and ordeyned hym. ii. hoostes, wherof one he delyuered to his brother Almaryk, and warned hym to entre the countre of Caus, and he hymself ladde that other, and entred with it the countree of Euroux.

But Wyllyam, nat ferynge the kynges great power, beynge growen wele towarde mānes stature, lyke a lusty yonge knyght, made towarde the kynges brother, and gaue to hym batayll, and hym ouercam; and chased the Frenshemen to theyr great vylany. Wherof herynge, the Frenshe kynge, with his people, sped hym to warde Wyllyam, to reuenge the shame done to his men; but in cōclusion he wan ther no honour. Than peas was made atwene the kynge and the duke, and the Frenshe prysoners were delyuered.

But this peas endured nat longe; for the Frenshe kynge called to remembraūce the losse of his men at Mort Mere or Dede Se; withoute disauauntages by hym susteyned of the sayd duke Wylliam, called[1] to his ayde Geoffrey, erle of Aungiers, and whan his hoost was assembled, entred the prouynce of Normandye, and contynued theyr iourney tyll they came to an arme of the see, where the hoost shuld passe ouer.

Of this new warre duke Wyllyam beynge warned, in all haste assembled his Normeynes, and sped hym the next waye to mete the Frenshemen. In this meane whyle, ỹ Frenshe kynge had passed the water w̄ certayne of his host, trustynge that the remenaunt shuld haue folowed, but soone after the water flowed so fast that his people myght nat passe, and in this whyle came the duke and sette vpon the kynges hoost, and bet theym downe cruelly; so that at lengthe the kynge was compelled to flee, & loste great noumbre of his knyghtes: to consyder theim that were slayne with ỹ other that were taken prysoners.

Whanne kynge Henry had wele desgested in his mynde the wrongful trouble that he, by enuyous persons, hadde put the duke vnto, and remembred the ylle expedycion that he had in that warre, he reconsyled hym selfe, and made meanes that the duke and he myght be agreed and accorded; the whiche, by discrete solycitours, was shortly after brought to good effecte, so that they cōtynued as frendes durynge theyr lyues after.

Than Henry absteyned hym from al warre, & vsed the reste of his lyfe in peace and quyetnesse. This Henry had. ii. wyues, and of the laste, whiche was doughter to the kyng of Russy, he had. iii. sones, that is to saye Phylyp, the whiche he made kynge of Fraunce by his lyfe, Robert, that was after duke of Burgoyne, and Hughe, that after was named Hughe Le Graunde, and was fader to Raufe, erle of Vermendoyse.

And in this kynges dayes, Burgoyne, that had ben vnder the Frenshe kynges obeysaunce ouer. C.xxx. yeres, refused ỹ Frenshe kynge aparte of theym, and turned vnto Conradus, the seconde of that name, than emperoure: so that that parte which stretched to Champaynne belonged to Fraunce, and that other parte, whiche stretched towarde Basaynes, belonged to the Almaynes.

And that yere that the kynge had admytted his sone Philyp to the gydyng of the realme, he dyed, and was buryed at seynt Denys, leuynge after hym the issue forenamed, whan he had reygned, after moost wryters. xxxi. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. CC.viii.

HArolde, the sone of Canutus, and of Elgina, the erlys doughter of Hamptoñ, beganne his reygne ouer Englande in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. M.xxxix. and the. x. yere of Henry, than kynge of Fraūce. This, for his delyuernesse and swiftenesse, was surnamed Harefote, in whose begynnynge stryfe was amonge the lordes: for so moche as of his byrthe shulde be doughte, whether he were the kynges sone or nat, and specyally erle[2] Goodwyñ, that dyd the vttermost of his power to sette hym by, and put Hardykynytus, his brother, to that honour. But Leofricus, that Canutus so moche loued and trusted, with the ayde of the Danys, withstode so myghtely Goodwyñ & his sonnes, that they fayled of their purpose. *Fol. C.xxix.* [Li. 6. ca. 20.]

[1] callyng. edit. 1542. [2] through erle.

Anone,

Anone, as this Harolde was crowned kynge, he banysshed his stepmoder Emma, & toke from her suche goodes and iewellys as she had; the whiche Emma sayled than into Flaundres, and there of Bawdewyñ ŷ erle, was reuerently receyued, and there abode durynge the lyfe of this Harolde. The whiche conteyned[1] his lyfe to lytell fruyte or profyte of the lande, nor yet of the subiectes: so that of hym, other for the vyce that clerkes lyste nat to put in memory, other for the rudenesse whiche is worthy no memory, nothyng of hym is put in remembraunce, but that he dyed at Lōdoñ, or after some, at Oxenforde, and was buryed at Westmynster, when he had reygned, as moste wryters agreen, iii. yeres and odde monethes, leuynge after hym noone heyre. Wherfore his brother, kynge of Denmarke, was next kynge after hym.

¶ Capitulum. CC.ix.

[Li. 6. ca. 21.] HArdykynytus, ŷ sone of Canutus, and of Emma, was made kynge of Englande in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. M. xli. & the. xii. yere of Henry, than kyng of Fraūce. This of some wryters is named Hardykynytus and Hardyknough, and was anone after the deth of his brother, sent for into Denmarke, and receyued ioyously, and crowned, at Londoñ, of Ethelnothus, than archebysshop of Caunterbury; but this was of suche crueltie, that he sent Alfricus, archebysshop of Yorke, and erle Goodwyñ, vnto Westmynster, cōmaundynge theym, for the iniury by his brother Harolde before done vnto his moder Emma, that they shuld drawe the corps out of the place where it was buryed, and to be throwen into the ryuer of Thamys; whiche was done accordyng to his wyll. Which corps after, as testifieth Guydo and other, was founden by a fyssher, & buryed vnreuerently within the churcheyerde of seynt Clement, standynge without the Temple Barre of London: and, as Policronicon sayth, for a more crueltie, [he] caused first the hede of his sayd brother to be smytten frome the body, and than throwen into the sayd ryuer. Lette the herer to this gyue credence as theym lyke, for to me it semeth though the kynge had ben of suche crueltie, that the bysshop, forenamed, wolde nat haue ben the executour of so fowle a dede.

This kyng also leuyed ŷ forenamed trybute, named Danc gelt, and spent it to the lytell comforte of the realme, but gaue vnto shypmen and maryners and other lewde persones, grete and vnsyttynge fees and wages, and was of suche prodegalytie, that his bourdes & tabylles of his courte were spred. iiii. tymes in the day, and the people serued of great excesse both of mete and also of drynke. With leuyeng of the foresayd trybute, the cōmons greatly grudged, so that in Worcetour. ii. of his seruauntes, whiche were assygned to gader that money, were there slayne; for ŷ which dede the kynge was so sore displeased that he brent a great parte of that towne.

Thus[2] Hardykynytus, after some auctours, maryed his suster, named Gunylda, vnto the thirde Henry, emperour, the whiche was of passynge beaute, & was the doughter also of Emma, laste wyfe of Canutus. But, in processe of tyme, this Gunylda was falsely accused of spowsebrech, for tryall wherof she was put to her champion[3]; wherfore she beynge in great agony, lastly trustynge to God, and knowynge herself without gylte of that offence, put a childe that she with her had brought out of Englande, instede of the champyon, the whiche faught with a man of gyauntes stature, and fynally hym slewe and brought vnto vtteraunce[4].

[1] Contynued. [2] This. [3] *Here the editions of* 1542 and 1559 *have the following note*: "Note, that the order in this time was, yt yf a quene or any other noble woman were accused ether of treason or aduoutrye, & coulde not be proued by sufficyent witnesse, that then she shuld chose a knight to fyghte for her in that cause with anie other that shulde be matched to hym; and yf it fortuned ye same knyght to be discomfited or slayne, than she to suffer suche peynes of death, or otherwise, as offenders in like case shuld dooe, & if the knight had the victory, she to be acquited of the crime.

Likewyse was it with all noblemen that were accused of treason, yf they had not sufficient witnesse to proue it" [4] *confusyon.*

Whan

Whan Gunylda, by dyuyne power[1], had thus clered her selfe, she vtterly refused the emperours company, and ended her lyfe in the seruyce of hym that[2] oonly God, that so had defended her ryght.

But it shulde apere by Policronicon, & also by Antonius[3], ỹ this mayden was maryed to the sayde Henry by the lyf of her fader Canutus, and also durynge the lyfe of the sayde Henryes fader, named Conradus the seconde, as before is touched in the story of the sayd Canutus, and nat by this Hardykinitus her brother.

It is rad that the kynge betoke all the rule of the lande vnto his moder and erle Goodwyn, the whiche had maryed, as wytnesseth the Englysshe Cronacle, the doughter of Canutus, gotten vpon his firste wyfe Elgina, by whome many thynges were mysse orderyd, and specyally by ỹ subtylytie of this erle Goodwyn. This erle had many sonnes, as wytnesseth Policronicon, in ỹ. xxv. Chapiter of his vi. boke. By his firste wyfe that was kynge Canutus suster and nat his doughter, as is abouesayd, he had one sone, the whiche, by vndyscrete strykynge of an horse, was throwyn into the Thamys, and drowned; and the moder was lastly smytten with lyghtenynge, & so dyed: of whome it is there remẽbred that she was so vngracious and of vyle condycyons, that she sette yonge women to horedome, for to gader by that vnlefull meane rychesse. After ỹ whiche wyfe so dede, he maryed the seconde, of whome he receyued. vi. sõnes, that is to wyt, Swanus, Harolde, Tostius, Wylnotus, Sirthe or Surthe, and Leoffricus, and a doughter, named Goditha, which after was maryed to Edwarde the Cõfessour. Goodwinne.

The. ii. sonnes of Egelredus, Alphredus and Edwarde, whiche, as ye before haue harde, were sente into Normandy by Emma theyr moder, came in the tyme of the reygne of this kynge into Englande, for to vysyte and see theyr moder, and broughte with theym a great nombre of Normans. Than this Goodwyn imagyned in his mynde howe he myght prefer his doughter Godith to one of thyse bretherne, thought in his mynde, that the eldest wolde dysdayne that maryage, and for he thought to ioyne her vnto the yonger, and to make hym kynge and her quene, he compassed the deth of the elder; and, by this meane, Goodwyn warned the lordes of Englande, and sayd it was a great ieopardy for the lande to suffer so many straungers to entre the lande without lycence; wherfore it were necessary that they were punysshed to ỹ example of other. By whiche meanes he gatte auctorytie to order that matyer as to hym semed beste or of his owne power, because he was of moost myght next ỹ kynge. He yode[4] and mette with ỹ sayd Normans, and slewe of theym the more nombre; for vpon Guylde Downe he slewe alway. ix. and saued the. x. and yet for he thought to many by that meane laft a lyue, he eft agayne tythed agayne the sayd tythe, & slewe euery tenth knyght of theym, and that by cruel deth, as wyndynge theyr guttes out of theyr bodyes, as sayth Policronicon, & amonge other put out the iyen of the elder brother Alphrede, and sent hym to Ely, where he dyed in short tyme after; albe it, the Englysshe boke saith, that he was slayne by the forenamed turmente: and Edwarde was conueyed, and by some other waye brought to his moder. But she feryng the treason of Goodwyn, sent hym soon ouer the see agayne: howe be it, the Englisshe Cronycle telleth all otherwyse. *Fol. Cxxxv.* Trechery.

Whan Goodwyn was after accused for this cruell dede, he swarc depely that he was forced of the kynge so for to do. But in one Cronycle I fynde that this dede was executed by Goodwyn in the tyme of Harolde Harefote beynge kynge.

Than it foloweth in the story, this kynge Hardykynytus beynge at a feste at Lambehith, besyde London, mery and iocande, whyle he stode drynkynge, he fyll downe sodaynly and dyed or waxed dumbe, and lay tyll the. viii. daye after, the whiche was the. viii. daye of the moneth of Iunii, and than dyed, whan he had reygned, after most wryters. ii. yeres, leuyng after hym none issue of his body lawfull, and was buryed by his fader at Wynchester. [Li. 6. ca. 22.]

[1] "by dyuyne power," *is omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the. [3] Antoninus. edit. 1533. 1542. [4] wherfore he yode.

Thus

Linea Danorū hoc loco finit.

Thus here endeth ỹ lyne or ofspryng of Swanus and all other Danys: so that after this kynge, the blode of Danys was clerely extincte and put oute from all kyngly dygnyte within this realme of Englande; and also the persecucion of them seaced clerely after this kynges deth: the whiche had contynued to rekyn from theyr firste landynge in tyme of Bryghtryous, kynge of West Saxon, and the ix. yere of his reygne, as in that story before is rehersed, by the terme of CC. lv. yeres.

¶ Capitulum. CC.x.

ANGLIA.

Anglia. [Li. 6. ca. 23.]

EDwarde, the sone of Egelredus and of Emma his laste wyfe, began his reygne ouer Englande, in ỹ yere of our Lorde M. xliii. and the xiiii. yere of Henry, than kynge of Fraunce. The whiche, after the deth of Hardykynitus, was sent for into Normandye, & pledges layde for hym, that he, without fraude, shulde be made kynge. Than he came with a fewe straungers. But as sayth Maryanus, some of the lordes hadde sent for Edwarde the Outlawe, sone of Edmunde Ironsyde, for to be theyr kynge; but after the affermaunce of the sayd auctour, whan he knewe that Edwarde, his neuewe, was in possessyon of the lande, he wold meddle hym no farther.

Historia.

Than this Edwarde, by the great aduyce of Goodwyn, erle of West Saxon, and of Leofricus, erle of Chester, was crowned kynge, at Westmynster, of Edsius, than archebisshop of Cauterbury, and wedded, in processe of tyme after, Goditha, the doughter of erle Goodwyn, whiche of Guydo is called Editha; the whiche he entreted in suche wyse, that he put her nat from his bedde, nor yet delte w̄ her flesshely. Whether it were for hate of her kynne or for loue of chastytie, the trouthe is nat shewed; but all wryters agreen ỹ he contynued his lyf withouten offence with women.

Danegylt.

This kynge discharged Englysshmen of that great tribute called Dane geld, the whiche before is sundry tyme spoken of: so that, after that daye, it was no more gadered. And also he subdued the Brytons or Walshmen that made warre within the bondes of ỹ lande; but after ỹ, theyr duke or leder, called Gryffyn or Gryffyth, with ayde of the Irysshmen, entrede the ryuer of Seuerne, and toke many praye, and departed agayne without fyght.

In the tyme of the reygne of this Edwarde, Emma, his moder, was accused to be fauelyer with the bysshop of Wynchester; vpon whiche accusacion, by counsayll of erle Goodwyn, he toke from her many of her iewellys, & caused her to be kept somdele more straytly in the abbey of Warwell, and the bysshop he cōmytted to the examynacion & correccion of the clergy. But his moder more sorowed the defamy of Alwyn ỹ bysshop, thā her owne astat, wrote vnto dyuers bysshoppes, & besought theym of iustyse, affermynge that she was redy to abyde all lefull and most sharpest tryall.

[1] sorowynge.

Than

Than dyuers of the bysshoppes made laboure to the kynge for her & for the bysshop; but Robert, than archebysshop of Caunterbury, beynge w̄ theyr labour discontented, sayd to theym in this maner: "My brethern̄ bysshoppes," sayde he, "howe dare ye defende her that is a wylde beest and nat a woman? she hath defamed her owne sone the kyng, and nempned her lecherour lēman Goddes owne preest[1]; but be it so that the woman wolde purge the preest, who shall than pourge the woman that is accused to be consentynge[a] of her sone Edwarde? But howe so it be, that she be gylty or gyltlesse, if she woll go barefoted, for her selfe. iiii. stepes, and for ỹ bysshop. v. contynuelly vpon. ix. plough sharys, brennynge and fyre hotte, than if she escape harmelesse, he shall be assoyled of this chalenge, and she also." This was of her graūted, and the daye of purgacion assygned; at whiche day, the kynge and great parte of his lordes were present. But this Robert fayled, were it for pyte or otherwyse. Iudicio preuilis.

This Robert was a monke of an howse in Normandy, & came ouer by the sonde of the kynge, & was firste made bysshop of London, and after archebysshop of Caunterbury. Than [the night before Emma shuld make her purgacion, she went vnto the shryne of seȳt Swithune, at Wȳchester, & there kneled al ỹ nyght in prayer, & receyued dyuyne comforte. Purgacio re gine.

Vpon the morne][1] she was blyndefelde & lad vnto the place bytwene. ii. men, where ỹ iroñ laye glowynge hote, and passed the. ix. sharys vnhurte. Than at laste she sayd, "Good Lorde, whan shall I come to the place of my purgacion?" Whan they opened her iyen, & she sawe ỹ she was paste the payne, she kneled downe and thanked God [and seynt Swythune.][1] Than the kynge repented hym, and restored to her ỹ he before had taken from her, and asked of her forgyuenes. But the archebysshop of Caunterbury fled into Normandy; [and this Emma gaue than vnto the monastery of that holy confessoure, seynt Swythyn̄. ix. maners, and the bisshop other. ix. as affermeth Policronica and other.][1] *Fol. Cxxxvi.*

It was nat longe after, that kynge Edwarde gadered a stronge nauy at Southamptoñ, or more verely in the hauyn of Sandwytche; for so moch as he was warned ỹ Swanus, kyng of Denmarke, entended to make warre vpon hym. But Policronicon sayth, that he gadered this nauy to wstande Harolde Harfagar, than kynge of Northganys, that entended to haue entred Englande; but he was letted by the forenamed Swanus, that shortly after made warre vpon the sayd Harolde.

An other Cronycle sheweth, that the Danys & Norgayns, whiche is to meane mē of Norway, were agreed to come ioyntly into Englande; and whyle the kynge was shyppynge of his men, one broughte forthe a bolle full of mede or meth to drynke vpon bon vyage, and after that came bowle after bowle; so that after drynke came dronkennes, and after iangelynge, & iangelynge tourned into stryfe, and stryfe tourned into fyghtynge, where thorough many were slayne, and the other tourned to theyr owne, so that that iourney was left of. But the Legende of his lyfe in the churche telleth, that, he beynge at masse in ỹ churche of Westmynster vpon a Whytsondaye, in the tyme of the leuacion of ỹ sacrement, he laught; wherof the lordes beyng about hym meruayled greatly, & after frayned of hym the cause: wherunto he answered and said, that the Danys w̄ the Norwayes of one assent were purposed to haue comen into this lande, and here to haue taken prayes. But as the kynge of Danys shulde haue entred his shyp, he fylle into the see, and was drowned: soo that I truste in my dayes, they shal nat, nor none other straūgers make any warre in this lande. Narracio.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xi.

IN the tyme of this Edwarde, fyll passyng great snowe, the which beganne in the be- [Li. 6. ca. 24.]

[1] and taken her lecherous lemman the bishope. edit. 1542. 1559. [a] to the deth of her sonne Alphred, and procured venym to the poysonyng Edwarde. [1] *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

gynnynge of Ianuary, and so contynued tyll ỹ xvii. daye of Marche or seynt Patrikes daye, wherof the great quantyte fyll in the West countres of Englande. And after that ensued great dethe of men, and morcyne of beestes, and by lyghtnynge the corne vpon the grounde that yere was wonderfully brente and wasted. Aboute the. x. yere of Edwarde, as moueth Policronica, and in the moneth of September, Eustace, erle of Bolougñ, came a lande at Douer, whiche erle had wedded, after the sayinge of the sayd auctour, kynge Edwardes suster. This was parted from his cõpany in so secret wyse, that his knyghtes were fayne to serche for hym, wenynge to them that he had been slayne by some of the dwellers of the towne. In the whiche serche they demeaned theim so vndescretely, ỹ they slewe a cytezeyne of Douer, by meane wherof the people a rose, and in the questyonynge of this mannes dethe, ran at length vpon the erles company, and slewe. xx. of his men and wounder many moo. Hastely the erle appered & toke his mennes parte, but in conclusyon he was fayne to withdrawe hymselfe with a fewe persones, and rode vnto the kynge, than beynge at Gloucetour, and made vnto hym a greuous compleynt of ỹ men of Douer.

Than erle Goodwyñ, for so moche as to hym was cõmytted the rule of Kent, was charged to ryde thyther, and to take wreche of the inhabytauntes of that towne, but he withsayd that cõmaundement, & counsayled the kynge to sende for the wardeyns of the castell of Douer, and rulers of the towne, for to answere to suche matyers as were layde agayne theym, and if they were gylty to punysshe theym, and elles nat.

This answer of Goodwyñ pleased nothynge the kyng, nor suche as were aboute hym. Wherfore many moò lordes were sent for, omonge the whiche Leofricus, erle of Chester, and Sewarde, erle of Northumberlande, of myne auctour been named. After whiche assemble of the lordes, erle Goodwyñ had suche monycion of some of ỹ counsayll, that he withdrewe hym from the courte, & gadered to hym strengthe of knyghtes out of dyuers shyres, as West Saxon and Kent, & houed at Beuerstoñ tyll his sõnes came vnto hym with more people. Soon after came vnto hym his eldest sone, named Swanus, & brought ẅ hym a fayre company, that he had areyred in Oxenfordeshyre and Glowceter shyre; and Harolde, his other sone, ẅ a feleshyp ỹ he had assembled in East Englande and Huntyngdoñ shyre, so that of thyse people was made a great hoost.

Thanne Goodwyñ to the kynge was accused for gaderynge of so great an hoost; but he excused hym, and sayde it was done to withstande the Walshmen, the whiche contrary proued. He was cõmaũded to sende awaye the people, and to come with a certayne nomber vnto the courte; but that he refused.

Than the kynge with his counsayll beyng at London, Goodwyñ and Harolde was efte sent for, and charged to come to the courte with. xii. persones without moo, and to render into the kynges handes all knyghtes fees that he and Harolde, his sone, had within Englande. To this by theym was answered, that they myght nat come to the counsayll of trechours and gylefull men, and that also with so fewe men in nomber they myght nat ẅout parell or shame passe by the countre.

In this whyle, a parte of Goodwyns knyghts withdrewe theym, and his power beganne to menysshe, and the kynge in this whyle had gadered a stronge hoost. Than proclamacions were made that Goodwyñ shulde come to the courte, as before is sayd, or auoyde the lande within. v. dayes. Wherfore Goodwyñ consyderynge the ieopardy he was in, toke with hym. iii. of his sonnes, that is to meane, Swanus, Tosty, and Gurth, and sayled into Flaunders, where he was receyued of the erle Baldewyñ, after some wryters, whose doughter Swanus his sone had before spoused, and was named Iudeth; and Harolde and Leofricus, two of his other sonnes, with a fewe shyppes, sayled out from Brystowe into Irelande.

Whan the kyng was ascertayned that erle Goodwyñ, with his. v. sõnes was in this maner departed oute of his lande, he shortly after called a parlyament, and by auctoryte of the same, outlawed Goodwyñ, and. iii. sonnes ỹ were gone with hym. And that done, he

he put his owne wyfe, and doughter of Goodwyñ, into the abbey of Warwell, with one mayden, as sayth Maryanus. And so Goodwyñ and his sayd sõnes contynued. ii. yeres outlawed: in the whiche season, he or his retynue toke, dyuers tymes, prayes in ŷ marches of Englande, and in the ende, drewe to hym suche strength that he was purposed to haue entrede ŷ lande[1] of force, & haue to[2] warred vpon the kynge; but by medyatours, that fauoured erle Goodwyñ, a peace was made atwene the kynge and hym. So that, in processe, he was receyued to grace with his sonnes, and his doughter restored to her firste[3] fourmer honour. And for this peace to be contynued, for Goodwyns parte was delyuered for pledges a sone of his, called Wilnotus, & a sone of Swanus, named Hacum or Hacun. The whiche two pledges kyng Edwarde sent vnto Wyllyam, duke of Normandy, to be kepte. Algarus[4], the sone of Leofricus, erle of Chester, to whom the kynge had gyuen the erledome of Harolde, & ruled it discretly in tyme of his absence, and[5] at his retourñ, delyueryd it to hym agayne gladly, & wout grudge. *Fol. C.xxxiii.*

¶ Capitulum. CC.xii.

DVrynge ŷ tyme of this outlawry of Goodwyñ, Willyam Bastarde, duke of Normandy, came with a goodly company into this lande, & was honourably receyued; to whome the kynge made great chere, and after he had taryed here a certayne of tyme, to his agrement and pleasure, he retourned to his owne with great gyftes and pleasures. And Emma, the kynges moder, dyed shortely after, and was buryed at Wynchester. And Swanus, the eldest sone of Goodwyñ, went to Iherusalem, and from thens towarde Lycia, and dyed by the waye of colde that he had taken of goynge barefote. Than the Normans that had gyuen to the kynge euyll counsaylles agayne Englysshemen, were by Goodwyñ and his frendes exyled; amonge ŷ which, Robert, archebysshop of Caunterbury, that hadde spoken sore agayne theym was one, and after went to Rome to complayne to [ŷ pope, than][6] Leoñ the. ix. or Victour ŷ seconde. Whan he had receyued letters of the pope[7], dyrected to the kynge, he retourned to his abbey of Gemeticum, in Normandye, where he somtyme had ben monke and abbot, and there dyed. After hym Stigandus was made his successour; the whiche, as sayth Policronicon, had before tyme lafte the bysshopryche of Shyrborne, & toke the see of Wynchester by strengthe. He also vsed fayres of hooly churche thynges, and was a lewde or vnlettred man, as the more parte of the bysshoppes of Englande at those dayes were. And ouer that he passed other in rychesse and dissymulacion, but yet he neuer had the paule[8] from Rome, though there be great sale that maketh many maistryes. *Historia.*

Than was openly spoken that he was nat worthy a bysshopryche, that coude vse the bragge or pompe of the worlde, the vse of voluptuosyte, of glotany and lechery, the shynynge araye of clothynge, the countenaunce of knyghtes, and the gaderynge of horsemen, & thynke full lytell on the profyte of soules: & if men sayd to theym that a bysshop shulde be chosen for holynesse of lyuynge and for his good clergie, and nat for couetyse of money, they wolde answere as foloweth: *Status Ecclesiæ.*

" Nunc aliud tempus, Alii pro tempore mores.

The which verse may be Englysshed in this maner.

As tyme requyreth, so men doon theym vse
In wynter warme clothes, in somer lyght and lesse:
In tyme of sadnesse men doon gamys refuse,
And in myrth tyme, men to[9] myrthes theym dresse.

[1] Wyth. [2] to haue. [3] and. [4] and Algarus. [5] " and," *omitted.* [6] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [7] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Palle. [9] " to," *omitted* in edit. 1533. 1542.

So in tyme passed, was vsed great sadnesse
In the churche; but nowe men lyght be:
Wherfore the maners must with men agre.

SO that by suche lyght answere, they planed or excused the sharpenesse of theyr mysse lyuynge. Aboute this tyme, whiche shuld by meane[1] of Ranulfe, be aboute the. xii. yere of ẏ reygne of Edwarde, Marianus, the Scot, that before I haue often named, that wrote moche of the dedes of the kynges of Englande, at ẏ age of. xxv. yeres, [forsoke the worlde, and went on pylgrymage, and][2] was after shorne monke at Coleyne, in Almayne, in the abbey of Scottes; whiche Marianus, after some wryters, was in great fauoure with Malcolyne, kynge of Scottes. In the. xiii. yere of kyng Edwarde, the Scottes rebelled agayne the kyng. Wherfore Sewarde, erle of Northumberlande, by the kynges cōmaundement, gaderyd a great hoost, and entrede that lande, and behaued hym so manfully, that in the processe he subdued the Scottes, and chased the kyng out of his countre. So that after, kynge Edwarde gaue that kyngedom vnto Malcolyñ, sone of the kynge of Cumbrys, to be holden of hym and his heyres kynges, as chefe lordes of Scotlande. Vpon Easter Mondaye, aboute the sayd yere, Goodwyñ, syttynge at the kynges bourde with other lordes, in the castell of Wynsore, it happed one of the kynges cuppe berers to stumble and to recouer agayne, so that he shed none of the drynke; wherat Goodwyñ loughed, and sayd, "Nowe that one brother hathe susteyned that other:" wherby he ment ẏ the one fote or legge hath sustayned that other from fallynge. With whiche wordes, the kynge marked hym, and sayd, "ryght so my brother Alfrede shulde haue holpen me, ne hadde erle Goodwyñ ben." The erle than conceyed that the kynge suspected hym of his brothers deth, and sayd vnto the kynge in defendynge his vntrouthe, "Syr, as I perceyue well, it is tolde to the that I shuld be the cause of thy brothers deth, so mut[3] I sauely swalowe this morsell of brede that I here holde in my hande as I am gyltlesse of the dede." But as soone as he had receyued the brede, forthwith he was choked. Than the kynge cōmaunded hym to be drawen from the table, and so was conueyed to Wynchester, and there buryed. Marianus sayth, that as erle Goodwyñ satte at the kynges table at Wynchester, he was sodaynly taken with a palsye or some other sykenesse, vpon the Easter Mondaye, and dyed the thirde daye after, & his lordshyppes were gyuen vnto Harolde, his eldest sone, than lyuynge; and Haroldes erledome was gyuen to Algarus, the sone of Leofricus, whiche was the erledome of Oxenforde, after some wryters. It was nat longe after, ẏ kynge Edwarde sent vnto the. iiii. Henry, than emperoure of Almayne, Aldredus, bysshop of Worcetour, with other noblemen, prayinge hym that he wolde sende vnto Englande his cosen Edwarde, sone of Edmunde Ironsyde: for so moche as he entended to make hym his heyre. The which request was fulfylled, so that he came into Englāde soone after; the which, as ye haue harde before, in ẏ first Chapiter, was named Edwarde the Outlawe. [Of the doughter of this Edwarde, named Margarete, and wyfe of Malcolyñ, kynge of Scottes, and Molde quene of Englande, and wyfe to kynge Stephen.][4]

[Ll. 6. ca. 25.] Marianus.

Goodwynne finis.

But as wytnesseth Guydo and other, the yere after that he came into Englāde, he dyed at Lōdon, and was buryed at Westmynster. This yere folowynge, kynge Edwarde, thorough yll coūsayll, exyled, without gylte, Algarus, the sone of Leofricus; the whiche assosiat hym with Gryffyne, kynge or duke of Walys, & destroyed the coūtre of Harforde[5], and dyd moch harme to the towne, and set the mynster on fyre, and slewe. vii. chanons therof. Than ẏ kynge sente Harolde agayne hym, the whiche chased the Walshemen into their owne boundes, and recouered the sayde towne by appoyntement holden by the sayd Algarus, and amended all hurtes before done by the Walshmen; and lastly reconsyled the sayd Algarus and his cōpany vnto the kynges grace.

[1] "meane of," *omitted.* [2] *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1599. [3] mought. [4] *omitted.* [5] [Hereford.]

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xiii. *Fol. C.xxxiii.*

ABoute the. xv. yere of kynge Edwarde, dyed ỹ noble duke Sewarde, ruler of Northumberlãde, of the flux, of whom Guydo reherseth dyuers notable actes, whiche I passe ouer. Of whom it is radde, that whan he sawe wel he shuld dye, he caused his armo' to be put vpon hym; and so armed, & sytting in a cheyre, hauynge all the ryghtes of the churche, sayd, that so it became a knyght & mã of honour to dye, and nat lyenge as another mene man; and so dyed, & was buryed at Yorke: and his erledome was after gyuẽ to Tosty or Costy, sone of Goodwyñ. In the yere folowynge, or. xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde, dyed also the good erle Leofricus, erle of Mercia and of Chester, and was buryed in the abbey of Couentre, the whiche before he had buylded. This mã purchased many great pryuyleges for the towne of Couentre, & made it free of all maner of towle, except oonly of horse. For the whiche to haue also free, ỹ comen fame telleth, that after longe request made vnto hym by his wyfe, named Godyna, he graũted her to haue it therof freed, ẏ that that she wolde ryde naked thorough the towne, by meane wherof it was freed. Than Algarus, his sone, was erle after hym. Harolde, than the eldest sone of Goodwyñ, was in great auctorite, and ruled moche [of the realme, & had the rule][1] of the kynges army. The yere folowyng, Algarus was accused by malyce, and flemyd[2] the lande: therfore he fled agayne to Gryffyne, duke of Walys, as he before had done, of whom he was ioyously receyued & maynteyned. The kyng therof beyng infourmed, sente Harolde into Walys, to make warre vpon Gryffyñ; the whiche quytte hym in so knyghtly wyse, that he chased the Walshemen, brent the sayde Gryffyns paleys at a place called Rutlañ, and his nauy, and than retourned into Englande aboute myd Lent. But aboute rogacion dayes next folowyng, the sayde Harolde with his brother Tosty, was sente thyther agayne with a stronge army, at whiche season they destroyed a great parte of Walys, and in conclusyon, brought the Walshemen vnto dewe subieccion, and forced theym to gyue pledges for the contynuaunce of the same: and that done, pursued so sore vpon the sayde Gryffyñ, that, in the ende, his owne people, for purchase of theyr owne lyues, slewe the sayde Gryffyñ, and sent his hed vnto Harolde, in the moneth of August: so that after ỹ deth of this Gryffyñ, by the cõmaũdement of the kynge, the countre of Walys was cõmytted to the gydynge of the. ii. bretherne of Gryffyñ, the whiche hadde fauoured more the kynges partye, in tyme of the foresayd warre, than theyr brother. And this warre in Walys thus brought to ende, Harolde, by his polyce, reconcyled agayne Algarus, erle of Mercia, to the kynges grace, so that he contynued in his fauour durynge his lyfe after. Condicio.

[Aboute this tyme, a woman of Bakley, in Barkshyre, vsed yll craftes of sossery, the whiche, as she was syttynge, vpon a daye, at a feest or great dyner, a crowe, that she hadde lykyngly fed and brought vp, kreked louder than he was accustomed to do: whanne the woman harde that noyse, her knyfe fyll out of her hande, and she waxed sodaynly pale, and with that she began to syghe and sorowe, and sayd, alasse, this daye is my soule comyn to the laste sorowe; and so after that she hadde spoken those wordes, a messanger came to her and said, that her sone and all her many was deed sodaynly. Thanne she was conueyed to her owne, and was full syke: wherfore in all haste, she sente for an other sone of hers that was a monke, and a doughter that was a nunne, at whose cõmynge she sayde to theym in this wyse: Punicio diuina.

" I am the woman ỹ haue vsed yll crafte and euyll lyuyng, and in vayne I hoped to haue ben saued by your bedes & prayers, but nowe I praye you, that ye woll releue my tourmentes and paynes, for of my soule the iugement is gyuen: wherfore one[3] case that ye may kepe my body from tourment, sewe it in an hartes skynne, and laye it in a troughe

[1] *Omitted* in the later editions. [2] exyled. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] in. edit. 1533.

of

of stone, and hyll it with lede close and iuste, and after do bynde it with barres of iron in moost strongest and sure wyse, and cause ye. xl. persones to synge psalmes by nyght, & vpon the morne as many masses, and if I lye so styll. iii. nyghtes, than bury my body on the. iiii. daye." But all for noughte; for the firste nyght, whyle the psalmes were in sayinge, the strong bandes were sodaynly to broken, and one, ẏ a gresely loke, was sene vpon an horse backe, all blacke, and caste this woman behynde hym, and so rode forth with so great erye and noyse, that it was harde, as sayth Policronicon. iiii. myles thens. This wolde I nat haue shewed, but that I fynde it wrytten and recorded of dyuers auctours. Than to retourne to our fourmer story, as wytnesseth myn auctour Ranulfe,][1] aboute the. xx. yere of the reygne of kynge Edwarde, Harolde sayled towarde Normandy to visyte his brother Wilnotus, and Hacun his neuewe; the whiche, as ye before haue harde, were layde there for pledges for ẏ peace to be holden vpon erle Goodwyns syde, agayne the kyng; but he, in his course of saylyng, was weder dryuen, & by tẽpest, into ẏ coũtre or prouynce of Pontife, or more verely into ẏ prouynce of Pountyth, where he was taken as a prysoner, and sent vnto duke Wyllyam of Normandy, the whiche forced hym to swere that he in tyme folowynge shulde marye his doughter, & ẏ, after ẏ deth of kyng Edwarde, he shuld kepe the lande of Englande to his behofe, accordynge to the wyll and mynde of Edwarde. After some wryters, and after the opinyon of another Cronycle, wryten in Laten, the said Harolde, for to be in the more fauoure of duke William, shewed to hym, that kyng Edwarde, in presence of his barony, had admytted the sayd Wyllyam for his heyre, and couenaunted with hym, that if he ouer lyued the kynge, he wolde in saue wyse kepe the lande to his vse. For the whiche tydynges and promyse, Wyllyam graunted to hym his doughter to wyfe, that than was within lawfull yeres of mariage, with great dower: and for to cause Harolde to be the more stabeler in his promyse kepyng, he delyuered to hȳ Hacun, his neuewe, and sone of his brother Swanus, whiche he moche desyred, and kept styll with hym Wylnotus, the brother of the sayd Harolde. After whiche couenauntes suffycyently stablysshed & enacted, Harolde departed from duke Wyllyam with great & ryche gyftes, and in processe of tyme, landed in Englande; and at his cõmynge to ẏ kynges presence, shewed to hym all that he had done in ẏ foresayd matyers: wherwith the kynge was well contented, as affermeth the sayd Laten Cronacle.

Iuramẽtũ.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xiiii.

[Li. 6. ca. 27.] IN the. xxii. yere of kyng Edwarde, as testifyeth Ranulf, Tostius, the brother of Harolde, was, for cause nat shewed, disconted[2] in the kynges courte, and went vnto Harforde, in the marche of Walis, where at that tyme, ẏ seruauntes of Harolde, by cõmaundemẽt of theyr maister, were besyed to make prouysion for to receyue the kynge. But whan this Tostius was thyther comen, he cruelly slewe the sayde seruauntes of his brother, and hacked theym in small pecys, and cast theim after in meresawce or salte. And that done, sente worde vnto the kynge, that if he wolde come vnto his feest, he shulde lacke noo powdered mete what soeuer he hadde besyde.

Crudelitas.

Fol. C.xxxiiii. This cruell dede sprange wyde, so that for it he was haied of all men, in somoche that his owne tenauntes, the men of Northumberlãde, of whiche prouynce he than was lorde, arose agayne hym and toke from hym that he hadde, and lastely chaced hym into Flaunders with a fewe persones, than awaytynge vpon hym. But the vertuous kynge Edwarde nat beynge contented with the cõmons doynge, consyderyng it to be done without his aduyce and cõmaundement, sente thyther Harolde to doo correccyon vpon the heedes or capitayns of ẏ Northumbers, wherof they beynge ascertayned, contynued theyr strength, and mette with Harolde and his people, and sent[3] hym to vnderstande that they

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] dysdayned. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] set. edit. 1542. 1559.

were

were frely borne, and frely norysshed, and that they myght nat suffer no cruelnesse of dukes; also they had lerned of theyr elders and soueraynes to meyntayne fredame or to suffer deth, and to lyue in quyetnesse vnder an easy duke. Whan Harolde had conueyed[1] this message, and aduertysed the strength of ỹ Northumbers, he perceyued well, ỹ, without great effusyon of blode, he myght nat correcte the mysse doers; wherfore it semed to hym better to fauoure the countre than to take hede of the synguler profyte of his brother: so that he retourned to ỹ kynge with this answere, and purchased theyr pardon of hym, and also procured so ỹ kynge that he assygned to them an other duke or erle, that was named Malcarus; and Tostius, his brother, with his wyfe and children, remayned in Flaunders durynge the kynges lyfe. [Kynge Edwarde, in the. xxii. yere of his reygne, syttynge at mete in his paleys of Westmynster, sodaynly lowghe, whan other dyd talke and ete, vpon Easter daye. Whan this blessid man had dyned and was entred into his chaumber, his famylyers asked of hym the cause of his lawghyng, to whom he answered, for that same selfe tyme, sayd he. vii. slepers, that in the Mounte Seleon besyde Ephesym, in Asia the lasse, had slepte CC. yeres or there aboute, vpon ỹ right syde, the selfe same tyme they tourned them, and shall slepe seth[2] vpon that other syde. lxxiiii. yeres. Though this be tolde of Ranulfe and other, seth in this saynge appereth some discordaunce with other wryters, and also with the former sayinge of the sayd Ranulfe in the. xxii. Chapiter of his. iiii. Boke of Polycronycon, where he sayth that the sayd. vii. slepers were closed in that caue, the firste yere of Decius, and so sleped contynuyngly to the laste tyme or yeres of Theodocius the yonger, than emperour; (by whiche reason they shuld slepe aboute the season or space of. CC. yere as aboue is said;) and than arose and shewed theym to ỹ sayd Theodocius, emperour, and many other, and dyed soone after, as wytnesseth Vincencius Historyalis, Antonius[3], Iacobus Philippus, and other. Wherfore it can nat stãde with[4] that they shuld slepe vpon that other syde after that turnynge. lxxiiii.[5] as is aboue sayd, nor syth ỹ they shuld sterue in the tyme of this holy kynge and confessoure, for his tyme of reygne was after the tyme of Theodocius aforesayd, more than. vi. C. yeres: but if it be ment by some other, for there are. vii. other slepers spoken of, in ỹ. xxvi. Chapiter of the firste Boke of Polycronycon, that hathe slepte in another caue many yeres. Wherfore I remytte this vnto other, and folowe the ordre of the story, wherin it is founde, that whan this blessyd kynge Edwarde had receyued deuyne monyssion that he shuld chaunge this transetory and bryckell lyfe for ỹ lyfe euerlastynge, he sykened in the Cristenmas weke, in tyme of whiche sykenesse was shewed to hym a vysyon, that he after shewed vnto such as were about hym, and sayd. "ii. men of relygyon come to me ỹ I somtyme was famylier w̃ in Normandy, & shewed that they were sent from God vnto me, to gyue vnto me warnỹge of such thynges as foloweth.

Visio.

Narracio.

"And firste they sayd, ỹ for the dukes, bysshoppes and abbottes of England, be nat Goddes seruauntes, but the deuylles, God hath taken this kyngdome into the handes of enemyes for a tyme, and fyndes shall walke and destroble ỹ people. Than I besought God that ỹ people myght haue warnynge, and do penaunce, and be delyuered as the people were of the cytie of Ninyue. Nay, sayd they, for thyse men be so indurat of harte that they shuld do no worthy penaunce, nor to theym God shall showe his mercy nor forgyuenesse. Thanne I asked of theym, whan myght be hope of mercy & pardone. They answered, whan a grene tree is hewen downe, and a parte therof cut from the stocke and layde. iii. teme of[6] fourlonge from the stocke, and without mãnes helpe or hande, shall retourne to his stocke or rote, and take agayñ his shappe, and than floresshe & bryng forth fruyte. Whan this is done, than may be hope of cõforte & of remedy." In the tyme ỹ this blessyd man shewed thus this vision, was present there, w̃ other, Stigandus, archebysshop of Caunterbury, the whiche sayde vnto the other, ỹ the kynge raued, or

[1] receyued. [2] agayne. edit. 1533. [3] Antoninus. edit. 1533. [4] with reason. edit. 1533.
[5] lxxiv. yeres. edit. 1533. [6] "teme of," *omitted* in edit. 1533.

ellys doted for age & sykenesse as olde men done, and accompted thyse wordes for foly and vanytie. But nat longe after, Englande felte and conceyued this prophecye, whan it was in subieccion of straungers and alyauntes, as after shalbe shewed. Thanne who ỹ is
The grene tree. desyrous to knowe ỹ exposycion of the prophecie of ỹ grene tree, let hym rede in ỹ ende of ỹ lyfe of this gloryous kynge & confessoure, translated by Wyllyam Caxton, in the boke called ỹ Legeaunt of Sayntes, & there he shall fynde it. Albe it, that in other places I haue sene it otherwyse interpreted, ỹ whiche I remytte to theym that haue experience in suche faculties; & to conclude this story,[1] trouth it is, ỹ this blessyd kynge dyed the. iiii. daye of Ianuary, whan he hadde reygned. xxiii. yeres. vii. monethes and odde dayes, and was buryed in the monastery of Westmynster, the whiche he before had greatly augmented and repayred, but nat in that maner and fourme that it is nowe in: for the churche, that nowe there standeth, was so reedyfied and buylded newe of Henry the. iii. and sone of kynge Iohñ.

The whiche also, after some wryters, translated this blessyd kynge Edwarde from the lower parte of the churche, and shryned hym there he nowe lyeth; and this kynge Edwarde lafte after hym no childe, for he was accompted for a virgyn whan he dyed.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xv.

PHilip, the firste of that name, and sone of Henry, began his domynyon ouer ỹ Frēshemen in the yere of our Lord. M.lviii. and the. xvi. yere of Edwarde the Confessour than kynge of Englande. And of this Philip it is radde, that he maryed a wyfe, named Berta, the doughter of Baldewyñ, erle of Holande and of Fryce: of the whiche Berta,
Fol. C.xxxv. this Phylyp receyued a sone, and named hym Lowys, and a doughter, that was called
Historia. Counstaūce. But in processe of tyme, he haunted so moche the company of a woman, named Bertrande, that he hated his lawfull wyfe, and at length helde her in pryson, and kepte that other in her stede, and gatte vpon ỹ sayd Bertrande. ii. sōnes, named Phylyp & Florys, & a doughter, whiche myne auctour nameth nat. For this aduoutry he was often monysshed of ỹ pope[2] that he shuld leue ỹ company of that yll woman, and take to hym his lawfull wyfe, that he so longe had holden in pryson within this castel of Monfruell: and for he wolde nat be obedyent vnto the popes[3] counsayll, he was fynally accursed of pope Vrban[4], the seconde of that name, by meane wherof he was reconsyled and restored agayne to his wyfe, and refused his concubyne.

Godfrey de Bulion. And in the tyme of this Phylyp, Godfrey de Bulion, with many other Cristen prynces, at the exortacyon of Peter the heremyte, sayled into the holy lande, and wanne the cytie of Ierusalem of[5] the Sarasens handes, whiche prynces lastly crowned the sayd Godfrey kynge of the sayd cytie; and after so contynued in possessyon of Cristen men by ỹ terme of. lxxxx. yeres vnder. ix. Cristen kynges, & lenger myght haue endured, had nat discencion fallen amonges themself, and so by Antonius[6], Peter Disrey, & other it is manyfestly shewed. This viage, after moste accorde of wryters, began in the yere of grace. M. lxxxvi. and the. xxvii. yere of this Phylyp; and the sayde Godfrey was crowned kyng of ỹ sayd cytie of Ierusalem, after ỹ affirmaūce of the sayd wryters, in the yere of grace. M. lxxxix. [and the yere of the reygne][6] of this Philyp, lytell worthy memory is lafte in wrytynge: for lyke as his fader Hary made hym kynge by his lyfe, and suffered hym to haue the rule of ỹ lande, ryght so this Phylyp, after a certayne of tyme, cōmytted the rule of the lande vnto Lowys his sone, and he sette his mynde to huntynge and other disportes, and so ladde his lyfe in all slowth and idelnesse.

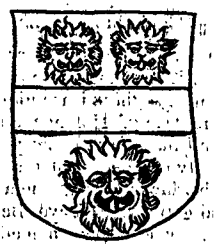
Than Lowys, takynge vpon hym the charge of the realme, subdued the erle of Mount Merusy and other that laboured to take from the churche of seint Denys certayne pryueleges, and also constrayned theim to restore and satysfye all hurtes & harmes to the sayd

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Urban, bisshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] out of. [5] Antoninus. [6] *omitted in the later editions.*

churche by theym doon. This Lowys, as affermeth the frensshe Cronycle, maryed the doughter of Guy, erle of Cotcheforde; the whiche after, for nerynesse of kynne, was deforced from the sayd Lowys, to ỹ great displeasure of the sayd erle Guy: wherfore he moued warre agayne the sayd Lowys, and toke from hym certayne holdes & castelles, of the whiche the castell of Gurney was one. But at length Lowys had the better of that warre, and recouered dyuers of ỹ sayd holdes: and amonge other prysoners by hym and his knyghtes taken, he toke a myghty and strong capitayne of the sayd erle Guy, named Hombolde, the whiche he sent to ỹ castell of Stampes, there sauely to be kept. Durynge which warre, Phylyp the kynge sykened, and dyed the yere of grace. M.C.vi. whanne he had reygned full. xlviii. yere, and was buryed at seynt Benet sur Loyre.

The Armys of kynge Harolde.

ANGLIA.



Capitulum. CC.xvi.

HArolde, ỹ seconde sone of erle Goodwyn, & last kyng of Saxons, began to rule ỹ realme of Englande ỹ. v. day of Ianuary, & the yere of our Lord. M.lxvi. the viii. yere of Phylyp the firste, than kynge of Fraunce. This, as moste myghty, for so moche as the blessyd kyng Edwarde dyed without issue, nat myndyng the promysse of hym before made vnto William, duke of Normandy, as before I haue shewed, toke vpon hym as kynge, & was crowned of Aldredus, than bisshop of Yorke. Albe it, as affermeth Guydo and other, some of the lordes entended to haue made Edgare Adelynge kynge, whiche Edgare, as affermeth the sayde auctours, was sone to Edwarde, that was the sone of Edmunde Ironsyde, and named of some, Edwarde the Outlawe. Anglia. [Li. 6. ca. 264]

But for this Edgarre was yonge, and specyally for Harolde was stronge of knyghtes and rychesse, he wanne the rynge: how be it, Marianus sayth ỹ kyng Edward ordeyned before his deth, that Harolde shuld be kyng after hym, by reason wherof the lordes crowned hym therupon at Westmynster. Anone as he was crowned, he began to fordoo euyll lawes and customes before vsed, and stablysshed the good lawes, & speeyally whiche as were for the defence of holy churche, and punysshed the euyll doers, to the fere and example of other.

In shorte tyme after ỹ Harolde was thus made kynge, Tosty or Costy, his brother, whiche as before is sayde, was of the Northumbers chased into Flaunders, made hym a nauy of. lx. small sayles, and sayled about the Ile of Wyght, and toke prayes within the said ile and in other places of Kent, and from thens he sayled into Lynsey, and dyd there

reygne. * suche.

moche harme, both with fyre & swerde; but soone after he was chased thens by Edwyñ and Malcharus, erles of Mercia and of Northumberlande, and than he sayled into Scotlande, and taryed there tyll the somer after.

Whan Tostius was thus with his robbers chased, than Harolde Harfagar, kyng of Northganys or Norweys, with a great nauy of. CCC. shyppes or moo, entrede the mouth of ŷ ryuer of Tyne. This Harolde Harfagar, as saythe Guydo, was the sone of Canutus, and kynge of Denmarke and of Norwey; the whiche herynge of the deth of hooly Edwarde, purueyed the sayd great army to wynne Englande, as his ryghtfull enherytaunce. Whan Harolde was warned of this great flote of Danys, he sent vnto the forenamed erles or dukes of Mercia and of Northumberlande, cōmaundynge theym to withstande theyr landynge whyle he gadered his strength.

Thanne the foresayd dukes spedde theim towarde the Danys, and gaue vnto theym a sharpe and stronge fyght. But, in conclusyon, the Englysshemen were put to ŷ warse, & were fayne to gyue backe, so that the enemyes entred farther into the lande.

The kynge herynge of the scomfyture of his people, mad the more hast towarde his enemyes; so that the. vi. daye after he came to Stemyśforde Brygge. In this whyle was Tostius, before named, come out of Scotlande, and gone to the party of ŷ Danys agayne his owne brother. In this foresayd place bothe hoostes ioyned, and faught thanne there a sharpe cruell batayll, wherin fyll many a sturdy knyght vpon the Englysshe partye, but mo vpon the Danys syde; so that in the ende Harolde, theyr kynge, was slayne, and that of the hande of Harolde, kyng of Englande, as sayth Guydo: and Tostius was also slayñ in ŷ same fyght. Olanus, brother to ŷ sayd Harolde Harfagar, with Paulus, duke of the Iles of Orkeys, were there taken prysoners; the whiche the kynge caused to hym to be sworne to kepe such promysses as they to hym there made, and toke good pledges for the perfourmaunce of ŷ same, & after suffered them to retourne frome thens they were comen.

Fol. C.xxxvi.

It is also specyally remembred of the sayd auctour, that one knyght stode vpon ŷ foresaid brygge, & with his axe defended the passage maugre the hole hoost of the Englysshemen, & slewe. xl. Englysshemen or moo with his axe, and myght nat be ouercomen tyll an Englysshеman went vnder the brygge and stycked hym vpwarde with his spere thorough an hole of the brygge. For this victory Harolde was suppressed with pryde, and also ẅ couytous, so that he deuyded nat the prayes of his enemyes amonge his knyghtes, but kepte theym to hymselfe, or gaue parte vnto suche knyghtes as he fauoured, and spared to theym that hadde wele deserued; by reason wherof he lost the fauoure of many of his knyghtes.

[Li. 6. ca. 29.] Polycy. In this passe tyme, the doughter of duke William, the whiche Harolde shuld haue maryed, dyed within age; wherfore Harolde thought hym the more discharged of his promysse before made to her fader. But duke Willyam warned Harolde of couenauntes broken, and meddeled menasses with prayers by sondry tymes: wherunto Harolde answered, "that a nyce folysshe couenaunte ought nat to be holden, & namely, the behest of other mennes ryght and kyngdome, without the hole assent of the senatours of the same lande: and farthermore, a lewde othe myght and oughte to be broken, and specyally whan it is compelled to be sworne for nede or for drede."

Vpon thyse answers receyued by duke Willyam from Harolde, in the whyle that messangers went and came, duke Willyam gadered his knyghtes and prepayred his nauy, and all other thynges necessary to the warre, and had assent of the lordes of his lande to ayde and assyste hym in his iourney: and ouer that, he in such wyse enfourmed the pope[1] than beynge named Alexaunder the seconde, that he confourmed hym in takynge of that vyage, and sent vnto hym a banner, the whiche he wylled hym to bere in the shyp that he hymselfe shuld sayle in. And so beynge purueyed of all thynges concernynge his

[1] Bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

iourney,

iourney, he sped hym to the see syde, and toke shyppynge in the hauen of seynt Valery, where he taryed a lōge tyme or he myght haue a couenable wynde; for the which his soldyours murmured and grudged, and sayd it was a wodnesse & great dyspleasynge to God to desyre another mannes kyngdom by strength, and namely, whanne God withsayd it by the werkynge of his element.

At the laste, [whan duke William had longe bydden and houed for the wynde, he cōmaunded to bryng forth the body of seynt Valery, and to be sette vpon the see stronde, ŷ which so done,][1] the wynde shortly after came aboute and [fylled the sayles. Than Willyam thanked God and saynt Valary, & toke shortly after,][2] shyppynge, and helde his cource towarde Englande, vpon this grounde & tytle folowyng.

The firste and pryncypal was to chalenge his right, and to haue the domynyon of ŷ lande that to hym was gyuen, as he affermed, of kynge Edwarde the Confessour and his neuewe. Duke Willyams quarrell.

The seconde was to take wrech of his deth and cruell murdour of his neuewe Alfrede, and brother of ŷ blessyd kynge Edwarde, ŷ was slayne of erle Goodwyn & his adherentes, as before ye haue harde in ŷ story of Hardykynitus; the which dede he asscribed chefely vnto Harolde.

And ŷ thirde was for to auenge ŷ wrong doon vnto Robert, archebysshop of Caunterbury, which, as he was enfourmed, was exiled by the meanes and laboure of Harolde, in the tyme of Edwarde the Confessour, as before is shewed.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xvii.

DVke Willyam kepynge his course, landed, in processe of tyme, at Hastyng, i Sussex, in a place called Peuenessey, and in his goynge oute of his shyp, and takynge the lande, his one fote slode, and that other stacke faste in the sande; the whiche espyinge, one of his knightes, that was nere vnto hym, cryed alowde and sayd, "now syr duke, thou holdest Englande, and thou shalte soone be tourned from a duke to a kynge."

The duke of this made game, & entred further into the lande, and made his proclamacyons & cryes, that no man shulde take any prowes[3] or do any force to the people, for he sayd that it was resonable that he shulde spare that thynge that shulde be his owne. Harolde in this whyle was in the North parties of Englande, and had wyttynge of the landynge of ŷ Normans, and sped hym towarde theym in all that he myght, and gathered his strength by the countrees as he came; but the duke made so good spede that he came to Londō before ŷ kynge, where he was holden out tyll he had made good suertie, that he and his people shulde passe thorugh the cytie without taryinge, the which was obserued, and so he passynge the cytie, passed the brydge, and wente ouer into Sussex.

Kyng Harolde entendyng to know the strength of his enemyes, sent espyes into the dukes hoost, the whiche made reporte vnto the kynge, that all duke Willyams soldyours were preestes, for they had theyr ouer lyppes and chekes shauen; and the Englysshemen, at those dayes, vsed the heer of theyr ouer lyppes shadde and nat shauen. But Harolde to that answered and sayd, "They be no preestes, but they are stalworth and sturdy knyghtes."

Thanne Gurth or Surth, one of the yongest bretherne of Harolde, counsayled hym that he shulde stande aparte, and suffer hym with other of his lordes to fyghte with the Normans, for so moch as he was sworne to the duke, and they were nat; aledgynge farthermore, ŷ if they were ouerthrowen, that yet he myghte defende his quarell, and fyghte for the countree. In this meane tyme, Willyam sent a monke vnto Harolde, and proferred to hym iii. maner of wayes, and to chose one of the. iii.

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] and they toke. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] prayes.

Articulis for peace.

The firste, that accordynge to his othe, he shulde render the lande, or delyuer it vnto the possessyon of William. And that done, to take it agayne of hȳ, and holde it of hym as in fee; and so to reygne vnder hym for terme of his lyfe, and after his deth to retourne it to the sayd William, or to such one of his sonnes as he wolde assygne it vnto: or secondely, leue the kyngdome without more stryfe or thirdely, in exchewynge of shedd ynge of the more plenty of cristen mennes blode, that he wolde defende his quarell in his owne persone agayne the duke, and they two oonly to try the matyer by dynt of swerde. But Harolde refused thyse offers, and sayde, he wolde trye his quarell by dynt of swerdes, & nat by one swerde, and that he and his knyghtes wolde defende theyr countre agayne all straunge nacyons, praying to God to deme the ryght atwene theym twayne.

Whan duke William had receyued this answere from Harolde, and sawe wele that there was no meane but fortune of' batayll, he charged his people that myght watche, to occupye theim in prayer; and specially the preestes and the relygyous people: where the Englysshe men gaue theym all to drynke & songe.

Than vpon the morowe, beynge Saterdaye, and the. xiiii. daye of October, [and the daye of seynt Calyxte, the pope,]* both hoostes assayled other in that place, where as nowe standeth the abbey of Batayl, in Sussex. In the begynnynge of this batayll, a baner, or baneret, called Thilfer, a Norman, splayed before the hoost of Normans, and slewe an Englysshe man, or knyght, that came agayne hym; and after that one other, & so the thyrde, and was slayne at the laste.

Historia. *Fol. C.xxxvii.*

Than the Seltrons smote togyder with a great noyse and crye, and faught sore a longe season, and the Englysshe men defended theym manfully, and the better for that, that they kepte theym hole togyder without scatterynge or spryngynge abrode; the whiche whan Wyllyam apperceyued, he gaue a sygne vnto his knyghtes that they shuld gyue backe and make countenaunce as they dyd flee. Than the Normans imbateled ȳ fotemen, and sette horsemen for wynges on euery syde, by whiche whyle the Englysshe men were desceuered and soone out of araye, and the Normayns tourned agayne vpon the Englysshe men, & slewe theym downe on euery syde.

Batayll strange.

This batayll was sore foughten of ȳ Englysshe men, that duke Wyllyam was thryse felled that daye, by reason that iii. horse were that daye slayne vnder hym. Lastely Harolde was wounded in the ye with an arowe, and fyll to the ground, & was slayne; and his people to scatered, so that wele was hym that myght saue hym selfe by fleynge.

Than duke Wyllyam buryed his men that there were slayn, and suffered his enemys to do the same. Of the deth of this Harolde is dyuersly wryten. For Geraldus Cambrensis in his boke called Itineranus' sayth, that after Harolde had receiued many woundes, and lost his lefte ye, he fledde from that felde to the contre of Chester, and lyued longe after an holy lyfe, as an ancre, in the selle of seynt Iames, faste by seynt Iohns churche, and made there an holy ende, than the deth of Harolde was knowen to the erles of Mercia and of Northumberlande, the whiche, for streytnesse of waye myght nat brynge theym people to that felde, or els for that that they wylfully wdrewe theym selfe from Harolde, bycause he none otherwyse departed the prayes amonges theym and theyr knyghtes at the former felde of Norgaynes, than they drewe the next waye to London, and toke Agatha, Haroldes wyfe, and sente her to Chester, and they & Aldredus, bysshop of Yorke, with ȳ Lōdoners agreed and promysed, eyther vnto other, that they wolde make Edgare Athelynge kynge, and defende his ryght to the vttermoste of theyr powers.

Historia.

But, that promyse nat withstandyng, whan they harde of the great strength that dayly fell to duke Wyllyam, and of his prouysyons, they were fayne to breke that appoyntement; and the sayd erles submytted theym, and gaue to hym pledges, & became to hym his lyege men by omage and feautye.

And thus whan Harolde hadde ruled the lande from the. v. daye of Ianuary, to the.

' in. * *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. ' Itinerarius.

xiiii. day of October, he was slayne, whan he had reygned in monethes and odde dayes, and was buryed at the monastery of the holy crosse of Waltham, whiche he before had founded, and sette therin chanons, and gaue vnto them fayre possessyons.

And here endeth for a tyme ye blod of Saxons, the which continued, to reken from Hengestus firste reygne, by the space of tyme of .CC.lxxxv. yeres. And if it be rekened from ye begynnyng of the West Saxons, than it endureth by the terme of .CC. lxxb yeres: whiche contynued as rulers and kynges of this lande, the tyme onely except that passed atwene the firste yere Canutus, & the leste yere of Hardekynutus: in the which season passed or flowed vpō .xxiiii. yeres. Albe it that the persecuoyon of the Danys lasted moche lenger, as tofore I haue shewed in the story of the forenamed Kynutus.

¶ Capitulum .CC. xviii.

THan forasmoche that God, of his vnknowen iugemētes to man, and by his hygh and hyd counsayll, wolde suffer this duke to conquere so noble a lande, and to be lorde and souerayne ouer so many noble enherytours as were & nowe be within the same; I thynke it conuenyent to shewe here the dyscent of the sayde duke, & howe nere of blode he was vnto the blessyd kynge, Edwarde the Confessoure.

Genologia.

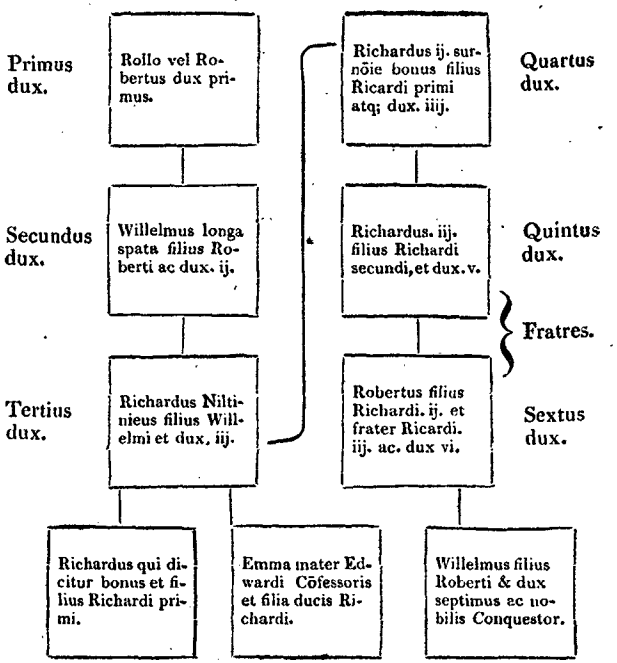
Wherfor as before to you I haue shewed, in the story of Charlys the Symple, sometyme kynge of Fraunce, that a myscreaunt, or a pagan, named Rollo, persecuted sore the realme of Fraūce, and lastely wan by strength the cytie of Roan, the hed or chief cytie of Normandy; and in cōclusyon, for a fynall peace attwene the sayde kynge and Rollo to be had, the sayd Rollo was cristened and named Robert, & maryed Silla, the doughter of the sayd Charlys, to whome the kynge gaue, in way of dower, the hole duchy of Normādy: the whiche Robert, after he was cristened, ruled that dukedome as a good cristen man, by the terme of xiiii. yeres, and receyned of the sayd Silla, a sone, and named hym Wyllyam, the whiche after was surnamed Longa Spata, as who wolde saye, Willyam with a longe swerde.

This Willyam was duke after his fader xxv. yeres, and lefte after hym a sone, named Richarde, whiche, as before is shewed in the story of Lowys the vi. was named Richarde the Hardy.

Than Richarde the Hardy was the iii. duke, and reygned iii. yeres; and had by his wyfe, a sone, named Richarde the Good, and Emma, that was wyfe to Egelredus, & moder to seynt Edwarde the Confessour. After hym the good Richarde was duke, & reygned xxviii. yeres, & lafte after hym two sonnes, that is to say, Richarde and Robert. The firste, after two yeres, was slayne by treason of his brother Robert; so that Robert was than duke, and reygned ix. yeres. The whiche Robert, as it is before shewed in the story of Henry, kynge of Fraunce, was father vnto this duke Wyllyam. And this Wyllyam was the vii. duke of Normādy, and ruled it or he conquered Englande, after moost wryters, xxx. yeres.

Wherby it appereth that Emma was aunte to duke Robert, father of William Conqueroure; and seynt Edwarde and this duke Wyllyam were, by the fathers syde, cosen iarmaynes remoued, as sheweth by this draught folowynge.

Fol. C.xxxviii.


Primus dux.
Rollo vel Robertus dux primus.
Richardus ij. surnõie bonus filius Ricardi primi atq; dux. iiij.
Quartus dux.
Secundus dux.
Willelmus longa spata filius Roberti ac dux. ij.
Richardus. iij. filius Richardi secundi, et dux. v.
Quintus dux.
Fratres.
Tertius dux.
Richardus Niltinieus filius Willelmi et dux. iij.
Robertus filius Richardi. ij. et frater Ricardi. iij. ac. dux vi.
Sextus dux.
Richardus qui dicitur bonus et filius Richardi primi.
Emma mater Edwardi Cõfessoris et filia ducis Richardi.
Willelmus filius Roberti & dux septimus ac nobilis Conquestor.
Dux septimus.[1]

And thus here an ende of the. vi. parte of this werke: for so moche as the lande was here conquered, and put vnder the rule of an other nacion. [Wherfore as before I haue vsed and done to gyue thanks vnto ỹ most blessyd virgyne our lady, saynt Mary, as farther and conductrice of this werke; so here agayne I salute & hayle her to the. vi. ioye of ỹ forenamed. vii. ioyes, thus begynnynge,

Gaude virgo mater Christi tu que sola, &c.

All hayle and be gladde, most noble & moder dere
Of Ihesu Christe; virgyne moost pure & clene:
Deseruynge oonly by grace, and lyuynge moost clere,
To be of that dignytie: thou celestyall quene
To perce the heuyns that beeth so serene.
And next to the trone of the hygh Trinitee,
Tho[2] arte admytted for to holde thy see.][3]

[1] *In the subsequent editions this Pedigree is given in English.* [2] Thou. edit. 1533. [3] *omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

This.

This. vj. parte to be accompted from the firste yere of Iwe, vnto the laste daye of the reygne of Harolde, or begynnynge of Wyllyam Conqueroure, includeth of yeres. CCC. lxxx. yeres and one.

And so this lande was conquered, after the firste comynge of Brute, to folowe thaccompte of this werke, by the force of this duke Wyllyam and his Normayns. ii. M. CC. and. ii. yere.

Finit Pars Sexta.

INCIPIT PARS SEPTIMA.

Nowe shaketh my hande, my pen waxeth dulle, *Fol. Cxxxix.*
For weryd and tyred; seynge this werke so longe:
The auctours so rawe, and so ferre to culle:
Dymme and derke, and straunge to vnderstonde[1];
And ferre oute of tune, to make trewe songe.
The stotyes and yeres to make accordaunt,
That it to the reder myght shewe trewe and plesaunt.

But vnder correccion, all thynges may be bosne,
And so I remytte it to suche as been experte,
Prayinge to theym, as I haue done beforne,
[To fauoure and correcte; so that vnder couerte][2]
Of theyr proteccion, this maye shewe aperte,
Holsome and playne, fruytefull and profytable,
And to the reders and herers ioyous and delectable.

For were nat that, I durst nat farther wade;
The streme is so depe, and therto so daungerous:
But one thynge there is, that somwhat doth me glade,
The great daunger, and storyes doughtous
Been ouer passed, so that more bounteous
The auctours been, and more manyfestly
The storyes folowynge they doon certyfy.

Wherfore as before, to you I dyd promyse,
This vii. parte, nowe I woll take on hande;
Besechyng alwayes, in moost humble wyse,
The welle of bountie, that Flowre most odorande,
By whose humylytie, man firste comforte fande,
And was redemed from his captiuytie,
This parte to fynysshe, she wyll myn helper be,

[1] vndersonge. edit. 1559. [2] *This line is omitted* in the edit. 1542 and 1559; *and in the latter the following is introduced as the fifth line:*

" Howe men are rewarded after their deserte."

And

And brynge to ende, this werke that I haue take
On hande to wryte, oonly of entent
To brynge to lyght; and for it shulde nat shake
The olde honoure, that to Englande was ment
Of famous wryters, whiche haue theyr duytes sent
Vnto theyr folowers, all vyces to subdue,
Honoure to meyntayne, and to exalte vertue.

Here after foloweth the Story of duke William Conquerour.

¶ Capitulum. CC. xix.

WIllyam duke of Normandye, surnamed Conquerour, bast sone of Robert, the vi. duke of that sayde dukedome, and neuewe vnto Edwarde the Confessour, as before is shewed, began his domynion ouer this realme of Englande, the. xv. daye of October, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion. M lxvii. and the. ix. yere of ỹ firste Philyppe, than kynge of Fraunce: and was crowned kyng of the same, vpon Cristemas daye nexte folowynge, of Aldredus, archebysshop of Yorke; for so moche as at that tyme, Stigandus, archebisshop of Caunterbury, was than absent or durst nat come in the presence of the kynge, to whom he ought no great fauoure, as in the sequele shall appere. Whan Wyllyam had set in quyet a great parte of this lande, he betoke the gydynge therof to his brother, the bysshop of Bayon, and in Lent folowynge, sayled into Normandy, and led with hym the chief rulers of England, for doute of sturrynge in tyme of his absence; amonge the whiche, ỹ. ij. erles Morcarus & Edwyñ, rulers of Northumberlande and Mercya, were. ij., with also Stigandus, and Edgare Ethelynge.

To the whiche Stigandus Wyllyam shewed great reuerence, and countenaunce of fauoure, but all proued to great discymulacion after as was shewed by the depryuynge of the sayd Stigandus, & prysonement of hym in Wynchester towne, by a longe tyme & season. In the nexte wynter, when Wyllyam had sped his besynesse in Normandye, he retourned into Englande with great pompe, and sette a greuous trybute vpon the Englysshe men; by reason wherof some parties of the lande rebelled agayne hym, and specially the cytie of Excetour, *Fol. C. xl.* the whiche defended hym for a certayne of tyme: but lastly, by force, he wanne the sayde cytie, and punysshed the cytezeyns greuously. For this, & other sterne dedes of Wyllyam, Morcharus, erle of Northumberlande, with Edgare Athelynge, and dyuers other, as his moder and. ii. susters, Margarete, and Crystyan, sayled into Scotlande: but another Cronicle telleth, that Edgare entendynge ẇ Agatha, his moder, and his. ii. susters to haue sayled into Almayne, where he was borne, was, by tempest of ỹ see, dryuen into Scotlande, wher of Malcolyne, than kynge of Scottes, they were ioyntly[1] receyued. And in processe of tyme the sayd Malcolyne caste suche loue vnto the sayd Margaret, that he toke her to wyfe, as before is touched, in the firste Chapitre of ỹ story of Canutus; of the whiche Margaret, the sayd Malcolyne receyued. vi. sonnes[2]: thre, named Edgare, Alexaunder, and Dauyd, were kynges of Scotland next folowynge theyr fader; and Molde, one of the foresayde doughters, was after maryed vnto the firste Henry, kynge of Englande, and other[3] Mary was maryed to Eustace, erle of Bolongii. Of Molde, the firste doughter, Henry receyued. ii. sonnes, named Wyllyam and Richarde, the whiche bothe dyed before theyr fader, as after in the storye of the sayde Henry shall appere; and he receyued also. ii. doughters, named Molde and Mary, whiche Molde or Mawde was maryed to the fyfte Henry, emperoure of Almayne; after whose dethe she was agayne maryed to Godfrey of[4] Geoffrey Plantagenet, erle of Aungeowe, of whom dessended Henry, surnamed Shorte mantell, and kynge of Englande, called Henry the seconde. And ỹ other doughter Mary was maryed vnto the erle of Blaynes, of whom dessended

[1] ioyously. [2] ii. doughters and. vi. sonnes, wherof. [3] the other doughter. [4] or. Molde

Molde or Mawde, that was wyfe vnto kynge Stephen. Than it foloweth, that this Willyam, after this foresayd trybute so leuyed of the Englysshemen, and knowynge of the depertynge of the lordes foresayd, kept the other the streyter. But it was nat longe after that Marcharus was reconsyled to the kynges grace, and fayled agayne, as folowyngly shalbe shewed. For this and other causes, whiche were tedyous to shewe, Wyllyam exalted [the Normans, and gaue vnto theym][1] the chief possessyons of the lande, so that they dayly encreased in great honour and welth, and the Englysshemen as faste decayed. Kynge Wyllyam also made. iiii. stronge castelles, wherof. ii. be[2] sette at Yorke, the thirde at Lyndetyngham or Notyngham, and manned theym with Normayns, and the. iiii. at Lyncolne.

Aboute the thirde yere of his reygne, Harolde and Canutus, sones of Swanus, kynge of Denmarke, came on lande in the Northe of Humber, with a stronge nauy, and in all haste drewe theym towarde Yorke. Than the Normayns, which hadde the rule of the towne and castelles, ferynge that the Englysshemen would haue eyded the[3] Danys, and with the houses the[4] suburbes of the towne, haue fylled the towne dyches, sette the suburbes on fyre; wherof ỹ flame was so bygge, and with that[5] wynde so stronge, that it toke into the cytie, and brente a parte therof with the mynster of seynt Peter. In tyme wherof the Danys, by fauour of some of the cytezeyns, entered the cytie, and slewe mo than. iii. M. of the Normayns. But it was nat longe or kynge Willyam chased the Danys to theyr shyppes, and toke so great displeasure with the inhabytauntes of that prouynce, that he destroyed the lande lyinge bytweene Yorke and Durham, in suche wyse, that. ix. yeres after or there aboute, the lande laye vnlabored and vntylled, oonly out taken seynt Iohns lande of Beuerley, [the whiche was forborne by reason of a wreche done by dyuyne power vpon one of kynge Wyllyams knyghtes, the whiche, as he was besyed in wastynge and spoylinge of the sayd countre, fyll sodeynly with his horse, so that his horse brake his necke, and the knyghtes face was turned to his backe.][6] And of the famyne that the people of that countre susteyned, wonders are reported that they shuld ete all maner of vermayne, as cattes, rattes, dogges, & other, so harde they were kepte by the warre of the kyng; & in ỹ yere also Molde or Mawde, the wyfe of kynge Wyllyam, was crowned quene of Englande, of Aldredus, archebysshop of Yorke. In the. iiii. yere of the reygne of this kynge, the Scottes, with Malcolyne theyr kynge, entred Northumberlande, & wasted & destroyed sore that countre, & slewe therin moche people, & many they toke prysoners, & helde theym as bonde men.

But in the. vi. yere of his kyngdome, Wylliam made suche warre vpon the Scottes, that he lastly forced the sayd Malcolyne to swere to hym bothe homage and feautye, as it is wytnessed of Wyllyam of Malmesbury, and other wryters.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xx.

KYnge Wyllyam, by cousayll of the erle of Hertforde and other, caused the abbeys of Englande to be serched, and what money in theym at ỹ season was founde, he caused it to be brought to his treasour; [for the which dede, after the exposycion of some auctours, the sayd erle was punysshed, as after shalbe shewed.][7]

So[8] vpon this, in the tyme atwene Easter and Wytsontyde, was holden a solempne counsayll at Wynchester, of the clergy of Englande, at the whiche counsayll were present ii. cardynalles sent from the seconde Alexaunder, than pope.[9]

In this cousayll Stigandus, archebysshop of Cauterbury, was depryued from his dignytie, and that for. iii. skylles.

The firste was for that he had holden wrongfully that bysshopryche, whyle Robert, the archebysshop, was lyuynge. Bysshop depryued.

The seconde cause was, for that he hadde receyued the paule of pope Benet[10], the. v. of ỹ name.

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] he. edit. 1559. [3] wolde ayde. [4] of the. [5] the. [6] soone. [7] bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Benet, bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

And the thirde cause was, for that he occupyed ŷ sayd paule without lycence and lefull auctorite of the court of Rome. Than Stigandus proued ŷ benyuolence of kyng Willyam: for where before he made to hym louyng & frendly countenaunce, & dyd vnto hym great reuerence, than he chaũged all his myldenesse into sternesse, and excused hym by the popes[1] auctoryte; so that in the ende, Stigandus was depryued of his dignytie, and kept in Wynchester, as a prysoner, terme[2] of his lyfe. It is recorded of hym, ŷ he was so couetous & sparynge, that he wold take no thynge of his owne, and vsed to swere by Alhalowes, that he had nat one peny; but ŷ othe was proued vntrewe after his deth, by a lytell keye ŷ was founde fastened aboute his necke, for by ŷ keye was founden great treasour vnder the erth, in moo places than one.

In this counsayll also were put downe dyuers other bysshoppes, abbottes, and pryours, by the meanes of kynge Wyllyam, and also to[3] thentent ŷ he might preferre Normayns to the rule of ŷ churche, as he had preferred his knyghtes to the rule of the temperaltie, that he myght stande in the more suertie of the lande.

In this coũsayll seynt Wolstane, than[4] was bysshop of Worcetour, axed besely of the kynge certayne possessyõs, fallen ĩto his hãdes by ŷ deth of Aldredus, last archebysshop of Yorke, that were withholden by the sayd Aldredus; but the kynge myght nat here than of any suche matyers, for hurtyng of ŷ lybertye of ŷ churche of Yorke. Than *Fol. C.xlii.* vpon Wytsondaye after, the kyng gaue the sayde archebysshopryche of Yorke vnto Thomas, a chanon of Bayon, & sent for Lamfranke, an other Normayn, than abbot of Cadomonency, and gaue vnto hym the archebysshopryche of Caũterbury. This Lamfranke was an Italyan borne, & was perfytely lerned in the scyence of theologie or holy wrytte, and ryght apte in gouernynge of thynges bothe spyrituall and temporall. Vpon our Lady daye the Assumpcion, the kynge made hym archebysshop of Caunterbury. Than Thomas, that was chosen archebysshop of Yorke, came vnto Lamfranke for to be sacred as ŷ vsage wolde; of whom Lamfranke axed an othe, and his profession in wrytynge concernynge his obedyence. Thomas answered and sayd, that he wolde neuer do that; but if he myght therof here suffycyent auctorytie and skylfull reasons & byndynge, by ŷ whiche it myght be knowen that he shuld so do without any preiudyce of his churche. Than Lamfrank shewed and proued skylfully that his askynge was reasonable and rightfull; but yet Thomas wolde nat assent, but withsayd it, & went for that tyme from Lamfranke vnsacred, & shewed vnto the kynge that Lamfranke entended to do wronge to hym, and to his churche of Yorke. Than the kynge callyng Lamfrank before hym said, that[5] he trusted more in his cunnynge, than he dyd in good fayth or reason; but he answered so reasonably vnto ŷ kynge, that in the ende, Thomas, by ŷ cõmaundement of ŷ kyng, was fayned to come agayne to Lamfranke to be sacred, and wrote his profession, with his owne hande, of his obedyence, and radde it: in the whiche was conteyned, that he shulde be obedyent in all that belongeth to the worshyp of God & all Cristen faith; whiche done, he was sacred, and so departed: and shortly after Lamfrank axed and toke profession of all ŷ bysshoppes of Englande.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxi.

[Li. 7. ca. 2.] IN the. v. yere of Wyllyam the Conquerours reygne, Edwyn & Marcharus, erle of Mercia & of Northumberlande, beynge in fere of daunger, voyded the kynges courte secretely, and were rebelles some what of tyme; but at lengthe it turned to bothe theyr harmes: for Edwyn was slayne as he went towarde Scotlande, and erle Marcharus, with ŷ bysshop of Doreham, named Egelwynus, toke the Ile of Ely for theyr sauegarde; but the kynge helde theym so shorte, that in processe they were fayne to yelde them to the kynges grace and mercy. Than he sente the bysshop to the abbey of Abyndon, to be kept there as a prysoner, where he was so dayntely fed that he dyed for hunger; but some wryters testyfye, that he was so hyghe herted, that after he knewe he shulde re-

Erles fered.

[1] Bysshoppe of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the terme. [3] all to. [4] that than. [5] "than," in edit. 1533, *by mistake.*

mayne

mayne there as prysoner, he wold neuer ete mete after; and erle Marcharus was hadde to the toure of London. In the. vi. yere of his reygne, kyng Willyam, as before is touched, went with a great army into Scotlande, and subdued Malcolyne, theyr kynge, as before I haue shewed in the precedynge Chapiter. In the. vii. yere of kynge Wyllyam, Thomas, archebysshop of Yorke, nat beynge content to be vnder the rule and obedyence of Lamfranke, appealed to ỹ courte of Rome; so that the sayde. ii. archebysshoppes appered bothe in proper persone, before pope[1] Alexaunder, afore named, in whose presence Lamfranke was so well fauoured, that where Thomas, aboue named, and Remigius, bysshop of Dorchester, were, for skylful causes, depryued of their croyses & rynges, he, by his fauoure and meanes, restored theym to theyr former dignyties. The cause of Thomas was for that he had holpen duke Wyllyam towarde his iourney into Englande, for the whiche, the sayd duke promyssed hym a bysshoprych̄e if he opteyned victory; and the other was pryued, for that he was proued a prestes sone. Thanne Thomas moued the cause of the prymacy of Caunterbury, & of subieccion that to hym shuld belonge; & sayd that those. ii. sees were farre asonder, that is to meane, Caunterbury & Yorke, and that nother of theym, by the constytucions of Gregory, shuld be subiecte vnto other, but that the one is more worthy than the other, for somoche as he is of elder tyme. To this answere Lamfranke sayd[2], ỹ the Constitucions of Gregory made no mencion of Caunterbury, but of Yorke and London. Than ỹ pope[3] remytted this matyer to be determyned before the kynge and the bysshoppes of Englande, and gaue the palle vnto Lamfrank; but for this terme or worde palle is to many one vnknowen, I shall therfore here shewe vnto you what thynge it is. Disputatio.

This palle is an indument that euery archebysshop must haue, and is nat in full auctoritie of an archhebysshop tyll he haue receyued his palle [of the pope,][4] and is a thynge of whyte lyke to the bredeth of a stole; but it is of an other fassion; for where the stole is made in length, and is worne about the preestes necke, this is ioyned togyder aboue, so that it lyeth a parte therof vpon the shulders, and that one ende hangeth streyght downe to the grounde before, and that other behynde, garnysshed in dyuers places therof w crosses: and where the stole is worne nexte vnto the albe, whan the preest is reuestred to masse, this palle is worne vpon this vestyment, ouermest of all, whan an archebysshoppe syngeth his masse.

Whan Lamfranke had thus sped his nedys at Rome, he, with the other. ii. bysshoppes, retourned into Englande, where this matyer hangynge in varyaunce atwene ỹ sayd. ii. archebysshoppes, was had in cōmunycacion; for tryall wherof Bedaes story was brought forthe, wherin it appered, that from the firste Augustynes tyme to Bedaes laste dayes, vpon the season of. C.xxxix. yeres, the archebysshop of Caunterbury had prymacy of all the bysshoppes of England, than called Brytayne, and of Irelande also: and that the archebysshoppes of Caunterbury had kept counsaylles neuer[5] vnto Yorke, and cleped therunto the bysshoppes of Yorke, and made some bysshoppes, [and punysshed some bysshoppes of Yorke,][6] and depryued dyuers from theyr dignyties: & to this were adioyned certayn priuyleges ỹ were graūted for this maner of doyng. Whan Thomas had harde all the alegacions, he denyed all, and layde for hym the pistle, in the which pope Gregory[7] demed that ỹ churche of Yorke and of London shuld be euyn perys, & neyther of theym subgette to other. Disputatio episcoporum.

To this was answered by Lamfrank, that he was nat bysshop of London, nor this questyon was nat moued for the churche of London. But Thomas sayd that Gregory had graunted to Augustyne power to haue vnder hym all the bysshoppes of Englande, and that London, at that daye, was the pryncypall see of all Englande. Albe it, that the popes[8] mynde was, that atwene London and Yorke shuld be no dyuersyte in honour,

[1] Alexander bisshop of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] to this answered Lamfranke and sayd. [3] bysshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] nere. [6] *Omitted in the subsequent editions.* [7] Gregory, B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Bysshoppes of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559.

because they were archeflamynes, and that, by their vnytie, all other might lyue vnder dewe obedyence. And though Augustyne chaunged that see from London to Caũterbury, yet Gregory wolde[1] that Augustyne successours shuld be aboue the bysshoppes of Yorke. He wolde than haue sette in his epistle thyse wordes folowyng: "I graũte to ỹ Augustyne, & to thy successours;" but for he wolde ỹ no such power shuld stretche to his successours, therfore he made no mencyon of his successours. Lamfranke to this answered and sayd, if that auctoritie were graunted to Augustyne alone & nat to his successours, it was a symple gyfte that the pope[2] gaue vnto Augustyne that was so famylyer with hym; and namely, whyle Augustyne ordeyned nor sacrede no bysshop of Yorke whyle he lyued, for that see was full duryng his lyfe: by reason wherof, he put nat his auctorite in execucion. But pryuyleges of popes[2] cõfermeth this dignytie to Augustynes successours of Caunterbury, & demeth that it is skyll and good reason that all the churches of Englande shuld take lore and lyght of that place, [for of that welle or place proceded first ỹ doctryne of Cristes fayth.

Fol. C.xlii.

And where thou sayest, Thomas, that Gregory myght, if he had wold, haue cõfirmed all thinge vndowtably with this worde "Successours," that is sothe; but yet the lackynge of this worde dothe no preiudyce to the churche of Caunterbury: for whan that Criste sayd to Peter, "I shal gyue to the the keyes of the kyngdome of heuyn," he myght haue also said if he wolde, "I graunt the same power to thy successours;" and thoughe he sayd nat so, yet he mente the successours of Peter. Nothynge of reuence[3] nor yet of auctorytie, but the dispensacyon of holy churche and offyce of the same was, and is holy in theym, which oonly spryngeth by vertue of Criste into Peter, and from Peter into his successours. And if thou can discerne bytwene false & soth, loke what hath strength &[4] all, hath strengthe in the partie; and what hath strengthe in the more, hathe also strength in ỹ lasse. Than to certyfye this reason is as it were[5] all of all churches, & other churches been as membres therof: lyke as one man is kynde[6] of all synguler men, & in euery synguler man is ỹ kynde of all mankynde; so in some maner of wyse, the churche and the see of Rome is, as it were, the kynde, and conteyneth all in comparison to other churches: and yet in euery churche remayneth the full holynesse of Cristes fayth.

And also the Churche of Rome in[7] grettest of al churches: and what hath strength in ỹ churche shall haue strengthe in lasse churches: so that the power, that is first gyuen to euery churche, shall sprynge into the successours of the same; but if[8] by specyall thynge be excepted and out taken: therfore I cõclude, as Criste said to Peter, so he sayd to all the bysshoppes of Rome, and so consequently was sayde to Augustynes successours, of Gregory, as was sayd vnto Augustyne.

Wherfore it muste apere, that lyke as Caunterbury is subgette to Rome, so muste Yorke be subgette to Caunterbury, whiche sent to Yorke prechoures to teche and preche vnto theym the ryght fayth. And where thou sayest that Gregory wolde that Augustyne shulde haue his see at Lõdon, it may nat stande with reason: for who wolde trowe ỹ so noble a disciple as Augustyne was, wolde withstande or do agayne his maisters wyll, or agayne holy decrees; and if it were so as thou haste alleged, what is ỹ to me, that am nat bysshop of London, as eft before I haue sayd? Therfore, if this matyer maye thus seace, without more stryfe, so be it ended; and if thou desyrest contynuaunce of plee, I shall nat fayle the, but defende my ryght and offyce gladly.][9] By thyse reasons and other, at length Thomas was ouer cõmen, and graũted gladly ỹ the farther brynke of Humber shuld be the begynnynge of his diosses; & ouer ỹ it was ther demed, ỹ in all thinges cõcernynge ỹ worshyp of God & the fayth of holy churche, the archebysshop of Yorke shulde be subgette to ỹ archebysshop of Caũterbury: so that if the archebysshop of Caũterbury wolde call a counsayl in any parte of Englande, the archebysshop of Yorke

[1] wolde not. [2] Bysshope of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Reuerence. edit. 1533. [4] in. edit. 1533. [5] the chyrche of Rome is as yt were. edit. 1533. [6] the kynde. edit. 1533. [7] is. edit. 1533. [8] but yf yt be by. edit. 1533. [9] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

shuld

shuld be therat, with all ỹ bysshoppes of his prouynce, & be also obedient vnto ỹ lawful hestes.

And at all seasons whan ỹ archebysshop of Caũterbury shuld be sacred, the archebysshop of Yorke, ẇ the bysshoppes of ỹ churche, shall come to Caũterbury, and saker hym there. And if the archebysshop of Yorke shalbe stalled or sacred, than shall he come to Caunterbury, and ellys where in all Englande, where the archebysshop of Caunterbury woll hym assygne, and there to be sacred of hym: and he shall make to hym an othe, with profession and obedyence.

Whan Lamfranke harde this iugement gyuen thus, he reioysed inwardly; and for it shuld remayne of recorde that his successours shulde nat newely plede for that cause, he caused it to be regestred in moost substancyall wyse; and ouer that, sent a pystle for that cause, to Alexaunder forenamed, pope, of all this doynge, with the profession of Thomas, the archebysshop foresayd. Of this Lamfrank is many notable thynges wryten of dyuers wryters, [and after some, he is admytted for a saynt.][1]

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxii.

ABoute the. x. yere of kynge Wyllyams reygne, Roger, erle of Herforde[2], by whose coũsayll ỹ kỹge, as before is sayd, hadde serched all the abbeys of Englande, (whiche erle hadde wedded his suster vnto Raufe, erle of East Angleys of Norffolke and Suffolke, agayne the kynges mynde,) made[4] conspyracy agayne the kynge, and caused an other erle, by theyr subtyle meanes, to be agreable vnto theyr vntrouth; which erle had to name Walrefe: but at lengthe, whan this erle Walrefe had knowen the fyne of theyr entent, he went vnto Lamfranke, and shewed to hym the hole matyer, by whose counsayl he shortly after sayled vnto the kynge, than beynge in Normandy, and disclosed the matyer to hym, and put hym hooly in his grace and mercy. [Li. 7. ca. 3.]

Whan the kynge had harde of thyse tydynges, he made good semblaunt vnto this erle Walrefe, and sped hym the faster into Englande; but howe so it was, the forenamed. ii. erles were warned of disclosynge of this matyer in suche wyse, that they gaderyd to theym suche strength, that the kynge coude nat haue theym at his pleasure. But as he was fayne by stronge hande to chase and outlawe theym; and for he fayled of his purpose of theym, he emprysoned erle Walrefe at Wynchester; & lastely caused hym to be heded, more of tyranny, than of iustyse, as affermeth myne auctour, whose corps was buryed at the abbey of Crowlande. In the. xi. yere was holden a great counsayll or sinode of the clergy of ỹ lande, in seynt Paulys churche of London, where, amonges many thynges ordeyned for the rule of the churche of Englande, dyuers bysshoppes sees were transported from one place to another; as Selwey to Chechester, Kyrtoñ to Exeto', Wellys to Bathe, Shyrbourne to Salysbury, Dorchester to Lyncolne, and ỹ see of Lychefelde to Chester; whiche thynges thus ordered, with many other for the churche, ỹ sayd counsayll was desolued. In the. xiii. yere of his reygne, after the dethe of Hirman, bysshop of Salysbury, succeded Osmonde, the kynges chaunceller, the whiche buylded there a newe churche. and brought thyther clerkes that were garnysshed with vertue and cunnynge: and he hymselfe wrote and bonde bokes, that were occupyed in the deuyne seruyce of the churche, as the Ordynall or Consuetudynary, the whiche, at this daye, is occupyed in the more partye of Englande, with Walys and Irelande, and is nowe named Salysbury vse, or the ordynary after Salysbury vse. In the. xv. yere of his reygne, Robert, the eldest sone of kynge Wyllyam, the whiche was surnamed Curthose, or Shorthose, and Shorte Bote also, for he myght nat haue the duche of Normandy, whiche his fader had somtyme assygned & gyuen vnto hym, and after, for his wyldenesse, had agayne resumed it, he, with fauoure and ayde of the Frenshe kynge Phylyp, and of Lowys his sone, toke prayes in that duchy, and put his fader to moche trowble; in somoche, that at lengthe the fader and the sone met in playne felde, with. ii. great hoostes, and eyther with other faught a cruel batayl. *Pol. C.xliii.* Robert Curthese.

[1] Bysshone of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Hereforde. edit. 1533. Hertford. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] he wyth the sayde Raufe made.

It

It is radde, that, duryng this batayll, Wyllyam was throwen from his horse, and in great ieopardy of his lyfe, wherof his sone Robert beynge ware, was so moued with pytie that he rescowed his fader, and delyuered hym fre from all daunger of his enemyes; but howe so it betyde of the kynge, trouthe it is that many of his men were slayne, and his seconde sone, Wyllyam the rede, sore hurte: so that in the ende, kynge Wyllyam was fayne to refuse the felde, and gatte, at that tyme, none aduauntage of his sayd sone. For the whiche dede and rebellion thus made by the sone, the fader accursed hym, after the opynyon of some wryters. Whyle kyng William was thus occupyed in Normandy, the Northumbers waxte sterne & rebell, & slewe, in theyr rage, Walkerus, the bysshop of Dorcham, but for what cause myn auctour expresseth nat.

Aboute this tyme Warynge, erle of Shrewesbury, made. ii. abbeyes [in the worshyp of God and seynt Mylborgh,][1] wherof one was sette in the suburbes of Shrewesbury, and that other at Wenlok. In the. xvii. yere of kynge William, a cursed stryfe was arered attwene Thurstone, abbot of Glastenbury, a Norman, and his monkes; wherof a parte of the cause was, that the abbot despysed, & wolde haue sette aparte, suche songe and offices as by pope Gregory,[2] and Augustyñ his disciple, of olde tyme to theym was assygned; & wolde haue compelled them to haue folowed the vse of one Wyllyam of Fescampe. And ouer this, Thurstone wasted and spended the goodes of that place inordynarly in lechery, and by other insolent meanes, and withdrewe frome the monkes theyr olde accustumed dyet. For the whiche causes, firste began great wordes with chydynge, and after strokes and fyghtinge, so that ỹ abbot gatte vnto hym armed men, and fyll vpon his munkes, and slewe. ii. of theym at the hygh alter, and wounded of theym. xviii.; and the munkes, with fourmes and candelstyckes, defended theym in suche wyse, that they hurte many of the armed men. Than the complaynt was brought before the kyng, by whose iugement, Thurstonne was agayne retourned vnto Cadony, from whens he was brought, and the munkes were spred abrode into dyuers houses thoroughe Englande. But it is sayd that, in ỹ tyme of Wyllyam the rede, this Thurstone opteyned the rule of that abbey agayne, for the pryce of. v.C.li. In the. xix. yere of his reygne, kynge Wyllyam than raysed a newe maner of trybute, for he caused to be gadered, thoroughe Englande, of euery hyde of lande. vi. s.

Nouum subsidiū.

An hyde of lande conteyneth. v. yerdes, & euery yerde conteyneth. iiii. acres, and so an hyde of lande conteyneth. xx. acres. And, nat longe after, he caused to be serched howe moche lande eyther of his barony[4] helde, howe many knights fees, howe many townes, and what nombre of men, and of beestes, were with in this lande; wherof he cōmaunded a boke to be made, whiche all was done: for the whiche dede, this lande was after greued with many sondry plages, as after shall apere. In the. xx. yere of the reygne of kynge William, Canutus, kynge of Denmarke, with helpe of the Flemynges, to whome he was called with a great army, came towarde Englande, but by the prouysion of the kynge, they were so fered that they were lette of theyr iourney. Than kynge Wyllyam gaue vnto. iii.[5] of his champyons. iii. byshopryches; to Moryce he gaue Lōdon, to Willyam he gaue Thetford, and to Robert he gaue Chester; whiche Robert was after remoued to Couētre. Of this Robert reporteth Ranulfe, that he scraped from one beme of his churche in Couentre. v. C. marke to fyll with the hande of kynge Wyllyam. Erle Leofricus, that was duke of Mercia, in the tyme of Edwarde the Confessour, hadde adourned that churche with great ryches of golde, syluer, and other precyous iewelles.

An acre conteyneth. xl. perches in length, and. iiii. in bredth: &. iiii. acres make a yerde, and. v. yerdes make an hyde, [Li. 7. ca. 4.] and. viij. hydes make a knyghtes fee, by the whiche reason, a knyghts fee shuld welde. C.lx.[3] acres, & that is demed for a ploughe tyll in a yere.*

In this yere, Edgare Ethelynge, whiche was reconsyled vnto the kynges fauoure, by lycence of the kynge, sayled into Apulia. Than began the foresayd plages to sprynge, for great moreyne fell vpon the brute bestes, brennynge feuoures amonges the people, and also great hunger & barreynesse of the erth. Also in this yere, great hurte was done in many places of the lande by fyre, and specyally in the cytie of London, wherin, or[6] vpon

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Gregory, byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] a hundred and x. edit. 1542. [4] eche of hys barons. * *This marginal note is inserted in the text in the later editions.* [5] iiii. edit. 1542. 1559, *by mistake.* [6] where.

the: vii. daye of the moneth of Iulii, sodayne fyre began, the whiche brent a great parte of the churche of seynt Paule, with also a great parte of the cytie.

Than kynge Wyllyam beynge in Normandy, was syke, & kept his chamber at Roañ, a lõge tyme: wherfore Philyp the Frenshe kynge in his game sayd, that Wyllyam laye in childbedde, and norysshed his fatte wombe: the which wordes whan they were blowen to kynge Willyams erys, he was greuously discontent, and sayd, "whanne I am chyrched I shall offer to hym a thousande candellys lyght, with ŷ whiche he shall holde hym smally contented." The whiche promyse he after perfourmed: for in the moneth of Iulii, whan corne, fruyt, and grapes, were moost florysshynge, he entrede Fraunce with a great army, and sette on fyre many cyties and townes in the west syde of Fraunce; and lastely, came to the cytie of Meaus, and fyred it, and brent a parte therof, with the churche of our lady, wherin he brent a woman, beyng closed in the walle of the sayd churche as a recluse.

But of this thinge speketh nat the Cronycle of Fraunce, nor yet for the more partie of any thynge that soundeth to theyr dyshonoure, done vnto theym by Englysse men. In this hete, or as some wryters haue, by ŷ lepynge of an horse, kyng Wyllyam toke such a dysease or sykenesse, that it was the cause of his deth.

And whan he felte hym thus greued, he called his sonnes before hym, and exorted theim in his beste maner, that they shulde charytably loue and fauoure euery of theym the other, and holde togyder as louynge bretherne: and after made his testament; & therin ordeyned Willyam Rufus, or Wyllyam the Rede, to be kynge of Englande, and Normondy he beset vnto Robert Curthose, and to Henry his yongest soñ, he bequethed his treasoure and mouable goodes. And that done, he enfourmed his. ii. eldest sonnes of the disposycion of bothe peoples, and warned Willyam to be louynge and lyberall to his subgettes, and Robert to be sterñ & surdy[1] vnto his. Than he was moued with myldenesse, and delyuered frome pryson his owne brother, the bysshop of Bayon, Marcharus, erle of Northũberlande, Wilnotus, the sone of Harolde, or after some, the sone of Goodwyn, that was sent to Wyllyam by Edwarde the Confessour, to remayne for a pledge for his sayde fader Goodwyñ; and shortely, after thyse thynges with other done, he dyed in Normandy, & was buryed in ŷ cytie of Caañ, whan he had reygned as kyng of Englande. xxi. yeres, & vpon. x. monethes, in ŷ moneth of Iulii, & the yere of his duchery the. lii. yere.

Whan Wyllyam was deed, men spake of hym as they doo of other prynces, and sayd that he was wyse and gylefull, ryche and couytous, and loued well to be magnyfied & praysed; a fare speker and great discymuler, a man of skylfull stature, but somedele fat in ŷ bely; sterne of face, & stronge in armys, & therwith bolde, & had therw great pleasure in huntynge and in makynge of great feestes; but he passed all other in leuying of taskys: whiche condycion his subiectes construed. iii. maner of wayes, and sayde it was to the entent that he wolde excell all other in rychesse, or ellys for to withstãde and defende his enemyes, or ellys to staũche ŷ apetyte of his couetyse mynde. He buylded. ii. abbeys in Englande, one at Batayll, in Sussex, where he wan the felde agayne Harolde, and is at this daye called the abbey of Batayll; and that other he sette besyde London, vpon the South syde of Thamys, and named it Barmoundesaye: and in Normãdy he buylded other. ii. Also this man made the newe forest in the countre of Southamptoñ; the whiche to brynge aboute, he cast downe dyuers churches, by the space of. xxx. myles, and replenysshed it with wylde bestes, and made harde and sharpe lawes for the encreasynge of theym; as losyng of iyen and other: and he helde Englysshemen so lowe, that in his dayes was almoost no Englyssheman that bare any offyce of honour or rule: but yet somedele he fauoured the cytie of London, and graunted to the cytezeyns the firste charter that euer they hadde; the whiche is wryten in Saxon tunge, and sealed with grene wax, and expressed in. viii. or. ix. lynes.

Fol. C.xliiii.

[1] stundy.

¶ Capitulum

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxiii.

[Li. 7. ca. 5.] WIllyam Rufus, or Wyllyam ỹ Rede, the seconde sone of Wyllyam Conqueroure, began his reygne ouer Englãde in ỹ moneth of Iulii, and the yere of our Lorde. M.lxxxix. and the. xxxi. yere of the firste Phylyp, than kynge of Fraunce. Ranulfe, monke of Chester sheweth in his boke of Policronicon, that Robert Curthose, eldest sone of Willyam Conquerour, was at the tyme of his fathers deth absent, the whiche herynge that his fader had preferred his-yonger brother to the kyngdome of Englande, was therwith greatly amoued: in somoch, that he layde his dukedome to pledge to his brother Henry, and with that good, gadered to hym a strong army, & so landed at Hamptoñ.

Wherof Wyllyam, his brother, beynge warned, in all hast sent vnto hym messangers, to whom he gaue cõmyssyon to saye in maner as foloweth: "Thy brother Wyllyam prayeth the to take no grefe w̃ that he hath done, for he clepeth hymself not kyng, but as vnder kynge to raygne vnder the, and by helpe of the, that arte gretter than he and better, and rather borne; and if thou consyder it well, he hath nothynge mysused hym agayne the, for he hath taken vpon hym for a tyme, bycause of thyne absence. But for he is nowe in auctoryte by thy sufferaunce, he prayeth that he may vnder the so contynue, payinge to the yerely. iii. M. marke, with condycyon, that who so ouer lyueth may enioye the kyngdome." Whan Robert hadde harde that message to the ende, he wagged his hede, as he that conceyued some doublenesse in this reporte; but for he was lyberall and allowed more the honoure than he dyd his profyte, as in other thynges folowynge of his dedes it shall appere, therfore he lyghtly assented to all that was desyred, and retourned shortely after into Normandye, wit plesaunt wordes withoute profyte.

This Wyllyam was crowned the. xxvii. daye of September, vpon the day of seynt Cosma and Damyan, and was well eyded of Lamfrank whyle he lyued; for he was dyuers and vnstable of maners so that atwene hym and his lordes was often dyssension. In the sprỹngynge of somer folowynge his coronacion, Odo, byssop of Bayon, whiche, as before ye haue harde, was delyuered out of pryson by William Conquerour, came into Englande, whome the kynge ioyously receyued, & gaue vnto hym, shortly after, the erledome of Kent; but he toke vpon hym, in processe of tyme, to rule in suche wyse, as the kynge grudged with his doynge; and for this the kynge and his sayd vncle fyll at vnkyndenesse, so that he withdrewe hym from ỹ kynge and allyed hym with the bysshop of Dorcham, the erlys of Northumberlande, and Shrewesbury, with other: the which, confederyd togyder, toke partie agayne the kynge, and dyd thynges to his displeasure and hurte. And amonges other damages by theym doon, Roger de Maunt Gomoryk, erle of Shrewesbury, destroyed the countre and endes of Englande vnto Worcetour towne, with ayde of the Walshe men; but in the ende, thorough the prayer of the holy bysshop Wolstañ, the Walshe men were so weked and febled, that a fewe knyghtes scomfyted of theym a great hoost.

Whan kynge Willyam conceyued ỹ well nere all the Normans toke partie agayne hym, he, than, forced of necessytie, drewe to hym the Englysshe men, and fauoured theim by gyftes and easy lawes, so that by theyr strength he lastely recouered the erle of Shrewesbury, and chased some other of his enemyes, and shortely after occupyed the castelles* & stronge holdes in Kent, belongyng to bysshop Odo, his foresayd vncle; and in the ende, compelled hym to forswere Englande. And that done, he besyeged ỹ cytie of Rochester, wherin the bysshop of Dorcham, the erle of Northumberlande, and other noble men were gadered, and wan it at length by appoyntement: so that his enemyes were vnto hym re-
[Li. 7. ca. 6.] cõsyled. In the thirde yere of his reygne, dyed Lamfrank, whan he had ben archebysshop of Cauterbury. xviii. yeres, by whose meanes the monkes of Englande were brought to the vse of theyr holy relygion; the whiche before his cõmynge, lyued more lyke to seculer preestes than religious men, and exercysed theym in huntynge and hawkynge for to auoyde idelnesse, and dysynge & cardynge in the wynter nyghtes, that they myght

* Castell.

he

be redy to kepe theyr howres & nyghtly seruyce, and in theyr apparell they were lyke vnto consules and nat vnto monkes, with many other deformytyes; the whiche, in the begynnyng of Lamfrank, of[1] polycie suffered for a season, leste he hadde brought all in his toppe atones, and therby myght haue caused some sysme or varyaunce to haue rysen in ỹ churche. In auoydynge wherof, with other inconuenyences, he lytell & lytell refrayned theym of theyr outrage; and in processe of tyme caused and constrayned theym to lyue after the constitucions and rules of theyr religyon. Aboute the tyme of[2] Robert [Li. 7. ca. 7.] Curthose, duke of Normandy, entendynge to take his viage into the holy lande, layde his dukedome to wedde to his brother Willyam, for. x. M. li. for leuyinge wherof, kynge Willyam set a taske vpon his cōmons and subgettes, and reysed a fayre[3] excydynge some vnder colour of the same: so that bysshoppes melted their vessell, and lordes spoyled theyr tenauntes.

The kynge of Scottes brake ỹ peace before made with Wyllyam Conquerour, and wasted and toke prayes in the countre of Northumberlande. Than the kynge prouyded a nauy, and sayled thyther in ỹ wynter tyme; but by tempest of the see, halfe his nauy, or a great parte of it was drowned, and many of his knyghtes were loste for colde and [Fol. C.ix.] hunger; but yet in the ende, after dyuerse conflictis and bykerynges, by medyaciō of frēdes, a peace and vnyte was cōcludyd: so that Malcolyn, than kynge of Scottes, shuld be obedyent to kynge Wyllyam, vnder ỹ same othe ỹ he was beforetyme sworne vnto his father, and kynge Wyllyam shulde yerely gyue vnto hym, in ỹ way of a fee, xii. markys of golde. In the fourthe yere of his reygne, & the. v. daye of October, passynge[4] tempeste of wederynge fell in sōdry places of Englōde, and specially in the towne of Wynchecombe; for there by tempeste of thūder and lyghtenynge, a parte of the steple of the church was throwen downe, and ỹ crusifix with the image of our lady, also stondynge vpon the roode lofte, was ī lykewyse ouerthrowen and brokyn, and shatered, and after folowed a contagy and a fowle stenche, [the which endured, tyll the munkes hadde gone in procession aboute the chirche, and all the houses adioynynge to ỹ abbey, and other placis.][5]

Also this yere, at London, was great harme doon by force of the wynde, which blewe w̄ such violence, that it ouerturned or reued, as witnessith Policronycon, ouer the nomber of. vi. C. howses; and ỹ rofe of saynt Mary Bowe in Chepe was also ryued; wherwith ii. men were slayne: and also at Salisbury was hurte done, with the same wynde or the lyke therof.

In ỹ v. yere of Wylhelmus regn̄, he went in to Northūberlonde, and repayred such holdes and castellys, as the Scottis by theyr warrys had blemysshed and apayred, and cawsed a newe castell to be made at Caercoll, ỹ cytie or towne which the Danys of. CC. yeres passed had destroyed. Than the kyng retourned vnto Glowcestre, where he was greuously vexed with sykenesse, so that he wende he shulde haue dyed: in tyme wherof he toke great repentaunce, and promysed if he myght escape, [he wolde neuer sell moo benefyces, and ouer that,][5] he wolde amende his lyuyng, & become a newe man but after he was restored to helth that promyse was shortly forgoten. And in that yere he gaue vnto Ancelyne,[6] the archebysshoperyche of Yorke; but he myght take of it but as the kynges pleasure was, tyll such tyme as the kynge hadde takyn his trybute therof. And more ouer he auouched, that ỹ see of Lyncolñ belonged to the see of Yorke, tyll the bishope of Lyncolne had pleased hym with a great sūme of money, as. v. M. marke, after the wrytynge of Ranulphe. In the. vi. yere of his reygne, excedynge[7] floodes, wherof the lyke in many yeres passed had not ben seen: and after that ensued wonderfull frost, which frose the great stremes in suche wyse, that horse and carte passed ouer the great ryuers: and in ỹ ende whan the ise melted and brake, the payse therof brake many a stronge brydge, both of tymber & of stone.

[1] He of. [2] Aboute thys tyme. [3] farre. [4] passyng great. [5] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [6] Anselme. [7] were excedynge.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxiiii.

[Li. 7. ca. 7.] ABowte this tyme, ỹ Welshmen with theyr kynge, or duke, named Rees, brake out vpon the Englysshe men in ỹ bordour, where stondith the castell of Brekenocke, and there made masteryes for a whyle; but in the ende his people were chaced and slayne, and he wounded to deth, so that he dyed the. iii. daye folowynge. This Rees is accompted, of wryters, to be the laste kyng of Walys; for after this day they were so daunted, that kynges of Englonde had them in suche rule, that they were vnder more stedfaste obedyence, than they were before tyme: howe be it, they rebellyd full oftē as after shall appere. And the yere folowynge, kyng Wyllyam to haue ỹ coūtrey ī the more quyet, hewe downe moche of the wood, and buylded in sondry places stronge castellys and pyles, by mean wherof, more & more they were plucked to obedyence; but not shortly after, but specyally in the dayes of Edwarde the firste, and Edwarde ỹ thyrde.

Malcolyn, kynge of Scotlonde, came vnto Glowcetour, to cōmon with the kynge of dyuerse matiers, and to take a fynall agrement; but for kynge Wyllyam wolde haue demyd hym in his courte, therfore Malcolyn departyd from the kyng in great dyspleasure, for the which and other causes, ỹ warre atwene Englōde and Scotlande was reuyued: so that, vpon saynt Bricius daye folowynge, Malcolyne, with his retynewe, fought with an erle named Robert, and than erle of Northumberland, & there was slayne with his eldest sone Edwarde. For sorowe whereof, Margaret, quene of Scotlande, & suster vnto Edgare Ethelynge, as in the firste Chapitre of the story of Wyllyam Cōqueroure is shewed, dyed soone after.

Than the Scottis made Dunwalde, brother of Malcolyne, theyr kynge, & put by his sonnys; but by the ayde of kynge Wyllyam, Edgare, whiche of some wryters is named Dunkam, was made kynge, as eldest sone of Malcolyne. In the. vii. yere of the reygne of kynge Wyllyam, Auncelyne or Auncelm, that was archebisshop of Yorke, was remoued to Cauterbury, as affermeth one cronicle; but Policronycon & Guydo sayen, ỹ Hugh, erle of Chester, beyng sycke & deseased, in the. vi yere of Wyllyam Rufus, sent into Normandy for Anselme, than abbot of Barry, for. iii. causes, the firste to visite & se hym, & to be recoūsyled of hym as the man that he moost trusted, the secōd cause was, ỹ he shuld releue some abbeys of Englōde, ỹ the kynge vexed with greuous tributes, and the thyrd cause was, ỹ he shuld founde an abbey at Chestre, which place he after buylded, & made one Richard his chapleyn, first abbot of ỹ place, & soone after he was made archebysshop of Caunterbury; wherby it appereth that the sayde see was voyde, ouer the [Li. 7. ca. 8.] terme of. iii. yeres. This sayd. vii. yere, England & Normādy were greued w̄ trybute, & moreyne of men so sharply, ỹ tyllynge of the erth was spared or put of for ỹ yere; & there after ensued great hūger. This yere also the Scottis slewe theyr kyng Edgare, & restored agayne to ỹ rule of the lond the forenamed Dūwalde: & many grisly and vncouthe syghtes were this yere seen in Englōde, as hostis of men fyghtyng in the skye, & fyre lemys & other: [and the holy bysshop Wolston ōf Worcetour dyed soone after, of whome it is shewed, ỹ he sondry tymes warned & rebuked Englysshe men, for theyr mysse lyuynge, & sayde for theyr offenses they were so punysshed of ỹ Normans; but the Englysshe men excused them selfe, & sayd ỹ the Normans were worse in lyuynge than they, whereunto the byshop answered & sayde, ỹ God vsed the wyckednesse of them ī Englysshe men, for by ỹ wycked he punysshed the wycked, & so doth God soffer the deuyll to ponysshe synners in hell, & he hymselfe is ponysshed w̄ them. Of this Wolstone it is radde, ỹ kynge Wyllyam wolde haue put hym from his see, to ỹ entent ỹ he myght put another into his see, wherof this holy man beynge warned, yode vnto the kynge, and sayd to hym, "I am enfourmed ỹ thou wylt take from me ỹ which a better man than thou arte gaue vnto me, wherefore of whom ỹ I receyued so noble a gyfte, to hym wyll I gyue it agayne, & than take it frome hym if that thou may;" & whan he had so sayd to ỹ kyng, he yode to ỹ sepulture of Edwarde ỹ Cōfessoure, & after ỹ he had made his prayers, there he pytched his crosse in the marble stone ỹ laye vpon the graue: but no man myghte plucke

plucke out ỹ staffe, tyll Wolston came thyther hymselfe, and pulled it owte at the kynges cōmaundement. Wherfore the kynge seynge that maruayll, suffered hym to enioye his benefice styll.][1] In the. x. yere of William Rufus, stryfe and discēcion fell atwene hym, and Anselme bisshop of Caunterbury: for Anselme myght not call his synodis, nor correcte the bysshoppis, but as the kynge wolde. The kynge also chalēged the inuestiture of bysshoppys, and pilled the spiritualtie and temporaltie with vnresonable taskys & tributys, the which he spent vpon the towre of London, and the makynge of Westmynster hall, and ouer that the kynges seruaūtys greued and pylled Englysshe men vnresonably; and to this mysery was ioyned, the vnsacrable[2] couetous of Ranulph, that was somtyme chapelayne vnto William Conqueroure, the which was at this daye the kynges procuratour, and gadered of[3] his taskys ouer all. He was so couetous and so euyll disposed, ỹ he wolde leuye. iii. taskys for two; he pylled the ryche & bare downe the poore, and caused many men to lose theyr londis for small causes: therfore the kynge had hym in his synguler fauoure, and by his meanes bysshopryches were boughte and solde, as playnlye as other marchaundyses. For that tyme clerkes vsed busshed and brayded hedys, longe tayled and blasynge clothes, shynynge golden gyrdellys, & rode with gylte spurres, with vsynge of dyuerse other enormytees, all whiche vyces Anselme wolde haue corrected, but he lacked assystēce of his bretherne the bysshoppis, for the whiche cause & other, he departed the lōde: wherewith the kyng beynge mysse contented, sent after hym such persones as robbed and spoyled hym, and entreted hym ī moost cruell maner. For the which dede, Raufe, bisshop of Chichestre, blamed ỹ kyng, and also rebuked all suche bisshoppys as had refused the partye of Anselme, & had fauored the kynge in causes concernynge the foresayde variaūce: and farthermore he withstode the kynge & his officers, in takynge of fynes of preestis for cryme of fornycacion. For which causes, the kynge with ỹ sayde Raufe, was sore amoued and discontented, and opteyned such fauoure, that he suspended many churches of his dyoses; but in ỹ ende, Raufe demeaned hym ī such wyse, that he had his owne wyll, & his churches enlarged & freed, that before were stopped w̄ thornys, & the kyng gaue vnto hym the fynes of preestys within his dioses, & endued the see of Chichester with many great gyftes. Vpon[4] a tyme, kynge Wyllyam was rydynge towarde his disporte of hūtynge, & sodenly a messynger came vnto hym & sayde, that the cytie of Cenemonya, in Normandye, was besyeged; wherefore he without longe taryinge or aduysement, toke the streyght way to the see syde, and sent to his lordis chargynge them to folowe. Whan the sayd lordes came to his presence, they aduysed hym to tarye tyll his people were assemblyd; but he wolde nothynge doo after theyr coūsayll, but sayde, suche as hym loued he shortly wiste wele wolde folowe hym, & so yode to shyppe. Settynge aparte all parellys, the mayster of the shyp was afrayde, he sawe the weder so darke & so clowdy, & counceyled the kynge to tary tyll the wynde wolde blowe more fauorably; but he cōmaunded hym to make all spede that he cowde vpon his lyfe, sayinge that he neuer harde ỹ euer any kynge was drowned. And so he passed the see, & londed in Normandy, & gathered to hym ther his knyghtes. Whā the capitayne of the siege, whose name was Helyas, knewe of the kynges londyng, he fered, and anon began to breke the syege; but by treason he was taken and brought to the kynges presence, to whome the kynge shewed suche pitie, that he suffered hym to be at his libertie, which, after the opynyon of Wyllyam de Regibus, was done more of pryde than of compassion.

Fol. C.xlvi.

[Li. 7. ca. 9.]

Westemester Halle fyrst buylded.

Vindicta.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxv.

IN the. xi. yere of the reygne of this Wyllyam the Rede, at a towne called Fynchāster, in the coūtrey of Berkshyre, a well caste out blode, as before it had don water; & after, by ỹ space of. xv. dayes, great flames of fyre were sene in the element in sundry places & tymes. This yere also the. ii. erlis of Shrewesbury & of Chester, eyther named Hugh, by the kynges cōmaūdement, entred with theyr knyghtes ỹ Ile of Man or Anglesaye, &

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] vnsaceable. [3] "of," *omitted*. [4] and upon.

slewe therein many Welshmen, & gelded many moo; amonge ỹ which a preest, named Kynredus, was drawen out of a churche, & serued of the same wyse, & also cutte his tunge out of his hed, & put out his one eye: [but this preest was of such vertue, ỹ by myracle, he was restored to helthe within. iii. dayes ensuynge.][1] In ỹ which season & tyme, the kynge of Northganys or Norwaye wan the iles, callyd than Orcades, & nowe Orkeys: & after came with his strēgth into the foresayd Ile of Man, where, at the same season, were the sayde. ii. erlis. Than betwene them was mortall fyghte, in the whiche Hugh, erle of Shrewesbury, was stryken with an arowe in the eye, and dyed within. viii. dayes after. But, as saythe Guydo, the Danys were chased, and ỹ Englysshmen had ỹ victory.

Kynge Wyllyam was moche in Normandye, for somoche as Robert his brother was allthis season in ỹ holy londe, of whose actis shall some deale be towched in the story of Henry the first: & Wyllyam had moche payne to rule the Normans, for they rebelled often agayne hym. In ỹ. xii. yere of his reygne, he came owte of Normādy, & buylded[2] the hall of Westmynster ỹ he had caused to be buylded, and[3] was therwith discōtented ỹ it was so lytle. Wherfore, as it is rehersed of some wryters, he entended, if he had lyued, to haue made a larger, & ỹ to haue serued for a chaūber. Robert Losaūge, ỹ some tyme had ben abbot of Ramsey, & than bysshop of Thetforde, by gyfte of a. M.li. to the kynge, repented hym after, & bewepte ỹ vnskylfull dede, and toke his way to Rome, & dyd for it his enioyned penaunce; & after retorned into Englonde, & turned his see frome Thetforde to Norwich, & foūded there a fayre monastery of his owne goodis & not of ỹ patrymony of Crystes churche: but there[4] a dowt to cōsyder, he[5] was first an abbot & after a bysshop. About this tyme, by the meanes of one Stephen Hardyng, a mūke of Sherbourne, an Englysshe man, of ỹ order of Sisteaux or whyte munkes, had his begynnynge in the wyldernesse of Cystery, within the prouynce of Burgoyne, as witnesseth Ranulph munke of Chester; but other wryters, as Iacobus Philippus, & the auctor of Cronyca Cronycarū, Matheolus, with other, sayen ỹ this Stephan was the seconde abbot of ỹ place, & that it was first founded by ỹ meanes of one Robert, abbot of Molynēse, in ỹ yere of grace. M.lxxx. xviii. which, to folowe theyr sayinge, shulde be in the. ix. yere of ỹ reygne of this kyng. This order was after brought into Englande, by one called Walter Espeke, ỹ foūded the firste abbey of ỹ relygyon, at Ryuall, about the yere of grace. xi. C.xxxi. the which shulde be about the. xxxi. yere of the firste Henry, than kynge of Englonde. Some what of theyr relygiō is towchyd in the. x. Chapitre of the. vii[6] boke of Polycronycon. After ỹ kynge Wyllyam, as before is sayd, was retourned out of Normandy, many wonderfull prodygyes & tokyns were shewed in Englonde, as ỹ swellyng or rysyng of the water of Thamys, in such wyse ỹ it drowned diuerse townes, and dyd moch harme by outpassynge his boundys in dyuerse places about Lōdon & ellys where. [Also the deuyll was seene walke in mannys lykenesse,][7] ẅ dyuerse other thynges whiche I ouer passe. The kynge was warned of this, & told by his famylyers ỹ God was not cōtent ẅ his lyuynge; but he set all at noughte, & made of it a scoffe or a iape. In ỹ. xiii. yere of his reygne & begyñynge therof, as the. iii. day of August, after ỹ sayinge of Ranulfe, this kynge Wyllyam beynge at his disport of hūtyng withī ỹ newe forest, by glaunsynge of an arowe shot of a knyght, named Walter Tyrell, was woūded to ỹ deth, in ỹ. xliiii. yere of his age; after which deed ỹ sayd Walter escaped and saued hymselfe: for fewe there were ỹ hym pursued. And so ỹ kyng, thus woūded, was layde vpō an horse lytter & so cōueyed to Wynchester, where shortly after he dyed & was buryed. Of this man myght be made a moch lenger story if all his dedes shuld be towched, the which toke vpon hym great thynges, & moch gretter entēded if he myght haue lyued. The day before he was slayne, one axed of hym where he wolde kepe his Cristemasse. "At Poytiers," sayd ỹ kyng, "for ỹ erle entēdyth to go towarde Ieru-

More of Westmynster Hall.

[Li. 7. ca. 10.]

[Li. 7. ca. 12.]

Fol. Cxlviii.

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] when he saw. [3] he. [4] but therin is a dowt. [5] for he. [6] viii. [7] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

salem,

salem, & I woll assay to haue his erledome in morgage: for well I knowe he must cheuich for money to perfourme ỹ iourney." The daye ỹ Wyllyam dyed he helde ī his hādes the. iii. bisshopryches, of Caūterbury, of Wynchester, & of Salysbury, & dyuerse abbeys, of the which he let some to ferme. Also he refrayned ỹ money ỹ of olde tyme was payed to Rome, called Rome scotte. Of this Wylliam, reportith Henry of Hūtyngdon, & sayth, ỹ though this man were lyghte of some thynges, yet he was stedfaste & stable of his promyse: so ỹ what he promysed, good or euyll, shuld be perfourmed: & though he were named couetous, yet it shuld seme that he was lyberall, as sheweth by this narraciō followynge. Narracia.

Vpō a season whā the abbot of a place in Englonde was dede. ii. munkes of the same place, the which before had gaderid money, made theyr frendes to kynge Wyllyam, & offered large offers eyther of theym to be promoted to ỹ dygnytie. There was also a thyrde mūke, ỹ which of mekenesse and of humylyte folowed the other. ii., to the entent ỹ vpon hym ỹ the kyng had admytted for abbot, he wolde haue geuen vpō hym attēdaūce, & as his chapelayn to haue with hym retourned. The kynge called before hym the. ii. mūkis seuerally, & eyther out proferyd other; & as he caste his eye a syde, he espyed ỹ. iii. the which he demed had cōmen also for the same cause. Than the kynge called hym, & asked if he wolde geue any more than his bretherne had offered to be abbot; but he answered to ỹ kyng, & sayde, that he wolde nother offer nor yet gyue for it one peny, nor wolde haue so great a charge by any meane wrōgefull. Whā the kynge had well vnderstonden this thyrde mūkes answer, he sayd, that he was best worthy to be abbot, & to haue the rule of so holy a charge, & so he gaue vnto hym ỹ benefyce without takynge any peny. This kynge Wyllyam vsed alwey lemmans, wherfore he dyed without issu legyttymat, whan he had reygned, as before is sayde, fully. xii. yeres & odde dayes.

¶ Capitulū. CC.xxvi.

Henry, the. iii. sone of Williā Cōqueroure, & first of that name, whiche for his conynng was surnamed Bewclerke, began his reygne & domynyon as kyng of Englonde, ỹ. v. day of August, in the yere of our Lorde. xi. C. & one, and the. xliii. yere of the first Phylyp than kynge of Fraūce; & was crowned at Westmynster ryght shortly after of Thomas archebisshop of Yorke, and Morys bisshop of London. Thys Henry in his youth plyed hym to suche study ỹ he was enstructe in the. vii. artys lyberallys. Anon he made holy churche free, and vsed seynt Edwardes lawys, with the amendement of them: he put out of his courte nyce and wanton men, and closed Ranulphe, bysshop of Doreham, in the towre of Lōdon, the which, as ye before haue harde, was sō great with Wyllyam his brother; and sent for Anselme archebisshop of Caūterbury, which before was fled the' tyranny of Wyllyam Rufus. This Henry chastysed the olde vntrewe mesure, and made a yerde of the length of his owne arme, with dyuerse other thynges refourmynge that lōge before his dayes had ben mysse vsed; & aborred excesse of metys & drynkes, and vsed to fyghte more with counceyll than with swerde. In the seconde yere of his reygne, Robert his brother, that by all this season had ben occupyed in warres vpon Crystes enemyes, hauynge worde of the deth of his brother Wyllyam, and howe his brother Henry hadde takyn vpon hym as kynge, returned into Normandy, and there made preparacion for to cōme into Englonde. [Li. 7. ca. 12.]

In this season also was broken out of pryson, Ranulfe bysshop of Doreham, and cōmen to ỹ sayde Robert into Normandye; the whiche excyted duke Robert in all that he myght, to warre vpon his brother Henry: so that he assembled a stronge army of knyghtes, & toke shyppynge, and landed in processe of tyme at Portysmouthe. But by medyacion a peace was made, and that in suche condicion, that he shulde haue. MMM. markes yerelye, as before was promysed vnto hym by Wyllyam Rufus his brother, with other con-

[1] fro the.

dycions

dycions of successyon, and other thynges, the whiche I ouer passe for length of tyme. Thus Robert beynge contented, contrary to the myndys of his lordys, after he a season hadde dysported hym in Englande, retourned into Normandy, where of his lordes he was for this and other dedis before doon, as after is shewed, lytle or lesse and lesse set by: for albe it that by his faders lyfe he hadde vyctory, and vtterly dyspleased hym, as some deale before is towched; yet by his manhode & manfull dedys, he fell into the fauoure of the people, and dyd many and great notable actys, and specially at the wynnynge of the cytie of Acon, vpon the myscreauntys and Turkys: [for the whiche deedys it apperyth by the sequele of the story, that he was also in the fauoure of God: for whan the eleccyon shuld be màde for the kynge of Ierusalem, and certeyn prynces and prynces peeres, by ordynaunce made, stoode with theyr tapers, abydynge the deuyne purueyaunce, that whose taper were firste with heuenly fyre lyghtened, shuld be admytted for kynge, the taper of this duke Robert was first onely; wherefore by deuyne purueyaunce][1] he was than chosen kynge of Ierusalem; the whiche he refused, for the payne and trauayle that he shulde haue with all, & also for the couetyse of ỹ crowne of Englõde. For assone as he had knowlege of the deth of his brother Wyllyam, anone he parted the countrey, & sped hym homewarde in all that he myght; for the whiche dede, as affermyth myn auctor, he sped the warse in all his dedys after. This Robert was wyse in cõusayll, stronge in batayll, and also right lyberall, & in his returne from Ierusalẽ, maryed the doughter of Wyllyam de Auersana, lorde of Apulea, with whom he receyued great sõmes of money for her dower; ỹ which by mean of his lyberalytie he spent shortly after. Thã fortune began to frowne vpon duke Robert, & set his owne lordys so agayn hym, ỹ they sent vnto kyng Henry his brother, wyllynge hym to cõme into Normãdy, and they wolde delyuer the countrey vnto hym, & holde hym for theyr chefe lorde & ruler; wherunto, as sayth ỹ Englysshe Cronycle, kyng Henry soon cõsented. But or euer this warre atwene
Fol. C.xlviii. the sayd duke Robert & kynge Henry began, this Henry maryed Mawde, or Molde, the doughter of Malcolyne, kynge of Scotlande, & of Margarete his wyfe, doughter of Edwarde the Outlawe, as in the begynnyng of [Caumptus, & of][2] Wyllyam Cõqueroure, is towched. Of the whiche Molde, this Henry receyued after some wryters. ii. sonnys & two doughters, ỹ is to saye Wyllyam & Rychard, Mawde & Mary: & also the sayd auctor, ẇ other, sayth, ỹ Robert, duke of Normãdy, came into Englãde, in ỹ. iiii. yere of the reygne, of kyng Hẽry, & had good chere of his brother & suster; for ỹ whiche he, at the request of his sayde suster, released to his brother the forenamed trybute of. iii. M. markys. But ill[3] tale tellers & couetous of sygnory, this brotherlye loue was after desolued, in such wyse ỹ the kynge ẇ a strõge army sayled into Normandy, & helde his brother Robert ẇ so sharpe warre, ỹ he chaced hym frome one countrey to another, & wan frome hym, Roan, Caan, Faloys, & all the good townes of Normandy, & lastly cõstrayned hym to aske helpe of Philyp kynge of Fraüce, & after of ỹ erle of Flaũders; but he fayled helpe of them booth. Than ẇ such power as he coulde make, he gaue bateyll vnto his brother kyng Henry, in ỹ which he was taken, & sent ouer into Englande, & put into ỹ castell of Cardyffe ī Walys, where he remayned as prysoner, whyle he lyued, & whã he was dede he was buryed at Glowcestre. In this tyme & season as it were, in ỹ. iii. yere of kyng Henry, ỹ churche of seynt Barthelmewe, in Smythfelde of Lõdon, was begoñe to be foũded, of a mynstrell of this kynge Henry, named Rayer; & after perfourmed & ended by good & well dysposed citezyns, of the cytie of London. This place of Smythfeelde was at ỹ daye a laye stowe of all order of fylth, & the place where felons, & other trãsgressours of ỹ kynges lawis, were put to execuciõ.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxvii.

[Li. 7. ca. 13.] SO as kynge Henry had fynysshed his warre ī Normandy, & was retourned into En-

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in the subsequent editions. [3] but by evel. edit. 1542. 1559.

glande,

glande, Robert de Bolesyn, which was ỹ eldest sone of Roger de Mount Gomeryk, erle of Shrewesbury, arose agayne the kyng, & manned his castellys of Shrewesbury, of Brugges, of Arūdell, and of Tekynhyll, & incoraged ỹ Walshe men agayne ỹ kynge; but ỹ kynge pursued so cruelly the sayde Robert, ỹ, within. xl. dayes, he wan all those castellys, & slewe many of his men, & gatte the fauoure of the Walshemen by gyftes and plesaunt wordys, & also compellyd the sayde Robert to forsake Englande; ỹ which than sayled into a corner of Normandy, and kepte hym there secretly, tyll suche tyme as to hym was thether cōmen Wyllyam, erle of Cornewall, which Wyllyā was also erle of Nortom, in Normādy. Whā thyse. ii. erlys were assosyat they gadered to theym great a strengthe of Normans, & dyd great harme within that prouynce. Wherfore ỹ kyng sayled thether, & made sharpe warre vpō them, in ỹ which he lost many of his men; but, ī ỹ ende, he put from them theyr strēgth, and toke them bothe prisoners, & so helde theym terme[1] of theyr lyues: & ỹ doon, he set ỹ coūtrey in good reste & peace, & after retourned into Englande. After which retorne, kyng Hēry made sharpe lawes agayne theues & other, ỹ vsed vnlefull meanes; in which lawes was cōteyned losynge of lyfe, of eyen, of stonys, and other members of man, as ỹ gylte requyred. And soone after, Anselme, archebisshop of Caūterbury, assembled a great coūsayle at Lōdon of ỹ clergy of Englande, by auctorite of the which coūsayll, dyuerse abbottes & other were pūt from theyr dygnytie, for ỹ they had taken before tyme theyr abbeys by vnlefull meanys; and amonges all other decrees one was, that preestes shuld forgo theyr wyues. Than stryfe fell atwene the kyng & Anselme, for that ỹ he wold not sacre ỹ preestes that had takyn inuestiture of lewde menys hādis, which before was forboden vpon payne of cursynge; but Gyralde, archebysshop of Yorke, for the pleasure of the kynge, sacred suche bisshoppis. Wherefore Anselme beynge discōtent, departed ỹ lande, and yode to Rome, to shewe this, with other thynges, to the pope[2], which at ỹ day, by moost accorde of wryters, shuld be Pascall the seconde. In the. vi. yere of the kyng, the coūtrey of Flaūdres was sore blemysshed & hurte by meane of the see, so that ỹ Flemynges yode about to haue socoure of dwellynge, & requyred of the kynge to haue lycence that they myght in habet them in ỹ east partye of ỹ ryuer of Twede, ỹ which to them was graunted; but, after a sertayne of yeres, they were remoued into West Walis, where they remayned a longe whyle, but after, they sprad all Englande ouer.

In the. vii. yere of this kyng, vpon a Fryday at nyght, in ỹ first weke of clene Lent, was seen an vncouth starre betwene ỹ sowth & the west, ỹ which nyghtly appered at one owre, & cōtynued so by the space of xxv. dayes: and for agayne that out of the east parte appered a great leuyn or beam of bryghtnes, which stretchyd towarde ỹ sayd starre. And vpon Shere Thursdaye next ensuinge, were sene. ii. moonys, that one in the East, and that other in the West. And in this yere, Anselme, by the kynges agrement, retourned agayne from Rome, & shortly after called a conuocacion at Lōdon; in the whiche, by the popys[3] auctoritie, it was newely cōfermed & enacted that no tēporall man, after ỹ daye, shuld make inuesture w̄ crosse or with rynge. In the. viii. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry, the fourthe Henry, emperoure of Almayne, the whiche hadde maryed Molde, the eldeste doughter of kynge Henry, whan she was of the age of. v. yeres, prysoned pope Pascall[4] & dyuerse of the cardynallys. This Henry also warred agayne his father, Henry the. iii. & lastly caste hym in stronge pryson; for ỹ which deede, as affermyth Ranulfe, he wylfully, whā he had ruled the empyre. xx. yeres, resygned his dygnytie into ỹ handes of Calixtus, the seconde of that name, than pope[5], & after came secretlye into Englande, & vnto Chester, vnwyttynge his wyfe or any of his frendys, where he lyued lōge after a strayte lyfe, and was buryed there at the laste. But to this sayinge disagreeth the wryters of ỹ storyes of emperours; for of them it is witnessed, that this [Li. 7. ca. 14.]

[1] The terme. [2] the b. therof. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] B. of Romes. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Pascal, B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Byshop of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559.

Henry, the emperour, after he had ruled ẏ empyre, as before is sayde. xx. wynter, he dyed at a place in Almayne, called Spyre, & there was buryed, with his[1] scripture vpon his toumbe.

Filius hic, pater hic, auus hic, preauus iacet hic.

Which is to mean in our vulger tunge as foloweth:

The sone here lyeth with also the fader,
The belsyre, for & ẏ great graūdfader.

Whan Henry, the emperoure, was thus dede, as after it shalbe shewed, whā conuenyency of tyme requyreth, what became of his wyfe it shall there be declared. In the. ix. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry, the archebisshop Anselme professed Gyrarde, archebisshop of Yorke, to the yoke of his obediēce, as he was before taughte by the lore of Lamfranke, his predecessour; & the. x. day of August folowynge, he sacred v. bysshoppys at one tyme; as of Wynchester, of Salysbury, of Exetur, of Hereforde[2], & of Glamorgan: & kynge Hēry ordeyned a bysshoppys see at Ely, & ordeyned there Henry, ẏ had ben bisshop of Bangore, & beset Cambrydge shyre to the see of Ely; & to ẏ bisshoppis see of Lyncolne he gaue his owne towne of Spaldyng, for he had mynysshed that see by the preferment of Ely. In the. x. yere dyed Anselme, archebisshop of Caunterbury, after whose deth ẏ see was voyde. v. yeres, & the goodys of the churche spent to ẏ kynges vse; & whā he was prayed to helpe ẏ church, that was without an hede & a pastor, he vsed to answere, that his father & also his brother had accustomed to set there the best proued men that they myght fynde, & to the entent ẏ he myght do the same, he toke the more tyme and laysoure. With suche mylde answers he so put of ẏ tyme, that he fylled his cofers with the great sōmes of that benefyce. [And who that is desyrous to knowe of the great vertue of this bysshop Ancelme, let hym rede in the. xiiii. Chapytre of the. vii. Boke of Polycronycon, & there he shall fynde a parte therof.][3] About this tyme, as wytnessith ẏ Frēshe Cronycle, a contrauercy began atwene the kynge & Lewys, kynge of Fraūce, sone to Philyp the firste: this Lewys was surnamed Lewys ẏ great, outher for his bygnesse of persone, or ellys for greatnesse of his deedys. This Lewys sent vnto kynge Henry, beynge in Normandy, & gaue vnto hym monycion of homage for the duchy of Normandy, & also that he shulde restore vnto hym, or bete downe to the grounde, the castell of Gysours, and also to recompēce and restore for hurtys and harmes that his Normans had doon in those partyes. But all this of kyng Hēry was denyed; and shortly after skyrmysshes & cocke fyghtes began atwene ẏ sayd. ii. prynces; kyng Henry lyinge at the sayde castell of Gysours, and Lewys at a place called Mount Calue. But this encreased in suche wyse, that after eyther prynce sought more rome places, whose knyghtes sundry tymes met; but of any notable batayll I fynde no remembraunce: albe it that the sayd warre contynued by the terme of. ii. yeres, in the ende of which. ii. yeres, Wyllyam, the eldest sone of kyng Hēry, beynge a chylde, and within age, cōtēted so wele the mynde of Lewys, that he refrayned of his warre for that tyme. In the. xiii. yere, at Shrewesbury was a great erth quake, and at Notyngham from the morne to the vndertyde, the ryuer of Trent was so fordryd in the moneth of Iunii, as sayth Guydo, ẏ men went ouer drye, and the starre called stella cometa, or ẏ blasynge starre, apered soone after: thervpon folowed an harde wynter, great deth of the people, & scarcete of vytayll by the great moreyn of beestes. In this yere also the kynge founded the abbey of Hyde, without the wallys of Wynchester, ẏ of olde tyme was win ẏ wallys.

Fol. C. ulix.

[1] this. [2] Hartforde. edit. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.* [3] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. CC. xxviii.

IN the. xv. yere of his reygne, the kynge entendyd to haue promoted Faricius, abbot of Abyndon, vnto the see of Caũterbury: but by a counceyll, kepte at Wyndesoure, of bysshoppys, the kynges mynde was chaunged, and to that see was than admytted Raufe, that was bysshop of Rochester. And the same yere one Thurston was choshen archebysshop of Yorke; the which withsayd his prefessyon of obedyence ỹ he shuld owe to the see of Caũterbury; wherefore at lengthe he was depryued of his dygnyte: but after by labour ỹ he made to Pascall the pope[1], before named, the sayd pope[1] wrote vnto the kynge ỹ he shulde restore Thurstone agayn to the see of Yorke, by whiche meane he was agayne restored, but yet he dysdayned to do his lawfull obedyence vnto Raufe, archebysshop of Caũterbury. Than ỹ stryfe was renewed, which Lamfranke before, as ye haue harde in the. iii. Chapitre of Wyllyam Conqueroure, dyd appeace, & was brought ī argumēt before the pope[1], the whiche, at the kynges request, promysed ỹ he wolde nothynge do nor ordeyn ỹ shulde be derogacion to ỹ archebysshop of Caũterbury, or to the dygnytie of his churche; but in conclusyon, the pope[1] gaue suche a defuse sentence in this mater ỹ he lefte ỹ stryfe vndetermyned & vnassoyled; and whan ỹ kynges protectours[2], with also the archebysshoppis of Caũterbury were absent, were it for nede or for fauoure, ỹ pope[1] was so bowed ỹ he forsoke ỹ olde rule vsed before his dayes, & sacred the sayd Thurstone, & gaue vnto hym ỹ pawle. For this dede the kynge was sore discõtent with Thurstone, & warned hym ỹ entre of his lande. Wherefore the pope[1] wrote after shortly to ỹ kyng, wyllyng hym to suffer Thurston to occupye his see peaseably, or he shuld be accursed[3] and suspended by the dygnytie of the offyce of Caunterbury, & so Thurston enioyed his see. In the yere of our Lorde. xi. C. xviii. as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, whiche was the. xvii. yere of this kynge Henry the firste, the warre was agayne quyckened atwene kynge Henry & Lewys, kynge of Fraunce, wherof was ỹ occasion, as sayth ỹ sayd Frensh Cronycle, Thybaude, erle of Chartres, whiche Thybaude was greued by the Frensh kynge, and for necessyte requyred kynge Henry of ayde and helpe, to whom ỹ kynge, as to his kyñesman, sent ayde & socoure; and afterwarde the kyng sayled ouer with a stronge army, and sent a nobleman, named Stephan, into ỹ lordeshyp of Brye to defende it agayne the Frenshe kynge. Whan Lewys vnderstode ỹ kynge Henry was londed in Normandy with so great power, he in all haste assembled a stronge power, & drewe hym towarde the kyng; but there were so stronge holdes mannyd with Normans, & also suche depe & great ryuers, that the Frenshe kynge myght not wynne vnto kynge Henry. Than lastlye, by a feate of warre, whiche were longe to reherce, he wan a towne, named Lyngues Incayse, in ỹ which towne was a brydge to passe the ryuer of Thee, & so into Normandy. Whan a certeyn of the knyghtes of Lewys had thus wonne ỹ foresayd towne, ỹ sayd Lewys, with his people, sped hym shortly after & rescued his foresayde knyghtes, & than spoyled & robbed ỹ towne, ỹ which was ryche, for so moch as it had been in quyet & rest many yeres before; he also slewe and toke prysoners all the Normans there dwellynge, and put in theyr stede Frenshemen. And that doon, he sped hym towarde kyng Henry, ỹ which was at a castell called Maleassyse, & there made purueyaũce for the defence of the Frenshemen, & whan he had garnysshed it to his pleasure, he departed thens. But not longe after the Frenshe kynge came thyther w̄ his hoole hoste of Frēshmen, & after many sore & cruell assautys wan the sayde castell, & bet it downe euen w̄ the groũde. After which season, as sayth the sayde Cronycle, fell to the Frenshe kynge many & dyuerse mysfortunys; for shortlye after, amonge other myssechaũces, a noble capitayne of his, named Angueran de Chanmoũt, the which hadde doon moche harme in Normandy to kynge Henry, & wonne therin some castellys & other stronge holdys, dyed sodeynly; & in shorte tyme after Baldewyne, erle of Flaunders,

[Li. 7. ca. 15.]

Lamfrãke.

[1] Bysshoppe of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559. [2] procuratours. [3] accused. edit. 1542.

a man of great strengthe & puyssaūce, as he beseaged a castell, was wounded in the face, & dyed within. vi. dayes after. Than Fouques, erle of Aungeous, in whom also this Lewys affyed moche & trusted, maryed his doughter vnto Wyllyam, ỹ eldest sone of kynge Henry, & refused ỹ kyng of Fraūces parte, & ayded and assysted kyng Henry in all that he myghte, so ỹ dayly the power of kynge Henry encreased, and the Frenshe kynges mynysshed. Lastly theyse. ii. prynces met with theyr bothe hostys in playne felde, & fought a dedely & cruell batell, where, in the ende, the Frenshe kynge was ouercomen
Fol. C.I. and loste moche of his people, and was compelled to flee vnto a place called Audely for his sauegarde. But this ouerthrowe of Frēshemen is excused ī the moost fayrest maner, so that they excuse themselfe, and say, that kyng Henry set vpon kyng Lewys whan he was not ware, but his knyghtes all out of aray and ordre; & also kynge Henry hadde farre excedynge nomber of men ouer that theyr kynge had, with other wordys of booste of themselfe, & sclaunder of Englyssbemen; the whiche, as to me apereth, is an augmētacion of theyr owne shame: but Ranulfe, the mūke, sayth shortly, that kyng Hēry ouercame the Frenshe kynge royally in batayll. Thā it folowith in ỹ story fynally, theyse sayd prynces were agreed, & Wyllyam, the sone of kynge Henry, dyd homage vnto the Frenshe kynge for the londis of Normandy, by ỹ agrement of his fader; for the kynge thought hymselfe to good to be vnder the obeysaunce of the Frenshe kynge. Than kynge Henry caused his free men of Englonde and of Normandye to doo homage vnto his sone Wyllyam: & soone after Fouques, before named, lefte his erledome of Angeer or Angiers, in ỹ guydynge of kyng Hēry, & yode hymselfe into ỹ Holy Lāde, & wylled in his testamēt ỹ if he retourned not agayn, that the sayd erledome shulde remayne vnto hys sone in lawe Wyllyam, sone of kynge Henry, which had maryed his doughter. About
[Li. 7. ca. 16.] ỹ. xx. yere of ỹ reygne of kyng Henry, quene Molde &[1] Mawde, his wyfe, dyed ī Normandye, the whiche in her youthe was sette by her father, kynge of Scottys, into a nunry, and there ware & vsed ỹ vayle & habet of a nunne; for the which cause, whan kyng Henry was agreable to take hyr vnto wyfe, this mater fell in great despucion[2], & Anselme, than archebisshop of Caūterbury, was sore agayn that maryage a season of tyme: but at lengthe it was suffyciently proued that she was there as a fygure, a woman werynge that habyte without professyon of ordre, and this was thus ordered by her fader, to the ende to put by vnworthy wowers. This, of wryters, was reputed for a blessyd & holy woman, after the lyuynge of a worldly womā. Whā kyng Henry hadde contynued in Normandy vpon the season and terme of. iii. yeres, he toke shyppynge at Harteflete, in Normandy, & sayled happely into Englōde the same day, that is to mean, the. xxiiii. daye of Nouember, as sayth some wryters; or[3] shortlye after, Wyllyam, duke of Normandy, with Richarde his brother, Notha, the coūtesse of Persy, Richarde, erle of Chester, with his wyfe, the kynges nece, & the archedekyn of Hereford, and other, to the nomber of. C. lx[4]. persones, toke shyppynge at the sayd porte, and were all drowned, a bocher onely excepte; which mysfortune fell by the ouer syghte of the mayster & other, which fell at a dyssencyon in the nyghte amonge themselfe: by reason wherof they raune vpon a rocke, as shewed the foresayde bocher. From this daūger Wyllyam, duke of Normandy, was escaped, and was in the shippe bote nere vnto the londe; but whan he harde the lamentable crye of the countesse Notha, he cōmaunded the rowers to returne & saue the sayd coūtesse; which done, by what mysfortune I cannot say, after she was receyued into the bote, were it by tempest or ouer chargyng of ỹ bote or other wyse, they were all swalowed of ỹ see, so ỹ none of thē was after foūde, but parte of theyr goodes. Of this duke Wyllyā some desclaūderous wordes are lefte in memory, both ī ỹ Englyssh Cronycle, & also of other wryters, ỹ which I ouer passe.

[1] Or. [2] disputation. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] and. edit. 1533. 1542. [4] Cxl. edit. 1542. 1559.

¶ Capitulum.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxix.

IN the. xxi. yere of his reygne, kynge Henry made ỹ parke of Wodestoke besyde Oxynforde, ẅ other plesures to ỹ same; & Fouques erle of Aũgiers retourned out of the holy Londe, & maryed the suster of her ỹ before he had maryed, vnto Wyllyam duke of Normandy, vnto ỹ sone of Robert Curthose, & gaue with her ỹ erledome of Conomanna, & stryfe began to kyndell atwene kynge Henry & the sayd Fouques, for the withholdyng of the dowre, or ioyntoure, of his firste doughter, maryed vnto Wyllyam ỹ kynges sone. In the. xxiii. yere of kyng Hēry, dyed Raufe archebisshop of Caunterbury, & one named Wyllyam was set in that see after hym; & the kynge, ī this yere, began the foundacion of the abbey of Redynge; & Iohñ a cardynall of Rome, was sent from Calyxte ỹ seconde of ỹ name, than beynge pope[t], for certeyn maters consernynge the pope.[t] In the tyme of which his so beynge here, ỹ cardynall made sharpe processe agayn prestys, ỹ noresshed cristen moyles, & rebuked them by open publysshemēt and otherwyse, so ỹ he wanne hym here but small & lytle fauoure; but this dissymuled doctour toke so great faruēce in the correction of the iugement of preestes of Englonde, ỹ he forgate ỹ lore & coũceyll of his famous pope[s] Caton, which in ỹ boke of his coũsayle, or of wysdome, thus sayth.

The begynnyng of ỹ abbey of Redynge.

Que culpare soles, ea tu ne feceris ipse:
Turpe est doctori, cũ culpa redarguit ipsum.
The which. ii. verces maye be Englysshed as foloweth:
Auise the wele, let reason be thy guyde,
Whan other folke thou arte about to blame,
That suche defawte in the be not espyed;
For if there be, than shalte thou haue the shame.
A mannes honoure such thynges woll reclayme.
It is full foule whan that a man woll chese,[t]
If that his dede agayne his wordys preche.

This coũceyll was not remembred of the sayd cardynall; for in ỹ euenyng, after he had lewdely blowed his horne, & sayd it was a detestable syñe to aryse from ỹ syde of a strūpet, & sacre ỹ body of Cryste, he was taken ẅ a strūpet, to his open shame & rebuke.

In ỹ. xxv. yere of kyng Hēry, was called a coũceyl at Lōdō, where ỹ spiritualtie cōdessended ỹ the kynges offycers shulde punysshe preestis ỹ cherysshed the foresayd mulys; but the sayd offycers toke money, & suffered ỹ preestes to spurre theyr mulys at theyr pleasure: whiche offyce at this day is so clerely renoũced of all spirituall men, ỹ nother kyng nor bysshop takyth for it any fynes, nor yet correccion necessary to be done for ỹ same. In the. xxvii. yere of his reygne, as reportith an olde cronycle, ỹ gray freers, by procurynge of ỹ kynge, came first into Englonde, & had theyr first house buylded at Caunterbury: & about this tyme, by moost accorde of ẅryters, dyed Henry ỹ. iiii. emperour of ỹ name, whiche, as before is towched, maryed Molde ỹ doughter of kynge Henry. After whose deth, ỹ sayd empresse came vnto hir father into Normandy. Whan kyng Henry was asserteyned of ỹ deth of Henry the emperoure, for so moche as he had none heyre male, he caused soone after ỹ more party of his lordes of Englōde, as well spirituall as tēporall, to swere ī his presence, ỹ they shulde kepe the londe of Englōd to ỹ vse of Mawde ỹ empresse, if he dyed withoute issue male, and she then suruyued. In the. xxviii. yere of kyng Henry, Geffrey Plantagenet, erle of Aũgeou, maryed Molde ỹ empresse; of the which. ii. dessended Henry the secōde, ỹ after Stephan was kyng of Englonde. [In this yere also, ỹ kyng had dyuerse monycyons & visions; for amonge other ferefull dremys, he sawe a great company of clerkes with dyuerse wepons, which

[Li. 7. ca. 17.]

This is ment by Hēry the .iii. as after in his story, &. v. yere shall appere; for, at this daye, this ordre was not begonne.

Here commyth in Plantagenet.

Fol. C.li.

[t] B. of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559.

[s] the famous phylosopher. edit. 1542. 1559.

[t] teache. edit. 1542. 1559.

manassed hym for dette that he shuld owe vnto them, and whan they were passed, he thought that he was manassed to dethe of his owne knyghtes, and lastly appered to hym a great company of bysshoppes, whiche thretened hym, and wolde haue smytten hym w̄ theyr crosses: by this monycion he toke remorce in his conscyēce, & dyd great deedys of charytie in Normandy, where he had seen theyse vysiōs:][1] & after his comynge thā into Englonde, [in satysfaccion of wronges doon to the churche, as affermeth Guydo,][2] he than foūded ŷ abbey of Redynge before spokyn of, and ouer that, he released vnto Englysshmen, ŷ Dane gelte, that was by his fader and his brother renewed. In the. xxx. yere of this kynge Henry, dyed the erle of Flaunders, & kynge Henry, as sayth Ranulph, was by agrement of Lewys ŷ Frensh kynge, as next heyre[3] enheritour to the sayd erldome; but it is not there expressed by what maner of tytle or succession. In the. xxxii. yere of the kynge, dyed Robert Curthose, the kynges brother, the whiche he had kepte as prysoner in the castell of Cardyfe, from ŷ. iiii. yere of his reygne or there about; whose corps, as before is shewed, was buryed at Glowcetour, before the hygh alter. And about this tyme was foūded the pryory of Norton, in the prouynce of Chester, by one Wyllyam, the sone of Nychelle; & the abbey of Combremer, in the same prouynce, was also founded about the same tyme. In the. xxxv. yere of kyng Henry, was borne of Molde the empresse, Henry short mantell, or Henry the seconde, [the which, as after shalbe shewed, was consentynge to the marterdome of seynt Thomas of Caūterbury.][3] Kynge Henry beynge in Normādy, after some wryters fell from, or with his horse, whereof he caughte his deth: but Ranulphe sayth, he toke a surfet by etynge of a lāprey, & therof dyed, whan he had reygned full. xxxv. yeres & odde monethes. Than the kynges bowellys were drawen out of his body, & than salted with moche salte, & for to auoyde the stēche which had enfected many men, the body was lastly closed in a bulles skynne, & yet it was not all stynted. He ŷ clēsed the hed, dyed of the stench of the brayne. Than lastly the body was brought in to Englonde, & buryed in the abbey of Redynge, ŷ he had before foūded. Than the fame of hym was blowen abrode as it is blowen of other prynses, & sayd ŷ he passed other men in. iii. thynges, in wytte, in eloquence, & in fortune of bateyll; & other sayde he was ouercōmen with. iii. vyces, with couetyse, w̄ crueltye, and with luste of lechery.

The abbey of Redynge.

One other made theyse versys of hym as folowen.

Kynge Henry is dede, bewtye of the worlde, for whom[4] great dole;
Goddys nowe makyn[5] for theyr kynde brother, for he is sole.
Marcurius in speche, Marce in batell, harte stronge Apollo,
Iupiter in best, egall with Saturne, and enemye to Cupydo.
Kynge he was of ryght, & man of moost myght, & gloryous in raynynge:
And whan he lefte his crowne, than fell honour downe, for mysse of such a kynge.
Normandy than gan lowre, for losse of theyr floure, and sange well a waye;
Englonde made mone, and Scotlonde dyd grone, for to se that daye.

Fracia.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxx.

LEwys, the sone of ŷ first Phylyp, began his reygne ouer the Frenshmen in the yere of our Lorde. xi.C.vii., to reken his begynnyng frome the deth of his father, and the. vi. yere of the first Henry thā kyng of Englōde. This Lewis, as before is touchyd, was admytted to ŷ rule of the lōde certeyne yeres or his father dyed, and was surnamed Lewys the Greate, for grossenesse of his body.

Anone as this Lewys had fynysshed the obsequy of the funerallys of his fader, he, without tarying, called a coūceyll of his lordes spirituall and temporall, at the cytie of Orleaūce, where, of the bisshop of the same see, w̄ other adioynynge, he was solemply

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] made erle as next heyr. [3] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. [4] whome is. edit. 1542. [5] maken rowme. edit. 1559.

anoynted

anoynted & crowned, but not without grudge of the archebisshop of Raynes, for so moche as of costome the Frenshe kynges vsed there to be crowned.

Soone after the coronacion of Lewys, Guy le Rous and Guy de Cressy, his sone, which before tyme had been at debate & warre with Lewys, & Lewys had from them takyn ỹ castell of Gurnaye. This Guy le Rous, with his sone, seynge they myght not preuayle agayne the kynge, awayted theyr tyme & seasō, and espyed whan Endo his owne brother, & erle of Corbueyll went forthe on huntynge, & toke hym, & as a prysoner kepte hym in the castell of Bawdum; wherof the cause was, for so moche as ỹ sayde Endo wolde not assyste nor ayde ỹ sayd Guy le Rous, his brother, agayn the kynge. Whā this was knowē, anon the frēdes & tenaūtes of ỹ sayd erle, shewed this mater vnto the kynge, besechynge hym ỹ he wolde ayde & assiste them to recouer theyr naturall lorde; whereunto the kynge graūted, & forth with sent a knyght or capitayne of his, named Auncelyne, accompanyed with. xl. horsemē before, for so moche as it was shewed vnto ỹ kynge, ỹ such as had the rule of the castell, wolde receyue suche persones as were sent frome hym, & delyuer the castell with ỹ prysoner vnto them: vpon whiche appoyntement, this Anselyne, as before is sayd, was sent to entre this castell. But all contrary to ỹ former promyse made, this Auncelyne was betrayed & taken, and many of his men slayne, and hym selfe set in pryson, where the sayd erle of Corbuayll was. Whereof whan the kynge was enfourmed, he was passynge greuously discōfent; wherefore in all haste he sped hym thyther, & compassed the castell with a stronge syege, & those that were within defended them manfully. In ỹ tyme of the whiche siege, nother Guy the fader, nor Guy his sone, were within the sayde castell of Baudum.

But Guy, the sone, as a lustye and iuperdous knyght, put hymselfe in aduenture dyuerse wayes and tymes, to haue entred the sayd castell, for comfort of his men; but all was in vayne. Fynally, the kyng made so sore & cruell assautis, ỹ he wan the firste warde with great difficultye, and after the hole, & delyuered the erle, and Aūcelyn his stewarde, the which were in great dowte of theyr lyues; and suche as he toke prysoners of the soldiours, some he put to deth, and some he prysoned to theyr lyues ende, to the terrour & fere of other. In processe of tyme after, at a place called the Roche of Guy, whiche one Guy of olde tyme had buylded, dwellyd at this day one of ỹ stocke, named also Guy; the whiche had to wyfe a fayre & good womā, the doughter of one Wyllyam, a Norman, which Wyllyam entendynge to dyseryte the sayd Guy, and to be lorde of that strōge place, vpon a tyme whan ỹ sayd Guy was in the churche, or chapell, to here his deuyne seruyce, entred the churche, with a serteyn of harnessed knyghtes vnder theyr mantelles, & fell vpon hym, and all to hewe hym: whereof herynge, the wyfe ran as a madde womā, and fell vpon her husbōde, to the entent to saue hym frome the strokys; but the tyrauntes were so cruell, that they forbare no thynge of theyr cruelltye, but woūded her with her husbonde, so that both were slayne, and that done, entred the castell, and slewe all suche as they founde therin. Whan this Wyllyam, fader to ỹ wyfe of Guy, or brother to her, as affermeth master Robert Gagwyne, was thus possessed of ỹ castell of Guyō, he thought therby to rule all the countrey enuyron. But the gentyllys & commonnis, herynge of this mooste shamefull murder, assembled them togyder, & of one mynde, whyle some of them yode to the kynge, to enfourme hym of ỹ cruel dede, the other prepared abyllemētes of warre, & layde siege to the sayd castell. Kynge Lewys, herynge of this shamefull dede, & the wynnynge of so stronge an holde, ferynge the rescue of Englysshe men and of Normans, leste that castell by that mean myght fall in to theyr hādes: wherefore he sent his cōmyssion vnto the rulers of that countrey, chargynge them with all diligence to assaute that place, and if they myght wynne it, to put ỹ executours of ỹ murdre vnto moost shamefull deth. Whiche cōmaūdemēt receyuyd from the kyng, strōge assaute & cruell was made, & māfully it was defēded, but ỹ losse ran to them of ỹ castell. So ỹ ī processe of tyme, whā this Wyllyam cōseyued well ỹ he myght not cōtynewe ỹ defēce therof, he begā to trete, & agreed ỹ, if he myght haue free issu for hym & his, & assuraūce ỹ he, w̄ his knyghtes, myght goo quyetly vnto a place ỹ he

Fol. C.iij.

ỹ he wolde chose, he wolde thā delyuer ỹ castell w̄ all ỹ was therī; the whiche request of dyuerse of the hed capytaynes, was graunted & sworne. But so soon as ỹ castell was delyuered, & the Frenshmen entred, the multytude, not withstondynge ỹ former promyse & othe, fell vpon the sayde Wyllyam & his souldyours, & them put vnto deth by many cruell tourmētis, & fynally caste all theyr careyns into ỹ ryuer of Sayn, vpon the brynke whereof ỹ sayd roche and castell was standynge. And, shortly after this, ensued the warre atwene this Lewis & kynge Henry of Englōd, as it is before shewed in the. x. yere of ỹ sayd Henry. And after the warre ended atwene theyse. ii. prynses, Hugh Puyssake, a man of great myght at those dayes in Fraūce, rebelled agayne the kyng, and warred greuously vpon, or agayn the countesse of Charters, and robbed and pylled the churches of that countrey, as well as other places, so that the sayde countesse, with hir yonge sonē Thybaude, were fayne to seke socoure of the kynge: wherefore the kynge callyd a counceyll at his cytie of Meleyn, where agayne ỹ sayd Hugh many greuous complayntes were put. But forsomoche as the sayde Hugh, at that tyme, was not present to make answer vnto suche thynges, as than was layde to hīs charge, the kynge cōmaunded that the castell of Terry, or of Thorre, in all haste, shuld be manned and vitayled, to the ende ỹ by the comforte & strength of that castell, the kynge, if nede requyred, myght laye siege to the castell of Puyssake, for so moche as that one was nere adioynynge vnto that other. In whiche passe tyme, the sayd Hugh was somoned to appere before the kynge, & his counceyll; but he refused to apere. Whan the kynge was enfourmed of ỹ garnysshynge of the castle of Thorre, and of the dishobedyence of Hugh, he assembled a stronge hooste, and compassed the castell of Puyssake w̄ a siege, and set Thybaude, sone of the cōtesse, vpon that syde that stoode towarde the prouynce of Charters; so ỹ stronge assautys & cruell warre was made on euery parte. What shuld I make long processe to telle, of the fereful shot of ỹ gonnys vpō both partyes, or of ỹ sharpe shot of arowes, the castynge of stonys, or scalynge of the wallys, or fyllynge of the dyches, the fyrynge of the gatys, or yet the mortall & cruell fyght on both partyes? nor of ỹ many folde dede bodyes, and maymed, by reason of ỹ sayd assautis, or yet the manasses or mockes, or great boostys or crakys vsed of the souldyours duryng this siege? but fynally, after the kynge had lyen before the sayd castell a certē of tyme, he wan it by pure force, & toke the sayde Hughe, with his accessaryes, the which he commaūded to be kepte as prysoners in the castell of Thorre for a season. Than the kynge caste downe the sayd castell of Puysake to the grounde, excepte a lytle towre made of tymber, the which he reserued for a lodgynge; and that done, some of the foresayde prysoners he put to deth, and some he dishereted, after ỹ grefe of theyr offense: & so this foresayd countesse of Charters, with her sone Thibaude, was in quyet of theyr countrey & castell of Puyssake, belongynge to ỹ sayd erledome. But howe it was, in processe of tyme folowynge, this Thibaude entēded to haue reedyfyed there a newe castell, wherby as ỹ kyng was enfourmyd, he wolde haue encroched thynges appertaynynge to ỹ crowne of Fraunce; wherefore the kynge withstode it. For this a grudge fell atwene the kynge and erle Thibaude, so that, in processe, dedely warre was made atwene them; the whiche contynued in suche wyse to theyr bothe damages, that fynally the warre that was agayne reuyued atwene this kyng Lewys & kyng Henry, as in the. xvii. yere of the reygne of the sayde Henry is declared, was by meane of this warre atwene the kynge and this erle Thibaude, whereof the syrcūstaunce wolde axe a longe leysour &' reherce, as it is shewyd in the Frensh story. But fynally this erle Thibaude loste none honoure, albe it ỹ the Frensh Cronycle wōderfully fauoureth the partye of the Frenshe kynge, that the reder may well appersayue. Quis pinxit leonem.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxi.

THis Lewis also had great warre with Henry the. āiii. of that name, emperoure, the

which

which maryed Molde, the doughter of Henry the firste, kynge of Englande, as before is shewed, whereof the occasyon was, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, for somoch as the sayd Henry, the emperoure, had before tyme been accursed of Gelasius, the seconde of that name, than pope[1], at Raynes, a cytie ī Fraūce; for ŷ which cause, as there is surmytted, the sayde emperoure assembled an huge hoste of Almayns and Italyens, and entred the londe of Fraunce, and dyd therin moche harme; but in the ende, whan he knewe of the great prouysyon ŷ Lewis made to mete hym, and of his great powar, he than, as affermeth the Frenshe Cronycle, withdrewe hym, and so auoyded the lōde of Fraūce without stroke strykynge. But of this spekyth nothyng the auctoure that wrote ŷ story of this Henry the emperoure. After this, the erle of Flaunders named Charlys, the systers sone of kynge Lewys, nexte duke after Baldewyn; which dyed, as before is sayd in the thyrde Chapitre of the story of kyng Henry, of a woūde in his face. This foresayde Charlis was sore hated of the prouoste of Brudgys, the which to brynge his malyce to some effecte, counsayled with his adherentes howe he myght slee the sayde Charlys, by whose cōusayle a mean was foūde to brynge ŷ erle to Brudgis, a towne of Flaunders, for the wele of the sayde towne. After whose cōmynge, vpon a daye, he beynge in a churche, & heryng his deuyne seruyce, was slayne of the sayd prouoste & his complycis. Wherof herynge, kynge Lewys, anone with a great army entred Flaunders, & beseaged the towne of Brudgis, & lastly toke the sayde prouoste; the whiche first was bounden to a poste, and than his eyen with a reede strykē out of his hed, and than *Fol. C.iiii.* shot with arowes; and lastly set vpō a whele, where he remayned tyll he dyed: & a felowe of his, named Bartopus, the which was cōsentynge to the same murder, was hāged vpon a galos by the waste and armes, and by hym a mastife or great curre dogge, ŷ which, as euer he was smytten, bote vpon the sayd Bartopus, so that ī processe, he all to rent hym, & dyd to hym so great payne, ŷ lastly he ended his lyfe in great mysery. In the tyme of the reygne of this Lewys, the bysshop of Clermonde was voyded his see by ŷ cruelnesse of ŷ erle of Auerne. Wherfore the kynge assembled his knyghtes, & by strengthe set ŷ bysshop in his place agayne, maugrye his enemyes; and agayne the seconde tyme, whan he was eſte put owte by the sayd erle, the kynge restored hym, and toke such pledgys of the erle, that he remayned after ī good quyet. In the latter dayes of this Lewys, his eldest sone, named Philyp, with a conuenyent company, vpon a daye, for his dysporte, rode aboute sertayne stretys of the cytie of Parys, & as he rode, an hogge sodeynly starte amonge the horse fete of the chylde, wherwith the horse beynge frayde, lepte sodeynly, and caste the chylde to the groūde with so great vyolence, that he dyed the nyght folowynge. For this myssehappe the kynge toke great heuynesse, so that he waxed dayly more feble: and for he was vnweldly by reason of ouer ladynge of flesshe, and myght not well trauayll, he therfore, by the aduyce of his lordes, admytted his secōd sone, named Lewys, to the rule of the realme, & yet hym be[2] crowned by his lyfe tyme. And also maryed hym vnto Elynoure, the doughter of the duke of Guyon, by which he was ĩheritoure vnto her father; and shortly after the kynge sykened, and to his great payne, in an horse litter was brought vnto saynt Denys, where he lyinge a season sycke, and knewe that the owre of deth was nere, cōmaunded suche as were about hym ŷ they shulde spredde a tapette vpon the grounde, & than laye hym vpon the sayde tapet, & vpon hym to be made a crosse of asshes, which all was doon accordynge to his cōmaundement, and there he so lay tyll he dyed, in the yere of his reygne, to rekyn frome the deth of his father to his owne endynge daye. xxx. yeres. So that he reygned. xxix. yeres full & odde monethes, & was buryed in the monastery of saynt Denys with great pōpe, with this scripture folowynge vpon his tombe.

[1] Bysshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] and hym he.

In.

In lustris[1] genitor Lodouici, rex Lodouicus,
Vir clemens, Christi seruorum semper amicus,
Institui fecit pastorem canonicorum,
In sella veteri trans flumen Parisiorum:
Hanc vir magnanimus almi Victoris amore
Auro, reliquiis ornauit, rebus, honore.
Sancte Dionisi, qui seruas corpus humatum,
Martir et antistes Lodouici solue reatum.

Which verses may be expowned in our volger as foloweth:

The noble father of Lewys, Lewys the kynge,
To Crystys seruauntys right meke & louynge,
Caused to be made of chanons an howse,
Ina selle by[2] Parys, where the streme flowes,
Which this man myghtye for loue of saynt Victor,
With golde and relykys enorned with great honor;
Wherfore seynt Denys, which kepest his body graued,
Martyr and bisshop, praye that his sowle be saued.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxii.

[Lt. 7. ca. 18.] Anglia.

STephan, erle of Boloyne, and sone of ỹ erle of Blesence, & of the wyues suster of Hēry ỹ first, named Mary, began his reygne ouer the realme of Englonde, in the yere of our Lorde. xi. C.xxxvi. & the firste yere of Lewes, the. viii. of ỹ name, than kynge of Fraunce. This was a noble man & hardy; but contrary his othe, after the affyrmaunce of some wryters, that he made to Molde the empresse, he toke vpon hym the crowne, and was crowned vpon saynt Stephans daye, in the Cristemas weke, at Westmynster, of the archebisshop of Caūterbury; the which in lykewyse had made lyke othe vnto the sayde empresse, in presence of her fader, as before is towched. In ponysshement wherof, as men demed, ỹ sayd archebisshop dyed shortly after, & many other lordys, whiche dyd accordynge lyke, went not quyte without ponysshement. A great causer of this pariury as rehersyth one auctour, was this: one Hugh Bygot, stewarde sometyme with Henry the firste, immedyatly after the deceace of the sayd Henry, came vnto Englonde, &, before the sayd archebisshop & other lordes of the londe, toke wylfully an othe, & sware ỹ he was present a lytle before ỹ kynges deth, whā kynge Henry admytted & chase for his heyre to be kynge after hym, Stephan his neuewe, for so moch as Molde, his doughter, had discōtented hym, whereunto the archebisshop with ỹ other lordys gaue to hasty credence; but this Hughe scaped not vnponysshed, for he dyed myserably in a shorte tyme after. Whan kynge Stephan was crowned, he sware before ỹ lordis at Oxynford, that he wolde not holde in his hand the benefyces ỹ[3] voyded, & that he wolde forgyue ỹ Dane gylt, as kynge Henry before hym had done, with other thynges whiche I passe ouer. And for this Stephan drad the cōmynge of the empresse, he therfore gaue lycēce vnto his lordys ỹ euery of them myght buylde a castell or stronge fortresse vpon his owne grounde, & soone after he agreed with Dauyd, kyng of Scottys, and receyued of hym homage, after he hadde frome hym wonne some townys and holdys. The towne of Exetour rebellyd agayne the kyng, in the seconde yere of his reygne; but he in the ende subdued them: & Wyllyam, archebysshop of Caūterbury, dyed the same yere, whose benefyce was after

[1] Illustris. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] of. [3] that were.

gyuen

gyuen to Thebaude, abbot of Becco, in Normandy. About the. iiii. yere of his reygne, Danyd, kynge of Scottys, repētynge hym of his former agrement made with the kyng, entred of newe the boundys of Northumberlonde, about ỹ ryuer of Theyse, toward the prouynce of Yorke, and brent & slewe the people in mooste cruell wyse, not sparyng man, womā nor chylde. Agayn whom Thurston, by the kynges commaundement, was sent, the whiche w̄ his power quytte hym so knyghtly, that he ouer threwe the hooste of Scottys, and slewe of theym great nomber, and compelled them to withdrawe agayne into Scotlande. In the whiche passe tyme the kynge layd syege to ỹ castell of Bedforde and wan it; and that done, he thā made a vyage into Scotlāde, where he dyd lytle to his pleasure or profyte. Than in his returne homewarde, he toke Alexaunder, bysshop of Lyncolne, & helde hym in duresse tyll he had yelded or geuyn to hym the Castell of Newerke, and than he chased Nigellus, bysshop of Ely.

Also in this fury, he toke suche dyspleasure with his louynge frende, Roger bysshope of Salysbury, that he caste hym in boudys, tyll the sayd Roger had rendred vnto hym the. ii. castellys of Vyes, & Shyrburne. For the whiche this Roger, in remembrynge the greate in gratytude of the kynge, toke suche thoughte that he dyed shortly after, & lefte ī redy coyn. xl. M. marke, which after his deth came to the kynges cofers. One Cronycle sayth, that kynge Stephan opteynyd theyse foresayd castellys, to the entent that he myght fortyfye theym with his knyghtes, to withstande the empresse, whose comynge he euer fered: & the yere folowynge he wan with strength, ỹ castellys of Glowcetour, of Hereforde, or[1] Webley, of Brystowe, of Dudley, & of Shrewesbury; for the which cawse, Robert erle of Glowcetour, began to with drawe his allegeaūce from kyng Stephan. This Robert was ỹ sone of Henry the Fyrste, by reason of baste, & for this displeasure sent letters vnto Molde the empresse, his suster, promysynge to her great ayde to wynne her ryght. In the meane whyle ỹ the empresse made prouysion for her iourney, kynge Stephan concluded a maryage atwene Eustace his sone, and Constaūce the kynges suster of Fraūce, doughter of Lewys the Great, the which cōtynued ỹ amytie atwene Englonde and Fraūce. Than in the moneth of Iulii, &. vi. yere of Stephan, Molde ỹ empresse, as testyfyeth Hēry the Chanon in his. ix. boke, entred this lande by ỹ porte of Portesmouthe, & so kepte on her iourney tyll she came to Brystowe, and dyd great harme by the meane of her passage throughe the countrey. In whiche tyme of her sayde landynge, kynge Sthephan laye at the syege of Walyngforde castell; but as soone as he harde of the londynge of the empresse, he anon sent out cōmyssions for more strengthe, & so drewe towarde his enemyes. But in this tyme & season, Robert erle of Glowcetour, & Ranulfe erle of Chester, went vnto the empresse with all the power ỹ they myght make. The emperesse herynge of the great power cōmynge with the kynge, drewe to ỹ cytie of Nicoll, nowe called Lyncolne, and there helde her a lōge season, for all that the kynge myght doo; but lastlye the empresse with her people escaped, & the kynge was possessyd of the cytie, and there bode tyll Candelmas. After which season, erle Robert, and Ranulfe before named, w̄ a great power of Welshmen, and power[2] of the empresse, came agayne ỹ kynge: where as whan both hostys were nere the ioynynge, erle Ranulfe of Chester spake to his knyghtes, and sayd, "I requyre you that I, that am cause of your parell, may be the first that shall entre into ỹ parell." Than answered erle Robert, & sayde, "it is not vnworthy to the that axeste the first stroke and dygnyte of this fight, for to the it is sittynge for noblesse of bloode & vertue of strength, in the whiche thou passest other men; but the kynges falce othe moueth men to warre & to fyght, where we muste nowe wynne the mastry or be ouercomen: & he ỹ hath none other socoure, is cōstrayned to defende hym by knyghtly and stronge dedys of armys, and of manhode: and so shall we nowe agayne them ỹ be entryked[3] with gyle & wickednesse, as Robert erle of Mellent, ỹ erle also of Albemarll, and Symon of Hāpton, the which is a man of great boste & of

Fol. C.liiii.

[1] of. [2] the power. [3] by entryked, edit. 1533. 1542.

small myght." Thā kyng Stephan prepayred to set forwarde his people, & erle Baudewyne had wordes of comforte to the kynges people, & sayd: "men ẏ shall fyght, to them is behouefull thre thynges: ẏ firste is ryght of ẏ cause, lest men fall ī parell of sowle; the secōde is quantyte of men of armys, leste men be oppreste with excedynge noumber; & the. iii. is the effecte corage of strengthe of knyghtes, that the quarell shuld not fayle, for lacke of hardy & assured fyghtynge: as touchynge which. iii. poyntes, I truste we be well sped. But & ye take hede farthermore what enemyes we haue: first we haue agayne vs Robert erle of Glowcetour, whiche vseth great mauasses, & executeth lytle, or small dedys; in mowth he is a lyon, but in hart he is a shepe; he is pompous in speche, & darke in vnderstōdynge. There is also Ranulfe erle of Chester, a man ẇout reason, & full of folehardynesse, redy & prest to all conspiracy, & vnstedfastnesse of maner, & deedys hasty; & furyous of harte, & vnware of parellys, he assayeth ofte to acheue great dedys, but he bryngyth none to effecte; & what he fyerslye and fresshely begynneth, he cowardlye and fayntly forsakyth, as vnhappy and vngracious in all his dedys: & is ouercōmen in euery place, for he holdyth ẇ hym banysshed men & scullers, & the moo of them ẏ be in a cōpany, the soner they be ouer comen, & weke they be in fyghtynge, for eyther of theym puttyth truste in his felowe whyle hymselfe is ouer throwen." But or he myghte haue fully fynysshed his wordys to mooste meanys audyence, the crye of the enemyes, with noyse of trumpettys, and gruntynge of horsysse, approchyd and smote together, & forth goo the arowes, and gresely and cruell fyght was contynued vpon both sydes, for the whyle ẏ it endured; where throughe ẏ grene felde was turned into a parfet rede, so ẏ many a pale & wan vysage was there seen yeldynge the gooste, with armys & leggys disseuered & parted. A longe whyle this fyght stoode in questyon, whether partye shulde opteyne victory; but in ẏ ende kynge Stephans partye gaue backe & fledde, & he full knyghtly abode the' feelde with a fewe of his knyghtes, and was taken, & so was brought vnto the empresse; the whiche cōmaunded hym to be conueyed, vnder sure kepyng, vnto Bristowe, where he was kepte as a prysoner from ẏ sayd tyme of Candelmas, vnto holy Roode daye nexte ensuynge.

About this tyme was founded ẏ abbey of Stratforth Langthorne, with in. iiii. myles of Lōdon, by a knyght called syr Wyllyam de Mountfychet.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxiii.

WHan ẏ empresse had won this victory, and had cōmytted ẏ kynge to warde, as before ye haue harde, she was not therwith a lytle exalted, but thought ī her mynde, that she was in a suretye of the possessyon of the hole realme: but she was dyssayued, for Kent toke partye with kynge Stephan. But yet after this victory thus opteyned, the empresse came vnto Wynchester, & after to Wylton, to Oxinforde, to Redynge, & to saynt Albonys; into ẏ whiche cytyes & townes, she was receyued ẇ all honoure, and fynally she came to London, for to entre the state of the londe. At her whiche there beynge, the quene made assyduat laboure for the delyuerye of the kynge her husbōde, promysynge ẏ he shulde surrender the londe into her possession, & he to become a relygyous man, other ellys a pylgryme to his lyues ende; but all was in vayne, for she myghte purchace no grace as than, vpon no maner of condycion. The cytezyns of Lōdō also made great labour that they myghte vse the lawys of Edwarde the Confessoure, as they were graunted by Wyllyam Cōquerour, & not ẏ lawys of her father, which were of more streytnesse, wherof ī no wyse they of hyr cōceyll myght haue any graunte. For this the cytezyns were discontentyd, & knowynge ẏ the countrey of Kent wolde strengthe theyr partye, ordeyned to haue taken her; but she beynge thereof warned, departed in haste, and lefte behynde her hyr store of householde, & so fled vnto Oxynforde, where she abode her peo-

' on.

ple,

ple, the whiche was deuyded and scateryd. And in this whyle, she sent vnto Dauyd, kyng of Scottys, & her vnele, for to ayde her; ẏ which, in all haste, came vnto her, and so yode to Wynchester, where she layde syege to ẏ bisshoppis towre, ẏ which the kynges brother at that tyme helde with strengthe. Than the quene with ayde of her frendys of Kentisshemen, & other, made a strōge hoost, wherof was capitayne a knyght named Guyllyā de Pre. Whan the empresse harde of ẏ great strengthe of the quene, & sawe ẏ her owne mynysshed rather thā encreaced, she fled secretlye, and escaped vnto Glowcetour, & erle Robert, her brother, was takyn soone after & put in pryson. Than Dauyd, kynge of Scottis, herynge of this, returned into Scotlonde. Than meanys was made, vpon eyther syde, for delyuerie & exchaūge of ẏ prysoners, so ẏ fynally it was agreed that ẏ kynge shuld be delyuered for erle Robert; but or this agrement were cōcluded, moch sorowe was wrought within this realme, for the empresse pylled & spoyled on hyr partye, & the quene, by promyses & manaces, borowed & toke vpon ẏ other syde, and the soldyours stale & extorcioned vpō both partyes, so that ryche men were made nedy, & the poore were oppressed. In this meane whyle, the empresse retorned agayne to Oxynforde, & vytayled & manned it in her best maner. Than lastly the kynge was delyuered vpon holy Roode daye in haruest, and soone after he beclepyd Oxynforde with a strōge siege, from the tyme of Myghelmas, vnto ẏ season of Cristemas, at which tyme & season, ẏ empresse vsed a newe gyle for cōstraynt and necessite of vytayle: in ẏ tyme was great plente of snowe fallen vpon the groūde, & the frost was therw̄ so great, that Thamys, with other great ryuers, were then frosen ouer, so ẏ man & horse myght passe ẏ water vpō ẏ ice. The empresse, thā cōstrayned of nede, as before is sayd, apparaylyd hyr & hir cōpany in whyte clothynge, which a farre of apered lyke the snowe, & so vpon a plumpe goyng togyther, as nere as they myght, escaped the daunger of theyr foon, & so came to Wallyngeforde, & thens in processe of tyme, she w̄ a small company departed, & retourned fynally into Normandy vnto hyr husbonde. So soone as the empresse was thus departed from Oxynforde, ẏ towne was yelden vnto ẏ kynge, where ẏ kyng had moch of ẏ empresse stuffe, as well harnesse, as other stuffe of householde. Thā he entended to haue pursued hyr, but tydynges were brought vnto hym, ẏ Ranulfe, erle of Chester, with an hoost of Walshemen, was cōmynge towarde hym; but by mediacion of frēdis, this Ranulfe, ī ẏ ende, to the kynge was recoūsyled, & was w̄ hym agreed. About this tyme & season, as it is testyfyed of dyuerse auctors, ẏ Iues, vpō Ester euyn, crucifyed a chyld, named Wyllyam, ī ẏ cytie of Norwych, & in ẏ tyme of Henry ẏ seconde, about ẏ. vi. yere of his reygne, as sayth Polycronycon, they crucifyed an other at Glowcetour. In ẏ. xii.[1] yere of his reygne, kyng Stephā was agayne crowned at Lyncolne, & soon after he toke from Ranulfe, erle of Chester, ẏ castell of Lyncolne. Robert, erle of Glowcetour, made newe warre vpō ẏ kynge, & had ẏ better of ẏ kynge at Wyltone, so ẏ the kyng was like to haue fallen in Robertis daūger; but yet ẏ kyng escapyd w̄ moch payne, & there was taken a baron of ẏ kynges, named syr Wyllyā Martell, for whose delyuerie ẏ kyng gaue after to ẏ sayde erle, ẏ castell of Shirbourne; & that done, ẏ sayd erle Robert began to foūde a strōge castell at Faryngdone: wherof ẏ kyng beynge enfourmed, assēbled his knyghtes, & sped hym thytherward, by mean wherof ẏ warke was for ẏ tyme empeached & let. In ẏ. xv. yere of ẏ reygne of kyng Stephā, the ryuer of Thamys was so strongely ouer frorne[2], ẏ horse & carte passed ouer vpon ẏ ice. In ẏ. xvi.[3] yere, Ranulfe, erle of Chester, dyed, that was surnamed Gercyous, & was ẏ. iiii. erle after ẏ conquest, & his sone Hugh was erle after hym, whiche was a man of great strengthe & vertue. And in the same yere, as witnessyth Guydo & other, dyed Geffrey Plantagenet, husbonde of Molde ẏ empresse; after whose deth, Henry Short Mātell, that was the sone of the sayd Geffrey & Molde, was made duke of Angeous, & of Normandy: the which, in fewe yeres after, maried Elyanoure, the doughter of ẏ erle of Paytowe[4]: the whiche Elyanoure was before maryed

Fol. C.iv.

[Li. 7. ca. 20.]

[1] xxii. edit. 1559. [2] frosen. [3] xvii. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Poytow.

vnto Lewys kyng of Fraunce, & from hym deuorced for nerenesse of bloode, whan he had receyued of her. ii. doughters, named Mary & Alys, as witnessyth the Frensh Cronycle. And so this Henry was erle of Angeous by his fader, duke of Normãdy by his moder, & erle of Paitowse[1] by his wyfe. It was not longe after, ỹ Eustace, the sone of kyng Stephan, with ayde of the Frenshe kynge, warred vpon Hẽry duke of Normandy; the whiche, after some wryters, was imagened, by Stephan his fader, to the entente to lette or stoppe hym, that he shuld not come into Englonde to clayme his enherytaunce; but duke Hẽry defẽdyd hym so knyghtly, ỹ the sayd Eustace wan therby lytle honoure or profyte. An olde cronycle sheweth, ỹ kyng Stephan entendyd to haue crowned ỹ sayd Eustace his sone, kynge of Englonde by hys dayes, but the bysshoppis of Englonde refused ỹ dede, by cõmaũdement of the pope.[2] In ỹ. xvii.[3] yere, the kyng layde siege vnto the castellis of Newebery, of Walyngforde, & of Warwyke, or Warwell; the whiche hadde been kepte by the ẽpresse freendys, from the tyme of her departynge vnto that daye, and hoped of rescous by Henry duke of Normandy. But the kynge than wan the castellys of Newebery, and of Warwell, and Walyngeforde defended the holders tyll the cõmynge of Henry ỹ duke; the which, in the ende of the sayd yere, with a great army entred Englonde, & firste wan the castell of Malmysbury, and thens he yode to London, and wan the towre, asmoche by polysy and by fayre promyse as by strengthe, & suche stuffe of vytayle and armoure as he fande therein, he sent to Walyngeforde: and that doone, he went to the towne of Walyngforde, & wañe such holdis as were there aboute. Than kynge Stephan with his power drewe towarde the duke, and fynnally by mean of medyatours, as Thibawde archebysshop of Caunterbury, and other, bothe prynces, to comon of peace, met nere vnto the water of Vryne, or Vrne; but as faste as some labored to haue peace, so faste other labored to haue warre, so that at that cõmunycacyon the peace was not concluded.

After the kynge and the duke were departed, the kyng yode towarde Epyswich, in Suffolke, and the duke toke the waye to Shrewesbury, where he wan the castell of the sayd towne: from thens the kyng went to Nothyngham, and wan the towne. Wherfore the soldyours that holde the castell, seynge that ỹ towne toke partye with the duke, brake out vpon the nyght, and fyred the towne, and brent a great parte thereof. In this whyle dyed and was drowned Eustace, the sone of kynge Stephan, and was buryed at Feuersham, in Kent, in the abbey that his father before had buyldyd. Thebawde, archebysshop of Caunterbury, lefte not to labourc, and concluded the peace atwene the kynge and the duke, and endeuored hymselfe therein so dylygently, with thassystence of other, that, in the yere folowynge, the peace was concluded vpon dyuerse condycions; wherof one was that the kynge shulde contynewe as kynge durynge his lyfe, and immedyatlye after the conclusyon of this peace, the sayd Henry shulde be proclayined in all the chefe cyties and townes of Englonde for heyre parant, & to be kyng after ỹ deth of ỹ sayde Stephã, and that the kynge shulde take hym for his sone of adopcion, and ryghtefull heyre vnto
Fol. C.lvi. the crowne. To the which couenauntis iustly to be holden, the kynge was firste sworne, & after his lordes spirituell & temporall, and so yode bothe to Lõdon, where they were royally receyued; & whã the kyng had fested the duke, and gyuen to hym ryche gyftes, he toke leue of the kynge, and so returned into Normandy, as affermeth the foresayd auctor, the Floure of Hystoryes. Howe be it, the Cronycle of Englõde sayth, ỹ the acorde was made vpõ deuysyon of the lõde atwene them, that is to mean ỹ both shulde reygne together, & eyther of them to enioye halfe the londe; but howe ỹ deuysyon was made, or whiche parte of the londe euerychc of theym shulde holde, no mencion thereof is made, & the former accorde shuld be as aboue is sayd, cõcludid. viii. dayes folowynge the Epyphany of our Lorde, in the towne of Oxynforde, & the kynge dyed in the moneth

[1] Poytow. [2] byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] seven and twenty. edit. 1559.

of

of October folowynge, whā he had reygned. xviii. yeres full, & odde monethes, & was entyred ī the forcsayd abbey of Feuyrsham.

Of dyuerse auctors, as Ranulfe and other, it is recordyd ŷ this Stephan lyued in great vexacion & trowble all the terme of his reygne; it is sayde also that this Stephan maryed Molde or Mawde, the doughter of Mary, the whiche was the doughter of Hēry ŷ firste, & cōtesse of Boloyne, by whom he claymed the tytle to be crowned, as by the yonger doughter of Henry the first; & Hēry short mātell claymed by ŷ elder: but after moste sartēty of wryters, this Stephan was sone of Eustace, erle of Boloyne, & of Mary, Genologia. suster vnto Molde, ŷ was maryed vnto Henry the fyrste; which Molde & Mary were doughters of Margaret, wyfe to Malcolyn, kyng of Scottis; which Margaret was suster to Edgare Ethelynge, & doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, ŷ was ŷ sone of Edmunde Irōsyde. Than the eldest suster Molde bare Molde the empresse, by Henry ŷ first, & Molde, ŷ empresse, doughter of Henry the firste, had by hyr seconde husbande Geffrey Plātagenet, Henry the seconde; [by which rule or reason it appereth, ŷ Stephan was great vncle vnto Hēry the seconde, by the mothers syde; or more sertenly Molde, the wyfe of Henry the first, vpon his susters syde, but vpon his wyues susters syde.][1] And so by Henry short mantell, or Hēry the seconde, returneth the bloode of the Saxons to the crowne of Englonde; & so it dyd by Stephan: but moost conuenyently by Henry the firste, as by the dissent of his mother. By whiche reason it foloweth ŷ the blode of Wyllyam Conquerour contynued but. lxx. yeres, if it be accompted from the first yere of Wyllyam Conqueroure, vnto the laste yere of Henry the first.

This kynge Stephan, at the request of Molde his wyfe, buyldyd, in the yere of Grace. xi. C. xl. the abbey of Coggeshale, in Essex, and set therin whyte munkys: also about the same tyme, he founded the abbey of Feuersham, in Kent, where he nowe corporatly restyth: & the. iii. he foūded in Furneys, in Lācasshyre, & all he garnysshed w mūkys of Cysteaux order, & dyed, as before is sayd, without issu of his body.

¶ Capitulū. CC.xxxiiii.

LEwys, the. viii. of ŷ name, & sone of Lewys the great, began his reygne ouer the Francia. Frenshemen, in the yere of our Lorde. xi. C.xxxvi. & the firste yere of Stephan, than kynge of Englonde. This also is called the yonger Lewys, in whose begyñynge, Iohannes de Temporibus dyed. This Iohā was sometyme a squyer in the house of Charlys the Conquerour, the which lyued ouer. CCC. yeres, for whiche cause he was named Iohā of tyme, as he ŷ myght remēbre thynges doon of longe[2] tyme passed. This Lewys, at the tyme of his fathers deth, was in the cōtrey of Guyan, for to receyue ŷ dower of his wyfe Elyanour, as before in the story and seconde chapitre of kynge Stephan, is towched; but whā he harde of ŷ deth of his father, he sped hym into Fraunce, where, after the necessaryes for the weale of his realme ordeyned, he maryed his wyues suster, named Alys, vnto Arnolde, erle of Vermēdose: after which maryage was solempnysed, tydynges were brought vnto hym that the Cristen people beynge in the Holy Londe, as warriours vpon the Turkys and Sarasyns, were dystressyd and ouerthrowen, and dyuerse stronge holdys frome theym takyn and wonne. Wherefore, by the exortacion of that holy munke Barnarde, which at this day is called sayne Barnarde, the sayde Lewys, with also Conradus, the. iii. of that name, than emperour of Almayn, with Alphon than kynge of Spayne, with dyuerse other nobles of Fraūce & other prouynces, toke vpon them the crosse, and prouyded for the expedycion of ŷ iourney, in the. iiii. yere of his reygne, after some wryters; but of the takyng of this[3] iourney dyuerse wryters holde dyuerse opynyons, so that the dowte resteth betwene ŷ yere of our Lorde. xi. C.xl. and the yere of xi.C.l. Whan all thynges were redy for that iourney, the kynge, the quene, with the flowre of that[4] chyualry of Fraūce, set

[1] *Omitted* in the subsequent editions. [2] old, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] his. [4] the.

forthward

forthward vpō that iourney, and came in processe of tyme vnto Constantyne the Noble, where he met with Conradus the emperour, and Alphōs, kyng of Spayne, whiche pryncesse[1] Emanuell, than emperour of Constantyne the Noble, receyued ioyntly[2], and made to theym, by his outwarde countenaunce, louynge and frendly chere, and promysed vnto them ayde in that iourney, both of vytayll, and also for guydes for the next & surest way. But he, contrary his promyse, dyd disapoynte them, and nothynge ayded them; for he delyuered vnto them meale myngled w̄ lyme, whereof grewe moche harme to the Cristen hoste after; & also he assygned vnto them suche guydys as brought them into places & coūtreys of sterilitie & other daunger, so that hastlye[3] the Frenshe kynge, w̄ great deficulte & losse of his men, came vnto ỹ cytie of Danas, and becleped it with a stronge syege: the whiche he assauted and enpayred very sore, & was lykely to haue woñe it if he had assawtid ỹ place styll where he began; but by coūsayll of some false Cristen men, the which, as witnessith Peter Disroye & other, had taken mede of the Turkys, ỹ kyng, by theyr counsayll, remoued theyr[4] ordenaunce from the weker place vnto the stronger, where, after dyuerse assautis made, the kynge consayued wele ỹ he was dyssayued. A cause of this treason, as sayth the foresayd Petyr, was this: the erle of Flaunders, which, by dyuerse experymētys, sawe that the cytie was lyke to be gotyn, made supplicacion to the kynge and the lordes that he myght haue the rule of the cytie at suche tyme as it were woñe, ỹ which to hym was graūted; wherof beynge aduertyzed, dyuerse Suryons of that countrey borne, dysdayned that a straunger shuld be lorde of theyr enherytaunce, & for that condessended & agreed to ỹ treason, by mean wherof the Cristen prynces loste theyr trauell. Thā the Cristen prynces seinge that they were thus deluded, toke theyr aduyce howe they myghte contynewe theyr pylgrymage vnto the holy cytie of Ierusalem; but, in this coūsayll, sourdened & quykened so many opynyons, that eche was contrarious vnto other: by mean wherof the emperour was so dyscontented, ỹ he toke leue of ỹ Frenshe kyng and other, and so retourned into his owne coūtrey. But ỹ Frensh kyng taryed there in that coostys a yere after, and dyd there but lytle worthy any memory: albe it ỹ of this vyage the Frenshe Boke maketh a great and lōge processe towchynge the wynnynge of the cytie of Antcoche, with his beynge and counsayllys kepyng within Ierusalem, and other thynges there rehersed; but for I se the mater dysagreable to other wryters, and also thynke that moche therof is fayned, I therfore passe it ouer. Howe be it, that to some persones suche fablys ben full plesaunt to here, wherefore all suche I remytte vnto the sayd Frenshe Cronycle, & somwhat I shall folowe ỹ auctour Gyraldus, the whiche w̄ other, testyfyen, that Lewys, in his returne towarde Fraūce, waxed syke for ỹ longe forberynge of his wyfe; wherefore by thaduyce of physycions, and also of bisshoppys, he was counceyled to take a wenche, because his wyfe was so farre from hym: but the kynge withstode ỹ counceyll, & sayd that hym had ben leuer to be syke & dye of Goddys honde, thā to lyue ī spouse brekyng, & offēde his lawes. And so ỹ kyng put hymselfe to ỹ mercy of God & receyued helth shortly after. Also it is tolde of hym ỹ he vsed to faste euery Fryday brede and water; & by his famylyers he was counceyled that he shuld leue that faste for wekyng of hymselfe, and fede a. C. of poore men euery Fryday, ỹ which vnto God shuld be moche more acceptable. To this he answered & sayd, "We wolde gladly fede so many poore men or moo, but our fastynge woll we not breke; for without the profyte that it doth vnto the soule, it profetyth also right moche to the body, for the purgacion & rest of one daye helpeth moche to put of the superfluyte of the other, & also it maketh ỹ sharper apetyte." Whan Lewys was returned into Fraunce, for what happe it is of the Frensh Cronycle made doutfull, he was from Elyanour his wyfe deuorced; of ỹ which he had receyued before. ii. doughters, as before is towched. The whiche, in processe of tyme folowynge, was maryed vnto Henry, duke of Normandye, whiche maryage was a newe occasyon of ỹ warre atwene Englonde & Fraūce, for the londys of

Fol. C.lxii.

Narraciones de Lodowico Francorū rege quomodo neq; matrimoniū neq; ieiuniū solui infligere.

[1] whom the prynce. [2] joyously. [3] lastly. [4] the. edit. 1533.

Peytowe[1], with Gascoyne & Guyan. For Lewys claymed by his former possession, and Hēry by reason of ỹ mariage of the sayd Elyanour as heyre to the sayd lōdis: of the which warre shalbe shewed in the story of the sayd Henry folowynge. After which deuorce thus made, kyng Lewys maryed the yongest doughter of the kynge of Spayne, that was named Constaunce: and she dyed of her firste chylde. Than for so moche as kyng Lewys had none heyre male, by counceyll of his barony, he maryed the thyrde wyfe, the which was ỹ yongest doughter of Thebaude, erle of Bloys, and was named Alys. This sayd erle dyed, & lefte after hym. iiii. sonnys, and v. doughters; the eldest sone, named Henry, was erle of Troys; the secōde named Thebaude, was erle of Bloys; the thyrd, named Stephan, was erle of Sancorū, or Saūcorer; and the. iiii. named William, was archebysshop of Raynes. The eldeste of the doughters, was duches of Burgoyne; the seconde was countesse of Barre; the thyrde was maryed, firste to ỹ duke of Puell, & after to a knyght named syr Wyllyam de Goer; the. iiii. was countesse of Perche, and the. v. as before is sayd, quene of Fraūce, which was a woman garnysshed with many vertues, as the story declareth.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxv.

IN processe of tyme, after the solēpnysacyon of this mariage, complaynt was broughte before ỹ kyng of the erlys of Cleremoūt, & of Puy or Puyll, (sone of ỹ duke before rehersed,) & of the erle of Polmet[2]; ỹ they shuld spoyle & waste ỹ churches & lādes to the sayde churches belongynge: for the which deedys, the kynge cōmaūded ỹ sayd. iii. erlys to warde, but not without warre & shedynge of blode. And after the subduynge of the sayd. iii. erlys, a knyght, or great man of myght called Guyllyam ỹ Chalon[3], with a cōpany of tyraūtes, assembled them, for to robbe & spoyle ỹ church of seynt Peter, of Cluny in Burgoyne; whereof herynge the preestys & mynysters of the churche, to the entent to myttygate, & to appease the crueltye of the sayd tyraūtes, dyd open[4] them the ornamentys of the sayde churche, & yode agayne them with processyon, with a great cōpany them folowynge of the people of the towne, & the countrey there aboute, in peaceable & cheritable wyse. But whan the sayd tyrauntys aproched vnto the sayde company without compassyon & pytye, as Turkys ranne vpon crysten men, or with lesse pytye, so ranne they vpon the prestys, & other, & spoyled them of all ỹ sayd ornamentys, & slewe of ỹ company to the nomber of. CCCCC. or mo; & after spoyled the sayd church of such stuffe as was therin lefte. It was not longe after, or kynge Lewys had wyttynge of this cruell dede; wherefore in auengynge the church, he gadered a cōuenyent power, & sped hym thyther. But the sayde Guyllyam, erle of Chalon, herynge of ỹ kynges cōmynge, fled ỹ coūtrey; so ỹ the kynge myght haue no certeyn knowlege where he becam: wherefore ỹ kyng entred & seased his lōdis, & gaue ỹ moytie therof to ỹ duke of Burgoyn, as chefe lorde of ỹ soyle, & ỹ other halfe, he gaue vnto the erle of Neuers, to wose aūcetry in tyme passed, ỹ sayde moytie apperteynyd. And that done, he cōmaunded inquyry to be made of his accessaryes, the prebēsons or prebēdars, of ỹ which he punysshed by dyuerse maner of turmētys & dethes, to the great cōtentacion of the countrey. Whan the kyng had thus fynysshed this vyage, & was returned into Fraūce, soone after, was knowlege brought vnto hym, ỹ the Burgoyns & men of the towne of Verdeley rebelled agayne the hed churche, or abbey of ỹ towne, & entēded to haue done some vylany to ỹ abbot & mūkys of the same; wherfore ỹ kyng sped hym thether in all haste. But for theyr safegarde, ỹ mūkys were cōpelled to fortyfye ỹ churche, & to defēde them by force of armys; so ỹ atwene them & ỹ Burgonyons, many an arblaster & stone was shot & caste: & for ỹ kynge myght not so hastely furnysshe hym of his soldyours, he therefore sent vnto the erle of Neuers, by whose meanys, as to the kyng, was shewed how this ryet begā, cō-

[1] Poytowe. [2] Plomet. [3] the earle of Chalon. [4] upon.

maundynge

maundynge hym ŷ he shulde se this ryet appeased, and ŷ the church of Verdelcy were restored of suche harmys, as to them was done by the inhabytaũtis of the towne. But of this cõmaũdemẽt the erle set but lytle, so ŷ the burgeses perseuered in theyr errour: wherefore ŷ abbot sent agayn to ŷ kyng, besechyng hym of his moost gracyous ayde & socour. Thã the kyng herynge of ŷ erlys disobedyẽce, was therẁ greatly displeased, & suspected the erle to be partye in the cawse, & sped hym ŷ faster thetherward. But whã the erle was enfourmed of ŷ kyngys cõmynge, he somedele fered, & met ẁ ŷ kyng at a place called Moret, & there demeaned hym in suche wyse, ŷ the kynge forgaue his offence. Than he promysed ŷ the kynges pleasure shuld be fulfylled ĩ all thynge, as he had before cõmaunded, ẁ more as it lyked hym to deuyse. Vpõ which promyse so made,
Fol. C.lviii. he cõmaũded ŷ the Burgoyns shuld first refrayne them of ŷ rebellyon agayne ŷ churche, & that they shulde newely be sworne to be obedyent vnto ŷ abbot & vnto his successours, as theyr predecessours had ben: and ouer that, for the hurtys & harmys that they had done to the place at ŷ season, they shuld paye to the sayd abbot, & couẽt. lx.ˈM. sous. A sous is in value after starlyng money. i. *d.* ob. so ŷ. lx.ˈ M. sous amounteth in sterlyng money. iii.C.lxxv.*li.* After whiche ende thus made, the kynge retourned into Fraunce. It was not longe after, ŷ the kynge receyued of quene Alis his wyfe, a sone, & named it Phylyp; but for that kynge Lewys had made many pylgrymages, & vsed many wayes of charite, in gyuynge of almes & other wyse, for to haue a sone to be his heyre, therefore he surnamed this chylde, Adyeu dõne, a chylde gyuen of God. Than this Lewis, for ŷ intollerable dedis of ŷ Iewes, which in theyse dayes had great inhabytynge within ŷ londe of Fraũce, & vsed vsery & sleinge of Cristen chylderne, he ponysshed many by deth, & many he banysshed his londe; but yet many remayned. Of this Lewys dedys is lytle more cronacled, excepte ŷ whan his sone Philyp was of the age of xiii. yeres, his fader caused hym to be crowned, & resygned to hym all the rule of the londe; & dyed ŷ yere folowynge at Parys, in the moneth of October, in ŷ yere of grace. xi.C.lxxix. By whiche reason he reygned, to rekyn frome his faders deth to his owne, vpõ. xliii. yeres, & was rychely entyred by the mean of his laste wyfe, at ŷ monastery of Barbell,* ŷ whiche he foũded in his yonge dayes. After whose deth, the sayd quene Alys adourned his sepulture in ŷ moost rychest manor with golde, syluer, & precious gemmys: vpon whose toumbe was grauen theyse. ii. verses folowynge, as a counsell lefte vnto his sone Phylyp.

Nunc superes[2] tu, qui super es successor honoris,
Degener es, si degeneris a laude prioris.

Whiche verses are to be vnderstonded as after foloweth.

Nowe take good hede, thow that doest ouer lyue
Hym, that in honour & vertue dyd excelle;
Se thou not alter, nor thy selfe depryue,
But folowe hym which was of honour the well.
For if thou doo not, men shall of the tell,
Thou art degenerat, & growen out of kynde,
Thy progenytours lawde hauynge nothynge in mynde.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxvi.

Anglia. [Li. 7. ca. 21.] HEnry, the seconde of ŷ name, & sone of Geffrey Plãtagenet, erle of Angeou, & of Molde the empresse, doughter of Hẽry the first; began his reygne ouer the realme of Englonde, in the moneth of October, ŷ yere of our Lorde God. xi.C.lv., and the. xix. yere of Lewys the. viii. than kynge of Fraunce. This Henry was somedeale rede of face, &

* xl. edit. 1542. 1559. *The latter edition has this note in the margin.* "As money goeth now, iii. souce "make iiii d. sterling, and after that recoininge, it should be no more but iii.C.xxxiii poũnes. vi. shillinges "and viii. pence sterlinge money." [2] superos. edit. 1533.

brode

brode of breste, short of body, and therwith fatte; the whiche to aswage he toke ỹ lesse of metis & drynkys, and exersysed moche huntynge. He was resonable of speche and well lettered, and orped, and also noble ī knyght hod, wyse in coũsayll, & dredde to moch destenyse. He was also free and lyberall to straungers, and harde & holdyng from his famylyers and seruauntys, and whom he loued entyrely or hated, harde it was to turne hym from ỹ cõtrary. [He was slowe of answere, vnstedfast of promyse, gylefull of dede, opyn spowse breker, hamour of holy churche, & all wayes vnkynde to God.][1] He [also][1] loued rest & peace, to ỹ ende he myght ỹ more folowe his delectacion & pleasure, with mo vyces rehersed by Gyralde, ỹ which for length I passe ouer. This Henry yet, as wytnessyth Ranulfe, was not all bareyn of vertues, for he was of so great courageousnes, ỹ he wolde often saye ỹ all the worlde suffysyth not to a coragyous harte. And he appeased[2] his herytage so myghtely, ỹ he wan Irelõde by strẽgth, and toke Wyllyam kynge of Scottys, & ioyned ỹ kyngdome to his owne, frõ ỹ South Occean, to ỹ North Iandis of Orkeys. He closed all ỹ lãdis, as it were, vnder one pryncipat, & sprad so largely his empyre, ỹ men rede not of none of his progenytours, ỹ had so many prouynces & coũtreys vnder theyr domynyon or rule: for besyde ỹ realme of Englõd, he had in his rule, Normãdy, Gascoyn, & Guyan, Angeou, & Chynõ; & he made subiecte to hym, Aluerne, & other lãdes, & by his wyfe he opteyned as hyr ryght, the moũtys & hyllys of Spayne, called Montes Pyrany. Of ỹ which wyfe, Elynoure by name, (deuorsed as before is sayd, from ỹ viii. Lewis, kyng of Fraũce,) he receyued. vi. sõnes &. iii. doughters. Of the sõnes. v. were named, Wyllyã, Hẽry, Rychard, Godfrey, & Iohñ. The eldest of the maydẽs hight Molde, or Mawde, & was maryed to the duke of Saxon; the seconde Elyanour, to the kynge of Spayne; & the. iii. named Iane, to Wyllyam kynge of Scycile.

This Hẽry was prosperous ī his begyñynge, & vnfortunate in his ende, & specyally in the laste. v. yeres of his reygne: for in the fyrste of those. v. yeres his strengthe began to mynysshe; ỹ seconde yere he lost a vyage into Irelonde; the. iii. he loste Aluerne agayne ỹ kynge of Fraunce; the. iiii. yere he loste Butyrycan[3]; & the. v. yere he loste the cytie of Cenomenea and Turon, with many holdis to them belongynge. This Henry the seconde, ascertayned of the deth of Stephan, sped hym into Englonde, & was crowned the Sondaye before Cristmas daye, of Theobalde, archebisshop of Caũterbury, in Westmynster churche. The first yere of his reygne, he subdued Irelonde, & soone after, Thomas Beket, which after was bysshop of Caunterbury, was made chaunceller of Englande. This kynge caste downe dyuerse castellys, ỹ before in the tyme of kyng Stephan, were buylded, other for displeasure of ỹ owners, or ellys for fere they shulde be strengthed agayn hym: & also he banysshed many of the lordis & gentylmen, ỹ kynge Stephan had in his faueure. About the. iii. yere of his reygne, in the moneth of October, were seen in the fyrmament. ii. sũnys, & ī the mone was seen a redde crosse; but of this wonder sheweth the auctor of Cronica Cronicarũ, & sayth ỹ about this tyme in Italy, in the moneth of Nouember, apered. iii. sũnys by the space of. iii. owres in the west, & the yere folowynge apered. iii. monys, wherof the myddle mone had a rede crosse ouerthwarte the face, which there is noted for a prodegy, or a tokyn of the sisme, ỹ after fell amõgis the cardynallys, for eleccion of the pope[4] Alexander the. iii.: which sysme, by mean of the first Frederike, than emperoure, endured almooste. xx. yeres. Also about this tyme, Adryan, the. iiii. of that name, was pope[4], an Englysshmã borne in the towne of saynt Albon, of whom is more declared, in the begynnynge of the. xxii. Chapitre of the. vii. boke of Polycronycon. Also in this yere, the kynge went with a stronge army into Walys, & after he had set ỹ coũtrey in an ordre and quyet, he buylded a stronge castell at Rutlande, & foundyd ỹ abbey of Basynge werke. In ỹ. vi. yere of his reygne, this Henry maryed his seconde sone Henry vnto the kynges doughter of Fraunce, ỹ is to mean Lewys

[Li. 7. ca. 22.] Pope Adryan ỹ iiii. an Englysshcman.

Fol. C.lix.

[1] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559. [2] increasyd. [3] Brutican. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

the. viii. which the sayde Lewys receyued of his secõde wyfe, named Cõstaũce, ỹ doughter of the kynge of Spayne, as before ye haue harde, in the seconde capitre of the story of the sayde Lewys. This mayden was named Margarete, by reason of whiche maryage, was apeased the warre ỹ was begon atwene Fraũce & Englonde, for the londes of Peytowe[1] & other, the which kynge Henry helde by reason of his wyfe: in the which warre, moche harme was done, & more wolde haue ensued, if it had not, by this mean, bauc ben agreed. In the. vii. yere of his reygne, Theobalde, archebysshop of Caunterbury, dyed, & Thomas Beket, chaunceller of Englonde, was archebysshop after hym, of whome more shall folowe. In the same yere, kynge Henry, with a strõge hoste, yode to Scotlonde, & made so cruell warre vpon Wyllyam, kyng of that londe, ỹ lastly he was takyn, and dyd to the sayd Henry recompensacion, in yeldynge vnto hym ỹ cytie of Carlell, the castell of Bãburghe, the newe Castell vpon Tyne, with dyuerse other holdys, and a great parte of Northũberlonde, the whiche he hadde wonne from the borderers: & after fewtye & homage done by ỹ sayd Wyllyam vnto the kynge, & a serteyn sũme of money by hym promysed within. ix. monethes folowynge, ỹ kyng suffered hym to goo at large. But an other auctour sayth, ỹ the kynge of Scottis was not taken, but strõgely besyeged in a towne or castell, so ỹ fynally he was forsed to agree to the foresayde couenauntis. In the. viii. yere, the cytie of Caunterbury was fyred by neclygẽce, & a great parte therof brente; & in that season, the archebysshop Thomas begã to replye agayn the kynges mynde, for thynges that the kynge dyd exersyse agayn the lybertyes of the churche.

¶ Capitulũ. CC.xxxvii.

IN the. ix. yere [of his reygne[2],] ỹ kynge, [for dyuerse causes concernynge the nedes of his realme[3],] called a parliament at his towne of North Hãptõ, [durynge which parliamẽt, dissẽciõ fell atwene ỹ kyng and Thomas, archebysshop of Caũterbury, for dyuerse actis & ordynaũcis ỹ the kyng there procured to passe agayn the lybertyes of holy Churche; ỹ which Thomas gaynstode & denyed; wherefore the kynge toke great displeasure with Thomas, in so moche ỹ shortlye after he was fayne to flee the londe, &, in processe of tyme, sped hym to Rome, where he complayned hym to Alexander, the. iii. of ỹ name, thã pope: & there contynued, & in Fraunce, & in other placis, in poore estate by terme of. vi. yeres and more. Whan kynge Henry had sertayne vnderstõdynge ỹ Thomas was thus departyd out of his londe, he seased his maners, & temporall londys into his hande, so ỹ his mouable goodys were spoyled and rauenyd amonge ỹ kynges offycers[3].] In ỹ. xiiii. yere of his reygne, the kyng crowned Henry, his eldest sone thã lyuyng, kyng of Englõd, at Westmynster, [which was done to the derogacion or harme of ỹ archebisshop Thomas, as it is witnessyd in his legende; & for ỹ doynge, Roger, archebysshop of Yorke, whiche crowned hym, was accursed. But an other auctor sayth, ỹ the kyng crowned Hẽry, his sone[4],] to ỹ ende he myght haue full power and auctoryte to rule this lõde, & the people of the same, whyle his fader was occupyed in Normandy, & other countreys where his landes laye. In moche of this seasõ [ỹ this blessyd man Thomas was thus banisshed ỹ lõde[5],] ỹ kyng sent ouer bysshoppis & proctours to cõplayn vpon hym[4] to ỹ pope[5]: for well nere all the bysshoppis of Englonde were agayne hym, [and if

[1] Poytowe. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Instead of the passage here inclosed in brackets the editions of* 1542 *and* 1559 *have*, "Where he intended the reformacion of many priuyleges that the clargye hadde. Amonge whiche this was one, that althoughe one of the clergie hadde committed felony, murder or treason, yet myght not the kynge put hym to death as he dyd the laye men. The whiche thing wyth many other, the kynge thoughte to redresse in the sayde parlyament.

"But Thomas Becket, then archbysshoppe of Caunterburye, heryng that the kyng went aboute suche thinges, resysted hym vnto his face. And perceyvynge that he myghte not prevayle agaynste the kynge, gate hym ouer strayte to Alexaunder, then bysshop of Rome, there complayninge of the kynge, what iniuryes and wronges he wolde do vnto holye Churche, contynuynge there and in Fraunce, the space of. vi. yeres."

[4] Thomas Becket, edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Byshoppe of Rome, edit. 1542. 1559.

any

any toke his parte, they durste not speke for ỹ displeasure of theyr tẽporall lorde, so that this blessyd man defẽded the quarell of the Churche alone[1].] In the. xvi. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, Lewys, the kynge of Fraunce, agreed kyng Hẽry & the archebysshop, the kynge than beynge in Normãdy; vpõ which agrement this blessyd man[2] came to [his owne churche of Caunterbury[1], and there so restynge hym, sent for suche persones as had spoyled and takẽ perforce the goodys of the Churche, aduertysynge them by fayre meanes to restore the sayd goodes, [& to be recoũsyled to the Churche as trewe crysten men shulde[1].] But whan he sawe ỹ he myght not reconsyle them by fayre meanys, he than vsed cõpulsares, & denoũsed them accursed, but if they restored the goodes of the Churche[3] by a serteyn day. Where with ỹ partyes beynge agreued, sayled ouer to the kynge into Normãdy, and shewed vnto hym greuouse complayntes, and more[4] greuouse than the cause or mater requyred. For ỹ which ỹ kynge [than sayd that he had[5] not quenched[6] the bronde of malyce in his harte, the which he bare agayne this holy man, gaue lyght credence vnto those complayntes, & was sore & feruently amoued agayn the holy man Thomas, in so moche ỹ, vpon a daye, herynge the complayntes of this blessed mañes aduersaryes[1],] sayd, in open audience of his knyghtes, that if he hadde any good knyghtes aboute hym, he had ben aduenged of that traytoure longe or that tyme: at the tyme of which wordes vtterynge was present syr Wyllyam Bryton, syr Hughe Moruyle, syr Wyllyã Tracy, & syr Regnolde Fyz Vrle, whiche. iiii. knyghtes [thynkynge ỹ they shuld to theyr master doo a synguler pleasure if they slewe this blessyd man, hastelye[1]] takynge aduyce, eche of them of other, of one wyll & mynde toke shyppynge & sayled to Douer, and in all haste sped them vnto Caũterbury, where, the. v. daye of Crystemasse [they executed theyr tyranny, & martyred ỹ blessyd archebisshop, at the auter of sayut Benet, win his owne churche, in the yere of our Lordis incarnacion. M. C. lxx, as it is witnessed by theyse verses folowynge[7].]

Natus erat, passus, trãslatus vt hic patet annis.

Anno milleno, centeno, sẽptuageno,
Anglorum primas corruit ense Thomas.

The which is to vnderstonde in our vulgare, as thus.

Natus fuit Anno domini. xi.C.xxi. passus fuit Anno domini. xi.C.lxx. translatus fuit Anno domini. xii.C. xx.

The yere, to rekyn from Crystys incarnacion,
A thousande an hundrede and seuentye thereunto,
The prymat of Englonde with great abomynacion
Was slayne with swerde: Thomas that wolde not doo
The kynges hest which arred the ryght froo[8]
Of the[9] Church and lyberties of the same,
Wherby of honour[10] he wan perpetuell fame.

[After this cruell dede thus by ỹ. iiii. knyghtes doon, wherewith the kyng, after some wryters, was not contented, ỹ kynges fortune began to decreace and fall, so ỹ he had after this many aduersities, where before he knewe not of lyke trowble[1].] In the. xvii. yere of his regne, the kyng made a iourney into Irelõde, where, with great trauayle, he subdued the Irysshe, & after, with helpe of ỹ primat & bisshop of Arnach[11], he refourmed the maner of the dwellers & people of ỹ countrey, & that in. iii. thynges specyally; first, in rulynge & orderynge of the Churche by the curates, & howe they shuld order theyr deuyne seruyce, & mynyster [ỹ sacramẽtis to the people, & vse[1]] the sacrament of matrimony, as

Of Irelõdys Lawes.

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Thomas Becket. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] his goodes. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] and not one whit more. edit. 1542. [5] For the whych the kynge which hadde. [6] not yet quenched. edit. 1533. [7] *Instead of the paragraph here inclosed in brackets the editions of 1542 & 1559 have* "They slewe the sayde trayterouse byshoppe (whyche a lytell before had accurssed both the kyng and all other that eyther had taken and kepte anye of hys goodys, or ellys otherwyse molested him, and this he did in an open pulpet and greate audyence.) In the yere of our Lorde a. M. C. lxx. as appereth by these verses." [8] which wylled him to go fro. edit. 1542. 1559. [9] The popes. edit. 1542. 1559. [10] trayterye. edit. 1542. [11] Armache. edit. 1542. 1559.

it was in Englonde, & other cristen regions. The seconde was, howe ỹ the laye people behaued theym to theyr curates, & what wyse they shulde pay and offer to God theyr tythes. The. iii. was for makyng of theyr testamẽtes.

Fol. C.lx. This was ordeyned ỹ euery man shulde make his laste wyll in presence of his neyghbours, or at leest cause it to be redde ī theyr presence: and first, he shulde rekyn what he oughte, & to set so moche of his goodes by; & if he had a wyfe & chyldren, thā ỹ resydue of his goodys, his dettys beynge payde, to be deuyded ī. iii. partys, one to ỹ wyfe, ỹ secõde to ỹ chyldren, & the thyrd to be spent for ỹ weale of the sowle; & if he had no *Monicio.* chyldren, than ỹ halfe to his sowle, & that other halfe to his wyfe; & if he had no wyfe nor chyldren, than to dispose his goodys at his pleasure. In ỹ returne of ỹ kynge out of Irelonde, was a wõder thynge shewed vnto hym vpō Whitsondaye, which, in the calender, is called Dominica in albis. Whā ỹ kynge shulde take his horse, sodenly apered vnto hym a man of pale and wanne coloure, barefote, & in a whyte kyrtell; the which boldely spake vnto ỹ kynge in ỹ language of Douche, and sayd, "syr kyng, Cryste greetyth the wele, & his mylde moder Mary, with also Iohñ baptyst & Peter, & cōmaunde ỹ streyghtlye, ỹ no markettes nor seruyle warkys be holden vpon ỹ Sonday, in ỹ londys of thy lordeshyp, out take that longeth to dressynge of mete, and if thou doo after this byddynge, I assure the ỹ all thynge ỹ thou begynest to good entēt, or of good purpose, thou shalt brynge it to good ende." The kynge lyked nothynge this speche, sayd to the knyghte that helde his brydell, "aske of this chorle whether he haue dremed all this ỹ he tellyth." Wherunto this man answered, "whether I haue met this tale ī my dreme or not, take thou heede well of my sayinge, for and thou doo not as I haue aduertysed the, and amende thy lyfe, thou shalte shortly here suche thynges ỹ thou shalt be heuy foreto thy lyues ende." The kynge toke all in game, & the man vanysshed sodenly, that the kynge & knyghtes wondered of his departynge, whereof whan ỹ kyng was warned, both of his firste sodeyne[1] aperynge, & of his departynge, ỹ kynge set it neere his mynde, & entendyd to doo some thynges after ỹ mannys cōsayll; but how it was, it had no forwarde. After that [the blessyd man Thomas was martyred[2],] the mūkys, by assent of the kynge, chase Richarde Pryour, of Douer, the which was a man of euyll lyuynge, and wasted the goodys of the Churche inordynatly.

¶ Capitulū. CC.xxxviii.

ABout the. xx. yere of the kyngys reygne, he purchased a dispensacion for the vyage ỹ before he had solēplye auowed, before. ii. cardynallys, to goo into the holy londe, & to ieoberde his propre persone agayne Crystes enemyes, the whiche dispensacion was graunted vpon one condicion, ỹ he shuld buylde. iii. abbeys in Englōde: in fulfyllynge wherof, ỹ kyng put out of the house of Waltham secular chanons, & set there, ī theyr stede, chanons reguler; & for the seconde, he auoyded ỹ mūkys out of the house of Aumbrisbury, & set there menchons that he hadde brought frome beyonde the see; and for the. iii. he renewed coursely the Chartre house of Witham, besyde Salysbury: by which. iii. dedes he thought hymselfe excused of his former promyse. Than began his sonnes to make warre vpon hym; the whiche were ayded by ỹ Scottysshe kynge, & the. ii. erlys of Chester & of Lyncolne: ỹ cause of whiche warre was, after declaracion of some wryters, for so moche as the kynge had enprysoned Elyanour his wyfe, and kepte that wenche Rosamounde agayne all good order. But other say it was for sertayn lōdys in Normādy, which, by ayde of ỹ Frēche kynge, Rycharde, the. iii. sone of byrth, & secōde thā lyuynge, wolde haue taken frome his father. Of this warre, spekyth nothynge the Frenshe Cronycle. Than, as testyfyeth Ranulfe, this innaturall warre endured by ỹ terme of. ii. yeres to the great disturbaūce of ỹ kyng and of his realme, tyll the kyng, with great deuocyon,

[1] sodeynly. [2] Thomas Becket was slayne. edit. 1542. 1559.

vysyted the grave of [ỹ holy marter, seynt Thomas',] after which pylgrymage was by hym fynysshed, in short processe after Wyllyā, kyng of Scottys[2], and the. ii. forenamed erlys of Chester & Lyncolne, were takyn at the castell of Anwyke; but yet he lefte not the company of the forenamed Rosamounde, to the which wenche he had made an howse of a wonder workynge, so that noo creature, man nor woman, myght wyn to her, but if he were instructe by the kynge, or suche as were ryght secret w hym, touchynge ỹ mater. This house, after some wryters, was named, labor intus, or Deladus werke[3], or howse, which is to mean, after moost exposytours, an howse wrought lyke vnto a knot in a garden, called a mase. But ỹ comon fame tellyth, ỹ lastly the quene wañe to her by a clewe of threde, or sylke, and delte with her in suche maner, that she lyued not longe after. Of the maner of her deth spekyth nothynge myn auctour; but whan she was dede, she was buryed at the howse or monastery of Goddestowe, besyde Oxynforde, with theyse verses vpon her tombe.

Notandū est hic quod rex Scocie captus fuit prisonarius in Anglia. Rc

Hic iacet in tumba rosa mundi, sed non rosa munda,
Non redolet sed olet, que redolere solet. Rosarium.

The which verses to our vnderstondynge maye thus as foloweth be englysshed and expowned.

The rose of the world, but not the clene floure,
Is here nowe grauen, to whom bewtye was lent:
In this graue full derke nowe is her bowre,
That by her lyfe was sweete and redolent:
But nowe that she is from this lyfe blynt,
Thoughe she were sweete, nowe fowly doth she stynke.
A myrror good for all that on her thynke.

Longe tyme after ỹ deth of the sayd Rosamounde, in the sayd abbey was shewed a cofer of the sayd wenches, of ỹ lēgth of. ii. fote, i the which apered feyghtynge geauntes, stertlynge of beestys, swymynge of fysshes, & fleynge of fowlys. In the foresayd. xx. yere, after ỹ opinyon of Guydo, the kynge had the seconde monycyon of mendynge of his lyfe by an Irysshe man that tolde vnto hym many secret tokyns, whiche the kynge supposed had no man knowen but hymselfe; but yet the kynge toke lytell hede therunto. In [Li. 6. ca. 23.] the. xxii. yere of his reygne, after the foresayd takynge of the Scottyshe kynge and. ii. erlys, the. xi. daye before Septēber, Wyllyam, kynge of Scottys, by assent of the lordys spyrytuall and temporall, dyd homage to kynge Henry, at his cytie of Yorke, where the sayd Wyllyam graunted by his letters patentys, that he and his successours, kynges of Scotlonde, shuld make theyr homage and fydelyte vnto the kynges of Englonde, as often as they shalbe necessaryly requyred; & in sygne and token of that subieccion, the kynge of Scottes offered his hatte and his sadell, vpon the auter of seynt Peter, in the churche of Yorke: whiche for a remembrañce of that dede, the sayd hatte and sadell were there kepte many yeres after. And ouer that the lordes of Scotlande swore, that if theyr kynge at any tyme wolde wdrawe hym frome allegeañce, they wolde all aryse agayn hym, and be to hym as enemyes tyll he were returned to his faythe, & kepynge of his promyse. And for the more strengthe of the sayde composycion, the kynge of Scottys came after to kynge Henryes parlyamēt holden at North hampton, and another season into Normandy. *Fol. Clxi.* Ranulfe, monke of Chester, sayth that Lewys the. viii. of ỹ name, kyng of Fraūce, de-

[1] Thomas Becket. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Here the edit. of* 1542. *has this note in the margin.* "Here it maye appere that the warre betwene these Princes was sturred vp to cause the kyng to confesse he had done euyl in puttyng to death Thomas Becket; that rebell which the kyng was borne in hande wrought dailye miracles, wherby he was compelled not only to confesse that he dyed an innocente, but also to worshyp and reuerence him as a saynte, such was the popysh blyndnesse and supersticyon." [3] Labyrinthus or Dedalus worke.

lyuered

lyuered vnto kynge Henry a doughter of his, to haue in guydynge, and to haue been maryed vnto Rycharde his sone; the whiche, after the dethe of Rosamonde, he deflowred of hyr vyrgynytie. After whiche dede, as affermeth the sayd auctour, the kynge was in wylle to haue weddyd that damoysell; for expedicion wherof he made great meanes to Huguncio, a cardynall, than beynge in his londe, that he wolde make a deuorce atwene hym and Elyanour the quene: and this he dyd, to the ende to haue the more fauoure of the Frenshemen, that by theyr ayde he myghte the better disheryte his sonnys. But he fayled of his purpose, and also it turned to his owne harme: for, by this meane, he caused the sayd Richarde, his sone, to shewe all his demeanour vnto ŷ Frenshe kynge; so that, by his informacion, vnkyndnesse kyndled atwene them two, & therof ensued mortall warre, as sayth the Englysshe Cronycle, and also Polycronicon. But of this warre speaketh nothynge ŷ Frenshe Cronycle, nor of noon other, durynge the lyfe of ŷ sayde Lewys, after this daye, which dyed in the. xxiiii. yere of this Henry. But the warre, ŷ was atwene ŷ. ii. kynges of Englonde and of Fraunce, was atwene this Henry & Phylyp, sone of this Lewys, as after shalbe shewed. About the. xxiiii. yere of this kyng, as witnessen dyuerse wryters, fell wonderfull wederynge & tempest of thunder, in mydwynter tyme, in Hampshire & other places; by vyolence wherof a preest, amonges other, was slayne. And in the somer folowynge, about Mary Magdaleyne tyde, fell hayle of suche bygnesse, ŷ it slewe both men and beestys. And, about thys tyme, were the bonys of king Arture, & his wyfe Gueynour, founde in the vale of Aualon; whose here of the hede of the sayd Gweynor, was then hole & of freshe coloure, but so soone as it was towched it fell in powder; which bones were translated & buryed within the churche of Glastynbury, and were founden by a synger of gestys, vnder an holowe oke. xv. foote w in the grounde; whiche fyndynge and translatynge is an objecte to the fantasticall sayinge of the Welshe men, that afferme his commynge agayne to reygne, as he before dyd. Than had kynge Henry the seconde, monycion by a knyght called syr Wyllyam Chesterby, or Lyndesey, the which warned hym specyally for the reformacion of. vii. artycles: the firste was, that he shuld set better dylygence to the defence of holy churche,[1] and maynteynynge of the same; the seconde, that he shulde see his lawes executed with better iustyce than at those dayes were[2] vsed; the thyrde was, that he shulde surmyse no maters agayne ryche men, and by that meane plucke from them theyr londys and goodys; the. iiii. that he shulde restore all suche londys and goodys, gotten by suche vnlawfull meanes, or by any other; the fyfth, that he shulde for no mede tary rightfull sentence, but suffer the right to haue his processe; the. vi. that he shuld se to the payment of his subiectes, for suche stuffe as was daylie takyn to his vse, and also to the payment of his seruauntis & soudyours wagys, whiche dayly wrought great sorowe to his comons,[3] and to leue theym some what to spende in theyr iourney: but as he toke the other monycions, so he toke this, and contynued his lyfe as he before had doone.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xxxix.

IN the. xxviiith. yere of his reygne, after moost wryters, dyed Henry, his eldest sone than lyuyinge; [ŷ which, as before is sayde, was crowned, to the derogacion of the marter, seynt Thomas.[4]] And in this yere, whiche shulde be the. iiii. yere of Phylyp the seconde, or of Phylyp surnamed Gyuen of God, the warre began atwene kynge Henry and hym; wherof was occasyon, as testyfyeth the sayde Frenshe Cronycle, the denay-

[1] *The edit. of* 1542 *has this Note.* " Here by thys holy churche, is vnderstand all thynges that made for " the welth and profyte of byshoppes, preastes, monkes, freres, & chanons, & suche other of those sortes, " & not the vniuersall or catholyke churche of Chryste." [2] was. [3] whych dayly fell to robbynge for defaute. The. vii. and the laste was, that he shulde in all haste voyde the Iewys of hys lande, whiche dayly wrought great sorowe to his commons, and to leue, &c. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559.

inge

inge of the deferrynge of homage, that shuld be done to ỹ sayd Phylyp, of Rycharde, then eldest sone of kynge Henry, for the londys of Peytowe[1]. An other cause also was, that where certayne couenauntes were stablisshed and enrolled, atwene kynge Henry & Lewys father of this Phylyp, at the maryage of Henry, his sone, & Margarete, suster of this Phylyp, for certeyne holdys & castellys; wherof the castell of Gysours was one, whiche were delyuered in dower with the sayd Margaret, vpon condycion that if the sayde Henry had issue by the sayd Margaret, than the sayd castellys to remayne to their[2] sayd heyres; & if the sayd yonge Henry dyed without issue of the sayd Margarete, that than the sayd castellys and holdis, to be reuerted vnto the crowne of Fraunce: and for that kynge Henry denyed, or deferred theyse. ii. poyntes, & wolde not answere whan he was callyd, the Frenshe kynge therfore entred the londe of Barry with great strengthe, and wasted the countrey of Guyan without mercy. Wherof kynge Henry beynge warned, in all haste assembled his people, than beinge in Normandy, and drewe hym towarde the Frenshe kynge, which than had layde siege vnto the castell, called in Frenshe, Raoull, or the castell of Raoull[3]. Whan both hostys were nere, & lykely to haue ioyned, medyatours were sent vpon bothe partyes to treate a peace; by meane wherof in processe, a trewce was takyn for a certayne terme, so that eyther hooste departed without strykynge of stroke at that season. Aboute this tyme, dyed Richarde [archbisshop of Caunterbury; of hym it is redde, that a voyce or vysyon was shewed to hym, saynge to hym in the mouthe of Cryste, "for thou haste wasted the goodys of my Churche, I shall rote the out of the erthe;" with which wordys he was so frayde, that he dyed shortlye after.[4]] Than was Baldewyne, bysshop of Worcetour, admytted to that see, though the munkis of Caunterbury withsayde it with all theyr power. In the. xxx. yere of the kynge, Heraclius, patriarke of Ierusalem, cam into Englonde, to haue ayde ayen the Sarazyns, that had wonne great parte of the landys that cristen men had in the holy lande, & for to defende the holy cytie, which Saladyne[5], prynce of Sury, was wonne shortly after. For by the reporte of Peter Disroye, whichmade a boke in Frenshe of the wynnynge and losynge of the sayd cytie, it appereth, that it was wonne by Godfrey de Bulyon, in the yere of Cristes Incarnacion. M.lxxx.xix., & so contynued vnder the rule of. ix. cristen kynges, till the laste kyng, named Guy de Lesyngham, or Lesyngwam, loste it with the holy crosse, in ỹ yere of our Lorde. xi.C.lxxx. and. ix.; which maketh the yere of the reygne of this kynge Henry, the. xxxiiii. Than it foloweth in that story, this Heraclius made busy request vnto ỹ kyng for ayde, & profered to hym the keys of the cytie, & of our Lordes graue, and letters of Lucius ỹ thyrde of that name, than pope[6], chargyng hym that he shuld take vpō hym the iourney, & to haue mynde of that[7] othe, that he before tyme had made. The kyng deferred this answere, & Baldewyne the archebisshop preched and exorted men to take the crosse, by whose meanes, many there were that auowed that iourney: lastly the kynge gaue answere and sayde that he myght not leue his londe without kepynge, nor yet leue it to the praye and robory of Frēshe men, but he wolde gyue largely of his owne to such as wolde take vpon them ỹ vyage. With this answere the patryarke was discontent, & sayde, "we seke a man and not money: welnere euery cristen regyon sendyth vnto vs money, but no londe sendeth to vs a prynce: therfore we aske a prynce ỹ nedeth money, and not money that nedyth a prynce." But the kyng layed for hym suche excuses, that the patryarke departed from hym dyscontēted & comfortelesse; wherof the kynge beynge aduertysed, entendynge somwhat to recomforte hym with plesaunt wordes, folowed hym vnto the see syde. But the more ỹ kynge thought to satysfye hym with his fayre speche, the more the patriarke was discontented, in so moche, that at the laste he sayde vnto hym, "hytherto thou haste reygned gloryouslye, but here after thou shalt be forsakyn of hym that thou at this tyme forsakest; thynke on hym, what he

[Li. 7. ca. 24.]

Patriarcha.

Fol. C.lxii.

Wordis of displeasure.

[1] Poytow. [2] the. [3] Roall. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] by Saladyne. [6] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] the.

hath

hath gyuen to the, & what thou haste yelden to hym agayne, howe fyrste thou were false vnto the kynge of Fraūce, and after slewe [that holy man, Thomas of Caūterbury,[1]] and lastly, thou forsakest the proteccion of Crystis faythe." The kynge was amoued with theyse wordes, and sayd vnto the patryarke, "thoughe all the men of my lande were one body, and spake w one mouthe, they durste not speke to me suche wordys." "No wonder," sayde the patriarke, "for they loue thyne, and not the; that is to meane, they loue thy goodys temporall, and fere ȳ for losse of promocion, but they loue not thy soule." And whā he had soo sayd, he offered his hed to the kynge, sayinge, "do by me right, as thou dyddest by [that blessyd man, Thomas of Caunterbury,][1] for I had leuer to be slayne of the thā of the Sarasyns, for thou arte worse than any Sarasyn, and thy people folow-
Paciencia. eth pray, and not a man." But ȳ kyng kepte his pacience, and sayd, "I maye not wende out of my londe, for myn owne sonnes wyll aryse agayne me whan I were absent." "No wonder," sayde the patryarke, "for of the deuyll they cōme, and to the deuyll they shall," & so departed from the kyng in great ire. After the patryarke was thus departed, the kyng sent Iohn, his secōde sone, vnto Irelonde: in ȳ which vyage he spent the kyng great goodys, & dyd lytle profyte or none. In the. xxxi. yere of kynge Henry, the Iewes crucifyed a chylde in the towne of Bury in Suffolke, named Robert, for whome God shewed after many myracles. And in the. xxxii. the kynge made a vyage into Irelonde, to redresse thynges there out of ordre, but fortune was to hym so cōtrary, that he loste his trauayle, lyke as the yere before his sone Iohn had done. In the. xxxiii. yere of this kynge Henry, at Dunstable, in the ayre was seene a crucifix, & Cryste nayled therō, which appered vysybly to many a mannys syght; and in this yere the kynge loste the countrey of Aluerne, whan he had spent great goodes about the defence of the same; howe be it, of this warre speketh no thynge the Frenshe Cronycle.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xl.

IN the. xxxiiii. yere of ȳ kynge, Rycharde, ȳ erle of Peytowe[2], arered warre agayne kynge Hēry his fader, and toke partye with the Frenshe kynge, by meane of the which warre, all suche sūmys of money as were before gaderyd by dymys, and otherwyse, for the helpynge of ȳ croysye to be made in to ȳ holy lōde by the sayd Rycharde, & by many other nobles of the londe, were spent in the same innaturall warre. Wherefore the kynge sayled into Normandy with a stronge army; but or the kynge were there londed, the sayd Rycharde, by helpe of the Frenshe men, had won the cyties of Towres, of Meaus, and also ȳ castellys of Raoull, and Gysours, with other. At the laste the Frenshe kynge, Phylyp the seconde, with the sayde Rycharde, cam vnto the cytie of Cenomana, entendynge to laye siege vnto the same; wherof kyng Henry beynge warned, set the suburbys on fyre because his enemyes shuld in theym haue no socour: but the flame of the fyre was by the wynde dryuen into ȳ cytie [by such vyolence, that it fyred the cytie][3] so sharply, that the kynge was compelled to forsake it, wherwith the kyng was so amoued, that, in his de-
Impaciēcia. partynge from ȳ cytie, he sayd theyse wordes, "For thou hast takyn from me this daye the cytie that I mooste loued in the worlde I shall acquyte the: for after this tyme I shall benygne[4] the ȳ thynge that shuld mooste haue pleased the in me, whiche is myne harte." After this he loste more dayly, so that his enemyes preuayled strongely agayne hym. It is red of hym, that he shuld be at so great an after deale ī this warre, that hastely[5] he shuld put hym ī the kynge of Fraunces mercy, his honour & his crowne reserued. But this is doubtefull of credence: for sure I am, if ȳ Frēshe kyng had such auaūtage of hym, it shuld not haue fallen throughe ȳ boke, but haue ben regestered ī ȳ moste auaūtynge maner, where as in ȳ Frēshe Cronycle is towched no worde of lyke matyer. But thoughe[6]

[1] Thomas Becket. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Poytowe. [3] *Omitted in the later editions.* [4] by nome. [5] lastlie. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] trouth.

it

it is that fortune was to hym contrary in suche wyse, that with or for anger & inpacience, he fell into a feuer, wherof he lastly dyed in the castell of Conomeus, or of Chynon, in Normandy, in the moneth of Iuly, whā he had reygned. xxxiiii. yeres and. viii. monethes with odde dayes, and was buryed at Fount Ebrade, with this epytaphy vpon his tombe.

Sufficit hic tumulus cui non sufficerat[2] orbis:
Res breuis est ampla, cui fuit ampla breuis.
Rex Henricus eram: michi plurima Regna subegi,
Multipliciq; modo, duxq; comesq; fui,
Cui satis ad votum non essent omnia terre
Climita, terre modo sufficit octo pedum;
Qui legis hec pensa discrimina mortis et in me
Humane speculum condicionis habe.
Quod petis[3] instante[4] operare bonū, quia mundus
Transit, et incautos mors inopina rapit.

The whiche verses are thus moche to meane in sentence.

Suffysyth nowe this graue to whom all erthly thynge
Suffysed not, my mynde so hyghe was sette.
Tyme that was shorte my name wyde[5] dyd sprynge,
Which fame by deth is into shortnesse fette.
Kynge Henry was I called, no man I thought my bette.
Whose mynde, some tyme, all erth not suffysed,
Viii. fote of grounde nowe hath my body comprysed.
Thou that this redest, the[6] parell of deth, and in me
Thou mayste beholde the cource of euery wyght
That erthely is: wherefore prouyde and se
That thou wele maye doo, shortly do it, & tyght. *Fol. Clxiii.*
Dyffer not tyme, for I assertayne the right.
The worlde is transytory, and vnwarely men takyth
Cruell deth, from whom none astate escapeth.

Girardus Cambrensis, whiche, in his booke of distynccions, set out the lyfe of this Hēry, sayth, dredefull it is to allege agayne hym that maye put a man out of lōde. & to descryue hym with many wordes that may exyle a man with one worde; wherfore it were a notable dede to tell the sooth of a prynces dedys, and offende the prynce in no mean, but yet whan ȳ prynce is passed & goon, thā men wyll talke without fere that before tyme they spared for fere. Thā, to folowe the sooth, this kynge Henry norysshed stryfe amonge his chyldren with all dylygence, hopynge therby to lyue hym selfe in the more rest. Whan men wolde aske of hym whan he wolde leue his great dedis, he vsed to answere that ȳ worlde shuld fayle, or a coragyous hart shuld cease of great dedys. He was pereles in chyualry, in warre, & in lechery. He wedded Elyanoure, wyfe of Lewys, kynge of Fraunce, contrary to the commaūdement of his fader, for he hadde shewed to hym that he had lyen by her, whā he was ȳ sayd kynges steward. He reygned. xxvi. yeres some deale to his worldlye blysse, and. iiii. yeres some what to his payne; but ȳ laste. v. yeres to his great trowble & sorowe. Farthermore the sayd Gerarde descryueth the progeny of this Henry, whiche I ouerpasse, because it is so cōmon: Rycharde, his sone, wolde often tell that wonder, & vsed to say, no marueyle though they greued ȳ people ȳ were comon of suche kynde, for of ȳ Deuyll they came, & to ȳ Deuyll they shall. It is also redde of this Hēry, ȳ, in a chaūber at Wyndesore, he

[1] trouth. [2] sufficit. edit. 1542. suffecerit. 1559. [3] potes. edit. 1559. [4] instanter. edit. 1559.
[5] full wyde. edit. 1559. [6] waye the. edit. 1559.

caused to be paynted an egle ẅ. iiii. byrdes, whereof. iii. of them all rased the body of ẏ olde egle, and the. iiii. was cratchynge at the olde eglys eyen: whan ẏ questyō was asked of hym, what thynge that pycture shuld sygnyfye, it was answered by hym: "this olde egle," sayde he, "is my selfe, and theyse. iiii. eglys betokyn my. iiii. sonnys, the which sease not to pursue my deth, and specially my yongest sone, Iohn̄, whiche nowe I loue mooste, shall moost especyally awayte and imagen my dethe."

¶ Capitulū. CC.xli.

PHylyp, the secōde of that name, surnamed Dyeu done, or gyuen of God, and sone vnto the. viii. Lewis, begā to reygne ouer the realme of Fraūce, in the yere of our Lord. xi. C. lxxix., and the. xxiii. yere of Henry the seconde, than kynge of Englonde; which sayd Phylyp regned somwhat of tyme by the lyfe of his father, which tyme is accōpted vnto ẏ reygne of his father. Thus[1], in the firste yere of his reygne, for the great enormyties that the Iewes vsed within the realme of Fraunce, as crucyfyenge of chyldren, and exersysynge of theyr detestable vsery, he, after due profe made, put the malefactours to deth, and ẏ other, in auoydynge more daungeour, he exyled and put clere out of his realme. This Phylyp also, as before in the story of Henry the seconde is towched, exyted the sonnys of the sayde Henry to make warre vpon theyr father, by which meane this Phylyp gate many holdys and townes frome the sayd Hēry within his duchy of Guyon. But after the deth of Henry, this Phylyp gaue ouer all the sayde holdys and townys vnto Rychard, ẏ eldest sone of the sayd Hēry, and receyued of hym homage for the same; and, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle, in tokyn of obedyence[2], was present at the coronacion of the sayde Phylyp. But ye shall vnderstonde that ẏ[3] was not kyng of Englōde, for he was not kyng of Englonde. x. yeres after; but if it so were, that he were present at the sayde coronacyon, yet it was a duke[4] of Guyon onely. About the thyrde yere of his reygne, Eraclius, patriarke of Ierusalem, came into Fraūce, and requyred ayde of this kyng Phylyp to withstande the fury and persecucion which Saladyne, prynce of Turkys, had executed, & dayly contynued in the coūtrey of Palestina agayne ẏ Crysten to the great destruccion of them, & vndoynge of the countrey, and great ieopardy of the losynge of ẏ holy cytie of Ierusalem. For this the kyng assembled a great counsayll at his cytie of Parys, where ẏ sayd Eraclius made request to the kynge, as before he had done to Henry the seconde, for he was in Fraūce in the yere of our Lord. xi. C. lxxx. ii., & in Englonde he was in the yere of grace. xi. C. lxxx. vii. After which coūsayll there so holden, it was agreed that the kyng, with ayde of the bysshoppys & other of the spiritualtie, shuld ayde the sayd patryarke, ẏ which were set forth in all possyble haste; but after ẏ reporte of Peter Dysroye, whiche made a recule, or lytle boke of the wynnynge & losynge of Ierusalem, they, ẅ moo Cristen prynses, were dryuen by tēpest of the see, vnto the porte of Damas, where, vnder colour of a fayned trewce, they were taken, & caste the mooste parte of them in pryson. And whan kyng Phylyp had thus delyuered the patryarke, he than gaderyd his knyghtes, & made an armye agayne Hugh, duke of Burgoyne, the which, at ẏ season & tyme, had beclypped the castell of Vergy, with a strōge siege, & had promysed not to departe thens, tyll such tyme as he had wonne ẏ holde by appoyntment or other wyse: & for the defence of rescouse ẏ might be made for the same, he had manned. iiii. castellys or towres[5] thereunto adioynaunt, with great strengthe of men of armys. But after the kyng was thyther comyn ẅ his hoste, ẏ sayde towres were soone ouerturned, & the kyng, with a certayn of his people, of Guy, capitayne of the sayd castell of Vergy, was ioyouslye into the same receyued, and rendered to hym the castell, & becam his lyege man: wherewith the sayd Hugh beynge sore amoued &

[1] Thys. [2] The sayd Rychard in token of obedyence. [3] than he. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] yet was he duke. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Townes. edit. 1542. 1559.

dyscontēted, seynge there he was dispoynted of his purpose, departed thence with his ordynaūce & people, & robbed and spoyled the coūtrey there abowte, sparynge nother churche, nor house of relygyon, in so cruel & greuouse maner, that the bysshoppis & abbotys of ỹ partye of Burgoyne made pyteous request vnto ỹ sayde Phylyp, that he, of his specyall grace, wolde ayde & socoure them & theyr churches agayn the tyranny of the sayd duke Hughe. The kynge beynge moued with this pyteous request, made sharpe warre vpō the sayde Hugh, & at lengthe wan from hym a strōge castell, named Chastelon; wherwithall the duke was put to such a studyall & fere, that he was forsed to suche[1] meanys of treaty & of peace; wherof the conclusyon was, that he shulde paye vnto the churches, before by hym hurted and harmed. xxx. M. li. whiche conclusyon taken, and suretye sette for the same, the kynge returned vnto Parys, where the kynge so restynge hym a serteyne of time, & hauynge experyence of the intollerable and foule stenches that daylye grewe by the fylthe of the erthe, and myre in the stretes, made prouysyon dylygently, ẁ ayde & helpe of the cytezens which as than had londe within the cytie, ỹ the streetys were shortlye paued after. And at this tyme whan the cytie was thus paued, as affermeth many auctors, the name of it was changed from Lutesse or Lewcesse vnto Parisse. *Fol. C.lxiiii*

¶ Capitulum. CC.xlii.

IN the. vii. yere of this kyng Phylyp, as saythe the Frenshe boke, Margaret, suster vnto this Phylyp, late wyfe vnto Henry late deceased, and eldest sone of Henry the seconde, kyng, at this daye, of Englande, was maryed vnto Belas kyng of Hungry. In the. x. yere of this kynge Phylyp, the cytie of Ierusalem was takyn of Saladyne, prynce of Egypte, & Guy de Lessyngnan, last cristen kynge of that cytie, with the holy crosse, was taken in the feelde; whiche, after that daye, came neuer into cristen mennys possession. Of this sorowe & heuynesse worde was broughte vnto kynge Phylyp, with requeste of ayde to reskue certeyn cyties, as yet rested vnder the domynyon of the cristen, as Tyre, Tryple, and Anteoch, with other small holdys; for sauegarde wherof many nobles of Fraunce, toke vpon them the crosse, as the duke of Burgoyne, the erle of Flaunders, Theobalde erle of Bloyes, the erle of Rocheforde, ỹ erle of Champayne, with many other noble knyghtes, whiche for lengthe I passe ouer, & also the reporte of theyr deedys, forsomoche as it concerneth nothynge the mater that I haue promysed to speke of. In this iourney, also, kyng Phylyp entendyd to haue goone, & for the same great taskys and dymys to be leuyed[2] throughe out his realme; the which, to this day, are called Saladynes dymes. But the letter[3] of this iourney, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, was Rycharde duke of Guyon, & after his father Henry the seconde, that made warre vpon the Frenshe kynge as before is touched in the story of the sayd Henry; durynge which warre, the sayd Henry dyed in the. xi. yere of this sayd Phylyp. About this season and tyme, the Iewes, which, by mean of great gyftes, hadde agayne purchased theyr dwellynge within the country of Fraunce, whereof a wydowe was lady and mastresse, called Branous, in absence of the kynge, toke a Cristen man, & surmysed agayne hym felony & murdoure; for the which, by fauoure of the sayd lady, the sayde Iewes set a crowne of thorne vpon the sayd Cristen mannys hede, & after scourged hym, & lastly in dyrysyon of Crystes relygyon, & despyte of the same, crucifyed the same persone: wherof whan the kyng was enfourmed, in all haste sente[4] into the sayd countrey or castell of Brayon, & surprysed the sayde Iewes so sodeynly that none escaped, & brente there of them to the noumber of. lxxx. for theyr malycyous & abhomynable dede. In the. xi. yere of the reygne of this Phylyp, dyed Isabell the quene of Fraunce, his wyfe, a woman of good fame & of great vertue. In the. xii. yere of his reygne, as sayth the Frenshe boke, this Phylyp toke vpon hym the crosse, hauynge promyse of kynge Rycharde, than newely crowned

[1] seke. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] were leuyed. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Lette. [4] He sent.

kynge of Englonde, to kepe company with hym in that iourney; but he kepte not promyse; wherwith this Phylyp beynge discontented, sayled before & layde siege vnto the cytie of Acon, or Acre. From this saynge varyeth Policronyca, and also Peter Desroye, for Polycronycon sayth, that after the kynges of Englonde and of Fraunce, had made suretye atwene them for perfourmaunce of this iourney, they bothe together taryed at Turon in Fraunce, for to abyde the somer tyde; and at spryngynge of the yere, they, of one wylle and purpose, toke theyr vyage towarde the holy lande: that ys to wytte, that one by water, and that other by londe, and mette agayne in Cecilia, where the Frenshe kynge departyd from hym, & so sayled to the sayde cytye of Acoñ or Acre, and layed his siege thereunto. In whiche pastyme, kynge Rycharde warred vpon the kyng of Sypres, and hym with his londe subdued, and after cam vnto Acoñ, where the Frenshe kyng had longe lyen at siege withoute gettynge of any great aduauntage of his enemyes, sayinge vnto kynge Rycharde, that he had spared the wynnynge of the towne tyll his cõmynge, to the ende that he, at his cõmynge, myght be pertener as wele of the honoure as of the wynnynge. But howe it was, suche vnkyndnesse fell atwene them there, after they had wonne the sayde towne, as after in the story of kynge Rycharde shall be shewed, that this kyng Phylyp returned into Fraunce shortly after; in the which returne the sayd Phylyp sykened, and the duke of Burgoyne dyed. And whan kynge Phylyp a season had soiurned in Fraunce, he maryed Iugebert, the doughter of the kynge of Denmarke; whiche maryage, as sayth Ranulfe, was desyred of the Frenshe kyng, to haue with her graunted the tytle, whiche the Danes hadde vnto the crowne of Englonde, with also. x. M. markys of syluer, for to wynne ỹ the sayd right and tytle; but it was not longe or she were from hym deuorsed, for cause of alíaunce of Gossipred, or otherwyse. How be it, in processe of tyme after, the sayde Iugebert was to hym agayne ioyned by the autoryte [of pope]' Innosent, the thyrde of that name,' in the yere of grace. xii.C.ix. and yere of reygne of this Phylyp. xxx., so that the sayde Iugebert was deuorsed from her lorde, by the terme of. xvii. yeres or thereupon: in which tyme and season, the sayd Phylyp had maryed the doughter of Phylyp duke of Sweuy, that than was returned vnto her father.

[Li. 7. ca. 20.] A Croysy.

¶ Capitulum. CC.xliii.

KYnge Phylyp, for dyspleasure which he bare toward kyng Rycharde, made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Normans, and wanne therein dyuerse holdys and townes, and fynally layde siege vnto the cytie of Roan: wherof herynge, Iohñ, erle of Huntyngeton, or after some, erle of Oxinford, brother to kyng Rycharde, whom the Frenshe boke nameth Iohñ without londe, with the erle of Arundell and other noble men, sped them into Normandy, and so ayded the cytezens and the soldiours of Roan, that as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, the Frenshe kyng was so moued with the warre & defence of the same towne, that, in a passynge fury, consyderynge the wynter season drewe vpon, & that he myght not cary awaye his gunnes, and other great ordynauncis, he set all vpon a fyre, and so with great agony departed; and within three monethes after layde siege vnto the castell of Vernyell, where, when he had lyen. iii. wekes or more, a messynger came vnto hym, and sayde, that the cytie Euroux was taken of the Normayns, and the people thereof taken prysoners: wherfore in all haste, he departed, & rescued the sayde cytie and prysoners, & that done, returned to the foresayd siege, and assyeged it so strongely, that lastly he had it delyuered by apoyntement. By this season was kynge Rycharde delyuered out of the handys of the duke of Ostrige; and then began the warre to be more cruell: whiche here I passe ouer, for so moche as I entende to shewe the effecte therof, in the story of kynge Rycharde folowynge. Abowte the. xviii. yere of the reygne of this Phylyp, fell such plẽte of water, ỹ the groũde was therwith so bucked and drowned, that

Fol. C.lxv.

' *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. ' *The same* edit. *add* "Then byshop of Rome."

corne

corne and other frutes, by reason therof, greatly decayed and scanted; in suche wyse that whete was shortly after at. xx.s. a quarter, after sterlyng money. In the. xx. yere of ỹ reygne of this Phylyp, dyed Rycharde, kynge of Englōde, to whom was heyre Iohñ, before named, his brother, the which concluded a trewce with this Phylyp for certeyne yeres, as after in the story of this Iohñ shall more clerelye apere: & soone there after, meanes were made to kynge Phylyp, that he shulde receyue agayne vnto his company Iugebert his wyfe, and to renounce Mary, doughter of the duke of Sweuy, or, after some auctours, the doughter of the duke of Bohemy. But the kynge w̄ his mocion was nothynge contented, nor yet agreable to folowe any suche mocyon[1] or requeste. Wherefore the prelasy of the londe assymyled them in counceyll, and by a full & hoole auctoryte, seinge they myght not enduce the kynge to noone conformytie or agremēt, to resume his lawfull wyfe, and to refuse that other, they denoūsed hym and his realme accursed: wherewith ỹ kynge was so amoued and vexed that he depryued sertayne bisshoppis from theyr sees, and also toke in his possessyon the spirituall goodys, and prysoned many prestes and other relygyous men, and ouer that, closed the sayde Iugebert within the castell of Sampys; and farthermore greued his comondys[2] with greuous exaccyons & taxys. Than w̄in a shorte terme after, Iohñ de saynt Powle, cardynall, and Athan, or Othemon, bysshop of Osty, and legat of the pope of Rome[3], with the archebysshop of Burdeaux and other, by the cōmaundement of [the pope than[4]] Innocent the. iii. kepte a great councell in the cytie of Sorsore, where the kynge was monysshed to apere, for so moche as before he hadde graunted to be counceyled[5] vnto his fyrst wyfe; where this mater liynge in argument before the spyrytuall iuges, by the space of. xv. dayes without sentence gyuynge: wherfore the kynge beynge with the delayes discontented, sodēly with his wyfe departed, without takynge of theym any congie or leue; sendynge them vnderstondynge that assyth[6] he wolde be aduysed, or he were disseuered from his wyfe. Wherof whan the sayde Iohñ, cardynall, and ỹ other bysshoppis had wyttynge, accōptynge theyr labour lost, retourned[7] shortly after vnto Rome, and shewed vnto the pope[8] all as they had done. And soone there after, kynge Iohñ was honorably receyued of this kynge Phylyp, as in the story of ỹ sayd Iohñ shalbe more playnely shewed; & in ỹ yere folowynge, whiche shulde be in the begynnynge of the. xxiii. yere of this Phylyp, dyed Mary his wyfe, which he wrongefully had holden, cōtrary the lawe of ỹ churche, by the terme of. x. yeres or thereupon. Of the whiche Mary he hadde receyued a man chylde, and a doughter: the which after were made legittimat by Innosent the thyrde, though some noble men of Fraunce there agayne grudged.

¶ Capitulū. CC.xliiii.

IT was not longe after ỹ the kynge assembled great people, & entēdyd to haue entred the londys of the erle Rossell, & of Roger de Rose: of the which he hadde broughte before hym many greuouse complayntes of great extorcions and exaccions, ỹ the sayd erle & Roger had executed & done, vpon the churches nere to the valey of Soysons, & wolde not refrayne for all the kynges cōmaūdemēt; wherefore he rygged his army, & drewe towarde theym. But as soone as they were aduertysed of the kynges cōmyng, anon they submytted them to the kynges grace, oblygyng themselfe to make restytucyon accordynge to the kynges pleasure, to all suche places & persones as they had offended; & this acte thus fynysshed, kyng Phylyp returned vnto a place atwene Verdon & the ile Audely. In the whiche place the kynge had appoynted a great counsayll, or parlyament; where, amonge other maters, it was cōcluded ỹ Iohñ, kyng of Englōd, shuld be somoned to appere as ỹ Frēshe kynges lyege man, at ỹ same parlyamēt to be holden at Parys, w̄in. xv.

[1] monicion. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] comons. [3] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] reconcyled. [6] as yet. [7] they retourned. [8] byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

dayes

dayes of Ester, to answere suffyciently to ỹ kyng, vpō such questyōs as there shuld be purposed vnto hym, for the duchy of Normandy, for ỹ coūtrey of Aūgeou & of Poytyers. But for that kynge Iohñ came not at ỹ day appoynted, nor none for hym, accordyng to ỹ monysshement to hym gyuen: therfore this kyng Phylyp, notwstandyng the amytie & trewce before cōfermed, assembled his hooste, & entred ỹ duchy of Normandy, & made therein sharpe & cruell warre, & wan a castell therein named Bonte or Bowte, & broused or crased ỹ castellys of Gentelyne & Gurney, & seased all ỹ londes which Hughe de Gurney helde, & gaue them vnto the duke of Bryteyne; & also he gaue vnto hym the erledome of Angeou, &. ii.C. knyghtes prysoners, of Normans & Englysshe, ẅ a great sūme of money. It was not longe after, ỹ the duke of Bretayne was departed from the kynge, but ỹ he, with such power as he myght make, entred the coutrey of Angeou to take therof possession; where, in shorte space, he was encoutred of kynge Iohñ, & fought togeder a cruell batell. In ỹ which, in ỹ ende, ỹ duke was put to the warse, for ỹ more parte of his people were slayne, &. hym selfe, with Hugh le Bruns, Godfrey de Lesignan, & many other nobles of Fraūce, & also of Bretayn, were takyn prisoners. With which tydynges ỹ Frenshe kynge was greuosely discōtēted; & where as, at ỹ tyme, he hadde becleped ỹ castell of Arches with a strōge siege, he remoued from thens & yode to ỹ cytie of Towers, and brent a parte therof. But, as testifyeth ỹ Frenshe Cronycle, he taryed not the cōmynge of kyng Iohñ, but, for ỹ wynter was cōmynge towarde, he seaced of his warrys for ỹ yere, & so drewe hym into Fraūce. In the yere folowynge, which was the yere of this Phylyp. xxiiii., & of kyng Iohñ the. iiii. yere, ỹ warre newely began, whiche I ouer passe, for as moch as it shalbe shewed in the story of kyng Iohñ. In ỹ. xxvi. yere of this Phylyp, Almaricus, a studyent of Parys, helde sertayne opynyōs of heresy, of ỹ which whan he was abiured, he tooke suche thought ỹ he dyed shortly after. It was not lōge after, but ỹ other clerkys and studyaūtis helde an other erronyous opynyon concernynge the vnyon of the Trynytie; of the whiche noūber, Peter, bysshop of Parys, and one Garyne, a man of great conynge, were. ii.: ỹ which were degraded & after consumed with fyre, and the body of ỹ forenamed Almaricus was agayne taken out of the erthe, & after brent. Nere about the. xxx. yere of the reygne of this Phylyp, for consyderacyon, as sayth the Frenshe boke, that Iohñ, kynge of Englonde, had exyled dyuerse of his bysshoppys, &
Fol. C.lxvi. taken from them theyr possessions & goodys, the which to this kynge Phylyp were comē for ayde & socoure; he therfore, moued with pytie, assēbled a great hooste. & entended to haue sayled into Englōde to haue refourmed theyse maters; with the whiche hoost he passed, tyll he came to Grauenynge by londe, where he appoynted his nauey to mete ẅ hym; & to the same place also, Ferrande, than erle of Flaunders, had affermely promysed to come with ỹ ayde of his Flemynges, where the kynge for hym taryed a serteyne of tyme. But shortly after ỹ kynge was asserteyned, that ỹ sayd erle was alyed with kynge Iohñ, his enemye, & purposed to ayde his party in all that he myghte; whereof the occasyon was, as affermeth the sayde Frenshe Cronycle, for so moche as Lewys, eldest sone of kynge Phylyp, helde from the sayd Ferrande, ii. castellys or townes, named Sayut Omer and Are. Whā kynge Phylyp appersyued that he was thus of ỹ erle despoynted, he, by counceyll of his barony, put by his iourney into Englonde, and assayled the countrey of Flaunders, and so yode vnto Cassyle, a lytell from Grauenynge, & with sharpe assawte wan the sayde towne, and so from thens to Brugys, and cōmaunded his nauey to be brought vnto the hauen of Sluse, whiche is within short waye of Brugys; and whan he had executed his pleasure at Brugys, leuynge a certayne of his people for to strengthe his nauey, he yode vnto Gaunte, and there rested hym and his people. In whiche season Regnolde, erle of Boleyne, Guyllyam Longe espe, or Wyllyam with the longe swerde, with a crewe of Englysshe men, aryued in Flaunders; to whom shortly drewe Ferraunt the erle, with
Bellū nauale. a great power of Flemynges: the whiche shyppyd them in smalle caruyles and barkys, and other shyppis of aduaūtage, and with a fyerse corage sette vpon the Frenshe kynges nauey, lyinge at Sluse, as before is shewed, where was foughten a stronge & cruell batell: but, in the ende, the Flemynges had the victory, and had the rule of all the Frenshe flote;

flote; the whiche in nomber, as testyfyeth the sayde Frenshe Cronycle, were a thowsande and ten sayle; the which, for nōber & gretnesse, myght nat all lye withī ŷ hauyn, but sprad a great parte of ŷ ryuer besyde. Which so lying without the hauyn, the Flemynges conueyed thens, & after layde ordynaunce to the towne of Sluse, and assyeged it. Kynge Phylyp herynge of the losse of his nauy, and of the assautynge of the towne of Sluse, in all haste sped hym thyther; and there in suche wyse resisted his enemyes, ŷ he slewe of them vpon. MM., and toke of them dyuerse prysoners, and rescued the towne; but for he sawe he myghte not recouer his shyppes, beynge within the hauyn, he caused theym to be discharged of vytell and other necessaryes, and after set them on fyre, and the towne also, and ŷ done, toke serteyne hostagys of Bruges, of Gaunte, and of Ipre, and so returned into Fraunce.

¶ Capitulū. CC.xlv.

WHan kynge Phylyp was returned ito Fraūce, it was not longe after, that by ŷ meanes of some wele dysposed persones, he was recoūsyled & toke to hym his laufull wyfe, Ingeberta, or Iugebert, doughter of the kyng of Dēmarke; which was great cōforte to all his people: & thus it now apereth that the sayde Ingebert was from her lord or husbōde, by ŷ terme of. xvi. yeres & more, as before it is touched in ŷ secōde Chapytre of this story. In ŷ yere of grace. xii.C.xiiii. as sayth ŷ Frenshe boke, which maketh ŷ yere of ŷ reygne of this Phylyp. xxxv., Otho, the. iiii. of ŷ name, and duke of Saxony, whiche of some of ŷ lectours[1] was chosen for emperour, in ŷ quarell of kyng Iohn̄, entred the prouynce of Heuaude[2], & there beynge accompanyed w̄ Reygnolde, erle of Boleyne, Farraunt, erle of Flaūders, and dyuerse other nobles, as well of Englōde, Saxony, & other places, made prouysyon to fyght w̄ kyng Phylyp, which then warred ī Flaūders; so ŷ the Frēshe kyng was at the castell of Peron, and Otho was at the castell of Valensiens, or Valenseus. About Mary Magdaleyns tyde, ŷ Frēshe kyng, in wastyng the countrey of Flaunders, came vnto ŷ towne of Turney, & Otho returned from ŷ foresayde castell, & came vnto ŷ castell or towne, named Mortenge, ŷ which was but. vi. myle from Turney. Wherof herynge, ŷ kynge entendyd to haue set ī shorte tyme vpō his enemyes; but, by thaduyce of his barons, was letted, for so moche as ŷ wayes and placis were streyght, and narowe towarde his enemyes: for the whiche cōsyderaciō by counsayll of his sayd barones, he was letted & returned[3] towarde Henawde, for to haue more larger playnes. So ŷ after saynt Iamys daye, he returned, purposynge ŷ nyght to haue lyen, and also his hoste, at the castell called Lylly; but he was letted of his purpose: for Otho, which was warned of his remouynge, demed hym to haue fled, pursued[4] after ŷ vaūgarde of the kyng, of ŷ which were capitayns ŷ vicoūte of Mylyō, & one named fryer Garny, the which was a fryer & relygyous man, a man of great counsayll & hardynesse. Theyse, beynge accompanyed w̄. iiii.M. men, rode tyll they came to an hyll or lytle moūtayne, where they espyed ŷ auaūtage of Otho & his hoste. Wherefore fryer Garny returned to gyue ŷ kynge knowlege, & ŷ vicounte remayned in ŷ place, & houed with his company. Whan ŷ kynge had knowlege of ŷ cōmyng of his enemyes, he in good maner kepte on his iourney. In which season, Otho, with his people, cam vnto a ryuer which was somdeale daūgerous to passe; howe be it, ī processe he passed it; & whan he & his hoste were ouer, he made waye towarde Turney: in so moche ŷ the vicoūt & his cōpany demed them to haue returned to Turney. But so soone as fryer Garny was returned vnto ŷ sayd mount, anon he demed ŷ cōtrary, & sayd, presysely ŷ other they must gyue batayll to theyr enemyes, or ellys they must flee w̄ shame. In this whyle, ŷ kynges people came vnto a brydge where they shulde passe ouer, & the cawtele of his enemyes was, that whā ŷ kyng, w̄ the more parte of his people, had ben passed ŷ brydge, they wold haue set vpon ŷ rere warde, &

[1] electours. [2] Henaude. [3] removed. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] and pursued.

haue

haue dystressed them, & soo haue kepte ỹ bryge, that the kynge shulde not haue socoured his people. But, or the kynge were passed, the fyght was begoñe; in so moche, that hydeous crye cam to the kynges erys, "at armys, at armys, to harneys, to harnes, our enemyes be come." Nere vnto the kynge was a chapell, halowed in the honour and worshyp of saynt Peter; whereunto the kyng yode, and made there his deuoute prayers:
Fol. Clxvii. and that done, armed hym & lepte to horse, ioyously cryinge, as barons at armes. Than the Oryflambe, which was passed ỹ brydge, was countermaunded; and than began the trũpettys and tabours to blowe, whiche reuyued the palled hartys, and caused them to forgete the drede of dethe. But for the kynges people myght not so hastely returne, and passe the brydge, the kynge, as a valyaunt knyghte, toke his horse with his spurris, and set foreward, to encourage the other of his knyghtes; so that his enemyes herynge of his commynge, were some deale dyscoragyd, & gaue place vnto the kynges hoost. Thã Otho, herynge of the kynges returne, enbatayled his people; but soo it was, ỹ he toke the north parte of the felde: by reason wherof the sõne was in his face, to his great afterdeale, for ỹ daye was excedynge whot ouer that[1] other. Than was the batell begonne in dyuerse partyes of the felde, so cruelly, that many a man was there ouer throwen; ỹ which endured by a lõge space, in suche wyse, that harde it was to disserne which partye had the better of that other: eyther prynce enforsed so straytly that other, that eyther of theym were vnhorsed, & in great ieoperdy. If here I shuld reherse the victoryous dedys of the Frenshe kynge & his knyghtes in order, after ỹ expressement of the Frenshe booke, I shulde thereof make a longe story; but trowthe it is, ỹ in the ende, Otho was compelled to forsake ỹ felde, to ỹ great losse of his people; & Feraunt, ỹ erle of Flaãders, was taken w̃ many other, as Regnolde, erle of Boleyn, &. xxviii. other of name. And one thyng hardely me semeth to be credẽce gyuen vnto, reherseth here the Frenshe Cronycle, sayinge, ỹ of all ỹ Frenshe hoost was myssed but one sengle man, the whiche after was founde amonge the dede Almayns, sore woũded, and after cured and heled agayn; which maye be tolde for a great wonder, consyderynge the sayd fyght lasted ouer. iiii. houres, as testyfyeth the sayd Cronycle. But syth[2] the auctor or the wryter ouer seeth hym selfe in that reporte; for he sheweth before, in the deuysynge of ỹ fyght of this batell, than[3] whan kyng Phylyp was felled from his horse, ii. of his knyghtis were slayne ryght before hym, ỹ one named Guyllyã de longe Chãpe, and that other, Gerarde le Tryne[4]. But mayster Robert Gagwyne expresseth this more clerely, sayinge, that after the felde was done, and ỹ emperoure was fled, leuynge his baner of the splayed egle behynde hym, a busshement, of the noumber of. vii.C. men, recouered that standarde, & so kepte them together. Wherof whan the kynge was enfourmed, he sent agayne theym, one of his knyghtes, called syr Thomas Valare[5], accompanyed with. I. fotemen, &. MM. horsemen, the which distressed the sayd company without losse of one man, as before is sayde; and more ouer the sayd auctour sayth, that vpon the partye of the sayd Otho, of knyghtes, and gylte harnesse, were slayne a thousande. v.C.; and of other horse men & fote men a hundrede and fyftye thousande. But of the Frenshe men, which shulde be sureste of rekenynge, he maketh no mensyon: but trowthe it is, ỹ i all ỹ Cronycle through, that the Frenshe booke reherseth all thynge touchynge theyr honour, is declared and shewed to the vttermooste; and that whiche conserneth theyr dishonour or losse, it is ouer[6] subtely excused, or soo darkely or mystly wryten, that the reder therof shall hardely come to ỹ knowlege of the trouthe: and that is well apparent in the storyes of Phylyp de Valoys, and of kynge Iohñ, his sone, in expressement of theyr faytes doone and exersysed agayne the thyrde Edwarde, kynge of Englonde, and prynce Edwarde, his sone. Thã it folowith in ỹ story, whan Phylyp hadde opteyned this great victory of his enemyes, & ordered other thynges concernynge his people, as countermaundynge them the nexte way

[1] the. [2] sure. [3] that. [4] Tyrne. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Valary. [6] eyther. edit. 1542. 1559.

vnto

vnto theyr countreys, he, with his prysoners, sped hym to Parys, & there, of his great bounte, graũted to the sayd erlys of Boleyne and Flaũders, theyr lynes, but not of prysonement; for the erle of Boleyne was sent vnto the castell of Peron, & Feraunt, erle of Flaũders, was commytted to the castell or towre of Louour, without the wallys of the cytie of Parys, thã newely made; but within lesse than. xv. monethes after, by labour of his wyfe, he, with other of his lyege men, was delyuered, payinge theyr fynauntys, and perfourmynge of theyr streyght londys & condycions[a].

¶ Capitulũ. CC.xlvi.

IT was not longe after that kynge Phylyp reassembled his knyghtes, & sped hym towarde the countrey of Poytoys[b]; wherof beynge warned, the erle of Thoners, that than was chefe ruler of that countrey vnder kynge Iohñ, seinge ŷ feblenesse of the comons, that dayly were vexed with warre, & also the losse of kyng Iohñs frendys, notwithstõdynge ŷ sayd Iohñ was thã within. xx. myles, yet he made suche meanes to kynge Phylyp, by the labour of Peter, than duke or erle of Bretayne, that ŷ sayde kynge accepted the same erle to his grace, and graũted to hym and his, a trewce for. iiii. yeres. But ŷ notwithstondynge, the kynge kepte on his iourney towarde kyng Iohñ; wherof kyng Iohñ beynge enfourmed, & also of the peace atwene the erle of Thonars, and the Frenshe kynge, by meanys of one Robert, a legat of Rome, soughte meanys of treaty & of peace: so ŷ in processe, by dylygence of the sayde Robert and other, a peace was cõcluded for. v. yeres: which peace concluded & assurid, eyther kynge returned into theyr owne prouynces. Within short whyle after ŷ the Frẽshe kynge was returned into Fraunce, he called to mynde the great victory had of the Almayns, ẅ also one other, which Lewis, his sone, about the same tyme hadde agayne or[c] of kynge Iohñ in the countrey of Aungeou, at the castell of Moyne, or Mayne; for the which. ii. victoryes the kyng edyfyed a monastery besyde the cytie of Sayntlys, in the honour of saynt Vyctor, and endowed it with fayre and ryche possessyons, & named it the abbey of sayut Victor. In the. xxxvi. yere of the reygne of this Phylyp, Lewis, his sone, by procurynge and sturrynge of the lordys of Englonde, sayled into the sayde prouynce, as more playnly shalbe shewed ĩ the. xvi. yere of the reygne of kyng Iohñ. Many moo storyes & actis myght I brynge in, & set in this story of this kynge Phylyp, if I shuld folowe the Frenshe booke: for he makyth there a rehersayll that cõteyneth. xxxix. great leuys of parchemyne, of the whiche I haue taken out suche as to me semeth mooste cõuenyẽt, & haue ouerpassed the other for lengthe of the tyme. Than it foloweth, this Phylyp, after theyse dayes, drewe hym to more quyet & rest; so ŷ after this peace or trewce cõcludyd with kyng Iohñ of Englõd, ŷ auctor speketh not, or myndeth of any noble dede by hym doone; so that in ŷ yere of our Lord. xii.C.xxii. which shulde be the yere of his reygne. xliii. the sayd auctor begynneth, & sayth, that ĩ that foresayd yere, apered a great eclypce of the sone, whereof ŷ lyke had not ben seen in many yeres passed. And in the yere folowynge, dyed this Phylyp, in the moneth of Iunii[d], whan he hadde reygned vpõ. xliiii. yeres; before whose deth, apered a great comete or blasyng starre, the whiche the Frenshe men, with also the foresayde eclypce, they adiudged for pronostiquykys & tokens of the kynges deth; ŷ which was buryed with excellent pompe in the monastery of saynt Denys, in the yere of our Lord. MCC.xxiii. of his age. lviii., leuynge after hym ŷ fore named Lewys, which was enoynted kynge after hym. This Phylyp, amonges other notable thynges ordeyned in his testament, be sette to the aydynge & wynnynge of the holy citie of Ierusalem. CCC.M.*li.* of Parys money; to the hospytall in Mountforte. C.M.*li.* & to be distributed amonges the poore comons of his londe, he gaue. xx.M.*li.* But here is to be noted, there is a great dyuersyte betwene a pounde of Parys money, for a *li.* of Parys money is but. ii *s.* vi. *d.*

Comete. *Fol. C.lxviii.*

[a] of other streyght condycyons. [b] Poytow. [c] gayned. edit. 1542. 1559. [d] Iufy. edit. 1559.

sterlynge, or nere there about; and it folowith soo ȳ. M.*li.* of Parys, is but a. C.xxv.*li.* sterlynge. By which accompte it foloweth, that this kynge gaue to the ayde of the holy londe, xxxvii.M.v.C.*li.* sterlynge; to the hospytall. xii.M. &. v.C.*li.* sterlynge; & to the poore people. MM.v.C.*li.*

And thus here I make an ende of this volume, for cause and cōsideracion, as after is shewed in the begynnynge of the nexte volume, as there it shall more manyfestly appere.

[Lenuoye.

Prece forth rude volume, and recōmende me
To my derest frende, experte in all scyence;
Praye hym at leysour the to ouerse,
And where in meter or prose he fyndeth offence,
Or congrewe Englysshe, or of parfyte sentence,
Humbely hym praye that he woll the correcte,
Which in all his faytes is so circumspecte.

And shewe to hym forther his meret to encrease,
The second volume is redy to hym dyght;
Praye hym he woll not therefore with the surcease,
Tyll that thy felowe he haue by his insyght,
And by his scyence brought in so good plyght,
That to all reders it may be delectable,
And to the herers frutefull and profytable.

And not to disdayne my malapert rudenesse,
That to his payne I shulde thus boldely sende,
Or hym to wyll, to such great busynesse,
So rude a werke to correct and amende;
But shewe hym sothly that all that I entende,
Is for to enhaunce his prayse and great lawde,
As he shall knowe, I trust without frawde.][a]

[a] *Omitted* in the edit. of 1550.

THE

SECOND VOLUME

OF

FABYAN'S

CHRONICLE.

PROLOGUS.

NOW, for as moche as we be comyn to the tyme that offycers were chosen and chargyd with the rule of the cytie of London, it is necessary that here we do shewe what offycers they were, and of the name that to them was admytted and gyuen. Then ye shall vnderstonde, that at the comynge of Wyllyam Conquerour into this londe, as euydentlye appereth by the charter of hym to the cytezens of London graunted, that before those dayes, and then, the rulers of the sayd citezens named[1] portgreuis, whiche worde is deriuat or made of. ii. Saxon wordis, as *port* and *greue;* port is to mean a towne, and greue is meant for a gardyen or ruler, as wolde[2] meane gardyen, ruler, or keper of the towne. Theyse, of olde tyme, with the lawys & customys than vsed within this cytie, were regestryd in a boke called the Domysday, in Saxon tunge than vsed: but in later dayes, when the sayd lawes and customes alteryd and chaunged, & for consideracion also that the sayd boke was of small hande, & sore defaced, it was the lesse set by, so that it was enbesylyd, or loste; so that the remembraunce of suche rulers as were before the dayes of this Rycharde the first, whose storye shall nexte ensue, are loste and forgoten. Wherefore nowe I shall begyn at the firste yere of the sayd first Rycharde, the which, of some wryters, is surnamed Cure de Lyon, and so contynewe the names of all offycers, as wele baylyues, mayres, and shryues, tyll the laste yere of Rycharde the thyrde, kyng in dede, and not of righte, which baylyues I shall appoynt[3] the rule of, frome Myghelmas to Myghelmas, and the mayres from suche tyme and season as nowe is accustomed & vsyd, that is to say, frome the daye of Symon and Iude, vnto the same feeste next ensuynge, vpon which day the newe mayre takyth his charge at the Guylde hall, and the olde mayre is there and than discharged of the sayd offyce of mayraltie.

Now wolde I fayne,
In wordys playne,
Some honoure sayen,
And brynge to mynde

Of that auncient cytie,
That so goodly is to se,
And full trewe euer hath be;
And also full kynde:

To prynce and kynge,
That hath borne iust rulynge,
Sene the fyrste wynnynge
Of this ile land by Brute;

So that, in great honoure,
By passynge of many a showre,
It hath euer borne the flowre
And lawdable brute.

Of euery cytie and towne,
To seche[4] the world rowne,
Neuer yet caste downe
As other many haue be;

As Rome and Cartage,
Ierusalem the sage,
With many other of age,
In story as ye may se.

[1] were named, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] who wolde. [3] apweynt. MS. [4] serch. MS.

This

This so oldly foundyd
Is so surely groundyd
That no man may confounde it:
It is so sure a stone,

That it is vpon sette:
For thoughe some haue it threttе
With manassys grym and grete,
Yet hurt had it none.

Cryste is the very stoon
That the cytie is sette vpon;
Whiche from all his foon
Hath euer preseruyd it

[By meane of dyuyne scruyce,
That in continuell wyse
Is kepte in deuout guyse
Within the mure of it:

As howsys of relygyon,
In dyuerse placys of this towne,
Whiche in great deuocion
Bene euer occupyed.

Whan one hath done, another begyn,
So that of prayer they neuer blyn,
Such ordre is theyse howsys within
With all vertue allyed.]'

The parysshe churches also to rekyn,
Of which noumber I' shall spekyn,
Wherin speke many preest & dekyn,
And Cryste dayly they serue:

By meane of whyche sacryfyce
I truste that he in all wyse
This cytie for his seruyce
Doth euermore preserue.

This cytie I meane as' Troynouante
Where honour & worshyp doth' haunte
With vertue and ryches accordaunte,
No cytie to it lyke:

To speke of euery commodytie,
Flesshe and fysshe and' all deyntye,
Cloth and sylke, with wyne plentye,
That is for hoole and syke:

Brede and ale with spycis fyne,
With howses fayre to sowpe and dyne,
Nothynge lackynge that is condyngne,
For man that is on molde.

With ryuers fresshe and holsome ayer,
With wymen that be good and fayre,
And to this cytie doon repayre,
Of straungers many folde.

The vytayle that herein is spente
In three housholdys dayly tente,
Atwene Rome and ryche Kent
Are none may them compare.

As of the mayre and shryues twayne
What myght I of the iustyce sayne,
Kept within this cytie playne;
It were longe to declare:

For thoughe I shulde all day tell
Or chat' with my ryme dogerell,
Myght I not yet halfe dospell
This townys great honoure.

Therefore shortly, as I began,
Pray for it bothe chylde and man,
That it may contynewe an
To bere of all the flowre.

And so to dwelle in rest and peace,
Good Lorde graunt that it not sease,
But euer to haue more encrease,
If it be thy wyll.

And to contynewe the old fame,
The kynges chaumbre, that the ryght name
London, to kepe without blame
As it hath hyther tyll.

' *The edit. of* 1542 & 1559 *have the following lines, instead of the stanzas here enclosed.*
By his specyall fauoure,
Whiche is oure onely sauyoure,
From the synfull behaueoure
That oure forefathers dyd commyt.

[2] as I. [3] is. [4] doon. MS. [5] of. MS. [6] that. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Who

Who so hym lykyth theyse verses to rede,
With fauour I pray he wyll them spell;
Let not the rudenesse of them hym lede
For to dysprase thys ryme dogerell.
Some parte of the honoure it doth you
Of this olde cytie Troynouaunt, [tell
But not thereof the halfe dell[1],
Cunnynge in the maker is so adaunt.

But thoughe he had the eloquence
Of Tully, and the moralytie
Of Senek, and the influence
Of the swete sugred armone,
Of that fayre lady Caliope:
Yet had he not cunnynge parfyght,
This cytie to prayse in eche degre,
As it shulde duely aske of right.

Here after I shall declare the wardys of this foresayd cytie, w also the parisshe churches that stande within the sayde wardys; [& after I shall shew to you, the houses of rely- *Fol. ii.*
gyon standynge in the circuyte of the same cytie. And fyrste,][2]

The warde of the towre where in are thre parysshe churches. i.

Seynt Olaue.
Alhaloyn at Barkynge.
Seynt Dunstane.

Byllyngysgate Warde. ii.

Seynt Botulphe.
Seynt George in Podynge lane.
Seynt Andrewe in Estchepe.
Seynt Margaret called Pates[3].
Seynt Mary hyll.

Londe brydge Warde. iii.

Seynt Benet at Grace churche.
Seynt Leonarde in Estchepe.
Seynt Margaret in Brygstret.
Seynt Magne in Brydge strete.

Dowgate Warde. iiii.

Seynt Lawrence Pounteney.
Alhaloyn the more.
Alhaloyn the lesse.

Walbrooke Warde. v.

Seynt Iohn in Walbrooke.
Seynt Mary Bothawe.
Seynt Swythyn in Candelwyke strete.
Seynt Stephan in Walbrooke.
Seynt Mary Wolchurch in the Pultry.
Seynt Syth in Boclerysbury.

Candelwyk strete Warde. vi.

Seynt Martyn Orgor.
Seynt Clement.
Seynt Mychaell in Crokyd lane.
Seynt Mary Apchurche.

Langbourne Warde. vii.

Alhaloyn stanys in Lumbard strete.
Seynt Gabryell.
Seynt Denys in Fanchurche strete.
Seynt Edmunde.
Seynt Nycolas Acon.
Seynt Mary Wolnoth in Lumbarde strete.

Algate Warde. viii.

Seynt Andrewe vndershafte.
Seynt Kateryns by Crystes church.
Seynt Kateryne Colman.

Port Sowkyn Warde. ix.

Seynt Botulphe without Algate.

Lyme strete Warde. x.

Seynt Mary Naxe.

Bysshoppis Gate Warde. xi.

Seynt Botholphe at the gate.
Seynt Alborgth.
Alhaloyns within seynt Helyns.

Cornehyll Warde. xii.

Seynt Mychaell.
Seynt Petyr.

Brad strete Warde. xiii.

Seynt Martyn Owtewyche.

[1] halffyndell. MS. [2] *Omitted* in the edit. of 1542. and 1559. [3] Patens.

Seynt

Seynt Benet Fynke.
Seynt Bartholomew the lytle.
Seynt Cristoffyr.
Seynt Peter the poore.
Alhaloyns in the Walle.

Colmanstrete Warde. xiiii.

Seynt Stephan.
Seynt Olaff in the Iury.
Seynt Margaret in Lothbery.

Chepe Warde. xv.

Seynt Laurence in the Iury.
Seynt Mary Bowe.
Alhaloyns in Hony lane.
Seynt Mary of Colchurche.
Seynt Myldredys in the Pultry.
Seynt Benet Shorhogge.
Seynt Martyn Ponyers.
Seynt Martyn in Iremonger lane.
Seynt Mary.

Cordwayner strete Warde. xvi.

Seynt Mary or Aldermary.
Seynt Ancelyne[1].
Seynt Pancras.

Quene hythe Warde. xvii.

Seynt Mychaell.
Seynt Mary Somerset.
Seynt Mary Mouthawe.
Seynt Nicholas Olaffe.
Seynt Nicholas Colde Abey.
Seynt Petyr.

Bred strete Warde. xviii.

Alhaloys in Bred strete.
Seynt Myldrede.
Seynt Mathye.
Seynt Iohñ Euangelyst.
Seynt Augustyne at Powlys gate.
Seynt Margaret Moyses.
Seynt Botolphe.
Seynt Margaret in Fryday strete.

Vintry Warde. xix.

Seynt Martyr.
Seynt Michaell Colege.

Seynt Thomas Appostle.
Seynt Iamys Garlyke hyth.
Trynyte in Knyghtryder strete

Baynardes Castell warde. xx.

Seynt Andrewe.
Seynt Benet.
Seynt George.
Seynt Mary Magdayleyne in olde Fysshe strete.

Faryngedon Warde with in. xxi.

Seynt Yeuan.
Seynt Nycholas in the Fleshe Hamblys.
Seynt Faythis in Powlys Churche.
Seynt Martyn within Ludgate.
Seynt Michaell at Querne.
Seynt Fauster in Fauster lane.
Seynt Peter at the crosse of Chepe.
Seynt Gregory in Powlys Churche yarde.
Seynt Genyn within Seynt Martyn the Graunt.

Faryngedon Warde without. xxii.

Seynt Dunston.
Seynt Bryde.
Seynt Andrewe in Holborne.
Seynt Sepulcre within[2] Newgate.

Aldrysgate Warde. xxiii.

Seynt Botulphe without the Gate.
Seynt Anne.
Seynt Iohn Zachary.
Seynt Leonarde in Fauster lane.
Seynt Mary Stanynge.
Seynt Mathewe in Syluer strete.

Bassyngyshawe Warde. xxiiii.

Seynt Mychaell there.

Crepyll gate Warde. xxv.

Seynt Mary Magdaleyn in Mylke strete.
Seynt Mary in Aldermanbury.
Seynt Mychaell in Hogynlane.
Seynt Albons in Woodstrete.
Seynt Alphy by Crepulgate.
Seynt Olaff in Syluer strete. *Ed. iii.*
Seynt Gylys without the Gate.

[1] Seynt Ancelm. MS.

[2] without. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

The summe of the parysshe churchys within London. C.xiii.

Here after ensue the [howsys of relygyon, monasteryes, collegys, capellys, & other, beynge no parisshe churchys][1] within the cytie.

The cathedrall churche of seynt Powle in the ende of Chepe.
[The pryory of seynt Barthelmewe in Smythfeelde.][2] *Ed. iii.*
The hospytall, or spytell, a cell of the sayd pryory.
[The charter house, standynge within the warde of Crepulgate.
Elsynge spytell within the sayd warde.
The chapell of our lady of Bedlem in Bysshopis gate warde.
The house of seynt Elyn in the same warde of nunnys.
The pryory of Crystis churche within Algate.
Seynt Anne abbey within Portsokyn warde, of white munkys.
The howse of the maneressys of close nunnys within the same warde.][3]
The capell of our lady of Barkynge in the Towre warde.
An howse of crossed freres in the same warde[4].
A colege of seynt Antony in the warde of Bredstrete.
A college of seynt Thomas, callyd[4] Acrys, standing in Chepe.
[An howse of frere Augustynes in Brodstrete warde.][3]
An house of gray frerys[5] standinge in the warde of Faryngedon within.
An howse of black freres, standyng by Ludgate, within the foresayd warde.
An howse of whyte frerys standynge in Flete strete.
A churche, or college, callyd the Temple, standynge at Temple barre.
A chapell standynge in Pardon church yarde within Poulis.
A chapell standyng in the church yarde at Powlys, ouer the Charnell house.
A chapell standynge within Crepyll gate, seynt[6] Iamys in the well.
A chappell called Pappey, standynge besyde Bysshoppys gate, foundyd by the preestys of that fraternyte.
A chapell of corpus Christi in the Pultry.
A chapell [of seynt Thomas of Caunterbury,][3] standynge vpon Londonbrydge.
A chapell standynge in Gelde hall yarde, of our lady.
A college of prestys, standynge[7] by Poulys, called seynt Martyn le Graunde.

The summe of housys of rylygyon, chapellys, & other. xxvii.

Westmynster.

The abbey of Westmynster[8].
The kynges newe chapell.
Seynt Stephan's chapell.
Seynt Margarettys churche.
A chapell at Totehyll.
A chapell of seynt Anne in Totehyll stret[9].
[Seynt Iames in the feelde.][3]
A chapell at Rouncyuale.
A parysshe churche, thereby of Seynt Martyn.
A chapell of[10] our lady of Pewe.

[1] Cathedral churches, chapelles, & other churches that are. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. [3] A churche where the crossed freers somtyme were. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] A church late called. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] An house where the gray freers were sometyme, &c. edit. 1542. 1559. *The same form of expression is used of the two succeeding houses.* [6] called Seynt. MS. [7] A churche standing. edit. 1542. 1559. [8] Westminster churche. edit. 1542. 1559. [9] This chapel is *omitted* in the MS. [10] called. MS.

[Churchis, monasteryes, chapellis, & other housys, wherein God is dayly seruyd, standynge in the circuyte of the cytye without the wallys, and firste.][1]

Without. Algate.

A parysshe churche of our lady standynge without the barrys, callyd Whyte chapell.
A college of seynt Kateryne, standynge on the east ende of the Towre of London.
A parysshe church, or chapell, within the sayde Towre, of seynt Peter.

Southwarke.

[The monastery of Bermundsey.][1]
A parysshe churche of Mary Magdaleyn [standynge fast by][1]
A parysshe churche of seynt George.
A parysshe churche of seynt Margaret.
An hospytall, or college of seynt Thomas.
A parysshe churche of seynt Olas.
A monastery of chanons, callyd seynt Mary Ouereys, & with a parysshe churche of seynt Mary Magdaleyne, stondynge fast thereby[2].

Without the Temple barre.

A parysshe churche of seynt Clement.
A chapell of seynt Spyryt.
Seynt Vrsula at Strande[3].

Without Smythfeelde.

The pryory of seynt Iohn in Ierusalem[4].
A house of nunnys named[5] Clerkynwell.
A chapell in Pardon churche yarde.

Without Bysshoppis gate.

Shoredyche parisshe churche.
[Seynt Mary Spytell.
A house of nunnys callyd Halywell.][1]

And of the dyuyne housys without the cytie. xxviii.

The summe of all the deuyne housys within the cytie, and withoute, is. C.lxviii.

Anglia. [6]Rycharde, the first of that name, and seconde sone of Henry the seconde, began his reygne ouer Englonde in the monyth of Iulij, and yere of oure Lorde. xi.C.lxxx. &. x. the. xi. yere of the seconde Phylypp, than kynge of Fraunce. This Rycharde prouyded busyly to sette good rule in Normandy, when he had harde of his faders deth, and after sped hym into Englonde, where he was ioyously resayued; & in the moneth of Septembre folowynge, and thyrde day, he was crownyd, at Westminster, of Baldewyne, archebysshop of Caunterbury: vpon the whiche day, the lewys of Englonde, and specyally suche as dwellyd within London, and nere about, assembled of theym a certayne nom-

[1] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *The church of St. Mary Magdalen, is omitted in the MS. The* edit. *of* 1542. & 1559. *call it,* "a parisshe churche of St. Saviours." [3] *Instead of* "St. Vrsula at Strande," *the Museum MS. has,* "Seynt Martyns at Charyngcrosse." [4] A churche called St. Iohn's wythoute Smythfelde. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] A church called. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] *The following rubric occurs in the MS.* "Incipit feliciter secundum volumen, ac de eo Capituium primum, et historia Ricardi primi."

bre, and presumyd farther then requyred, for theyr auctoryte: for which presumpcion, they were fyrste rebukyd, & after, one of them stryken. Which thynge seen of the common people, supposyd that to be done by the kynges commaundement; wherefore in a fury, as those that they hatyd as the deuyll, for their vsury and other vnhappy condicions, fell vpon them, & chasyd them to theyr houses, & them robbyd & spoyled without pytie, & brent some of theyr housys: whereof the rumour ranne to Westmynster, to the kyngys audyence, wherefore in all haste he sent downe, gyuynge strayte commaundement that they shuld cease of the ryot, but the people were in suche ire & wodenes, that they refrayned not for all the kynges sonde, tyll they had executyd the fyne[1] of theyr malyce. And albeit that this ryot was after greuously shewyd agayne the commons of the cytie, yet it passyd vnponysshed, for the great noumbre of the transgressours. And the sayd day of coronacion, all prysoners that lay in any pryson about London, at the kynges sute, or for other small or feyned accions, were frelye delyuered. Soone after, the kynge gaue many dygnytyes, and to his brother Iohn he gaue the prouynces of Notyngham, Deuonshyre, & Cornewall, & created hym erle of Lancastre, & then the kynge ordeyned the cytie of London, to be ruled by. ii. Baylyuys, whose namys were as folowyth.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.[2] Anno Domini. M.C.lxxxi.[3]

Henry of Cornhyll.

Balliui. Anno primo.

Richard fiz Ryuer.

IT was not lōge after, that ẏ kynge had thus exalted his brother Iohñ, as before is shewed, but ẏ he also preferryd hym to the maryage of the erle of Glowceters doughter; by reason whereof he was lorde of ẏ erledam. Theyse great auaūcementis made hym after vnkynde to his brother, & by pryde therof to coueyt afterwarde ẏ hoole kyngedam. This yere, kyng Richarde was assoyled of ẏ offence, ẏ he had vsyd in rebellyon agayn his father; in recōpēsacion wherof, as testyfyeth ẏ[4] auctor Guydo, he voluntaryly tooke vppō hym, and promysed to warre vpon Crystis enemyes. Albeit, ẏ other wryters shewe ẏ it was for that ẏ his father had so wyllid hym by his lyfe; but for what cause so it was, preparacion & prouysyon for ẏ iourney was made from ẏ daye forthwarde. This yere also, the kynge enlargyd Elyanour, his moder, which lowin ẏ [illegible] at ẏ cōmaūdemēt of his fader, hir husbōde, was as a prysoner kepte in secreter that tydyng[illegible] which enlargyng, ẏ lande was moche guydyd by hir counceyll. And thisny great strēgth [illegible]ulfe, kynge Richarde gaue ouer ẏ castellys of Barwyke & Rockysburhard assēl[illegible]cottyshe kynge, for the sūme of. x.M.*li.* for the exployte of his voyage; and farthermore, he solde to the olde bysshop of Durham, his owne prouynce for a great sūme of money, & created hym erle of the same; wherefore the kynge sayd after in game, "I am a wonder craftesman, for I haue made a newe erle of an olde bysshop." By suche meanes, the kyng emptyed many bysshoppis & ryche preestis baggys, & fyllyd his cofers, & ouer ẏ, he graūted out annuyties & fees out of ẏ crowne, as though he rought[6] nothynge of his retournynge. For this dede, some of his famylyers, as they durste, blamyd hym; but he sayde to them, ẏ, in tyme of nede, it was good polycy for a man to ayde hym with his owne: & moreouer he ioyned therto, ẏ if London were his, at ẏ tyme of nede, he wolde sell it, if he myght gete a cōuenyent marchaūt, ẏ for it were able to pay. An other way he had also to gether money, for he had lycēce of pope[7] Innocēt, the thyrde of ẏ name, to dispence ẇ such as hym lykyd within his realme, for takynge vpon them the crosse.

[Anno Domini. M.C.xci.][8] [Anno Domini. M.C.xcii.][9]

Iohñ Herlion.

Balliui. Anno. ii.

Roger Duke.

[1] fyll. MS. [2] M.C.xc. MS. edit. 1533. [3] M.C.xci. MS. edit. 1533. [4] the. edit. 1533. 1542. [5] streyte. MS. [6] thought. edit. 1559. [7] pope. *omitted in edit.* 1542. 1559. [8] MS. [9] MS.

IN this seconde yere, in ỹ moneth of Octobre, kynge Richarde betoke ỹ guydynge of ỹ lande vnto ỹ bysshop of Ely, thā chaūceller of Englande, & sayled into Normādy; where settynge the coūtrey vnder sadde guydynge, shortly after met with ỹ Frenshe kyng, Phylyp ỹ secōd, ỹ which ioyntly yode to Turō, & there ouer passyd ỹ shortnesse of wynter. In which passe tyme, makynge eyther w̄ other assuraūce, for cōtynuaūce of so great a iourney. At ỹ sprynge of ỹ yere, theyse. ii. prynces toke theyr voyage towarde ỹ holy lande, ỹ is to meane, kynge Rycharde by ỹ see, & kyng Phylyp by ỹ lāde, appoynted to mete agayn in ỹ lāde of Scicilia, or Scicill. In this meane tyme in Englōde, ỹ Iewys in dyuerse placis of the realme, as Lyncolñ, Staunforde, & Lynne, were robbyd & spoyled; and at Yorke to the nombre of. CCCC. & mo, cutte theyr mayster veynys & bled to deth. The. ii. kyngys, accordynge to theyr appoyntmēt, met in Scicill, where grudge begā to kyndle atwene them, for correccion of theyr souldyours. There[1] ỹ Frenshe kynge departyd agayn from kynge Rycharde, ỹ which there made certeyne ordynauncys for warre, as a towre, a[2] castell of tymber, which he named Mategryffons; & also prouyded for vytayll for both hostis. In this tyme also, ỹ kyng of Cypris had takyn. ii. shippis of kyng Richardis, & denyed ỹ delyuery of thē. Wherfore ỹ sayd Richarde entryd ỹ lande of Cipris, makyng therin sharpe warre, & chacid so ỹ kyng from citie to citie, ỹ lastly he yeldid hym vnto kyng Richarde, ypō cōdyciō, ỹ he shulde not be throwē in bōdis of irō; whereof kyng Richarde, ī kepyng of his promes, cast hym ī bōdis of syluer. Whā kyng Richarde had dwellyd there vpō. ii. monethes, & had takyn his pleasure of ỹ coūtrey, & taken amēdis at his owne wyll for his shyppis, thē he departyd from ỹ sayde Ile of Cipris, & saylyd towarde Acō, or Acris; ī which course so kepyng towarde Acris, he encoūtryd a great shyp of ỹ sowdans of Sury, fraught[1] w̄ great ryches, and toke it, & so came at lēgth to ỹ cytie of Acris, where, at ỹ tyme, lay before ỹ sayd towne, the Frenshe kyng w̄ his hoost, & had loste lytle before. ii. M. of his men, which were partyd from his hoost, to haue done an enterpryse vpon ỹ Turkis; but they were layde for, & distressyd. Thā, as testyfyeth Peter Disroy, kyng Richarde was ioyously receyued of ỹ Frenshe kyng, after whose comyng, it was not lōge ỹ ỹ sayd citie was geuen vp by appoyntmēt, as folowith, and as affermeth the sayd Petyr, and also the cronycle of Fraunce. First, ỹ the Sarasens shuld departe out of ỹ cytie, leuyng behynde them horse, harneys, vitayll, and all other thyng belongynge to warre; also they shuld cause to be restoryd, all such prysoners of Cristē men as they had vnder their kepynge, w̄ other couenaūtis, which I passe ouer. And thus was ỹ cytie of Acris [illegible] into ỹ Cristē mēnis hādis, ī ỹ moneth of August, & ỹ yere of our Lorde. xi.C[illegible]; but whē it came to ỹ partynge of ỹ pray of ỹ cytie, there began malyce to kyndle his brōde, whiche was not lyghtly after quenchyd. Of this varyaunce atwene these. ii. kyngis of Englōde, & of Fraūce, dyuerse maners are shewyd: for Polycronyca seyth ỹ it began by reason that kynge Richarde denayed vnto kynge Phylyp, halfe his wyñyngis ī Cipris, accordyng to ỹ couenaūt atwene thē assuryd at Turon; but kyng Richarde sayd ỹ the cōuēcion there made stretchyd no forther, thā to such goodis as was woñe w̄in ỹ lymytes or boūdis of ỹ holy lāde. An other grudge was, by reason that ỹ Frenshe kyng ayded not ỹ erle of Chāpeyn, beyng ī distresse of nede; wherfore ỹ sayd erle beyng discōtent, sayd to the Frenshe kyng, "syr, hytherto I haue done accordynge to my dutye, but hereafter I shall do as I am cōpelled by nede, for youre grace hathe hytherto cherysshed me, but for myne; but nowe I shall goo to hym ỹ is more redy to gyue thā to take." & so departyd to kyng Richarde, of the which he had all his pleasure. The thirde cause was, as saythe Ranulphe, for as moche as kyng Richarde, at his beyng[4] ī Scicil, maried ỹ suster of ỹ kyng of Nauerne, where before he had promysed to mary ỹ suster of ỹ sayd kynge Phylyp. But of these artycles spekyth no thyng ỹ Frenshe Cronycle; albe it he layeth great defaut vnto kyng Richarde, saying ī seducious & vyle wordis, ỹ kyng Richard falsly brake his appoyntmētes, & kept no promesse ỹ by hym was

[1] then. [2] or. [3] freygth. MS. [4] begynnyng. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

made.

made. Moreouer ỹ sayd Cronycle sayth, ỹ he solde ỹ ile of Cyprys vnto ỹ tẽplers for. xxx. M. marke, & after toke it agayn from them by strength, & delyuered it vnto Guy de Lesygnan, ỹ was ỹ laste cristened[1] kyng of Ierusalem. And ouer this, ỹ sayd Frẽshe Cronycle sayth, ỹ he toke frõ a knight of ỹ duke of Ostrich ỹ sayd dukis banner, &, in despyte of ỹ sayd duke, trade it vnder foote, & dyd vnto it all ỹ despyte he myght: & ouer all this, whereas Conradus, markes[2] of Tyre, was traytorously slayne by. ii. of his owne seruaũtis, ỹ kyng Richard shuld lay ỹ charge thereof vnto ỹ Frenshe kynge. For these grudgys & sykenesse, ẇ also fere of treason to be wrought atwene Saladyne, ỹ soudã, & kyng Richard, as affermeth or allegyth the foresayd auctor, kynge Phylyp, ẇ *Fol. m.* a small cõpany of shyppys, departyd from Acon or Acris, & saylyd to Puyll or Poyll, &, there restynge hym a season, cõtynued his iourney vnto Rome, & so, lastly, into his owne prouynce of Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xii. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xiii.

Wyllyam Hauershall.

Balliuĩ. Anno. iii.

Iohñ Buknotte.

IN ỹ thyrde yere, & moneth of Nouẽbre, whẽ ỹ Frenshe kyng was thus departed, kyng Richarde, ẇ the Duke of Burgoyne, whom the Frenshe kyng had lefte behynde hym to haue ỹ rule of ỹ Frenshe hoost lafte & remaynynge in Acre, & ỹ countrey there about, called before hym dyuerse personis, or pledgis of Turkis, for ỹ perfourmaũce of certeyne appoyntmẽtis takyn ẇ thẽ at ỹ wyñynge or geuynge vp of ỹ sayd cytie of Acris; wherof one especiall couenaũt was, ỹ, by a certeyn daye, thã expyred, they shuld cause ỹ holy crosse to be restoryd vnto ỹ cristen pryncis: the which, for he sawe wele ỹ they wold not or myght[3] perfourme, he therfore put ĩ execuciõ of Turks ouer the noũbre of. v. M., as testyfyeth ỹ Frenshe Cronycle; but ỹ agreith not all of ỹ[4] best ẇ ỹ former sayinge: cõsyderynge the cytie was delyuered, by appoyntment, there shulde not so many Turkis remayne there. But Peter Disroy sayth, ỹ, for brekynge of this appoyntmẽt, kyng Rycharde put to deth all such Turkis as were thañ ẇin ỹ cytie of Acris, whiche may be ment by the hostagis or pledgis. It was not lõge after that tydynges were broughte vnto kyng Richarde, ỹ the cytie of Ierusalẽ was ẇont any great strẽgth of soldyours, & ỹ it myght be wonne ẇ easy labour. Wherfore kyng Rychard assẽblyd ỹ lordis to haue theyr coũceyll, where it was cõcludid ỹ euery capitayne shuld prepare hym to goo thether; vpõ which agremẽt, ỹ cristen hoost sped thẽ in such wyse, ỹ they were within. v. myles of the sayde cytie of Ierusalem, where they toke a new coũceyll how they shuld ordre theym & theyr people to ley their syege about the cytie: in whiche counceyll it was cõcludyd, ỹ kyng Richarde, with his Englysshe men, shuld haue the vawewarde, & the duke of Burgoyne ỹ rere warde. After which cõclusyon taken, the kyng sped hym vpon his waye towarde the cytie. But by what myshap or mysfortune I can not saye, so soone as the kynge was departed, the duke callyd the lordys of Fraũce before hym, and sayde, "it is euydent vnto you, that, albeit our hede and souerayne lorde is absent, the floure of the chyualry of Fraunce is here present, & if any thynge be done to honoure of the Cristen, and reproche of infydelys, it is most lykely to be done by vs, consyderynge the insuffycyent of Englysshe men & other: yet, neuerthelesse, what someuer honoure growe by our dedis to the Cristen hoost, it shalbe acompted vnto king Richard because of his presens, so that we shall haue all the payne and trauayll, and Englysshe men shall haue the honoure. Wherefore, if ye wyll doo by my coũceyll, we wyll retourne vnto Acris, and there tary tyll we se forther." Some agreyd to this coũceyll, and the more in

[1] Crystyn. MS. [2] Marquys. [3] myght not. [4] alle ther. MS.

nomber,

nomber, & the other sped theym in all haste after kynge Rycharde, and shewed to hym of the dukys retourne, whereof, he beinge so enfourmyd, retournyd also vnto Acris. It was not longe after, that the sayd duke was takyn with a greuous sykenesse, and dyed: and about that tyme also dyed Baldewyn, archebysshop of Caunterbury, whiche, amonge other lordis of Englonde, accompanyed the kynge in that iourney.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xiii. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xiiii.

Nicholas Duke.

Balliui. Anno. iiii.

Petyr Nowlay.

ABout ẏ seasō of Mychelmasse, in ẏ. iiii. yere of the reygne of this sayde Rycharde, tydynges were brought to hym ẏ the towne or[1] castell of Iapheth was besyeged of Saladyne, & lykely to be soone wonne, wout ẏ cristē were ẏ sooner ayded. Wherefore kyng Richarde, which Petyr Dysroye callith ẏ good kyng Richarde, sped hym thyther ẇ his army by water, & sent another hooste of Frenshemen & other by lāde. But so it was, ẏ or ẏ Cristē myght wynne thyther, ẏ sayd towne & castell were wonē, & ẏ prysoners therēi takyn, were sent by water towarde such prysones as Salandyne had appoynted thē vnto, ẇ ẏ which, of good fortune, kyng Richarde met, & thē rescowyd. And ẏ done, ẇ ẏ Turkes which thē conueyed he put ī sure holde, & helde on his iourney to Iapheth, & there, by strēgth, rescowid ẏ towne & castell, & restoryd ẏ cristen to theyr former possessiō, & lefte ẇ them more strēgth of knyghtes: & for to be ẏ more feryd of ẏ myscreaūtis, kyng Rycharde causyd his prysoners, to hym belongyng, to be slayne, where other solde thē to theyr great auaūtage, by meane wherof he was had ī wōderfull fere of ẏ Turkys. Thā kyng Richarde, after this victory had at Iapheth, won. ii. strōge holdys, callyd Darō & Gadres, & strēgthyd them ẇ cristē knyghtis; & ẇ suche goodis as he there wan of ẏ Turkis, he repayred ẏ castle of Ascalon, & other ẏ greatly was inpayred by ẏ warre of ẏ Turkis. In [Li. 7. ca. 25.] this season & tyme ẏ kyng Richarde was thus occupyed in ẏ holy lande, ẏ bisshop of Ely, as before is sayd, hauynge ẏ rule of Englōde, dyd many cruell dedis, & oppressyd ẏ clergy, & also ẏ lay fee. He wold comōly ryde ẇ a. M. horse, & greued abbeys by meane of his gestis or lodgynge ẇ them. Also he helde, ī his hādys, ẏ see of Yorke for a longe seasō, & after ẏ deth of Baldewyn, (ded[2], as before is shewed, ī ẏ holy lāde) he also toke ẏ see of Cautorbury vnder his rule. Thā he pryued Geffrey, ẏ was chosen to ẏ see of Yorke, of his mouables; & keft hym as a prysoner in ẏ towre of Lōdon: & soone after callyd a counceyll at Westmynster, as ẏ kyngis procuratour, & as legat of ẏ pope[3], thā Innocent the iii. At this counceyll, Hugh Nouaūt, thā bysshop of Chester, & great famulyer of the sayd bysshop of Ely, put forth a complaynt agayn ẏ mūkis of Couentry, ẏ they had shed the sayd Hughis bloode before ẏ hygh aulter of theyr churche: for which cause ẏ bysshop of Ely demyd ẏ ẏ sayd mūkis shuld be put from theyr sayd abbey, & clerkis shuld be set there for them; so ẏ, by myght, ẏ mūkis were put thens, & disperbled about ī sōdry places, & clerkis, ẇ prebendis, set in theyr stallys. [For this deede, sayth Guydo & other, ẏ this Hugh, bisshop of Chester, had thus causyd ẏ mūkis of Couētry to lose their lāde & house, he toke therfore so great repentaūce, ẏ, vpon his deth bed, he axyd of God, ẏ, for a due & cōuenyent penaūce, he myght redeme ẏ offence by ẏ lyinge in ẏ fyre of purgatory from the day of his deth vnto ẏ generall day of doom.][4] Also ẏ fore namyd bisshop of Ely, callyd in propre name, Wyllyā de lōge shampe, cōtynuynge his tyrannyes, pryued Hugh, bysshop of Durham, of all maner worshyp, & greued ẏ bisshop of Wynchester, and wretchyd nygh all ẏ lōde; but so fast as this innaturall or euyll dysposyd man busyed hym to vex & greue ẏ cristē men in Englande, so faste busyed this good kyng Richarde to vex & dere ẏ infydelys

[1] and. MS. [2] [died.] [3] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] *Omitted* in the edit. 1542. 1559.

of

of Sury, so ỹ dayly he wan of them, or at ỹ leest put thē from the wyñyng of such townes & holdis, as they, by theyr great strēgth, entēdyd to haue wonne.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.iiii[1]. Anno Domini. M.lxxx.v[2]. *Fol. vi.*

Roger Duke.

Balliui. Anno. v.

Richard Fiz Aleyn.

IN the ende of Septembre, & begynnyng of ỹ fyfthe yere of kynge Rycharde, Guy de Lesyngeman, laste Cristen kynge of Iherusalem, dyed, and Choras, a noble Cristen man, capytayne of a towne called Sur, was shortlye after slayne by ỹ Turkys, whose wyfe, for as moche as she was rightfull enherytour of the crowne of Iherusalem, the kyng gaue hyr in maryage vnto the erle of Champeyne. And for kynge Rycharde perceyued wele the Cristen hooste mynysshed dayly, as wele by infyrmytees as lacke of vytayle, and otherwyse, he sought meanys of a peace or trewce for a tyme, & had it graunted for. iii. yeres, the whiche peace stablysshed & proclaymyd in the hoste & countrey nere about, kynge Rycharde betoke the rule & guydynge of ỹ Cristen vnto ỹ erle of Chāpayne, promysynge hym, or thāt trewce were endyd, to cōme ẅ a strōger hooste, and, with Goddis myght, to sette hym in possession of the cytie of Ierusalem, as the ryght[3] of his wyfe. Than Hubert, bysshop of Salisbury, yode forth hym selfe and the kynge to the holy cytie, & offeryd there an hooste, & retournyd agayn to the kynge; after whose retourne, the kynge, takynge leue of the erle of Chāpeyn and other, toke his shyppynge at Acris, or Acon, which is named Tholomayda also: and so retournyd to ỹ Ile of Cypre, or Cyprys. Thens the kynge sent the quene, his wyfe, and hir suster, with the more parte of his people vnto Scicyll; & he, with a small company, for he myght not endure the softeness[4] of the see, toke his shippynge ī the moneth of Septēbre, and saylyd with a stronge wynde, towarde a countrey called Hystria: but he was dryuen, by force of wederynge, atwene Venyse and Aquinilia[5] or Aquilegia, and houyd there a season, and coostyd hyther and thyther, so that lastly was[6] espyed, and takyn of ỹ duke of Ostrichis men. [Li. 7. ca. 28.]

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.v[7]. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.vi[8].

Wyllyam Fiz Isabell.

Balliui. Anno. vi.

Wyllyam Fiz Arnold.

ABout the moneth of Octobre, &. vi. yere of his reygne, this good kyng Richard was takyn, ī fourme folowinge: as he laye thus, as before is sayd, atwene Venyce & Aquelegia, a prouynce of the duke of Ostrich, one Meynart, of Gorezeyn, ruler of ỹ coūtrey vnder ỹ foresayd duke, made out certayne souldyers for to haue taken hym; but he, by his prouydence and manhode, escapyd the sayd Maynard or Maynart. Howbeit that some of his knyghtes were there takyn. Then kyng Rycharde passed ỹ coūtrey secretly, tyll he came to a towne named Frysake; in this towne was than prouoste or ruler, a knyght callyd Frederyke de Seynt Soom, the which also dyd his deuour[9] to take the kyng, & toke. vi. of his knyghtes prysoners; but hymself, with the remenaunt of his cōpany, escaped. Then ỹ kynge seynge ỹ he was in daūger of his enemies, drew more ito ỹ way toward Almayn; but this was soone knowen of his ennyes, so ỹ by ỹ meanys of one callyd duke of Lymple, & cosyn to the emperour, all ỹ wayes were closyd, in such wyse, ỹ, in ỹ ende, kyng Rycharde was takyn by ỹ seruauntis of ỹ sayd duke, nere vnto a [Li. 7. ca. 28.]

[1] M.C.xciiii. [2] M.C.xcv. [3] verray rygth. MS. [4] [Saltness?] [5] Aquilea. MS.
[6] he was. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [7] M.C.xcv. [8] M.C.xcvi. [9] demanoure. edit. 1542. 1559.

cytie

cytie or towne, called Menne or Meune, within the londe or territorye of ỹ emperour, & after brought vnto ỹ sayd duke Lymple, or after sõme, to ỹ duke of Ostryche, ỹ which spoylyd hym of all ỹ he had, & after caste hym in prysone, & there streygtly kept hym by ỹ space of a moneth, & at ỹ monethes ende sent hym vnto Hēry, ỹ. vi. of ỹ name, or after sõme wryters, ỹ. v. sone of ỹ first Frederyke, thā emperour of Almayn, ỹ whych helde hym in more vyle pryson from ỹ tyme tyll Lent after, & couenaũtyd with the duke of Ostrich to haue the thyrde parte of ỹ profyte ỹ came of kyng Rycharde. About ỹ Sonday of Palmys, the emperoure brougth fourth ỹ kyng before ỹ lordys of Almayn, there to gyue answere vnto such thynges as shuld be layde vnto hym, where he came forth ẅ so good a coũtenaũce, & also āswerid so discretly & directly to all maters leyde vnto his charge, that ỹ emperoure was not allonely bed[1] to shew to hym mercy, but also he dyd to hym honour & worshyp, & helde hym at more lybertye after ỹ day. It is red of this Rycharde, ỹ, durynge ỹ tyme of his imprysonement, he shuld sle a lyon, & tere ỹ harte out of his body, where through he shuld deserue ỹ name of Rycharde Cure de Lyon, and ỹ he shuld, with a stroke of his fyste, sle ỹ emperours sone, & also defloryssh ỹ emperours doughter: but theyse are fablys imagenyd by Englysse tale tellers to auaunce theyr kynge Rycharde, as the Brytons, by theyr fayned taylys, auauncyd theyr kynge Arture. In this passe tyme, Wyllyā Longeshamp, bisshop of Ely, contynuynge his crudelyte & tyranny within Englande, was lastlye, by strength of the lordys, put out of the lande: thā he came to ỹ kyng, beynge prysoner, & shewyd for hym selfe the best he cõwde: but when he sawe he myghte not begyle ỹ kynge with his suguryd wordys, he had small trust of ỹ kyngys fauoure, & returnyd into Fraũce, to tary there ỹ kynges cõmyng. This yere, Iohn, the kyngys brother, by excytynge of ỹ Frenshe kyng, whan he harde of the takynge & enprysonynge of his brother, he began to make warre within ỹ lãde, & toke, by strength, the castellys of Wyndesoure, & of Notyngeham, & other; and the Frenshe kyng, vpõ his partye, made stronge warre in Normandy, as it is before shewed in the story of the seconde Phylyp, than kynge of Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xvi. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xvii.

Robert Besaunt.

Balliui. Anno. vii.

Iokell le Iosne.

[Li. 7. ca. 28.] IN the. vii. yere of kyng Rycharde, Hubert, bisshop of Salysbury, ỹ which had accompanyed ỹ kyng in ỹ voyage, & was sent with ỹ quene into Scycyll, returned or came to the kynge where he was prysoner; whom the kynge sent soone after into Englande to haue ỹ guydynge thereof, & also to trete with ỹ lordys & cõmõs of his realme, howe he myght be set at lyberte. It was not lõge after ỹ cõmyng home of this Hubert, but the munkys of ỹ house of Crystys Churche of Caũbury[2] chase hym to the archebysshopys see, & had ỹ palle, & was stallyd soone after. This was easy to ỹ munkys, howe wele ỹ sharpnes of Baldwyn had some deale greued them: & though this Baldewyne were a good man, & holy in his lyuynge, yet one thynge he dyd to ỹ derogacion of ỹ munkys of
Eod. vii. Caũtorbury, for he foũdyd[3] to put ỹ prerogatyue of ỹ eleccion of ỹ archebysshop from ỹ munkys; & because therof, he begā to buylde great hoosys nere vnto ỹ mũkys churche, by fauour of ỹ kyng Hēry ỹ secõde, but not wout shedynge of blode: & there entẽdyd to haue set in seculer chanons, with prebẽdys & suffraganes of bysshoppys for to treate with ỹ sayd chanõs of ỹ foresayd eleccyõ, & to put by ỹ mũkys clerely. But the mũkys, whā they sawe they myght no lenger resyst Baldewyn, they thā appealyd to ỹ pope Innocent ỹ. iii[t]., by whose cõmaundement ỹ werke seased, and so stoode vn-

[1] beut. [2] Cauntirbury. [3] purposyd. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] to Innocent the thyrde byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

fynysshed

fynysshed tyll ỹ sayd Baldewyn was deed; after whose dethe ỹ mūkys made ỹ warke playne with ỹ groūde. Treuisa, trāslatoure of Polycronycon, sayth, yt was wonder ỹ Baldewyn wolde, ī ỹ maner, deale with ỹ mūkys, cōciderynge he was first archdeacon, & thā whyte mūke, & thē abbot, & after bisshop of Worcetyr, & last arch bysshop; & to brynge men of more inperfyght lyfe, into ỹ place of men more parfyght, & to chaūge relygyous men for seculer men. But yet ỹ sayd Treuisa allowyth Baldewyns dede or entent for good, for he sayth ỹ Cryst was ỹ hed of holy church, & callid & made his apostles bisshopis, but none of them was mūke or yet frere: wherefore Baldewyn dyd better to preferre the relygyon which Cryste made, thā the relygyon which was instytuted and ordeyned by man.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xvii. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx. xviii.

Gerarde de Antiloche.

Balliui. Anno. viii.

Robert Duraunt.

IN ỹ moneth of Iānuarii, &. viii. yere of the reygne of kynge Rycharde, whā the sayde Rycharde had sufferyd harde prysonemēt vpō ỹ terme of a yere &. iii. monethes, he was delyuered out of pryson, for the sūme of an. C. M. li. of sterlynge money, for pledge whereof, he lefte in ỹ kepyng of ỹ emperoure, ỹ bisshoppis of Roan & of Bathe, but not for all, for a great parte was payed or ỹ kyng were delyuered. For payment of which raunsome, all the wolle of whyte mūkys & chanons was takyn & solde, & rynges & crossys of prelatis & vessellys & chalycis of all churchis through ỹ lande: & ouer ỹ. xvii[1]. shrynes were scrapid or spoylid of ỹ golde & syluer ỹ vpō thē before tyme was layde: for no pryuylege of holy church, nor other persone, at ỹ seasō, was sparyd. Thē kynge Rycharde came vnto Swyn, in Flaundres, & taried there. ii. monethis, owther to abyde ỹ wynde, or ellys to make prouysyon for thynges which he nedyd. There ỹ emperours men had almoost takyn hym agayn, so[2] ỹ emperour forthought ỹ delyuery of kyng Rycharde, as Pharao forthought ỹ delyuery of ỹ chyldren of Israel. There[3] ỹ kyng toke shyppyng, & lāded in the ende of Marche, at Sādwych, & from thēs came streyghte vnto Lōdō, where he was receyued with all ioye & honour; & whā he had a seasō restyd hym there, he, with a certeyn nōbre of knyghtes, rode to Nothynghā, & wan ỹ castell, & after ỹ castell of Tykhyll, by force of armes, & set ỹ wardeyns of them ī warde. And that done, he callyd a counsayle of his lordys at Wynchester, where, by auctoryte of ỹ sayde coūsayle, he depryued Iohn, his brother, than beinge in Fraunce, of all honour, and toke from hym all such landys as he before had geuē to hym, & crouned hym, soon after, agayne kyng of Englande, in the sayde cytie of Wynchestyr: after the which coronacion, he callyd a parlyament, by vertue whereof, he resumed all patētis & annuytees, fees, & other graūtis before his voyage by hym solde and graūted, & caused the partyes to be cōtēted with such reuenuse & profytes as they had resayued of ỹ sayd offycis or lādys in tyme of his absence, and sparyd not eny persone for any suffycient of wrytynge ỹ to hym before was made. Whā kynge Rycharde hadde, by theyse foresayde meanys, gaderyd some money, he than, in the moneth of Iulet, sayled into Fraunce, and besegyd a castell callyd Arqnes, & sped there, as witnessith Polycronyca, dyuerslye, whiche worde dyuerslye may wele here be spokyn; for who so redith the Frenshe Cronycle, he shall fynde that the Frenshe kyng was victor, but and he rede the Englysshe boke, thā shall he fynde kyng Rycharde victor; wherfore me thynkyth Ranulph sayd wele, when he sayde they sped dyuersly; for it is so dyuerse by the reporte of wryters, that ỹ certayntie to

[1] xxvii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] for. MS. [3] then, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

[Li. 7. ca. 28.]

whom

whom the honoure shulde be gottē[1] is harde to be knowen. Albe it that in the countrey of Bloys, as wytnessyth ỹ sayd Frēshe Cronycle, kynge Rycharde scared the Frenshe hoost, & toke ỹ kynges sommer horse, with parte of his tresoure. But in shorte whyle after a trewce was concluded atwene theyse. ii. kynges for a yere. Than Iohn̄, whiche hadde turned to the Frenshe kynge agayne his owne brother, seinge the fame and honour of his brother, and feblenesse of his owne powar, made meanys to Elyanoure his moder, by whose medyacion he was recouncyled to his brother, the kynge, & after became his trewe knyght. Whē ỹ kyng & his brother Iohn̄ were thus agreed, they rode ouer ỹ lōde to vysyte ỹ coūtreys, & se howe they were guyded by ỹ offycers of ỹ kyng. Amōge other, ii.
[Li. 7. ca. 30.] ther were which shewyd ỹ they wold doo many thynges to ỹ kyngys profyte; ỹ one was abbot of Cadonence, within Normandy, & ỹ other was named Wyllyam with the lōge berde. The abbot warnyd ỹ kynge of ỹ fraude of his offycers, whereby he thought, by ỹ ponyssheмēt of his offycers, he shuld wyñe great fauoure of ỹ people. Thē this abbot gate a warrant of the kynge, & at London callyd dyuerse offycers before hym, for to yelde to hym theyr accompte, but he dyed shortlye, so that his purpose came to small effecte. And Wyllyam with ỹ longe berde shewyd to ỹ kynge the owtrage of the ryche men, which, as he sayd, sparyd theyr owne, & pylled the poore people. It is sayde that this Wyllyam was borne ī Lōdon, & purchased ỹ name by vse of his berde. He was sharpe of wyt, & somedeale lettred; a bolde man of speche, & sadde of his coūtenaūce, & toke vpon hym gretter dedys than he cowde weld: & some he vsyd cruell, as apereth in appechynge of his owne brother of treason, ỹ whiche was a burges of Lōdon, & to hym had shewed great kyndenesse in his youthe. This Wyllyam styred & excyted ỹ cōmon people to desyre & loue fredam & lybertye, & blamed the excesse & owtrage of ryche men: by suche meanys he drewe to hym many great cōpanyes, &, with all his power, defendyd the poore mannys cause agayne the ryche, & accused dyuerse to ỹ kyng, shewynge that, by theyr meanys, ỹ kyng loste many forfaytes & encheatis[2]. For this, gentylmen & men of honoure, malygned agayne hym, but he had suche comforte of ỹ kyng, ỹ he kept on his purpose. Thē ỹ kyng beyng warned of ỹ cōgregacions ỹ this Wyllyam made, cōmaunded hym to cease of such doyngys, ỹ the people myght exercyse theyr artis & occupaciōs; by reason wherof it was lefte for a whyle: but it was not lōge or ỹ people folowed hym, as they before ỹ tyme had done. Thē he made vnto them colacions or exortacions, & toke for his anteteme, "Haurietis aquas ī gaudio de fōtibus saluatoris," that is to meane, ye shall drawe, ī ioy, waters of ỹ wellys of our sauyour: & to this he added, "I am," sayd he, "ỹ sauyoure of poore men; ye be poore & haue assayed ỹ harde hādis of ryche men; now drawe ye therfore holefull water of lore of my wellys, & that ẅ ioy, for ỹ tyme
Fol. viii. of youre vysytacyon is comyn. I shall," sayde he, "departe waters from waters. By waters I vnderstande ỹ people; then shall I departe ỹ people whiche is good & meke, from the people ỹ is wyckyd and prowde, & I shall disseuyr ỹ good & the ylle, as ỹ lyght is departyd from ỹ derkenesse." Whan the bysshop[3] was brought to ỹ archebisshop of Caūterbury[4], he, by coūceyll of ỹ lordis of ỹ spyritualtye, sent vnto this Wyllyam, cōmaūdynge hym to appere before ỹ lordis of ỹ kyngys coūceyll to answere vnto suche maters as there shulde be layed vnto hym. At which day this Wyllyam appered, hauynge with hym a multytude of people, in so moch ỹ the lordys were of hym adrad, for ỹ which cause they remyttyd hym with plesaūt wordys for ỹ tyme, & cōmaundyd certeyn personys, in secrete maner, to espye when he were voyde of his cōpany, & then to take hym, & to put hym ī sure kepyng, ỹ which, accordyng to ỹ cōmaūdemēt, at tyme cōuenyēt, as they thought, sette vpō hym & to haue takyn hym; but he, ẅ an axe, resysted them, & slew one of theym, & after fled to Saynt Mary Bowe church, of Chepe, & tooke ỹ for his sauegarde, defendynge hym by strēgth, & not by ỹ suffragis of ỹ church: for to hym drewe, shortly,

[1] giuen. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] escheatys. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] whan report of this. MS.
[4] When thys came to the knowledge of the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

great

great multytude of people; but ī shorte processe, by mean of ỹ hedys & rulers of ỹ cytie, ỹ people mynysshed, so ỹ, ī short tyme, he was left w̄ fewe personys, & after, by fyre, cōpellyd to forsake ỹ church, & so was taken, but not w̄out shedyng of blode. After which takyng, he was arreygned before ỹ iugys, & there, w̄. ix. of his adherētis, cast & iudged to dye, & was hāged, & they with hym ỹ day folowynge. But yet ỹ rumor seased not; for ỹ cōmon people reysyd a great cryme vpō ỹ archbisshop of Caūtorbury, & other, & sayd ỹ, by theyr meanes, Wyllyam, which was an innocent of such crymes as were obiecte and put agayne hym, & was a defēdor of ỹ pore people agayne extorcioners & wrōge doers, was by them put wrōgfully to deth: approuyng hym an holy man & martyr, by this tale folowyng: sayinge, ỹ a man beyng seke of ỹ feuers, was curid by vertue of a cheyn which this Wyllyā was boūde w̄ in tyme of his dures of enprysonemēt, which, by a preest of ỹ allye of ỹ sayd Wyllyā, was opēly declared & prechyd, wherby he brought the people in such an errour, ỹ thēy gaue credēce to his wordys, & secretly, in ỹ night, cōueyed awey ỹ iebet ỹ he was hāgyd vpō, & scrapyd awey ỹ blode ỹ was shad of hym whē he was takyn, or ellys whē he was hedyd & quartered, so ỹ they made there an holow place by fetchyng away of ỹ erthe, & sayde ỹ syke men & women were cured of dyuerse sykenesses by vertue of ỹ blode & erthe. By theyse meanes, & blowyng of fame, ỹ place was ỹ more vysyted by women & vndyscrete persones, of ỹ which some watchyd there ỹ hoole nyght ī prayer, so ỹ the lēger this cōtynuyd, ỹ more disclaūder was anotyd to the iustyces, & to suche as put hym to deth: notwithstādynge, ī processe of tyme, whē his actys were publysshed, as ỹ sleinge of a man with his owne hande, & vsyng of his cōcubyne within seynt Mary Church, in tyme of his there beynge, as he opēlye cōfessyd in the owre of his deth, with other detestable crymes, some what kelyd ỹ great flame of ỹ hasty pylgrymage; but not clerely tyll ỹ archebisshop of Caūterbury accursed ỹ preest ỹ brought vp ỹ firste fable, & also causyd that place to be watchyd, ỹ suche idolatry shuld there no more be vsyd.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xviii. Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xviii[1].

Roger Blount.

Balliui. Anno. ix.

Nicholas Duke.

IN the moneth of Aprell, and. ix. yere of kynge Rycharde, when he had prouydyd to sende forthe. xx.M.*li.* to the emperoure, for full payment of his raūsome, the plegis whiche he had lyen for the same came sodeynly into Englonde, and shewed vnto ỹ kyng, that after his departynge, the emperour sent theym vnto ỹ duke of Ostryche, to remayne with hym tyll the money were payde: & forther there they shewed, that the sayd duke was accursyd of the pope, that than was Innocent the thyrde[2], by reason of his wronge doon to the kynge, & that his prouynce was greued with many myscheues. And as the duke rode forth on a daye in his disporte, beynge seynt Stephanys day, he hurt his fote in suche wyse with a thorne, or other venym, which rancled & grew so soore, ỹ lastly he shulde dye, or cut it offe; but in hope of recouery, he contynued, tyll, in the ende, he was warnyd that he shulde dye. Then he sent for his bysshoppis, & axyd to be assoyled of the sentence of ỹ churche which he stoode in, the which was denayed hym, excepte he wolde swere to stande & abyde the ordynaūce and doom of holy church, towchynge the wronge that he had doon to kynge Rycharde. The duke sware, and was assoyled; & shortly after the. ii. bysshoppis, pledgys for the money, were delyuered at theyr lybertye. Than kyng Rycharde callynge to mynde, that the vttermoste daye of the trewys, taken atwene hym & the Frenshe kynge, approched, made hym redy and sayled into Nor- [Li. 7. ca. 29.]

[1] M.C.xcix. [2] Innocent the thyrde, then bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

mandy, where, before his cōmynge, the Frenshe kynge, by occasyon of the Normannys, as sayth the Frenshe boke, was entred ẏ coūtrey of Burgys: towarde whom kyng Rycharde sped hym with all possyble spede, so that both hostis laye partyd with a ryuer, called Osson, or Ossyne. Then to folowe the saying of ẏ Frenshe boke, for so moche as ẏ Englysshe Cronycle spekyth lytle or nothynge of this acte, & let wyse men that here this Cronycle cōstrewe it after theyr discressiōs; for albeit the Frensheman wrote it to ẏ honoure of Frenshemen, yet to other ẏ shall rede or here it, because it soundith so nere vntrouthe, it shall rather redoūde vnto theyr dishonoure: for ẏ Frenshe Cronycle sayth, ẏ theyse. ii. hostys, thus, as aboue is sayde, lyinge togedyr without skyrmysshe or assaute, kynge Rycharde, contrary thoppynyon & mynde of his lordys, with a fewe accōpanyed & vnharnaysed, shulde cōme to ẏ Frēshe kynges tent, and there, in presence of his lordys, shulde doo homage to the Frenshe kynge, for the duchy of Normandy, and counteys of Angeou, and of Poytiers, and there swore to ẏ kynge to kepe peace durynge his lyfe, and after. viii. dayes mette agayne, and fynysshed the sayde peace, with assuryd othe vpō eyther partye, and after departed as frēdes, eyther resortynge into theyr owne countrey. But it semed a feynte peace, for within. iiii. monethes, or lasse, folowynge, kynge Rycharde, with his hooste, entred the prouynce of Berry, & layde syege to the castell of Wyersoune, and gate it by strengthe, and after yode to the castell of Noryncourt, ẏ whiche was delyuered to hym by appoyntmēt. Whan kyng Phylyp harde of the wynnynge and ouer throwe of the castell of Wyerson, he, in damagynge of kyng Rycharde, layde syege to the castell of Aubeuyle, and it assayled egerly; but it was so stronge, and so wele defended by the Normānys, ẏ the Frenshe kyng was holden of. Whan kynge Rycharde had garnysshed and fortefyed the castell of Noryncourt, with all thynge necessary to the warre, he drewe hym towarde Aubeuyle, to remoue kyng Phylyp from that syege, and fell vppon ẏ Frenshe men vnwarely; but the Frēshe men quytte them so knyghtly, ẏ they chased kynge Rycharde & his people, & toke a Norman knyght, named Guy de Thonars, a man of great hardynes. And then kyng Phylyp returned to the castell & towne of Aubeuyle, & assaultyd it more sharply, so that in the ende, the souldyours of the towne yeldyd it with the castell, for a certeyne sūme of money: and when he had possessyon of the towne, he threwe downe the castell playne with the grounde, & after strengthed the towne with Frenshemen, and then yode to the castell of Gysours, and frome thens resortyd to the forenamed castell of Noryncourt, and assayled it in so cruell maner, that shortly he wan it, and toke therin. xv. knyghtes, &. xxiiii. yemen, with plente of vytayll and armour. In this tyme and season kynge Richarde gaderyd newe strengthe, and allyed hym with Baldewyne erle of Flaunders, & with Reynolde erle of Dampmartyn and of Boleyne, by whose meanes, wytnessyth the Frenshe boke, kyng Rycharde wastyd sore the countrey of Fraunce, and brent therin some townys and vyllagys, and toke therin many ryche prayes.

Fol. ix.

Anno Domini. M.C.lxxx.xix. Anno Domini. M.CC.

Constantyne fiz Arnolde.

Balliui. Anno. x.

Robert le Beawe.

ABout the begynnynge of the moneth of October, and. x. yere of kynge Richarde, the sayde Richarde entryd the countrey of Vnequecin, with a stronge hoost, and made therin cruell warre in destroyinge of the countrey; and assawtyd the castell of Gysours, and threwe to grounde a stronge holde callyd Courcellys, & brent thereaboute many vyllagys: wherewith kyng Phylyp was so greuouslye amouyd, that, ẅ a small noumbre of knyghtes, he persyd the hoost of Englysshemen, and entryd the castell, or towne of Gysours: but of

of his men were takyn a certeyne noumbre, as Alayne de Russy, Mathewe de Melli, Guylliam de Mello, and many other; with the which prysoners and many ryche prayes, kynge Richarde then[1] departed, leuynge that Frensshe kyng wiñ Gysours. It was not longe after that kynge Richarde was thus departed, but that kyng Phylyp, callynge to mynde the great losse & dishonour that he had resayuyd by that warre of kyng Richard, assembled a great army, and entryd the duchy of Normandy, and wasted the countrey, from Nuesbourth to Beawmont le Rogier; and that done, he retornyd into Fraunce, and lycencyd his knyghtes to goo eche man into his owne countrey. Whan kynge Phylyp had thus fynysshed his warre in Normandy, kyng Richarde then, with his army, entryd the fore named countrey of Vnequecio, & also Beawnoyson[2], and toke within them, as he before had done, ryche and many prayes, and with them departyd; whom the bishop of Beawuays, beynge a good knyght and hardy of his handis, with a company of knyghtes and other, folowyd, to haue rescowyd the prysoners that kynge Richarde had takyn[3], and a certayn of his company slayne. Then the erle of Flaunders, by the ayde of the Englysshemen, tooke the towne of seynt Omer from the Frenshe men. In this season, Innocent the pope[4], before namyd, sent a legat into Fraunce, named Peter de Capis, to refourme the warre atwene these. ii. pryncis, the which, at that tyme, was in suche disioynte, that he cowde not brynge it to any frame, and specyally, as sayth the Frenshe boke, because kynge Rycharde wolde not delyuer hostagys & gagis, as the Frenshe kynge wolde. Then kynge Rycharde, after Cristmas, besyegyd a castell nere vnto Lymoges: [Li. 7. ca. 31.] this castell, in the Frenshe Cronycle, is called Chalons, and in the Englysshe boke, it is named Gaillarde. The cause of this siege, as sayth most wryters, was for certayne ryche treasour foundyn within the lordeshyp, or sygnory, of kynge Rycharde; the which one Wydomer, Vycount of Lemonke, had founden and with holde from kynge Richarde, and for his sauegarde fledde vnto the fore named castell, and defendyd it manfully from the fyrste weke of Lent, tyll the. vi. day of Aprell: vpon the which day, kynge Rycharde, Walkyng vnwysely about the castell to espye the feblencs therof, one named Bertrande Guedon, markyd the kynge, & woundyd hym in the hede, or after some wryters, in the arme, with a venemus quarell: after which wound resauyd by the kynge, he comaundyd sharpe assaute to be made, in the whiche assaute the castell was wonne. Than he made enquery who it was that so had woundid hym, the which was brought vnto the kinges presence, and named hym selfe as aboue is sayde, or after some wryters, Peter Basyle. Then the kynge demaundid of hym, why he shuld so lye in a wayte to hurt hym, rather than any of his felowes? "For thou slew my father and my bretherne[5]," sayde he, "wherfore I entendyd to auenge theyr deth, what someuer became of me." Then the kynge forgaue hym his offence, & sufferyd hym to goo at his lybertie, and the other of the souldyours takyn in that castell, the kyng cõmaundyd to be hanged; but Polycronycon sayth, that after kynge Richarde was dede, the duke of Braban, which than was present, causyd the sayd Bartrand to be takyn and flayne quycke & after hanged. Than kynge Richard dyed the. iii. day after, that is to say, the. ix. day of Aprell, and was buryed at Font Eborard, at the fete of his father; howe be it some wryters saye, that his hart was buryed at Roan, his body as before is sayde, and his bowellys at Carleyll in Englande, when he had reygned. ix. yeres. ix. monthes and odde dayes, leuyng after hym none issue. Of this Richarde, a metrician made theyse verses folowynge.

Criste, tui calicis predo, fit preda caducis,
Ere breui reicis[6], qui tollit era crucis.
Viscera Carleolum, corpus fons seruat Ebardi[7]
Et cor Rothomagum magne Ricarde tuum.

[1] thens. MS. [2] Beauvoisyn. [3] *Here the* edit. 1533. *adds*, but they were taken. [4] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [5] my two. MS. [6] rejecis. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [7] Ebrardi.

In terra[1], diuiditur vnus quia plus fuit vno,
Non superest vno gracia tanta viro.

The whiche verses may be Englysshed as folowith.

Cryste of the thefe, which on the[2] ryght hand was,
And axid mercy, to vs thou made a praye
That we lyke wyse shuld, for our trespasse,
Axe of the mercy, and shewe no delaye:
Nor for erthly thynges caste our selfe away.
For who of thy crosse accomptyth lytle store,
The meryte of thy passion he losyth euermore.

This manfull knyght, this prynce victorious,
Which toke thy crosse on hym with great payne,
He folowed the thefe, and axyd mercy thus.
For his offence he warred thy foes agayne,
And shad theyr blode on hyll, and eke on playne:
Fol. x. And all for loue good Lorde he had to the,
Wherefore swete Iesu on hym thou haue pytie.

Of whom the bowellys at Carleyll, & the trunke
At fount Ebrarde, full rychely is dight,
The harte at Roan into the erth is sunke
Of the worthy Richarde; and so in thre is twyght,
That more than one whylom was in myght.
In erth is seperat, that lyuynge, more than one
Was, and of grace, founde lyke to hym, none.

[Li. 7. ca. 32.] IOhñ, brother of the aboue namyd Richarde, and yongest sone of Henry ŷ seconde, was ordeyned, or proclaymed, kyng of Englande, the tenth daye of Aprell, in the begyñynge of the yere of our Lorde. xi.C.lxxx.xix. and the. xx. yere of the seconde Phylyp, than kynge of Fraunce. This Iohñ, at the day of his brothers deth, was in Normandy, where at Chynon, as soone as his brother Rycharde was dysseasyd, he possessyd hym of his brothers treasoure, and sent Hubert, archebisshop of Caũtorbury, into Englande, to make prouysyon for his coronacion: and vpõ Eester day folowynge, he was gyrde with the swerde of ŷ duchy of Brytayne, and saylyd soone after into Englande, where he was crownyd kynge at Westmynster, vpon Holy Thursday next folowynge, of the forenamed Hubert; after whiche solempnytie done, he ordeyned ŷ same Hubert chaũceller of Englande. In this whyle the Frenshe kynge helde a counceyll at Cenomannia, ī Turon, where, to ŷ derogacion of kynge Iohñ, Arture, the sone of Geffrey Plantagenet, & neuewe to the sayde Iohñ, was made duke of Brytayne; and[3] in contynentlye after, with a great army, entryd the countrey of Angeou, and toke possessyon thereof. And kynge Phylyp with his people entryd the duchy of Normandy, & layed siege to ŷ cytie of Euroux, and wan it w̃ all the stronge holdis there about, and stuffyd them with vytayll, & strengthed theym with his owne knyghtis; & that done, wastyd & spoyled the coũtrey, tyll he came to the cytie of Meaus, where met with hym the fore named Arture, & dyd to hym homage for the coũtrey of Angiers. In the moneth of May, Elyanoure, sometyme wyfe of Henry the seconde, and modyr to kynge Richarde, came into Fraunce, and so to the kyng, to Meaus foresayde, and made to hym homage for the countrey[4] of Poy-

[1] tria. edit. 1559. [2] thy. MS. [3] which. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] county. MS.

tiers,

tiers, as her enherytaunce: and soone after ŷ kynge retournyd into Fraũce, and the duke of Brytayne with hym, which as yet was within age. Kynge Iohñ, herynge of this warre in Normandy, and losse of the countreys aboue namyd, assemblyd a counceyll, and axyd ayde of his lordis & comons, to wynne agayn ŷ foresayd lãdis; & had it[1] graũtyd, after some wryters. iii.*s.* of euery ploughe lãde through England, besyde ŷ subsedye of the spirituall landys: and when he had made redy for ŷ belonged to his voyage, he, about heruest, sayl-yd into Normandy, where he taryed tyll Octobre folowynge, spendynge the tyme to his losse and dishonoure.

[Anno Domini. M.C.xcix.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.][2]

Arnold fiz Arnold.

Balliui. Anno. i.

Richard fiz Darty[3].

AFter Mychelmas, in ŷ monyth of Octobre, & firste yere of the reygne of kynge Iohñ, a trewce, or peace, was concluded atwene ŷ. ii. kynges of Englonde & of Fraunce, from ŷ day, tyll Mydsomer nexte folowynge; & in lyke wyse, atwene the Frenshe kyng, & Baldewyn, erle of Flaũders. And this yere, was made a dyuorce atwene kynge Iohñ, & his wyfe, the erle of Glocetyrs doughter, be cause of nerenesse of blode; and after was he maryed vnto Isabell, the doughter of the erle of Engolesym in Fraunce, and had by her. ii. sonnys, Henry & Rycharde, &. iii. doughters, Isabell, Eleanour, & Iane. This yere dyed at London blessyd Hugh, bysshop of Lyncolñ, & was conueyed to his owne churche, and there enteryd; [for whom God hath shewyd many myracles, so that, at this day, he is auctorysed by ŷ Church for a seynt.][4] At Mydlent, after, kyng Iohñ sayled agayne into Normandy, &, after Eester, he mette with kynge Phylyp, betwene Vernon & the ile Audeley, where the peace atwene both realmes was stablysshed and confermyd, for terme of theyr. ii. lyues, & the landys deuyded atwene the. ii. kynges, as eyther of them shuld holde them contentyd for theyr lyues after. And in shorte tyme after, Lewys, the eldest sone of kynge Phylyp, maryed dame Blanch, doughter to Alphons, kyng of Castylle, & neuew to kynge Iohñ; to ŷ which Lewys, kynge Iohñ, for loue of that wo-man, shewyd to hym great boũtie, & gaue vnto hir many ryche gyftes. In ŷ moneth of Iuli folowyng kynge Iohñ rode into Fraũce, where he was receyued of the Frensshe kynge with moche honour, & so cõueyed ito seynt Denys, where he was resayued ẅ pro-cessyon, & vpon the morne[5], the Frenshe kynge accompanyed hym vnto Paris, where he was resayued of the cytezyns with great reuerence, and presentyd by the prouoste of the towne, in name of ŷ hole cytie with ryche presentis: & there kyng Phylyp festid hym i his owne paleys, & gaue vnto hym & to his lordis & seruauntys many ryche gyftys, & after cõueyed hym forth of that cytie, & toke leue of hym in moost louynge wyse. And when kyng Iohñ had sped his maters in Normandy, he than retournyd into Englonde. [Li. 7. ca. 32.]

[Anno Domini. M.CC.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.i.]

Roger Desert.

Balliui. Anno. ii.

Iamys fiz Barth.

IN the moneth of December, &. seconde yere of kyng Iohñ, Ranulphe, erle of Ches-tre, by the exaumple afore shewyd by kynge Iohñ, lefte his owne wyfe, named Constaũce, [Li. 7. ca. 32.]

[1] "it," *omitted* in MS. [2] MS. *The subsequent* edit. *of* 1533. 1542. *and* 1559. *here, and in several succeeding years, place the dates, and sometimes the Sheriffs, one year later.* [3] Darthy. MS. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] morow. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

& count-

& countesse of Brytayne, whiche before he had maryed, by counceyll of kynge Henry
Fol. xi. the seconde, & weddyd one Clemence. One Cronycle saythe he dyd so because he wolde haue issue; but the sayd auctor sayth that, after his opynyon, he displeased God so greatly, that God wolde suffre hym to haue none issue, but the rather, for ŷ dede, dyed without.

Abowte this tyme, after opynyō of mooste wryters, the people or nacyon callyd Tartaris began theyr domynyon. These men dwellyd vnder the hyllys of Inde, that belongyd to Prester Iohñ, & chase, of them selfe, a capytayn of lowe birth, callyd Dauid, and so, with wyues & chyldren, passed the next countreys with robbynge & spoylynge, and grew shortly in great strēgth, and after subdued ŷ Partyes[1], and many other vycyne countreys, and grewe lastly vnto great domynyon & lordshyp in the Eest partyes of ŷ worlde, so that lately theyr prynce or souerayn is callyd the great Cahan. In this yere, as wyt-
[Li. 7. ca. 32.] nessyth Polycronycon, the kynge of Scottys dyd homage to kynge Iohñ, at Lyncolne, & sware, [vpon the crosse of Hubert, archebysshop of Caunterbury,][2] in the presens of a legat of Rome, and. xiii. bysshops, to be trewe liege man to hym and to his heyres kynges.

[And in this yere, one Estate[3], callyd abbot of Flay, came into Englande, & amonge other myracles by hym shewyd, he blessyd a well besyde the towne of Wye in Kent, so that men & women, drynkyng of that water, were curyd of dyuerse maladyes; but lastly he dysplesyd so ŷ bysshopps of Englāde, that he was glad to leue the lande, and after saylyd into Normandy.][4]

[Anno Domini. M.CC.i. Anno Domini. M.CC.ij.

Willm. Fyz Alyze.

Balliui. Anno tercio.

Symon of Aldermanbery.][5]

About the moneth of December, in ŷ thyrde yere of Iohñs reygne, in the prouynce of Yorke, were seen v. moonys, one in the Eest, the seconde in the West, the thyrde in the North, the fourth in the South, and the fyfthe, as it were, set in the myddys of ŷ other, & yode. vi. tymes in compassynge the other, as it were, by the space of an howre, and vanysshed awey soone after. This yere, in the moneth of Februarii, kyng Phylyp callyd a parlyamēt at Verdon, where it was, amonge other maters, concluded that kynge Iohñ, as his liege man, shulde apere at his parlyament, holden at Paris, vñ. xv. dayes of Eester next folowinge. But for so moche as kynge Iohñ nor none for hym aperyd to shewe some lawfull inpedymēt, ŷ Frēsh kyng therefore entrid ŷ duchy of Normādy, & toke the castellys of Boūte, of Gentelyne, & Gurnay, and seased into his handis, all suche landys as Hugh de Gurnay helde, and gaue them vnto Arture, fore sayd duke of Britayne; & more ouer he gaue to the sayde Artur ŷ coūtie of Augeon[6], with. CC. prysoners, and a certayne of money to defende the sayde countie agayne kyng Iohñ. Whan kyng Iohñ had vnderstōdynge of all the cruell dealynge of kyng Phylyp, he callyd a coūceyll, & there axyd ayde, & was graūtyd a newe ayde to withstande the Frenshe kyngys malyce. And about Lammasse after, the kyng, with a fayre company, sayled into Normandy, & so sped hym into the coūtrey of Augeon[6], for so moche as he was enfourmyd that Arture, his neuewe, & duke of Britayne, warryd within the same, &[7] toke hym prysoner, ẅ cer-

[1] Parthis. MS. [2] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Estace. MS. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1542. [5] *The later editions give the names of* Arnolde & Rycharde *here, as* Balliui. *The margin of the edit. of* 1559 says, "William Abison" *and* "Symon of Aldermanbury." [6] Angeou. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] and there. MS.

tayne

tayne other knyghtes, as syr Hugh le Bruns, syr Godfrey de Losyngham, ẅ dyuerse other, at which tyme, kyng Phylyp laye at the siege of the castell of Arques, & herynge of this discomfiture, brake vp his siege, to the entent to haue rescowyd the sayd duke; but when he was warned that he shulde come to short, he than chaũgyd his purpose, and went vnto the cytie of Towris, & wan it by strengthe, and after, for that wynter drewe nere[1], he returnyd into Fraũce. In which season also, kynge Iohñ returnyd, with his prysoners, into Englande. In this yere, by coũceyll of ŷ burgeysys of the cytie of Lõdon, were chosen. xxxv. of the mooste substanciall and wysest men, which, after some, were callyd to[2] the counceyll of the cytie, of the whiche, yerely, the baylyues were chosen, and after ŷ mayre and shryues were takyn of the same noumbre.

[Anno Domini. M.CC.ij.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.iij.][3]

Norman Blondell.

Balliui. Anno. iiii.

Iohñ of Ely.

IN this fourth yere of kynge Iohñ were seen many wonderfull tokẽs, for ouer ŷ wynter, ŷ which passyd i lengthe and hardnesse many yeres before goon, wõderfull wederyngys, as of excedyng lyghtenynges, thunders, & other stormys of wynde and rayne aperyd, & therewith hayle, of the bygnesse of hennys egges, the which perysshed frute and corne, besyde other hurtys and harmys doon vpon housys and yonge catayll, goyng a brode. Also spyrytys were seen in the ayer, in lykenes of foulys, beryng fyre i theyr byllys, ŷ which sett on fyre dyuerse housys. And soone thereafter, dyed Hupert, arche- [Li. 7. ca. 33.] bysshop of Cauntorbury, in whose place was chosen, contrary to the mynde of kynge Iohñ, by the more partye of the couent of Caŷtorbury, master Stephan Langton. Albe it, some there were, that, accordynge to the kynges pleasure, namyd the bisshop of Norwyche, & some other. For this eleccyon, the kynge was greuosly amouyd agayne the munkys, & wolde, i no wyse, alowe or admytte theyr eleccion; wherfore they sent theyr eleccion vnto pope[4] Innocent the thyrde, ŷ which admytted the sayd master Stephan, & refused the other, and sacryd hym at Viterb, a cytie of Italy, & sent hym after with letters of comendacion vnto kynge Iohñ, to take the possessyon and frutys of his benefyce. Kynge Iohñ with this was soore amouyd, in so moche that he warnyd hym his lãde, and dyuerse of the munkis of Caũterbury ŷ fauored his cause. About Eester, kynge Iohñ sayled into Normandye, for the Frenshe kynge had recõmencyd his warre, in the coũtie[5] of Guyan, and wanne therein daylye dyuerse stronge holdis & castellys, & allyed with hym the erle of Alenson, & had great ayde of the Portuyns and Britons; and whan he had brought that coũtrey vndre his subieccion, he than returnyd by Normãdye, & wan Conket, the vale of Ruell, & ŷ ile of Audeley. In this season, ŷ forenamed pope[6] sent the abbot of Casmer into Fraũce to refourme theyse. ii. pryncis, with whom was also accõpanyed ŷ abbot of Cressons, the whiche endeuoryd them so, that they were nere agreed of a peace. But for they wolde that the Frenshe kynge shuld repayre & amẽde such howsys of relygyon as he had hurt & ouerthrowen in Guyan, & other placis belongyng to the crowne of Englande; therfore he forsoke the peace, not with standynge ŷ kynge Iohñ, in lyke wyse, shuld haue repayred all lyke housys apperteynynge vnto ŷ crowne of Fraũce. Thã ŷ Frenshe kyng, i the ende of August, layed siege to the castell of Raydepount, & assawtyd it by the terme of. xv. dayes contynuelly; but the souldyours win defendid it so manfully, ŷ they slewe many of theyr enemyes, so ŷ kyng Phylyp was fayne to gyue backe, tyll he had deuysed newe engynes after to werre[7] facion, by reason whereof *Fol. xii.*

[1] toward. MS. [2] "to" *omitted in the* MS. *and later editions.* [3] MS. [4] "Pope" *omitted* in edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Countrye. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [7] towir. MS. the warre. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

he lastly wan the sayd castell, & toke therein. xx. knyghtis, & an hūdred and. vii. yomen & other, and. xxi. arblasters: and when he hadde fortyfyed that castell w̄ Frenshe men, he than yode to the castell of Gaylarde, and layed his ordynaunce to that as he had done to ỹ other; but he lay there a moneth or he myght do to it ony hurte or harme. In all whiche season, kynge Iohn warrid vpō ỹ borderers of Fraūce; but of his victoryes I fynde lytle wrytē.

[Anno Domini. M.CC.iij.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.iiij.][1]

Water Browne.

[Balliui. Anno. v.][1]

Wyllyam Chaumberleyn.

[Li. 7. ca. 33.] IN this yere, that is to saye, ỹ. v. yere of kyng Iohn, by reason of the vnreasonable wederynge, as[2] in ỹ laste yere fell, ỹ whete was solde for xv. *s.* a quarter: & kynge Iohn, in ỹ somer folowyng, maryed his bastarde doughter vnto Lewlyn, prynce of Wales, and gaue with hir the castell & lordeshyp of Elyngesmere, beynge in the marches of South Walys.

[In Morgans lande in Walys, soone after a knyght appered after his deth, to one callyd Mayster Moris, to whom, by his lyues tyme, he had ben speciall louer & freende; the which knyght by his dayes was well lettryd, and vsed, for his recreacion, to make versys with this master Moris, so that the one shuld begynne the metyr, and the other shulde ende it; at which tyme of his apperaūce, the knyght sayde to Master Moris, "Master "Moris, I woll ỹ thou ende this verse, Destruet hoc regnum rex regum." "Nay," sayde Master Moris, "ende thou it, for thou hast almooste made the hoole thy selfe." "Thā," sayd the knyght, "for that I see now thou arte olde and slowe, I wyll ende it my selfe."

Destruet hoc regnū rex regum duplici plaga.

The which verse maye be Englysshed as foloweth.

The kynge of kynges, that Lorde that ruleth all,
And in whose power all thynge is conteynyd,
This realme, for synne, he dystroy shall
With dowble plage: be thereof asserteyned,
Except the people here after be refrayned
From synne, and them to vertuous lyfe alye,
And vyce before ysyd vtterly renye.][3]

This yere, the pope[4] sent letters of recommendacyon vnto kynge Iohn, shewynge, that he had fauourably harde his proctours[5], for all suche maters as they had layde agayne ỹ archebysshop of Cauūterbury, and some of his mūkis, that he shulde not of right be admyttyd to that see; but, for the sayde maters of obieccion were, by hym and his courte, thought in suffycient, he therefore exortyd and wyllyd hym to accepte the sayd archebisshop to his grace, & suffre hym to enioye the frutis of his benefyce, and the munkys by hym exyled, to returne vnto theyr propre abbey. But the more his lordis and frendys aduysed hym to folowe the popys[6] mynde, the more was he moued to the contrary, in suche maner, that the popys[6] messyngers returnyd without spede of theyr message. Yet haue I[7] harde before, how ỹ Frenshe kynge laye a boute the castell of Gaillarde, and myght not wynne it by the space of a moneth; wherefore he after sent for newe ordynaūce, and

[1] MS. [2] that. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [5] protectours. edit. 1542. [6] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [7] ye. edit. 1542. 1559.

assayłyd

assaylyd it so fyersly, that within. xx. dayes after, he wan the sayd castell, to ẏ great losse of men on both partyes, and toke prysoners there win. xxxvi. knyghtis, besyde the other noumbre of yomen and arblasterys, and that done, seasyd ẏ coūtrey there about, and strenthed the sayd castell with his owne men, and then with great pryde retournyd into Fraunce.

[Anno Domini. M.CC.iiij.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.v.][1]

Thomas Haueryll.

Balliui. Anno. vi.

Hamonde Bronde.

ABout ẏ season after Mychelmas, in the. vi. yere of the reygne of kyng Iohñ, came downe a strayght cōmaūdement from ẏ pope[2], that except the kynge wolde peasablye suffre the archebisshop of Caūtorbury to occupye his see, and the munkys theyr abbey, that the lande shulde be entyrdyted; chargynge theyse. iiii. bysshopys folowynge, ẏ is to saye, Wyllyā, then bysshop of London, Eustace, bysshop of Ely, Waltyr, bisshop of Wynchestre, & Gylys, bisshop of Herforde, to denoūce the kynge and his lande accursyd, if he the cōmaūdement disobeyed. Then theyse. iiii. byshoppys, with other to them associat, made instaunt labour to the kynge, for the obseruynge of the popys[2] cōmaūdement, and to exchewe the sensours of ẏ church; but all was in vayne: wherefore the. iiii. sayde bysshopys, accordynge to the popys wrytynge to them sent, the morowe folowynge our Lady Day Annunciacion, or the. xxvi. daye of Marche, denouncyd kynge Iohñ, with his realme of Englande, accursyd, and shyt faste the dores of churches, and other placis where dyuyne seruyce before was vsyd, firste in London, and after in all placys as they went thoroughe the lande. The kyng, for this dede, was so amouyd with the sayd. iiii. bysshopis, that he seasyd all ẏ temporaltyes to them belōgynge into his handys, and put them in suche feere that they forsooke this lande, and sayled to the archebisshop of Caūtorbury. In this yere, at Oxenforde[3], ī Suff. was taken a fysshe in the see, of fourme lyke to a man, & was kepte. vi. monethes after vpon lande, with rawe flesshe & fysshe, and after, for they coulde haue no speche of it, they caste it into ẏ see agayne.

[Anno Domini. M.CC.v.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.vi.][1]

Iohñ Walgraue.

Balliui. Anno. vii.

Rycharde of Wynchestyr.

IN the moneth of Nouember, and. vii. yere of ẏ kyng, one named Hugh Oysell, for treason at Lōdon, was drawyn and hangyd. And this yere, in the moneth of Maii, the Frensshe kynge entryd into Normandy with a stronge power, and wanne there the castellys of Faloys & Dafyount, or Danffroūt, and after, seasyd all the landys to the sayde castell belongynge, and so tyll he came to a place callyd seynt Mychaell, in the parell of the see. Whan the Normannys sawe that kyng Phylyp thus subdued the strong holdys of Normandy, and that kynge Iohñ to the contrary made no defence, the capytayns of Constance, of Bayonx, or Bayon, of Lyseux, of Anreuches[4] & Enroux, yeldyd them all to the Frēshe kynge, and be came his lyege men, so ẏ he was in possessyon of the substaunce of the duchy of Normādy, excepte Roan, and other fewe castellys. Then kyng Phylyp seynge theyse stronge holdys thus yeldid vnto hym, layed his siege to ẏ cytie of Roan, where, after he had lyen a season, ẏ capitayne of ẏ towne desyred a respyte of. xxx. dayes, *Fol. xiii.*

[1] MS. [2] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] Ozesford. MS. [4] Aurenches. MS.

gyuynge pledgys and hostagys, that if the cytie were not by kynge Iohñ, or his assygneys, rescowyd with in the foresayde terme, they wolde yelde ŷ cytie vnto the Frenshe kynge. And in lyke wyse was appoyntment takyn, for ŷ castellys namyd Arquys and Vermeyll, in whiche tyme for ŷ no socoure came, both cytie and castellys were delyueryd into the Frenshe kynges handys; and thus had this seconde Phylyp the possessyon of Normandye, whiche noo Frenshe kynge had sen ŷ tyme of Charlys the Symple, whiche gaue ŷ same duchye to Rollo, leder of the Normannys, w Gylla, his doughter, in maryage: sen ŷ which tyme had passid ouer. CCC. yeres. Whā the Frenshe kynge had thus brought into his subieccion, the duchy of Normandy, he than, abbout seynt Laurence tyde, yoode into the countie of Guyan, and wan there the cytie of Potiers, with all ŷ castellys and townys to the sayde cytie belongynge; and whan he had set that countrey in an ordre and rule, he sped hym into Fraunce, with great pompe and glory. It is affermyd of some auctours, that the Frenshe kynge made this warre vpon kynge Iohn, by excytynge of the pope[1], for his contumacy agayne ŷ churche. In this yere also, was a communycacyon of a peace, to be hadde atwene kynge Iohñ and the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, and was dryuen to a nere poynt of accorde, excepte restytucyon that kynge Iohñ shulde haue made to the archebysshop & other bisshoppis, the whiche his offycers had takyn in the tyme of theyr absence, to the which restytucyon kyng Iohñ in no wyse wolde be agreable; wherefore the sayd cōmunycacyon toke none effecte. After this cōmunycacion, kyng Iohñ was so frette with malyce, that, in a fury, he lette proclayme in sundrye placys of his realme, that all suche personys, as hadde landys and possessyons within Englande, spirituell or temporell, that they shulde returne into Englande by Mychelmasse nexte folowynge, or ellys to be clerelye excludyd frome all suche landys; and ouer that, strayghte commaundement was geuen, to euerych offycer in his countrey, to make busye serche if any wrytynges were brought from ŷ court of Rome to any prelat of this realme, and if any such were foūdyn, to brynge hym and his wrytyngys to the kynges presence: and more ouer, that they shuld sease to the kyngys vse all suche landys as to any persone were geuyn by ŷ sayd archebysshop, or by the pryoure of Cauntorbury, sen the tyme of eleccyon of the sayde archebysshop, and the woodys of the same to be fellyd, & solde in all haste.

[Anno Domini. M.CC. vj. Anno Domini. M.CC.vij.

Iohn Holyland.

Balliui. Anno. viii.

Edmund fyz Gerard.][2]

VPon the firste daye of the moneth of Octobre, and. viii. yere of the reygne of ŷ kynge, his firste sone, Henry by name, was borne of dame Isabell, his. ii. wyfe, in ŷ cytie of Wynchestre. And this yere, rebellyd ŷ Irisshe men, & dyd moche harme in ŷ countrey, whiche rebellyon, after some wryters, was, for so moche as ŷ kyng wolde haue leuyed of theym greuous taskys to haue made warre with, vpō ŷ Frēshe kynge; but at lengthe they greued or displeasyd the kyng in suche wyse, that he was fayne to sette a taske thorough his lande to oppresse theyr malyce. And ouer that, he askyd of the whyte munkys of Englande. vi.M. marke; but they excused theym by theyr generall hede, so that the kynge toke with them grete displeasure; by reason wherof, after his returne out of Irelāde, he vexid them sore, and gathered of theym more than before he had desyred, and causyd some abbottys to forsake theyr housys. Then he with a puyssaunt army went into Ire-

[1] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. Here *in the margin of the* edit. of 1542. *it is said,* "the byshop of Rome was the sturrar up of these warres." [2] MS.

lande,

lande, & shortlye subdued them, and after he had sette the countrey in a rule, he returned into Englande.

[Anno Domini. MCC.vij.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.viij.][1]

Roger Wynchestyr.

Balliui. Anno. ix.

Edmunde Hardell.

IN this. ix. yere, the kynge, cōsideryng ỹ great losse which he had susteyned by ỹ Frēshe kynge in Normandy, and also ī Angeon and Poytean, made prouysion of all thynges belongynge to the warre; and after, about Mydsomer, sayled ouer ỹ see & lādyd at Rochell, ī Poyteau, with a myghty hooste, at which season the Frēshe kyng was at Thymon[2], and fortyfyed it, with also the castellys of London and Mirable, & the towne of Poytiers, whiche lytle before he had wonne; & after, without taryinge, returnyd into Fraunce. Then kynge Iohn̄, herynge of the Frenshe kynges departynge, sped hym to Angiers, & wan that towne with lytle payne, & dystroyed the sayde towne. Thyther came to hym the Vicount of Thonars, which before was, for drede, become the Frenshe kyngys man, and by his ayde, kynge Iohn̄ than recouered some parte of that coūtrey. In this meane whyle kynge Phylyp gathered a newe hooste, & herynge of the vnsteedfastnes of the Vycount of Thonars, entryd the landis of the sayd Vycount, and wastyd and spoylyd the countrey without pytye. Than kyng Iohn̄ sped hym towarde the Frenshe kynge, so that in short processe of tyme, the two hoostis were win lytle distaūce; but by what meane of[3] fortune I can not saye, for the meane thereof is not expressyd, the. ii. kynges there toke peace for. ii. yeres folowyng, and after eyther of them returned into his owne countrey. In this yere, the pope[4] beynge asserteyned of the cruelnesse of kynge Iohn̄ executyd agayne the whyte munkys of his lande, and also of his obstynacy ỹ he perseuered ī agayne holy churche, sent downe a newe cōmyssyon, by vertue whereof the curse of enterdytynge was newly denoūcid and manyfestyd ī sundry placis of Englande; and ouer that, the pope[4], by auctorite of the sayd bulle, assoyled or acquytyd all the lordys of Englande, as well spirituall as tēporall, of all homage and feauty ỹ they of ryght owyd to the kynge, to the entent that they shulde aryse agayne hym, & depryue hym of all kyngelye honour: but all this myght not moue the kyng [frome his erroure.][5]

[Anno Domini. M.CC.viij.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.ix.][5]

Serle the Mercer.

Balliui. Anno. ix.

Hugh of Seynt Albon.

ABout the feaste of seynt Medarde, in the monyth of Iunii, and later ende of this fore- *Fol. xiiij.*
sayd. ix. yere, ỹ forenamed bayllyues were admytted to that offyce, and the olde, that is to mean Roger Wynchester, and Edmunde Hardell, were dischargyd, for so moche as they withstode ỹ kynges purueyour of whete, and wolde not suffre hym to cōuey certayne mesures of whete out of the cytie, tyll ỹ cytie were storyd. For this the kyng toke suche displeasure, that he sent downe streyght commaundement vnto the. xxxv hedys or rulers of the cytie, that they shulde discharge the sayde. ii. bayllyuys, and to put them in pryson, tyll they knewe the kyngys further pleasure; wherefore ỹ sayd. xxxv. persones toke aduyce, & appoynted a certayn of them selfe, ẏ other, and rode to the kynge, than beynge at Langley, to impeter grace for ỹ sayde bayllyues, shewynge forther, that, at ỹ season, suche distresse of whete was in ỹ cytie, that the comon people were lykely to haue

[1] MS. [2] Chynon. MS. [3] or. MS. [4] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

made

made an insurreccion for the same; by which meanys and frendshyp whiche they had in the courte, the kyng was so satysfyed that he releasyd them from pryson. And in short tyme after, the cytezens of Lōdon made suche sute to the kynge, that they hadde graūtyd to them by the kyngys letters patentes, ỹ they shulde yerely chose to theym selfe a mayre and. ii. shryues; after whiche graunte to theym confermyd, they, amonge theym selfe, ordeyned that the. ii. shryues shuld be chosen yerelye, vpon seynt Mathewes daye, ix. dayes before Mychelmas; & vpon Mychelmas day, to take theyr charge, and the Mayre to be chosen vpon the same day, & chargyd with the other, or vpon the sayde day of Mychelmas, albeit that now it is other wyse orderyd.

Anno Domini. M.CC.ix. Anno Domini. M.CC.x.

Primus Maior.

Petyr Duke.

The first mayre. Henry fiz Alwyn. Anno. x.

Thomas Neell.

[Li. 7. ca. 33.] IN the day of seynt Mychaell the arcaungell, and. x. yere of kynge Iohn̄, Henry, ỹ sone of Alwyn, was sworne and chargyd as first mayre of London; and Peter Duke, with Thomas Neell, sworne for shyreuys, and the name of bayllyues was, after this daye, clerelye auoydyd within the sayd cytie from ỹ daye forewarde. Also where, before this tyme, the brydge ouer Thamys, at Lōdon, was made of tymbre, & was ruled, guydyd, or repayred, by a fraternyte, or college of preestys; this yere, by the great ayde of the cytezens of London, and other passynge that way, the sayde brydge was begonne to be edefyed of stone. And in this yere, ỹ monastery of seynt Mary Ouereyes in Southwerke, was begonne of to be buyldyd. And in this yere, ỹ pope[1] sent. ii. legattys, or after some wryters, one legat, named Pandulphus. the which, in ỹ popis[2] name, had many sore wordys of monycion of obedyence to kyng Iohn̄, and charged hym to suffre the archebysshop of Caūtorbury, w̄ the pryour & munkys of the same, to enioye theyr ryghtys and possessyons within Englād̄e, & taryed here a certeyne of tyme, to brynge his p̄purpose about; but all was ī vayne, for he yode agayne to Rome, without releasynge of the enterdytynge. Of the maner of this enterdiccion of this lande haue I seen dyuerse opynyons; as some there be that saye that ỹ lande was enterdyted thorowly, and ỹ churchis and housys of relygyon closyd, that no where was vsyd masse nor dyuyne seruyce; by whiche reason, none of the. vii. sacramentis, ī all this terme, shulde be mynystred or occupyed, nor chylde crystenyd, nor man confessyd, nor maryed: but it was not so strayght, for there were dyuerse placys in Englande, whiche were occupyed with dyuyne seruyce all that season, by lycence purchacid thā or before; also chyldren were crystened thoroughe all the lande, & men houselyd & anelyd, excepte suche persones as were exceptyd by name in the bull, [or knowen for maynteyners of the kynges ille entent.][3]

London brydge made of stone.

Seynt Mary Ouereyes begonne.

Anno Domini. M.CC.x. Anno Domini. M.CC.xi.

Peter Yonge.

Henry fiz Alwyn. Anno. xi.

Wyllyam Elande.

IN this yere, which was the. xi. yere of kynge Iohan, after Mydsomer, or the terme of ỹ trewce were fully rūne, kynge Phylyp, with a stronge hoste, entryd the coūtie of Guyan,

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] Bishop of Romes. edit. 1542. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

& made newe warre vpon the Vycount of Thonars, and toke his castell callyd Parteny, w̄ dyuerse other strōge holdys, to the sayd vycount belongynge; & mannyd them with Frēshe men, & ordeyned one Guylyam de Roches, marshall of Fraunce, chefe ruler of that countre, & after returnyd into Fraunce. But it was not longe after the kynge was departyd, but that the sayd vycoūt of Thonars, made sharpe warre vpon the Frenshe men, w̄ suche power as he myght make, and recouervd a parte of his lāde: but one day whē he had wone a lytle holde, & takyn therin a certayne of prisoners, in his returne towarde his holde, where he lodgyd, he was suppryscd with the fore named Guyllyam de Roches, & a great multytude of Frenshemen; of the which, after longe fyght, he was fynally takyn, with syr Hugh Thonars his brother, syr Aymery de Lesyngnā, sone of ȳ erle of Poytiers, and to the nomber of. l. persones of his company, the which were all, as prysoners, thē sent vnto ȳ Frēshe kynge.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xii.

Adam Whetley.

Henry fiz Alwyn. Anno. xii.

Stephan le Graas.

IN this. xii. yere of kyng Iohñ, the pope[1] sent agayne Pandulphe, his legat, & monysshed the kynge in sharpe maner, that he shulde receyue master Stephan Langton to his benefyce, of ȳ see of Cauntorbury, and the pryour, with his munkys, vnto theyr abbey. Then the kynge callynge to mynde the daungers which he was wrappyd in, both w̄in his owne realme, & also ī Normādy, & ȳ hurtis which dayly grew to hym by the same, made a promyse by othe, that he wolde be obedyent vnto the court of Rome, & stand & obey *Fol. xv.* all thyng ȳ the same court woll adiuge hym[2]; vpō whiche promyse so made, the legat sent knowlege vnto ȳ pope[3], & had cōmaūdement from hym, that he shuld bynde ȳ kynge to theyse artycles folowynge. First, that he shuld peasybly suffre the fore namyd master Stephan Langton to entre his lande, & to enioy the archebysshoprych of Cauntorbury, with all profettis and frutis belongynge to the same; secōdaryly, ȳ he shulde, in lyke maner & fourme, resayue the pryour of Cauntorbury, & his munkis, w̄ all other before tyme exyled for the archebisshoppis cause, & not, at any tyme here after, vex or punysshe any of the sayd parsones, spirituall or tēporall, for any of those causes; thyrdly, that he shulde restore vnto the sayde archebysshop, & to all the other, all such goodys as were before tyme takyn frō any of them, by his officers, sen the tyme of this varyaūce growyng; and fourthly, that he shuld yelde vppe into the handys of the pope[4], all his ryght and tytle ȳ he had vnto the crowne of Englonde, with all reuenuse, honours, & profettis, belongynge to the same, as well tēporall as spirituall, & to holde it euer after, bothe he & his heyres, of the pope[5] & his successours, as feodaries of ȳ pope[6]. And whan theyse artycles were graunted, & the lordys of ȳ lande sworne to the mayntenaūce of the same, the kyng knelynge vpō his knees, toke the crowne from his hede, & sayd theyse wordis folowynge to the legat, delyueryng hym the crowne, "Here I resygne vp ȳ crowne of the "realme of Englande & Irelande, into the popis handys[7], Innocent the thyrde, & put me hole in his mercy and ordynaunce[8]." After rehersayll of which wordis, Pandulph toke ȳ crowne of the kynge, & kepte the possessyon thereof. v. dayes after, in token of possessyon of ȳ sayd realme of Englāde; and when the sayd. v. dayes were expyred, ȳ kynge reassumyd the crowne of Pandulph, by vertue of a bande, or instrument, made vnto the pope[9], the

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] *The margin of the* edit. 1542. *has this passage, as a guide for the reader.* "The great misery that this prynce was in, beyng so oppressed wyth the tyrannye of the B. of Rome, that monstrous and wycked beast." [3] handes of. edit. 1542. [4] *The editor of the edition of* 1542. *says, in the margin, against this passage,* "What chrysten hert, but must wepe and lament to here "a crysten prynce to be thus abused."

which,

which, at length, is sette out in ỹ cronycle of Englande, & other placis; whereof, the effecte is, ỹ the sayd kynge Iohn & his heyres shulde euer after be feodaryes vnto the fore nanyd pope[1] Innocent, and to his lawfull successours, popys of Rome[2]: and to pay yerely to the Churche of Rome. a. M. marke of syluer, that is to saye, for Englande. vii.C. marke, & for Irelande. CCC. marke, and if he or his heyres, fayled or brake ỹ payment, [Li. 7. ca. 33.] that than they shuld fayle of theyr ryght of ỹ crowne. But Policronycō sayeth. vii.C. marke for Englande, &. CC. marke for Irelonde, for the which sūmes, after the affirmaunce of that auctor Guydo, the money callid Petyr pens, are at this day[3] gatheryd in sondry placis of Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xiii.

Iosne fitz Pet[4].

Henry fiz Aleyn. Anno. xiii.

Iohñ Garlonde.

IN this. xiii. yere of kyng Iohñ, & moneth of Februarii, master Stephā Langton, archebysshop of Caūtorbury, with the other exylys, landyd in Englande, & after, ī processe of tyme, met w̄ the kyng at Wynchestre, where the kynge resayued hym with a ioyous coūtenance, & after there was assoyled of ỹ sayd archbisshop; but yet was not the enterdiccīō of the lande released, for so moche as the kynge at that day, hadde not made restytucion vnto the archebisshop and other, accordynge to the thyrde artycle, before rehersyd; for the which, as testyfyeth the Englysshe booke, he payed vnto the archebisshop. iii.M. marke, and to the other, by partyculers. xv.M. marke. After which thynges perfourmyd and done, the enterdyccion was adnullyd & fordoon, in the moneth of Iuiii, and yere of our Lorde. xii.C. & xii., when it had standyn in force full. vi. yeres, & asmoch as from the. xxvi. daye, vnto the moneth of Iulii, whiche is vpon. iii. monethes and odde dayes.

Anno Domni. M.CC.xiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xiiii.

Raufe Eylande.

Henry fiz Alwyn. Anno. xiiii.

Constantyne le Iosne.

IN this. xiiii. yere of ỹ kyng, for that he wolde not holde ỹ lawes of seynt Edwarde, and also for dyspleasure ỹ he bare to dyuerse of them, for they wolde not fauour hym agayne the pope[5], and for other causes, whiche here be not manyfestyd, the kynge fell at dyssencion w̄ his lordis, in so moche, that great people were reysed on eyther parties; but for the kyngis partye was the stronger, the erle of Chestre, with ỹ other lordis, tooke the cytie of Londō, & helde them therein a certeyne of tyme. The whiche Cronycle of Caxton, with other, sayē, that a great parte of this varyaunce atwene kynge Iohñ and his baronys, was, for because the kynge wolde, without skylfull doom, haue exyled the sayde erle of Chester, whiche to hym had no cause; but, for so moche, as before seasons, he had often tymes aduysed the kyng to leue his cruelnesse, and his accustomyd auowtry, the which he exercysed with his brothers wyfe, and other: but by the meanys of the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, and other prelatys, a peace was takyn for a whyle. In this yere, vpō the day of ỹ translacion of seynt Benet, or the. xi. daye of Iulii, a great parte of the borough of Southwerke, was brent; and in the moneth of August next folowyng, was great and moche harme done in London, by fyre. Soon after, to stablysshe ỹ peace atwene the kynge and his lordys, an assemble was made on Berhā downe; where the kynge and the lordys mette, with great strengthe vpō eyther syde, where a charter or

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. [2] Bishops of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] were. edit. 1559. [4] Peter. MS.
[5] byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [6] MS.

wrytynge

wrytynge was deuysed & made, and there sealyd by the kyng, so that the barony was with it contentyd, and departyd in peasyble wyse, euerych man into his countrey.

[Anno Domini. M.CC.xiiii.] [Anno Domini. M.CC.xv.][1]

Martyne Fiz Alis.

Roger Fiz Aleyn. Anno. xv.

Petyr Batte.

IN this. xv. yere of the kyng, the peace, which, in ỹ last yere, was atwene kyng Iohñ and his baronyes agreyd, was, by the kynge, vyolate and broken; wherfore the lordis assemblyd to them great powers, and made sharpe cruell warre vpon the kyng, in so moche that than he was constrayned to sende into Normandy for ayde and socoure, and into other places. Then shortlye after came into Englande a Norman knyghte, whiche broughte with hym a company of Normannys, Flemmyngys, and Pycardys. This knyghte or capytayne was namyd Fowkys de Brent, ỹ which, with his company, was so cruell, that he destroyed aswele relygyous housys as other, and wroughte moche harme to the lande, and put the lordys to the worse. Then the kynge made Fowkys, and other of his cõpany, wardeyns of castellys and strõge holdis in Englonde. The lordys seynge the kynge perseuer in his wronge, and wolde in no wyse be enduced to holde his owne grauntys, but to execute all thyng after pleasure, and no thynge after lawe nor iustyce, cast in theyr myndys how they myght brynge the lande in a better rule or state, and by one aduyce and consent wrote vnto Phylyp, kyng of Fraũce, that he wolde send some noble man into Englande, & they wolde rendre the lande vnto hym. In this whyle kynge Iohñ causyd to be drawyn and hangyd at London, one Piers, of Pomfrette, for the sayd Petyr had monysshed dyuerse[2] myssehappys that shuld cõme to hym for his vycyous lyfe, and also for he hadde often warned kynge Iohñ that he shuld reygne but. xiiii. yeres; the whiche he ment without payinge of trybute: for after he was becõmyn feodary to the pope, he thought the popẽ reygned as pryncipall lorde of the lande and not he: [for the whiche, and for other malyce, he put that vertuous man to deth; of whom, in the. xxxiii. Chapitre of the. vii. booke of Polycronycon, are many vertues shewed, the whiche I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme.][3] *Fol. xvi.*

Anno Domini. M.CC.xv. Anno Domini. M.CC.xvi.

Salamon Basynge.

Roger Fiz Aleyn. Anno. xvi.

Hugh Basynge.

VPon seynt Andrewys euẽ, or the. xxix. day of Nouembre, in the. xvi. yere of his reygne, kyng Iohñ, after he had lyen a certayne of tyme with his ordynaũce aboute ỹ castell of Rowchestre, in Kent, he wan the sayd castell, & toke therin certayne gentylmen that had cõspyred a gayne hym, the whiche he sent to dyuerse prysons; & the barones helde theym together at London, abydynge the cõmynge of Lewys, sone to the Frenshe kyng, ỹ which, nere about Assencion tyde, lãdyd in Englande with a stronge army, & so came to Rochestre, & layd siege to ỹ castell, & wan it with lytle payne, for so moche as it was greatly febled with thassautis lately made by kynge Iohñ, and sen that tyme not suffyciently repayred. And whan he had wonne the sayde castell, he caused all the straungers therein takyn to be hanged, and after came to London; where certayne allyauncys and couenaũtis were stablysshed atwene the lordis and hym, and resayued of them homage, as affermyth Polycronycon: and after theyr maters atwene theym there fynysshed, he, with the lordys, departyd frome London, and gatte the castellys of Rygat, of Gylforde, and of Fernham, and from thens to Wynchestre, where the cytie was yelden vnto theym, with all the holdys and castellys there about, as Wolnesey, Odyhã, & Beaw-

[1] MS. [2] monysshed hym of dyuers. MS. [3] "For the whych and for dyuers other matters he was put to death," edit. *1542. 1559.*

mere. And about seynt Margaretis day, he, ẏ the lordis came agayn to Lōdon, at whose cōmynge, ẏ towre of Lōdon was geuen vppe to them by appoyntment, & where Roger Fiz Aleyn had, tyll that tyme, rulyd the cytie of Lōdon as Mayer, he, for so moche as he was accusyd to the lordys to be fauourable to the kyngis partye, was than dischargyd of that offyce, and one callyd Serle, Mercer, was chosen in his place, and so contynued tyll Myghelmas folowyng. In this passe tyme, kyng Iohn̄, beynge thus ouer sette with his lordis, sent messyngers to the pope[1], shewyng to hym the rebellyon of his lordis, and how they laboryd his distrucciō; wherfore the pope[1], in all haste, sent a legat into Englōde, named Gualo, or Swalo, the which, after his cōmynge, cōmaūdid Lewis to retourne into Fraūce, and laboryd, to the vttermooste of his powar, to appease the kynge and his barony; but all his labour was in vayne.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xvii.

Iohn̄ Trauers.

Wyllyam Hardell. Anno. xvii.

Andrewe Newlande.

IN this. xvii. yere of kynge Iohn̄, the warre atwene hym and his lordis styll contynuynge, he dyed of the flyxe, as testyfyeth Polycronycon, at the towne of Newerke, vpō the daye of seynt Calyxt [the pope,][2] or ẏ. xiiii[i]. daye of Octobre. How be it the Englysshe booke or cronycle sayeth, that he dyed at Sebynyshede[4], an abbey about Lyncolń, by the enpoysonynge of a mūke of the same house, the day after seynt Luke, or the. xviii. day of Octobre, and was buryed at the citie of Wynchestre: but the auctor of Polycronycon sayth, he was bowellyd at Crongthon abbey, and buryed at Worcetyr, in the myddle of the quier of mūkis, when he had reygned. xvi. yeres. vi. monethes and. iiii. dayes, leuyng after hym. ii. sonnes, Henry and Richarde, with sūdry doughters. Of this Iohn̄ it is redde that he foūded ẏ abbey of Belew, in the New Forest, in recōpensacion of the parisshe churchis which he there ouertournyd to enlarge that forest; and an abbey of blacke mūkis in the cytie of Wynchestre, where, after the sayinge of the Englysshe Cronycle, he shulde be buryed. This kynge Iohn̄ also, after some wryters, maryed one of his doughters vnto Otto, the. iiii. of that name, emperoure of Almayne, and duke of Saxony, the which helde warre agayne kynge Phylyp, of Fraunce, as in the. v. chapytre of the story of the sayd Phylyp before is declared; [which Otto, for his rapyne & extorcion done to the churche of Rome, was accursyd, and the sayde Phylyp, & also kynge Iohn̄, for theyr dysobediēce to the churche were also accursyd, the whiche warred eyther with other, so ẏ eyther of them greuyd and vexed other, to the great hynderauncis of them, and eyther of them, for the whiche consyderacion, a metrician made theyse baladis of them, as foloweth.

O q̄m̄ mirabilia, good Lord thy werkys been
In punysshement of synners, by thy myght, wondersly;
As, by olde storyes, it is playnly seen
One synner the other hath correcte vtterly.
As Aalizaunder[5], with Iulius, Pompey, and Tholomy,
Fol. xvii. And many other, which as thy scourgys were,
To punysshe synners, and themselfe also dere.

In lyke wyse nowe reder, if thou liste take hede,
And wele reuolue in mynde this history
Of theyse. iii. prynces, and loke wele on theyr dede;
Thou shalt conceyue that they dyd wyckydly.

[1] Bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] xxiiii. edit. 1559. *by mistake.*
[4] Swynyshede. MS. [5] Alexander. MS.

I meane

I meane kynge Iohñ, Phylyp, and Ottony,
Which vnto synne made them selfe so thrall,
That of pope Innocent they were accursyd all.

Wherefore God sufferyd that one the other to greue,
And warre and chase with dedlye hate and stryfe,
Gladde that one the other to myscheue,
Manassynge eche other with spere, swerde, and knyfe,
With cruell batayll durynge theyr synfull lyfe.
Wherefore I maye conclude, in factis horum,
That multa sunt flagella peccatorum.][1]

Henrici Tercii.

HEnry, the thyrde of that name, & eldeste sone of kyng Iohñ, a chylde of the age of. ix. yeres, began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande the. xx. daye of the moneth of Octobre, in ỹ yere of our Lord. M. CC. &. xvi., and the. xxxvi. yere of the seconde Phylyp, yet kynge of Fraũce. Ye haue before harde of the cruell warre which Lewys, sone vnto the Frẽshe kyng, with thayde of the baronys of Englande maynteynyd agayne kynge Iohñ; the whiche, after the deth of the sayd Iohñ, contynued: for as moche as thã some of the lordys, that before hadde maynteyned the quarell of Lewys, nowe forsoke hym, and toke party with this Henry as theyr naturall and soueraygne lorde: whereof the chefe were the erlys of Penbroke and of Chester, the which, with theyr retynewe, helde sharpe warre ẅ the sayde Lewys and his affynytie, the whiche entendyd to haue been kynge of Englande, by reason of couenauntys made with certeyne lordys of the lande· when he was firste sent for by theym. Wherefore the foresayde erlys, with the other of theyr partye, to make theyr partye the strenger, proclaymed the sayde Henry kynge of Englande vppon the foresayd. xx. daye of Octobre thorough the cytie of Lõdon, and in all possyble haste after, made prouysyon for his coronacion, so that, vpon the daye of Symonde and Iude next ensuynge, he was crownyd at Glowcetyr of Petyr, than bisshop of Wynclester: Lewys, ỹ Frẽsh kynges sone, beynge than at Lyncolne. In whiche yere stoode styll as gouernoure of the cytie of Lõdon tyll Mychelmas next folowynge [the forenamyd][2]

[Li. 7. ca. 34.]

Prima coronacio Hẽrici tercii.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xviii.

Iohñ Trauers[3].

Wyllyam[4] Hardell. Anno. i[5].

Andrew Newlande[6].

SO soone as ỹ kynge was crownyd, commyssyons were sent ouer[7] in his name into all placis of Englãde to gathere strength of men to withstande the fore namyd Lewys, & to put hym, with his Frenshemen and other alyauntys, out of the lãde, which then had, vndre theyr rule & custody, thecastellys of Berkhãstede, of Hertforde, & dyuerse other. And for this Lewis wolde not sease of his warre, and returne into Fraunce: therfore ỹ foresayde Gwalo or Swalo, the popys[8] legat, accursyd hym, first by name, and after all suche as hym maynteynyd or fauoryd in this warre agayne kynge Henry. Then ỹ forenamyd erlys, accompanyed with Wyllyam, erle marshall of Englande, Wyllyam le Bruyz, erle of Ferrys, with many other, yode to Lyncolne, & wan ỹ towne vpon ỹ straungers, where was slayne a Frensheman, callyd erle of Perchys, ẅ many other soul[illegible]: and there was takyn of Englysshe men, Serle, erle of Wynchestre, and Hũfrey [illegible] Herforde, ẅ

[1] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] MS. [3] Benet le [illegible] James. edit. 1559. [5] *From this year to* 1253 *there is a variation in th*[illegible] *and the printed copies, the former placing each mayor a year later*. [6] owte. MS. [8] Byshope of Romes. edit. 1542.

dyuerse other of name. And in this whyle, Lewelyn prynce of Walys, for that he ayded the partye of Lewis, was accursyd, and his lande enterdyted. After the towne of Lyncolne was thus wonne frome the Frenshe men, Lewys, with other parte of his souldyours, drewe towarde Lōdon, for so moch as worde was brought to hym, that his father had sent to hym a new cōpany[1] of souldyours, ȳ which shuld lāde in Englāde shortly: trothe it was, ȳ suche an ayde of souldyours was made by the Frenshe kynge, and cōmytted to a capytayne, which, in the cronycle[2], is named Eustace the mūke, the which was encoūtryd vpō the see, with a capytayne, or mayster of the. v. portis, callyd Hubert at Burgth, & gaue to hym batayll, & scoumfyght hym at lengthe, & sent ȳ hede of the sayd Eustace vnto ȳ kyng. Whā Lewys harde of these tydynges, and cōsyderyd howe daylly his strength mynysshed, he was more inclynable vnto peace; so that, in cōclusyon, he toke money, as [Li. 7. ca. 54.] sayeth Polycronycon, & yelded vp his castellys & strēgthis which he helde, & after was assoylyd, & so retournyd into Fraūce: but of this money ȳ Lewis resayued, ben dyuerse oppynyons, for the Englysshe boke namyth it a thousande marke, and ȳ Frenshe boke sayth. xv. M. marke.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xix.

Thomas Bokerell.

Robert Serle[3]. Anno. ii.

Raufe Gylande.

Fol. xviii. IN this. ii. yere of kynge Henry, whē the lāde was voyded of the straungers, thē inquisicions were made, to knowe what persones had fauoryd ȳ partye of Lewys agayn the kynge; of the which the kynge pardonyd many of the laycfee, but ȳ spirytuell were put to suche fynes, ȳ they were compellyd to lay that they myght to pledge, to please the kynge: and ouer that, to sue to Rome to be assoylyd. And this yere, Ranulphe, erle of Chester, for concyderacions hym mouynge, tooke his iournay into the holy lande; but one cronycle sayeth, he tooke that iourney vpon hym, for so moche as he had, cōtrary his allegeaunce, made homage vnto Lewys aboue named, and for malyce whiche he bare towarde kynge Iohn, entendid, at the tyme of that homage doynge, to haue made ȳ sayd Lewis kyng of Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xix. Anno Domini. M.CC.xx.

Benet le Ceytur.

Robert Serle. Anno. iii.

Wyllyam Blounde.

IN this thyrde yere of kynge Henry, a parlyamēt was holdyn at Lōdon, by vertue wherof was graūtyd to the kynge. ii.*s.* of euery plough lande thorough Englande, which was for the charge ȳ he before had with Lewys warre. [Also this yere, seynt Thomas of Cauntorbury was translatyd, in the. vii. day of this moneth of Iulii; the which was doone w̄ so great a charge vnto mayster Stephan Lāgton, then archebisshop of Caūtorbury, that the charge therof was not contentyd many yeres after the deth of the sayd Stephan.][4] And this yere, as witnessyth Polycronycon, kyng Henry began the newe werke of the churche of Westmynster, which, after that sayinge, shuld be in the. xii. yere of his age.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xx. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxi.

Iohn Wayle.

Robert Serle. Anno. iiii.

Iosne le Spicer.

[Li. 7. ca. 54.] IN thi[illegible] Scottys, maryed dame Iane, or Iohan, ȳ suster of kynge [illegible]t harme done in Englande, by vyolence of a whyrle

[1] MS. *adds* "Mercer." [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

wynde,

wynde, and fyry dragons, [and sprytys,][1] were seen fleynge in the ayer. And this yere, were proclamacyons made in London, and thoroughe Englande, that all straungers shuld auoyde ỹ lande by Mychelmasse next folowynge, excepte suche as came with marchaundyse, and to make sale of them vnder the kynges saufe conduyt; whiche was chefelye made to avoyde Fawkys de Breut[2] and his complycys, whiche kepte the castell of Bedforde, agayne the kynges wyll and pleasure. And in this yere, was kynge Henry secondaryly crowned at Westmynster, the. xvii. daye of Maii: and this yere, the cytie callyd Damas, in the holy lande, was by crysten men gottyn from the Turkis: and this yere came out of the holy lande into Englande, Ranulph, erle of Chester, and beganne to buylde the castellys of Charteley, and of Bestone, & after he buyldyd ỹ abbey of Delacresse, of the whyte ordre; for charge & coste of whiche sayde castellys and abbay, he toke toll thorough all his lordshyp, of all suche as passyd that wey with any chaffre or marchaundyse.

Secūda coronacio Hēnici tercii.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxii.

Rycharde Wymbeday.

Robert Serle. Anno. v.

Iohñ Wayell.

IN this. v. yere of kynge Henry, at Oxynforde, was holden a generall counsayll of ỹ bysshoppis & clergy of this lāde; in tyme of which counsayle, a man was takyn, ỹ whiche shewyd hym selfe to be Cryste, and prechyd many thynges of erroure, whiche ỹ clerkis at those dayes vsyd, & to approue that he was Iesus ỹ sone of God, and that he was comyn to refourme those errours and other, he shewed the caractys & tokyns of woundys in his body, handys, and feete, lyke to Iesus ỹ was naylyd on the crosse. Then he was apposyd, and approuyd a false dissymuler: wherefore, by dome of ỹ counsayll, he was iudged to be nayled to the crosse, and so delyueryd to ỹ executours, the whiche, at a place callyd Alburbury, naylyd hym to a crosse tyll he was dede. Also this yere, ỹ kyng layed syege vnto the castell of Bedforde, that Fowkys de Brent hadde so longe holdyn by strength. This siege began vpon the euyn of thassencyon of our Lorde, and so contynued tyll our Lady Day Assumpcyon, in which passe tyme, many stronge assawtys were made, to the great losse of men on bothe partyes; but fynally, about this fore sayde daye of Assumpcion, it was takyn by fyerse assawte: wherein was taken the forenamyd Fowkys de Brent, and vppon the noūbre of. lxxx. souldiours, whereof ỹ more parte were put to deth, & the sayd Fowkys, after he had lyen a certeyne of tyme in pryson, was, for his fynaunce, delyuered and flemyd the lande. And in this yere came the frere mynors fyrst into Englande: theyse are gray freres of the ordre of seynt Fraunces, which, if that be trewe, they shuld cōme into Englande, vpon. vi. yeres before the deth of seynt Fraunces: for after the affyrmaunce of the auctour of Cronyca Cronycarū, Iacobus Phylyppus, & other, seynt Fraūces dyed ī ỹ yere of grace. xii.C. and. xxvii.[3], and that ordre was firste cōfermyd of Honoryus, the thyrde of that name, pope[4] of Rome, in ỹ yere of grace. xii.C. and. xxiiii. This ordre first began vnder a fewe noumbre of freris, at the cytie of Cauntorbury, and after came vnto Lōdon, and restyd them there, tyll they had an house there foūdid by Isabell, wyfe of Edwarde the seconde, as after shall be shewyd in the story of ỹ sayd Edwarde; albe it, ỹ sayde house was begunne of Margaret, the wyfe of Edwarde the firste.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxiii.

Richarde Renger.

Robert Serle. Anno. vi.

Ioseus le Iosne.

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Brent. [3] xi. hundred and. xxvii. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] byshoppe. edit. 1542.

IN.

Fol. xix. IN this. vi. yere of ỹ reygne of kynge Henry, a conspyracy was made by one Constātyne, the sone of Arnulphe, within the cytie of Lōdon; for ỹ which he was drawen and hāged, the morowe folowynge our Lady Day Assumpcion. This cōspyracy was disclosyd by a cytezyn namyd Walter Bokerell, & was so heynous and greuous to the kynge, that he was ī mynde & purpose to haue throwen downe the wallys of the citie: but whan he had wele conceyued that the personys whiche entendyd this conspiracy, were but of the rascallys of the cytie, and that none of the hedis or rulers of the same were thereunto consentynge, he aswagyd his ire & greuouse displeasure, which he entēdyd towarde the cytie.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxiiii.

Rycharde Ioyner.

Robert Serle. Anno. vii.

Thomas Lamberde.

IN this seuenth yere, Iohñ, kynge of Ierusalem, came into Englande, and requyred ayde of kynge Henry, to wyñe a gayne that holy cytie; but he returnyd with small comforte. And about this tyme, Iohñ, ỹ sone of Dauyd, erle of Angwysshe, in Scotlāde, & nere kynbysman vnto Ranulph of Chester, maryed ỹ doughter of Lewelyn, prynce of Walis, as it were for a fynall accorde atwene the sayde Lewelyn and Ranulph euer after to be cōtynued.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxv.

Wyllyam Ioynour.

Richarde Reynger. Anno. viii.

Thomas Lambarde.

IN this. viii. yere of kyng Hēry, a parlyament was holden at , where, amōge other thyngys, the lordis and barony of the lande graūted vnto the kynge & to his heyres, kyngys, the warde & maryage of theyr heyres, which dede was after of lernyd men callyd iniciū malarum[1], that is to meane, the begynnyng of illis or of harmys.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxvi.

Iohñ Trauers.

Richarde Renger. Anno. ix.

Andrewe Bokerell.

IN this. ix. yere of kyng Henry, Frederyke, the seconde of that name, and emperoure of Almayne, for his contumacy agayne ỹ churche of Rome, was accursyd of ỹ. ix. Gregory, thā pope[2]; wherfore, soone after, he toke. ii. cardynallys and dyuerse prelattys, as they were goynge to a generall counceyll, kepte by ỹ sayd pope[3] at a place callyd Spolete, a cytie of Italye.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxvii.

Roger Duke.

Rycharde Renger. Anno. x.

Martyn fiz Wyllyam.

IN this. x. yere of ỹ reygne of kynge Henry, ỹ plees of the crowne were pletyd in the towre of London. In this yere also, as wytnessyth the Frensh Cronycle, dyuerse souldyours whiche, as to this daye, kept certayne castellys in the countie of Poytiers, as ỹ castell of Mōstruell, the castell of Niort, and the townys of Angely and of Rochell, were by the Frenshe kyng so assautyd ỹ they were constrayned to geue theym ouer to

[1] malorum. [2] Bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] Byshoppe. edit. 1542. 1559.

the Frenshe kynge, than beynge Lewys, ŷ nynthe of that name, or, after some wryters, the. viii. and sone of Phylyp the seconde.

Anno Domini. M.CC. xxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxviii.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno. xi.

Henry Cobham.

IN this. xi. yere of this kynge Henry, the shyrewyke of Lōdon & of Myddlesex were lettyn to ferme, for the sūme of. CCC.*li.*[1] by yere, to the sheryues of London; and the. xviii. day of Februarii, the same yere, was graunted by the kynge, that all werys in Thamys, shuld be plucked vppe and dystroyed for euer. And the. xvi. day of Marche folowynge, the kynge graūted by his charter ensealed, that ŷ cytezens of Londō shulde passe toll fre thorough all Englāde, and if any cytezyns were constrayned in any cytie, borough, or towne, in Englande, to pay any tolle, that than the sheryues of London, to attache any man commynge to London, of ŷ sayd cytie, borough, or towne, where suche toll was payed, and hym & his goodys to with holde & kepe, tyll the cytezeners of London be restored of all suche monaye payed for the sayde tolle, with all costis and damagys susteyned for the same. And, the. xviii. daye of August folowynge, the kynge graūtyd to the sayd cytezyns of London, wareyn, that is to meane, that ŷ cytezyns haue free lybertye of hūtynge, certayne cyrcuyte aboute London. And in this yere, the towne of Lymosyn, with dyuerse holdys in Pyerregot & Aluerne, in the countie of Guyan, were geuen vppe to ŷ fore namyd Lewys, ŷ Frenshe kynge; wherefore, the kynge sent ouer his brother Rycharde, erle of Cornewayll, shortly after, which lādyd at Burdeaux, with. CCC. saylles[2].

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxix.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno. xii.

Henry Cobham.

IN the begyñynge of this. xii. yere of kynge Henry, Mayster Stephan Langton, archebysshop of Caūtorbury, dyed, and ŷ great deane of Pawlis, Mayster Richarde Wethyrshed was his successour. And in this tyme, the fraūchyse & lyberties of the cytie were by ŷ kyng cōfermyd, & to euerychе of the sheryues was graūtyd, to haue. ii. clerkys and ii. offycers, wout moo; & to ŷ cytezyns of London was also grauntyd thys yere, that they *Fol. xx.* shulde haue and vse a comon sale[3]. And in this yere, Rycharde, erle of Cornewayll, besyegyd the towne of seynt Machayr in Guyan; and whan he had wonne it by strength, he than layed his siege to the towne of Rochell, tyll it was restoryd by ŷ marshall of Fraūce.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxix. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxx.

Walter Wynchester.

Roger Duke. Anno. xxiii.

Robert fiz Iohñ.

IN this. xiii. yere of kynge Hēry, vpon Trynyte sōdaye, or after an other auctor vppon Whitsondaye, whyle the bysshop of Lōdon was at hyghe masse in seynt Paulys Churche of London, fell sodeynlye suche thyckenesse & derkenesse of clowdys, and therewith suche stenche, & tēpest of thunder and lyghtenyng, that the people there assemblyd, voydyd the churche, & the vycarrys & chanons forsoke theyr deskys, ŷ the bysshop remayned in great fere alone, excepte a fewe of his menyall seruauntys & suche as attendyd vpon hym at the aulter. [Also, in this yere, the fame of that blessyd womā, Elyzabeth, doughter to ŷ kyng of Hungry, began to spred; the whiche, before and after the deth of

[1] iiii.C.*li.* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] foure hundred sayles. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] seale.

hir

hir husbōde, Langraue, duke of Thorynge in Almayne, shamyd not, for Crystis sake, to wesshe ȳ sorys & bylis of lazars, & of other poore men, besyde other manyfolde dedys of charyte: by vertue of which blessyd and vertuous lyfe, she, by hyr lyfe thoroughe the power of God, shewed many and dyuerse myracles, amonge the whiche, by hir prayer. xvi. men were from deth to lyfe arreryd, & a man borne blynde, to syghte restoryd: wherefore, by Gregory, the. ix. of that name, & pope of Rome, she was amonge the college of the blessyd noumbre of sayntys ascrybed and alowed, & commaūdyd hir feaste to be halowed, ȳ. xiii. kalendas of December.][1]

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxx. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxi.

Richarde fiz[a] Wyllyam.

Roger Duke. Anno. xiiii.

Iohn̄ Wodbourne[3].

IN this. xiiii. yere of ȳ kynge, was ordeygnyd by the mayre and rulers of the cytie of London, that no shryue of ȳ cytie, shulde contynewe lenger in offyce than one yere; whereof the cause was, that dyuerse of them, by cōtynuaunce of theyr offyce, dyd dyuerse extorcyons, & toke brybys of vytellers, with other defautis which were founde, and prouyd preiudyciall & hurtfull to the comon weale of the sayde cytie.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxii.

Mychaell of seynt Elene.

Roger Duke[4]. Anno. v.

Walter Denfelde[5].

IN this. xv. yere, the kynge had graūted tyll hym a quindecym or fyftene of the temporaltie, and a dyme and an halfe of the spyrytualty, to recouer his landis loste in Normandy, Guyan, & Poytean. And in this yere Hubert of Burgth, that, at this day, was chefe iustyce of Englande, had greuyd or dyspleasyd the kyng in suche wyse, that he was cōpellyd to flee the kynges syght; but he was so strayghtly pursued, that he was takyn ī a chapell of Brētwood in Essex, and so cast in pryson at ȳ kyngys commaundement: but after, by laboure of the [blessyd][1] bisshop Edmūde, of Pountenay, he was recounceylyd to the kynges fauoure, when he had been prysoned vpon. iiii. monethes, and exylyd vpon. xiii. monethes. And this yere, was doon great harme in Lōdon, by fyre; the which began in an house of a wydowe, namyd dame Iane Lambert.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxiii.

Henry Eldementon[6].

Andrewe Bukerell[7]. Anno. xvi.

Gerarde Batte.

IN this. xvi. yere, kynge Hēry, vpō complaynte brought before hym by the frendis of Lewelyn prynce of Walys, ȳ Wyllyam le Bruce, or Brunze, shuld conspyre agayne the kynge; or after sōme, for he kepte vnlaufully the wyfe of the fore namyd Hauylyn[8], he was, after lōge prysonement, hangyd. And this yere dyed Ranulph, erle of Chester, Lyncolñ, and Huntyngedon. His systers sone named Iohn̄, sone vnto the erle of Angwyshe, as before, in the. vii. yere of this kynge is declared, was his heyre, and helde that lordshyp after hym: this Iohn̄, of moost wryters, is callyd Iohn̄ Scotte, for so moch as his father was a Scotte. This foresayde Ranulphe had no chylde, albe it he hadde. iiii systers, ȳ eldest hyght Molde, or Mawde, and was maryed to Dauyd, erle of Angwysshe, and was moder to ȳ foresayde Iohn̄ Scotte; the seconde was namyd Hawys, and was maryed vnto the erle of Arūdell; the thyrde, Agnes, was ioyned to therle of Derby, and

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.
[a] Walter. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[3] Wonbourne. ibid.
[4] Andrew Bukerell. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[5] Walter de Duffeel. MS.
[6] Henry de Edmonton. MS.
Endelmartyr. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[7] *The* MS. *adds* "Peperer."
[8] Lewellyn. MS. *and* edit. 1559.

the.

the. iiii. namyd Mabely, was maryed vnto the erle of Wynchester, callyd Robert Quynacy. This Ranulphe dyed at Walyngforde, and was buryed in the Chapter house of the munkys at Chester, and ordeygned the fore namyd Iohñ Scotte to be his heyre, for that he wolde not haue so noble a lordshyp rūne amonge, or to be deuydyd atwene so many dystauys. And this yere, dyed Master Rycharde Wethyrshed, archebysshop of Cauntorbury, whose successoure was [blessyd][1] Edmunde of Pountenaye.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxiiii.

Symonde fiz Marre[2].

Andrewe Bukerell. Anno. xvii.

Roger Blounte.

IN this. xvii. yere of ŷ reygne of kyng Henry, the fore named Edmunde of Poūtenay, or of Abyndon, was sacred archebysshop of Caūtorbury. He was named of Pountnay, for so moche as he was buryed at Poūtnay in Burgoyn: & he was named Edmūde of Abyndon, by reason he was borne in Abyndon. This [blessyd][1] man, as before in the. xv. yere is shewed, reconcyled Hubert of Burth to the kynges grace, and causyd hym to be restored to his former offyce, as chefe iustyce of this lande. In this yere also, ŷ kynge began the foūdacyon of the hospytall of seynt Iohñ, wout the estgate of Oxynforde; in whiche yere also, fyll wunderfull wether, as thunder & lyghtnynge, vnlyke vnto other, and therupon folowed an erthquake, to the greate fere of the inhabytauntes of Hūtyngdon, and nere there aboute. *Fol. xxi.*

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxv.

Rafe Aschewy.

Andrewe Bukerell. Anno. xviii.

Iohñ Norman.

[Li. 7. ca. 35.]

IN this. xviii. yere of kyng Henry, the Iewys dwellynge at Norwyche, were brought to fore the kynge at Westmynster, to āswere to a cōplaynt made agayn them, by one callyd Iohñ Toly of the sayde towne of Norwyche, ŷ they shulde stele a chylde, and it circumsysyd of the age of a yere, and after kepte the same chylde secret, to the entent to crucyfye it in despyte of Crystys relygyon; but howe the mater was folowed, or howe so the Iewys acquytynge them selfe by theyr answere, trouthe it is that they returnyd vnpunysshed. And in this yere, Frederyke, the secōde of that name, and emperoure of Almayne, maryed the syster of kynge Henry, namyd Isabell, as testyfyeth Polycronyca.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxvi.

Gerarde Batte.

Andrewe Bukerell. Anno. xix.

Robert Ardell[3].

IN this. xix. yere, ŷ morowe after seynt Hyllary, or the. xiiii. daye of Ianuary, Edmūde, archbisshop of Caūtorbury, spowsyd ŷ kynge and Eleanoure the doughter of therle of Prouynce, in his cytie of Caūtorbury, and in the vtas of the sayde Hyllary, she was crownyd at Westmynster, as quene of Englande; where, in the feelde by Westmynster, lying at ŷ West ende of ŷ church, there was kept royall solēpnyte and goodly iustys, by the space of. viii. dayes. And the same yere, the statute of Merton was enacted, which is to meane certayne actys made by acte of a parlyament, holdyn by the kynge and his lordys & comons at ŷ towne of Merton, where, amōge other actis, was ordeyned a remedy for wydowys that were defraudid of theyr douars, & also howe heyres within age shulde be entreatyd, and remedyes for such as were stolyn or with holdyn, contrary the gardeyns wyllys; but more certaynly it was ordeyned at ŷ parlyament, at Merton fore sayde, which

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Symon fyz Mary. MS. [3] Robert Hardell. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

was holden the. xxx. yere of this kyng, in the morowe folowynge the daye of seynt Martyne, or the. xii. day of Nouembre.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxvii.

Henry Cobham.

Andrewe Bukerell. Anno. xx.

Iurden Couentre.

IN this. xx. yere of kyng Hēry, Iohñ Scotte before named, erle of Chester, dyed without issue male; wherfore the kynge consyderynge the great prerogatyues belongynge to that erledome, gaue vnto his doughters other possessyons, and toke the erledome into his owne hāde. This Iohñ dyed at Dorondale, and was buryed amonge his antecessours at Chester, as affyrmyth Polycronycon, and also he sayth that he dyed without any chylde, and that ỹ foresayd exchaunge was made with ỹ fore namyd sisters of Ranulph before expressyd in the. xvi. yere of this kynge.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxviii.

Iohñ Thesalan[1].

Andrewe Bukerell. Anno. xxi.

Gerarde Cordewaner[2].

IN this. xxi. yere, Octoboon, a legat of the. ix. Gregory, [& pope,][3] came into Englande, & ordeyned many good ordenauncys for the churche, but not all to the pleasure of the yonge clergye of Englonde; wherefore as he, one day, passyd thorough Oxynforde, the scolars sought occasyon agayne his seruauntys, and fought with theym, & slewe one of the same, and put the legatte in soch feere, that he, for his sauegarde, toke the belfray of Osney, and there helde hym, tyll the kynges mynystres commynge from Abyndon, with strength medelyd with fayre wordys, delyuervd hym, and conueyed hym after with a competente company vnto Walyngforde, where he accursyd the mysdoers, and punysshed them in suche wyse, that the regentis & masters of that vnyuersytie, were lastly compellyd to goo barefote, thorough Chepe to Pawlys at Lōdon, and there to aske of hym forgyuenes, and hadde that trespace, with great dyffyculte, forgyuen.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxix.

Iohñ Wylhale.

Richarde Renger. Anno. xxii.

Iohñ Goundresse[4].

IN this. xxii. yere, a false clerke, of the foresayd vnyuersyte of Oxynforde, which feyned hym selfe madde, & beforetyme had espyed the secrete placys of the kynges courte, came by a wyndowe towarde the kynges chambre, at his maner of Woodstok, entendynge to haue slayne the kynge; but he was espyed by a woman, and takyn, and so con-
Fol. xxii. ueyed to Couentrye, and there arreygnyd of ỹ dēde, where, after lawfull prouys of his malycyous entente made, he, for the same, was there drawyn & hangyd. And in this yere, vpō the euyn of seynt Botolph, or the. xvi. daye of Iunii, was borne at Westmynster Edwarde, that after was surnamed Longeshanke; [this, after his fadre, was kynge, and reputed of many wryters, for the firste and eldest sone of kynge Hēry, but he was the seconde, and Edmūde, that is of wryters surnamed Crowke backe, was the first & eldest; albe it he was put by by ỹ meane of his fadre for his deformytye, the which hath ben cause of great dyssencyon sen that tyme in Englande, for this Edmunde lefte after hym dyuerse

[1] Iohn Colynson. MS. Colesan. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [2] Gervays of Cordwayners-strete. MS. [3] *Omitted in edit.* 1542. [4] Iohn Vondresse. MS.

chyldren, and after one cronycle, thre sonnys by his last wyfe, named Blāche, that is to saye, Thomas, Henry, and Iohñ.][1]

Anno Domini. M.CC.xxxix. Anno Domini. M.CC.xl.

Remonde Bengley[2].

Wyllyam Ioynour. Anno. xxiii.

Rafe Aschewy.

IN this. xxiii. yere of kyng Henry, before the tyme of the eleccyon of the shryues of London, one Symonde fiz Mary, whiche before in the. xvii. yere of the kyng, had been in ŷ offyce, & had purchacyd a cōmaundement of the kynge dyrectyd to the mayre and rulers of ŷ cytie, that they shuld cause hym to be electe to that offyce, for that yere folowynge; but the mayre with the hedys of the cytie, [cōsyderynge that commaundement to be a derogacion vnto the lybertyes of the cytie,][3] withstoode it, and chase the forenamyd Rafe Ashwy, & put the sayd Symonde by, for ŷ whiche he complaynyd hym to the kynge. Then the kyng sent for the mayre, and the rulers of the cytie, and had vnto theym many wordys of dyspleasure, for the dysobeyinge of his commaundement; and farthermore dyschargyd Wyllyam Ioynoure, which ŷ yere was agayne chosen newlye to be mayre, for the yere folowynge, and chargyd the cytezyns to procede to a newe eleccyon for theyr mayre, which then, to satysfye the kynges pleasure, chase Gerarde Batte; by whose meanys & good polycy, ŷ sayd mayre with the cytezyns demeanyd them so wele to the kynge, ŷ they opteyned his gracious fauour, & causyd the foresayd Symonde to fayle of his purpose, and was not after admyttyd to that offyce tyll he had submytted hym to the rule of the mayre and rulers of the same cytie; the which Symōde be haued hym so well after, that he was admytted for an alderman: but, in short processe after, he demeanyd hym so ille and so cōtraryouslye vnto the weale & good ordre of ŷ cytie, that he was dyschargyd of his aldermanshyp, and dyschargyd from all rule and counceyll of the cytie, as in the. xxxiiii. yere of this kyng folowinge is towchyd.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xl. Anno Domini. M.CC.xli.

Iohñ Gysors.

Gerarde Batte[4]. Anno. xxiiii.

Mychaell Tony.

IN this. xxiiii. yere of kyng Hēry, seynt Pawlys churche of London was newely halowyd. And the great Chaan of Tartharys, before, in the seconde yere of kynge Iohñ, myndyd or towchyd of theyr begyñyng, in this yere, after he had from the Turkys wonne moche of the Eest lādys, he sent an hooste into the lāde of Hūgry, the which helde the people of that coūtrey so short, that, as witnessyth the auctor of Policronyca and other, [Li. 7. ca. 25.] they were cōstrayned of necessite to ete theyr owne chyldren, & other vnlefull metys: but ŷ auctor of Cronyca Cronycarū sayth, that this mysery fell to the people of Hūgry, in ŷ yere of our Lord. xii.C. &. xxi., which, after that sayinge, shulde be in ŷ fyfthe yere of this kynge.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xli. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlii.

Iohñ Vyoll.

Remonde Bengley[5]. Anno. xxv.

Thomas Duresyne[6].

IN this. xxv. yere of kynge Henry, Gerard Batte was agayne chosen mayre for this present yere, and after whose eleccyon he was by the worshypfull of the cytie, cōueyed

[1] *The whole of this is omitted in the* edit. of 1533. 1542. & 1559. *The Museum MS. adds, at the close,* "Thomas; is he that was aftir namyd seynt Thomas of Lancaster, byhedid of Edward of Carnarvan."
[2] Reyner de Bongey. MS. *and* edit. 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *The* MS. *adds* "Vintener." [5] Reyner de Bungay. MS. [6] Thomas Durham. MS.

vnto Woodstoke, and presentyd after ŷ custome vnto the kynge; but the kynge, enfourmyd of his laste yeres dealynge, by suche as ought to hym no good wyll, sayde ŷ he wolde not admytte hym to ŷ offyce tyll such tyme as he came to Westmynster, with which answere the sayde Gerarde with his cōpany returned vnto London. It was not longe after or ŷ kynge came to Westmynster, where, accordyng to theyr dutye, the cytezyns of London agayn awaytyd vpō ŷ kynge to knowe his pleasure, where the kynge callyd before hym the sayd mayre, and after certayne questyons to hym put, he causyd hym to be sworne in his presence: after which oth to hym geuyn, ŷ kynge chargyd hym, by vertue of the same, that he shuld not take of the bakers and bruers and other vytellars of the cytie. xl.*li.*, whiche other of his predecessours, and also he, that laste yere, hadde takyn; and also that he, incontynently after his cōmynge to London, shulde restore vnto the sayde vytellers, and other cytezyns, all such money as he had w̄ wrōge in that precedynge yere takyn of the comynaltye of the cytie. But for the sayd Gerarde alleged for hym certayne cōsyderacyons, besechynge the kynge to pardon hym of that restytucyon, the kynge, in dyspleasure, swore a great othe that he shulde not, that yere, be mayre, nor at any tyme there after; and so the commons, certyfyed of the kyngys pleasure, chase, in his place or stede, Reyner de Bungay. And, this yere, the kynge yode into Walys, whereof herynge Dauyd, than prynce of Walys, mette with the kyng at Ruthlande, and submytted hym to the kynges grace. [Also this yere ŷ blessyd Edmūde, archebysshoppe of Cauntorbury, beynge at Poūtnay, in the prouynce of Burgoyne, dyed, and there was buryed, and was after trāslatyd into the same place within. x. yeres after his deth, by cōmaundement of Innocent the fourthe, than pope of Rome, because of his manyfolde myracles which God shewyd for hym after his deth. All be it in his legende it is shewyd that he dyed twentye
Fol. xxiii. myle frome Pountnaye, callyd Soly, & was after buryed & trāslatyd at Pountnay. Of this blessyd man Polycronycō shewith many vertues, in the. xxxv. Chapitre of his. vii. boke, which here I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme.][1] And, this yere, one Wyllyam of the Marshe was at London, for treason, drawen and hangyd. This yere also were aldermen first chosyn within the cytie of London, whiche then had the rule of the cytie & of the wardis of the same, and were thā yerely chaūgyd, as nowe the shryuys be chaungyd.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xlii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xliii.

Iohñ Fiz Iohñ.

Remonde Bongley[2]. Anno. xxvi.

Rafe Asshewy.

IN this. xxvi. yere of kynge Henry, Bonyface was sacred archebysshop of Caūtorbury. And, this yere, the kyng with a fayre cōpany sayled into Normandy, whiche vyage, as sayth ŷ Frēshe Cronycle, was made by the styrynge of a Frenshe man, namyd erle of the Marche, for so moche as the sayde erle refusyd to do homage vnto Alphons, brother vnto Lewys, ŷ. x. of that name, and surnamyd seynt Lewis, thā kyng of Fraūce. This Lewis, the yere before, hadde maryed his sayd brother vnto the doughter of the erle of Tholouse, and had gyuen to his sayd brother the erledome of Poytean, with all the landys of Aluerne, by reason whereof he wolde haue causyd the sayd erle of March to haue doon homage vnto the sayd Alphons for suche landys as the sayde erle helde of the sayd erledome of Poytiers. But for ŷ sayd erle of Marche knewe wele that the ryght of Guyan belōgyd to the kynge of Englonde, he therefore, and for other allyaūcis made atwene kynge Hēry and hym, refusyd the doyng of that homage; and after came to kynge Henry, and excyted hym to make warre vpō the Frēshe kyng, by reason whereof the kyng made prouysyon, & so landyd with a stronge power at Burdeaux. After the affyrmaūce of the Frēshe boke, this erle of ŷ Marchis had maryed the mother of kynge Henry. Than it folowyth, in this whyle

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Reyner de Bongay.

the Frenshe kyng warryd vpon the lādis of the erle of Marche, and had wonne. ii. castellis of his, namyd Founteneys and Vyllers, with dyuerse other, whiche I passe ouer. And when he had betyn downe some of them, & some stòryd with newe souldyours, he than went vnto a castell namyd Maucoune, and brake a brydge after hym; for so moch as he was warnyd ŷ the kynge of Englande was nere vnto hym. At the sayde brydge was a lytle skyrmysshe, but lytle harme was there doon. Than the Frensh kyng toke the waye ouer ŷ ryuer of Tharent toward Taylbourgth, wastyng and distroyinge the coūtrey as he went, and so forth towarde the towne callyd Saynces; and kynge Henry with his hooste made towarde hym in all that he myght. In kepynge this course, the vawarde of the kynge encountryd with the erle of Boleyne, whiche was vpon the Frenshe kyngys partye. That season, the erle of Seynces bare the baner of the erle of Marchis, beynge in the vawarde of ŷ kyng. Atwene theyse. ii. erlys was sore fyght, so that many a man vpon both partyes was slayne, amonge the which the sayd erle of Saynces was slayne. Thē came on bothe strengthis vpon eyther syde, soo that bothe kyngys foughte in that batayll, and great slaughter of men was vpon both sydys; but, in the ende, the Frenshe men were victours, & toke prysoners. xxii[1]. men of name, as knyghtis, and of hygher degre, and. iii. clerkis of great fame and rychesse, besyde other, to the noumbre of. v. C. of meane people, as wytnessyth the Frenshe boke. But of theyse men of name, nor yet of ŷ ryche[2] clerkys none is named, nor yet shewed what good they payed for theyr raunsome, wherefore me lyste to wryte no farther of this great victory. Albe it that the sayde boke sayeth farther, that kynge Henry, for fere, turnyd backe vnto Burdeaux, and there made meanys to the kynge of Fraūce for a peace; but of all this fynde I no worde in the Englysshe Cronycles. Then the erle of Marches, by meane of his sone, was recoūcyled vnto the Frenshe kynge, and restoryd to his landys, excepte. iii. castellys, whiche were named Mesplyne, Cretayne, and Estardye, the whiche the Frenshe kynge retaynyd in his owne possessyon. And soone after came vnto the Frenshe kynge, the lordys of the castellys of Myrabell, & of Mortayng, submyttynge theym also vnto the kyngys grace, besechynge of hym pardon that they had so to his hygh displeasure-fauouryd his enemye, ŷ kyng of Englande. And after came in dyuerse other lordys & capytaynys, so that he was ī possessyon of all the countrey of Guyan and Poytean, vnto the ryuer of Gyroūde. I haue rehersed the more of this Cronycle of Fraunce, to the entent that the reders may wele apperceyue the pryde and boost[3] of the Frenshe men; for in all theyr wrytynge, when they cōme to any mater that soundyth any thynge to theyr honour, it is wrytten in the lengest and mooste shewynge manoure to theyr honoure and worshyp. But as I haue sayde before, in the. v. Chapytre of the story of the. ii. Phylyp, kynge of Fraūce, if it sounde any thynge to theyr dishonoure, than shall it be abreuyatyd or hyd, that the trouthe shall not be knowen: & that appereth well here by theyr owne wrytynge; for in the. vii. yere of kynge Iohn it is shewyd howe Phylyp the seconde, than kynge of Fraunce, had wonne all Normandy and Guyan: and yet, at thys daye, this kynge Lewis warryd agayne in the same countrey: so that they euer tell of ŷ wynnyng, but they towche no thynge of the agayne losynge. Then it folowyth in the story, when kynge Henry hadde, as before is sayde, concludyd the foresayde peace, of the whiche, by myne auctoure, is no terme sette, the kynge retournyd into Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xliii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xliiii.

Hugh Blount.

Rafe Ashewy. Anno. xxvii.

Adam Basynge.

IN this. xxvii. yere, ŷ kynge returned from Burdeaux into Englōde; and, this yere, the plees of the crowne were kept ī the towre of London. And, this yere, Gryffyth, which was

[1] xx. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] iii. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] boldnes. edit. 1542. 1559.

sone

sone of Lewelyn, lately prynce of Walys, entendynge to haue broken pryson, fell ouer the walle of the inner warde of the towre of London, and brake his necke.

Fol. xxiiii.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xliiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlv.

Raufe Spycer.

Michell Tony. Anno. xxviii.

Nicholas Batte.

IN this. xxviii. yere of kyng Henry, [as testyfyeth Polycronycon, a Iewe dygged the grounde in a place in Spayne, called Tholeet, to the entente to make hym a more larger vyne yerde; where, in tyme of his dyggynge, he fande a stone, closyd on all partyes, but, for he perceyued it to be holowe, he brake the stone, and founde therein a boke as bygge as a sawtyr, & leuys all of tree. This boke was wryten in. iii. dyuerse languagys, in Grewe[1], in Ebrewe, and in Latyne; and the mater thereof was, of. iii. worldys that shulde cõme, of the whiche he poyntyd the cõmynge of Cryste to the begynnynge of ỹ thyrde worlde, which was expressyd in this maner of wyse: "In ỹ begynnynge of the thyrde worlde, Goddys sone shall be borne of a mayde[2]." Whan the Iewe had wele beholdyn the contentys of the boke, and sawe that it cõteyned so longe tyme, as from Adam to Antecryste, and shewed many prophecies that were fulfullyd and paste, he anon renouncyd his Iudaisme or Moysen lawe, and was cristenyd, and lyued after as a cristen man.][3]

Anno Domini. M.CC.xlv. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlvi.

Robert Cornhyll.

Iohñ Gysors. Anno. xxix.

Adam Bewly[4].

IN this. xxix. yere, Nycholas Batte, contrarye the ordynaũce before in the. xiiii. yere of this kynge made, was agayn chosen shryue of London, for ỹ which, he was conuycte of periury, and soo dischargyd and punysshed. And for that Mychaell Tony, which, for this yere also, was chosen mayre, was, by deposycion of the aldermen, founde gylty in the sayde cryme of periury, therefore he was deposyd from his offyce, & punysshed; & for hym was chosen mayer, Iohñ Gysours: and for Nycholas Batte, was chosen shryue, Robert of Cornhyll. In this yere also, as testyfyeth Geffrey of Monmouth, Robert Grosehede, thã bysshop of Lyncolne, & other prelattys of the lande, cõplayned them vnto the kynge, of ỹ waste of ỹ goodys and patrymony of the churche, which dayly was wasted and mysspent by the alyaunt bysshoppys, and clerkys of this lande; of the which straũgers, one namyd Master Martyne, and nere kynnysman of Innocẽt the thyrde, [late pope][5] was one: the whiche, the kynge, by helpe of the Englysshe bysshoppys, avoydid with other lyke offendours out of this realme. [Also in this yere, the patryarke of Ierusalem sent vnto ỹ kyng, a neume of bloode, whiche was kepte at seynt Thomas of Acris, in Lõdon, tyll the yere folowynge.][6]

Anno Domini. M.CC.xlvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlvii.

Symonde fiz Mary.

Iohñ Gisors. Anno. xxx.

Lawrence Frowyke.

[IN this yere, the neuew[6] of bloode, sent before to the kyng, was, with mooste solẽpne processyon, ỹ kynge with great noumbre of his lordys beynge present, conueyed from seynt Thomas foresayde vnto Westmynster, in right solempne wyse, with processyon & other accordynge obseruauncis, to suche a relyke apperteynynge.][7] And in this yere dyed Fre-

[1] Greke. edit. 1533. [2] *The Museum* MS. *adds* "and he shall suffyr deth ffor salvacion of mankeynde." [3] *The* edit. of 1542. *and* 1559. *only say*, "I fynde no notable thynge wrytten, that was doone that presente yere." [4] Adam Bentley. MS. *and* edit. 1559. *in marg.* [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [6] neume. edit. 1533. [7] *Omitted in* edit. 1542.

deryke,

deryke, the emperoure of Almayne, whiche, as before is towchyd in the. xviii. yere of [Li. 7. ca. 36.] this kyng, maryed Isabell suster vnto the kynge; the whiche, for his rebellyon agayne the Churche of Rome, was accursyd, firste of the. ix. Gregory; and lastly of Innocēt the. iiii. he was agayn cursyd and depryued of his imperyall dygnyte, guyuynge cōmyssyon & lycence to the electours of the emperour, to chose a newe: the which were of so many myndys in theyr eleccion, that some chase the duke of Thorynge, some the erle of Holonde, and some chase the kynges brother, Rycharde, erle of Cornewayll, which causyd stryfe that endurid longe after, so that the onely emperour of Almayne, was not of all men allowyd, tyll Radulphus, duke or erle of Habspurgh in Almayne, was chosen by one assent to that dygnyte, and thereunto admytted by Gregory, the. ix. of that name, in ẏ yere of our Lorde. xii. C. lxxiii.. And so that varyaūce enduryd vpon. xxvii. yeres, to the great impoueryssbynge of Itally, and the landis of the empyre. Then, as before is sayde, this Frederyke dyed vnassoylyd, and was buryed in a cytie callyd Ferenciola, with this superscripcion vpon his toumbe.

Si probitas, sensus, virtutis gracia, census,
Nobilitas orti possent resistere morti[1],
Non foret extinctus Fredericus qui iacet intus.

Which versys are thus moche to meane in Englysshe.

If excelent[2] of wytte, or grace of good vertue,
Or nobylnesse of byrth, myght vnto deth resyste,
Than shulde this Frederyke mortall fate exchewe,
Which hym hath closyd here nowe in his cheste;
But noone of theyse may erthly man assyste,
To stryue with deth, but all must pay hym dette,
Noble and innoble there is no thynge may lette.

An other versyfyour made theyse. ii. versys folowynge, of the interpretacion of this name Frederyke.

Fre fremit in mundo, de deprimit alta profundo,
Re res rimatur, cus cuspide cuncta minatur.

The whiche may in this maner of wyse be Englysshed.

Fre fretyth this worlde, and de confoundith all
Hyghe thynges of honour, into depenesse derke.
Ri sercheth busyly the goodis generall
Of this worlde both of the laye and clerke: Fol. xxv.
Makynge no questyon in his mooste cruell werke.
And cus with swerde all thynge doth manace,
And this is[3] Frederyke all devoyde of grace.

Anno Domini. M.CC. xlvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlviii.

Iohñ Voyle[4].

Pyers Aleyne[5]. Anno. xxxi.

Nycholas Batte.

IN this. xxxi. yere of ẏ reygne of kyng Hēry, Lewys, which is surnamyd seynt Lewys, than kynge of Fraunce, with a cōuenyent hooste saylyd into ẏ holy lande, and there warryd vpō Crystis enemyes, and wanne the cytie of Damas at his firste landynge, and after taryed there from the begynne of the monyth of Iunii, to the. xxii. day of Nouembre,

[1] morte. edit. 1533. 1542. [2] excellence. MS. [3] thus lyued. edit. 1542. "And thus lyued Fredericke in the worlde for a space." edit. 1559. [4] Iohn Viell. MS. Iohn Waylle. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [5] Petir fiz Aleyn. MS.

and

and after departyd thens towarde Babylon, entẽdyng to haue layed siege to the[1] cytie; but fortune was to hym so cõtrary, that by syknesse and other casueltyes, he loste moche of his people, and, in ŷ ende, was hym selfe takyn prysoner of the Turkys, as more playnlye shall be shewyd in the story of the sayd Lewys folowynge; and, ī this yere, was a myghty erthquaue in Englãde, that ŷ lyke to it was *not* seen many yeres before.

Also this yere the kynge seasyd the fraunchyse of the cytie of London, vpon the euyn of seynt Bartholmewe, for a iudgement that was geuyn by ŷ mayre & aldermen, agayne a wydowe namyd Margaret Vyell, and cõmytted the rule of the cytie to Wyllyam Haueryll and Edwarde of Westmynster, tyll our Lady Day nexte folowynge; at which season the mayre and shryues were agayne to theyr offycys admytted.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xlviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.xlix.

Nycholas Ioy[2].

Mychaell Tony. Anno. xxxii.

Geffrey Wynton[3].

IN this. xxxii. yere of the kynge, the wharfe of Lõdon callyd Quene Hythe, was takyn to ferme by ŷ comynaltye of the cytie, to paye yerely therefore. l.*li.*; the which was than commytted to the shryues charge, and so hath contynued euer sen that tyme to this daye; whereof the profytis and tollys are so sore mynysshed, that at this day it is lytle worth ouer. xx. marke, or. xv.*li.* one yere with another. And this yere fell great dystemperaũce of wethyr, in suche wyse ŷ the grũde was bareyne vpon the same, and other myshappys folowed anon thereupon. And in this yere, whan the matier fore namyd of Margaret Vyell, wydowe, was wele examyned, the iudgement thereof was founden good and trewe; wherefore the cytezyns enioyed theyr lybertyes without interupciõ: albe it the kynge was with theym some what agreuyd, for so moche as they, at his requeste, wolde not exchaũge with the abbot of Westmynster such lybertyes as they had in Mydlesex[4] of ŷ kynges graunte for other to be had in other placys.

Anno Domini. M.CC.xlix. Anno Domini. M.CCl.

Rafe Hardell.

Roger fiz Roger. Anno. xxxiii.

Iohñ Tosalane[5].

IN the. xxxiii. yere of kyng Hẽry, ī ŷ moneth of Octobre, dyed Robert Grosthede, bisshop of Lyncolñ: he was the maker of the booke callyd Pety Caton, & many other. This Robert, for so moche as the. iiii. Innocent, [pope,][6] greuyd ŷ Church of Englande w taskys & paymentys agayne reason, he therfore sent vnto hym a sharp pistle. This pope[7], than gaue vnto a chylde, a neuewe of his, a chanonry, which fell voyde in the churche of Lyncolne, and sent the chylde vnto ŷ bysshop, chargynge hym to admytte ŷ sayd chylde, and to sette hym in his place; but this bysshop boldlye denayed the resseyt of the chylde, and wrote vnto ŷ pope[7] that he wolde not, nor shulde receyue suche to the cure of sowle, ŷ coulde not rule them selfe. Therefore this Robert was somoned to appere before the pope[8], and thereupon accursyd; than he appealyd from Innocentis court, vnto Crystys owne trone. [Than, after the deth of this Robert, as the pope laye in his bedde at his rest, one appered to hym in clothynge of a bysshoppe, and sayd to hym, "Aryse wretche and cõme to thy dome," & after smote hym with his crosse vpõ the lefte syde. Vpõ the morne after the pope was founden dede, & his bed all blody. But of this is no thynge in the Cronycle or story of Innocent. After ŷ saying of Polycronycon, this bysshop Grostchede, shuld dye in the. xxxvii. yere of this kynge Henry, the whiche sayinge

[1] that. MS.
[2] Nicholas fiz Iocii. MS.
[3] Godfrey Wynchester. MS.
[4] Middylsex.
[5] Iohn Toleson. MS. edit. 1542. 1559.
Tolesan. edit. 1559. in margin.
[6] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.
[7] Innocent.
[8] Byshope of Rome. edit. 1542.

agreith

agreith bettre with the story, excepte that the sayde pope lyuyd after the deth of the sayde bysshop. vi. yeres.][1]

Anno Domini. M.CC.li. Anno Domini. M.CC.lii.

Humfrey Basse.

Iohñ Norman. Anno. xxxiiii.

William fiz Richard.

IN this. xxxiiii. yere, was an excedyng wynde, the which, in sūdry placis of Englāde, dyd great harme, whiche was in the begynnynge of this yere, vpon the daye of Symon and Iude. [About this tyme, in ỹ duchye of Burgoyne, as testyfyeth Fasciculus Tēporū, and other, an hyll remouyd from his propre place and glode by many a myle, & lastly ioyned hym vnto other hyllys; in the whiche glydynge or ronnyng the sayd hyll oppressyd or slewe. v.M. people.][2] And this yere, Symon fiz Mary, aldreman of London, for his dysobedyence and euyll counceyll that he gaue vnto Margaret Viell, before the. xxxi. yere of this kynge touchyd, with other secret labours and matiers entendyd by hym to the hurte of the cytie, was dyschargyd of his aldremanshyp, & put out of the counceyll of the cytie.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lii. Anno Domini. M.CC.liii.

Laurence Frowyk.

Adam Basynge. Anno. xxxv.

Nycholas Batte.

IN this. xxxv. yere of kyng Henry, began the frere Augustynes to buylde, or inhabyte them in Walys, i a place callid Woodhouse. And this yere maryed kynge Hēry his doughter Mary, or, after some wryters, Margaret, vnto Alexander kynge of Scottis, at the cytie of Yorke, and dyd receyue homage of the sayd Alexander for the kyngedome of Scottis, or for ỹ prouynce of Scotlāde, in lyke maner as many of his progenytours had done dyuerse and many tymes before, as in this werke, both before this tyme and also after is shewed. *Fol. xxvi.*

Anno Domini. M.CC.li. Anno Domini. M.CC.lii.

Wyllyam Durham.

Iohñ Toleson. Anno. xxxvi.

Thomas Wymborne.

IN this. xxxvi. yere, ỹ kyng graunted vnto the shryues of London that they shulde yerely be allowyd of. vii.*li.* for certeyne pryuylegys, or groūde, belōgynge to seynt Pawlys church; the which, at this day, is allowyd by the baronys of the kyngys exchekyr to euery shryue whan they make theyr accompte in the offyce of the Pype. Also this yere was graunted by the kynge for ỹ cytezyns more ease, that where before tyme they vsyd yerely to present theyr mayre to ỹ kynges presence in any suche place as he than were in Englande, ỹ nowe, from this tyme forthwarde, they shuld, for lacke of ỹ kynges presence beynge at Westmynster, present theyr mayre so chosen vnto the baronys of his exchekyr, and there to be sworne and admytted as he before tymes was before the kynge.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lii. Anno Domini. M.CC.liii.

Iohñ Northampton.

Nycholas Batte. Anno. xxxvii.

Richarde Pycarde.

IN this. xxxvii. yere, the water of the see, about ỹ day of seynt Pawlyn in the monyth of Ianuarii, roose of suche heyghte that it drownyd many vyllagys and housys, nere vnto it in dyuerse placys of Englande. And this yere, ỹ kynge, the quene, and syr Edwarde,

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] William fiz Rychard. edit. 1559, *in marg.*

his sone, with Bonyface archebysshop of Cauntorbury and dyuerse other nobles of the realme, sayled into Normandy, and taryed at Burdeaux a certayne of tyme; but of theyr dedys, or cause of theyr saylynge thyther, is no mencion made in the Cronycle of Englonde; howe be it in the Frenshe boke it is shewed, ŷ the cause was to ioyne Edwarde the kynges sone vnto the syster of ŷ kyng of Spayne by maryage. This yere also, the water of Thamys sprange so hygh that it drownyd many housys about ŷ waters syde, by mean wherof moche marchaundyse was perysshed and loste; and this yere the cytezyns had graũted of ŷ kyng, ŷ no cytezyns shulde paye scauage or tolle for any bestis by them brought, as they before tymes had vsed.

Anno Domini. M.CC.liii. Anno Domini. M.CC.liiii.

Robert Belyngton[1].

Richarde Hardell[2]. Anno. xxxviii.

Raufe Aschewye.

IN this. xxxviii. yere, by procurement of syr Richarde erle of Cornewayll, (for dyspleasure which he bare towarde ŷ citie, for exchaũge of certayn groũde to the same belongynge,) the kynge, vnder coloure that ŷ mayre had not done due execucion vpon the bakers for lackynge of theyr syzis, seasyd the liberties of the cytie; that is to be vnderstondyn, that where the mayre and comynaltie of the cytie, had, by the kyngys graunt, ŷ cytie to ferme, with dyuerse customys and offycys, for astymed and asserteyned sũme of money, nowe the kynge sette in offycers at his pleasure, the which were accomptable vnto hym for all reuenues and profyttes ŷ grew within the sayd cytie. But within. iiii. dayes folowynge the feest of seynt Edmunde the bysshop, or by the. xix. daye of Nouembre, ŷ cytezyns agreed with the sayde erle for. vi.C. marke; after whiche agrement w hym cõcludid, they soone after were restoryd vnto theyr lybertyes. This yere, syr Edwarde, the kynges sone & heyre, was maryed vnto Eleanoure ŷ kynges syster of Spayne: and in the Crystmas weke, the kynge landyd at Douyr, and the quene with hym, with many other lordys. Whan the kynge was comyn to London he was lodgyd in ŷ Towre, where he sent for to come vnto hym the mayre & the shryues, with whome he resonyd greuously for ŷ escape of one callyd Iohñ Gate[3]; this Iohñ hadde murdred a pryoure allyed vnto the kynge. The mayre layde the charge of this mater from hym vnto ŷ shryues, for so moche as to them belongyd the kepynge of all prysonys within the cytie, so that the mayre retournyd home, and the shryues remayned there as prysoners, by the space of a monyth after or more; & in theyr placys and for theym were chosyn, Stephan Oystergate and Henry Walmoode: but howe the olde shryues passyd out of the kynges daunger, I fynde not.

Anno Domini. M.CC.liiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lv.

Stephan Oystyrgate.

Rycharde Hader[4]. Anno. xxxix.

Henry Walmoode.

IN this. xxxix. yere, in ŷ feest of seynt Etheldrede, dame Eleanoure, wyfe vnto the kynges sone syr Edwarde, came vnto Lõdon, where she was honorablye resayued of the cytezyns, and the cytie rychelye curteyned & garnysshed with dyuerse ryche clothes, where the kynge was present at hir cõmynge, and she was honorably conueyed thoroughe the cytie, to seynt Iohñs without Smythfeelde, and there lodgyd for a whyle, but after she was remouyd vnto Sauoy. It was not longe after, that the kynge seasyd the lybertyes of the cytie, for certayne money whiche the quene claymed for hir ryght of the cytezyns; so
Fol. xxvii. that about seynt Martynes tyde, in Nouẽbre, they gaue vnto his grace. CCCC. marke, and then were restoryd to theyr sayd lybertyes, and the kynges vnder treasourer dys-

[1] Bylton. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [2] *The Museum* MS. *adds* "Draper." [3] *The* MS. *says* "for the escape of oon callid Iohn of Froom, lately escapid owte of the gayole of Newegate." [4] Hardell. MS.

dyschargyd, the whiche, for the tyme, was made custos or keper of the cytie. In the feest of seynt Scycyle, or the. xxii. daye of Nouembre ensuynge, were brought vnto Westmynster. lxxx. &. xii.[1] Iewys frome Lyncolne, the whiche were also accusyd of the crucyfying of a chylde at Lyncolne, in the despyte of Crystys relygyon, which Iewis were after sent vnto the Towre of London; of the whiche, in processe of tyme after. xviii. were conuycte and hangyd, & the tother remayned longe after in pryson. In the vygyll of seynt Andrewe, syr Edwarde, the kynges sone, came to Lōdō from beyonde ỹ see, and ỹ kynge of Scottys, with the quene his wyfe, came in the somyr season vnto the kyng to his manour of Woodstoke, where he desportyd hym a season, & after retournyd into Scotlande, leuynge his wyfe with hir modyr tyll she were lyghted of chylde; and vpō the day of ỹ decollacion of seynt Iohn̄, ỹ kynge, ỹ quene, and the quene of Scottys came to Lō-don, where they were honorably receyued, and so cōueyed vnto Westmynster.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lv. Anno Domini. M.CC.lvi.

Mathewe Bokerell.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno. xl.

Iohn̄ Mynoure.

IN this. xl. yere entryd the lande dyuerse lordys of Almayne, the whiche in Crystmas weke, vpon the daye of the Innocentys, made homage vnto syr Rycharde, erle of Cornewayll, and brother to ỹ kyng; the whiche as then stoode kynge of Almayne, and of Romayns. And, the Thursday nexte folowynge, he departyd from the kynges courte, and sped hym with his wyfe and syr Henry his sone vnto ỹ see syde, and after tooke shyppyng in Iarnesaye, the. xxvii. daye of Apryll, and landed at Dordreth in Holande, the firste day of Maii next ensuyng, & vpō Assencyon Daye after, he was crownyd kyng of Romayns, in ỹ cytie of Aquysgranū. This yere, vpon the firste day of Auguste, the kynge toke his iournay towarde Walys, for to subdue Lewelyn the sone of Gryffyth, the whiche with his Welshemen rebellyd agayne the kyng; for so moche as syr Edwarde his sone, to whom he had lytle before geuen the erldom of Chester, wolde haue chaungyd some of theyr skyttyshe cōdycyons. And for to brynge his purpose the better about, he sent for an army of souldyours into Irelande, and taryed for theyr commynge at his castell of Genocke[2]; but the yere passyd farre on or his people were gatheryd, so that by thaduyce of his lordys, he strēgthed there certayne castellis, and retournyd for that yere into Englande. And about the feest of ỹ Natyuyte of our Lady, a concorde and a peas was concluded, atwene the Londoners and the abbot of [the Holy Crosse of][3] Waltham, the whiche hadde bene in suyte many yerys before, for certayne dystressys takyn by thabbottis offycers of the Londoners, whan they came with theyr mercymonyes vnto the fayre of Waltham; where as nowe it is agreed that all suche dystressys shulde be restoryd, & if any were perysshed or loste for longe kepynge, that than the abbot to content and pay to the partyes the value in money of such dystressys so perisshed or loste, & that ỹ cytezyns shulde enioye the lybertyes of ỹ fayre euer after without paying of any tollage[4] or tolle.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lvii.

Richarde Ewell.

Richarde Hardell. Anno. xli.

Wyllyam Ashewy.

IN this. xli. yere, and begynnynge of ỹ same, was foūdyn, in the kynges warde robe at Wyndesore, a byll or rolle closyd in grene waxe, & not knowē from whens it shuld comme; in the which rolle was conteyned dyuerse artycles agayne ỹ mayre and rulers of the cytie of Lōdon, and that by theym the comynaltye of the cytie was greuouslye taskyd and wrongyd, which byll was presented at lengthe to the kynge: whereupon he anone sent

[1] Cii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] Brecknocke. edit. 1559. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1559. [4] Tallage.

Iohñ Mancell, one of his iustycys, vnto Lõdõ; & there in ŷ feest of ŷ cõuersyon of seynt Pawle, by the kynges auctoryte, callyd at Pawlys crosse a folkmoot, beynge there present, syr Rycharde de Clare erle of Glowcetyr, and dyuerse other of the kynges counceyll; where the sayd Iohñ Mancell causyd ŷ sayd rolle to be redde, before the comynalty of the cytie, and after shewyd to ŷ people that ŷ kynges pleasure and mynde was, that they shulde be rulyd with iustyce, and that the lybertyes of the cytie shuld be mayntenyed in euery poynt; and if the kynge myghte knowe those parsonys, that so hadde wrongyd the comynaltye of the cytie, they shulde be greuouslye punysshed, to the exaumple of other. And that doone, the sayd Iohñ Mansell chargyd the mayre that euery aldreman in his warde, shulde, vpon the morowe folowynge, assemble his wardemote, and that all those wardemootys shuld assemble in one place and chose of theym selfe, without any counsayll or aduyse of any of theyr aldremẽ., xxxvi. personες, and theym to present before the lordis & hym, at the same howre of the nexte daye in the bysshoppis paleys at Pawlys. Then, vpõ the morow, all thynge was doone accordyng to his cõmaũdement; and whẽ the sayd. xxxvi. personys were presentyd before ŷ sayde Iohñ Mansell, Henry Baa, iustycys, and other, the sayde Iohñ sayde vnto theym that they vpon theyr othe shulde certyfye all suche persones as they knewe gyltye in the artycles before vnto the commynaltye shewed[1]; whereunto the sayde. xxxvi. cytezyns answeryd, that it was cõtrary theyr lybertyes to be sworne so many for any mater of trespas atwene the kynge and any of his cytezyns; wherefore they requyred a sparynge, with whiche answere the sayde Iohñ Mansell beynge dyscontentyd, warnyd them to appere before the kyngys counceyll at Guyldehall, vpon the morowe folowynge, where they kepte theyr daye; and thyther came the sayde iustycys, Iohñ Mansell, and Henry Baa, syr Henry Wengham, chaunceler of
Fol. xxviii. Englande, Phylyp Louell, vnder tresorer, and dyuerse other of the kynges counceyll. Thã the sayd Iohñ Mãsell exortyd ŷ sayd personys to be sworne, by many meanys, as he ŷ other day, had doon; but all was in vayne, for they excusyd theym alwaye, that it was contrary theyr othe and lyberty of theyr cytie; wherefore the kynges cõceyll departyd from the hall, in partye dyscontentyd, and shewyd vnto the kynge the demeanoure of the sayde cytezyns. Vpõ the enyn of the Puryfycacion of our Lady, the mayre beynge warnyd that the kynge shulde come to Westmynster, he, with the more parte of the aldremen, rode vnto Knyghtbrydge, and houyd there to salute ŷ kynge, & to knowe his forther pleasure; but whan ŷ kyng came nere that place, and harde of theyr beyng there, he sent vnto them a squyer of howsholde, and chargyd theym that they shulde not presume to come in his syght, with wiche message they, beynge greatly dyscomfortyd, retournyd home to the cytie. Afterwarde, in ŷ octauys of the Puryfycacion of our Lady, retournyd frome the courte, Mychaell Tony and Adam Basynge, the which before were sent by the mayre, to suche frendys as they hadde in the courte, to knowe the cause of the kynges hyghe dyspleasure; the whiche broughte[2] that the kynge was wele myndyd vnto the cytie, but he was in full purpose to haue such personys chastysed, that hadde oppressyd the comynaltye of the same. Vpon the morowe folowynge, came vnto the Guyldehall, Iohñ Mansell, with other of the kynges cõceyll, the which, to the people there assemblyd, shewyd many fayre & plesaũt wordys; amonge the whiche, he declaryd, that the kynges mynde & wyll was, to correcte all suche personys as had oppressyd the comynaltye of that his deryste belouyd cytie, and askyd of the commons, whether they wolde be agreable vnto the same; the whiche incontynentlye, many such as knewe lytle what the mater ment, cryed, withoute dyscressyon, "ye, ye, ye," noothynge regardynge the lybertye of the cytie. And after the graunt thus hadde of the comons, the sayd Iohñ Mansell dyscharged the mayre, shryues, and chaumberleyne, of theyr offycys, and delyuerȳd the custodye thereof vnto the constable of the Towre, and put in the roume of ŷ shryues, Mychaell Tony[3], and Iohñ Audryan, and ouer that, all rollys of towlys and

[1] *The* MS. *adds* "and in that rolle conteynyd." [2] brougth relacion, MS. [3] Tovy. MS.

tallagys

tallagys before made were delyueryd vnto the sayde Iohñ Mansell, the whiche he there sealyd and rodelyuered[1] them vnto the chaumberleyne. When the cõmons had beholdyn all this busynesse, they retournyd vnto theyr housys all confusyd. This mater thus orderyd, the sayde Iohñ Mansell with dyuerse of the kynges coũceyll, kepte theyr courtys daylye, the Sondayes excepte, tyll the firste Sondaye of Lent, the whiche, that yere, was the. xxv. daye of Februarii, callynge before hym. xii. wardys of the cytie; of the whiche. xii. wardys, of euerychc of theym was takyn thre men, soo that of those. xii. wardys. xxxvi. men were impanellyd and sworne, for to enquyre of the foresayde artycles, and what personys of the cytie hadde offendyd in theym. This courte thus kepte and holdyn at Guyldhall, noo man was callyd to answere, nor to[2] questyon put vnto any persone by the sayde enqueste, or by any other. Vpon the sayde Sonday of Lent, the mayre, aldremen, and shryuys, with the sayde enqueste and foure men of euery warde, were chargyd to appere at Westmynster, before the kynge; at whiche apperaunce, they were coũtyrmaundyd, tyll vpõ the nexte morowe: at whiche season, they, cõmyng into ŷ kynges exchekyr, fande syttyng there the erlys of Glowcetyr, and of Warwyke, Iohñ Mansell, Hẽry Baa, iustycys, the cõstablys of the Towre, the custos of the cytie[3], and dyuerse other of the kynges counceyll. Than was callyd by name, Rafe Hardell, that yere mayre, Nycholas Batte, Nycholas fiz Iosne, Mathew Bokerell, Iohñ Tolesham, and Iohñ le Mynoure, aldermen. Than sayde Iohn Mansell, that the kynge, by his lawys and inquysycyon of the cytezyns of the[4] cytie, hadde foundyn them culpable, that they hadde wrongyd and hurte the comynaltye of his cytie, by dyuerse meanys, as by the sayde inquysycyons - peryd, and fourthwith causyd it to be redde before theym: and whan the more parte therof was redde, he sayde vnto them, "Thus maye you see, that the comynaltie of the sayde cytie hath been by you greuously oppressyd, and by your meanys and counceyll, the comon weale of the same dystroyed; as by alterynge of the tollys and other good auncyent customys, turnynge them to your[5] synguler auauntage and lucre." All whiche maters the sayde Rafe and his companye denyed, and that the comons was not by any suche meanys by theym nor noon of them, greuyd or hurte, and that they offryd to be iustyfyed and iudgyd by the lawe and customys of the cytie. Then Henry Baa, iustyce, askyd of theym, whether they wolde byde the aduẽture of the enquery, that they had harde redde before; or ellys stande vpõ the sayinge of the other wardys, that yet hadde not been sworne, but they kepte theym to theyr firste answer. Thã Iohñ Mansell frayned of the mayre, what was theyr lawe and custome? The mayre answeryd and sayde, that for trespace of a cytezyn doone agayne the kynge, he shulde defende hym by. xii. of the sayde cytezyns; and for murdre or sleynge of a man, by. xxx. cytezyns; & for trespace agayne a straũger, by the othe of. vi & hymselfe. Thã after many reasons made by the sayde Iohñ Mansell, & also by the mayre & his aldremen, daye was geuen to them to apere vpõ ŷ morowe before ŷ kyng and his counceyll. Vpon the daye folowynge, the kynge with many of his lordys, syttynge in the sayd exchekyr, the foresayde inquysycyon was redde; and that doone, the mayre and aldremen were callyd in by name, and two aldremen more, whiche before were not callyd, that is to saye, Arnolde Thedmare and Henry Walmode[6]. Whã Rafe Hardell hadde harde the kynge speke in the mater, he tooke suche feere, that he and Nicholas Batte, without farther answere, put them in the kynges grace, sauyd to theym theyr lybertyes and fraũchysys of the cytie; but the other. vi. besoughte the kynge of his ryghtwysenes, that they myght thẽ be demyd after the lawys and customys of the cytie. Thã was layde vnto theyr charge, that ouer many wrongys by them done to the kynge and the comynaltye of the cytie, they hadde alteryd the kynges beame, and orderyd it to the aduauntage of them selfe, and other ryche men of the cytie; whereunto the partyes answeryd and sayde, that the alteracion of the beame was not doone by

[1] delyvered. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] nõ. [3] "the constable of the Tour, then custos of the cytie." MS. [4] his. MS. [5] your aune. MS. [6] Walmond. MS.

theym

theym oonly, but by thaduyce and consent of. CCCCC. of the best of the cytie: for where before tyme ŷ weyer vsyd to lene his draught towarde the marchaundyse, soo that the byar hadde by that meane. x. or. xii.*li.* in a draughte to his aduauntage, and the seller so moche dysauauntage, nowe, for indyfferēcy and egalytie of bothe personys or marchauntys, was ordeynyd, ŷ the beame shulde stande vpryght, the cleffe thereof enclynynge to neyther partye, as it doth in weyinge of golde and syluer, and the byer to haue alowyd of the seller, for all thynges. iiii.*li.* onely in euery draught. After theyse reasons & other by them made, the kynge cōmaundyd that, vpon the mornynge folowynge, a folkmoot shulde be callyd at Pawlys crosse, and so that courte was dyssolūyd, and the mayre and the other retournyd to London. Vpon the morowe, ŷ folkmoot beynge at Pawlys crosse assemblyd, theyse. vi. aldremen heryng the murmuracion of the cōmon people, and knowynge that the aldremen, nor the worshypfull of the cytie, shulde haue lytle or no saynge in this mater, ferynge theyr cause, yode into[r] a chanons house of Pawlis, where, at that tyme, the sayd Iohñ Mansell, and other, sent from the kynge, taryed the assemblynge of the people, and shewid vnto them that they entendyd not any lenger to plede with the kynge, but were contentyd to put them fully in the kynges grace & mercy, sauyng all way to them and all other cytezyns theyr lybertye and fraunchyse of the cytie. After which agremēt, the sayde Iohñ Mansell with the other came vnto ŷ court of folkmoot, where vnto the people was rehersyd a fayre & a plesaunt tale, promysynge to theym that theyr lybertyes shulde be hoolye and inuyolatlye preseruyd by ŷ kynge, with many other thynges, to the great comforte of the cōmon people, and lastly was axyd of them whether the lawe and custome were suche as aboue is rehersyd or noo? whereunto, lyke vndyscrete and vnlernyd people, they answeryd and cryed rabbysshelye, "nay, nay, nay," not withstandynge that the sayd lawe and custome hadde before tymes been vsyd, tyme out of mynde; but to this was nother mayre nor aldermen, nor other of the great of ŷ cytie, that myghte inpugne or make any reason for ŷ vpholdynge of theyr aūcyent lawis or customys: & noo wonder thoughe ŷ kyng were thus hedy or greuouse to ŷ cytie, for, by such euyll dysposyd & malycious people as he had about hym, ŷ lande was ille rulyd, & moche myschefe was vsyd, whereof ensuyd moche sorowe after, as ye shall here in ŷ sequele of ŷ story. Thā Iohñ Māsell callyd ŷ mayre & aldremen before hym & chargyd thē to be at Westmynster ŷ morowe folowynge, to gyue attēdaūce vpō the kynges grace. Vpon the morowe, the mayre and aldermen, taryinge the kynges cōmynge in the great halle at Westmynster; lastlye the kyng came into seynt Stephans chapell, where a season he helde a coūceyll with his lordys, & after yode into the chekyr chaūbre, and there satte hym downe, and his lordis about hym. Anon after, ŷ mayer and aldermen were callyd into the sayd chambre, and soone there after callyd by name and cōmaundyd to stande nere to the barre. Then Henry Baa, iustyce, sayde vnto the mayre and the. vii. aldremen, that, for so moche as by fourme of the kynges lawys they were founde culpable in certayne artycles, towchynge transgressyon agayne the kynge, therefore the courte awardyd that they shulde make fyne and raunsome, after the dyscrecyon of the sayde courte; but for they hadde putte them in the kynges grace and mercy, the kynge hath commaundyd the fyne to be put in respyte, that ye be not peyned so greuously as ye haue deseruyd: after whiche iugement geuyn, they knelyd downe, & then ŷ mayre with wepynge terys, thākyd ŷ kynge of his bountye and goodnesse, and besoughte hym to be good and gracyous lorde vnto the cytie, & vnto them as his feythfull subiectys; whereunto ŷ kynge made none answere, but rose streyght vppe, and so yoode his waye, leuynge theym there. Anon, as the kynge was departyd, they were all arestid and kepte there tyll they hadde foundyn suretye, and euerych alderman of theym dyschargyd of his warde and offyce, tnat they had within the cytie; but shortlye after they put in suretyes, and so retournyd heuely to London. And shortlye after was Wyllyam fiz Rycharde, by the kynges

Fol. xxix.

[r] unto. MS.

commaunde-

commaundement, made mayre, and Thomas fiz Thomas, and Wyllyam Grappysgate[1], shryuys. After this, daye by daye, the chamberlayne was callyd to accompt, before the sayde Iohñ Mansell, of all such tollys as were gaderyd in tyme of the mayraltye of Iohñ Tolesham, and of Rafe Hardell, beyng present to here the sayde accompte dyuerse of the comynaltye of the cytie, but none of the hedys: by the which accõpte, noo defawte myghte be arectyd vnto any of the fore namyd persons, cõuycte afore the kynge; by reason whereof, dyuerse of them were admytted to ŷ kynges fauoure shortly after; and restoryd to theyr offyces agayne, but not without payinge of money, whereof the certaynte is not knowen[2]. And, in this yere, whete was so scant that it was soulde at London for. xxiiii.s. a quarter, and scanter shulde haue been, if plentye had not cõme out of Almayne; for, in Fraũce and Normandy, it fayfyd in lyke wyse. By meane of this derthe and scarcytye, moche poore people dyed for hunger, and many of dyuerse coũtreys of Englande came vnto the cytie, and nere there about, for cõforte of vytayll, for it than was better chepe in London, than in many shyrys of Englande, there about[3]. And soone after was the fore named Iohñ Mansell made knyghte, & chefe iustyce of Englande.

IN this. xli. yere also, the kynge, about the feest of seynt Barnabe, in ŷ moneth of Iunii, kepte hys highe court of parlyament at his towne of Oxynforde. This, of some wryters, is namyd (in sane parliamentum,) that is to meane, the wood or madde parlyament: for, at this coũceyll, were made many actis agayn the kynges prerogatyue and pleasure, for the reformacion of the state of the land, which after proued to the cõfusyon and hurte of the lande, and dethe and dystruccion of many noble men, so that, by occasyon thereof, began the famouse stryfe, callyd, at this daye, the barons warre, wherof ensued moche myschefe, as here after shalbe shewyd and declared more at large. Than, as aboue is sayde, to auoyde the enormytees, and to refourme the euyll rule than vsyd in the lande by suche personys as daylye were about the kynge, many & dyuerse ordenaũcis were made, wherof the tenoure is sette out in the ende of this boke, whereunto the kynge, some deale agayne his wyll, with syr Edwarde his sone, and other agreed: and for theyse actys shulde be holden ferme and stable, at this parlyament was choyen. xii. peris, whiche were namyd doze pers, to whom auctoryte was geuen, by strengthe of this parlyament, to correcte all suche as offendyd in brekynge of theyse ordynauncys, and other by the sayde twelue peris after to be deuysed & orderyd, towchyng and[4] cõcernynge the same mater and purpose: of whiche. xii. peris the names ensue: first, the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, *Fol. xxx.* the bysshop of Worcetyr, syr Roger Bygotte then erle of Norff. and marshall of Englande, syr Symonde de Mountforde erle of Leycetyr, syr Rycharde Clare erle of Glowcetyr, syr Hũfrey Bothum[5] erle of Herforde, of Warwyke, and of Arundell, syr Iohñ Mansell chefe iustyce of Englande, syr Roger Mortymer, syr Hughe Bygraue, syr Petyr de Sauoy, syr Iamys Audeley, and syr Petyr de Mountforde. And for the kynges brother vpon the mothers syde, that is to saye syr Eym erle of Wynchester, syr Wyllyã de Valaũce, syr Godfrey de Lyndesey, and syr Guy de Lyndesey, wolde not assente vnto ŷ foresayde ordenauncys, they with drewe them towarde the see syde, with suche stuffe as they hadde, and wolde haue departyd the lande if they myght than haue hadde shyppyng; for lacke whereof they were fayne to retourne, and soo yode vnto Wynchestyr. But it was not longe after that they were lycẽsyd to departe the lãde with a certayn company, and a certayne sũme of money to paye for theyr costys, and theyr daye sette by Bartylmewtyde to auoyde vpon payne of imprysonment, whiche daye was by theym kepte. It was not longe after the fynysshynge of this parlyament, but that stryfe and variaunce began to kyndle atwene the kyng and the erlys of Leycetyr and of Glowcetyr, by meane of suche offycers as the sayd erlys hadde remouyd, & put other in theyr roumys; amonge the whiche, syr Iohñ Mansell was dyschargyd of his offyce, and syr Hugh Bygot than ad-

[1] Wyllyam Grapesfygge. MS. [2] not sett owte. MS. [3] in that yere. MS. [4] or. MS. [5] [Bohum.]

mytted

mytted for hym. And for the foresayd piers hard of the murmure ī the courte, ferynge that the kynge shulde be aduertyzed shortly to altre from hys promyse, therefore they, entendynge to make theyr partye the stronger, vpon the morowe folowynge Mary Magdaleyne daye, the kynge beynge at Westmynster, the erle marshall, the erle of Leyceyter, with dyuerse other, came vnto the Guyldehalle of Lōdon, where the mayre, aldremen, and comynaltye of the cytie were assemblyd, where the sayde lordys shewyd an instrument or wrytynge, at ŷ which hynge many labellys with sealys, as the kynges seale, syr Edwarde hys sonnys seale, w̄ many other of the nobles of the lande; the whiche was the contente of the artyclis whiche were ordeygned and made at Oxynforde, wyllynge the mayre and aldermen, consyderynge the sayd actis were made to the honoure of God, fydelytie vnto the kynge, and profyte of the realme, that they wolde also, in vpholdyng of the same, sette theyr cōmon seale of the cytie. After whiche requeste thus to the mayre and the cytezyns made, after aduyce & counceyll amonge them selfe takyn, desyred a sparynge of ŷ lordys tyll they myght speke w̄ the kynge, and knowe his pleasure in that behalfe; but fynallye no sparynge at that tyme myght be grauntyd, so that, in the ende, by the laboure that the lordys made, with helpe of suche sollycytours as they had within the cytie, the comon seale was put to, and ŷ mayre and dyuerse of the cytie sworne to maynteyne ŷ same, theyr allegeaunce sauyd to the kyng, with preseruacyon of the lyberties and fraunchyses, and so departed. Then, daye by day after, the sayd douze perys assemblyd at the newe Temple, in , where they kepte theyr cōsaylys and courtys for the reformacyon of the olde greuys, and remoued from the kynge dyuerse of his menyall of householde[1], and sette in theyr placys and offycys suche as lyked theym: and vpon the. ix. daye of August, proclamacyon was made in dyuerse accustomyd placys of the sayde cytie, that noon of the kynges takers shulde take any thynge within the cytie withoute the wyll of the owner, excepte. ii. tunne of wyne, which the kyng accustomably had of euery shyp cōmynge from Burdeaux, paying but. xl. *s.* for a tūne, by meane of whiche proclamacyon, no thynge was taken by the kynges offycers, but it were streyght payde fore w̄ in the cytie and lybertye of the same, which vsaunce contynued but a whyle.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lvii.
Draper.
Rycharde Hardell.

Thomas fiz Richarde.

Robert Catelyon[2].

Anno Domini. M.CC.lviii.

Anno. xlii.

IN this. xlii. yere, the kyng helde one parlyament at Westmynster, & another or ellys prorogyd ŷ same to Wynchestre; and in this yere, syr Hugh Bygotte, iustyce, with Roger Turkelay, and other, kepte his courte at seynt Sauyours, & helde there the plees callyd Itinerii[3], the whiche is to meane, the traueylynge, or the waye plees: for ye shall vnderstāde that, at those dayes, they were kepte in dyuerse placys of Englande, whyche nowe been holden at Westmynster, and iudgys ordeyned to kepe a cyrcuyte, as nowe they kepe the syzys in the tyme of vacacyon. At this sayde courte these iudgys punysshed sore baylyes, and other offycers that before hym[4] were conuycte for dyuerse trespacys, and specyallye for takynge of merceamentys otherwyse then the lawe them commaundyd, for the whyche he prysonyd theym, and after sessyd theym at greuouse fynys: also he somonyd the cytezyns of London to cōme vnto the sayde courte for tollys that they had takyn vpon the farther syde of the watyr; but it was answeryd that the tollys that they there toke were takyn lawfully, as they were redy to proue in placys and court conuenyent for the same, whiche was within ŷ precyncte of theyr lybertye: but, not withstondynge that answere, the sayde syr Hughe chargyd vpon a queste. xii. knyghtys of Surrey to enquyre of that mater and other, the whiche acquyted the sayd cytezyns, and shewyd that the sayde tolle be-

[1] howshold servants. *MS.* [2] Cateleiger. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [3] Itinerarii. *MS.* [4] theym: edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

longyd

longyd to theym of ryght. In processe of tyme after, the sayde syr Hughe, w̄ other, came to Guylde hall, & kepte his courte and plees there withoute all ordre of lawe, and contrary to the lybertyes of the cytie, and there punysshed the bakers for lacke of syze by the tūberell, where before tymes they were punysshed by the pyllery, and orderynge many thynges at his wyll, more thā by any good ordre of lawe. This yere, vpon Candelmas euyn, came vnto London from beyonde ȳ see, Richarde kyng of Almayne and erle of Cornewayll, wyth his wyfe and chyldren, whiche had ben there and takyn possessyon of that kyngdome, as before is shewyd; agayne whose commynge, the cytie of London was rychely hangyd with clothes of sylke and aras, and ioyously he was receyued of the cytezyns.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lviii.

Peperer.

Iohn̄ Gysours.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lix. *Fol. xxxi.*

Iohn̄ Adryan.

Anno. xliii.

Robert Cornehyll.

IN this. xliii. yere, the Fryday folowynge the feest of Symonde & Iude, in the parlyament holdyn at Westmynster were radde in presence of all the lordys and comynaltye, at sondry tymes, all the actys and ordenauncys before made, in ȳ parlyamēt holdyn at Oxynforde, with certayne other artycles, by the fore sayd. xii. peeris there vnto addyd: after redynge of whiche artycles there beynge reuested ȳ archebysshop of Cauntorbury, with dyuerse other, to the noumbre of. ix. bysshoppys, besyde abbotis and other, denouncyd all them accursyd that attemptyd, in worde or dede, to breke the sayde actys, or any of theym. In this parlyament also was graunted vnto the kynge a taske callyd the scutage, that is to meane. xl.*s.* of euery knyghtys fee thorough Englande; the whiche extendyd to a great sūme of money: for, after dyuerse wryters, there be in Englād, in possessyon of the spyrytualtye and of the temporaltye, or at that dayes were ouer and beyonde. lx.[1]M. knyghtes fees, which after that rate shuld extende vnto. vi.xx.M.*li.* and more; and if it shuld be gatheryd of the temporall men onely, than it shulde not amount ouer the sūme of. lxiii.M.*li.* The kynge, vpon the daye of seynt Leonarde, or the. vi. day of Nouembre, came vnto Pawlys, where, by his cōmaundement, was assemblyd the court of folkmoot; where the kynge, accordynge to the former ordenaūcys made, axyd lycence of the comynalty of the cytie, for to passe the see, and promysed there in ȳ presence of a great multytude of people that he wolde be good and gracyous lorde vnto the cytye, by the mowthe of syr Hugh Bygot, his chefe iustyce, and to maynteyne theyr lybertyes vnhurte; for the which ȳ people for ioye made an excedyng showte. Vpon the. viii. daye of Nouembre, the kyng rode thoroughe ȳ cytie towarde the see syde; and vpon the daye of seynt Bryce, or the. xiii. daye of Nouembre, he tooke his shyp, and soo sayled vnto Burdeaux: where, when he hadde taryed a season, he rode vnto the Frenshe kynge, then beyng holy Lewis, or the tenthe Lewys, vnto Parys; of whome he was honorably receyuyd, & lodgyd hym in his owne paleys by the space of an hoole weke, makyng to hym great feest, and gyuynge to hym & his ryche & many guyftes. And from thens kynge Henry roode vnto seynt Denys, where of the abbot and couent he was resayued with procession, and taryed there by the space of a moneth: in which season, a maryage was concluded, atwene Iohn̄ duke of Brytayne, and one of his doughters. And at his departynge, he gaue to ȳ abbot a cuppe of golde, and a basyn with an ewyr of syluer; and for his more consolacion, kyng Lewys assygned vnto hym a certayne lordys, and other noble men of Fraunce, to gyue attendaunce vpon hym, and to conuey hym, and to shewe hym a parte of Fraūce, with all disporte of huntynge and hawkyng, and other many pleasures of ȳ coūtrey. In which passe tyme, the Frēshe kyng assemblyd his parlyament at Parys, where he shewyd vnto his lordys that his conscyence was grudgyd, with the withholdynge of all suche landys as Phylyp the seconde wanne frome kynge Iohn̄ in Normandy; vpon the

[1] xl.M. edit. 1559.

whiche he desyred theyr feythfull and frutfull coũceyll; where, after many reasons & argumentys made, it was concludyd for a fynall concorde to be had atwene kynge Henry and hym, that if kyng Henry with the agremẽt of his lordys wolde resygne into the Frenshe kynges handes, all suche tytle and ryght as he had in the hoole duchy of Normãdy, of Angeou, Poyteau, & Mayne, for hym & for his heyres for euyr, that then the Frenshe kynge, of his great bountye and grace, shulde geue vnto the kyng of Englãde and to his heyres kynges, ŷ lordeshyps of Guyan, Angeou, and Mayne, and by ryghtfull tytle callyd euer after duke of Guyan, and euer[1] that he shuld be admytted for a pere of Fraunce. To all which condycions, as affermyth & wytnessyth the Frensshe Cronycle, kynge Hẽry, at his retourne from his dysporte, was agreable, and with concent of his barony, and in theyr presence, with also the barony of Fraunce, dyd his homage vnto the sayde Lewys for the duchye of Guyan, and after made his othe accordynge to the same, and, after great gúyftys receyued on eyther syde, kyng Henry retournyd vnto Burdeaux. Of this peace and concorde spekyth a cronyculer namyd Guydo, or Guy, & sayth that kynge Henry sayled into Fraunce, and askyd restytucion of the fore named Frenshe kynge, of all suche landys as his ayeull, Phylyp the seconde, had with extorte powar takyn from kynge Iohñ his father; but for he fande the Frenshe kynge straũge in his answere, and also had lytle truste in his lordys for to haue theyr ayde, he fell to agremẽt with the Frenshe kynge, and solde to hym all his tytle that he had in Normandy, Gascoyne & Guyan, the which extendyd to the yerely valu of. xx.M.*li.*, takynge for ŷ same tytle CCC.M.*li.* of small Turon money; wherof a. *li.* is in value, after sterlyng money, but. ii.*s.* iii.*d.* or there about, so that he shulde, after that rate, haue for his sayde tytle, after the value of sterlynge money. xxxiii.[2]M. seuen. C. and. l.*li.* In the season and tyme that kynge Henry was thus occupyed in Fraunce, dyssencyon fell in Englande atwene syr Edwarde the kynges sone, and syr Rycharde erle of Gloucetyr; for appeasyng wherof a parlyament, whiche is to meane a counceyll of his lordys, was callyd at Westmynster, whiche contynued by the space of. iii. weekys & more: to the which counceyll the lordys came with great companyes, and specyally the sayde syr Edwarde and therle of Gloucetyr, ŷ whiche entendid to haue lodgyd within the cytie. Wherefore the mayre yoode vnto the bysshop of Worcetyr, and syr Hugh Bigotte, and syr Phylyppe Basset, to whom the kynge with the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, had betakyn the rule of the lande in his absence, the whiche all went vnto the kynge of Almayne, to haue his aduyce I that matier; where it was concludyd ŷ nouther the sayde Edwarde nor ŷ erle, shuld cõme within the cytie, than there to be lodgyd, nor none that helde vpon eyther of that partyes; and forther it was prouydyd, ŷ all suche within the cytie as were of the age of. xv. yeres and aboue shulde be in harnes to watche and kepé the cytie both daye and nyghte, and that the gates shulde be kepte shyt vpon the daye, and a certayne men in harneys to kepe euery gate of the cytie. And soone after, for the sauegarde of the cytye and sure kepynge of the peace within the same, ŷ kynge of Romayns, with the sayde syr Hughe and syr Phylyp, came into the cytie, and there were lodgyd with theyr companyes, & such other as they wolde assygne, to strength the cytie if nede requyred. Than, about ŷ feest of seynt Marke, ŷ kynge came to Lõdon from beyonde the see, and was lodgyd at ŷ bysshop of Lõdõs palays: after whose commynge, by his assygnemẽt, the erle of Glowcetyr was than lodgyd within the cytie, and syr Edwarde his sone was lodgyd in his owne paleys at Westmynster, & soone after ŷ kyng cõmaundyd hym to be lodgyd at seynt Iohns,
Fol. xxxii. and all ŷ other lordys were lodgyd in other placis without the cytie, and thẽ the kyng of Romayns remoued agayn to Westmynster: in which tyme, a dyreccyon was takyn atwene the sayde partyes, and a newe assemble and parlyament assygned to be kepte at Westmynster, in the quindena of seynt Iohñ Baptyst; and for that then all thynge myght not be sette in an order, it was prorogyd vnto the feest of seynt Edwarde, at the whiche sea-

[1] over. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] xxxiiij. edit. 1542. 1559.

son,

son, all thynge was put at reste for a wyle. In this yere also, fell that happe of the Iewe of Tewkysbury, which fell into a gonge vpon the Satyrday, and wolde not, for reuerence of his sabot day, be pluckyd out; whereof heryng the erle of Gloucetyr that the Iewe dyd so great reuerence to his sabbot daye, thought he wolde doo as moche vnto his holy day, which was Sonday, and so kepte hym there tyll Monday, at whiche season, he was foundyn dede. [Li. 7. ca. 36.]

Anno Domini. M.CC.lix. Anno Domini. M.CC.lx.

Adam Brownynge.

Wyllyam fiz Richarde. Anno. xliiii.

Richarde Couentre.

IN this. xliiii. yere, soone after the feest of Symonde and Iude, the kynge kept a royall feest at Westmynster, where he made dyuerse knyghtis, amonge the whiche Iohñ duke of Brytayne, whiche had maryed one of the kynges doughters, was there made knyght; and soone after was syr Hugh Spencer made chefe iustyce. After ỹ feest of Candelmasse, the kynge cõmaundid a folmoot to be callyd at Pawlys crosse, where he in propre persone, with the kynge of Almayne, the archebisshop of Cañtorbury, and many other nobles came, where the kyng cõmañdyd vnto the mayre, that euery strypelynge, of the age of. xii. yeres and aboue, shuld before his aldreman be sworne, the day folowyng, to be trewe to the kynge, and to his heyres kynges of Englande, and that the gatis of the cytie were kepte with armyd men, as before by ỹ kyng of Romayns was deuysyd. This yere also, at a fayre kepte at North Hampton, variaunce fell atwene the Londoners and men of the towne; so that, atwene the cytezyns & them, contynuyd longe sute & plee, for a man of North Hãpton, ỹ then was slayne to ỹ great vexacion & trowble of both partyes; but, in ỹ ende, ỹ cytie had ỹ better. This yere also, aboute Ester, the baronys of the lande, with the cõsent of ỹ peris, dischargyd syr Hugh le Spẽser, and admytted for hym syr Phylyp Basset, in his rome of chefe iustyce, vnwyttynge the kyng: for which cause and other grudge, a dyspleasure began of newe to kyndle atwene the kynge and his lordes, which encreasyd moore and moore; but, by polycy of the kyng of Almayne, & soom prelatys of ỹ lãde, it was set in quyet for a whyle, hardlye to the ende of that yere. [Li. 7. ca. 37.]

Anno Domini. M CC.lx. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxi.

Iohñ Northampton.

Wyllyam fiz Richarde. Anno. xlv.

Richarde Pycarde.

IN this. xlv. yere, shortly after Alhalowyn daye, the baronys admytted & made sheryfys of dyuerse shyrys of Englãde, and dyschargyd suche as the kynge before had admytted, and named theym gardeyns and kepers of the counties and shyres; and ouer that, the baronys wolde not suffre ỹ iustyce, ỹ the kynge had admytted to kepe ỹ plees & lawys callyd Itenerarii, but suche as were of theyr admyssyon: wherew̃ the kynge was greuouslye dyscontentyd, in soo moche that, after that season, he laboured that he myght do[1] dysauull ỹ former ordenañces and statutes, and to cause them to be broken. In so moche ỹ vpon the seconde Sondaye of Lent folowinge, the kynge cõmaundyd to be red, at Pawlys crosse, a bull of the graunte of pope Vrban, the. iiii.[2] of that name, as a confyrmacyon of an other bull before purchasyd of his predecessour Alexandre the. iiii.[3] for to assoyle the kynge & all other that before had sworne to the mayntenañce of the fore sayd artycles, made at Oxynforde; and after causyd the sayde absolucion to be shewyd thoroughe ỹ realme of Englãde Walys & Irelande, guyuyng streyght charge to all his subiectys, that none be so hardy to withstande nor dysobey the sayde absolucyon:

[1] to. MS. [2] iii. edit. 1559. [3] Alexander the thyrde. edit. 1542. 1559.

and if any were foundyn dysobedyent to his commaundement, that he were streyght put in pryson, and not to be raunsomyd nor delyuered tyll the kyngys pleasure were forther knowen. About the feest of sent Albon, in the moneth of Iunii, the kynge of Almayne tooke shyppynge, and saylyd into Almayne, and the kyng at a folkmoot holdyn vpon the Sondaye after seynt Peters daye, in the moneth of Iulii, had lycence to sayle into Fraunce, and ỹ morowe after he departyd from London towarde the sees syde, with the quene and other lordys; his two sonnys, syr Edwarde and syr Edmũde, beynge at that season in Guyan. Whan the kynge had ben a season in Fraunce he retourned vnto Burdeaux, where he fell sycke; by occasyon wherof he taryed in those partyes, tyll seynt Nycholas tyde next folowynge. And in this yere, dyed syr Richard Clare, erle of Glowcetyr, and syr Gylbert de Clare, his sone, was erle after hym; to whom the father gaue great charge, that he should vpholde the fore namyd ordenauncys.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxii.

Phylyppe Walbroke.

Thomas fiz Thomas. Anno. xlvi.

Rycharde Tayloure.

IN this. xlvi. yere, in ỹ feest of seynt Martyne, or ỹ. xi. daye of Nouembre, a Iewe fell at varyaunce w a Cristen man in Colchurche in the warde of Chepe, and woũdid ỹ Crysten man within ỹ same churche; wherefore the people of the cytye in a fury, pursued ỹ sayd Iewe to his house and there slewe hym, and after fell vpõ ỹ other Iewes, and robbyd and slewe many of them. And the euen of seynt Thomas the Apostle folowynge, the kynge landyd in Englande at Douer, and came to London the Wednysdaye before. xii. daye. This yere, the froste began about seynt Nycolas daye, & so contynuyd by the space of a moneth and more so feruentlye, that Thamys was ouer froren that men passyd ouer on horsbacke: and in the same wynter, the kynges lytell halle at Westmynster, with other houses adioynynge to the same, were perysshed with fyre by the neclygence of a seruaunt of the kynges. In this yere also vnkyndenesse beganne to growe atwene the Londoners and the constable of the Toure; for that he, cõtrary the lybertye of the cytie, toke certayne shyppes passyng by the Toure with whete and other vytayll, and toke it into the sayd Toure, makynge the pryce at his pleasure; wherfore great harme had ensued, had nat been the polyce of wyse men, which shewed vnto ỹ kynges counsayll, by whose direccion the matyer was cõmytted vnto syr Philip Basset, thenne chief iustyce, and other, to sette an order and rule atwene ỹ said parties. Than before hym were broughte all euydences and pryuyleges, for the aduauntage of bothe parties; where fynally, after longe plee and argumẽt, it was fermely demyd & adiuged, ỹ if ỹ constable or any other offycer of ỹ Toure, wolde, at any tyme, take any whete or other vytayll to the vse of the kynge, or of the Toure, that he shuld come vnto ỹ market holden within the cytie, and there to haue it. ii.*d.* in a quarter within the mayres pryce, and other vytayll after the same rate; and if he or any of his officers wolde do contrary to that ordynaũce, that then the shyreffes shuld make reporte vnto the kynges counsayll, and to withstande hym in all that they myght, so that the kynges peace were kepte.

Fol. xxxiii.

In this yere also many murmures & grudges were tolde in many places of the lande, supposyng that warre shuld, in short processe, haue ensued atwene the kynge & his lordes, for the bull of dispensacion before in that other yere shewed; but by helpe and mediacion of good and wyse men, thise murmurres and grudges were so appeased, that the kynge agreed agayne to the mayntenaũce of the sayd statutes, & sent his wryttes, wherin the sayd articles were comprysed, into all shyres of Englande, gyuynge streyght cõmaundement to all men to obserue & kepe ỹ same, & suche other as were to theym ioyned by ỹ discressyon of the erle marshall, the erle of Leycetour, syr Philip Basset, syr Hugh Bigot, & other: ỹ which shortly after

after was reuoked[1] & denyed. Wherupon ỹ archebysshop of Caunterbury, feryng that after myght ensue[2], made hym an errande to Rome; and so by lycence of the kynge and of the lordes departed the lande, and so kepte hym out tyll the troble was appeased and seased. Thefie, vpon Mydlent Sondaye, the mayre and the cõmons beynge present, at a folkmote holden at Paulys crosse before sir Philyp Basset and other of the kynges coũsayll, the mayre was sworne to be trewe to the kynge, and to his heyres kynges; and vpon the morowe at Guyldehalle, euery alderman in presence of the mayre toke the same othe: and vpon ỹ Sondaye folowynge euery strypelyng of the age of. xii. yeres and aboue, before his alderman in his warde, was newely charged with the same othe. Thañe the displeasure atwene the kynge & his barons began to appere and disclose, whiche longe whyle had ben kept secret; in somoche that dyuers of them assembled in the marches of Walys, and gaderyd vnto theym stronge power, and sente a letter vnto the kyng vnder the seale of syr Rogyer Clyfforde, besechynge hym to haue in remembraunce that othe & manyfolde promesse that he had made for the obseruynge of the statutes, made at his towne of Oxenforde, with other ordenaunces made to the honoure of God, for fayth and allegeaũce to his persone, and weale and profyte of all his realme: wyllyng hym farther to withstande and defye all suche persones as wylbe agayne the sayd actes, sauynge the quene & hyr childrene.

After the which letter thus sent, and, receyuynge of it, none answere had, the sayd barons ỹ baner displayed, went agayne such as they knewe that helde agayne the sayd actes: and firste at Herforde, they toke the bysshop of that see, & as many of his chanons as were alyauntes borne, and toke suche treasoure and catell as they there fande, and bare it with theym, and after yode & sent vnto suche maners as the sayd bysshop and chanons had, and theym spoyled and robbed, and some of theym threwe to the grounde, & consumed with fyre, and put the sayd bysshop and chanons in suer kepynge, and sette other in their places; and after went vnto ỹ other costes, where they supposed to fynde of theyr enemyes, kepynge theyr course towarde London, berynge before theym baner of the kynges armys: and so holdynge their iourney, moche people drewe vnto them. In which progresse, euer as they fande any that they knewe to be agayn the mayntenaũce of the sayd actes, they enprysoned theym, & spoyled their places, were they spiritual men or temporall men; & in dyuers of the kynges castelles, they sette in suche persones as to theym lyked, and put out suche as there were sette in by the kynge, and gaue vnto them an othe that they shuld be trewe and faythfull to the kynge, and kepe those castelles to his vse & weale of the realme.

Aboute Midsomer, when they drewe nere to London, they sent a letter vnto the mayre and aldermen, vnder the seale of syr Symonde Mounforde, wyllynge to knowe of theym whether they wolde obserue the actes and statutes made in the parlyamẽt of Oxenforde, or nat; or ellys they wolde ayde and assyst suche persones as entended ỹ breche of the same, and sent vnto theym a copye of the sayd actes, with a prouyso that if any that there were specifyed were to the hurte of ỹ realme or comon weale of the same, that they than, by discrete persones of the lande, shuld be altered & amended: the whiche copye the mayre bare vnto the kynge, then beynge at ỹ Toure accompanyed with ỹ quene, the kyng of Almayne, whiche lately was retourned from beyonde ỹ see, & sir Edwarde his sone, with other of his counsayll.

Then the kyng, entendynge to knowe the mynde of ỹ cytie, axyd the mayre what he thought of those ordynaunces and actes, knowynge weale that before his cõmynge thyder he had counsaylled with the aldermen & some comons of the cytie. The mayre than abasshed with that questyon, besoughte the kynge that he myght comon with his bretherne the aldermen, and he shulde shewe vnto hym his and theyr oppynyons; but ỹ kynge sayd he wold here his aduyce without more counsayl. Then the mayre boldly sayde, ỹ before

[1] by the kyng revoked. MS. [2] thyngs that after ensewed. MS.

tymes

tymes he with his bretherne & cõminaltie of the cytie, by his commaundement, were sworne to maynteyne all actes made to the honoure of God, to the fayth of the kynge and profyte of the realme, whiche othe by his lycence and moste gracyous fauoure, they entended to obserue & kepe: and more ouer to auoyde all occacion that myght growe of grudge or varyaunce, atwene his grace and his barons within ŷ cytie, they wolde auoyde all alyauntes and straungers out therof, if his grace were so contented; which answere ŷ kyng shewed as he were therwith plesed: so ŷ the mayre with his fauoure departed, and sent answere to ŷ barons to the same accordynge, theyr lybertyes alway vpholden and shewed[1]. Than shortly after, for so moch as dyuerse noble men of the lande whiche helde agayne those statutes were ryden towarde Douer, and there entended to haue taken shyppynge for fere of the barons; the kynge sent after theym dyuers persones of his housholde, and of the cytezyns of London, to refourme and enduce theym to retourne, and to tary with ŷ kynge: and in that season, all alyauntes, the whiche were taken sus-
Fol. xxxiiij. pect of any fauour owynge to ŷ one partie or to ŷ other, were auoyded the cytie: but it was nat longe after that syr Edwarde the kynges sone, set them or many of theym in offyces within the castell of Wyndesore. Than watche was kept dayly within ŷ cytie, & in the nyghtes a certayne were assigned to ryde aboute the towne, w a certayne fotemen assygned to theym to serche al the towne ouer; but of that ensued harme: for whyle ŷ rydynge watche was in one place of the cytie, some euyll disposed persones, vnder colour of watche mẽ and to serche for straũgers, robbyd and spoyled many houses within the cytie; for remedy wherof a standynge watche was ordeyned in euery warde, and the kynge herynge of ŷ barons nere cõmynge vnto the cytie, departed thens shortly after.

Then the barons entred the cytie the Sondaye before seynt Margaretes daye, and shortly after ŷ kynge retourned to Westmynster with the quene, & other of his cõsayll; and soone after by the consent of ŷ kynge & the barons, sir Hugh le Spencer was made chyef iustyce and keper of the Toure.

Vpon ŷ morowe folowynge Mary Magdaleyne daye, a wryt was directed vnto the mayre and aldermen, chargynge theym that ŷ kynges peas were fermely kepte within the cytie; for, in the same wrytte, it was also expressyd, that the kynge and his barons were louyngly agreed, ferthermore was by the sayd wryt cõmaunded, ŷ if, within the precincte of theyr franchyse, were any persone or persons knowen ŷ wold withstande the foresayd ordenaũces and statutes, that all such shuld be attached & put in pryson, and theyr goodes attached for the kynge tyll they knewe his further pleasur.

Ye shall vnderstande that whyle the lordes laye thus within the cytie, dyuers conuenticulis and gaderynges were made of the cytezeyns & other, that robbyd in dyuers places of the cytie and dyd moche harme, the whiche was smally corrected; they were so borne out and maynteyned by theyr maisters, and the cõmons of ŷ cytie were so ferre out of rule by ensensynge of ryotous persones, that in assembles and courtes that then were kept at Guyldhalle or other places, symple & vndiscrete parsones shuld haue the voyce, and ŷ worshypfull men lytell or no thynge regarded: wherof ensued dayly moche vnhappynesse and sorowe, as after shall appere.

The barons then, to opteyne the more fauoure of the cytie, wylled theym to shewe if they hadde any of theyr lyberties withdrawen, that they myght agayne to them be restored, and also to deuyse some newe to theyr weale and profyte, and they wolde laboure to the kynge that they myght haue theym graunted; for the whiche comforte of ŷ lordes, the mayre called ŷ cõmons to the Guyldhalle, and shewed to them the beneuolence of ŷ sayd lordes, & wylled them ŷ euery officer for his office, to deuyse suche thynges as myght be benyfycyall for the cytie. Wherupon they cõsaylled togyder, and made a note in paper of dyuers statutes, prouycyons & ordenaunces to be graunted, whiche myght more properly be named obhominacions, for they were deuysed to theyr synguler

[1] saved. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

profyte,

profyte, and to the great hurte of all other marchauntes comynge to ŷ cytie, and to all other feyres and markettes of Englande, and also preiudyciall to the vnyuersall weale of the realme. The whiche whene they were ouerseen by the heddes of ŷ cytie, it was shewed vnto the sayd cōmons, that theyr ordenaunces were nat lefull nor charitable orderyd, and therfore they knewe weale they shulde nat be admytted, wyllynge them to deuyse other; but all was in vayne[t]: by meane wherof, bothe those & other, that were right necessary for ŷ cōmō weale of the cytie, were reiected & put of. Then the barons, vpon the morowe folowynge seynt Iamys day, departed from London towarde Wyndesore, to se the gydynge of ŷ castel. Whereat theyr cōmynge, they put out the foresayd allyauntes before sette in by syr Edwarde ŷ kynges sone; the which, associat w̄ other, yode vnto Fulham, where ŷ kyng than lay, and shewed to hym that ŷ barons hadde spoyled theym of suche goodes as they had, and that without cause: but ŷ kyng put theym of for that season, & warned theym to sue to hym agayne aboute Mychelmasse, whan more of his counsayll was with hym, and then they shulde haue iustyce.

Vpon the seconde daye folowynge the feast of seynt Mathewe, or the. xxiii. daye of September, the kynge, ŷ quene, with his sōnes, & other nobles of this lande, toke shyppynge, and sayled into Fraunce, to be present at the Frenshe kynges parlyament, than holden at Bonony. And the morowe after the Octab' of seynt Michaell, he landed agayne at Douer, & the Frydaye folowynge he came vnto London; and vpon ŷ Tuesday folowyng passed a quest of. xii. knyghtes of Myddlesex, sworne vpon a iurye, atwene the abbot of Westmynster and the cyte, for certayne pryuyleges that the cytezens of Lōdon claymed within Westmester: where, by the sayd iury, it was founden, before Gilbert of Prestone, than chief baron of the kynges excheker, that the shyreffes of London, at those dayes, myght laufully enter into the towne of Westmester, & at other tenementes ŷ the abbot thenne had w̄in Middelsex, and vnto ŷ gate of the sayd abbey, and there to make summons, and distrayne, for lacke of apperaūce, all and euerych tenaūt of the sayd abbot.

Aboute the quyndena of seynt Michael, the fourmer complaynt of the allyauntes & other, whiche as aboue ye haue herde, was shewed before the kynge and the lordes in the parlyament holden at Westmynster, where lastly it was sentencyd that the barons shuld restore all suche goodes, as they & theyre cōpany had taken from all persones before that day, as wele to alyauntes as other, both spūel and temporell; and also that such menyall seruauntes as shulde be dayly in the kynges houses, and aboute his persone, shuld be suche as the kynge wolde chose & admytte hym selfe[u]: the whiche. ii. articules the barons vtterly denyed; wherfore ŷ olde rancour toke place, and dissēcion kyndeled his fyre of malyce agayne, atwene the kynge & his lordes feruently.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxiii.

Robert Moūplere.

Thomas fiz Thomas. Anno. xlvii.

Robert de Suffolke[x].

IN this. xlvii. yere, by procurement and styryng of the barons, the cōmons of the cytie of Lōdon chase vnto their maire for that yere, Thomas fiz Thomas, & without counsayll of the aldermen, sware hym at Guyldhall vpon the day of Symon & Iude, and made no presentement of hym vpon the morowe folowynge, nouther to the kynge nor yet to the barons of the kynges excheker, as they of right ought to haue doñ. For the whiche presumpcyon, the kynge was greuously discōtented agayne the cytie. Soone after the kynge aduertysynge wele that the cytie wolde take ŷ barons partie, caused sir Edwarde his sone, to take the castell of Wyndesore by a trayne: wherof whan he knew

[t] *Here the Museum* MS. *adds,* "for they wolde werk but aftir their avne counsayll." [x] Philip Walbroke. Rycharde Tayler, edit. 1559. *in marg.*

that he was in possessyon, the kynge eerly in a mornynge, a lytell tofore Crystmas, departed from Westmÿster, and rode vnto the sayd castell, whyther shortly after cam also many of the lordes that were vpon ŷ kynges partie; and as faste the lordes & knyghtes
Fol. xxxv. whiche helde with the erle of Leyceter drewe them towarde Lōdon, so that on eyther partie was moche people assembled. In the whiche passe tyme, some wele disposed laboured a concorde atwene the kyng & his lordes; by whose meanes, fynally, it was agreed by both parties, that all matyers concernynge the foresayd artycles of statutes and ordenaunces made at Oxenforde, and after by the. xii. perys, that ŷ Frenshe kynge shuld deme and iuge whiche shulde beholden & which nat; and as he demyd, both parties promysed assuredly to abyde: vpon whiche agrement, copyes were made of the sayd statutes, and with lettres shewynge the effecte of the fourmer agrement, sent vnto the kynge of Fraunce, than beynge seynt Lowys. And in the Cristmasse weke folowyng, the kyng toke shyppyng with sir Edwarde his sone, and other of his counsayll, and so sayled into Fraūce, for the foresayd cause; and for the partie of the sayde barons, was sent ouer sir Peter de Mountforde & other. Then before Lowys, kynge of Fraunce, those statutes were sore argued vpon both parties. Howe be it in the ende, the Frenshe kynge callynge before hym both parties, vpon the daye before the conuercion of seynt Paule, or ŷ. xxiiii. daye of Ianuarii, syttyng in iugement, gaue expresse sentence that all & euerychc of the said statutes & ordenaūces shuld be from that daye forewarde vtterly fordone and set at nought: and all such bandes and promysses that the kynge or any other had made, for the mayntenaūce of the same, shuld be adnulled & cancelled, & the kynge & all other, for any matyer consernynge those statutes, set at lybertie. After whiche sentence thus gyuen, ŷ kynge retourned into Englande, so that he came to Lōdon the xv. day of Februarii; but ŷ barons beyng sore amoued w̄ this sentēce, & notyng great parcialitie vnto ŷ Frenshe kyng, departed from London westwarde, & so into ŷ marchys of Walys; where they drewe to them great power, and warred vpon the landes & castelles of sir Roger Mortymer, & threwe some of them vnto ŷ groūde, & spoyled of his what they might fynde, & ouer ŷ brent of his manours & houses: in whose ayde, sir Edwarde the kynges sone cōmyng, his people were distressed, & he almost taken. For redresse of whiche maters, a newe parliament was appoynted to be holden at Oxenforde, in the quīdena of Easter next folowing, which came neuer to effect. Albeit an other Cronycle sayth, that frome this parlyamēt than holden at Oxenforde, the kynge & his fordes parted all discorded. Than the barons dreue towarde London, and the kynge remayned at Woodstok. And thenne new assurauuce by wrytynge endented, was made atwene the cōminaltie of the cytie and the barons, without consent of many of the rulers of the sayd cytie: wherfore the cōmons, as men enraged, made of them self. ii. capytaynes, whiche they named constables of the cytie, that is to say, Thomas de Pyweldon, & Stephan Bukerell; at whose cōmaundement, by tollyng of the great belle of Paules, all the cytie shuld be redy shortly ī harneys, to gyue attendaūce vpon theyr sayd capytaynes.

Aboute the begynnyng of Lent, the constable of ŷ Toure, sir Hughe le Spenser, came with a fayre company of men of armys[a] before hym into the cytie, & desyred assystence of the fore named constables, the which cōmaūded the sayd belle to be tolled; by meane wherof the people shyt theyr shoppes, & came out in harneys in great multytude. The whiche, after proclamacion made that they shuld folowe theyr capytaynes, wout knowlege what to do or whether to go, folowed theyr sayd capytaynes, & so yode vnto Thystilworth, vpon. ii. myles beyonde Westmynster, & there spoyled the manour of the kynge of Romayns, & sette it after vpon a fyre: and ŷ done, his water mylles and other cōmodytees that he there had, put theym to vtter ruyne; and after with great noyse & crye retourned vnto London.

This dede, as sayth myne auctour, was cause of ŷ mortall warre folowynge: for where

[a] *The Museum* MS. *adds*, "wyth a baner of the kyngs armys beffor hym."

before

before tyme the sayd kyng of Romaynes had ben, for alyaunce that was atwene hym & therle of Glouceter, a treatye of peas to be had atwene the kynge and his barons; after that dede done, he was enemye vnto theym to the vttermost of his power. The kynge herynge of this ryot, gaderyd vnto hym great power; and for he harde ỹ sir Peter de Mountforde was at Northampton, gaderynge of people to strength the barons partie, he sped hym thyder and wan ỹ towne vpon hym by force, and slewe many of his men, and fynally toke hym and sir Symon, ỹ sone of the erle of Leyceter, with dyuers other on lyue, the whiche, w many burgeyses of that towne ỹ had taken theyr partie, ỹ kynge sent vnto dyuers prysons, and some he closed within the castell of the same towne.

In this passetyme, on Palmesondaye weke, all the Iewys in London were spoyled and robbid, and to the nombre of. v.C. of theym were slayne, and dyuers of theyr mansions brent and distroyed; & suche as of theym were saued, were conueyd for great mede vnto the Toure, & there kept from ỹ furye of ỹ comons: wherof the occasion was, for somoch as a Iewe wolde haue forced a Cristen man to haue gyuen to hym more than. ii.*d.* for the vsure of. xx.*s.* for a weke; for ye shall vnderstande that at those dayes, by lycence graunted vnto the Iewes of the kynge, they might take by vsury of euery man that of theym wolde borowe money. ii.*d.* of a. *li.* for a weke lendynge, & so of gretter & of smaller sumes after that rate. And soone after the Iewys were thus punysshed, many houses of religion within the cytie and nere there aboute, were serched for goodes of alyaũtes, and moche founde; wherof a parte was brought vnto ỹ lordes, but ỹ more part was stolen & brybed. In whiche season, the kynge passed by dyuers countres, and lastely came into Southsex with a stronge power; wherof herynge, ỹ lordes made preparacyon to go towardes hym. In all whiche tyme, the wardeyns of the. v. portes kept the see with shyppes that no straungers shuld entre the lande, to ayde the kynge agayne the barons. Than, in the ende of Apryll, the barons with a multitude of the cytie, whiche they put in vawarde, and departed frome London, takynge their iourney towarde the kynge; and when they were wele onwarde vpon theyr waye, worde was brought vnto them, ỹ the kynge w an huge power was at Lewys.

Wherfore they by an hole assent dyuysed a letter, and sent it in the name of al the barons, vnto the kyng, whose names here vnder folowe, but nat all.

Sir Symonde de Mouṫforde, erle of Leyceter, and hygh stewarde of Englande.
Sir Gilbert de Clare, erle of Glouceter.
Sir Robert Ferres[1], erle of Derby.
Sir Hugh le Spencer, chief iustyce, &[2]
Sir Henry de Mouṫforde, sone & heyre to the erle of Leyceter.
Sir Richarde Gray.
Sir Henry Hastynges.
Sir Iohñ fiz Iohñ.
Sir Robert de Venpount.
Sir Iohñ Gyuyle.
Sir Robert Roos.
Sir William Marmyon.
Baldewyn Wake.
Sir Gilbert Gyfforde.
Sir Nicholas de Megraue.
Sir Godfrey de Lucy.
Sir Iohñ de Veysy.
Sir William de Mounthedesy.

Whiche letter sealed with ỹ seales of the sayde erle of Leyceter and of Glouceter, conteyned as foloweth.

[1] [Ferrers?] [2] and constable of the Towre. MS.

Fol. xxxvi. "TO the moost excellent lorde the kynge, Henry, by the grace of God kynge of Englande, lorde of Irelande, & duke of Guyon, the barons and other faythfull your seruauntes, theyr fidelytie and othe to God and to you coueytyng to kepe, sendynge to you due salutynge with al reuerence and honour, vnder due obeysaunce. Lyketh it your hyghnes to vnderstande, ỹ many, beynge aboute you, haue before tymes shewed vnto your lordshyp of vs many euyll and vntrewe reportes, and haue founde suggestyons nat allonely of vs, but also of your selfe to brynge this your realme vnto subuercyon. Knowe your excellency, that we entende no thynge but helth & suertie to your persone, to the vttermost of our powers. And nat oonly to our enemyes, but also to yours, and of all this your realme, we entende vtter greuaunce and correccyon; besechynge your grace hereafter to gyue vnto theym lytell credence: for ye shall fynde vs your trewe and faythfull subgectes, to the vttermost of our powers. And we erle of Leyceter & erle of Glouceter, at the request of other and for our self, haue put to our seales, the. x. daye of the moneth of Maii."

[Answer to the forsayd lettyr by the kyng.][1]

"HEnry, by the grace of God kynge of Englande, lorde of Irelande, and duke of Guyan, to Symonde de Mountforte and Gilbert de Clare, and their complices. Where as by warre and generall parturbaunce in this our realme by you begon and contynued, with also brennynges and other hurtes and enormyteis that euydently apperyth, ỹ your fydelytie to vs due, ye haue nat kept, nor the suertye of our persone ye haue lytell regarded: for somoche as our lordes and other our trusty frendys, whiche dayly byde with vs, ye vexyn & greue, and theym pursewe to the vttermost of your powers, and yet dayly entende as ye by ỹ report of your owne letters haue vs ascerteyned. We ỹ greef of theym admytte, and take for our owne specially. Whanne they for theyr fydelytie, whiche they to vs dayly impende, stande & abyde by vs to oppresse your fydelytie and vntrouth: wherfore of your fauoure or assuraunce we sette lytel store; but you as our enemyes we vtterly defye. Wytnesse oure selfe, at oure towne of Lewys, the. xii. daye of this moneth of Maii."

And ouer this, the kyng of Romayns, sir Edwarde the kynges sone, and the other lordes beynge than with the kynge, sent vnto theym an other letter, wherof the tenour ensuyth.

"RIcharde, by ỹ grace of God kynge of Romayns, alway Augustus, & Edwarde the noble firste begotten sone of the kyng of Englande, & all other barons fermely standynge & abydyng with our soueraygne lorde ỹ kyng, to Symonde de Mountforde, Gilbert de Clare, & all other their false felowes. By the letters whiche ye sent vnto the kynge our most soueraygne lorde, we vnderstãde that we are defyed of you: neuertheless this worde of diffyeaunce apperyd vnto vs sufficiently before, by ỹ depredacion & brennynge of our manours, & caryeng away of our goodes. Wherfore we wyll that ye vnderstande, that we defye you as our mortall & publique enemyes, and when soeuer we may come to reuengement of ỹ iniuries ỹ ye to vs haue done, we shall acquyt it to the vttermost of our powers; and where ye put vpon vs, that nouther trewe nor good cõsayll to our soueraygne lorde the kynge we gyue, ye therin say falsely & vntrewely. And if that sayinge, ye, sir Symonde de Mountforde and sir Gilbert de Clare, wyll iustyfie in the court of our soueraygne lorde, we are redy to purchase to you surety & saufe cõmynge; that there we may proue our trewe & faythfull innocency, & your false & traytorouse lyinge. Wytnessyd with ỹ seales of Richarde kynge of Romaynes, & of syr Edwarde forenamed. Guyuyn at Lewys, the. xii. daye of Maii."

WHen the barons had receyued these letters from the kyng & his lordes, they perceyued

[1] MS.

well

well that there was none other meane, but [to] defende theyr cause by dynt of swerde. Wherfore they, puttyng their trust in God, spedde theym forth towarde the kyng; and vpon a Wednysday, beynge then the. xxiiii. day of Maii, erly in the morrynge, both hoostes met: where after the Londoners had gyuen the first assaute, they were betyn backe, so that they began to drawe from the sharpe shot, & strokes to the discomfort of the barons hoost. But the barons encoraged & comforted their men in suche wyse, ẏ nat alonely the freshe & lusty knyghtes faught egerly, but also such as before were scomfited recoueryd their vertue & strength, & faught wout fere, in somoche that then the kynges vawarde lost their places. Then was the felde coueryd with deed bodyes, & gaspynge & gronynge was herde on euery syde, for eyther was desirous for to bring the other out of lyf; and ẏ fader sparyd nat the soue, nor the sone the fader, alliaunce, at ẏ tyme, was tourned vnto diffyaunce, & Cristen blode ẏ day was shad without pytie, thus, durynge the cruell fyght by the more parte of the day. Lastly the victory fyl to ẏ barons, so ẏ there was taken ẏ kyng & ẏ kig of Romayns, sir Edward ẏ kynges sone, ẇ many other noble men, to ẏ nombre of. xxv. barons & banerettes, and people slayne a great multitude, ouer. xx.M. as sayth myn auctours.

Whan the barons had thus opteyned victorye, prouycion was made for the saufe kepyng of the prysoners, so that all were sent vnto dyuers castellis & prysons, except the kyng, his brother the kyng of Almayne, & sir Edwarde his sone; the whiche the barons helde ẇ theym tyll they came to London. Then a newe graunt was made by the kyng, ẏ the foresayd statutes shulde stande in strēgth, and if any were thought vnreasonable, they to be corrected & amended by. iiii. noble men of the realme; that is to meane. ii. of the spūaltie, and. ii. of the temporalte: and if those. iiii. myght nat agre, that then the erle of Angeon & ẏ duke of Burgoyn to be iuges of ẏ matier, and this to be fermly holden & obeyed by the kyng & his brother. The kynges graunted ẏ their sōnes & heyres shuld remayne ẇ the barons as prysoners, tyll all thyng were fynysshed accordynge to the foremer agrement. *Fol. xxxvii.* And vpon this was a parlyament apoynted to be holden at London, at Penthecost folowyng. But that came neuer to purpose. Then, the Tuesday before the Assencion daye, peas was proclaimed in London, atwene the kynge & his barons; and vpon ẏ daye folowyng, the kynge & the barons came vnto London, and with theym the kynge of Romaynes and sir Edwarde the kynges sone. Then sir Edwarde, as pledges for the kyng, and sir Henry sone vnto the kyng of Almayne, were sent vnto the Toure, & there lodged, and from thens vnto Douer Castell; and ẏ kynge was lodged in the bysshoppes paleys by Paules; & the kyng of Almayne with dyuers other, within the Toure. Then it was agreed by the kynge, that for his more suertie, and for the weale of the lande, that ẏ erle of Leyceter shuld be ressiaunt in the kynges court; vpon the whiche agrement & other, many of the prysoners were sette at large. In this passe tyme, before the felde of Lewys, the quene & ẏ kyng of Romaynes had sent ouer the see for sowdyours to ayde the king agayn ẏ barons, which now were comen in great nombre vnto Douer, & there houed in the see to haue landed. Wherof hering the barons sent the kynge of Romaynes to the castell of Berkhampstede, as prysoner, tyll the sayd alliauntes were retourned, and caused kynge Henry ẇ a great power to ryde thyder, and force the sayd host of straūgers to retourne into theyr owne countrees.

And when the kynge had retourned the sayd straungers, he, shortly after, [redacted] agrement of the barons, sayled ouer into Fraunce, and retourned agayne within short terme.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxiiii.

Osbert Wynter.

Thomas fiz Thomas. Anno. lvi.

Philyp Taylour'.

[a] Roberte Mūpilers. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

IN this. xlviii. yere, the lordes of the Marches, aboute ỹ feast of Cristmasse, assembled theym in those costes, and dyd moche harme vpon the lordshyppys & manours of the erles of Leyceter and of Gloceter, standynge in the marches of Wales. Wherfore the kyng rode shortly after to Gloceter, and called there a counsayll of his lordes; by auctoryte of whiche counsayll, it was enacted, that as many of the sayd lordes as cam not in by ỹ octauis of seynt Hyllary next folowynge, and yelded theym vnto the kynges grace, shulde be exyled; and by the sayde counsayll was also agreed, that in the sayde octaues shulde a parlyamēt be holden at Westmynster: at whiche day, the kynge, with his lordes spūall & temporall, & cōmons of his lande, began his foresayd parlyament: duryng the which it was there shewed, the kyng beyng present, ỹ he nor sir Edwarde his sone, nor none for theym shuld after ỹ day greue or cause to be greuid, ỹ erles of Leyceter & of Glouceter, ỹ barons, banerettes, or knyghtes, ỹ cytezeyns of Lōdon, & barons of the. v. portes, nor none other persone or persones of hygh or lowe degre, ỹ was vpon ỹ partie of the sayd erles, for any matier of displeasur done agayne the kynge & the sayd sir Edwarde his sone, at any tyme before ỹ daye. And ỹ to vpholde, ỹ king before his lordes was sworne, & after ỹ was shewed & rad a charter of pardon cōcernyng ỹ sayd cause, & a cōfirmacōn of ỹ statutes of ỹ forest, w̄ many other actes & statutes before graūted of the kyng. Then in ỹ feast of seȳt Gregory folowīg, or ỹ. xii. day of March, sir Edwarde the kynges sone, that beforne was also sworne to perfourme suche promyses as the kynge hadde made before in the parlyament, was delyuered at lybertie; and also sir Henry ỹ kynges sone of Almayne, the whiche had ben kept as pledges, as ye before haue herde, vpon the terme of. ix. monethes and odde dayes, vpon assuraunce made that the sayd sir Edwarde shuld dwell & abyde in ỹ kynges court, and nat to departe from thens without lycence of the kynge and of a certayne of the barons. After this many instrumētes and landes[1] were made by the kyng and sir Edwarde his sone, for the perfourmaunce of couenauntes and paccioñs made atwene the kynge & the barons, whiche shortly after came to small effect.

In the season atwene Easter & Penthecoste, for orderynge of the aforesayd statutes made at Oxenforde, fyll dyssencyon atwene the erles of Leyceter & of Glouceter, so that wordes of displeasure was vtteryd atwene theym, the kynge & they also beyng than at Glouceter. Then the kyng and his barons had laboure to sette theym at vnyte and rest. And vpon the see, the barons of the. v. portes robbyd and spoyled all men that they myght take, sparynge nouther Englisshe marchaūtes nor other: of which prayes, as the comon fame than went, some of the barons of the lande hadde good parte.

In the Whytson weke folowynge, the kyng, with the erle of Leyceter and sir Edwarde his sone, with many other lordes, beyng at Hereforde, in the edge of Walys, the sayd sir Edwarde secretly and without lycēce, departed from the courte and yode vnto Chester, where he accompanyed vnto hym the erle of Glouceter, & the lordes of the Marches, therle of Warēne, sir Roger Mortymer and other, and from thens wente vnto Glouceter, brekynge the brydges as he went, to the entent that he were nat folowed tyl he had assembled his power.

Whan knowlege of this came vnto ỹ erle of Leyceter, he, in all hast, sent vnto sir Symonde his sone, that he shuld gader his knyghtes vnto hym; the whiche, accordynge to that cōmaundemente, assembled vnto hym moche people, and with theim drewe towarde Wynchester, so that he came before the cytie vpon the euyn of the Translacyon of seynt Swythyñ, or the. xiiii. daye of the moneth of Iulii, where he was shyt out, for somoche as ỹ cytezens knewe nat whether he came as the kynges frende or nat; and also lytell before they had receyued a letter from sir Edwarde, wyllynge theym to holde them out of the cytie. For these causes the cytezeyns closed theyr gates agayne the sayde sir Symonde & his company; but it was nat longe or ỹ cytie was yelden. Then they spoyled ỹ towne, &

[1] bandes. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

slewe

slewe the more partie of the Iewes that dwelled within the same. And that done, layde siege vnto the castell, & assauted it; but for tydynges were fayned of the cõmynge of sir Edwarde with his power, they departed shortly thens, and so yode vnto Kenelworth.

Vpon the laste day of Iulii, sir Edwarde with his host came vnto Kenelworth foresayd, and fyll sodaynly vpon the hoost of the forenamed sir Symonde, and, with shedynge of lytell blod, toke there prysoners the erle of Oxenforde, William de Moũt Canise, Adam de New Market, sir Baldewyn Wake, and Hughe Neuyle, with dyuers other, and sir Symonde fledde into the castell, & so escaped. Then these forenamed prysoners were all sent vnto Glouceter, and there put in suer kepyng.

In this meane whyle, sir Symonde, erle of Leyceter, toke leue of the kynge, whiche than from Herforde passed ẏ ryuer of Seuerñ, and so yode vnto Worceter, & the erle, ẇ great payne, passed the brydges before by sir Edwarde broken, and passed the countrees in gaderynge of people as he went, so that in processe he had with hym stronge power: wherof heryng, sir Edwarde costed towarde hym, and the. vi. daye of Auguste mette with hym at Euisham in Worcestershyre, where atwene theym was foughten a cruell fyght; in the whiche at length was slayne the sayd sir Symonde, and sir Henry his sone and heyre, sir Hugh le Spencer, sir Peter de Mountforde, & many other noble men ẏ helde vpon the barons party. *Fol. xxxviii.*

After whiche scomfyture, some malicious dysposed persones, in despyte of the erle, kut of his hode and his dismyssaries, and fastened theym vpon eyther syde of his nose, and after made a present therof vnto the wyfe of syr Roger Mortymer; his fete also and his handes were kut from the body, and sent to sondry places, and the trunke of his body beryed within the churche of Euisham. [Of this erle spekyth Ranulph, Monke of Chester, in his boke of Policronicon, and calleth hym Symon the ryghtwyse, sayinge that God wrought for hym miracles after his deth: the whiche for fere of the kynge, and sir Edwarde his sone, were kept close and secret, so that no man durst speke of theym.][1] Soone after this victory thus opteyned by syr Edwarde, the kynge and he mette; by whose auctoryties all prysoners, then whiche were in holde in dyuers places, by the cõmaũdement [of ẏ sayd sir Edwarde][2] were set at lybertie, and many other dayly accused & set in for theym. And aboute the Natyuyte of our Lady, a parlyament was holden at Wynchester; where, by auctorytie of the same, all statutes and ordenaunces before made by the barons at Oxenforde, in the. xli. yere of the kyng, were vtterly fordon and set at nought; and all bondes & wrytynges made by the kynge or any other, for the obseruynge of the same, were cancelled and broken. Also at this counsayll was ordeyned that all suche as had fauoured the barons, were they in pryson or at large, shuld be disherited. And than the kynge resumyd into his hande, all grauntes before made & gyuen to any persone. And for sir Symonde de Mountforde myght nat agre with ẏ kynge at the parlyament, he was restoryd to the castel of Kenelworth, as he before was assured; the which he with sir Henry de Hastynges & other kept longe after.

Whan the parlyament was ended, the kynge came vnto Wyndesore ẇ a great power, entendyng, as the fame then wente, to distroye the cytie of London, for the great ire and displesaure ẏ he had vnto it: wherof herynge the mayre and aldermen, were stryken in a wonderfull fere; albeit many of the rabbishe and wylde cõmoners, were in full purpose to haue defended the cytie agayne the kynge: and thus amonge them were dyuers and many oppinyons, and no wonder, for at those dayes the cytie was inhabyted ẇ many maner of naciõs, whiche then were admytted for cytezens.

LAstly, by grace and sad counsayll of the best of ẏ cytie, they condessendyd to make a supplycacion to the kynge, & sende it by some relygyous persone: of ẏ whiche they made dyuers, and sent theym by sondry persones; but all aduayled ryght nought, for the

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. *only.* [2] of the barons. MS.

kynge

kynge was so greuously ensensyd by some of his counsayl agayne the cytezeyns, that he wolde nat loke vpon none of theyr supplycacions: and if any man spake for theym, he soone wolde make suche countenaunce, ŷ men whiche were in his fauoure fered to speke for them. Then ŷ cytezeyns were cōsaylled by theyr frendes ŷ they shuld make a wrytynge, and seale it with theyr comon seale, by vertue wherof they shulde offer theym selfe to put theym hooly in the kynges grace and mercy, touchyng their lyues and goodes: accordynge to ŷ whiche counsayll they deuysed a wrytynge, and sealed it with theyr comon seale, & ŷ done, chase. viii. persones of ŷ cytie, such as had frēdes in ŷ court, & sent theym towarde Wyndesore the. vi. day of October: vpoń whyche day they encountered, beyonde Colbroke, a knyght of the kynges called syr Roger Leyborne, the whiche retourned the sayed. viii. persones vnto the cyte; and he also rode withe them tyl he cam nere vnto the cytee, and there departed from theym, and rode vpon the backesyde of ŷ towne vnto ŷ Toure: but, at his departynge, he wylled theym to warne the mayre, with a certayne of the cytie to mete with hym vpon the morowe at Berkynge Churche, whiche stādeth nere vnto the Toure. Vpon the morowe, when ŷ mayre & ŷ sayd sir Roger were met, he, after a longe processe made, shewed to them of ŷ kynges greuous displeasur which he bare toward the cytie, & of ŷ meanes that had ben vsed by their frendes & louers, to opteyne grace for ŷ cytie: lastly he expressed that no grace for theym myght be had, except they wolde, by their cōmon seale, bynde theym selfe fully & hooly to stande at the kynges grace, & to put in his mercy theyr lyues & goodes. Wherunto, in the ende, the cytezeyns graunted & delyuered the foresaid wrytynge vnto the sayd sir Roger, prayeng hym to be good meane for theym vnto the kyng; the which departed towarde the kynge vpon the morowe, and retourned agayne the. vi. day after, and wylled the mayre and aldermen to mete with hym agayne at ŷ foresaid churche, where he shewed to theym that the kynge, by great instaunce of theyr frendes, had receyued theyr wrytyng; and wolde firste, for the begynnynge of contentacyon of his mynde, that all the chaynes whiche stode at euery strete and lanes ende with in the cytie, shuld be lowsyd from theyr postes, and the postes also drawen out of the erthe, and all to be brought vnto the Toure. And that done, that the mayre with a certayne of the cytezeyns, to the nombre of. xl. persones, shulde, the day folowyng, be at Wyndesore, to conferme ŷ graunt of theyre wrytinge: and that they shulde goo and come in safe and suer wyse, he delyuered to theym the kynges letter & seale for the terme of. iiii. dayes, whyche all was done according to theyr former deuyse; and the mayre with ŷ foresayd persons was redy at Wyndesore, vpō the morowe beyng Sonday, by one of ŷ clocke, and there taryed tyll. iiii. of the same daye. At whiche season the kynge, cōmynge from his disporte, entred the castell without countenaūce, or ones castynge his iyen vpon the Londoners: & when the kynge & his people was entred ŷ castell, the Londoners wold haue folowed; but they were warned to abyde without. Than, in short tyme after, the kynge caused a proclamacyon to be made that no man of hyghe or lowe degree, to the Londoners shuld make any sayinges of displeasure, or make to theym any quarell. And, in the euenynge, came vnto theim ŷ foresaid sir Roger & sir Robert Waleys, knyghtes, and brought theim into ŷ castell, and sayd that the kynges plcasure was nat to speke with theym that nyght: and after, the sayd knyghtes delyuered theym vnto the constable of the castell, whiche closed theym all in a large Toure, where, that nyght, they had small chere & wors lodgynge.

Then vpon the morowe, beynge Mondaye, towarde nyght, they were taken out of that Toure, & delyuered vnto the baylly of ŷ sayd castell, & lodged by his assignement, except v. persones; that is to meane, Thomas Fiz Thomas than mayre, Mychiell Tony, Stephan Bukkerell, Thomas Pywellisdon, & Iohn de Flete; the whiche. v. persones the kyng had gyuen to sir Edwarde his sone, at whose cōmaundement they remayned styll in the sayd Toure longe after, natwithstandyng the kynges sauecundyte to theym, as before is shewed & made. When tydynges hereof came vnto the cytie of London, albeit ŷ, for feare, many before were aduoyded; thēe there auoyded many moo, & conueyed theyr goodes

goodes in secrete wyse into dyuers countres of Englande, so that ma[illegible] retourned after.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxiiii. Anno Domini.

Thomas de la Fourdeous[1].

Thomas fitz Thomas. Anno. xlix.

Gregory Rokkylse.

IN this. xlix. yere, vpon ỹ daye of seynt Leonarde, or the. vi. daye of Nouember, the kynge came vnto Westmynster, and shortely after he gaue vnto dyuers of his housholde seruauntes vpon thre score houses and howsholdes within the cytie, so that the owners were compelled to agre & redeme their houses and housholde, with all goodes as in theym were, or ellys to auoyde and suffre such persones to enter as the sayde house were gyuen vnto; and nat alonely that, but also all suche landes & teñtes, goodes, & catalles, as the sayd cytezeyns had in any other places of Englande. And than he made custos or gardeyn of ỹ cytie, syr Othon constable of the Toure, whiche syr Othon chase to be baylyues vnder hym, and to be to hym accomptable to the vse of the kyng, Iohñ Adrian & Walter Heruy, cytezeyns of the same cytie: & after this, ỹ kynge toke pledges of the best menues sõnes of the cytie, that his peas shuld be suerly kepte win the same; the whiche were put in the Toure of Lõdõn, and there kept at the coste of theyr parẽtes. And shortly after, by great labour & suyte made, all the forsayd persones, which shuld be in the kepyng of ỹ baylly of the castell of Wyndesore. iiii. oonly except, ỹ is to saye Richarde Bonauenture, Symon de Hadisstok, Wyllyam de Kent, & William de Glouceter; all ỹ other Londoners. xxxi.[2] in nomber were delyuered, and came to London the Thursday folowynge the feast of seynt Luke, in the. xxi. daye of Nouember; & the other. ix. were kept styll in the Toure of Wyndesore.

Then dayly suyte & labour was made vnto the kynge to haue his gracyous fauour, and to knowe his pleasure what fyne he wolde haue of the cytie, for their transgressions & displeasure by theim to hym done: for the whiche ỹ kyng asked. xl.M.li. and fermely helde hym at. l.M. marke. But the cytie layde for them ỹ the poore cõmons of the cytie, wherof many were auoyded, were the trespassours, and ouer ỹ the best men of ỹ cytie by thyse ryotous persones were spoyled & robbid; and by the rouers also of ỹ see, as the wardeyns of the. v. portes & other, in this troublous season, they had loste a great part of theyr substaunce: for the whiche cõsyderacions & many other, whiche were tedious to wryte, ỹ cytezeyns besought the kynge of his moste gracious fauour & pyte, & to take of theym as they myght bere.

This matyer thus hangyng, ỹ kyng vpõ seynt Nycholas euyn, departed from Westmynster towarde Northampton, and, lyteil before his departyng, ordeyned syr Iohñ Lynde knyght, & mayster Iohñ Waldren, clerke, to be gardeynes of the cytie & Toure; the which were named in the kynges wrytyng, senessbawles or stewardes of ỹ cytie. Vpon the day folowynge ỹ the kynge was ryden, these. ii. forenamed stewardes sent for. xxiiii. of the moste notable men of the cytie, and warned theym to apere ỹ day folowyng before the kynges counsayll at Westmynster: where, at theyr apparaunce, was shewed vnto them by syr Roger Leyborne, ỹ the kyngs mynde was, that they shuld haue the rule of ỹ cytie in his absens, vnder the foresayd senessbawles, and for to se good rule kepte within the cytie, they shuld be sworne there before his cõusayll; the whiche there were then sworne & countermaunded vnto ỹ cytie, and alway labour was made vnto the kynge for the fyne of the cytie.

So that, in the Cristmas weke, an ende was made with the kynge, by labour of suche frendes as the cytie had about hym, for the sũme of. xx.M. marke, for all transgressions

[1] Thomas de la Fourde. Gregory Rokkysle. MS. and edit. 1559. [2] xxxiiii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1550.

& offences

before done; (certayne persones excepted, whiche the kynge had gyuen his sone, beynge, as before is sayd, in the Toure of Wyndesore;) for the which sūme, at dayes by agrement stalled, syr Roger Leyborne and maister Wareyn, clerke, were assygned to take the suertyes for the same. After whiche tie by theym receyued, and sente vnto the kynge to Northampton, the kynge sent immediatly after vnto the cytezeyns a charter vnder his brode seale, wherof the effect ensueth.

"HEnry, by the grace of God kynge of Englande, lord of Irelande, & duke of Guyan, to al men helthe. Knowe ye that for the fyne of. xx.M. marke, the whiche oure cytezeyns of Londō to vs made, for the redemcion of the transgressions & trespaces to vs, to oure quene, to oure noble brother Rycharde kynge of Almayne, & to Edward oure fyrst begotē sone done, we remytte & pardone for vs & for our heyres, to the sayde citesins and theyre heyres, as moche as in vs is; so that they haue & enioye all theyre former grauntes and lybertees, rentis and profittes, frō the feste of Crystmas last paste, and also that the sayd cytezeyns haue to them all forfaytes of all malefactours of that cytie, whiche, in the parturbaūce before made, were indyted, or for the same be yet for to be endyted, except the goodes & catalles of theym of the whiche we haue gyuen the bodyes vnto our forsayd sone Edwarde; and except the rentes and tenementes of all those cytezeyns whiche nowe be & shalbe our escheate by reason of the forsayd transgressyons; & that all prysoners whiche now in our prysons remayne, be freely delyuered, except those persones whose bodyes we haue gyuen to Edwarde our sone; and that the sayd cytezeyns be as fre as they before the sayd transgressions were, in all partes & coestes of this our lande. In wytnes wherof we haue made thyse letters patentes. Wytnesseth my self at Northampton, the. x. daye of Ianuarii, the yere of our reygne. xlix."

After whiche pardone by the cytezeyns receyued, all pledges for theym, beyng in the Toure of London, and also. iiii. of them that were in the Toure of Wyndesore, that is to say, Richarde Bonauenture, Symon de Hadistoke, Willyam of Kent, and Willyam of Glouceter were delyuered.

Thanne also was discharged the forenamed stuwardes, sir Iohn Lynde & maister Iohn Waldren, and the cytezeyns of theym selfe chose for mayre Willyam fiz Richarde, and for shyrefles Thomas de la Fourde and Gregory de Rokkysley. Than for leuyinge of this fyne were set as well seruauntes, couenaūt men, as husholders, & many refuced the lyberties of the cytie for to be quyt of that charge.

Whyle the kynge lay thus at Northampton, sir Symonde Mountforde put hym vpon the dome of [the popes legat Octabonus,][1] that before was come into this lande to refourme thynges in the Churche of Englāde, and also to set vnyte & reste atwene the kynge & his lords, to whose dome [he submytted hȳ,][2] & also of ȳ kyng of Romayns, the foresayd sir Symond had boūden hym to stande: vpon which promyse and bande, he was lybertied to be at large in the kynges courte, and so contynued a season; but, in ȳ ende, when the kyng was cōmen into London, he departed sodaynly out of the court, & rode vnto Wynchelsee, where he accompanyed hym w̄ the rouers of ȳ see, and after some pryses taken, departed from theim, & so sayled into Fraūce, & put hym i seruyce w̄ holy Lowys, than kyng of ȳ prouynce.

Fol. xl. This yere also, vpon the euyn of seynt Iohn Baptyst, the kynge began his siege about the castel of Kenelworth with a mighty power; but sir Henry Hastynges, with suche as were within it, defended it so strongly that the kynge & all his power myghte nat wynne the sayde castell of a longe tyme, as after in ȳ next yere shall appere.

It is before shewed howe the quēne, by her puruiaunce, had caused an host of straū-

[1] Octobonus the legate. edit. 1542. 1559.

[2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

gers to prepayre them to cõme into Englande for to ayde her lorde th[illegible] barons: she had also purchased a curse of the pope[1], to a curse all ŷ sai[illegible] theyr ayders and helpers; & had cõmyssyons directed to certayne bysshoppes to execut the same, as of Lõdon, & of Wynchester, & of Chychester, the whiche, of ŷ barons, than denyed and deferred the execucion and sentence of the sayd c[illegible] Wherfore ŷ quene made newe labour to ŷ pope[1], than Vrban the. iiii[t]., that had it graũte[illegible] that the sayd byshoppes for theyr disobedyence shuld be corrected; and for this Octobon, the foresaid legat, this yere, at a counsayl holden by hym and the clergy of Englande, at Paules churche in London, suspended the sayde bysshoppes and theym sent vnto Rome to be assoyled of [the pope, beynge, at this daye,] Clement the. iiii.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxvi.

Edwarde Blont.

Thomas Fiz Thomas. Anno. l.

Peter Aunger.

IN this. l. yere, vpon ŷ euyn of seŷt Thomas ŷ apostle, before Cristemas, was yelden by appoyntemẽt ŷ castell of Kenelworthe, at the whiche the kynge with his power had lyen, as before is sayde, frome Mydsomer tyll that day; and than gyuen ouer by sir Henry Hastynges & his complycis, vpon condycyon that he and all the other shulde haue lyfe and lym, and horse and harneys, with all thynges within the castell to theym belongynge, and a certayne tyme of leyser to cary away the same. And in this yere, in the tyme of Lent, were the wardeyns of ŷ. v. portes, reconcyled to ŷ kynge by fauour of syr Edwarde, ŷ kynges sone; and natwithstandynge the great harmys they had done by rouing vpon the see, aswell to Englysshe marchauntes as to other, they had to them confermyd all theyr fourmer pryuyleges: and ouer that to theym was graunted, ŷ if any man, Englyssh or other, wolde sewe for restitucion of good by theym before taken, or for the deth of any of theyr frendes before slayne, ŷ al such complayntes shuld be sued & shewed in theyr courts, & there to haue theyr matyers determyned & nat ellys where. But what ŷ cause was of this ende thus made atwene the kynge & theym it is nat shewed; but the cõmon fame at that daye ran, ŷ the sayd wardeyns of. v. portes had, at this daye, the domynyon of the see: wherfore the kynge was fayne to folowe their pleasures.

Aboute the feast of Philip & Iacob, the kynge helde his parlyamẽt at Northampton, at the whiche were confermyd the olde fraũchyses & lybertyes, by the kynges progenitours before graũted vnto the cytie of London, w^t a newe graunt for the shyre of Myddelsex. And at this parlyamẽt were disheryted many noble men of the lande, that before tyme had taken the barons partie; for whiche cause they accompanyed theym togyder, & robbed and reuyd in dyuers coosts of the lande, and toke the towne of Lyncolñ, & spoyled it, and after raunsomed many of the ryche burgeyses of the towne, and toke the Ile of Ely, & strengthed it in suche wyse ŷ they helde it longe after.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxvii.

Iohñ Adryan.

Willm̃ Fiz Richarde[4]. Anno. li.

Luke Badecot[5].

IN this. li. yere, at ŷ chosynge of the mayre, certayne contrauersies fyll attwene the rulers & the cõmons of the cytie of London; wherfore by aduyce of the mayre and aldermen, sir Roger Leyborne, w^t other, came vnto Guyldhalle, beynge harneysed vnder theyr gownes; and, vpon the Frydaye folowyng Halhalowyn, called the cõmons to the eleccion of the newe mayre, where the best of the cytie gaue the nominacion vnto Aleyn

[1] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542.
[2] thyrde. edit. 1542. 1559.
[3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] Alain Souch. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[5] Luke Betencourt. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

ŷ other cryed vpon Thomas Fiz Thomas,* whiche, at that tyme, was ndesore castell; wherfore the sayd Roger, with the assystence of the ner, toke the sayd rascall & euyll disposyd persones, and sent theym vnto dy- ons. This yere also the gentylmen that helde the Ile of Ely, brake oute sondry s, & dyd moche harme in Norfolke, and Suffolke, and Cambridgeshyre, and toke the ytie of Norwyche, and after the spoylyng therof caryed away with theym many of the cytezeyns, beynge ryche, and fynauncyd theym at great sūmes of money, and lyued there ī that ile lyke vnto outlawes. By this & other many hurtes in dyuers places of the lande was done by theuys, & other yll disposed people, wherof the charge was euer layde vnto [Li. 3. ca. 37.] ŷ forenamed gētylmē. Thē ŷ legat laboured vnto ŷ kynge, ŷ the sayd disheryted gentylmen myght purchase theyr landes of hym by fyne, & raunsome, by whose labour the kynge lastly agreed that the sayd gentylmen shulde haue theyr landes agayne by fynes of.v. yere value of theyr lande; as he that myght dispende. xx.*li.* by yere, shuld paye an. C.*li.* and so other after that rate, except sir Robert Ferers erle of Derby, sir Iohn̄ de la War, and hym that strake of the fyste of the kynges purseuaunt, and some other persones, whiche were of small hauoure, shuld be fyned by discrecion of the kynges counsayll; but this toke noo conclusion.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxviii.

Thomas Basynge.

Aleyn South. Anno. lii.

Robert de Cornhylle.

IN this. lii. yere, for what hap is nat expressed, Sir Gylbert de Clare erle of Gloceter refused the kynge, and, in the Marche of Walys, gaderyd vnto hym a stronge power; (to whome also drewe sir Iohn̄ Eyuile and other of the company disherited,) and after the feest of Crystemasse, with a great hoost came nere vnto London: that tyme, the popes* legat Octobonus beynge lodgyd at the Toure of London.

Whan ŷ mayre and aldermen of the cytie were ware of the erlis cōmynge with soo stronge a power, nat knowynge whether he were the kynges frende or nat, shytte the gates agayne his fore ryders; and for the kynge nor none of his counsayll was than nere vnto the cytie, the mayre and aldermē went vnto the legat, and requyred his counsayll, whether they shuld suffre the erle to entre into ŷ cytie or nat; wherunto the legat answer- *Fol. xli.* ed ŷ he thought nat the contrary, for he knewe wele that he was the kynges trewe subget and frende. It was nat lōge after, that a messanger came from the erle vnto the mayre, willyng to haue lycence to passe thorugh the cytie into Southwerke, where he entendyd to lodge hym and his people; which was graūted, & so ŷ erle passed thorough the cytie, and was lodged in Southwerke: to whom came shortly after, by Southerey syde, sir Iohn̄ Eyuile with a great company.

Than the mayre kept the gate of the brydge shyt, and watched it dayly with a certayne of armyd men, and, euery nyght, caused ŷ drawe brydge to be drawen, and the waters syde dayly and nyghtly to be watched with many armyd men. In lytell processe of tyme after, the legat & the erle agreed in such wyse that the erle, by his aduyce, was suffered w a certayn of his people to be lodged win ŷ cytie; by reason wherof he dayly drewe more & more of his people into ŷ cytie: so ŷ fynally many thynges were ordered by hym, and many of the cōmons toke his partie agayne the mayre and aldermen.

Then, in the Easter weke, he toke the keyes of the brydge & of the gates from the offycers of the cytie and delyuered theym to suche as pleased hym, and receyued into the cytie many of the disheryted persones, and gaue to theym fre lybertie, to passe the brydge by all houres of the daye and the nyght. The mayre of all this sent worde vnto ŷ kyng, whiche than was gaderinge of his power in Norffolk, and made hasty spede towarde Lon-

* behavoure. edit. 1542. 1559. * Hugh fitz Thomas. edit. 1559. *in marg.* Byshop of Romes. edit. 1542.

don.

don. In whiche meane tyme, the erle with his co
atwene the Toure and the cytie, and caste dykes &
and fortyfyed it wonderously.

Then many of the cytezeyns, ferynge a newe insurreccion, voyded the cytie as
ly as they myght, whose goodes the erle seased to his owne vse, or suffred his m
spoyle theym at theyr pleasure. Than the cōmons of ŷ cytie forgat theyr late punyssh
ment, and, as men without drede of God or of theyr kynge, toke certayne of the alder-
men, & caste theym in prysone, and sequestryd theyr goodes & dispoyled moche therof;
and therupon ranne to Guyldhalle, and there chose for their mayre, or for custos or ruler
of ŷ cytie, sir Richarde de Culworth knyght, and for baylyues Robert de Lynton & Ro-
ger Marshall, and discharged the olde mayre & sheryffes: and ŷ done all such prysoners
as were in Newgate, Ludgate, & Crepylgate, or in any other prysons wīn the cytie, for
bycause the barons warre before passed, they were delyuered & sette at lybertie.

Whan the legat behelde all this rebellion & discorde he repented hym of his fourmer
coūsayll gyuen vnto the mayre, and for he sawe he myght nat refourme ŷ erle of his er-
rour, he thretened hym with the censuries of the Churche, & to accurse hym as the dis-
heryted were. And vpon this he cōmaunded the deuyne seruyce to be sayd without note
and that the churche dores to be shytte in tyme of the seruyce doynge, and that no bell
were ronge vnto the sayde seruyce, and all to thentent that ŷ disheryted, whiche stode ac-
cursed, shuld nat entre the churches to here the deuyne seruyce of God.

Thenne vpon. iii. wekes after Easter, the kynge came to hym[t]. iii. myles from London
and was lodged hym selfe in the abbey of whyte monkes of Stratforde, whyther came vn-
to hym the legat soone after, and was lodged also in the same abbey, where for streyght-
nes of lodgynge his horse and mules were sette within the cloyster of the sayd abbey.
Then ŷ kynges hoost made dayly assautes vpon the cytie, and gunnes & other ordynaūces
was shotte into the cytie, whiche lytell or no thyng hurte the towne, it was so strongly for-
tyfied.

In this season the legat vpon his partye, and the kynge of Romayns vpon ŷ other par-
tie, for allyaunce that was atwene hym and ŷ erle of Glouceter, laboured so to the kynge
that a reformacōn of peas was spoken of; durynge whiche treaty, the souldyourrs lyinge in
Southwerke made many robboryes in Southerey and other places, & rowed ouer to West-
mynster, and spoyled there the kynges palays, and deuoured his wyne, & breke the glasse
of the wyndowes, and all other necessaryes to that palayes they distroyed and wasted;
and somtymes came in lykewyse into London, and robbed there also. Of the whiche there
was taken. iiii. that bare ŷ conysaunce of the erle of Derby, the whiche the erle caused
theyr handes and legges to be bounden, and than put into a sacke, and so caste into the
Thamys.

Aboute the feast of seint Barnabe, the peas atwene the kyng and the erle of Glouceter
was concluded: after the whiche concluciōn taken, the erle remouyd out of ŷ cytie, and
was lodged agayne in Southwerke, and the kynge entred the cytie the Sonday before
Mydsomer Daye, and forthwith the kynges proclamacions were made thorough the cytie
of the peas bytwene the kynge and the erle. And after was gyuen lybertie to the dis-
heryted persones that they shulde haue. xi. dayes respyte to shyft for theym selfe; that
is to meane outher to auoyde to suche places where they myght be in some suertie, or
ellys to agree to the former composicion made by the legat, and to pay the. v. part of
the stynte of theyr landes, certayne persones to be excepted, as before is rehersed. And
as towchyng to the erle, and suche other as before were nat disheryted, with also the cy-
tezeyns of London, to be clerely forgyuen and pardoned.

And than was restored to theyr offyces, Aleyne Sowch for mayre, & Thomas Basynge

[t] to Ham.

[redacted]es, and the aldermen, whiche before were deposyd, [redacted]s and offyces.

[redacted] Wednysday [redacted] the legat interdyted all the cytie, whiche endured from [redacted]e clocke in ỹ mornynge tyll. iii. of the clok the next daye at afternone, and than discharged vpon the othe of. ii. cõmons, sworne in the name of all the cytie, that the cytie shulde stande to the ordenaunce and iugement of holy Churche. But an other Cronycle sayth that this interdiccyon shulde haue contynued longer, ne had been the sterenesse of the Londoners, which helde the legat so streyght that they enforced hym to withdrawe that sentence vpon the foresayd condycion.

Than, after this, all the bulwerkes and barbycans made by the erle in the cytie were plucked clene vp, and the dyches fylled that no part of theym was seen. Whan ỹ cytezens shuld haue theyr newe pardon graunted, an obstacle was made, for somoch as they as yet had nat recompensyd the kynge of Romayns for the subuercion of his mane of Thystylworth, for the whiche was axed. vi.M. marke; so that fynally with great labour and frendshyp, they agreed to gyue vnto hỹ for a mendes a thousande marke, to be payed in two yeres.

It was nat longe after the kynge accepted to his grace syr Iohñ Eyuyle, syr Nicholas de Segrane, syr Wyllyam Marmerin or Mermyon, syr Richarde Gray, syr Iohñ fiz Iohñ and syr Gylbert de Lucy w̃ other; and accorde was also made atwene syr Edwarde the kynges sone & ỹ forenamed erle of Gloceter. And than was all fortresses & other defences, which before tyme were there made i Southwerk & i other places ioynynge to the same, pullyd vp & distroyed, and the erle & al other souldyours clene voyded. And after all thynges set in ordre & reste, except such as yet kept the He of Ely, the kynge rode to Shrowysbury, where he taryed a season for to cõmon of matyers atwene hym & Lewelyn prynce of Walys.

Mi. xiii. The kynge thus beyng at Shrowysbury, a wryt was directed to sir Aleyn Souch mayre of London. viii. dayes before Michilmas from the kynge, chargynge hym ỹ the cytezens shuld nat procede to eleccion of newe shyreffes tyl his cõmynge to London, but to suffre the olde to abyde styll in offyce.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxviii. William de Durham[1]. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxix.

Aleyn South[2]. Anno. liii.

Walter Henry[3].

IN this. liii. yere, in ỹ moneth of Nouembre, fyll a varyaunce atwene the felysshyppes of goldsmythes & taylloures of London, whiche grewe to makynge of parties, so that w̃ the goldsmythes toke partie the felysshep or craft of [redacted], and with the taylloures helde ỹ craft of stayners[4]; by meane of this moche people nyghtly gaderyd in the stretes in harneys, and at length as it were prouyded, the thirde nyght of the sayd parties mette vpon the nombre of. v.C. men on both sydes, & ran togyder with such vyolence that some were slayne & many wounded. Then outcry was made, so that ỹ shyreffes, with strengthe of other cõmons, came to the ryddynge of theym, and of theym toke certayne persones, and sent theym vnto dyuers prysons; & vpon the morowe, such serche was made, ỹ the moste of the chief causers of that fray were taken and put in warde.

Then vpon the Fryday folowynge sayn̄t Katheryns daye, sessyons were kepte at Newgate by the mayre and Laurence de Broke iustyce & other, where. xxx. of the sayd persones were arregned of felony, and. xiii. of theym caste and hanged: and for one Godfrey de Beuyrlay holpe to arme one of the sayde persones, he was also caste amonge the other. In Lent folowynge the kynge, beyng at Westmynster, comanded the mayre of

[1] William de Duremson. edit. 1559. [2] Souch. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] Walter Hervie. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [4] Cordewayners. MS.

London

London to present vnto hym. vi. persones, suche [illegible] whiche. vi. so presented, the kynge chase, ii. for to b[illegible] de Durham and Walter Henry, & then caused them to [illegible] that they [illegible] the profytes of the cytie, & to gyue a trewe accompt before the barons of his exc[illegible]

And the morowe after seynt Iamys daye, of[1] the. xxvi. daye of Iulii, the kynge [illegible] charged syr Aleyn Souch mayre, and made Stephan Edworth constable of the Toure and custos of the cytie of London. Of these rulers of the cytie, after the yere that Thomas fitz Thomas was maire, are dyuers oppynyons; for after some wryters, from that yere, whiche was ỹ. xlviii. yere of kynge Henry, tyll the. lviii. yere of his reygne, in which yere Iohñ Adrian draper was mayre, were al custodyes & gardeyns, and no mayres; & who tho that was than constable of the Toure of London, was also custos of the cytie. Aboute this tyme also, by medyacion and meanes of syr Edwarde, alle suche disheryted persones as kepte the Ile of Ely were reconciled vnto the kynge, and all fortresses & defences therin by theym made, plukked away & distroyed. And in this moneth of Iulii, Octabonus the legat, after he had made many good rules in the Churche, nat with out great charge of dymes leuyed of ỹ same, toke his leue of the kyng and rode towarde ỹ see syde with great treasour, and so retourned in processe of tyme to Rome; where after Innocent the fyfth, aboute the yere of our Lorde. xii. C. lxxvi. he was chosen & creatid pope[2], and than named Adrian the. v. of that name, & died within. l. dayes of his eleccion. This yere also, for somoche as many of the cytezeyns of London, for the great imposicion and charge ỹ they were sette at towarde the fyne of. xx. M. marke forenamed, with other charges, voyded the cytie w theyr housholdes and goodes, and enhabyted theym in dyuers places of the lande, thynkynge therby to be acquyted of ỹ sayd sessynge or charge; wherfore the other of the cytie which remayned, made instant laboure to ỹ kyng, & had it graũted, that all such as for the sayd cause had voyded theyr goodes oute of the cytie shuld be distreyned by the sheriffe of ỹ shyre where they than dwelled, and forcyd to pay all suche sũmes as they before were assessed at.

And in the moneth of September, the forenamed. v. cytezeyns whiche remayned prysoners in the Toure of Wyndesore, that is to saye Thomas Fiz Thomas, Mychaell Tony, Stephen Bukkerell, Thomas Pywelysdon and Iohñ de la Flete, as before in ỹ ende of the. xlviii. yere is expressyd, made at this season theyr ende with syr Edwarde the kynges sone, for great sũmes of money, and were delyuered.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxix. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxx.

Willyam Haddistok,

Thomas fitz Thomas. Anno. xliiii.

Anketyll de Aluerne.

IN this. liiii. yere beganne an harde froste aboute the fest of seynt Andrewe and enduryd tyll it was nere vnto Candelmasse, the whiche was so feruent that Thamys aboue ỹ brydge atwene London & Westmynster was so harde frosyn ỹ men & beestes passed ouer on fote from Lambhyth to Westmynster, and so vpwarde in dyuers places to Kyngstone; & marchaũdyse was caryed from Sandwych and other hauyns of the see vnto London by lande, for that shyppes at that season myght nat entre into ỹ ryuer of Thamys.

And aboute the feast of seynt Vedast fyll suche plente of water, that Thamys flowyd and rose so hygh that the lyke therof was nat seen by men than lynynge; wherof ensuyd moch harme aboute London: for the selers by the water syde were all drowned, and in theym great plente of marchaũdyse perysshed and loste. In this yere, in the begynnynge of Lent, the kynge gaue vnto sir Edwarde his sone the rule of the cytie of London, with al reuenues and profytes to it belongynge; after whiche gyft, the sayd sir Edwarde made sir Hughe the sone of Othon, constable of the Toure and custos of the cytie.

[1] or. [2] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542.

And

[redacted]suynge, sir Edmunde ỹ kynges other sone, surnamed [redacted]er, the doughter of therle of Aumarle; for solempnyte [redacted] kynge kepte [redacted] the great halle, a great honourable feast, the Sonday fo-

And vpon the daye of seynt Erkenwalde, or the laste day of Apryll next ensuynge, sir Edwarde the kynges sone cõmaunded the cytezeyns of London to present vnto hym. vi. persones able to be shyreffes of London; of the whiche he admytted to that offyce William de Hadestok & Anketyll de Aluerũ, and sware theym to be accomptaũtes, as theyr predecessours were. And the. vi. day of May folowynge presented at Guyldhalle, and there charged of newe.

At these dayes, a newe custome or toll was vsed to be payde by the cytezeyns of Lõdon vnto ỹ kynge, whiche toll sir Edwarde than had letten to ferme to a marchaunt straũger for. xx. marke by yere; wherfore the cytezeyns, nat wyllyng to be vnder the rule of a straũger, made great suyte vnto the sayd sir Edwarde, & lastly agreed with hym to byȝ the sayd tolle fre for ỹ sũme of. CC. marke.

[And in the ende of this yere, that is to meane ỹ. xiii. daye of Octobre, the kynge lette translate with great solempnytie, the holy body of seynt Edwarde kynge and Confessour, that before laye in the syde of the quere, where the monkes nowe synge, into ỹ chapell at the backe of the hyghe aulter of Westmester abbey, & there layde it in a ryche shryne.][1] And in this yere the kynge had graũted to hym, towarde his vyage purposed by hym into the Holy Lande, the. xx. peny of euery mãnes substaũce mouable thoroughe out his lande, of the lay fee, [and of the spyritualte,][2] by assent of the. x. Gregory than pope. iii. dysmes, to be leuyed in thre yeres.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxx. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxi.

Walter Porter.

Iohñ Adryan Vyntener[3]. Anno. lv.

Iohñ Teylour.

IN this. lv. yere, the kyng of Romaynes concluded a couenaunt atwene the kynge and sir Gilbert de Clare erle of Glouceter, for a vyage to be taken into ỹ Holy Lande by ỹ sayd erle for the kynge; for the whiche vyage, the sayd erle shuld haue towarde his charge. viii.M. marke[4], and at the takinge of his shyppyng other. iiii.M. marke, and to be redy by the firste day of Maii next folowynge: and if ỹ erle were nat redy at the sec syde at that daye with his company to take his shyppyng, he shulde than forfayte to the kynge. ii.M. marke: for suertie wherof ỹ sayd erle shuld delyuer into the kynges possession his castell of Henleger, standynge vpon ỹ Marche of Walys. But this came after to no purpose; wherfore the cause is nat shewed, but that iourney was perfourmed by sir Edwarde the kynges sone, as after shalbe to you declared.

In this passe tyme the cytezeyns of London cõtented so wele sir Edwardes mynde that he laboured so for theym vnto the kynges grace, ỹ they had than theyr charto so cõfermyd, that they shuld, after theyr auncient lyberties, chose of theym self a mayre &. ii. shyreffes, and the sayd shyreffes to haue the offyces therunto belongynge, to ferme, as they tofore had, except that where tofore they payde for the fee ferme. CCC. & l.li., nowe they shuld paye. CCCC. &. l.li. After whiche confirmacion thus graunted and passed by ỹ kynges brode seale, the citezeyns, vpon the. xiii. daye of Iulii, assembled at Guyldehall, and chase for their mayre Iohñ Adryan draper, and for shyreffes Walter Porter[5] and Iohñ Tayller; and vpõ the. xvi. day folowynge, sir Edwarde beynge present, presented

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542-1559. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. [3] Draper. MS. [4] *Here the following sentence, which occurs in the Museum* MS., *seems to have been omitted.* "Of the which he shuld have in hand. iiii.M. marke." [5] Walter Potter. edit. 1559.

theyn.

theym vnto the kyng at Westminster, where they were
was sir Hughe of Othon discharged of that rule of the cy
Then the cytezens of theyr fre wyll gaue vnto the kynge an. C. marke, and
warde. v.C. marke, which gyft the kynge wele accepted, and soone after they receyu
theyr chartoure of confirmacion, beryng date the. xxi. day of Iulii, and yere of the
kynges reygne. lv. And for ỹ former conuencyon atwene the kynge & the erle of Glou-
ceter was nat holden, sir Edwarde toke vpon hym the kynges crosse; to whom the kyng
gaue all suche money as was graunted of the lay fee, as before is shewed, & then toke
[his leue of the kyng, and after][1] toke shyppyng at Douer the. xx. day of Auguste, & so
sayled to Burdeaux with his wyfe and other noble company. And for that [holy][1] Lowys
than kynge of Fraunce was gone, he taryed at Burdeaux a certayñ season, and after sped
hym with his foresayd company towarde the cytie of Thunys, where the Frensshe kynge
was; but or he came thyder [seynt][1] Lowys was deed, and the peas cõcluded atwene
Phylyp his sone and the kynge of Thunys. Wherfore sir Edwarde entendynge to greue
Goddes enemyes, with some knightes of Frañce which entended the same, toke leue of the
Frenshe kynge and of sir Charles his vncle, than kyng of Scycile, and sayled further into
ỹ Holy Lande, and arryued at a port of Acris or Acon; for at that daye in the Holy
Lande was no mo cytics in the possession of Cristen men but that & the cytie of Tire,
with certayne castelles, whereunto the Cristen fledde often for socoure agayne the Sa-
razyns.

Whan sir Edwarde was comen to the cytie of Acon, the Cristen knyghtes receyued hym
with great honoure & gladnesse, and lodged hym in their best maner, where he taryed
by the space of a yere after, as affermeth the Frenshe Cronycle: for it was nat longe af-
ter his cõmynge thyder, but that ỹ sowdan of Sury, the which had won all the countres
there aboute, that he came w a great power of Sarazyns, and assauted the towne vygur-
ously; but sir Edwarde, with the ayde of Cristen men, bare hym so knightly, that he de-
fended the cytie & castelles to the same belongynge, & terrytoris of the same, that the
sowdan for all the great multitude and power gat there lytell honour, natwithstandynge ỹ
he had in his host, as affermeth the Frensh Cronycle, ouer an. C.M. Sarazyns. And
more as affermyth the sayde Cronycle, that sir Edwarde in his polycies & manfull actes
so honourably behauyd hym that he neuer dyd suche acte in all his lyfe folowynge: al-
beit that after he dyd many of great honoure, that was lyke vnto the actes ỹ he there ac-
complysshed & broughte vnto ende, by reason wherof his name amonge the infydelles,
was had in memory many yeres after.

Of this honour of this marcyal knyght I haue shewed the lenger rehersall for somoche
as I fynde it testifyed of the Frenshemẽ, the which I knowe well by their other Cronycles
that they make of Englysshe prynces must be of great auctorytie, or ellys by theym it
shuld nat so specyally haue ben noted; and more I am assured that if a Frenshe prynce
had deseruyd suche a generall preyse, it shuld haue ben set out & articuled euery act
therof, ỹ it shuld haue conteyned a large werke, and the specialties therof declared to
theyr moste lawde and honoure. Then this noble prynce beynge thus in Acon, and day-
ly pottyng the Suryens[2] to shame & great damages, seynge they might nat preuayle agayne
hym by strength of batayll, kyst howe they myght destroye hym by treason, and sent vn-
to hym a Sarazyn in name of a messanger; the whiche, in tellyng of his fayned message,
woũded hym with a knyf enuenomyd, of the whiche woũde he lay longe or he were therof
curyd; but, after confession made by the Sarazyn of all his compassed treason, he was put
vnto cruell deth.

In this yere also fyll downe the steple of seyt Mary Bowe i Chepe of London, and
slewe women[3] & children.

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Sarazyns, edit. 1542. 1559. [3] men, women, MS.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxii.

Adryan Vyntener. Gregory Rokkisl

Anno. lvi.

Henry Waleys.

IN this. lvi. yere, in the moneth of Nouēbre, at ỹ parlyament holden at Westmester, the marchauntes of Lōdon & other places of Englande complayned theym to the kynge that the countesse of Flaundres had taken from them certayñ goodes, amoūtynge to a great sūme: vpon whiche cōplaynt, the kynge sent to her to make restytucion, but it' for none was had, the kyng cōmaunded ỹ all men beynge in ỹ parties in Englande shulde be arrestyd, and they and theyr goodes to be vnder suer kepynge. By the whiche meane, in conclucion she sent ouer enbassadours, and besought the kynge this' his marchauntes myght vse their entercourse into Flaūdres as they before tymes had done, and suche losses as before was by theym susteyned shuld be recompensyd, and so soone after an amytie atwene ỹ kynge & her was concluded.

IN this yere, aboute ỹ ende of Marche, dyed Richarde kynge of Almayne and erle of Cornewayle, brother to the kynge, and was buryed at Hayles an abbey of whyte monkes by hym before tymes buyldyd; after he had ben kynge of Almayñ by the terme of. xv. yeres: but after the rehersal made before, in the. xxx. yere of this kyng Henry, he shuld reygne. xxvi.' yeres. In the moneth of Iunii ỹ monasterii of the Trinite in ỹ cytie of Norwyche was consumed with fyre, by reason of a frayre' made atwene the seruauntes of the abbey, and some of ỹ cytezeyns of the cytie, which grewe to a great skyrmysshe: for the pryour of the same and other of the monkes purueyed sowdiours, and helde the belfray & the churche by force of armys, and threwe oute stones and dartes, and shot many arroweas, by reason wherof many of ỹ towne were both wounded and slayne, whiche brought the comons and yonge mē in suche a furye and madnesse, that they fyryd the gates, and after forced the fyre with rede and drye wood, that the churche with the bookes and all other ornamentes of the same, and all houses of offyce belongynge to the same abbey, were clere' brent and throwene downe, so that no thynge was preseruyd except a lytell chapell.

Whan tydynges of this ryot came to the kynges knowlege, he was therwith greuously displeasyd, so that he rode thyder soone after, and there cōmaūded questes to be charged of knyghtes and esquyres that dwelled in the countre aboute, and to endyte all suche persones as were occacyoners & executours of that dede: by reason of which enquery, fynally were caste and iuged vpon the nombre of. xxx. yonge men of ỹ towne, the whiche were after drawen to ỹ place of execucion, and there hanged & brent, to the great discomfyture and sorowe of the cytezeyns: for they thought ỹ pryour of the place was the occacioner of all ỹ myschief; whiche was borne out and defended by the bysshop of Norwyche, than beynge named Roger. And this yere were dyuers prodygies & straūge tokyns sene in dyuers places of Englande: amonge the whiche, at Grenewiche beside London, a lambe was yenyd, hauynge. ii. perfyte bodyes with all membres and but one heed.

Anno Domini. xii. C.lxxii.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxiii.

Richarde Paris.

Sir Walter Henry[6].

Anno. lvi.

Iohñ Bedyll.

IN this. lvii. yere of kynge Henry, and begynnynge of ỹ same, the kyng sykened so ỹ he was forcid to kepe his bed at Westmynster, where he called before hym sir Gilbert

[1] it. *omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] that. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] xvi. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] a fraye. [5] clene. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [6] Sir Walter Hervy. edit. 1559, *in marg.*

de Clare erle of Glouceter, and caused hym to be newly sworne to kepe the peas of the lande, to the behofe of Edwarde his sone; and than dyed vpon the daye of seynt Edmunde the bysshop, or the. xvi. daye of Nouembre, and was buryed vpon the south syde of seynt Edwarde in Westmynster, when he hadde reygned. lvi. yeres and. xxviii^{t}. dayes, leuynge after hym sir Edwarde beforenamed for his heyre, and Edmunde Crowchbak. In a table hangynge vpon ỹ tombe of the sayd Henry, are wryten these verses folowynge.

Tercius Henricus iacet hic, pietatis amicus:
Ecclesiam strauit istam quam post renouauit.
Reddat ei munus qui regnat trinus et vnus.

The whiche may be Englysshed as foloweth.

The frende of pyte and of almesse dede,
Henry the thirde, whylome of Englande kynge,
Who this churche brake, and after to his mede
Agayne renewyd into this fayre buyldynge,
Nowe restyth in here, whiche dyd so great a thynge:
He yelde his mede, that lorde in deyite
That as one God reygneth in persones thre.

FRANCIA.

Lodouici. ix.

LOwys the. ix. of that name, and son vnto the seconde Philyp, began his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce in the yere of our Lord. xii. C. xxiii., and the. vii. yere of the thirde Henry, then kynge of Englande. This Lowys was crowned at Raynes, vpon [the daye of seynt Sixtus the pope, or] ỹ. vi. daye of August. By the meane of this Lowys, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, retourned the blode of Pepyn to ỹ enherytaunce of the crowne of Fraunce[1], whose name was Isabell, doughter of Bawdewyn erle of Henaut; whiche Bawdewyn was dyscendyd of Ermẽgaut[2], somtyme countesse of Namoure, whiche was doughter to Charles duke of Lorayne, the whiche Charlys was lynyally discended of Charles the Conquero[r], that was sone of Charles Martellus, the sone of Pepyn. *Fol. xlv.*

Whan this Lowys had passed the solempnytie of his coronacion, he made a vyage into ỹ countre of Poytiers, and there wanne from the Englisshe men certayne castelles & townes, as before in the. x. yere of Henry the thirde is towched: the whiche vyage by hym fynysshed, he, at ỹ cõtemplacyon and prayer of kynge Iohñ, kynge of Iherusalem, toke vpon hym ỹ crosse to warre vpon the Turkes, and after all thynges for that vyage made redy, passed with his hoost by Burges and Nemers, and so to Lyon, and from Lyon to Auygnon: the whiche for disobedience to the Churche of Rome, had stande[3] accursyd vpon the terme of. vii. yeres. But where as kynge Lowys supposed he shuld haue passed with his people, as he had passed the other cyties, the cytezyns closed ỹ gates agayne hym, and wolde nat suffre hym nor his to come win the cytie.

Wherefore the kynge cõmaunded assaute to be made, and so contynued there his siege tyl ỹ myddel of August, the which was begon about ỹ ende of Nouembre, and loste there many of his men, amonge the whiche Guy erle of Seynt Paule, a man of great fame, was one, with the bysshop of Lomeryk and other, to the nombre of. ii. M. or theraboute; wherwith this Lowys was so amouyd ỹ he made a solempne othe that he wolde nat departe thens tyll he had wonne the towne.

[1] xxvii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. *The edition of 1559. adds here,* by meane of his wyfe. [3] Emengard, edit. 1559. *in marg.* [4] Flondyn. MS.

Whenne

Whenne that the rulers of the towne had knowlege of the kynges auowe and promesse that he had made, they toke aduysement, & shortly after sent vnto the kynge, ii. noble men of the cytie to entreate and comon of a peas: but peas was to theym vtterly denyed, except they wolde submytte theym hooly to the correccion of the pope', [for the offence done to God and his Churche of Rome,]² and after to stande to the kynges dome for displeasure done agayne hym. In the ende thoughe this condycion were greatly agayne theyr mynde, it was lastly agreed vnto, and the kynge with his people was receyued into the cytie: and after he hadde restyd hym there a season, & that the cytezyns had agreed theym with the popes' legate, and receyued of hym absolucyon, with a newe bysshop named Peter Corbio of the popes' eleccion than Gregory the. ix., with other thynges done accordynge to the sayd popes' comaundement, then kynge Lowys comaunded firste the dyches of ỹ towne to be fylled playne with the grounde, & that done, he caused to be caste vnto the earth. CCC. of the fayrest houses of the cytie; and after certayne sūmes of money by hym receyued towarde his charge, he departed thens towarde Tholowse, & there by aduyce of his barony, for somoche as wynter was towarde, he retourned into Fraūce, and so sped hym on his iourney, ỹ vpon the euyn of All Saymtes he came to a place called Moūt Pauncer in ỹ prouynce of Aluerne, where he was taken w stronge sykenesse, and dyed within. iiii. dayes after. Whose corps with great honoure was conueyed vnto seynt Denys, and there buryed by his fader, when he had reygned, iii. yeres; leuynge after hym a sone, the whiche is nowe named seynt Lowys, and was than aboute the age of xii. yeres or nere thereaboute.

LOwys the. x. of that name, surnamed seynt Lowys, and son of the. ix. Lowys, laste kynge, beganne his reygne ouer the lande of Fraunce in the moueth of Nouember, and yere of grace. xii. C. &. xxvi., and the. x. yere of Henry the thirde, then kynge of Englande, the whiche for his tendernesse of youthe was thoughte insuffycyent to take so great a charge, and specyally of the duke of Brytayne, than named Peter Mancler, the whiche encensid and styred many noble men agayne the sayd Lowys: but at length by prouycion of Quene Blanche his moder, and other lordes, he subdued his enemyes, & at Raynes was crowned in the moneth of December folowyng, of the bysshop of Soysons, for so moche as at that tyme the see of Raynes was voyde.

The iiii. yere of his reygne, and of his age. xvii. he buylded the house of religion called Royan Moūt, and sette therin monkes of Cisteaux ordre, whyte monkes, and endowed them with ryche possessyons. It was nat longe after, that great varyaunce fyll atwene the vnyuersytie or studientes of Parys and the cytezeyns of the same, in suche wyse, that the studyentes were in purpose to haue lafte that cytie, & to haue kept theyr study elys where: the whiche stryfe the Frenshe boke expresseth nat the cause; but he sayth that the kynge made good spede to agree theym, for so moche as kynge Henry of Englande had made laboure to the sayd studyentes to come into his countre, and to enhabyte theim there, with many great pryuyleges. But in conclucion the Frenshe kynge so entreated theym, that they agreed to reste there styll, and that of a congruency, for they myght dwell in no lāde where they shulde more surely be defended: for the kynge of Fraunce berith the floure de lyce for one of that causes, that is to say for to defende the clergy, and the fayth of Criste, betokenyth the myddle leef, and the thirde betokenyth chyualry, so that by the chyualry the clergy is defended, which maynteyne the fayth of holy Churche. About this season kynge Lowys maryed to his fere Margaret, the doughter of the erle of Prouynce. Soone after that matrimony was solempnysed, Frederyk the seconde, before in the story of Henry ỹ thirde mynded emperour of Almayne, sent vnto Lowys, requyrynge hym that he wolde mete hym at a place called Valcoloure, to the ende that he myght comō with hym; whiche request kyng Lowys accepted, and with a goodly company kept there his day of metynge: but whan the emperour was ware ỹ he was comen

¹ Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. ² *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

thyder

thyder with such a company, he fayned hym syke and broke his appoyntement: wherfore the Frenshmen construyed that if the kynge had comen thyder with a small or weke copany, he wolde haue cõueyed hym into hygh Almayn, & there to haue kept hym tyll he had of hym his pleasure, concernynge the warre atwene kynge Henry and hym, or in other thynges. But when kynge Lowys espyed ỹ delucion of ỹ emperour he thenne returned into Fraũce. It was nat longe after that the kyng was enfourmed of the obstynacy of the Albygensis, the whiche of longe tyme had ben effected w̃ dyuers poyntes of herysy, and many tymes reconcyled by the kynges of Fraunce and other, and yet fallen agayne to the sayde errour; wherfore the kynge sent vnto sir Iohñ Beawmoũt, ỹ which ioyned vnto them, chargynge hym to enuade ỹ coũtre and to wast & distroy it, tyl he had forced theim to restore to the Churche suche goodes as they before had taken from it: and ouer that to cause theym to make a mendes to the good Cristen people, whiche they had harmed by meanes of their rapynes & extorcions: vpon whiche cõmaundement thus from the kynge receyued, the sayde Iohñ, with a competent nombre of knyghtes, entred the sayd coũtre, and layde siege to a stroge castell named Moũt Royall, & after many fort assautes wanne the sayd castell & manned it w̃ Frenshemen, & than yode to an other stronge holde than named Saygos, and there lyke wyse orderyd the same: & after wastynge the countre, wañe from theym many townes and holdes, so that in the ende he forcyd ỹ chief rulers of that prouynce to obey them to all his liestes, & delyuered to hym suerties or hostages for the perfourmaunce of the same, so that he retourned into Fraũce with great pompe and honour, and receyued of the kynge, at his home cõmynge, great thanke with many ryche gyfts. Aboute the. xv. yere of kynge Lowys the warre was quyckenyd atwene this Lowys & Henry the. iii. than kynge of Englande, for causes before shewed in the. xxvi.' yere of the sayd Henry. And after ỹ warre as there is shewed ended, the kynge whiche was towarde the cytie of Lyon, to ha vicited pope [a]Innocent the iiii. which thyder was fled, for fere of Frederik the forenamed emperour, the kynge was taken with a sykenesse named dissenteria of[1] ỹ flux; wherewith he was so grenously vexed, that he laye longe at a towne called Poyntoyse, & was in great ieopardy of lyfe: where lastly after many pylgrymages for him done, with prayers & other obseruaũces, longe to accompt, lastly[2] it came to his mynde that if it pleased God to restore hym to his helth, he wold make a vyage into the holy lande; and there warre vpon Cristes enemyes, after whiche promyse solemply auowed, he mended dayly, & was soone after restoryd vnto his helth. Whan the kyng was recouеryd & retourned vnto Parys, he called a coũsayll of[4] spũall & temporall, and there shewed vnto theym of the promesse whiche he had made, requyrynge theym of theyr assystence and ayde, wherin he fonde his lordes were agreable. *Fol. xlvi.*

And in the tyme & season that prouycion was made for that iourney, the kynge with a goodly company rode vnto the abbey of Cluny, to vysyte the foresayd pope[3]; and[6] he taryed with hym xv. dayes; and after his matyer with hym sped, w̃ playne remyssion to hym grauted, & all other that kept with hym ỹ vyage, he retourned into Fraunce, & vpon Wytsondaye folowynge, he kept a great courte of his londes[5] at Meleon: where, in presence of them, he called before hỹ Beatrice, doughter vnto the erle of Prouynce, and suster to the quene his wyfe, and there gaue her in maryage vnto Charles his brother, and made hym there knight with many other for his loue. And the day folowynge, he gaue vnto the said Charles ỹ erledome of Amon, with the lordshyp of Mayn: and soone after he rode to Parys, where he assembled many of his lordes to holde w̃ hym his iourney.

THe Fryday folowynge the feast of Pentheeost, in ỹ yere of. xii. C. and xliiii. and. xxii. yere of the reygne of the sayd Lowys, he, with many of his lordes, departed from Parys vpon his iournay towarde the holy lande; in whiche was croysed also the archebisshop of

[1] xvi. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] or. [4] Of his lordes. MS.
[5] Innocent the iiii. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] Where. MS. Lords. MS.

Bourges, and of Raynes, the bysshoppes of Laon, of Orleaunce, and of Beauuais, the erles of Artoys, of seyn Paule, of Bloy, of Barre, of Marche, and of Mountfort, with many other noble men, whiche were longe to rehearce; with the whiche company, the kynge passed thorugh Burgoyn, and so to Lyon, the vntermost border of Fraūce, where the kynge fonde at that tyme the forenamed pope[1], which there taryed for fere of the emperour Frederyk.

Whan ỹ kynge a season had there taryed with ỹ pope[2], he sent forth the vawne warde of his host, towarde ỹ place called Ague Mort[3], and shortly after folowed hym self with the rest of his people. But certayn of his vawarde passynge by a castell, called ỹ Roche of Clin, were spoyled & robbyd, and some slayne; wherof the kynge beyng enfourmed, charged his knyghtes to assaute the sayd castell: the whiche was done, and ỹ souldyours hanged. and the castell made playne w̄ the grounde. And after held on his way tyll he cam to the foresayd port of Ague Mort[3], or the Deed See, where he took shyppynge, and so sayled forthe vpon Bartylmewe euen, or the. xxiiii[4]. daye of August, and landed after in the prouynce of Cipre, where he taryed all the wynter folowynge, for some part of his host that as yet was behynde, wher, of the kyng he was ioyously receyued, and at his departynge thens, kept company with hym in the same iourney. But there fortune begā to frowne vpon kyng Lowys, for in ỹ tyme of his there tarying, moch of his people sykened and dyed; amonge the whiche, passed to God these men of name folowynge, the bysshop of Bauuais, the erlys of Mountforde, of Barr, & of Vendesme; with dyuers other, to the nombre of. CC.xl. Whan kyng Lowys had perceyued al thyse troubles & dissencios[5], amonge his people, & dāger of takynge of ỹ see, passed the wynter, & a parte of the begynnynge of the yere: lastly, aboute Trinyte Sonday, he toke shyppynge at the porte of Cypre, then named Dommeton or Dommeson, and landed nere vnto ỹ cytie of Damasse or Damyet the Frydaye after. Whan the Cristen host were comyn nere vnto the porte of Damasse, the kynge caused theim to be shypped in small vesselles, and so in ordre, to sayle or rowe towarde the cytie; but the Sarazeyns beynge ware of theyr cōmynge, issued out of the cytie, and defended ỹ porte vigorously: so that many a Cristen man was slayne at that recounter. But in the ende the discomfitur tourned vpon the Sarazeyns, for the chief capytayne of the towne, with. ii. admyralles, were there slayne, and many of theyr knyghtes. Then they gaue backe vnto ỹ towne, and suffered the Cristen to lande. The kynge then pyght his pauylyons, and strengthed his felde, for sodayne brekynge out of the Turkes; and so restyd hym and his people the Sonday & Monday folowynge. As faste as ỹ Cristen made prouycion to ordre for their suer lyeng in the felde, so fast the Turkes wan the towne made purueyaunce, to conuey suche goodes as they myght out of the cytie; and lastly, sette the houses on fyre, and voyded vnknowynge to the Cristen hoost. Anone as the flambe of the fyre appered, the Cristen men without resystence, entred the cytie and quenched ỹ fyre, and after possessyd the cytie. Here I passe ouer certayne legacions & messages sent fro a prynce of ỹ Oryent vnto kyng Lowys, wherin appereth more fame of wordes than of thinges of trouth. Then the temples and sinagoges of the cytie were hallowed, and occupyed to Cristen mennes vse: and there ỹ kynge with his hoost restyd hym tyll the moneth of Nouēber folowynge, in ỹ whiche season came vnto hȳ the erle of Poytiers, with a fayre company. Thenne the kyng Lowys with his people departed from Damasse the. xx. day of Nouembre, by the ryuer of Nilus, passynge w̄ small vesselles towarde a stronge holde called Maffour, whyther at length they came w̄ gret dāger. Howbeit they myght nat come nere vnto the towne, to laye theyr siege therunto, by cause of a ryuer there runnynge, named Thanoys or Thanoes; wherfore the kynge pyght his pauylyons atwene the sayd ryuer, and the ryuer of Nilus. In this whyle ỹ the

[1] Innocent the iiii. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Byshop of Rome, edit. 1542. [3] Aque Mort. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] xxiii. MS. [5] *Here the* MS. *and subsequent Editions read,* not all wythowte troubles, as dyssencions.

Cristen

Cristen hoost was thus lodged, worde was brought to the kynge, that the Sowdan of Babylon was dede; the whiche, before his deth, had prouyded a great host to be sent into Egipt, to withstande ỹ Christen hoost, and had cõmytted the rule thereof, vnto an hardy and valyaunt Turke, named, Saphardyne the which, w a great people, cam downe to this towne of Massour or Macour, and there dayly made assautes vpon the Cristen hoost: so that atwene theym were had many bykeringes and skyrmysshes to both damages. Lastly ỹ kynge aduertysyng in his mynde, that he myght nothynge dere ỹ Sarazeyns without he might passe that ryuer of Thanoys, concluded by aduyce of his maryners, to make a brydge of shyppes, [so that fynally he cheyned & fastened his shyppes][1] to gyder in such wyse, that a passage was made for his knightes.

Whan the Turkes espyed this ordenaunce, and apperceyued wele that if the Cristen hoost had passed that ryuer it shuld be to theyr great dysauauntage, anone with all ordenaunce and shot that they myght make, they dyd ỹ vttermost of theyr powers to let ỹ perfytynge of this brydge and passage of the Cristen host. And to this fyll an other contrarye to ỹ Cristen: for the water of ỹ ryuer, whiche was brode & depe, was so troublous of wawe[2], that the brydge therwith was all to shaken, and daungerous to stande on. *Fol. xlviii.*

But these Turkes entendynge to damage the Cristen, left a certayne to defende the passage, whyle the other by a forde or passage, vnknowen to the Cristen men, came ouer the riuer, & assauted the Frenshmen egerly, so ỹ there was atwene theym foughten a cruell batayll: how be it thorugh dyuyne power of God, the Turkes were ouerset & many of theym slayne & taken: the whiche batayll was foughten vpon [the daye of seynt Fabyan, and Sebastyan, or][3] the. xx. daye of Iannarii. But yet might nat ỹ Cristen wyn ouer the ryuer, for dayly the strength of the countres there nere came downe and fortefyed the hoost of the Sarazyns more and more.

The day folowynge the Purificacyon of our Lady blewe such a tempest of wynde, ỹ it dyd moche harme, both to the shyppes, and also to the tentes and pauylyons of the Cristen host: and with that scarcite of vytayle began to appere, so that the kynge determyned to retourne agayne vnto Damasse.

WHen the Turkes espyed ỹ retourne of the Frenshmẽ, they ordeyned. iiii. barges or suche lyke vessayles, & stuffed theym with pytche, rosyn, grece, and other lyquet & brynyng stuffe; and in ỹ night sodaynly brought them a bord where ỹ Cristẽ host[4] lay, & then cast on them Grekysh fyre, the which anone set them in a light fyre, by reason wherof ỹ Cristen flote was in great ieopardy, and with great laboure preseruyd from brennyng. For this despyte ỹ the Sarazynes had done to the Cristen, the kynge was so therw amoued, that he sayd and promised ỹ he wolde nat depart thens, tyll he hadde done to the Turkes some displeasure. And vpon enquysicion mãde, he was enfourmed of a passage or foorde that was vin. iii. myles of his pauylyon, wherupon he called a cõsayll of his lordes, and shewed to them his purpose, gyuyng vnto the erle of Artoyes the ledyng of his fewarde, & charged hym that whan he were passed the foorde, that he shulde tary there tyll the other deale of the host were ouer passed. Whan all thynge was orderyd to the kynges mynde, the sayd erle with his company set forth warde, and passed the sayd foorde without daũger, and there forgettynge what to hym was before cõmaunded of the kynge, set forth incontynently towarde the Turkes, whiche, he weale knewe, kept the place where the bridge was before made; and there faught with theym which were al vnpurueyed, and vnknowyng of his sodeyne cõmynge, wherefore he slewe many of theym, and after chasyd the other, whiche for socoure fledde vnto the cytie of Massour foresayd; whome he folowed so egerly, that in the entrynge of the cytie he entred with theym, and there was slayne with a certayn of his knyghtes: by reason wherof, the souldyoures of the towne were so encoraged that they issued out vpon the Cristen, & draue theim backe tyll they sawe the kynges power come, and then retourned to the cytie & shytte with sterngth theyr gates.

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] wave. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Flote.

Than kynge Lowys beynge ascertayned of ŷ sayd erles deth, made for him great dule. And after prouycyon made for the lodgynge of his people, he thenne made dyuers brydges & passages ouer the ryuer of Thanoyes. And for the Cristen hoost shuld be assuryd from the sodayne & vnware assautes & reprochis of the infidelles, therfore he closyd theym within a strength of dyche and pale, that theyr enemyes myght no way haue way into theym, and named that strength a park; in ŷ whiche Cristen hoost there lodged all the season of Lent. In the whiche tyme the yonge Sowdan came downe w a great host of people, and for he myght nat lodge his people within the towne, therfore he made an other lyke parke vnto the Cristen men, and there closed his people; so that atwene ŷ Cristen & theim, was many conflictes & assautes, somtyme to ŷ losse of ŷ one & eft to the losse of that other. But the Sowdan made all ŷ meanes he myght to kepe vytayll fromе the Cristen hoost, and stopped all the passages atwene Damasse and theym, ŷ from thens they myght haue no socour, by meane wherof dissease & sykenesse fyll amõge the Cristen, so that they dyed hugely.

Whenne kyng Lowys was ware of these myseries on euery side, he sent to ŷ Sowdan to haue a trewe for a certayne tyme, but in conclucion none wolde be to hym graunted; wherfore of necessyte he was forcyd to breke his felde, and, with as good polycy as he myght, drewe hȳ to the ryuer of Nylus, and so by shyp passed downe by the sayd ryuer to warde Damasse: but he passed nat ferre or that he was assauted on euery sytle, so that the fyght cõtynued styll without seasynge, to the great losse of the Cristen hoste.

Thenne lastly came the Sowdan with a fresshe company, & beset the kynge so aboute, that in the ende he was taken with his. ii. bretherne, Charlys & Robert, the erle of Poytiers, the erle of Angeon, the erle of Flaunders, the duke of Brytayne, the erle of Soysons; & in that fyghte was slayne, the byshoppes of Langrees, and of Soysons, with many other of whome the names be nat put in wrytynge.

When kyng Lowys was thus taken, he was syke; wherfore with all dylygence the Sowdan commaũded hym to be conueyed vnto Massour, & after caused [all ŷ other of his men][1] to be slayne, [&]' as many as were wouded or syke, except they were men of great fame, by whom great auaũtage myght ryse by reason of theyr raunsome; and thus was the Cristen hoost taken & spoyled of the Sarazyns, the Thursdaye next folowyng the feast of Easter, in ŷ yere of our Lorde. M.CC.l. and the. xxiiii. yere of the reygne of this kynge Lowys; the whiche after, with the other of the nobles of Fraunce, were sent vnto Babylon or Cayer, and there kept in sondry prysons.

IN processe of tyme, it was agreed ŷ kyng Lowys shuld be delyuered fro pryson, & cõueyed saufly into the bandes[2] of Cristendome, vpon condycion that he shulde firste render and gyue vp into the Sowdans power the cytie of Damasse, with all suche prysoners as he badde of Turkes and Sarazyns at that daye in his power: and ouer that he shuld yelde by a certayne day, a certayne sũme of besauntes, whiche after the Frenshe boke shulde be. viii.M. besauntes Sarazyn; but Peter Disroy saythe. CCC.M. besauntes.

Of these besauntes I haue lernyd there shuld be. ii.; that one is called a bezaunde imperiall, & ŷ other a bezaũt ducall: the bezaunde imperiall is worth. l. ducates, and the ducall bezaunde is worth. xx. ducates. A ducat, which is named a ducat de camera, is worth. iiii. *s.* viii. *d.*: a ducat papall and Venizian be of lasse value, as. iii. *d.* or. iiii. *d.* in a pece. Then if his raũsome be estemyd after the imperiall bezaũde, he payde after ŷ rate of. iiii. *s.* vi. *d.* the ducat, & after the sũme of. viii.M. bezaũdes; in sterlynge money, lxxxx.M. *li.* And for this the Sowdan promysed to delyuer al such prisoners as he had in his prysons of Cristen men; but in ŷ he brake promise, for of. xii.M. he delinered scarsly,
Fol. xlviii. iii. In this tyme of takynge of the Frenshe king, a company of yonge men, assembled theym togyder in Fraunce, and vnder theyr capytayne, which toke vpon hym lyke a bysshop, passed by Parys & Orleaunce, and other good townes of Fraunce, saying that

[1] *Omitted in* MS. [2] bands.

they

they wold restore ŷ kynge to his lybertie; but lastely whan they drewe nere to the porte of the Deed See, where they shulde haue taken shyppynge, there they fyll to all theste & auoutry: wherfore the people of that coũtre sette vpon theym, and slewe theyr capytayne and the more parte of theyr company, where thorough that symple feleshyp whiche named theym self shepherdes, was disseueryd and sparbelyd. Whan this blessyd kynge Lowys was delyuered from the daũger of his enemyes, & was brought out of Egipt ito Sirie, he there executed many dedes of charyte, and of mekenesse, and repayred the cytie of Ioppen, & other standynge vpon ŷ see syde; and from thens went on pylgrymage vnto Nazareth, and to the Mout of Tabor. And when he was retournyd vnto Ioppen, he receyued ther tydynge of ŷ deth of dame Blanch his moder, where after dyuers obseruaunces and prayers done for the soule of hys moder, he toke there shyppynge and sayled to warde Fraunce; and nat without trauayle & trouble of the see. At the ende of. xii. wekes[1], he landed in the hauen of Marcyll or Martyll, and so sped his iournay that he came to Parys, in the yere of our Lorde. xii.C. & liiii., & the. vi. yere after ŷ he toke vpõ hym ŷ voyage, where of the cytezeyns he was receyued with moste honoure and gladnesse, and there callyng a counsaylle, reiourmed many thynges, for the weale of his realme, & made one lawe whiche is specyally remembred: that is, ŷ no man beynge in auctorytie of any hygh offyce, as prouost, pretour, or any lyke offyce, shuld bye any landes or rentes within that lordshyp that he had rule of, and for that cause that he shuld nat extorte, or wronge, or bye suche landes the better chepe by reason of his myght or power.

At this day the prouosty, or chief rule or offyce, was in ŷ hãdes of the cytezeyns of Parys, by reason of a seale therof made to theym by the kynges progenytours; by meane wherof many iniuries and wronges were done vnto the cõmon people, and many theuys and other transgressours by fauoure and money passed vnpunysshed: wherof this blessyd kynge Lowys beynge enfourmed, vpon suffycient profe made, discharged ŷ cytezeyns therof, and assigned a man named Stephan Boile in that offyce, assygnynge to hym yerely a certayne stypend for executynge of ŷ offyce, and ordeyned that euer after the prouost of Parys shuld be named by ŷ kynge and his heyres kynges.

He also made ordenaũces to auoyde strumpettes out of the cytie, and punysshemẽt for all accustomable great swerers, w̄ many other good ordenaũces & lawes, the whiche I passe ouer for lengthyng of the tyme.

In this tyme and season were abydynge in Fraunce, in a place called Seyn Nicholas de Boys. iii. children borne in Flaundres, the which were sent thyder to lerne the maner of Fraunce, and also to teche the children of a knyght named syr Guilliam de Brunz to shote. These children vpon a season passed the boundes of the abbey grounde, & entred the warrayn of a lord of Fraũce, called Enguerran lorde of Concy, & there chased & shotte at conyes for theyr disport; the which were there taken of the seruaũtes of the sayd Enguerran, and presented to their lord, the which of hasty cruelnesse caused the. iii. children wout pyte to be hanged: wherof herynge, the abbot of Seynt Nicholas cõplayned hym, with the assystence of the fornamed syr Guilliam, vnto the kynge; the whiche incontynently sent to ŷ sayd Enguerran, charging hȳ to apere before his barony, to answere to such matiers as there shuld be layd vnto his charge: where, in ŷ ende, after many reasons for hym layde, he by great instance of his frendes was pardoned of that greuous offence, with condycion folowynge; that is to meane, firste, he shuld paye vnto the kynge. x.M.*li.* of Parys money, whiche is to meane. xii.C. &. l.*li.* sterlyng; & ouer ŷ, he shuld warre vpon Goddes enemyes in Syria, by the space of. iii. yeres contynually vpon his owne coste and charge; and thirdely, he shuld buylde a chapell, wherin two preestes shuld synge for euer for the soules of the sayd infauntes: or after maister Gagwyne, w̄ the foresayd. x.M.*li.* and other ayde of the kynge, the hospytall in Parys, named the house of God in Pontoyse, with the frayter of the [Freer Prechours, and ŷ church of the][2] Freer Mynors or Gray Freres in Parys were made and repayred.

[1] xi. wekis. MS. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Thanne

Thanne after many dedes of charite done by this vertuous prynce, as makynge of dyuers houses of relygyon, seruynge of the poore people with his owne handes, with fastynges, and other infynyte dedes of pytie, he lastly, in the. xxxiii. yere of his reygne, honourably receyued Henry the thirde thanne kynge of Englande, and stablysshed w hym a peas, as before in the. xliiii[1]. yere of the reygne of ỹ sayd Henry is declared.

And that done, he, in the. xxxvi. yere of his reygne, maryed his eldest sone *Philyp* vnto Isabell, the doughter of Iamys kynge of Aragon; by reason of whiche maryage the Frenshe kynge gaue ouer to ỹ sayd Iamys all such ryght as he had in the lordshyppes of Besac, Dampierre, Rousselion, and Barsellon, and the sayd Iamys acquyted and gaue ouer to Lowys, all such ryght and title as he had in the lordshyppes of Carcasson, of Bygorre, and of Anilly.

And soone after he sent Clerkes[2] his brother, at the request of the. iiii. Alexaundre than pope[3], into Cicilia with a great power, to withstande the vyolence of Manfreda, sone of Frederyke the seconde, than[4] emperour; the which agayne ryght withheldе that kyngdome fromе the Churche of Rome: whome Charlys after longe fyght, at a place named Boneuent, slewe in batayll, and after was made kynge of the sayd countre, by auctorytie of the sayd pope[5] Alexaunder, payinge yerely vnto the Churche of Rome. xl.M. ducates, whiche is moche lyke after the rate of sterlyng money. viii.M.vi.C.lxvi.*li.* xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.*, euery ducat accompted at. iiii.*s.* iiii.*d.*

IT fyll so after, that in ỹ. xlii. yere of kynge Lowys, pope[6] Clement, the. iiii. of that name, sent a legat vnto Lowys, requyrynge hym to ayde the Cristen, which in Siria were greuously warryd with the Turkes & Sarazyns: at whose request the kynge called a counsayll, wherin it was agreed ỹ socoure shuld be made. Wherfore the kynge with his. iii. sonnes, Philip, Iohn, & Peter, toke on theym the crosse; and in the firste day of May, the yere of his reygne. xliii., he with his sayd sonnes, and many other lordes of Fraunce, as well spirituell as temporal, departed from Parys, and from thens rode vnto Cluny, where he restyd hym. iiii. dayes, and from thens sped his iourney tyl he come[6] to the forenamed porte of the Deed See; where mette with hym a cardynall & legat of Rome, w dyuers other bysshoppes of Fraūce, the kyng of Nauarne, the dukes sone of Britayne, Alphons erle of Potyers, the erles of Artoys & of Flaundres, with many other.

And whyle the kynge with his hoost lay at ỹ sayd porte, tarying a conuenable winde, a dissencion fyl atwene the Catholeynes and the men of Prouynce, so that amonge them was foughten such a skyrmysshe, that atwene theym was slayne vpon an hondreth men, & many mo woūded or the stryfe myght be all seasyd.

Fol. xliii. Soone after, the kynge with his lordes toke shyppynge, and sayled with great daunger of tempest, tyll lastly he came to the ile of Sardynes, where the Cristen host rested them a season, & after kepte theyr cours tyll they came to the porte of Thunys or Cartage[7], the. xviii. daye of the moneth of Iulii; where they restyd in their shyppes that nyght. Vpon the morne whan they shuld lande, all the port was beset with Turkes and infydeles, whiche shotte dartes and kast stones to the greuaunce of the Cristen host, so that they wanne lande with great diffyculte and payne.

Whan the kyng was landed, he lodged his people, and after sent to serche for fresshe water, to refresshe with his hoost. In whiche meane whyle, the admyrall of the kynges nauy came vnto ỹ kyng, requyrynge hym to haue a certayne of knyghtes assigned vnto hym, trustyng in God to wyn shortly the towne; and so sped hym, and assauted the towne: but anone, as ỹ capytayne of ỹ towne was ware of their cōmyng, he with a great company issued out of the towne, and forcid ỹ Cristen hoost to gyue backe: wherfore kyng Lowys sente the marshall of his hoost, with a certayne

[1] xliii. MS. [2] Charlis. [3] b. of Rome edit. 1542. [4] late. MS. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [6] came. [7] Carthage.

nombre

nombre of knyghtes, to socoure the sayde admyrall, and in tyme of the fyght gatte atwene the Sarazyns and the towne, soo that whyle some faught with the Turkes, the other wāne the towne; wherof the Turkes beyng ware, fledde soone after, but nat without great slaughter of theym: for after that fyght many of theym whiche escaped from the batayll, were after slayn in cauernys and holes, where they hyd theym in the grounde. Whanne the towne of Cartage[1] or Thunys was by ŷ Cristen thus wonne, anone the kynge cōmaunded the deed bodyes to be caste out, and the towne to be clensyd of all ordours and fylthes. And when all was done as the kynge hadde cōmaunded, he then entred the towne, and lodged within as many as the towne wolde holde, and the other he fortyfyed with dyches and other strengthys, to preserue theim from theyr enemyes; and so taryed there the cōmynge of Charlys his brother, & kyng of Cicilia. It was nat longe after that the cytie or towne was wonne, but ŷ the kynge of Thunys with a great host of Turkes came nere to the towne, and made showys & offers; but they abode not therby one day. The erle of Artoyes in one company, & a knyght called sir Peter Cabellanc in an other compānye, gatte atwene the see and the Turkys, ŷ they were compelled to fyght; so that atwene them was a cruell fyght, & many slayne vp[2] both sydes; but in the ende the Turkes were scomfyted, & chaced to theyr shyppes: in this fyght were slayn. ii. Cristen knyghtes, named Le Chastelayn and syr Iohn̄ de Ronssoylyers. After this batayll or fyght, the Sarazyns made no great assautes; but then, by reason of ŷ vnholsomnes of the coūtre, sykenes fyll amonge the Cristen hoost, so that the people dyed fast; and shortly after ŷ kynge was taken w̄ suche a flixe, and therwith an agu, that he kept his bedde, and after the ryghtes of the Churche taken, & certayne monycions gyuen to his sone Philip howe he shulde behaue hym in gydyng of ŷ realme of Fraūce, knowyng the houre of deth approched, charged suche as were aboute hym that they shuld lay hym vpon a bed of asshes & powdre, where he, so lyinge a season in prayer, expyred the day folowyng seȳt Barthū[3] daye, or the. xxv. daye of August, when he had reygned. xliiii. yeres, lackynge. ii. monethes, leuynge after hym the. iii. forenamed sōnes, Philip, Iohn, & Peter. Then the bowellys were buryed in Cecilia, & the body enbawmed with ryche oyntemētes, was recaryed vnto Seint Denys of Fraunce, and ther w̄ great reuerence enteryd. [The whiche, after, for his myracles, of the. vii[e]. Boniface, was sette amonge the nombre of seyntes.][5]

Philippi tertii.

PHilyp, the thirde of that name, and sone of seynt Lowys, began his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce the. xxvi. day of the moneth of September, in the yere of our Lorde. xii.C.lxx., and the. liiii. yere of Henry the thirde, than kynge of Englande; and began than, as before is shewed, in Affrica, at the towne or cytie of Thunys or Cartage[1], accompanyed with Charles his vncle, kynge of Scicyll; the which came to the porte of Thunys the same daye that kynge Lowys dyed, & after taryed there, and had many conflictes with the Turkes, and bare hym so manfully, that in ŷ ende he forcyd the kynge of Thunys to seche to hym for a peas: the which was concluded for. x. yeres, with certayne cōdycyons of paying of certayne money, for the kynge of Fraunce costes, and certayne trowages of olde tyme due vnto the kynge of Scicill, yerely to be payde, with many other articles concernynge the same peas, whiche I passe ouer.

After whiche peas concluded and assured, the kynges of Fraunce and Scicill toke shyppyng at the sayd porte of Thunys, & sayled towarde theyr countrees with great daunger of tempest of the see: & in processe of tyme lāded in Scicill, where Philip w̄ great reuerence & obseruaūce, in Moūt Royall, buryed the bowellys of his fader. And ŷ done he toke his iourney towarde Fraunce, thoroughe Italy; in whiche iourney dyed Isabell

[1] Carthage. [2] upon. [3] Bartholomews. [4] viii[te]. MS. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

his wyfe, and [the kynge of Nauerne and Mary his wyfe, with][1] many other, to the nombre of. iii. M. and moo.

Lastly the kynge came vnto the cytie of Viterbe, where the cardynalles and other spirituall men were in counsayll for the chosynge of a newe pope[2]: for at that tyme the see was voyde, by the deth of Clement the. iiii.; but ỹ eleccion was so dyuers, that. ii. yeres expyred or they myght agree vpon a newe paster. And than they agreed vpon Theobalde Archidiacon of Landensis, named after the. x. Gregory.

From Viterbe the kynge rode to the Mout of Flastoñ, and so ouer to the countre of Tuscayne, & so to the Mount of Bergue, and then to the cytie of Florence, and frome thens to Boloyng le Greysse, and from thens to Cremoygñ; where the kynges offycers were nat all wele entreated, in recompensement wherof, the mayre and burgeyses of that towne presented the kynge with. vii. stegys[3], trappyd in cloth of sylke and other presandes, whiche the kynge with curteys and thankfull wordes refused. Then from thens the kynge departed to Milan, and frome Milan to Annergeaux, and so to Susane a cytie of Sauoy; and after passed the mountaygnes, and so into this valys of Moryen; and from thens tourned towarde the cytie of Lyons vpon Rosne, and so to the cytie of Maston in Burgoyñ; & passed that countre tyll they came to ỹ abbey of Cluny, and from thens into ỹ countre of Champayne; so to the cytie of Troys, & from thens passed the coũtrees tyll he
Fol. lx. came to the lordshyp of Parys, and so into the cytie of Parys.

Here I passe ouer the great prouycyon made by the cytezeyns of Parys for the rauysshynge[4] of theyr prynces, that is to meane the dede corps of Lowys, and their naturall prynce Philyp his sone; and of the obseruaunces done at ỹ great assembles[5] of the lordes spirituall & temporall, to welcome theyr prynce, & doynge of theyr dutyes euery man accordynge to his honour. But after all these serimonyes in due ordre fynysshed, prouycion was made for the coronacion of ỹ kynge, the which was crowned at the cytie of Raynes, vpon ỹ daye of thassumpcion of our Lady, in ỹ yere of grace. xii. C. lxxi.

SHortly after that the solempnytie of this coronacyon was passyd, kynge Philyp for his recreacion rode into the countre of Vermẽdoyse, where, after he had restyd hym a season, Robert erle of Arthoys requyred hym to vysyt his coũtre, where he was receyued of the burgeyses of Artoys with great honour and gladnes; and there was feasted with all disport and gladnes by a certayne of tyme after: the whiche expyryd he retourned into Fraunce. Aboute the thirde yere of his reygne, the erle of Foyz, contrary the kynges pleasure, toke party agayne Gararde a knyght and lorde of the castell of Casseboun, or Tasseboun; the whiche before had slayne the brother of the erle of Armenac, speciall frende of ỹ sayde erle of Foyz: whiche sayd. ii. erlys, to reuenge ỹ deth of their sayd brother, pursuyd the sayd Gararde so narrowly, that for his sauegarde he refused his owne castell, and fled vnto a castell of the kynges, and there helde hym with his wyfe, childre, and substaunce: but when the. ii. erlys were ware therof, they sped them thyder with theyr powers & layde siege to the castell, and in the ende threwe it downe to the grounde, and slewe all ỹ sowdyours that they there founde, as well the kynges seruauntes as other, hopynge to haue founde their enemy Garrarde, the which was escaped thens secretly.

When the rumour of this dede came vnto the kynge, he dysdeyned sore that dede, and toke it ryght greuously, in so moche, that he called his lordes, and by theyr counsayll assembled his knyghtes, and entred with force the prouynce of the erle of Foyz; the whiche herynge of the kynges great displeasur, fortyfyed his castell, and there helde hym: the whiche was so beset with rokkes of stone, ỹ the kyng myght nat wyñe to it with ease, wherfore the kynge cõmaunded the rokkes to be cutte with masons and other werke men,

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Bysshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] stedis. [4] Ressayyng.
[5] doon at the enteryng of the said Lowis, and of the grete assembles. MS.

and

and made a solempe othe, that he wold nat departe thens or he had the erle and his castell at his pleasure.

Whan the erle had beholden ŷ great power of his enemyes, and the prouycion of the kynge to wynne his castell, ẏ other ieopardyes, he made meanes to the kyng for grace, and fynally put hym and his into his mercy. Thenne the kynge cōmaunded hym to be bounde, and so to be conueyed vnto the castell of Beauquesu, where he was imprysoned by an hole yere after; and the kynge seasyd all his landes, and sette a certayne of his knyghtes to kepe his castell, and caryed his wyfe and children with hym into Fraunce. But after a yere runne, ŷ kynge was so laboured to by the frendes of the said erle that he was enlarged from pryson, and, vpon suertye, sufferyd to serue in the kynges court, where he bare hym so weale, that fynally the kynge made hym knyght, and restored hym to all his landes; but what fyll of the erle of Armenac, the storye sheweth nat.

Aboute the. vi. yere[1] of his reygne, kynge Philyp maryed Mary ŷ doughter of the erle of Burboun, or after some, the doughter of Iohn̄ the duke of Brabau, the whiche he loued entyerly: wherof Peter de Broshe, then beynge lorde chamberlayne, hauynge enuy and disdeyne, sought the wayes and meanes to mynysshe the great loue atwene her lōrde and her, & fonde by his meane that a sone of the kynges, named Lowys, was poysoned[2]; the whiche dede he by subtyle and secret meanes, as though it had no thynge comen of hym, layde it to the charge of the quene: for this the kynge made many maner of enquysicions, as wele by sorcery as other, but in all his werkes he founde his quene gyltlesse: wherfore he sufferyd the matier to passe, tyll he myght haue more assured proſe in that matyer. Aboute this season Fordinandus kynge of Castyle, that before tyme hadde maryed Blanch doughter of seynt Lowys, dyed, leuyng after him ii. sones borne of the sayd Blanch, named Fardinande and Alphons, whiche, by couenaunt at the maryage made, shulde be heyres vnto the kyngdome of Spayne and Castyle. But the fader of this Fardynande so beynge deed, contrary his honoure and promesse, wrote vnto ŷ lordes of Castyle, amonestynge theym that they shulde admytte for theyr kynge his seconde sone named Sanxion or Sanxio, and swere to hym both feautye and homage, the whiche was all doon accordynge to his cōmaundement, so that Blanche was dispoynted of her dower, and her childer of theyr ryght and enherytaunce: for the whiche kynge Philip her brother was greuously dyscontented, and for reformacion thereof, sent vnto the kynge of Spayne his chief boteler with other, desyringe hym to perfourme all suche couenauntes as atwene hym and his fader were concluded at the maryage of his suster Blanche, or at the lest if that he refused that to do, that he wolde sende his sayde suster, with her. ii. childer, sauely into Fraunce.

In cōclusion, the mother with her. ii. childer were brought by the sayd boteler vnto the kynge, without other pleasur outher in worde or in dede. For the whiche he ŷ yere folowynge gaderyd a stronge host, and passed with theim by Poytiau and Gascoygne, tyll he came vnto a towne ioynynge to the border of Spayne, named Sainterre, where the kynge mette another parte of his hoost; there, by cōsayll of some of his lordes, the kynge concluded to retourne into Fraunce, for daunger of wynter that was cōmynge, and other hydde causes: but ŷ rumour in the hoost went that some of the kynges counsayll had receyued rewardes of ŷ kyng of Spayne, by meane wherof the kynge loste that iourney, and retourned into Fraunce to his great dishonour and damage.

In tyme of kynge Philyppes retourne into Fraūce, tydynges were brought vnto hym that Eustace de Beau Marche, whome the kynge had appoynted to haue the gydyng of the coūtre or kyngdome of Nauare, was besieged in the cytie of Pampulyne; wherfore the kynge cōmaunded therle of Artoys to spede hym thyder, to rescowe ŷ sayd Eustace, the whiche behauyd hym so manfully, that he rescowed ŷ sayd Eustace, & chasyd Garsymerans chief styrrer of that rebellyon, and broughte the people of that countree agayne

[1] v. MS. [2] prysoned. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

to due subiecciõn. Whyle the erle of Arthoys was thus occupyed in the sayd countre, messangers came to hym from the kynge of Spayne, requyrynge hym, syne ỹ he was so nere, that he wolde come and disporte hym there for a season: whereof the erle of Arthoys sent kynge Philip worde, and hauynge of hym lycence, yode vnto the sayd kynge of Spayne, as to his nere kynnesman, & there disported hym a certayne of tyme to his great consolacion.

In whiche season, dyuers letters came out of Fraunce, frome some of the kynges counsayll, by reason wherof ỹ kynge of Spayne was enfourmed of moche of the Frenshe kynges counsayll: whiche letters he shewed vnto the erle of Artoys, sayinge, that he was nat without frendes in Fraũce, but he wolde nat disclose what persones they were. Whan the erle had taryed in Spayne a competent season, he toke leue of the kynge, and departed with great gyftes, and so spedde hym ỹ in processe of tyme he cam vnto the kynge of Fraunce, and, at conuenient leyser, shewed vnto hym of the letters shewed vnto hym by the kyng of Spayne, wherof the kynge was nat a lytell ameruayled. *Fol. lxii.*

It was nat longe after, that, a currour or messanger whiche vsed to bere letters frome Peter de Broshe vnto the kynge of Spayne, fyll syke at an abbey; where, when he knewe he shuld dye, were it by exortacõn of his ghostly fader, or otherwyse, called to hȳ the abbot or hede of that house, chargynge hym that he wolde delyuer suche letters as he there hadde vnto the Frenshe kynges owne person; and after dyed. After whose deth, the sayd relygious man, in conuenient haste, spedde hym vnto ỹ kynges court, and presented hym with the sayd letters, shewynge vnto hym the mynde of the sayd messanger: whiche letters whan the kynge had vnclosed, he anon knewe that his chamberlayne, Peter de Broshe, was the discloser of all his counsaylles. Wherfore forthwith he cõmaũded the sayd Peter to be had vnder saufe kepynge, whereof hearing, the bysshop of Bayon fledde streyght the lande, & so yode vnto Rome.

The kynge than yode vnto Parys, where he called a counsayll of his lordes to examyne ỹ sayd Peter, where fynally he was iuged to be hanged; after which iugemẽt he was cõmytted vnto warde tyll the morowe folowyng. At whiche season, longe before the sonne rysynge, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Braban, the erle of Artoys, & the prouost of Paris, came vnto the Gayole, and there receyued the sayd Peter, and sawe hym hanged or the sonne were vp.

IT was nat longe after that Peter was thus put to deth, but meanes were made attwene these. ii. kynges. So that a daye of metyng was appoynted, ỹ the sayd kynges should mete, to haue cõmunicacyon for the matyer concerning the wronges done to dame Blanche & her. ii. childer beforenamed. Wherefore the kyng of Spayne came vnto the cytie of Bayon, and kynge Philyp to a towne in ỹ prouynce of Tholouse, named Mount Marchaũt, where these. ii. prynces, beynge in cõmunycacion of ỹ foresayd matyer, certayne messangers came to them from ỹ pope[1], then Martyn the. iiii., chargynge them, vpon payne of fallyng into ỹ sensures of the Churche, that they agree and fall vnto accorde, that warre atwene theym be nat excersyced. By reason wherof kynge Phylyp remytted the matyer to ỹ pope[2], and retourned vnto Tholouse, where mette with hym the kynge of Aragon, named Peter; the whiche, after he hadde there taryed with kynge Philyp time at his pleasure, he toke his leue of the kynge, and after went into Catholoyne, where he mette with Constance his wyfe, and doughter of Manfred sometyme kynge of Scicill, the which was pryued of his lyfe and kyngdome, by Charles, brother of seint Lowys, as before in the. iiii. chapiter of the story of Seynt Lowys is shortly towched.

This Constance, in all that she myght, exorted her husbande to gader his people, & to entre the lande of Scicill, ascertaynynge hym, that the Scicilliens wolde take his parte agayne Charles, forsomoch as they wele knew that she was rightfull heyre to that kyngdome.

[1] diet. MS. [2] Bysshop of Rome. edit. 1542.

In

In this time and season, which was the. x. yere of kyng Philip, the ryuer of Sayn rose of suche an hygth, that it compassed ỹ cytie of Parys in suche wyse that noo man myght come thyther without bote or barge. And the water passed with suche vyolence, that it brake. vi. arches of the great bridge of Parys, and one of the small brydges.

Then lette vs tourne to the kynge of Aragon, whiche, by encensynge of his wyfe, gaderyd his people[1], and, vnder colour that he wolde haue gone agayne the Turkes, had graunte of the pope[2] to receiue the dymes of his owne lande for certayne yeres. Whyle this was in doynge, he sent certayne persones into Scicile, to see ỹ state of the countre; the whiche made cõfideracies w̃ dyuers great men of Sicicliens, and ouer that brought with theym dyuers of the rulers to the presence of ỹ kynge, with whome the sayd Peter made certayne appoyntementes, and after retourned theym into Scicile, where, after theyr retourne, they counsaylled so with their rulers of Palermo, and Messene, and of other cyties, ỹ in one nyght all the Frenshemen in Scicill were slayne: and, after, in moste cruell wyse, slewe the women, as well those that were with childe as other, and lefte fewe or none of the Frenshemen in all the chief cyties or townes of Scicill on lyue. Whan tydynges of this myschief was brought vnto Charles, beynge than in the countree of Angeou, he sent messangers vnto ỹ pope[3] Martyn the iiii., requyrynge his ayde to defende his enemyes; the whiche, in all hast, sent vnto Palermo ỹ bysshop of seynt Sabyne to charge the cytezyns, vpon payne of cursynge, to obey vnto Charles for their kynge, & to none other. But the rulers of Palermo, and also of Messene, wold nat suffre the sayd bysshop to passe any ferther, and also sayd that Peter was entred the coũtre, of whome they wolde holde and on none other; w̃ which answere he was fayne to retourn̄. In this while Charles had sent vnto his neuew Philip, kyng of Fraũce, the which, w̃ his power to reuoke Peter from Scicil, entred the lande of Aragon by Purpunyan, and tooke the cytie of Ieane. In whiche passe tyme Charles entred Scicill, and besieged Messene; but the towne was so strongly fortyfied, ỹ he lost there his labour. Wherefore he lefte ỹ siege, and yode into the playnes of seynt Martyne, and there taryed the cõmynge of his sone, than prynce of Salerne. The pope[4] than accursed Peter, for asmoche as certayne worde was brought to hym that he had proclaymed hymselfe kynge of Scicil, and, to the entent to styre the more people agayn hym, he gaue his lande of Aragon vnto Charles erle of Valoys, and sone of kynge Philip of Fraunce.

Whan Philip, as before is sayde, kynge of Fraunce, hadde wonne Ieane, forasmoche as the wayes towarde Aragon were harde to passe, aswell for prouysions made by the enemyes as otherwyse, the kyng, therfore, sought great aduyce, how he myght with leest daunger wynne to his enemyes: & after many meanes sought, a Russilian was brought vnto the kynges presence, the whiche assured the kynge to gyde hym away into Aragon, wout ỹ daũger of his enemyes. Whereof the kynge, beynge glad, promysed to the sayd Russilian fredome and lybertie, with other great rewardes, whiche than stode as prysoner to the Frensshemen; after whiche promesse made, the kyng put hym and the more part of his hoost vnder the ledyng of the sayd Russilian, and for to blynde ỹ more his enemyes, he sent a parte of his hoost towarde ỹ mountaynes, to make a shewe as though all ỹ host had passed the same waye. Whan kyng Philip had orderyd all thyng after his mỹde, he cõmaũded ỹ forewarde of his people to folowe the said Russilian, the whiche brought theym a streyght and narrowe waye, all to growen with wood and busshes, to the kynges great trauayle & all his, but finally he brought them into ỹ playnes where theyr enemyes laye, so that they made prouysion in orderynge of theyr people, to set vpon the Aragons; whereof ỹ Aragons beyng ware, supposynge the Frenshemen might so lightly[5] haue wonne vnto *Fol. lxiii.* theym, beynge than out of aray, & dispurueyed to fyght, fled vnto the next holdes, leuynge to the Frenshmen moche of theyr vytayll and harneys.

Whanne kynge Philip had seen that his enemyes had forsaken theyr felde, rested hym

[1] powar. MS. [2] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] not so lyghtly. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

there a season after his trauayle, and after yode to a towne named Pierlaat, & besieged it; whereof the sowdyours, after they had a season defended ỹ towne, in the deed of the nyght fyred the sayde towne, and departed whenne they had done. But the Frenshmen wanne shortly into the towne, and quenched ỹ fyre. And after the kynge had mãned and vytaylled it, he than went to a towne named Geron[1], and layde his siege theraboute, where he lay longe after.

YE haue harde in the precedyng yere howe Charles kynge of Scicill laye in the playnes of seynt Martyne, there abydyng the cõmynge of his sone the prynce of Salerne, whyther lastely came vnto hỹ his sayd sone the duke of Burgoyne, ỹ erle of Alanson, Peter, brother to kynge Philip, Robert erle of Arthoys, ỹ erlys of Dampmartyne, and of Boloygne ẇ the lorde of Mount Morency, and many other nobles of Fraunce & Burgoyñ. After cõmynge of whiche lordes, Charlys, with baner displayed, sped hym towarde his enemyes, and soo passed the lande of Calabre without fyghte: and sent his sone to Naples with a parte of his hoost, and hymselfe kepte on his iourney tyll he came vnto Prouyuce, where he herynge of the great puruyannce, that Peter kynge of Aragon hadde made of shyppes to sayle towarde the lande of Naples, sente certayne letters vnto the prynce his sone, that in nowyse he shuld set vpon his enemyes, but kepe hym ẇ in ỹ cytie of Naples, tyll he sent vnto hỹ suche shyppes, and galeys, as he than had redy manned to be sente vnto hym from the hauen of Marcille; which messanger and letters were taken with the Aragons: by reason wherof they knewe moche of kynge Charlys counsayll. It was nat longe after or the nauye of the kynge of Aragon, with great triumph and pryde, came vnto Naples, and prouokyd so the Frenshmen to fyght, ỹ lastly the prynce, ẇ such shyppes & company as he myght make, made out vpon them, & fought with them a longe fyght, but in the ende the Frenshmen were betyn, and ouercomen: and the prynce ẇ the more partie of his shyppes taken and sente to Constance quẽne of Aragon, and remayned longe[2] after vndelyuered ẇ many other prysoners.

Within a short season after of this scomfytur Charlys cam vnto Naples, by whiche tyme moche of the towne was tourned agayne hym, so that the moost parte of the Frenshe sowdyours were slayne, and fled the towne, wherfore, after ỹ Charlys was entred, he punysshed theym right cruelly by dyuers maner of tourmentes: and whan he had done there his wyll, he retourned into Calabre, where mette with hym Robert erle of Artoys, where they toke theyr counsayll how they myght passe the water of Phaar, & to lay theyr siege vnto the cytie of Messene. But for dyuers causes he was cõsaylled to the contrary, so that he toke shyppynge at an hauen called Brandyse; but or his people were all shypped, suche a sykenesse toke hym ỹ he was had agayne to lande and dyed shortly after, nat without suspeccion of venyme; whose corps was than cõueyed to Naples, and there buryed, in the yere of our Lord. xii. C. lxxxiiii. and the. xiiii. yere of the reygne of Philip his neuewe, thanne kynge of Fraunce. Of whiche tydynges, Peter, kynge of Aragon, reioysed nat a lytell, when worde thereof to hym was brought; the whiche before that tyme had betaken the rule of the lande of Scicill to Constance his wyfe, thẽe beynge in the cytie of Palermo: and he hymself with a stronge nauy sayled into Aragon, for to rescowe the cytie of Geron, whiche was besieged of kynge Philyp as ye before haue herde: and whẽe he with his people were there landed, he tooke his counsayll, howe he myght moost greue the Frenshe hoost. Fynally he concluded that he wolde make a busshement with a certayne nombre of his knyghtes; and lye in awayte to take the vytayll ỹ was brought to the hoost from ỹ porte of Russilian, whiche port was. iiii. myles from the Frenshe hoost. Vpon whiche conclusion so taken, he with. ii. M. chosen men, lodged them where the pray shuld passe, & was espied of ỹ Frenshmen; wherof beyng warned, ỹ counstable of Fraũce, & sir Iohñ Harcourt, thẽe marshall of ỹ hoost, toke with theym the erle of Marches with dyuers other knyghtes to the nombre of.

[1] Goron. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] not long, edit. 1559.

v.C. speres with a certayne of fotemen, and went towarde their enmyes: but whenne they came nere vnto theym, and sawe they were so many in nombre, they feryd to sette forthwarde, tyll they were comfortyd by the wordes of a knyght in theyr cõpany, called Mathewe de Roya, sayinge as foloweth;

"O ye noble knyghtes, beholde in youre syghtes the enemyes whiche ye haue ferre sought. Lette vs nowe remember ẏ this is the daye of the assumpcion of our blessyd Lady, and truste we in her, that she wyll helpe vs agayne them that ben put out of holy Churche by cursynge. For lyke meryte shall to vs growe to reuenge the iniuryes done vnto the Churche as though we faught agayn the enemyes of Cristes fayth."

By meane of whiche wordes they were so encouragyd, that wout fere they sette vpon theyr enemyes, so that atwene theym was cõmensyd a sore and cruell fyght, cõtynuynge a longe season, or it myght be knowen whiche partie had the auauntage of the other. At the last the kynge was throwen from his hors, and constrayned to fyght with the other on fote, so that he was in great ieopardy to haue ben taken: but by his owne knyghthode and good helpe of his men he recoueryd his hors agayne. Whenne the Frenshmen were ware that the kyng was there in his owne person, they were the more egre vpon the Aragons to the entent to haue taken or slayne theyr kynge; so ẏ fynally they compelled theym to forsake the felde, and to saue them selfe by flyght. By reason wherof the kynge with the more part of his knyghtes were saued from the daunger of their enemyes; but in this fyght Peter kyng of Aragone was so hurte, that he dyed shortely after. Whan these foresayd knyghtes ẇ theyr prysoners were retourned vnto ẏ Frenshe kynge, & had shewed vnto hym of that victorye, he reioysed therof greatly, & more wold haue done if he had knowen howe sore his enemye Peter was woũdyd: but to brynge to fyne his purpose he dayly more and more assaulted ẏ towne.

In the tyme that Gereonde, or Gyrond, was thus besiegyd of the Frenshe kynge, the erle of Foys, that to the capitayne of the towne oughte great fauoure many tymes by lycence of the kynge yode into the towne, had dyuers comunycacions with hym, so that he lastly knowyng the sayd towne to be bare of vytayll, shewed to the kynge ẏ he wolde laboure the sayde capitayne, named sir Raymonde de Cerdon, that the towne myght be gyuen vp into the kynges hãdes: so that soone after the sayd capitayne desyred a respyte of viii. dayes to sende vnto the kyng of Aragon, to know whether he wolde rescowe the towne or nat, vpon whiche graunt made, the messangers were sente, and retourned with a certaynte of the kynges deth. Upon which knowledge had, the sayd capytayne agreed to delyuer ẏ towne, vpon cõdycion to haue with theym suche mouables as he with the cytezyns and sowdyours had within the towne; all whiche condycions assuryd, the kynge receyued the towne of Geronde into his possession. The which whan he had manned with knyghtes of his owne, he then, by counsayll whiche tourned after to his harme, dyuyded his nauy, and sent a parte of theym into Fraunce, and the other into Tholouse, where the kyng entendyd to tary the wynter folowyng. But so soone as his nauy was thus deuyded, the Aragons mette with theym that restyd in ẏ hauen of Russilian, and gaue to theym suche batayll that they toke many of theym, and slewe the kynges admyrall and many other noble men of Fraunce: & helde the Frenshmen so short that forsomoche as they wolde nat that so good shyppes shuld come to the handes of theyr enemyes, they sette fyre vpon the remenaunt & brent theim, and after resorted vnto the kynge. *Fol. lxii.*

Whẽne kyng Philip was ascertayned of ẏ losse of his nauy, he toke it greuously, in so moche that for that and other thynges ẏ he myght nat brynge to his purpose, he fyll into a feuer, & was therwith greatly anoyed. Than for strengthe of his enemyes whiche kept ẏ passage of ẏ moũtes, called in Laten Montes Pireni, and for wekynge of hymself by reason of his sykenesse, he passed by the streyght places tyll he came to Parpynyan, where his sykenesse encreasyd so sore that he dyed in shorte tyme of his thyder cõ-

* drawen, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

mynge,

mynge, in the moneth of Octobre, whan he had reygned. xv. yeres lackynge certayne dayes, whose bowellis were buryed at Nerbon, and his body at Seynt Denys.

This Philip had ii. wyues. By ỹ firste, Isabell by name, and doughter of the kynge of Aragon, Iaques, or Iamys by name, he had. iii. sones: Lowys whiche was poysoned, Philip whiche for his beaute and fayreshappe was named Philip le Beau, or Philip the fayre, and Charlys the Valoys. And by Mary his. ii. wyfe & doughter of the duke of Braban, he hadde Lowys, Margaret, and Blaunch; whiche Margarete was after maryed to Edwarde the firste than kynge of Englande.

Thus endeth Philip the thirde of Fraunce.

ANGLIA.

Edwardi primi.

[Li. 7. ca. 38.] Edwarde the firste of that name, and sone of Henry ỹ thirde, surnamed Longe Shanke, began his reygne ouer Englande, ī ỹ moneth of Nouember, and xvii. daye of ỹ same; and the yere of our Lord. xii. C.lxxii. & seconde yere of ỹ thirde Philip than kyng of Fraunce. This Edwarde, as before is shewed in the. lv. yere of his fader, was in the holy lande whan his fader dyed, and there at the cytie of Acon, or Acris, he dyd many feates of warre, whereof the cronycle maketh no[1] certayne mencyon; where he beyng so exercysed in marciall actes, tydynges was broughte vnto hym that his fader was deed. Wherfore in all haste he sped hym into Englande; so that he came to Lõdon the seconde day of August, and was crowned at Westmynster the. xiiii. daye of Decembre folowynge, whiche was in the begynnyng of the seconde yere of his reygne.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxiii.

Iohñ Horne.

Sir Walter Heruy. Anno primo.

Walter Potter.

IN this firste yere of kyng Edwarde the firste, vpon the daye of Symon and Iude, were certayne attemptes made by some of ỹ cytezyns to haue made suche a mayre as they had lyked; but for they were dispoynted of theyr accessaryes, they lette for that tyme, whiche in ỹ yere folowynge vpon the same day toke further effect: as in the begynnynge of the next yere shalbe towched. In ỹ ende of this yere and seconde daye of August, kynge Edwarde came to London, from his great iourney of the hooly lande, where of the cytezyns he was receyued with all ioy and honour, and so conueyed vnto Westmynster, where he kepte great obseruaunces for his fader by a certayne tyme after.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxiiii.

Nicholas Wynchester.

Henry Waleys. Anno. ii.

Henry Couentre.

IN this seconde yere of this kynge, and daye of Symon and Iude, whan Philip le Taylour, whiche before was chosen to be mayre, and shuld as that daye haue taken his charge in the Guyldehall of London, dyuers cytezyns put hym besyde ỹ mayres seet, and sette therin sir Walter Heruy, that the yere before had been mayre. For the whiche great rumour and grudge arose amonge the cytezyns, wherfore the mayer was after brought before the kynge, the whiche heryng ỹ reasons of both parties, for somuche as he coude nat agre theym, he put both the sayd syr Walter, and the said Philip asyde, &

[1] no *omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

chase

chase Henry Forwyk[1], for custos of the cytie: the whiche so contynued tyll Candelmas after, at whiche tyme by discrete and wyse peasyble meanes, the forenamed sir Walter Heruy[2] was set in auctoryte as mayre, and so contynued the ful of the yere after.

This yere vpon the. xiiii. day of Decembre was ỹ kyng crowned at Westmynster of maister Robert Kylwarby, than archebysshop of Caunterbury: for Boniface, his predecessour, dyed the yere that kynge Henry dyed. At this coronacion was present Alexandre kynge of Scottes, the whiche, vpon the morowe folowynge, dyd homage to kynge Edwarde, for the kyngdome of Scotlande.

After the solempnytie of the coronacion was ended, the kyng herynge of the rebellyon of Lewelyn prynce of Walys, that dysdayned to come to his coronacyon, anone gatheryd a stronge power, and went into that prouynce and subdued the sayd Lewelyn, and after retourned, and ordeyned certayne newe lawes for ỹ welth of the realme, whiche are to *Fol. lxiiii.* longe here to reherce; amõge the whiche one was, that bakers makynge brede, lackynge the weyght assygned after ỹ pryce of corne, shuld first be punysshed by losse of his brede: and the seconde tyme by prysonement: and ỹ thirdly by the correccion of the pyllory. And myllers for stelyng of corne to be chastysed by ỹ tumbrell, and this to be put in execucion he gaue auctorytie to all mayres, baylyffes, and other offycers thorough Englande, and specyally to the mayre of London.

Anno Domini. M.CC. lxxiiii. Anno Domini. xiii.C. lxxv.

Lucas Patencourt.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. iii.

Henry Frowyke.

IN the thirde yere the kyng confermyd the lyberties of the cytie of London, and graũted to them some new. And this yere he helde his great court of parliamẽt at Westmynster, & gaue monycion to Lewelyn prynce of Walys to come vnto the same, the whiche presumptuously ỹ denyed. Wherfore, the kynge, after Easter, entred agayne into Walys, and so warred vpon Lewelyn that he was cõstreyned to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace, and opteyned it with great difficultie. Then kyng Edwarde buylded the castell of Flynt, and strenghthyd the castell of Rutlande and other, with Englysshe men, to kepe the Walshmen in due obedyence; and toke of theyr prynce a great sume of money, whiche of some wryters is named. l.M.*li.* and of some. l.M. marke, and of some other lasse, and so retourned into Englãde.

In this yere one Water Haruy, whiche the firste yere of this kyng, after longe contrasuersie & stryfe that he had kept with the aldermen of London, at a folkmote kepte at Poules crosse, was made mayre of London, and so continued to the hurte of the cytie that yere: this yere was he accused of dyuers periuries and other detestable dedes contrary his othe; for the whiche, and for makynge of assembles of the cõmons whiche fauored hym in his yl dedes, was depryued of his aldermanshyp and counsayll of the cytie for euer, and founde suertie of. xii. honest persones, that he shulde be good of berynge, for kepynge of the kynges peas, within the cytie, for terme of his lyfe after.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxvi.

Iohñ Horne.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. iiii.

Rauffe Blount.

IN this. iiii. yere of kyng Edwarde, Michaell Touy[3] whiche, in tyme of warre had w the Walshemen, demeaned hym otherwyse than stode with his trouth and allegeaunce, was accused of treason, and thereof arreygned, iuged, and dampned, & after was drawen, hanged, and quarteryd.

And this yere was the statute of Mortmayn enacted firste, which is to meane, ỹ no

[1] Frowyk. [2] Henry Waleys. MS. [3] Tony.

man shulde gyue into the churche, any landes or rentes without a specyall lycence of the kynge; whiche acte, syne that tyme, hath ben more strongly enacted and deuysed, with many addicyons thereunto augmented or annexyd.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxvi. Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxvii.

Robert de Bracy[1].

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. v.

Rauffe Fenour.

IN this. v. yere of the reygne of kynge Edwarde, pope Nicholas, the thyrde of that name, made doctour Robert Kylwarby, than beynge archebysshop of Caunterbury, a cardynal of Rome, & admytted to that see a frere, named doctor Iohñ Pekham.

And in this yere, the kynge gaue vnto Dauyd, brother to Lewelyn, prynce of Walys, the lordship of Froddesham: the whiche Dauyd dwelled in the kynges court, and dyd vnto hym plesaunt seruyce to the entent to spye ỹ kynges secret counsayll, and if any thynge were spoken or done to ỹ hurte of his brother, that he therof myght gyue to hym warnynge, as after by his dede apperyd.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxviii.

Iohñ Adryan.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. vi.

Walter Langley.

IN this vi. yere the kynge cõmaunded the courtes of his lawes, as ỹ Kynges Bench, the Chauncery, the Comon Place, and the Excheker to be remouyd vnto Shrewysbury, where Myghelmesse Terme was holden and kept; but agayne Hillary Terme, the bokes & offycers was countermaunded agayne to Westmynster to be there holden. In whiche cariynge of the recordes to and fro, they, by reason of great plente of rayne whiche in that season fyll, caught great hurte & were sore defacyd, in somoche that ỹ bokes were greatly imperisshed, and the clerkes hadde great laboure to brynge theym to their former state.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxix.

Robert Basynge.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. vii.

Wyllyam Mazerer[2].

IN this. vii. yere, the kyng helde his parlyament at London, whiche was chiefly sette for the reformacõn of the kynges coygne, which was clypped [& washed][3] in suche wyse that it was therby wonderfully mynysshed and enpayred. In the season of this parlyamẽt, many of the Iewes of London & other places, were taken and put in holde for money clyppynge. And in Decembre folowynge, certayne enquestes were charged in London to enquyre of the sayde Iewes, and other, that so hadde blemysshed the kynges coygne. By the which enquestes the Iewes of the cytie, with dyuers goldsmythes that kept exchange of sylver, were indyted.

And the Monday folowyng the Purificacion of our Lady, the mayre & dyuers iustices *Fol. lxv.* of the lande sat at London, where before theym was caste. CC. lxxx. and. xvii. persones; of the whiche was but iii. Englysshemen, and all the other were Iewes and Iewes borne, albeit that many of theym were borne in Englande, and therfore, of some wryters they be named Englysshe Iewes, ỹ whiche were all, at sondry times and places, put in execucion.

The Blacke Freers by Ludgate. In this yere also, began the foundacion of the churche of ỹ Freers Prechoures, or Blacke Freers, by Ludgate, by theyr founder.

And in this yere the towne of Boston was greatly blemysshed with fyre.

[1] Robert Brassey. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Wyllyam le Meyre. edit. 1559. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxix. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxx.

Thomas Box.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno. viii.

Rauffe More.

IN this. viii. yere, the kynge caused, in syluer, the halfe peny to be coygned, where, before tyme, other coygnes of other metall ranne amonge the people to theyr great noyaunce and losse; and farthinges of syluer were also coygned the selfe same tyme. And the wynter folowynge, abonte the day of Seynt Denys, or the. ix. daye of Octobre, fyl suche plente of snowe, that thereof ensued moche harme.

Anno Domini. xiii.lxxx. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxi.

Wyllyam Faryngdon.

Gregory Rokkisley. Anno. ix.

Nicholas Wynchester.

IN this. ix. yere of kyng Edwarde, Dauyd, the brother of Lewellyn prince of Walys, (the which, as ye before haue herde, dwellyd in the kynges court to knowe the kynges cõsayll, and therof to enfourme his brother,) whan he had ỹ he wayted for, he secretly gatte hym into Wálys to his brother, and hym excyted agayne the kynge in all that he myght, and caused his brother to man and vytayll dyuerse castelles wtn Walys, and specyally the castell of Swandon, wherin he moche trusted, & gaderyd vnto hym ỹ Walshmen by gyftes and other meanes, so that he was very stronge.

Wherof when the kynge was enfourmed, he wolde therunto giue no credence, tyll he had sent thyther, & receyued from thens the certaynte. But for so moche as wynter was towarde, & he myght nat cõuenyently go thyther w any power, he therfore prouyded to send men & vytayll, to strength the castelles of Flynt and Rutlãde, and other holdes whiche he there had, and, with prouysyon made, to warre vpon theym in the begynnynge of ỹ next yere, & sufferyd that wynter to passe.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxii.

Wyllyam Mazerer'.

Henry Waleys. Anno. x.

Nicholas Wynchester.

IN this. x. yere, the kynge herynge more and more of the vnstedfastnes of the Walshemen, for to let them of theyr purpose to greue his holdes beforenamed, he sente thyder with a crewe of sowdyours, the erlys of Northumberlande, and of Surrey; with whom, amonge other, went sir Rogier Clyfforde, sir Wyllyam Lyndesay, sir Richarde Tanny, & many other noble knyghtes and squyres; the whiche with great corage entrede into Walys, and made with the Walshe men many skyrmyssbes: tyll lastly, vpon Palme Sondaye, Dauyd with a great power of Walshmen, mette with the said lordes and knyghtes, at a place nere to a towne called Hanardyne, where atwene them was a sore fyght; but in the ende ỹ losse fyll to the Englysshmen: for there were slayne sir Wyllyam Lyndesey, sir Richarde Tanny, with many other, and sir Rogier Clyfforde was takyn. After whiche ouerthrowe of the Englysshmen, the sayd Dauyd layde siege vnto the castelles of Flynt and of Rutlande; and his brother in that season warred and occupyed the landes of sir Edmunde Mortymer, and wan the towne called Lambatre Vaure, and there threwe the walles therof downe to the grounde. This towne is also called Abreswith. It was nat long after ỹ brute of this ouerthrowe of the Englysshemen came vnto the towne, wherefore he sped hym the faster thyderwarde.

[a] Wyllyam le Meyre. edit. 1559.

Anno Domini M.CC.lxxxii. Rauffe Blunt. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxiii.

Henry Waleys. Anno. xi. Hawkyn Betnell.

IN this. xi. yere, vpon ỳ day of seynt Lenarde, or the. vi. daye of Nouembre, whyle kyng Edwarde was thus occupyed in rescowynge of his men, whiche were besiged of Dauyd, sir Rogier Clifforde, w other, whiche entended to make a reysyng vpon ỳ Walshemen, was drowned by foly vpō a brydge made of bargis plankys to haue passed a water atwene Snowdon and Anlysseye. And the thirde daye of Decembre folowynge, was Lewelyn prynce of Walys slayne by sir Edmunde Mortymer and his company, and his hede sent vnto to kynge', than beynge at Rutlande: the whiche he sent vnto London, chargynge it ỳ' be set vpon the Toure of Lōdon. Of this Lewelyn a Walshe metrician made these. iiii. verses folowynge.

Hic iacet Anglorum tortor; tutor Venedorum;
Princeps Wallorum; Lewelinus regula morum;
Gemma Ceuorum[3]; flos regum preteritorum;
Forma futurorum; dux, laus, lex, lux, populorum.

Whiche verses are thus to meane as foloweth.

Of Englysshmen the scourge, of Walshe the protectoure,
Lewelyn the prynce, rule of all vertue,
Gemme of all lyuers, and of all other the floure,
Whiche, vnto deth, hath payde his dette due,
Of kynges a mirrour, that after hym shall sue,
Duke and prayse, and of the lawe the ryght,
Here in this graue, of people lyeth the lyght.

But an Englysshe metrician wrote other. iiii. verses in dispraysynge of the sayd Lewelyn as foloweth.

Fol. lxvi.

Hic iacet errorum princeps, ac predo virorum,
Proditor Anglorum, fax linida[4] reorum,
Numen Wallorum, trux, dux, homicida, piorum,
Fex Troianorum, stirps, mendax, causa malorum.

The whiche may in this wyse be englysshed.

Here lyeth of errour the prynce, if ye wyll ken,
Thefe and robbour, and traytour to Englysshmen,
A dym bronde, a sect of doers yll,
God of Walshemen, cruell without skyll
In sleynge the good, and leder of the badde,
Lastly rewardyd as he deseruyd hadde,
Of Troyans blode the drastes and nat sede,
A rote of falshode, and cause of many yll dede.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxiii. Iordan Goodchepe. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxiii.

Henry Waleys. Anno. xii. Martyn Box.

[3] the king. [4] that it. edit. 1533. 1542. [3] Coeyorum. MS. *and* edit. 1559. [4] liuida secta.

IN this. xii. yere, the kynge, beynge stylle in Walys, pursued Dauyd, the brother of Lewelyn, from towne to towne, so that lastly, he was taken & broughte vnto the kynge aboute the Natyuyte of seynt Iohñ; and so holden in warde tyll the kyng had there sped his nedes Then the kynge had all the cõutre at his wyl, & gaue vnto Englysshe lordes townes in the myddes of Walys, and deuyded ỹ countre into shyres, & ordeyned there shyreffes and other offycers; as then were vsed in Englande. At Aberconow he made a stronge castell, where before was a house of whyte monkes; the whiche remouyd' thens, & ordeyned for them in some other place; he also made than ỹ castell of Carnaruan fast by Snowdõ, and repayred agayne the towne of Labãtre[1] or Abreswith, which Lewelyn had before betyn downe: also he garnysshed the castelles & holdes standynge vpon the see syde w Englysshmen, & made Englysshemen lordes of the groundes belongynge to the same. And whan the kynge hadde sette that countre in rule, then aboute Mychelmasse he retourned vnto Shrewysbury, where he sette a parlyament: in the tyme wherof the foresayd Dauyd, as chief styrrer and begynner of all this warre, was there demyd to be drawen, hãged & quartered, & so he was shortly after at the sayd towne of Shrewysbury, and his hede sent to London, and sette by the hede of his brother Lewelyn.

And this yere was the firste sone of kyng Edwarde borne, whyle the kynge was in Walys at the castle of Carnaruan; by reason wherof he was after named Edwarde of Carnaruan. He was borne vpon ỹ day of seynt Marke, or the. xxv. daye of Apryll. This yere also, one Laurence Duket, a cytezyn of London, was found deed & hanged within seynt Mary Bowe churche of Chepe; for the whiche, enqueries were made. And lastely, for that dede were atteynted these. vii. persones folowyng: that is to saye, Reygnolde of Lancaster, Robert Pỹnot, Paule of Stepỹhith, Thomas Cordwayner, Iohñ Tolanson, Thomas Russell & Robert Scot, the whiche were all for that dede drawyn & hanged: and a woman for the same dede was also brent, and Rauffe Crepyn, Iourdan Goodchepe, Gilbert Clerke & Geffrey Clerke, were also atteynt for ỹ same cause; but they were repryed. and sent vnto the Toure of London, where they remayned longe after, and lastly delyuered. And in this yere, the great conduyte standyng agayne seynt Thomas of Acres in Chepe was begon to be made: in this yere also, stryfe and vnkyndenesse began to kyndell atwene ỹ kynge and the erle of Leycester; whiche after grewe to the great disturbaũce of dyuers townes of Englande, and specially of the cytie of London, as after some dele shall appere.

Inicium aq̃ cõductus in Chepe.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxv.

Stephen Corñhylle.

Gregory Rokesle. Anno. xiii.

Robert Rokesby.

IN this xiii. yere, vpon the daye of the Conuercyon of seynt Paule, or the. xxv. daye of Ianuarii, the kynge ceasyd the fraunchese & lyberties into his hãdes, and discharged the mayre of London, than beynge Gregory Rokkisle, & admytted for custos or gardeyn of the cytie, Stephan Sandewyche; the whiche contynued in that offyce, tyll the Monday folowynge the Purifycacon of our Lady, at whiche season the sayd Stephan was discharged, and sir Iohñ Bretoñ knyght charged for the resydue of the yere. The cause of this displeasure that the kyng had vnto the cytie, is nat shewed of no certaynte; but in an olde panflete it apperyth that ỹ sayd Gregory Rokkisley, toke certayne brybes of the bakers, and sufferyd them to sell brede lackynge. vi. oz. or. vii. vnces in a peny lofe: for the which ỹ kyng shulde be sore displeased: but yet to me it semyth no conuenyent cause to sease the lyberties of the cytie, for the offence of one man: wherfore it is to presuppose ỹ it was for a more greuous cause. And in this yere, was fully tynysshed and endyd the newe werke of the churche of Westmynster vnto the ende of the quere, begonne, as before is

[1] Ie removed. [2] Lanbatre.

shewyd;

shewyd, in the thirde yere of the. iii. Henry, by whiche reason it shuld apere, that this church shuld be in edyfyinge vpon. lxvi. yeres. Of the firste foundacion of this churche are dyuers oppynyons: for as before is shewed, in the thirde chapiter of the story of Carce[1], and. v. parte of this werke, this churche was firste founded by a cytezeyne of London, and after reedyfyed by seynt Edwarde, and lastly by kynge Henry the. iii. But in the same abbey of Westmynster, where of lykelyhode the moost certaynte is to be had, it is regystryd ỳ this sayd churche was a temple of ỳ Brytons longe or they receyued the fayth of Crist; and in ỳ tyme of their Cristen kynge Lucius, it was hallowed of Augustyne and his felowes: and secundaryly, it was reedyfied by Sebertus, than kynge of Estsaxons or Essex, aboute the tyme whan Ethelbert, kynge of Kent, buylded seynt Paules church of London, whiche was after the tyme that Lucius receyued the fayth of Crist, vpon. CCCC. yeres: thanne thirdly it was buylded by seynt Edwarde the Cõfessour, whiche reygned vpon. CCCC. and. xl. yeres after the sayde Sebertus: and fourthly or lastely, by the foresayde Henry the thirde, whiche began his reygne after the deth of seynt Edwarde. C.l. yeres.

Fol. lxvii.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxvi.

Walter Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xiiii.

Iohñ Wade.

IN the xiiii. yere of kynge Edwarde at a parlyament holden at Westmynster, were made the statutes called Addimenta[2] Gloucestrie, which is to meane Addicions of Statutes made and put to suche as before tyme were made at the parlyamẽt holden at Glouceter, ỳ whiche statutes made[3] to retourne suche persones as my sused the lãdes and tenementes, cõmynge to theym by reason of the dower, or landes of theyr wyues: so that the childre of the seconde husbande put[4] the ryghtfull enheritours, or suche as were next allied vnto the firste donours. By reason of whiche statutes, and addicions now in this parlyament made, suche mysorder was retourned.

In this yere or nere there aboute, in a towne of Almayne called Traiect, many men & women, as wytnessyth the auctour Cronica Cronicarum, were daunsynge vpon a bridge, whiche lay ouer a ryuer called Moose; in whiche tyme of their dysporte and daunsynge came by a preest berynge the sacrament towarde a syke man, wherof the sayd men and women beyng in reuell toke no regarde vnto the sacrament, nor dyd vnto it any honour and reuerence; but were it by the wreche of God or otherwyse, shortly after the preest was passed ouer, the bridge brake, by meanes wherof nere vnto the nombre of CC. persones were drowned. And aboute this same season in the countree called in Englysshe the Swetezers, a women was delyuered of a childe that from the nauyll vpwarde had ii. complete bodyes, as. iiii. armys, and ii. hedes with ii. bodyes to the wast; and downwarde but. ii. legges, the whiche with the foresayd armys be clypped eyther others body: and an other woman bare a childe or a monster, wherof the hede and the face was lyke vnto a man, and all the body lyke vnto a lyon with tayle and fete and all other fetures accordynge to the same.

In this yere also a cytezyne of Lõdon, named Thomas Pwylesdon, the whiche, in the tyme of the barons warre before in the story of kyng Henry shewed, had ben a capytayne, and a great styrrer of the cõmons of the sayd cytie, for to maynteyne the barons partie agayne the kynge, was newly accused, that he with other of euyll disposicion shuld make conuenticles, and assembles to the newe distourbaunce of the cytie, wherof reporte was made vnto the kynge: the which remytted the enquery therof vnto sir Rauffe Sandewych, than custos or gardeyne of the cytie. Then the sayd Thomas w̃ other was put in suer

[1] Careticus. MS. & edit. 1559. [2] Additamenta. [3] were made. [4] put by.

kepynge

kepynge, tyll the matier were duely enquyred of: after whiche inquisicõn made and founde, reporte was made vnto the kynge: then the kynge sent downe a wrytte, and cõmaũded it to be proclaimed shortly after within the boundes of the cytie, wherof the effecte was that the sayde Thomas Pywelysdon, Wyllyam de Heywoode, Richarde de Coundris, Richarde le Cofferer, Robert de Derby, Albyne de Darby, Wylliam Mayo mercer, and Iuo Lynge draper, with dyuers other to the nombre of. l. persones, shulde be banysshed the cytie for euer. And if any of the sayde lviii.[1] persones were at that tyme of the proclaymacion voyded the cytie for fere or otherwyse that they shulde so remayne, and nat to retourne vnto ỹ cytie, vpon payne of lyfe losynge.

In this yere also, where as of olde tyme longe before this season, the marchauntes straungers, cõmynge with their marchaũdyse, were lodged win the cytezyns of the cytie of London, and solde all theyr marchaundyses by the procurynge of his hoost, for ỹ which his sayd hoost had a certayne of euery. *li.*; by meanes of the sayd marchauntes straungers, it was at this day brought to passe that they myght hyre to them houses for to dwell in, and for stowage of theyr wares, so that no cytezyn shulde entermedle hym with ỹ sayd straungers, nor yet theyr wares: by meane wherof they vsed many disceytes both in vtteraunce of false wares, and also by theyr weyghtes, whiche they vsed in theyr owne houses to the great hurte of the hole realme of Englande. Wherefore sodaynly serche was made, and theyr weyghtes founde and prouyd false, and ouer that all suche wares, as they shulde haue weyed at the kynges bealme, they weyed moche therof in theyr sayde houses, to the hynderaunce of the kynges custome; for whiche offences agayne theym prouyd, to ỹ nombre of. xx. of ỹ sayd straũgers were arrestyd, and sent vnto the Toure of London, and theyr weyghtes brent and consumyd in Westchepe of London, the Thursdaye before the feast of Symon & Iude: and fynally the sayd marchaũtes were delyuered by fyne makynge to the kynge of a thousande poundes, when they had suffered by a season harde and vyle prysonnement.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxvi. Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxvii.

Thomas Crosse.

Sir Iohn Bryton. Anno. xv.

Wyllyam Hawteyn.

IN this. xv. yere, the Iewes of Englãde were sessed at great sũmes of money which they payde vnto the kyng, but of. i. other aucto' it is sayd that the cõmons of Englande graunted to the kynge the. v. parte of theyr mouables for to haue the Iewes banysshed the lande; for whiche cause the sayd Iewes, to put ỹ cõmons from theyr purpose, gaue of theyr free wylles great sũmes of money to the kynge. Whiche sayuge apperyth to be trewe, for the sayd Iewes were exyled within fewe yeres after.

This yere aboute ỹ begynnynge of Maii, the kyng sayled into Burdeux; and from thens he rode into Fraunce; where, as wytnessyth the Frenshe booke, he was honourably receyued of Philip le Beau, or Philyp the faire, than kynge of Fraunce, and after receyued homage of the sayd Edwarde for the duche of Guyan. And whenne kynge Edwarde hadde taryed a season in Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeux, whyther came vnto hym a certayne ambassadours from the kynge of Spayne, with the whiche he helde longe dalyaunce; wherfore the Frenshe kynge[2] he was suspected that he shuld allie hym with the kynge of Spayne agayne the Frenshe kynge.

And this yere, testifyeth Polycronicon, the somer was so excedyng hote that men dyed for hete.

And this yere whete was so plentuous that it was solde at London for. xl.*d.* a quarter.

[1] 1. edit. 1559. [2] of the Frensh kyng.

Anno

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxviii.

Wyllyam Herfforde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xvi.

Thomas Stanys.

Fol. lxviii.

IN this. xvi. yere of king Edwarde [seynt Thomas of Herforde was translated, and this yere][1] fyll distaunce atwene sir Payne Tiptoft wardeyn of certayn castelles in Walys, and a Walshe knyght called sir Ries ap Meredok[2]; so that sundry skyrmysshes were foughten atwene theym, and many men slayne vpon bothe sydes to ỹ great distourbaunce of all that countre.

This yere, vpon saynt Margaretes euyn, or the. xix. daye of Iulii, fyll wonderfull great hayle, that the lyke therof was nat of men than lyuynge seen; and after that ensued contynuell rayne, whiche distemperyd the groũde in suche wyse that, the yere folowynge, whete was solde for. xviii. *d.* a busshell: and this yere for. xiiii. *d.* and so encreased yerely after durynge the reygne of the kynge, & after in his sõnes dayes tyll it was lastly solde for. xl. *s.* a quarter and aboue.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxix.

Wylliam Betayn[3].

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xvii.

Iohñ of Caunterbury.

IN this. xvii. yere, the warre before in ỹ yere last past atwene sir Payn Tiptoft and syr Ries contynuynge, to ỹ entent that the sayd Ries myght reuenge his cause agayne the sayd sir Payne, he arreryd a great multytude of Walshmen, and brent & wasted dyuers townes in Walys, soo that the kynge, then beynge in Normandy, sent vnto the erle of Cornewayll then beynge ỹ kynges lieutenaũt in Englande, that he shuld sende thyder an army of knightes, to withstand the malyce of ỹ Walshmen; the whiche preparyd shortly an army and yode with them into the borders of Northwalys, where he with his company bare hym so knyghtly, that in the ende ỹ sayd Ries was taken and brought vnto Yorke, where he was after drawen, hanged and quarteryd.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxix. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxx.

Fulke of Seynt Edmũde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xviii.

Salamon Langforde.

IN this. xviii. yere, vpon our Lady euyn Assumpcyon, kyng Edwarde was honorably receyued of the cytezyns of London, and so conueyed vnto Westmynster, where shortely after were brought before hym many greuous cõplayntes of dyuers of his iustyces, as sir Thomas Wevlande, Adam Stretton and other; the whiche the kyng caused streyghtly to be examyned, and lastly were founde gylty, of whiche[4] trespasses and causes as they were accused of: wherfore some of theym were outlawed, and loste suche goodes as they had, and the other punysshed by longe enprysonement, and lastly delyuered by payinge of great fynes.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxx. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxi.

Thomas Romayn.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xix.

William de Lyre.

IN this. xix. yere, the kynge ordeyned that all woll whiche shuld be sold vnto straũgers

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.
[2] sir Ries ap Mordek, edit. 1542. 1559. Meredeth. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[3] Benet. edit. 1559. *in marg.*
[4] such, edit. 1533. 1542.

shuld

shuld be brought vnto Sandewyche, where the staple therof longe after was as it is nowe at the towne of Caleys. And this yere were the Iewes banysshed the lande; for the which cause the cõmons gaue vnto the kynge a quindecim or fyftene.

This yere also sir Gilbert de Clare, erle of Glouceter, maried dame Iane doughter of kyng Edwarde. This was called Iohãne of Acris, for she was borne at Acris, when kynge Edwarde was therupon his great iourney; and soone there after in the same yere, the duke of Brabanys sone, weddyd Margarete ỹ suster of the sayd Iohanne.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxxi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxii.

Rauffe Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xx.

Hamonde Boxe.

IN this. xx. yere, and begynnynge of the mayres yere, and also of ỹ kynges. xx. yere, that is to meane vpon the euyn of seynt Andrewe, or the. xxix. day of Nouembre, dyed quene Elyanore the kynges wyfe, and was buryed at Westmynster, in the chapell of seynt Edwarde, at ỹ fete of Henry the thirde, [where she hathe. ii. wexe tapers brennynge vpon her tumbe, both daye and nyght, whiche so hath cõtynued syne the day of her buryinge to this present daye.][1] This gentyll waman, as before is towched in the. xxxviii. yere of kynge Henry the thirde, was suster vnto the kyng of Spayne: by whom kynge Edwarde had. iiii. sones, that is to saye, Iohn, Henry, Alphons, and Edwarde, whiche Edwarde succedyd his fader, by reason that the other. iii. dyed before theyr fader; also he had by her v. doughters: the firste, Elianore, was maryed vnto Wyllyam erle of Barre; the seconde, Iohãne of Acris, was maryed as before is sayd vnto ỹ erle of Glouceter; the thirde, Margarete, was maryed to the dukes sone of Braban; the iiii. Mary by name, was made a menchon at Ambrysbury; and the v. named Elyzabeth, was maryed vnto ỹ erle of Holande; and after his deth she was maryed vnto Humfrey Boherum[2] erle of Hereforde.

And this yere dyed also the olde quene Elyanore, wyfe vnto Henry the thirde, and mother to this kyng Edward, whose herte was buryed at the Graye Freres in London, & his body at Ambrisbury in ỹ house of nũnes.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxiii.

Henry Bale.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xxi.

Elys Russell.

IN this. xxi. yere, ỹ kyng helde his great court of parlyamẽt at Lõdon, to the whiche with dyuers lordes of that prouynce came the kyng of Scottes. And after he had cõtynued there a conuenyent season, he was conueyed w dyuers lordes ferre vpon his iourney towarde his owne countre.

And in this yere as one Richarde Bagle, offycer of the sheriffes of London, was ledynge a prysoner towarde the gayole, ỹ which he before had arrested, thre men rescowed the sayd prysoner, and toke hy from the offycer, the whiche were pursued and taken, and by iudgement & lawe than vsed brought into Westchepe, and there had theyr ryght handes smyten of by the wrestes.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxiiii. *Fol. lxiv.*

Robert Rokkisley.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xxii.

Martyn Awbry.

IN the. xxii. yere of kyng Edwarde, vpon the daye of seynt Tyburce & Valerian, or

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Humfrey Bohun. MS.

the. xiiii. daye of Maii, fyll a wonderfull snowe, & therwith an excedynge wynde; by vyolence wherof great herme was done in sundry places of Englande, [in remembraunce wherof a metrician made these verses folowynge.

Crastino Tiburci sanctorum Valeriani
Nix cadit immanis, ventus vehemens borealis
Euulsit siluas, vulsit quas reperit herbas,
Edes dumpnose detexit & impituose,
Quas clam prostrauit; sic plurima dampna parauit.

The whiche verses may thus be englysshed as hereafter foloweth.

The morowe folowynge Tiburce and Valerian,
The blessyd seyntes, of snowe fyll suche plentie,
That at that daye was no lyuynge man,
That myght remembre of so great quantyte.
The northyn wynde blewe with suche fyerste,
That houses, tryes, with herbys, it ouercast:
And many other harmes by lande, and eke by see,
Of that wynde came, the whyle that it dyd laste.]'

IN this yere, also, aboute the ende of the moneth of Iulii, dyed Freer Pekham, than archebysshop of Caunterbury, in whose see was after stalled maister Robert of Wychester. And aboute the myddes of Septembre folowynge, the erle of Barre, a Frensheman, maryed Elianore, the kynges doughter, in the towne of Brystowe: and aboute the ende of this yere dyed Alexandre kyng of Scottes, where soon after ensuyd great warre, & trouble, for the enherytaunce of that lande, as in some part shal after appere.

[Li. 7. ca. 39.] And this yere whete was solde at London for. ii. *s.* a bussheil. In this yere also as wytnessith the Frenshe cronycle, Philip le Beawe than kynge of Fraunce, made warre in Gascoygne, and Guyan, for the cause as there is shewyd, sayinge that kyng Edwarde, vnder coloure to haue made a vyage into the holy lande, gatheryd a great army and sodeynly entred Normandy, bothe by lande and water, and dyd moche harme in spoylynge & takynge dyuers shyppes of Fraunce, and brynnynge and spoylynge dyuers townes of the same; and after came vnto the towne of Rochele, where to it the Englysshemen made dyuers assautes, wherby the dwellers, and also the towne susteyned moche harme.

Wherof the kynge of Fraunce beyng enfourmed, sent vnto kynge Edwarde, monysshyng hym to come vnto his parlyamēt; and also to make satisfaccion for suche harmys as his people had done within his domynyon of Fraunce, and Normandy. But for that kyng Edwarde refused that to do; therfore the sayd Philip le Beawe sente Rauffe de Nele, than constable of Fraunce, into Gascoygne with a great & myghty power, the whiche made sharpe warre vpon ỹ Gascoygnes: but the Gascoygnes with helpe of the Englysshemen defended theym in suche wyse that great hurte was done vpon both parties. Than, fynally, as testyfieth the sayd Frenshe cronycle, to the entent that kynge Edwarde myghte make ỹ better clayme to all the hole duchye of Normandy, he sent the Frenshe kynge worde that he wolde gyue ouer into his handes the duchie of Guyan, and holde no lande of the kyng of Fraunce.

Nota initium guerri.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxiiii. Anno Domini.M.CC.lxxxxv.

Henry Boxe.

Sir Iohn Bryton. Anno. xxiii.

Richarde Glouceter.

' *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

IN

IN this. xxiii. yere, the Walshemen, by styrrynge of one named Madok, rebelled agayne the kynge; wherfore he in all haste spedde hym vnto Westchester, and aboute the feast of seynt Nicholas, wan from the Walshmen the ile called Anglesia, or the Ile of Manne: and buylded newe the cytie & castell of Beau Maryse, and broughte the vnsteadfast Walshmen to newe reclayme: and then caused the woddes of the countre to be hewyn downe, wherin before tymes they vsed to hyde theym as a cony doth in his claper, and repayred so the castellys and stronge holdes w buyldynge of some newe, that he caused the Walshmen to thryue agayne theyr wyllys. For by ŷ strength of those castellys they were kept from theyr olde accustomyd rauyns and stelynges, and put so in execucion by the rules[1] of the sayd castellys and stronge holdes, that they fyll vnto occupacyon, and to byeng and sellynge, and gatheryd treasour, and began to lyue after the maner of Englyssh men. So that more and more that coūtre grewe to more restfulnesse & peas.

In this yere also the Frenshmen[2] arryued at Douer, with a certayne of shyppes beynge vnder ŷ rule of sir Mathew de Mounte Morency, & of sir Iohñ Harcourte knyghtes, and spoyled that towne, and brent a parte of it, in whiche skyrmysshe was slayne [or martyred, an holy man named seynt]' Thomas of Douer. And in this yere, as testyfieth the Frenshe cronycle, Charlys de Valoys brother vnto kynge Philip of Fraunce, was sent by his sayd brother into Gascogne, with a great hoost: the which Charlys layde his siege vnto the castell of Ryon, wherin at that tyme were sir Iohñ Seynt Iohñ and Iohñ de Brytayne, ŷ whiche manfully and vigurously defendyd the sayd castell agayne the Frenshmen all that yere and more, as in the next yere shall appere.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxxv. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxvi.

Iohñ Dunstable.

Sir Iohñ Bryton. Anno. xxiiii.

Adam Halyngbery.

IN this. xxiiii. yere, the kyng, for ŷ great warre that he had with the Frenshe kynge and ellys where, cōmaūded a new subsydie to be leuyed vpon all ŷ sarplers of wolle goynge out of Englande, with all fellys and hydes in lyke maner, and ouer that all suche money as before was graunted by the clergy of Englande, towarde the defence of the holy lande. The kynge, then, for reporte that he then had from Rome of the popes[4] maners, than Bonyface ŷ. viii. cōmaunded it to be brought vnto his tresoury: and by a cōuocacion made of the sayd clergye, he had graūted towarde his nedes halfe of theyr spirituall & temporall landes, begynnynge at. xx. marke benyfyce and so assendyng vpwarde, the whiche was nat payde in one yere, but by deuyded porcions in. iii. yeres ensuynge: and of ŷ lay fee or temporall men of Englande, he had graūted to hym the. x. peny of theyr moūables, the which was payde in. ii. yeres next ensuyng. And this yere, in the moneth of Marche, was drawen and hāged at London, for treason done in Fraūce, a knyght called sir Thomas Turbeuyle: and about the tyme of Easter, whan Charlys de Valoys, as ye before in that other yere haue harde, had lyen longe at the castell of Ryon, & myghte no thyng wynne vpon the Englysh men, but dayly loste of the beste of his knyghtes, he sent for more ayde and socoure; at which tyme came vnto hym sir Rauffe Nele, constable of Fraūce, with a fresshe company, and than assawted it of newe: but whan they had lyen there a season, and sawe they preuayled no thynge agayne theyr enemys, they yode vnto an holde thereby named Poudency, and it assauted forsomoche as the more nombre of the sowdyours there were Normans, and after. viii. dayes by appoyntement or otherwyse gatte the sayd holde; so that all the Englysshmen had theyr lybertie and goodes, and the Normans taken as prysoners: the whiche they brought after vnto the castell of Rions, and there in syghte of the sowdyours hanged all or the more partie of the sayd Normayns. Whan the Gascoynes beynge within the towne and castell of Rions, sawe then their cosyns

Fol. lxv.

[1] rulers. edit. 1542. [2] Normans, edit. 1559. *in marg.* [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Bishop of Romes.

& coũtrey men hanged before theyr iyen, they cast in theyr myndes that it was done by treason of the Englisshe men, and that they wolde at length deale with them in lyke maner, by reason wherof stryfe and varyaunce arose atwene the Englysshe men and the Gascoygnes, so ŷ eyther of theym feryd the treason of the other: for the whiche cause, sir Iohñ Seyn Iohñ, sir Iohñ de Brytayn, sir Robert Tiptoft, sir Rauffe Tãny, sir Hugh Bardolfe, and sir Adam Cretynge, with dyuers other, fledde by see, and in that maner saued themself; & soon after the sayd towne & castell of Ryons was wonne by the Frenshmen, and the inhabitauntes of the same swórne vnto the Frensh kynge.

Ye haue harde before, in the xxii. yere of this kynge, howe, after the deth of Alexander kyng of Scottes, many questyons fyll amonge the said Scottes, who by right of enheritaunce shuld be kyng of that lande, consyderynge that the sayd Alexander had left after hym. iii. doughters[1], the whiche, lyuynge theyr fader, were maryed. The firste to sir Iohñ Bayloll, the secõde to Robert le Bruze, and the thirde to one named Hastynges. Many of the lordes of Scotlande wold haue crowned sir Iohñ Bayloll, by reason that he maryed the eldest of the doughters; but the frendes of Robert le Bruze withstode it with all theyr power.

And other there were that helde with Hastynges; so that after great stryfe and longe varyaunce, the matyer was brought before kynge Edwarde as chief lorde and soueraygne of that lande, promysynge to hym to abyde all suche determynacion and iudgement as he shuld set therin.

Than kynge Edwarde, to the ende that the Scottes shuld knowe perfytely that the kyng of Englande ought of right to be there chief hede and soueraygne, shewed vnto them such olde wrytynges as he lyteli tofore had caused to be serchyd & founde, in the whiche it was conteyned, by the auctorite of olde cronycles & wryters, as Marianus the Scot, Wylliam of Malmesbury, Roger of Huntyngdon and other, that in the yere of our Lorde ix.C.xx. kynge Edwarde the elder made subget vnto hym the kynges of Cumbris, and Scottes.

Also in the yere of grace. ix.C. and. xxi. the foresayd Scottes and Cumbris chase ŷ sayd Edwarde the elder to be theyr chief lorde & patron.

And in the yere of our Lorde ix.C. xxvi. Ethelstane, than kynge of Englande, subduyd Constantyne, than kynge of Scottes: and after admytted ŷ sayd Constantyne to reygne as kyng vnder hym by othe of obeysaunce[2] with feaute and homage.

Also Edredus, brother to the sayd Ethelstane, subduyd of newe the Scottes with the Northumbris, & receyued of theym agayne othe and homage. And ouer that it is founde in the sayd cronycles that Edgar ouercame Alphunius[3], the sone of Kynadus, kynge of Scottes, and receyued of hym feawty & homage, and helde hym vnder his obeysaũce, as he had done his fader Kynadus before tyme. Moreouer it is there wytnessyd that Canutus, in the. xvi. yere of his reygne, subduyd Malcolyñ, than kynge of Scottes, and receyued of hym feawty and homage.

Furthermore, Willyam Conquerour, in the. vi. yere of his reygne, subduyed Malcolyñ kynge of Scotlande: the whiche before tymes had receyued the sayd kyngdome of the gyfte of Edwarde, kynge and confessoure; and Willyam ŷ Rede dyd in lyke wyse vnto the sayde Malcolyñ & vnto his. ii. sõnes, that reygned in Scotlande the one after the other.

Also Dauid kynge of Scottes dyd homage vnto Stephan than kynge of Englande, and Willyam kyng of Scottes dyd homage vnto Henry ŷ thirde at ŷ tyme of his coronacõn. And after came vnto his fader Henry the seconde, whan the fore named Henry was deed in Normandy, and made his homage to hym agayne.

This Henry, ŷ was sone vnto Henry the seconde, is of many wryters named Henry ŷ

[1] *The* MS. *has a very different reading*, viz. "consideryng that the said Alexander dyed wioute heyr of his body. Which questions was for soo moche as David brothir vnto Alexander, hadd left after hym iii dougthirs the which," &c. [2] other obeysaunce. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Alpinus. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

thirde, forsomoche as he was the thirde kynge that was crowned of that name; but for he dyed before his fader, his dedes ben lytel spoken of, so ẏ of some wryters he is no thyng mynded: and it foloweth in the story, howe that Alexandre kynge of Scottes, in the. xxxv. yere of Henry the thirde, or sone of kyng Iohñ, maryed, at Yorke, Margaret doughter of the sayde Henry, and dyd vnto hym homage for the realme of Scotlande, and bounde hym & his heyres, kynges of Scotlande, by his letters patentes, to be trewe vnto the sayd Henry and vnto his heyres kynges of Englande, lyke as before tyme Wyllyam kynge of Scottes had oblyged hym vnto the seconde Henry, as before in the. xxii. yere of his reygne is more manyfestely shewed.

And more to theym was shewyd the popes[1] bulles, the whiche were sent before tymes into Scotlande. By auctoryte wherof the kynges of Scotlande were accursed, for they wold nat be obedyent to theyr lordes kynges of Englande.

WHan all these presedentes were sene by ẏ Scottes, a day was assygned of metynge at Norham in the marches atwene Englande & Scotlande, whyther vnto the kynge came the chief rulers of the Scottes, where they excused theym to be bounde vnto the kynge, for the obseruynge of the kynges ordenaunce, for somoche as they lackyd a kynge, and an hede by whom all suche ordenaunces shuld be maynteyned and holden; but, after, by aduyce of both parties, agrement was made by the Scottes that they shulde be bounde to obey the kynges iugement; wherupon boũdes[2] were made vpon both parties, that is to meane, the kynge was bounde to theym, in an hondreth thousande poũde, that win. ii. monethes after he had receyued the possession of the lande, he shulde gyue it vnto hym that was thought most rightfull enherytour; and the Scottes were agayne boũde vnto hym ẏ they shuld holde ferme & stable all suche degre and iugement, as the kynge shuld gyue in that matyer: and also that they shuld vpholde & maynteyne for theyr kynge and ruler, hym that the kynge shulde admytte & chose, and none other. After whiche bondes made *Fol. lxxi.* & delyuered vpon both sydes, the Scottes seasyd kynge Edwarde, & delyuered vnto hym by theyr chartours the possessyon of Scotlande, with castelles, with ryghtes, with customes, and all other appertenaunces to that kyngdome belongynge; and sette wardeynes in the townes, maners, and castelles that shuld sauc to hym that the kynge admytted all aduauntages and profytes of the sayde townes, and other in that meane whyle growynge.

And whan all assuraunce was made and fynysshed, to thagrement of both parties; the kynge called before hym and his counsayl all those parties that made clayme vnto ẏ kyngedome of Scotlande; and after theyr resons were wele and suffyciently arguyd and debated vpon all sydes, by aduyce, aswell of some of the lordes of Scotlande, as by his owne counsayll, he fynally admytted for kynge, sir Iohñ Bayloll, as most rightful enheritour to ẏ crowne of Scotlande; the whiche receyued it of hym thankfully, and for ẏ same in presence of the barony of Englande & of Scotlande, dyd vnto the sayd kynge Edwarde his homage and sware vnto hym feawty: and that done, the Scottes with theyr newe kynge retourned into Scotlande.

And this yere was taken the forenamed Madok, or Meredok, which as ye before haue herde, in the. xxiii. yere, caused the Walshmen to rebell, & was drawyn and hanged at London.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxvii.

Thomas de Suffolke.

Sir Iohñ Bryton. Anno. xxv.

Adam de Fullam.

IN this. xxv. yere, the kyng cõmaunded, in dyuers shyres of Englande, great quantitie of whete to be gaderyd, and sent it into Gascoygne and Guyan, to ẏ nombre of an. C.M. [Li. 7. ca. 40.]

[1] Bishop of Romes. edit. 1542. [2] bonds.

quarters,

quarters, after some wryters. And soone after sent thyder sir Edmunde his brother erle of Lancastre, sir Henry Lacy erle of Lyncolne, & sir Wyllyam Veysy baron, with dyuers other lordes and knyghtes, to strength suche people as he there had redy, whyle he preparyd an other army to haue agayñ the Scottes.

Ye haue harde in the precedynge chapitre how sir Iohñ Bayloll kynge of Scottes made othe and homage vnto kynge Edwarde, for ȳ kyngdom of Scotlande, of the whiche othe he shortly repented hym after by meane of ȳ counsayll of the abbot of Menros, as saythe [Li. 7. ca. 40.] Policronicon: albe it that it shulde seme to be as well by the counsayll of the kynge of Fraũce, by wordes that ben wryten in the Frenshe cronycle: but how so it was by one or by both, full vntrewely he forsoke his former othe and promyse, & arreryd warre agayne the kynge, wherfore kyng Edwarde sped hym thyder w̃ a great hoost, and in processe layde his siege vnto the towne of Berwyk; but the Scottes defended it egerly, & bete the Englysshemen backe, and brent some of the Englysshe shyppes; with the whiche enterpryse they were so enflamyd with pryde, that, in derysyon of the kynge, they made this mokkysshe ryme folowyng.

What wenys kynge Edwarde, with his longe shankys,
To haue wonne Berwyk, all our vnthankys.
Gaas pykes hym,
And whan he hath it,
Gaas dykis hym.

WHan kynge Edwarde herde of the pryde of ȳ Scottes, and knew of theyr scornfull ryme, he was somdeale amouyd, & encouraged his knyghtes in suche wyse, that they wanne the dyche of the towne; and after in processe with great laboure and daunger ȳ bulwerkes, so that they came vnto the gates, and made there so stronge assawte, that in the ende they wanne the towne, and slewe of the Scottes, as wytnessyth dyuers wryters, ouer the nombre of xxv.M., and toke prysoners sir Wylliam Douglas, sir Symon de Freysell, the erle Patrik, and sir Robert Bruze, with dyuers other. And in shorte tyme after, ȳ wardeyn of the castell of Berwyk seynge ȳ to hym was sent no socoure, yelded vp the sayd castell by appoyntement: and whan the kyng had possessyon of ȳ towne & castell of Berwyke, he than strengthyd theym with Englysshe men; and after wanne the holdes of Tyndall', of Exham, of Wyerbyrde, and of Lamerstok, with dyuers other.

And whyle ȳ kynge Edwarde was thus besyed aboute the wynnynge of these foresayd holdes, he sent sir Hugh Spencer, w̃ sir Hugh Percy and other noble men, with a parte of his host, to lay siege vnto Dunbarre, where, when they had layne a certayne of tyme, an hoost of Scottes came thyder to remoue ȳ siege; with whom the Englisshe men had a fiers & cruell batayll: but in the ende, by helpe of God and seynt George, the Englysshe men had the victorie, and slewe of the Scottes aboue ȳ nombre of xx.M., and loste of the Englysshe company a very fewe in nombre, where for the Englysshe men in reproche of ȳ Scottes, made this ryme folowynge.

These scaterande Scottes
Holde we for sottes,
Of wrenches vnware:
Erly in a mornynge,
In an euyll tymynge,
Came they to Dunbarre.

ANd after this victorye, the towne & castell of Dũbarre was wonne; in the which were taken prysoners, thre erlys., vii. barons, &. xxvii[a]. knyghtes, with dyuers mẽ of the churche. Than ȳ kynge sped hym vnto Edynborowe, & in processe of tyme wanne ȳ

[a] Tyuidale. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [b] xxviii. MS. *and* edit. 1559.

towne,

towne, with the castell, in the whiche were founde ỹ regalies of Scotlande; that is to meane ỹ crowne w the sceptre & cloth of astate: the whiche after were offeryd by kyng Edwarde, at ỹ shryne of seynt Edwarde, vpon the morowe after ỹ feast of seỹt Botholfe, or ỹ. xviii. day of Iunii, in ỹ yere folowynge. And when ỹ kynge had thus subduyd the Scottes, & set ỹ coũtre in a rule, he retourned w many prisoners into Englande: in whiche tyme & season, the Englisshmen susteyned many harde showres in Gascoyne & Guyan, amonge ỹ which one is remembred in ỹ Frenshe cronycle, saynge ỹ Edmunde duke or erle of Lancastre dyed at Bayon: after whose deth, whyle ỹ towne and other stronge holdes preparyd theym to withstande the Frenshmen, Robert erle of Artoys, which a lytel tofore had encoũtred w sir Iohñ Seyn Iohñ, and had of hym ben ouerset, resembled[1] his company, & made hym[2] an other skyrmysshe; in ỹ whiche he slewe vpon an hondreth Englysshmen & Gascoygnes, and toke prysoners ỹ forenamed sir Iohñ Seyn Iohñ, sir William Mortymer and other, to the noũbre of. lxx., the whiche were sent into Fraunce, vnto dyuers prysons.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxxviii.

Iohñ de Stortforde.

Sir Iohñ Bryton. Anno. xxvi.

William de Stortforde.

IN this. xxvi. yere, kyng Edwarde, with a puyssaunte armye, in the moneth of August, toke shyppynge at Douer, and sayled into Flaunders, to ayde and to helpe Guy, than erle of Flaunders, agayne ỹ Frenshe kynge; the whyche at that tyme was sore warreyd of the Frenshe kynge, in so moche that he had wonne the towne of Margquet, and the countre therabout; and for to put the sayd Guy vnto the more trouble, the sayd Frenshe kyng caused Robert, erle of Artoys, to inuade ỹ countre of Flaundres towarde Pycardy: and encountred with the sayde Guy, neere vnto a towne called Furnes, where atwene the sayd. ii. erles was foughten a sharp and cruell batayll, so that many men were slayne vpon bothe partyes. After whiche fyght the erle of Flaũders sped hym toward Gaunt, where as kynge Edwarde than soiourned, & the erle of Artoys drewe hym towarde ỹ Frenshe kynge, the which shortly after was receyued into the towne of Bruges. In whiche tyme & season, whyle the sayd ii. kynges laye thus at either towne, a meane of peas was there treated of, so that fynally a peas was concluded atwene the. ii. kynges, and atwene the Frenshe kynge and Guy erle of Flaunders, vnto the feast of All Sayntes than next ensuynge; and from that daye vnto the feast of All Sayntes than ii. yeres folowynge. After whiche peas so stablissheḋ, kyng Edwarde departed from ỹ towne of Gaunt, and yode to Burdeaux; and the Frenshe kynge retourned into Fraũce, and prysoners were delyuered vpon both parties. *Fol. lxxii.*

In this tyme and season, whyle kynge Edwarde was thus occupyed in Flaunders, the Scottes by entysement of the Frenshe kynge, to the entent to cause kyng Edwarde to kepe his countre, and that he shulde nat ayde the erle of Flaunders, beganne to make warre vpon the kynges sowdyours, whiche the kynge hadde lafte there in dyuers holdes; and also entrede vpon the borders of Northumberlande, and made sharp warre vpon the inhabytauntes of that countre: and for that sir Iohñ Bayloll their kyng, after some wryters, was at that tyme prysoner in the towre of London, or ellys voyded the countre for fere of ỹ kyng of Englande, therfore the sayd Scottes made theym a capytayne, the whiche was named Wylliam Waleys, a mã of vnknowe or lowe byrth, to whom they obeyed as vnto theyr kynge. Anon as the kyng harde of ỹ rebellyon of ỹ Scottes, which to hym was no great wonder, consyderynge theyr great vnstedfastnesse, wrote his letters vnto syr Henry Persy erle of Northumberlande, to syr Wyllyam Latymer, and to syr Hugh Cressyngham than tresourer of Englande, and to other, that they in al goodly haste shulde make pro- Wyllyam Waleys made capytayn I Scotlande.

[1] reassemblyd. MS. [2] wyth hym. MS.

uysyon

uysyon to withstande the Scottes; the whiche persones after rescayte of the kynges letters spedde theym in all spedy manere: so that they entred Scotlande shortly after, and compelled the Scottes to retourne backe vnto a towne named Streuelyn, where in a skyrmysshe foughten atwene the Englysshe & the Scottes, sir Hugh Cressyngham forenamed, with dyuers Englysshmen, was slayne. But yet the Scottes were holden so streyght of the Englysshe hoost that, after ỹ skyrmysshe, they wold nat of a certayne tyme, come in playne felde, but kept them ẅin their castellys and stronge holdes. And this yere, atwene Easter & Wytsontyde, certayne persones of the cytie of London brake vp the towre in ỹ warde of Cornehyll, and toke out certayne persones ỹ thyder were cōmytted by sir Iohn Bryton, then custos or gardeyn of the cytie for nyght walkynge; for the which ryot ỹ sayd persones, ỹ is to meane, Thomas Romayne &. viii. other, were after greuously punysshed, as first by prisonemēt, & after by fynes. And this yere ỹ kyng in ỹ moneth of Octobre came ītο Englāde, & so to Wȳchester, where ỹ cytezyns of Lōdon made suche laboure vnto his grace, that shortly after they opteyned graūt of their lyberties and fraunchyses that had in some parte be kept from them by ỹ terme of. xii. yeres and more; so that vpon the daye of the Translacion of seynt Edwarde, kynge and confessour, next folo-ynge, they chase them a maire of themselfe, wherby all the foresaid tyme theyr custos or gardeyn was appoynted by the kynge, or by suche as the kynge wolde assygne; but ye shall vnderstande ỹ this was nat redemyd ẅout great sūmes of money: for after some wryters, the cytezyns payde for it to the kynge iii. M. marke.

Also this yere, kynge Edwarde put out of his proteccyon certayne aliaūntes, whiche were rychely benyficed in Englande: the cause was for ỹ sayd alyauntes wolde nat ayde the kynge with theyr goodes, as the other of his lande dyd, out purchased an inibucion[1] of [pope][2] Bonyface the. viii., that they and theyr goodes shulde be free from all the kynges dymes or taskys: therfore the kyng seased their temporalties, and sufferyd theym with theyr spirituelties tyll they were agreed ẅ the kynge.

Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CC.lxxxix.

Richarde Reffham.

Henry Waleys. Anno. xxvii.

Thomas Sely.

IN this. xxvii. yere, after Cristmasse, certayne persones made a dyggynge and a serche in the churche of seynt Martynes le Graunde in London, for certayne treasour ỹ ther shuld be hyd, as it was reported of a gardyner; but theyr laboure was in vayne, for no thynge there was founde: for the whiche dede, the deane of Poules, the seconde Sonday of Lent folowynge, denounced all theym accursed that were at that dede doynge, or consentynge to the same.

In this yere, aboute the begynnynge of Aprell, the kyng rode towarde Scotlāde, and appoynted his lordes with theyr companyes to mete with hym at Yorke, where with hym met a great hoost: the whiche he ladde into Scotlande, and brent & spoyled the coūtre as he went, & taryed a season at Barwyke, and from thens he spedde hym in wynnynge of ỹ townes and castellys as he went, tyll he came nere to a towne named Fawkyrk, or Faukyrk, wherupō the daye of Mary Magdaleyne, or the. xxii. day of Iulii, met wyth hym ỹ power of Scotlande, and gāue vnto hym a sore fyght, but in the ende the victorye fyll vnto the Englysshmen; so that of the Scottes were slayne in ỹ felde, as affermyth dyuers wryters, ouer ỹ nombre of. xxxii. M., and of Englysshe men but barely. xxviii. persones, after which scomfyture, the Scottes yelded to the kynge the more partie of the stronge holdes & castellys that they tofore hadde holden agayne hym, [and made vnto hym new othe and promysse][3], and yelded theym self vnto hys grace and mercy: and whan he had sette that countre in an ordre and rule, he than retourned into England, and so

A grete batayl betwene Englāde & Scotlande, in whiche batayll were slayn. xxxii. M. Scottes, & but. xxviii. persones of Englisshmen.

[1] Inibicion. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. *only*. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

vnto

vnto London, where, by the aduyce of some of his counsayll, he sodeynly dampned certayne coynes of money, called pollardes, crocardes, and rosaries, and caused theym to be broughte vnto newe coynage to his great aduauntage.

Ye haue before harde in that other yere, how that a true or peas was stablysshed atwene the kynge and the kyng of Fraunce for the space of. ii. yeres and more, the whiche fynally was concluded this yere, ỹ kynge Edwarde, for a peas to be had bytwene both regyons, shuld take vnto wyfe Margarete the suster of Philip le Beawe, then kynge of Fraunce. *Fol. lxviii.* The whiche Margarete, whyle the kynge was in Scotlande, was brought vnto Douer, and so vnto Caunterbury, where the kynge spoused her in the moneth of Septembre, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle; and receyued of her in processe of tyme folowyng. ii. sõnes named Thomas & Edmunde, and a doughter named Margarete. The firste of the sõnes was surnamed Thomas of Brotherton, and the secounde Edmunde Wodestoke.

Anno Domini. xii.C.lxxxxix. Anno Domini. xiii.C.

Iohñ Armenter.

Elys Russell. Anno. xxviii.

Henry Fryngryth.

IN this. xxviii. yere, the kynge herynge of the vntrowth and rebellion of the Scottes, made ỹ thirde vyage into Scotlande, and bare hym so knyghtly, that, in short processe after his cõmynge, subdued the more parte of the lande, and after sped hym into the castell of Estruuelyn, wherein were many of the great lordes of Scotlande, and enuyronyd the sayd castell with a stronge syge. But he lay there somwhat of tyme without wynnynge of any great aduauntage, or hurte doynge vnto the Scottes; wherfore, of polycy, he caused to be made. ii. peyer of galowes in the syght of the castell, and after cõmaunded proclamacyons to be greed[1], that, if the Scottes, by a certayne daye, wolde yelde that castell to the kynge, they shuld haue lyfe and lyme, and if nat, but that he wanne it by strength, as many as were within the sayde castell, shuld be hãged vpon those gebettes, none astate nor persone to be excepted. In processe of tyme, whan the Scottes had wel dygestyd this proclamacion, and sawe the strength of theyr enemyes, and consyderyd theyr owne feblenesse and lak of socoure, assented fynally to yelde them & their castell vnto ỹ kyng; whiche shortly after was done. Wherof kynge Edwarde being possessyd, stuffed it w Englysshe knyghtes, and after toke a newe othe of the lordes and capytaynes, the whiche he founde closed within that castell, of trewe & feythfull allegeaunce, and after sufferyd theym to go where theym lyked.

And whan Willyam Waleys, whiche, as before is sayd, pretentyd the rule & gouernaunce of Scotlande, harde tell that the stronge castell of Estreuelyne was yelden vnto kynge Edwarde, and that lordes and knyghtes therin founden, in whiche he moche affyed, were sworne to the kynges allegeaunce, he feryd sore, leste the sayd company wolde betray hym, and brynge hym vnto the kynge: wherefore he with his adherentes withdrewe hym into the mareyses & other daungerous places, where he thought he was in suertye, for pursuynge of the kynges hoost. *Wyllyam Waleys.*

Thenne the poore cõmons of the lande presented theym by great companyes, & put them hooly in the kynges grace and mercy, so that the kyng thought then that he was in peaseable possessyon, or in a great suertye, of the lande. Wherefore after he hadde caused to be sworne vnto hym ỹ rulers of dyuers borughes, cyties, and townes, with other offycers of the lande, he retourned vnto Berwyke, and so into Englande, and lastly vnto Westmynster.

In this tyme and season that the kynge was thus occupyed, aboute his warres in Scotlande, the quene was conueyed vnto London, agayne whom the cytezyns vpon ỹ nombre of. vi.C. rode in one lyuerey of rede & whyte with the conysaunce of dyuers mysteries

[1] cryed.

browderyd vpon theyr sleuys, and receyued her. iiii. myles without the cytie, and so conueyed thorugh the cytie, which then was garnysshed and behāged with tapettes and arras and other clothes of sylke and of rychesse in moost goodly wyse, vnto Westmyuster, & there lodged.

Whan the kyng this yere was retourned out of Scotlande, he caused shortly after an inquisicion to be made thoroughe his lande, the whiche after was named Troylbastō. This was made vpon all offycers, as mayres, shyreffes, baylyffes, excheters, and many other that had mysborne theym in theyr sayd offyces, and had extorcioned or mystreated the kynges lyege people, otherwyse than was accordynge with the good ordre of theyr sayd offyces. By whiche meane of whiche inquisicion, many were accused and redemyd their offences by greuous fynes, to the kynges great lucre, and auauntage. Other meanes were founden also, as forfaytes agayne the crowne, the whiche brought great sūmes of money to the kynges cofers, towarde the great charge of his warres that he susteyned in Walys, Fraūce, and Scotlande, as before is shewed. This yere also, the kynge for complaynt ŷ was broughte vnto hym by Maister Walter Langton bysshop of Chester, of sir Edwarde his eldest sone, for that he with Pers of Gaueston and other insolent persones had broken ŷ parke of ŷ sayd bysshop, and ryottously distroyed the game within it: he therfore inprysoned the sayd sir Edwarde his sone, with his complyces. And in processe of tyme after, when the kynge was thorughly enformed of ŷ lassiuyous and wanton disposicions of the sayd Pyers of Gauestō, for that he shuld nat enduce the forenamed sir Edwarde to be of lyke disposiciō, he therfore banysshed ŷ sayd Pyers of Gauestō out of Englande for euer. But after the deth of kynge Edwarde that banysshement was soone denulled by Edwarde his sone; wherof ensuyd moche harme & trouble as after shall be shewed.

Anno Domini. M.CCC. Anno Domini. M.CCCi.

Luke Hauerynge.

Elys Russell. Anno. xxix.

Richarde Champeis.

IN this. xxix. yere of kyng Edwarde dyed Edmunde erle of Cornewayll, the sone of Richarde somtyme erle of the sayd countre and kyng of Almayne, without issue; wherefore that erledome retourned agayn to the crowne of Englande.

And in this yere, the kynge gaue vnto sir Edwarde his sone ŷ pryncipate[1] of Walys, and ioyned therunto the sayd erledome of Cornewayll.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.i. Anno Domini. M.iii.C.ii.

Robert Caller.

Iohn Blount. Anno. xxx.

Peter Bosham.

IN this xxx. yere, ŷ kynge helde his great counsayll of parlyament, at his cytie of Caunterbury.

Fol. lxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC. ii. Anno Domini.xiii.C.iii.

Hugh Pourt.

Iho Blount. Anno. xxxi.

Symon Parys.

IN this. xxxi. yere.

[1] principate and hed. edit. 1542. 1559.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.CCC.iii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.iiii.

Wyllyam Combmartyn.

Iohñ Blount. Anno. xxxii.

Iohñ de Burfforde.

IN this. xxxii. yere.

Anno Domini. M.CCC iiii. Anno Domini. xiii.C.v.

Rogier Parys.

Iohñ Blount. Anno. xxxiii.

Iohñ Lyncolñ.

IN this. xxxiii. yere. Wyllyam Waleys, that vnto the kynge had done so many displeasures & treasons agayne the trouth and alleageaunce of his othe, as some deale before is shewed, was taken at the towne, named Seynt Domynyk, in Scotlande, and sent vnto London, and there arregnyd; and vpon the euen of seynt Bartylmewe, drawen, hanged, and quarteryd, and his hedde sette vpon London bridge, and his iiii. quarters sent into Scotlande, and there hanged vpon ỹ gates of certayne townes of the lande. And at Myghelmasse folowynge ỹ kynge holdynge his parlyament at Westmynster, thyder came oute of Scotlande, the bysshop of seynt Andrewes, Robert le Bruze, sir Symonde Frysell erle of Dunbarre, sir Iohñ of Cambrees erle of Atles, and sir Iohñ Comyn with other: the whiche voluntarylye were sworne in presence of the kynge and his lordes, that they shuld be trewe vnto ỹ kynge of Englande, and kepe the lande of Scotlande to his vse agayn all other persones; and if any rebell, or other malycious persone distourbed the lande or breke the kynges peas, they shulde cause hym to be taken, and sent vnto the kynge: with many other articles concernynge theyr allegeaunce, the whiche full falsly they brake and contraryed shortly after.

Willyam Waleys taken in Scotlãde, & sente to Lõdon & there put to deth.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.v. Anno Domini. xiii.C.vi.

Raynold Doderell[1].

Iohñ Blount. Anno. xxxiiii.

William Cansyn[2].

IN this xxxiiii. yere, Robert le Bruze, contrary his othe to kynge Edwarde before made, assembled the lordes of Scotlande, and by the coũsayll of thabbot of Stone and other that fauoured his vntrouth, he sent vnto [the pope thañ][3] Clement the v. for a dispensacyon of his othe before made vnto kynge Edwarde, & surmysed to hym that kyng Edwarde vexyd and greuyd the realme of Scotlãde wrongfully; wherupon the pope[4] wrote vnto kynge Edwarde to leue of suche doynges.

And whyle this matier was thus complayned vnto the pope[4], the sayd Robert le Bruze made all the laboure he myght vnto the lordes of Scotlande, that he were admytted for kynge of that regyon; so that vpon the daye of the Concepcyon of our Lady, or the. viii. day of Decẽbre a great assemble of the lordes was made at the abbey of Stone: and vpon the daye folowynge, by the meanes of the abbot of that place, many of the sayd lordes assented to the wyll of ỹ sayd Robert, except sir Iohñ Comyn only, the whiche in defence of his trouth, & othe before sworne vnto kyng Edwarde, many reasons and excuses made, and fynally sayd that he wolde nat false his othe for no man. For this the sayd sir Iohñ Comyn had great maugre of syr Robert le Bruze, and many of the nobles of Scotlande; but he helde his opynyon so fermely, that other began to take his parte that in that counsayll rose suche contrariete of oppynyons and reasons, that the sayd counsayll was dissoluyd, and a newe set at the Graye Freres of Dunfrize, after Candelmasse next ensuynge: at whiche daye of assemble when the cause of theyr metyng was

[1] Doderley. edit. 1559. [2] William Consyn. MS. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. [4] byshop of Rome. edit. 1542.

by Robert le Bruze denoūced and shewed, and many of the great lordes of the lande hadde graunted to hym their aydes and assistence, the forenamed sir Iohñ Comyn, and other satte styll and sayd no worde, whiche Robert le Bruze markyd well, and to hym sayd, "And you sir Iohñ I truste for the defence, and weale of this realme ye wyll nat be behynde:" wherunto he answered "sir, I wolde that ye and al my lordes here present knewe wele that for ŷ weale and defence in the right of this lande, I wolde stande with it to the vttermost of my power; but for I se that ye entende rather the subuercyon than the weale therof, I wyll therefore ye knowe, I shal nother ayde you with counsayll, nor yet with strengthe." Some other also there were whose names the auctour myndeth nat, whiche allowed the sayinge of the sayd sir Iohñ, and in some wordes admytted his sadde and trewe answere; for the whiche Robert le Bruze was so amoued, that where' sir Iohñ Comyn with sir Rogier his brother was departed from the cousayll, and was comyn into the churche of the Freres, Robert le Bruze hym folowed and wounded to the dethe with his swerde, and after slewe syr Rogier his brother, whiche wolde haue defended ŷ foresayd sir Iohñ: after whose deth lytell or no resystence was made agayne ŷ vntrewe meane & dedes of the sayd Robert le Bruze, so ŷ he at seynt Iohñs towne was crowned kynge shortly after.

It was nat longe after that kyng Edwarde was monysshed of all this vntrouth of the Scottes: wherfore he preparyd hȳ to wende thyder, and at Penthecoste he helde a great feaste of his barony at Westmynster, and durynge that feast made a great nombre of knyghtes ouer. CC. after most wryters: and that feast ended he sent with a fayre company of knyghtes, sir Aymer de Valaunce erle of Penbroke, and sir Henry Percy erle of Northumberlāde into Scotlande, and sped hym selfe with his hoost soone after.

Another great batayl betwene Scotlande and Englande.

Than aboute the feast of the Assumpcion of our Lady, the kynge faught with the sayd Robert le Bruze and all ŷ power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto seynt Iohñs towne, and after longe fyght, and great slaughter of the Scottes to the nombre of. vii. M. he chased the Scottes, in whiche chase syr Symonde de Frysell erle of Dunbarre was taken with also the bysshoppes of Seynt Andrews, and of Bastoun, the abbot of Stoon or Scoon, & sir Iohñ Chambrees erle of Atles, whiche bysshoppes and abbot, kyng Edwarde sent after vnto Innocent the fyfth than pope[2], with reporte of theyr periury, and how they were taken armyd in ŷ felde to shede the blode of Cristen men. And the temporall lordes he sent into England, & so vnto the towre of Lōdon: and Robert le Bruze, after this scomfyture & losse of his chief friendes, feryng lest the Scottes, with suche Englysshemen as kynge Edwarde laft there, wolde aryse agayne hym, and[3] comfortles fled vnto the kyng of Norway, & there abode durynge whyle kyng Edward lyued.

Fol. lxxv.

Whanne this noble prynce Edwarde had thus subdued the Scottes, he yelded thankes to God of his victorye. And when he was ascertayned of ŷ auoydyng of Robert le Bruze, and had sette the lande in a quiet and ordre, he retourned into Englande.

In this passetyme were ŷ forenamed lordes of Scotlande areygnd at London, and vpon the euyn of the Natyuyte of our Lady put to deth, and theyr heddes after set vpon London brydge; and shortly after was Iohñ Waleys brother vnto Wyllyam Waleys, whiche for lyke treason was put to deth in the precedynge yere, taken and hangyd and quarteryd, and some Scottes that were taken as prysoners remayned longe in Englande or they myghte acquyte theyr fynaunce.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.vi. Anno Domini. xiii.C.vii.

Iohñ Blount. Symon Bolet[4]. Anno. xxxv.

Godfrey de la Conduyt.

[1] when, edit. 1533. 1542, 1559. [2] bysshop of Rome, edit. 1542. [3] all. [4] Benet, edit. 1559.

IN

IN this. xxxv. yere, the kynge, for certayne causes hym mouyng, retourned agayne into Scotlande, or after some wryters he taryed at Berwyke, and helde his Cristmasse & Easter in those parties, and came nat into Englande, after he had scomfyted the Scottes. In the season of somer, as he was retournynge into Englande, a sykenesse toke hym so feruently ỳ he knewe wele he shuld dye. Wherefore he beynge at Burgth vpon the Sande beyonde Carleyll, called to hym sir Aymer de Valance erle of Penbroke, sir Henry Percy erle of Northumberlande, sir Henry Lacy erle of Lyncolne, and sir Robert Clyfforde baron, and caused theym to be sworne before hym ỳ they shuld crowne his sone Edward in as conuenyent tyme after his dethe as they myght, and kepe the lande to his vse, tyll he were crowned: and that othe by the sayd barons taken, he called before hym his sone Edward, and charged hym with dyuers poyntes vpon the charge of his blessyng, amonge ỳ whiche one specyall was, that he shuld neuer after ỳ daye suffre Piers of Gaueston to retourne into Englãde, & so lyke a good Crysten prynce dyed shortly after, vpon [the day of the Translacion of seynt Thomas of Caunterbury, or]' ỳ vii. daye of the moneth of Iulii, whan he had reygned. xxxiiii. yeres. vii. moneth & odde dayes. And after with great solempnytie conueyed vnto Westmynster, and there buryed in the chapell of seynt Edwarde, vpon the southsyde, in a playne tombe of marble at ỳ hed of his fader. This noble man had. ii. wyfes, by ỳ whiche as before is shewed in the. xx. & xxvii. yeres of his reygne, he had issue as in the sayde yeres apperyth. Of this noble prynce a vercyfyer made these. ii. verses folowynge.

Dum viuit[2] rex, et valuit sua[3] magna potestas,
Fraus latuit, pax magna fuit, regnauit honestas.

Whiche verses may be englysshed in this maner folowynge.

Whyle lyued this kynge,
By his power all thynge
Was in good plyght.
For gyle was hydde,
Great peas was kydde
And honest[4] had myght.

An other vercyfyer also of hym made these verses folowynge, and caused theym to be hangyd ouer the place of his sepulture.

Mors est mesta nimis, magnos quia iũgit in imis,
Maxima mors minimus[5], coniũgens vltima primis.
Nullus in orbe fuit homo viuens, ne[6] valet esse,
Qui non morte ruit, est hinc exit[7] necesse:
Nobilis et fortis, tibi tu confidere noli.
Omnia sunt mortis, sibi subdit singula soli.
De mundi medio, magnum mors impia nouit[8].
Anglia pre tedio satis anxia plangere nouit.
Corruit Edwardus vario veneratus honore,
Rex nuper et[9] nardus fragrans virtutis odore,
Corde leopardus, inuictus et absque pauore,
Ad rixam tardus, discretus & eucharis ore.
Viribus armorum, quasi gigas, ardua gessit,
Colla superborum prudens per prelia pressit,

[2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] viguit. MS. vixit. edit. 1559. [4] tua. MS. [4] honeste. MS. honesty, edit. 1559. [5] minimis. [6] nec, edit. 1542. 1559. [7] exire. MS. & edit. 1559. [8] movit. MS. edit. 1542. 1559. [9] ut. MS.

Inter

Inter Flandrenses, fortuna sibi bene fauit,
Vi' quoq; Wallenses et Scotos subpeditauit.
Rex bonus, absq; pare, strenue sua regna regebat:
Quod natura dare potuit bonitatis habebat.
Accio iusticie, pax regni, sanccio legis,
Et fuga nequicie premunt preconia regis.
Gloria tota ruit, regem capit hec modo possa[2]
Rex quandoq; fuit, nunc nil nisi puluis et ossa.
Filius ipse Dei, quem corde colebat et ore,
Gaudia donet ei nullo permixto dolore.

The whiche verses to the entent that they shulde be had in mynde, and also that the reder myght haue the more desyre to ouer rede theym, I haue therfore set them out in baladde royall after my rude makynge as foloweth.

This sorowfull deth whiche bryngeth great full lowe
And moost and leest he ioyneth into one,
This man, to whom his pere was nat knowe,
Hath now subduyd, nat sparynge hym alone
Whiche of all other, this worlde to ouergone,
None was to be sparyd, of so great equytie
As he, if any, for noblesse sparyd shulde be.

Fol. lxxvi.

Therfore, thou noble or myghty, truste none other grace;
But thou shalt pay to deth thy naturall dette,
And lyke as he from this worlde dyd chace,
This myghty prynce, and from his frendes fette,
Fro whom all Englande loude mournyd and grette:
So shall thou and other in dethes snare fall,
None shall escape, to rekyn kyndes all.

Edwarde, with many and dyuers gracis endowyd,
And lyke as nardus moost swetest of odoure
In smellynge passeth, and moost he is allowyd,
Of all swete odours, so dyd this knyghtly floure,
By vertuous actes, surmount, in honoure,
All other prynces; whose herte was lybarde lyke,
And without fere, were he hole or syke.

This prynce was slowe to all maner of stryfe,
Discrete and wyse, and trewe of his worde,
In armys a geaunt, by terme of all his lyfe;
Excellynge actes doynge by dynt of the sworde,
Subduyd the proude, of prudence he bare the horde;
Of Flaunders by fate he had great amyte,
And Walshe, and Scottes, by strength subduyd he.

This good kynge perelesse his landes fermly gyded;
What nature myght gyue, he fayled of it no thynge;
No parte of boute, from his[1] was discided:
He was iustyce and peas, and of lawe stablysshynge,
And chaser of iniquyte, by his vertuous lyuynge:

[1] Ut. edit. 1533. [2] fossa. [3] hym. MS. & edit. 1559.

In whom these graces, with innumerable mo
Fermly were roted, that deth hath tane vs fro.

That whylom was a kynge, nowe is but duste and bone,
All glorye is fallen, and this pytte kepyth the kynge;
But he that yeldyth all thynge by his one[1],
The Sone of God, to whom aboue all thynge,
With herte and mouth, he dyd due worshyppynge,
That lorde of his ioy, perdurable to laste,
Graunt hym sorowlesse, euermore to taste.

AMEN.

Philippi. iiii.

PHilip the. iiii. of that name, & sone of the thirde Philip, whiche was surnamed Philip le Beawe or Philip the fayre, began his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce in the yere of grace. M.CC.lxxxvi., and the. viii.[2] yere of the firste Edwarde than kyng of Englande: this for warre that he had with the duke of Gylderlande, arreryd great imposycyons thoroughe his lande, both of the spiritueltie and also of the temporaltie.

Aboute the. iiii. yere of his reygne, ŷ prynce of Salerne, that longe had ben holden in pryson by the kynge of Aragon, was delyuered vpon a harde condycion, as foloweth; firste, that he shuld, to the vttermost of his power, laboure a concorde and peas atwene the churche of Rome and the Aragons; and that done, to sette a peas atwene the Frenshe kynge and hym; and ouer that to paye in the ende of. xv. monethes nexte ensuynge an hondreth. M. floryns for his raunsom; (a floryn is in value after sterlyng money, ii.*s.* x.*d.* and so he shuld pay after the value of Englysshe money. xvii. M. and. v.C.*li.*:) and that day after ŷ he shuld neuer bere armys agayne ŷ kynge of Aragon; and if, within ŷ terme of. iii. yeres next ensuyng, he myght nat conclude the foresayd peas, he shuld then retourne & yelde hymself prysoner as he before was, all whiche couenauntes fermely to be holden, he first made solempne othe, and after delyuered to the kynge certayne hostages and so departed.

But this composicõn or argument[3] was thought so vnreasonable vnto his frendes, that he was counsayiled by theym that he shuld sue vnto the pope[4] for a dispensacyon of his othe, and that had, they wold helpe hym to recouer his foresayd hostages: after whose counsayll, he, the yere folowynge, made suche laboure vnto Honorius the. iiii. of ŷ name, than pope[4], that he alonely opteyned nat solucion of his othe, but also by hym he was declaryd kynge of Scicill, and of pope[5] Nicholas the fourthe, successour of the foresayd Honorius, after confermyd. This prynce of Salerne, as ye before haue herde in ŷ storye of Philip the thirde, and thirde & iiii. Chapiters of ŷ same, was sone vnto Charlys brother of seynt Lowys and kyng of Scicill: and the forenamed kynge of Aragon that hym vpon the abouesayde condycions thus delyuered, was sone vnto Peter kynge of Aragon, whiche, as before in the storye of the foresayd thirde Phylip, helde warre with hym, & with ŷ sayd Charlys. This prynce of Salerne was also named Charlys after the name of his fader; the whiche after his admyssyon of the pope[4], was crowned kyng of Scicill in the cytie of Palermo soone after, & defended the lande knyghtly agayne the Aragons with helpe of the Frenshmen by the terme of v. yeres after. At whiche terme ende Alphõs than kynge of Aragon dyed, and Iaques or Iames, to whome the foresayd Alphons had betake the rule of Scicill, and helde warre with the forenamed Charlys, was, as brother and

[1] one. MS. own. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] xiii. MS. [3] agrement. edit. 1533-1542. 1559. [4] byshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542.

next

next heyre vnto the crowne of Aragon, admytted kynge of that regyon; after which ad-
Fol. lxxvii. myssion, he shortly after concluded a peas with the sayd Charlys, and redelyuered vnto hym all suche hostages & pledges as his brother Alphons had before tyme of hym receyued, for kepyng of the former conuencyons. And for a more stablysshement of the same peas, the sayd Iamys toke to wyfe of[1] the doughters of ỹ sayd Charlys.

Aboute the. vi. yere of the reygne of this Philip, certayne sowdyours of Fraunce, to the nombre of. xv^M. which were sente by the procurement of pope Nicholas the. iiii^th. vnto Acris, to fortyfye that towne, contrary the trewe atwene the Cristen and the Sowdan before concluded, for the terme of. ii. yeres, brake out of the towne and castellys adioynant, and spoyled & robbyd such Sarazyns, as to that towne were dwellynge nere; and dyd vnto them all ỹ sorrowe and shame that they myght. Wherof the Sowdan hauynge knowlege was therwith greatly amouyd; but yet or he wold attempte any warre agayne the Cristen, he sent vnto the captayne of the cytie of Acoñ, and wylled hym to sende vnto hỹ suche persones as had broken the peas, and done that iniurye to his people, and if he[2] it refusyd, he sente theym worde he shuld nat blynne tyll he hadde distroyed them, as lately before he had done the inhabitauntes of the cytie of Tryple. But they sette his manace at nought; for so moche as they thought theym able to wstande his malyce. Vpon which answere the Sowdan made great prouysyon to besiege the sayd cytie.

In which passe tyme, in Fraunce, was borne of dame Iohāne or Iane, than quene of Fraũce, Lowys, the kynges eldest sone, that after his fader was kynge of Fraũce.

Whẽe the Sowdan had preparyd all thynge necessarye for that iournay, he sped hym with an innumerable multytude of Sarazyns towarde ỹ cytie of Acon or Acris, in whiche iournay he was taken with so greuous sykenesse, that he knewe well he shuld shortly dye. Wherfore he callynge before hym his admyrallys, charged a certayne of theym to kepe forthe theyr iourney towarde Acon, whyle the remenaunte retournyd into Egipt, and there created his sone to haste[4] hym vnto the sayd siege, and soon after dyed.

Then all thyng was ordeyned[5], as he before had deuysed, and the cytie was besegid with a stronge hoost of Sarazyns, the whiche assauted it cruelly by the space of. vi wekes. In whiche season the Cristen defended it so manfully, that the Sarazins myght therof gette none aduantage. At the ende of this. vi. wekes came the yonge Sowdan with a fresshe hoost; the which made such a dynne & noyse with their tabours & hornys, and other mynstrelsy that they at those dayes vsed, that it was hydous & ferefull to here. And after they had restyd theym. ii. dayes, & preparyd for the ryggynge of their ordenaũce, they assauted the cytie. xiiii. dayes continuelly; in whiche season moche people was slayn vpon both parties, but the more nombre of ỹ cytie: for by the vyolence of their ordenaũce they ouerthrewe moche howsynge within the cytie, wherwith moche people were oppressyd and slayne, as well man as woman & childe[6].

At the ende of this. xiiii. dayes, when the rulers of the cytie had seen ỹ harme that they had receyued by this fyers and cruell assaute, as well in losse of theyr sowdyours as of ỹ great enpeyringe of their wallys and other defences of theyr cytie, they feryd sore; for the which they of one assent condissendyd, & sent soone after by theyr shyppes a great nõbre of olde men and women, & children, vnapt for ỹ warre with the relyques & treasours of the cytie into Scicill. It was nat longe after or the Sarazyns made a newe assaute, ỹ cõtynued. iiii. dayes, by meane wherof the cytie was sore defaced.

Thẽe the kynge of Cipris, whiche, at that daye, was there as one of the chief rulers in ỹ cytie, fayned hym syke; wherfore, in ỹ nyght folowynge, desyringe a knyght of the cytie to kepe his watche, he cowardly & shamefully, with. iiii.[7] M. men, toke shyppynge and

[1] One of. [2] Nycholas the iiii. byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] they. MS. [4] *The.* MS. *and subsequent editions read,* "And there created his sone Sowdan. After the which creacion, he chargid theym that they shuld eavse his said sone to haste hym, &c." [5] orderid. MS. [6] women and childer. MS. [7] iii. M. edit. 1542. 1559.

sayled

sayled thens, leuynge the cytie in all daunger. Vpon the morowe[1], whan the certaynte of this was knowen, the patriarke of Ierusalem w. other there laft to the nombre of. vii^c. M. or therupon, sent vnto the Sowdan for a trewys for. ii. monethes; but none they myghte purchase: and therfore they defendyd theym in the best maner they myght. But shortly after, for lak of defence vpon the wallys, the Sarazyns fylled the dykys; and so soone after, vpon the. xxv. day of May, perforce, entred the cytie, and slew suche people therin as they there founde. Than the Sowdan gaue the praye of the cytie vnto his knightes, and after spoylynge of the same, caused the wallys and toures to be rasyd vnto the groūde, and the houses, as well churches, temples and all other, were clerely brent and dystroyed. And thus was that noble cytie of Acris, which is also called Tholomayda, subuerted; the whiche was the chief porte or hauyn towne for Cristen men to lande at, whenne any hoost or power of theym shulde entre into the holy lande, & had contynued for the more partie in the possessyon of Crysten men by the terme of. C.lx. yeres and aboue.

IN the. vii. yere of this kyng Philip, the erle of Armenak was accused of certayn poyntes of treason, by sir Raymonde Barnade[2], erle of Foys, where vpon a daye of batayll atwene these. ii. erlys was appoynted to be foughten at Gysours, in the kynges presence, and of his barony; but after, by ȳ great instaūce and laboure made by sir Robert, erle of Artoys, that batayll was fordone.

In the. viii. yere of his reygne he gaderyd a great taske of his cōmons, and in ȳ yere foresayd, at a feast holden at Compeyne, he made aboue. vi. score knyghtes.

[And in the. x. yere the glorious confessoure seynt Lowys, grandfader vnto this Philip, was, ȳ day folowynge seynt Bartylmwe the Apostle, translated into a ryche shryne, in the monastery of seynt Denys; the whiche yere before of Boniface the. viii. than pope, for his great myracles, was wryten in the catholog or nombre of seyntes.][4]

In the. xi. yere of his reygne, sir Robert of Artoys entred the towne of Seȳt Omers, and toke therin many Burgonyons and other as prysoners, and soon after mette with Guy, duke of Burgoyn, at a towne called Furnes, where atwene theym was foughten a songe fight, and many men slayne vpon eyther syde; but lastly, the victorye fyll to sir Robert of Artoys, so that he put ȳ duke to flyght, and toke there prysoner Henry, erle of Dbencourt, and sir Guylliam de Vyllers, and other. After whiche victorye by hym thus opteyned, the sayd towne of Furnes was yolden vnto hym, and a great parte of the vale of Cassile.

In this yere also, the warre attwene this kynge Philip and Edwarde the firste, thane kynge of Englande, was put in vre; for so moche as the sayd Edwarde toke partie with the sayde duke or erle of Flaundres, as it is at length sette out in the. xxii. xxiiii. xxvi^c. yeres of the sayd Edwarde; wherfore here nowe I passe it ouer.

In the. xiii^c. yere of this Philip, whane the trewys before sette atwene kynge Edwarde & hym and the erle of Flaūdres was expyred, he sent sir Charlys de Valoys, his brother, with a great power into Flaundres; the whiche made sharpe warre vpon the Flemynges, and toke from theym the townes of Douay and Bethune, and after yode towarde the hauyn towne of Dam or Dan, where he was encountred of Robert, sone vnto the erle, where atwene theym was foughtyn a cruell fyght, to ȳ great scath of bothe parties; for *Fol. lxxviii* eyther departed from other without great auaūt or boste. Than the sayd Robert with his company drewe towarde Gaunt; & the sayd syr Charlys, after the departyng of ȳ sayd Robert, layde hye[7] siege vnto ȳ foresayd towne of Dāme.

In this passe tyme the archebysshoppe of Orleaunce was slayne by a knyght, called sir

[1] The morn. MS. [2] v. M. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Barnard, MS. [4] *Omitted* in edit. 1559. [5] and xxvj. [6] thre and twentye yere. edit. 1559. *faultily.* [7] his.

Gautier, for so moch as the sayd bysshop, as the fame then went, hadde diffloryssbed a mayden and doughter of the sayde sir Gautier. And for hym was chosen to that dignyte maister Barthrande, doctour of diuynyte. Then to retourne where we lafte of ỹ foresayd warre of Flaundres, the sayde sir Charlys so sharpely assautyd the towne of Dam, that in shorte processe after it was yolden vnto hym; and than he preparyd hym to lay his siege aboute the forenamed towne of Gaunt. Wherof whanne Guy erle of Flaundres was ware, consyderynge he myghte nat shortly be ayded of the kynge of Englande whiche thañe warred vpon ỹ Scottes, as in the. xxvii. yere of Edwarde the first it doth appere, he than made meanes vnto the sayd sir Charlys de Valoys, that he wolde be a meane to ỹ kyng, that he myght be accepted vnto his grace & mercy. So that by his meanes the sayd sir Guy, with Robert his sone, vpon certayne conuencyons, in shorte tyme after was reconcyled vnto the Frenshe kynge. But whyle these conuencions were perfourmyd, the sayde erle, with his sone Robert, were kepte in a lyberall pryson, & the countie of Flaũdres, by the assygenement of the kynge, for the whyle was cõmytted vnto the rule of Iaques de Seynt Paulle, knyght; the which entreated the cõmons of that lande sternly, and oppressyd them with imposicions and taskes, in so moch, that in the. xvi. yere of the kynge, a certayne of ỹ towne of Courtray in Flaũdres, after certayne skyrmysshes and louedayd[1] made, the cõmon people, in a nyght, slewe the foresayd sir Iaques, and as many Frenshemen as they might fynde vin the towne. After whiche murder was knowen in Brugys and other townes of Flaundres, anone by yll coũsayll, they also chased all suche Frenshmen as by ỹ foresayd Iaques were put ĩ dyuers offyces within the sayd townes, and made theym stronge to make deffence agayne the Frenshe kynge.

Wherof, when the Frenshe kynge was ascertayned, he sent thyder, with a stronge companye, the erle of seynt Poule, the erle Boleygne, sir Robert erle of Artoys, and Robert ỹ sone of the erle of Cleremount, with dyuers other noblemen of Fraũce, the whiche spedde them toward Brugys, and in the playnes atwene Courtray & Brugys pyght there pauylyons and tentes, for they myght come[2] no nere vnto Brugys, for so moche as Flemynges hadde broken the brydge ouer the ryuer that there ronneth: the whiche lastly, nat wout great slaughter of men of both parties, [illegible] Frenshemen reedyfyed & made [illegible] that the Frenshe hoost passid thys, was by the [illegible] denaunce nere to the [illegible] But the Flemynges ryuer, and layde theyr ordynaunce with defence towne of Brugys. [illegible] ryd the Flemynges hadde so garnysshed theyr towne [illegible] sowdyours, ỹ they [illegible] renshemen lytell or noo thynge. And of one thynge they bare theym the bolder, for so moche as they had within the towne one of the sones of Guy, theyr erle, the which before was scaped from the Frenshe kynges pryson.

Thus the Frenshemen lyinge before the towne, many frayes and bykerynges were made atwene the Flemynges and theym, to theyr both paynes. Lastly, a daye of batayll by the prouocacyon & dispytous wordes of ỹ Frenshmen, was appoynted to be holden atwene theym vpon the Wednysdaye, beynge thañe the vii. daye of ỹ moneth of Iulii; at whiche daye, the Flemynges beynge confessyd & reconcyled to God, as they shuld forthwith haue departyd out of this worlde, in sober wyse groundynge theym vpon a rightfull and good quarell that daye to lyue and dye for the defence and ryght of theyr countre, issued out of the towne in good ordre, [berynge before theym certayne relyques of sayntes, in the whiche they had great truste & affyaũce.][3]

Anone as the nobles of Fraunce behelde the countenaunce of theyr enemyes, disdaynynge theym as vylayns and artifycers, trustyd so moch in theyr strengthes that they thought shortly to ouer ryde theym, and bere theym downe with strenght of theyr horses, and without ordre ran with great ire vpon theyr enemyes, thynkynge to haue opressyd them at the firste bront; but the Flemynges, with theyr arbalasters and theyr longe mareys pykes set a slope before theym, woũdyd so theyr horses, that they laye tumbelynge one in the others necke: soo that they were the letters of the other, whiche were on foot,

[1] Lovedays, MS. love day, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] not come, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

that they myght nat excercyse theyr feat of armys. And also ỹ shot whiche was shot vpon the Frenshe partie dyd as moche harme to those horsemen as it dyd vnto theyr enemyes; so that in shorte whyle the felde was all sprede with slayne horses and clene armyd men. Wherof sir Robert, erle of Artoys, beynge ware, and seynge these noble sperys thus slayne vpon the felde, auaūcyd hym with his company, and slewe and woundyd of the Flemynges great nombre, so that they fledde before hym, as shepe before the wolfe, and put further bak that hoost of Flemynges than they, by ỹ firste metynge, had auancyd them self. And if ayde of Guy de Namoure, sone vnto the erle of Flaundres, had nat the soner been comyn vnto theym, the sayde erle of Artoys had that daye wonne the renowne of that felde.

Than the said Guy, with a fresshe company of Almaynes and other bolde sowdyours, coragyously entred the felde, and bete downe the Frenshmen egerly. Thanne was the medle new begon in so feruent wyse, that men and horse fyll downe to the grounde wondersly thycke: and euer the erle of Artoys, where so euer he wente, he slewe moche people before hym. But the Flemynges kept theym so hole togyder that he myght neuer disseuer them, and slewe of the nobles of Fraunce great plentye. Whiche mortalyte thus contynuynge, the stremys of blode ran wondres to beholde, and alwaye the Frenshe partye wekyd more and more. Lastly, the erlys of seynt Poule and of Boleyn, with Robert, the sone of this erle of Cleremount, and other, with the nombre of. ii. M. horsmen, seynge the rage and wodnesse of the Flemynges, whiche so cruelly slewe and bet downe the Frenshemen, settynge a parte all honour and knyghthode, shamefully fled out of the felde, leuynge the erle of Artoys in ỹ medle of his enemyes, whiche, lyke vnto the lyon rampaunt, contynued in one sleynge and kyllynge the Flemynges without mercy or pyte. But the Flemynges, lyke wood tygres, were so enragyd vpon ỹ Frenshmen, that they wolde neuer leue theym tyl they by pure force draue theym vnto theyr tentes, where they slewe of theym a great multytude.

In this batayll were slayne the foresaid erle of Artoys, Godfrey de Braban, nere kynnysman to the said erle, and lorde of Wyrson, Adam, the erle of Dabenmale, Iohn̄, the sone of the erle of Henaut, Rauf de Neell, constable of Frauce, Guy his brother, marshall of ỹ host, Raynolde de Try, Esmer, chamberlayne of Cancaruyle, Iaques, ỹ sone of Godfrey de Braban, Pyers Floot[1] [illegible] maister of the arbalasters [illegible] knyghtes, & many mo men of name, to the nombre [illegible] and aboue, besyde esquyers & other men of lower degrees, as yomen, grōmes, pages, to the nombre of. xii. M. The whiche, after this victorye, the Flemynges dispoyled & suffred the caryns of theym to lye in the felde ỹ all wylde bestes & fowles myght theym perysshe and deuoure.

Whan this yonge knight sir Guy had thus opteyned victorye of the Frenshmen, he reioysed nat a lytle; and soone therafter layde siege vnto ỹ Ile or a castell so named, & gatte it also, were it by trechery or otherwyse. Thenne the townes of Iper, of Gaunt, of Douaye, & dyuers other of that countre obeyed vnto hym, and dyscendynge[2] & agreed to take partie, eyther of theym with other, agayne the Frenshe kynge. *Fol. lxxxiv.*

Thanne kynge Philip heryng of the great discomfiture of his men, made countenaunce of mournynge, and specyally for his true knyght the erle of Artoys.

Kynge Philip then after, for to reuenge the foresayd displeasure to hym done by the Flemynges, assembled, by our Lady Day Assumpcion next ensuynge, an excedynge nombre of men of armys, entendynge to haue entred Flaūdres, & vtterly to haue dystroyed a great parte of that coūtre; & so drewe towarde his enemyes, so that he pyght the tentes of his van warde within. ii. myles of his enemyes, & there lay to his excedynge charge, consyderynge the great multitude of his host, by all ỹ moneth of Septembre. Of the nombre of this host I haue doute to wryte, for maister Gagwyn sayth ỹ nombre was so great that it may nat be byleued; and that sheweth wele, by the expressmēt of the

[1] Foot. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] condyscendyd.

nombre made by the Frenshe Cronycle: for he sayth, they were an hondreth tyme an. C.M. &. xl. tymes. xl thousāde. By whiche saying som dele apperyth how the Frenshemen can make mencouge[1]. But how it was, for all this great & excedynge nombre of Frenshemen the Flemynges lay styll vnhurte or assawted; and fynally, vpon a great substancyall cause, as ye after shall here, this great hoost was dissoluyd or retournyd euery man to his awne, and kynge Philip, w̄ small honour, into Fraūce; wherof the Frenshmen sayth the occacion or cause was thus.

Kyng Edward of Englande, whiche vnto the Flemyngs bare great affeccyon, consyderynge the great daunger they were in, and he at ẏ tyme myght nat theim ayde nor socoure, of a pollacy caste this in his mynde, and with an heuy or mornynge countenaunce shewyd vnto the quene, and syster vnto kynge Philip, that he was very heuy and sorowfull for his brother & hers, the kynge of Fraunce. Wherof when and wherfore she hadde frayned the cause, he answeryd and sayd, that he had certayne knowlege, that at suche tyme as the Flemynges and he shulde mete in batayll, ẏ his lordes and company shuld leue hym amonge his enemies, for he was solde vnto theym before hande. Wherof whēne the quene was thus ascertayned, anone in all possyble haste sent letters & messangers vnto the Frenshe kynge, counsaylynge hym to be well ware of that treason and daunger. To the whiche he gyuynge credence, shortly after sente frome hym the sayd great company of people, and he, w̄ a certayne, as aboue is sayd, retournyd into Fraunce.

After whiche departynge, the Flemyngs were so bolde ẏ forthwith they entred Pycardy and the countre of Artoys, and spoyled & brent dyuers townes of the same. But in the yere folowynge, as testyfyeth the sayde Frenshe Cronycle, ẏ Flemynges of Brugys were foughten with of Otthon, than duke of Burgoyn; to whome, by reason of maryage, the Frenshe kyng hadde gyuen the erledome of Artoys, and he of theym slewe, with the ayde of the Frenshmen. xv. thousande.

In this. xvii. yere, aboute Mydsomer, Phylyp, an other sone of the erle of Flaundres, whiche had, by a certayne terme passid, ben in the court of Charlys de Valoys, & by hym put in trust to receyue certayne sūmes of money in Scicill, to the vse of pope Bonyface the. viii[2]. sodaynely departed, and with a stronge company of Almaynes came into Flaundres to ayde and assyste his brother, whome the Flemynges or Brabanders receyued wi[illegible] with great ioy; and by the [illegible] the borders & landes of the Frenshe kynge, & boldly assautyd th[illegible]ynt Omers. But for they there gat none aduauntage, but loste many of theyr men, they forsoke that and yode vnto a towne belongynge to the Frenshe kynge, called Thorouan Moryne; the whiche, in processe, they wanne and spoyled. About this tyme dyed Bonyface the. viii. of that name, thanne pope[3], a man of euyll name and fame; the whiche by his trechery caused his predycessoure Celestyne the. v. that was a good and holy man, to resygne and leue his papacye[4], and by this meane, Whenne this sayd Celestyne had sytten in Peters chayre a shorte tyme, this Bonyface espyinge his innocency, whiche was all sette to the seruyce of God, as he before hadde vsed hym in ledynge of ankers lyfe, thoughte howe he myght bryng hym in mynde to resigne his hygh offyce vnto hym; and it to brynge aboute, he firste made hym frendes secretely, and after hyryd one of the cubyclers of the pope[3], that he, in the deed nyght, shulde speke in a rode[5] and saye, "Celestyne, if thou wylte be sauyd and be partyner of my blysse, renounce this pompe of ẏ worlde, and serue me as thou before dyd;" or after the Latyn storye, "if Celestinus wyll be sauyd, lette hym clerely the papall dygnyte resygne." Whiche voyce this ghostly man sundry tymes herynge, thought veryly it hadde ben a dyuyne mocyon; wherfore in all that he myghte, he laboured to be dischargyd. Soo that at the ende of. v. monethes he resygned; and shortly after was the foresayd Bonyface admytted. The whiche nat beynge contentyd with this sinistre opteynynge of this hygh dygnyte, but that he, for fere lest the sayde Celestyne shulde repent hym of his insolent

[1] Mensounge. [2] Bonyface the. viii. byshop of Rome, edit. 1542. [3] Bysshoppe of Rome, edit. 1542. [4] Bysshopriche, edit. 1542. 1559. [5] A reed.

dede, and by strengthe of some prynces be restoryd agayne to his former dygnyte; he therfore wolde nat suffre the sayde Celestyne to retourne to wyldernes there to contynewe his olde accustomyd lyfe, but helde hym in a castell as prysoner, where for sorowe and euyll kepynge he dyed shortly after.

For the whiche this Bonyface was nat vnpunysshed; for ouer the sorowe and trouble that he, durynge the terme of his papacy, suffred, whiche was nat a lytell, in the ende of. viii. yeres he was taken by strength and put in pryson, where so myserably and cruelly he was entreated, that or he dyed, what for madnesse or for hunger he ete his owne handes, and so in mysery ended his lyfe within. xxiiii. dayes of his inprysonemēt.

Thañe to retourne where I laft, and to shewe you ferther of the warre atwene Fraunce and Flaundres, though' it is that the Frenshemen, with the ayde of ŷ Henaudours, made sondry and many tymes assautes vpon the Flemynges; in the whiche dyuers chaūces of the warre fyll, so that if that one hadde the better at one tyme, that other hadde as moche aduauntage the next tyme. For reformacyon of whiche warre, sir Guy, with his sone, before named, erle of Flaundres, that by all this season hadde contynued in the Frenshe kynges pryson, were sufferyd to go into Flaundres vpon cōdycyon that if they myghte pacyfye the countre to the kynges pleasure, that then they shulde styll enioy theyr lyberte and go at large, or ellys to retourne agayne as prysoners. The whiche erle with his sayde sone dyd what they cowde to reconcyle the sayd Flemynges; but all theyr trauayle was in vayne: so that, by the daye to theym appoynted, they retournyd to theyr former pryson. Wherfore the kynge in the. xviii. yere of his reygne, assembled a mesurable hoost of people.

In the whiche were accompted for noble capitaynes, vnder the kyng, sir Charlys de Valoys brother to the kynge, Lowys erle of Enroux that other brother to the kynge, Guy erle of seynt Paule, Iohñ erle of Dampmartyn; whiche noble mē with many other, met w̄ the kyng at a towne called Mount[2]: and whēne they hadde a season restyd there, by meane of messangers goynge atwene kynge Philip and the Flemynges, a day of batayll was atwene them appoynted to be foughten vpon the. xvi. daye of August, in ŷ abouesayd. xviii. yere; at whiche day the Flemynges of Brugis and the other townes sette forthe theyr ordenaunce, and made theym a stronge felde, and enbatayled theym in suche wyse that the Frenshmen made daungerous to sette vpon theym; than meanes of treatye were offeryd, so that the day passed without stroke strykynge. *Fol. lxxx.*

But in the euenynge the Flemynges thynkynge to take auauntage vpon their enemyes, cam so sodaynly vpon the Frenshmen, that hardly the kynge myghte be armyd or they hadde slayne. ii. men within his tent; wherfore hasty spede was made, soo that the kynge was gotten to horsbacke, and forthwith by his marcyall power made waye thorough his enemyes and slewe theym without mercy: and by the knyghtly example of hym the remnaunt of his lordes quyt theym so honourably that the poore Flemynges were layde in the felde bathynge in theyr owne blode to a great nombre, and lastly cōstrayned to flye shamefully and to leue theyr ordenaunce behynde theym, and if nyght had nat fallen on, it is to deme that many moo of theym shuld haue ben slayne, consyderyng the great fyersnesse of theyr enemyes, and the excedynge rancour of malyce that the Frenshemen to theym bare; but yet the Frenshemen escaped nat without losse of some noble men, for in ŷ batayll was slayne ŷ erle of Ancerre and dyuers other knyghtes and men of fame. After whiche scomfyture and chasynge of the Flemynges, the kynge for dyrknes was fette vnto his tentes with torche lyght; where after he had buryed the deed bodyes slayne in ŷ felde, and also garnysshed some stronge castellys with his knyghtes, to the ende that the Flemynges shulde nat breke to ferre abrode, knowyng that with his enemyes he shulde that yere haue no mo playne batayllies, retourned agayne into Fraūce.

[1] Trouth. [2] the Moūt. MS.

IN the. xix. yere of kynge Philip, by meanes of Enguerram, a man in especiall fauour w the kynge, a peas atwene Fraunce and Flaundres was concluded, the whiche, as ye shall after here, duryd but shorte whyle; natwithstandynge, by the reason of this peas, Robert de Bethune and Wylliam his brother, whiche by all this season with theyr fader sir Guy erle of Flaūdres, had contynued in pleasaunt or esy pryson, were nowe delyuered; but the fader was deed in the moneth of Februarii, before the conclusōn of this peas passed, &, by lycence of the Frenshe kynge, caryed to Marquet a towne in Flaundres and there buryed.

In ŷ. xx. yere of this kynge Philip, a great dyssencion and stryfe fylle atwene the ryche men or gouernours of Parys & the comynaltie of the same, for heythynge of ŷ rent of dyuers howses apparteynynge to the sayd comynaltie; wherfore ŷ sayd comons secretly accompanye theym in great nombre, and yode vnto the howse of Stephan Barbette, that was accused to be occasioner of that dede, and spoyled it, & after that they yode to a maner of his in the countre named Courtyle Barbet, & it in lyke spoyled; and ŷ done set it in fyre & brent it, and the orcharde of the same, whiche was passyng cōmodious & pleasaunt, they defacyd & vtterly dystroyed: and nat yet with this beyng content, retourned agayne vnto the house of the sayd Stephan, and all such wynes as were within his selers, drāke of theym tyll they were wod drunken, and what they myght nat in ŷ wyse deuoure, they bete out the heddes and let the wyne rounne in the stretes, and al formys, stolys and other vtensilis in the howse by theym foundyn, all to brake in peces, and of federbeddes rypped the tekys & helde theym in the wynde, ŷ the fethers myght be blowyn away and loste for euer, & vnryppyd the howse in dyuers places that the rayne and other wederynge myght entre, as than fyll aboute the tyme soone after Cristmas.

And thus contynuynge in their fury & rage, after the dysspoylynge & defasynge of these foresayd howses, as men nat knowyng what they than dyd, yode streyght in great nombre vnto ŷ place of the Templers there nere, where at that season kyng Philip, with a certayne of his barons was thañe lodgyd; & there kept the entrees of that place in such wyse that noo man myght issue nor entre, but at theyr pleasures: and suche metes as were brought thyder to the kynges vse & his howsolde, they caste it in the myre and fylth of the strete. The kynge and his lordes seyng the rage of this rude & vnresonable people, sent vnto theim the prououst of the cytie with some of his lordes, the whiche gaue vnto them so pleasaunt & comfortable wordes, that at length he retourned theim in peasyble maner to theyr houses. But vpon the morowe folowynge, the kynge nat forgettynge this rage and ryot of the people, cōmaunded many of the sayd comons to be attached, & to be sent vnto dyuers prysons. And vpon Candelmasse euen folowynge, for the same ryot xxviii. of theym were hanged at. iiii. entrees of the cytie of Parys, that is to saye. vii. Louure[1], vii. toward the parties of Seynt Anthoyne., vii. at a place towarde the Rule[2], and the other vii. in a place towarde Nostre Dame or Notyr Dame; which execucion caused ŷ comynaltie of the cytie to lyue longe after in great fere.

In the. xxi. yere of the reygne of kynge Philip, whiche maketh the yere of our Lorde. xiii. C. and. vii. albe it, that other wryters affermeth it to be in the yere of grace. xiii. C. &. xi. all the Templers in Fraunce were distroyed, & theyr goodes and possessions, thoroughe Cristendom, gyuen by auctoryte of a synode kept by Clement the. v. thenne pope[3], at the cytie of Narbon in Fraūce, vnto ŷ relygyon of knyghtes of seynt Iohn Baptyst. This ordre of Templers was destroyed for theyr detestable heresy, wherof they werr conuict in. x. articles expressyd in ŷ Frenshe Cronycle at lengthe, whiche here I passe ouer for lengthe of ŷ matyer; and also for ŷ rehersal therof is nat fruytfull to all herers or reders.

In the. xxiii. yere of his reygne, this kynge Philip, for as moche as he by some of the

[1] At Louvre. [2] Roule, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542.

electours

electours of the empyre was chosen emperour, he therfore with a great army, sped hym toward Rome, & passed through Almayne tyll he came vnto the duchye of Quarantayne, of whiche duchye the people receyued hym with all honoure; and after passed the moũtaynes and so came vnto Padua, where also he was ioyously receyued, where he taryinge a season, receyued frome Mylayne ambassadours, the whiche offeryd to hym that cytie, with all couenable seruyce. And after his people was to hym more plenarly assembled, he than departyd from Padua and yode vnto Mylayne, whom the lordes of the cytie met vpon the waye, & conueyed hym vnto the maister paleys of ỹ cytie, and there lodgyd hym; & within fewe dayes after brought hym with great solempnyte vnto the cathedral churche, & there crowned hym kyng of Lomberdy, and called hym Augustus.

Thañe he departed from Mylayne, and spedde hym to the cytie of Cremoyne, & layde siege to ỹ same; but it was to hym shortly yolde. From thens he passyd to ỹ cytie of *Fol. lxxxi.* Bresse, where he was holden out a longe whyle: thyder to his ayde came many soudyours of ỹ towne of Pyze, & made there many sharpe assautes; in whiche assautes, Guy de Namoure, that was marshall of the kynges hoost, dyed of hurtes that he there toke. In processe of tyme shortly folowynge, the rulers of Bresse offeryd meanes of treaty, but the kyng was so amoued with ỹ deth of his marshall, that he wolde graunt to theym no condycionall peas but to stande at his grace and mercy. Wherfore they fynally seynge noo better meane, offeryd vnto hym the keys of the cytie.

Thañe kynge Philip, for othe before made, or for some other excellency, caused anone that part of the towne dyche for agayne his pauylyon to be fylled, & the walle of the cytie, with als many howses as stode atwene the wall and the maister palays of ỹ cytie, to be throwyn downe, that he with his host myght entre the streyght waye, and so to go or ryde vnto the sayde palays. And when all thynge was orderyd to his deuyse he entrede by that waye the cytie of Cremon, and therin taried a certayne season, and toke his counsayll with the Gebellynys how he myght the cytie of Rome wynne. And whan he had finyssh-ed that counsayll, he toke certayne hostages of this cytie of Cremon, the whiche he sent vnto Pyze to be kept, and so sped hym towarde Rome, and gettynge many cyties & other holdes by the waye, lastly he came vnto the cytie named Bowloyne la Grasse, whether cam vnto hym a cardynall or legate sent from [pope]' Clement the. v. to treate of ỹ state of the empyre.

But howe it was, the contynuaunce or fyne of this iournay tournyd nat to ỹ honour and pleasure of the Frenshemen: for after the metynge of the kynge and this legat the matier is no more touched: for the Frenshe kynge was agayne in Fraunce, or the legate myght brynge vnto hym any answere from [the pope.]' Also it is the more suspecte, for of this matyer spekyth no thynge maister Robert Gagwyne, whiche leuyth no thynge out of his boke that may sounde to the auaũcement of the Frenshe nacyon. In the. xxiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip, was brent in dyuers places of Fraunce, vpon. lx. Templers for the heresy before rehersyd, & in the yere folowynge a newe rebellyon beganne in Flaundres, of the whiche, Robert, erle of Flaunders, was accused, but he acquyt hymselfe; and after, Guy, his sone, was attachyd for the same and sent to pryson, fro the whiche he after escaped, for fere of profe to haue ben iustyfyed agayne hym, and retournyd vnto Gaunt, where he was defended fro his aduersaryes: so that the Holonders and Brabanders helde their partie agayñ the Frenshe kyng, and also agayne their awne erle, which so contynued, without any notary batayll, tyll the. xxvi. yere of the reygne of kynge Philip. In the whiche yere, vpon the euyn of Mary Magdaleyn, at ỹ towne of Courtray in Brabande, was, by the bysshops & other spirituall men of Fraunce and Flaundres, a peas concluded; wherof the condycyons were, that the Flemynges shuld haue pardon and forgyuenesse of all theyr former rebellyon, as well agayne the kynge as theyr

' *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. ' Clement, edit. 1542. 1559.

naturall

naturall duke. And for this they shuld paye a certayne sūme of syluer, wherof the sūme is nat expressyd, & ouer that they shuld, at their proper costes and expenses, bete down certayne strengthes and holdes as the Frenshe kynges depute wolde to theym assygne, begynnynge at Gaunt, and so to Bruges, and other places. And more ouer, they shuld yelde vnto Robert, theyr erle, ŷ castell of Courtray w̄ all abylementes of warre & other necessaryes therunto belongynge. All which cōdycions to obserue, they shuld delyuer vnto the kynge of Fraunce good hostages: but all this came to small effect, as after shall appere.

IN ŷ. xxvii. yere of this Phylyp, Iacob, the maister of ŷ Templers, with an other great ruler of the sayd ordre, whiche was named visitour of the same, after longe prysonmēt were brent at Parys.

And in the same yere kynge Phylip arreryd a taxe thorough Fraunce, whiche before that dayes was neuer herde nor spoken of. This was so greuous that all Normandy, Pycardy, & Champeygne allied them togyder, & vtterly denayde the payment therof. Wherof herynge, other countrees toke the same oppynyon; so that a great rumur and murmur was reysed thoroghout the realme of Fraunce in suche wyse, that the kynge for pacyfyeng of ŷ people, was fayne to repeale the sayde taxe.

In the. xxviii. yere of the reygne of kynge Philip, in the weke of Easter, the. iii. wyues of the. iii. sones of kynge Philip, that is to saye, Margaret, the wyfe of Lowys his eldest sone and kynge of Nauerne, Iohanne or Ione, ŷ wyfe of his seconde sone, Philip erle of Poytiers, and Blaunche, the wyfe of his thirde sone Charlys and erle of Marches, were accused of spouse brekynge, and sent from a place of nūnes, where they lay, and conueyed vnto more streyghter kepynge; ŷ which. iii. wyues were all. iii. doughters vnto ŷ duke of Burgoyn. Than vpon streyght examynacion made, Margaret and Iohanne were gyltie of that cryme foūde; wherefore they were sente vnto the castell of Gaylarde in Normādy, there to be kept as prysoners terme of theyr lyues: and the forenamed Blanche, for so moche as she was foūden gyltles, was agayne restoryd vnto her lord, Charlys erle of the Marches.

And in shorte tyme after, the. ii. paramours of the sayd Margaret and Iohāne, that is to saye, Philip Dannoy, and Gautyer Dannoy or Waltier Dannoy, knyghtes, men of fame and goodly personage, and bretherne, at the kynges cōmaundement were firste brent in the visage with hote irens, and after drawen to the gybet at Pontoyse, and there hanged; whiche mysfortune the kyng toke so greuously that he reioysed neuer after. Aboute the feast of seynt Peter, or the begynnynge of August, the kynge herynge of the rebellyon of the Flemynges, by Engwerram, his moost secrete counsaylour, made an assemble of the cytezins of Parys, and by the mouth of ŷ sayd Engwerram desyred a subsydie of the said cytezyns to mayntayne his warre agayne the Flemynges, the whiche, by Stephan Barbet, in the name of the hole cytie was graunted; by precydence wherof all the great cyties & good townes of Fraunce were charged in lyke maner: which caused great vnkyndenes & grudge of the people towarde the sayde Enguerram. Than prouysion was made for anewe the iourney into Flaunders, so that the kynge sent his. ii[i]. sones & many other nobles of his lande, in ŷ moneth of Septembre folowynge into the sayd countre of Flaūdres; the whiche made good spede, and layde firste theyr siege to ŷ castell of the Ile & wanne it, & after that entred towarde other stronge holdes. But the Flemynges put them of, and gaue vnto the Frenshe hoost so sharpe assautes, ŷ in processe they were constrayned to retourne into Fraunce with small honoure; wherof the great defaute was layde vpō Enguerram, and vpon one of the sōnes of the erle of Flaūdres, which, lytel tofore, by meanes of ŷ sayd Enguerrā, was made erle of Neuers. In ŷ moneth of Nouembre folowyng, kyng Philip beynge at Foūtayne Beliaūt, in the prouynce of

[1] iii. MS.

Gastenoys,

Gastenoys, was taken with suche sykenesse, and dyed shortly after, when he had reygned. xxviii. yeres & more, and his body after caryed vnto Seynt Deonyse & there buryed, leuynge after hym the thre forenamed sones, Lowys, Philip, & Charlys, & a doughter named Isabell, which, before tyme, was maryed vnto the secõde Edwarde than kynge of Englande.

EDWARDI SECUNDI.

Fol. lxxxii.

EDwardi, the seconde of that name, and sone of Edwarde the first, born at Carnar- [Li. 7. ca. 42.]
uan in a towne of Walys, beganne his reygne ouer Englande in the moneth of Iulii, and. viii. day of the sayd moneth, in the yere of our Lorde. xiii.C. and. vii. and the. xxi. yere of the. iiii. Philyp, than kyng of Fraũce; the whiche was crowned at Westmynster, the. xiiii. day of Decembre, after the oppynyon of dyuers wryters: but Ranulph, monke of Chester, in his boke of Policronicon, sayth, ẏ he was crowned in the foresayd monastery of ẏ bysshop of Wynchester, the Sondaye in Quiquagesima, whiche is the. xiiii. daye after the closynge of Alleluya, and of the bysshop of Wynchester, for so moche as Robert than archebysshop of Caunterbury, was than out of Englande.

This Edwarde was fayre of body and great of strengthe, but vnstedfast of maners & vyle in condycions; for he wolde refuse the company of lordes and men of honoure, and haunte hym with vylayns & vyle persones: he also gaue hym to great drynkynge, and lyghtly he wolde discouer thynges of great counsayl. With these and many other disalowable condicions he was excercysed, which tourned hym to great dishonoure and his lordes to great vnrest, as by the sequele of this his story it shall appere.

Anone as his fader was buryed & his exequy scantly fynysshed, he, forgettynge the hyghe & chargeable cõmaundement of his sayde fader, sent in all haste for his olde compere Pyers of Gauestone, the whiche he receyued with all ioy and gladnesse, and auaunced hym to moche honoure. And thus passed the season of ẏ olde mayre and shyreffes of London; so that at the feastes of Michelmas, and Symon and Iude folowynge, the olde mayre & shyreffes, ẏ is to meane, sir Iohñ Blõut, Symon Bolet, and Godfrey, at the Cõduyt, were dischargyd, and the newe, as vnder foloweth, admytted.

Anno. Domini. M.CCC.vii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.viii.

Nicholas Pygotte[1].

Sir Iohñ Blount. Anno primo.

Myghell Drury.

IN this begynnynge of this mayres yere, and first yere of the kynge, the sayd kynge Edwarde, in ẏ moneth of Decembre, sayled into Fraunce. And the. xv. daye of Ianuarii folowynge, at Boleyn in Pycardy, maryed Isabell the doughter of Philyp le Beaw, than kynge of Fraunce, and soone after retournyd with her into Englande, and so vnto London, where of the cytezyns they were ioyously receyued, and so conueyed vnto Westmynster; where, as before is shewed, vpon the Sondaye in Quinquagesima, they were bothe solemply crownyd. At whiche coronacion was so excedynge prease[2], that a knyght, called sir Iohñ Bakwell, was threstyd to deth. Than the kynge gaue shortly after vnto Pyers of Gauestoñ, the erledom of Cornewayll and the lordshyp of Wallyngforde, and was ruled all by his wanton counsayll, and folowed the appetite and pleasure of his body, nothynge orderyng by sadnesse nor yet by ordre of lawe or iustyce.

[In this yere also floured that holy man called Robert, a chanon of the howse of Brydlyngtoñ; the whiche of some wryters is accounted for a profyte, for verses that he made of thynges come after in Englande, whiche I passe ouer at this tyme.][3]

[1] William Furneys. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [2] preasse. MS. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.viii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.ix.

Wyllyam Basynge.

Nicholas Faryngdoñ[1]. Anno. ii.

Iohñ Butler.

IN this seconde yere kyng Edwarde callynge to mynde the displeasure done vnto hym, and to his famulyer Piers of Gauestone, by the bysshoppe of Chester, maister Walter Lāton, as before is towched in the. xxviii. yere of ỹ reygne of Edwarde his fader, cōmaunded hym vnto the toure of Lōdon, where he was streyghtly kept many dayes after.

Thañe the lordes of the lande, and specyally sir Henry Lacy, sir Guy, and sir Aymer de Valance, erles of Lyncolñ, of Warwyke and of Penbroke, to whom that noble prynce Edwarde the firste, had gyuen so great charge ỹ Pyiers of Gauestone shuld no more come into Englande, sawe the rule of the lande, and how the kynges treasoure, by meane of the sayd Piers, was wasted, assembled theym in counsayl, and of one assent, with ayde of other lordes of ỹ realme, spake so with the kynge that, contrarye his pleasure, he was auoyded the lande, and banysshed into Irelande for that yere. But ỹ kynge sent vnto hym often tymes secret messāgers, and comforted hym w̄ many ryche gyftes, or made hȳ his chief ruler of ỹ coūtre.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.ix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.x.

Iamys of Seynt Edmunde.

Thomas Romayñ. Anno. iii.

Roger Palmer.

IN this thirde yere, dyuers grudges began to moue & sprynge atwene the kynge and his lordes for the exilyng of Piers of Gaueston; wherfore to content amyte atwene hym and them, the sayd Piers, about ỹ feast of the Natyuyte of our Lady, was fette home agayne, and so cōtynued to the more myschyef of the realme.

Aboute this tyme, as testyfyeth Cronica Cronicarum and other, the knyghtes of the ordre of seynt Iohñ Baptyst, called seynt Iohñ of Ierusalem, by their knyghtly manhode, put out of *Fol. lxxxiii.* the ile of Rodes or Rodhis the Turkys and infydelys, that to that daye occupyed the sayde ile, and after that wanne vpon the sayd Turkys dayly and yerely: so that at this daye they haue in theyr domynyon moche of the landys, which, at that daye and longe after, was in the powar of the sayde Turkys. This relygyon also was greatly preferryd by the falle of the Templers, whose possessyons and landys were to them geuyn, as it is before expressyd in the thyrde Chapytre, and. xxi. yere of Phylyp the fayre. This yere also, after some wryters, the Crowchyd Frerys came first into Englande, [whiche are also named .][2]

Anno Domini. M.CCC.x. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xi.

Symon Croppe.

Rycharde Roffham. Anno. iiii.

Petyr Blacnay.

IN this. iiii. yere the rule & power of Pyers of Gauaston more & more encreasyng, in so moche that he had the guydynge of all the kynges iewellys and treasoure, yode vpon a day vnto Westmynster, & there out of ỹ kynges iuell house toke a table and a payre of trestyllys of golde, and conueyed theym, with other iuellys, out of the lāde, to the great

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Goldsmyth. [2] *Instead of* "wch are also namyd," *the* edit. *of* 1542, *has* "the more pyte."

inpouerysshynge of the same; and ouer ỳ brought the kynge, by meane of his wāton condycions, to many folde vycis, as auoutry and other. Wherefore the foresayde lordis, seynge the myschyfe that dayly encreasyd by occasyon of this vnhappy man, toke theyr counsayll together at Lyncolne and there concludyd to voyde hym agayne out of Englande, so that shortlye after he was exyled into Flaūders, to the kynges great displeasure.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xii.

Symon Merwode.

Iohn̄ Gysours. Anno. v.

Rycharde Wylforde.

IN this. v. yere, vpō ỳ day of seynt Brice, or the. xiii. daye of Nouembre, was borne at Wyndesore, the first or eldest sone of kyng Edwarde, ỳ after his father was kyng of Englande, and namyd Edwarde the thyrde. And this yere was agayn reuokyd by the kynge Piers of Gaueston, out of Flaunders; the which, after his agayne cōmyng, demeanyd hym worse than he before dyd: in so moche that he dysdayned the lordys of Englonde, & of them had many dispytous and sclaūderouse wordys. Wherefore, the lordis of one mynde assētyd to put this Piers to deth; and soone after assemblyd theyr powars and besyegyd hym in the castell of Scarburgh, & in processe wanne that castell, toke hym and brought hym vnto Gauersede[1], besyde Warwycke, & there, the. xix. daye of Iunii, smote of his hede: whereof whan the kynge hadde knowlege, he was greuouslye dyspleasyd agayne the sayde lordys, & made his auowe, that his deth shulde be reuengyd. By meane of this the rancoure ỳ before atwene the kynge & his lordys was kēdelyd, now began further to sprede; so ỳ after this daye ỳ kynge sought occasyon agayne his lordys howe he myght put them to greuaunce and dyspleasure. In this whyle dyed sir Hēry Lacy, earle of Lyncolne; the which, lyinge vpon his deth bedde, requyryd syr Thomas, erle of Lancastre, ỳ had maryed his doughter, that he wolde stande with the other lordys in theyr defence for the weale of Englande: the which request the sayde erle grauntyd, and so fermely kept or obseruyd it, ỳ at length, he, with many other, loste theyr lyues as after in the story shall be shewyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xiii.

Iohn̄ Lambyn.

Iohn̄ Pontenay[2]. Anno. vi.

Adam Lutekyn[3].

IN this. vi. yere the kynge helde his great courte or counceyll of parlyament with ỳ lordes spirituell and temporell at Lōdon, where by the aduyces of theym many good ordenaūcis and statutys were made to oppresse the ryottouse & other myscheuys that at those dayes were vsed. Than the kynge was sworne to kepe those ordenauncis, and after, all his lordys to theyr powars. [After ỳ which othe so takyn, Robert, archebysshop of Cauntorbury, blessyd all them that vphelde the sayd statutys, and accursyd all suche as attemptyd to breke any of ỳ same.][4] It was not longe after ỳ worde was broughte vnto the kynge how Robert le Bruze was retournyd into Scotlande, and had causyd the Scottys to rebell of newe. Ye haue before harde, in the. xxxiiii. yere of Edwarde the firste, how the sayd Edwarde chasyd the forenamyd Robert le Bruze out of Scotlande into Normādy; but when he had harde of the mysgouydynge of ỳ realme of Englande, and specially of the dyuysyon atwene the kynge and his lordis, he anone with a small ayde of the Norgans or Norwayes, retournyd īto Scotlande, where he demeanyd hym in such wyse to the lordys of Scotlande, that he in shorte processe was agayne made kynge of that realme,

[1] Gauersedge. MS. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Draper; *for* Pontenay *we have* Gisers, *in the margin of the* edit. 1559. [3] Richard Lutekyn. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

and warryd strongelye vpon the kynges frendys, and wanne from theym castellys and stronge holdys, and wrought vnto Englysshemen moche sorowe & tene.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xiv.

Adam Burden.

Nicholas Faryngdon. Anno. vii.

Hugh Gayton[t].

IN this. vii. yere, for to oppresse ŷ malyce of ŷ Scottis, the kynge assemblyd a great powar, & by water entred ŷ realme of Scotlande, and destroyed suche vyllagys and townys as laye or stoode in his waye. Wherof herynge, Robert le Bruze, with the powar of Scotlande, coostyd towarde the Englysshemen, and vpon the daye of ŷ natyuyte of seynt Iohñ the Baptyste, mette with kynge Edwarde and his hooste, at a place callyd Estryuelyn, nere vnto a fresshe ryuer, that thā was callyd Bannockysbourne, where atwene the Englyssh & the Scottis that day was foughten a cruell batayll: but in the ende the Englysshe men were constrayned to forsake the feelde. Than the Scottys chasyd so egyrlye that many of theym were drownyd in the fore namyd ryuer, & many a noble man of Englande that day was slayne in that batayll, as syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Gloucetyr, syr Robert Clyfford, syr Edmunde of Maule the kynges stewarde, with other lordys and baronys, to the noūbre, as witnessith Guydo de Columpna, of. xlii., & of knyghtis & baronettis to ŷ noumbre of. lxvii. ouer. xxii. men of name, which that day of the Scottis
Fol. lxxxiiii. were takyn prysoners, and the kynge hym selfe from that batayll scaped with great daunger, & so with a fewe of his hoste that with hym escapyd, came vnto Berwyke, and there restyd hym a season. Than the Scottis enflamyd with pryde, ī derysyon of Englysshe men, made this ryme as foloweth.

Maydens of Englonde, sore maye ye morne,
For your lemmans ye haue loste at Bannockisborne,
With heue a lowe.
What wenyth the kynge of Englonde,
So soone to haue wonne Scotlande
With rumbylowe.

THis songe was after many dayes sungyn, in daunces, in carolis of ŷ maydens & mynstrellys of Scotlande, to the reproofe and dysdayne of Englysshe men, w dyuerse other whiche I ouer passe. And whan kynge Edwarde had a season taryed in Berwyke, and sette that towne in suche suretye as he then myght, he returnyd with small honour into Englonde, & came secretly to Westmynster vpon the day of seynt Magne, or the. xix. day of August.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xv.

Stephan of Abyngdone.

Iohñ Gysours[u]. Anno. viii.

Hamonde Chykwell.

[Li. 7. ca. 42.] IN this. viii. yere of kyng Edwarde, a vylayn callyd Iohñ Tanner, yode about in dyuerse placys of Englande, & namyd hym selfe to be the sone of Edwarde ŷ firste, and sayde that by meane of a falce noryce, he was stollen out of his cradell, and Edwarde which was a carters sone was layde in the same cradell for hym, and he hymselfe was after hardly fostred and brought vp in the north partyes of Walis; but whan this vylayne was layed for to be takyn, for feere he fled to the churche of ŷ frere Carmys, or the

[t] Hugh Caxton. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [u] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. *In the margin of the* edit. 1559. *we have* Wyllyam Bedingham.

Whyte

Whyte Freris of Oxynforde, where he, thynkynge to be ī a suretye because kynge Edwarde the firste was theyr foūder, rehersyd agayne the former saying, addyng more there vnto, that it apperyd well that the kyng was a carters sone, for his cōdycions were accordynge to the same, as by many famylyer examples and customes in hym dayly were apparent. Whā he had thus contynued a season, not without some rumoure in the lande, lastelye he was takyn out of that place and caryed as a felon vnto Northampton, and there reygned and iudged for his falsenes and soo drawen and hangyd; the whiche at the howre of dethe confessyd that he had a feende in his house in the symylytude of a catte, the whiche, amonge other promessys to hym made, had assuryd hym ẏ he shuld be kyng of Englāde; & Guydo sayth ẏ he cōfessyd ẏ he had seruyd the feende. iii. yeres before, to bryng his peruerse purpose about. Thus kyng Edwarde besette with many aduersytyes, kepte a coūceyll at Lōdon, for reformacyon of the warre in Scotlande, & other thynges for the welfare of Englande. Then was syr Petyr Spaldynge knyght sent vnto Berwyke, with a crewe of souldyours for to fortyfye that towne, for so moche as the kynge hadde certayne vnderstandynge that Robert le Bruze entendyd hastely to laye his siege to ẏ towne.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xvi.

Hamonde Godechepe.

Stephan Abyndon. Anno. ix.

Wyllyam Redynge[1].

IN this. ix. yere, vpō Mydlent Sōday, was ẏ towne & castell of Berwyke yelden or loste, by treason of the fore named Petyr Spaldynge as the comon fame went, vnto Robert le Bruze kynge of Scottis. This yere also, the derth of corne ẏ had encreasyd yerelye more and more from the. xvi. yere of Edwarde the firste, was this yere at Lōdon solde for. iiii.s. a busshell, and therwith also fell suche morayne of beestis that all vitayll waxed scant & dere, as after shall be shewyd. In this yere also. ii. cardynallys that were sent into Englāde from the. v. Clement than pope[2], to sette an vnyon and a peace atwene the kynges of Englāde and of Scottis, were mette with vpon ẏ moore of Wygylsdone in Yorkeshyre, and there robbed of suche stuffe & treasoure as they with them brought; for the whiche robberye great enquery was made, so that lastly a knyght callyd syr Robert or Gylbert Myddelton was accused, and sent to pryson for that felony, and after at London drawyn and hangyd for the same, and his heed set vpon Lōdon brydge, but the cardynallys receyued of the kyng dowble the value of theyr harmys. In this yere also fell so excedynge rayne in the monethes of Iulii & August, that husbondys myght not bryngе ī theyr lytle store of corne ẏ then stode vpon the groūde; so ẏ where before was great scarcetye of whete, nowe by this was more, and beuys & motons were at excedynge pryces, by reason of the moreyne before spokyn of.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xvii.

Wyllyam Caston.

Iohn Wengraue. Anno. x.

Raufe Palmer[3].

IN this. x. yere, the Scottis entryd ẏ bordours of Northumberlande, and robbed & brent ẏ countrey mooste cruelly, in so moche ẏ they brent ẏ howsys that women at ẏ tyme laye in chylde bedde, & sparyd nouther man, woman, nor chylde, nothir relygyous nor other, and dyd so great harme ẏ the coūtrey by it was greatly impouerysshed. To this myschefe was ioyned an other mysery, for, as before is sayde, vytayll by reason of the morayne was so scant and dere, and whete and other graynes so hyghe prysyd, that poore people ete horse flesshe and doggys flesshe and many other vyle bestis, whiche wonder

[1] Bedyngton. edit. 1559. *in marg.* [2] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] Bulmer. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

is

Nota magna caristia frumenti.

is to beleue, and yet for defaute dyed great multytude of people in sundry placys of the lãde, and whete was solde this yere & the next folowyng at London for. iiii. marke a quarter and aboue: and after this derthe and scarcetye of vytayll ensued mortalytye of men, by Goddis houde and punysshemẽt, so that what with warre of the Scottys, and for hunger and deth by mortalyte and syckenesse, the people of the lande was wonderslye wasted & perysshed. But all those monycions amendyd not the kynge of his inordynate lyuynge.

Fol. lxxxv.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xviii.

Iohñ Pryoure.

Iohñ Wentgraue[1]. Anno. xii.

Wyllyam Furneux.

IN this. xi. yere, the kynge assemblyd a newe hooste and went into Northumberlande, to resyste the malys of the Scottis, whiche dayly made assawtis vpõ ỹ bordours, and entred farre within the lãde; wherfore for great dystresse & nede of fyghtynge men, the kynge had moche people out of the South and East partyes of Englande, amonge the whiche, cõtrary theyr lybertye, the cytye of London was constrayned to fynde at theyr costys and charge. CC. men, and so sent theym vnto Yorke. When the kynge, beinge at Yorke, had receyued his people from sundry countrees and good townes of Englande, he with a conuenyent noumbre rode towarde Berwyke, and so sped his iournayes that at length he came nere vnto Berwyke, and layed his siege about the same. But whyle the kynge was besyed in assawtynge of ỹ towne, the Scottis breeke ouer ỹ water of Swale in great noumbre, and leuynge the cooste where ỹ kynges people laye, in secret wyse came downe into the marchis of Yorkeshyre, and there slewe the people and robbyd theym in mooste cruell wyse; wherefore the archebysshop of Yorke, constrayned of pure necessyte to defende that countre, gatheryd vnto hym an vnredy and dispurueyed hoost for the warre, as pryours, clerkys, chanons, and other spyrytuell men of the churche, with husbonde men and other vnapte people, and so with great noumbre of men, and fewe warly or discrete cheuetaynes, yoode agayne the Scottys, and them encountryd at a place called Mittõ vpõ Swale the. xii. daye of the moneth of Octobre, and gaue vnto them batayll; but for lacke of wyse and warely prouysyon, the Englysshe men were besette of theyr enemyes vpon euery syde, so ỹ of them was slayne a great multytude, and the remenaunte shamefullye put to flyghte, by reason whereof the sayde archebysshop with ỹ abbot of Selby and other were preseruyd; and for so many spyrytuell men were slayne in this batayll, therfore it was after namyd of many wryters the whyte batayll. Whan the kynge was enfourmyd of this ouerthrowe of ỹ Northyrne men, and for it drewe towarde wynter, he therfore brake vp his siege, and retournyd vnto Yorke, & soone after forther into Englande. Than was no thynge done without the aduyces and counceylys of syr Hughe the Spencers, the father and the sone; by whose entysemente many thynges were doon in Englande, to the great grudge as wele of the noble men of the realme, as of the commons of the same, so that they were had in as great hatred and indygnacion as before tymes was Pyers of Gaueston, and many euyll reportys and great extorcyons were of them reportyd, as lyghtly men shall doo that been out of the fauoure of the comon people.

Memorandũ, ỹ Scottis came to Mitton vpon Swale, & there gaue a great batayll to Englysshe men, as to ỹ archebysshop of Yorke, pryours, prestys & many other, where the Scottis had the better.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xix.

Iohñ Pontenay.

Iohñ Wengraue. Anno. xii.

Iohñ Dallynge.

IN this. xii. yere, the kynge helde his great coũceyll at Yorke, where, contrary the

[1] Wigrave. edit. 1559. *in marg.*

mynde

mynde of the lordys, syr Hugh Spencer the sone was made hyghe chaumberlayne of Englande; by reason whereof he bare hym so hawtely and so prowde, that no lorde of this lande myght gaynsaye hym ī any thynge that he thought good, whereof grewe the occasyon of the barons warre, as after folowyth. In this passetyme, for asmoche as the fore sayd cardynallys myght no thynge doo concernynge the peace atwene Englande and Scotlande, the kyng purchasyd a curse of the. xxii. Iohn̄ then pope, to accurse Robert le Bruze, and all suche as with hym helde or maynteyned, and it to stande so in strength tyll the sayd Robert had recompensyd kyng Edwarde for all suche harmys as his lande had by hym resayued, and also tyll he had reedyfyed the monasteryes & churchys by hym & his caste downe in Englande, and restoryd to theym suche spirituell goodys as the Scottys had reued[1] and takyn from them. But all this auayled no thynge, but put the kynge & the realme to great coste and charge, so that the comons were vexyd and trowbled many maner of wayes, and theyr possessyons and moueable goodys takyn from them vpō surmysed and feyned causys, so that many were vtterly vndoon, and a fewe synguler and mysguydyd personys auauncyd. Whan the more partye of the baronys of Englande behelde this mysery of ȳ people, howe they were punysshed by the hande of God, and also by the ignoraunce of the kynge, they in secrete maner assemblyd them to guyther at a towne callyd Shyrborne in , and there condyssendyd for a reformacyon of this myschefe, to remoue from the kynge the sayde Spensers, bothe the father and the sone: & this to bryngе aboute, syr Thomas erle of Lancastre, syr Humfrey Bohum erle of Hereforde, syr Iohn̄ Moūbray baron, syr Roger Clyfforde baron, syr Goselyn Danyell barō, syr Roger Toket, Roger Benefeelde, syr Roger Mortymer, syr Wyllyam Sullāde, syr Wyllyam Elmynbrydge, syr Iohn̄ Gyfford, and syr Iohn̄ Tiers, barons & knyghtes, with dyuerse other, sware eche of them to stande by other tyll they hadde amendyd the state of the realme: and soone after by theyr aduyce and agrement, syr Iohn̄ Mounbraye, syr Roger Clyfforde & syr Goselyn Danyell with a stronge companye, entryd vpon the manours and castellys of ȳ sayde Spensers, standynge in the Marche of Walys, and them spoyled and distroyed. Of the which ryot the Spensers cōplayned them to the kynge, in punysshement whereof the kynge callynge to hym dyuerse of his counceyll at Wyndesore, and there determyned that ȳ sayde syr Iohn̄ Moūbraye, syr Roger Clyfforde & syr Goselyn Danyell, with other theyr assystētis, shulde appere before the kynges counceyll shortlye after, and there to make answere vpon that ryot, and if they refused that to doo, that then they shulde auoyde the lande shortlye after as banysshed men. But noo daye of apparence by them was kepte: wherefore proclamacyons were made in dyuerse placys of the realme and at London, the. xvi. daye of Marche, that the sayde syr Iohn̄ Mounbray, syr Roger Clyfforde and other, shulde auoyde the lande within. x. dayes folowynge vpō payne of deth. Whereof herynge the lordys and baronys before named, assemblyd them a more strenger powar, and vpon that sent a messynger vnto the kynge, besechynge hym humbely to remoue from his persone and counceyll ȳ Spensers, the whiche daylye dyd vnto hym great dyshonoure, and to the comon weale of the realme great hynderaunce. The kynge herynge this humble requeste, nothynge with it beynge cōtent, but ferynge greatly the dystruccion of his owne persone, assemblyd his cōceyll for reformacīō of this mater; where it was concludyd that the kynge shuld calle a parlyament at London, there to be holdyn in the[2] folowynge: and that conclusyon so there takyn by ȳ sayde counceyll, the kyng sent his letters vnto the sayde baronys, cōmaundynge them to come vnto the sayd parlyament; the which at the daye aboue sayde, with a great hoost of men of armes, came vnto London in a sute of inkettys or cotys of demy partye of yolowe and grene, with a bande of whyte caste ouerthwarte. For this skyll ȳ parlyament longe after of ȳ cōmon people was callyd the parlyament of whyte bandys. Thā for to se ȳ kynges pease were substancyally kepte within the cytie of London, the mayre causyd dayly a. M. men well harnessyd to *Fol. lxxxvi.*

[1] receyved. edit. 1559. [2] *The Museum* MS. *adds* "the monyth of Aprill next."

watche

watche in dyuerse wardys and at dyuerse gatis of the cytie, the whiche began at. iiii. of the clocke in the mornynge, and so contynued tyll. vi. at nyghte, at whiche season as many were ordeyned to take thā the charge of the nyght watche, and so to contynue tyll the howre of. v. in the mornynge. And for this nyght watche shulde be surelye kepte, two aldremen nyghtly were assygned to ryde aboute the cytie with certayne offycers of the towne to see the watchemen wele & discretly guydyd: & the gates were shyt at. ix. of the clocke, and opened agayne at. vii. on the morowe, and euery cytezyn warnyd to haue his harneys by hym, that he myght be redy with shorte warnynge, when so euer he were callid. Thus in the cytye the sayde watche cōtynued. The foresayd parlyamēt was holdyn at Westmynster; where, amonge other thynges for the weale of the lāde, as that counceyll than coulde thynke determynyd, one was that syr Hughe Spenser the father and syr Hughe the sone shulde be banysshed the realme of Englande for terme of lyfe: and soon after that banysshement was put in execucyon, so that they both were brought vnto Douvr, there to take shyppynge; where syr Hughe the father made wonderfull great moone when he shulde take his shyp, and cursyd his sone in presence of suche as had the guydynge of them, sayng, that by his meanys he was banysshed from the flowre of all landys cristened. Than the kynge dyssoluyd the parlyament, and euery man retournyd to his owne. But it was not longe after that worde was brought vnto ŷ kyng that syr Hugh Spenser the sone houyd vpō the cooste of Englāde, and toke prayes of all marchauntys ŷ passed by his course; but the kynge let as he had knowen of noo suche thynge, and sufferyd that with many moo euyll dedys to go vnpunysshed, the which at lengthe he repentyd full soore, and tooke thereof great remors in conceyens, as it aperyth in the ende of his reygne.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xx.

Symon Abyngdon.

Hamonde Chykewell'. Anno. xiii.

Iohn̄ Preston.

IN this. xiii. yere the kynge reuoked the actis or withstoode them, whiche were made at Lōdon in the last parlyament, & callyd agayne into Englonde the Spensers, bothe father and the sone, contrary the wyll of the barons, and sette theym in lyke auctoryte as they before had been, to the great dystourbaūce of all the realme: and soone after, vnder coloure of a tytle made by the quene vnto the castell of Ledys in Kent, which thē belongyd vnto syr Barthen de Bladysmore, knyght, thā beyng on the baronys partye, the kynge besyeged the sayde castell, and by helpe of the cytezyns of Lōdon lastly wanne it by strengthe, and spoylyd the mouables thereof, which was to a great value, after ŷ saying of some wryters. In this passe tyme that the kynge had thus callyd agayne the Spēsers, and rulyd many thynges after his sensuall apetyte & pleasure, no thynge regardynge the comon weale of ŷ realme, ŷ barons concyderynge wele ŷ the Spencers shulde, in process, brynge the lande in great ruyne & the kynge to great dyshonoure, entendynge to refourme the myschefe ŷ therof myght ensue, gadered vnto them great powar. And whyle sir Thomas, erle of Lancastre, was gatherynge of his people, the. ii. Mortymers, that is to saye, syr Roger Mortymer of Werke, & syr Roger of Wygmoore & other, yode into the Marche of Walys, and toke by strengthe certayne cyties and townys belongynge to the Spencers, and pursuyd also some of ŷ kynges seruaūtys. Wherefore the kynge herynge of ŷ rebeliyon of his lordys, made hasty spede, and with a great hoost came aboute by Shroysburye, and was nere vnto them or they were ware; so that, for fere, the sayde Mortymers yelded them vnto the kynges grace and mercy: the which forthwith were conueyed as prysoners vnto the towre of London.

[1] *The MS. adds* Peperer.

Anno.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xx. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxi.

Reynolde at Cūduyt.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno. xiiii.

Wyllyam Prodham.

IN this. xiiii. yere, whan ỹ kynge hadde orderyd the countre of the Marchys foresayde after his mynde, and had to hym gathered more strengthe, about seynt Chaddys day or begyñynge of Marche, ỹ kyng with his people came downe to Glowcetyr, where with hym mette the Spensers with theyr people, and from thense he yode vnto Lychefeelde: at which season the erlys of Lancaster and of Herforde ware at and the remenaūt of theyr hoost at Burton vpon Trent, & fortyfyed ỹ brydge ỹ the kyng myght not wynne ouer the sayd ryuer. Than ỹ kynge was broughte vnto a foorde, & began to sette ouer his knyghtis: wherof herynge, the sayde erlys forsooke the sayde towne of and yode towarde the towne or cytie of But or they myghte passe farre vpon theyr iournay they were encounteryd of syr Aymer de Valance, erle of Pembroke, with the Spensers and other of the kynges hoost, vpon the. xii. daye of Marche, and of them ouersette and constrayned to flē, and so yoode, in processe of tyme, to Poūtfret. In this meane season, ỹ erle Thomas had sent a knyght of his, named syr Robert Holande, into Lancasshyre, for to arere his tenaūtys; but when ỹ sayd syr Robert harde of ỹ skyrmysshe, & howe his maister was fled, he thā drewe hym to ỹ kynge, & presentyd hym with suche companye as he had thē gathered: & thus the kynges powar dayly encreasyd, *Fol. lxxxvii.* & the barons dyscreasyd. Than the baronys heryng of the goynge of syr Robert Holāde vnto the kynges partye, were with it sumdeale abasshyd, and tooke theyr coūceyll in ỹ Freris of Pountfret, where, after many opynyons and reasons amonge theym debatyd and arguyd, it was fynallye by them concludyd that they shulde goo vnto the castell of Dunstanborough, and there to holde them tyll they myght purchase the kynges grace; and so spedynge theyr iournay thyderwarde w̄ suche people as they than had, came in processe of tyme to a towne callyd Burghbrydge, where they were encoūtryd of syr Andrewe Harkeley, knyght, with other that were come out of the North with a stronge company, ỹ which, there nere vnto the sayde towne, set vpon ỹ baronys, and in the ende scōfyted them and chasyd theyr people. In the whiche fyght was slayne the erle of Herforde, syr Roger Benefelde, and syr Wyllyam Sullande and other; and there was taken ỹ erle of Lācastre, syr Roger Clyfforde, syr Iohn̄ Moūbraye, syr Roger Tuckettys, syr Wyllyam Fizwyllyam, with dyuerse other, & ladde vnto Yorke. And this feelde was foughten, as wytnessyth Polycronycon, the. xv. daye of Marche, ī ỹ ende of ỹ yere of our Lord. M.CCC.xx. It was not longe after ỹ syr Hugh Dandell, and syr Barthewe de Bladysmoore were takyn, and syr Thomas, erle of Lācastre, was broughte agayne to his owne towne of Pountfret, where he was brought in iugemēt before syr Aymer de Valaunce, erle of Penbroke, syr Iohn̄ Brytayne, erle of Rychemounde, syr Edmunde of Woodstoke, erle of Kent, syr Hughe Spenser ỹ father, and syr Robert Malmestorp, iustyce, w̄ other, & before them fynally adiugyd to haue his hede stryken of; whereof execucion was done ỹ. xii. daye of Aprell, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace, after ỹ rekenyng of ỹ Church of Englāde. M.CCC.xxi. [Of this erle Thomas are dyuerse opynyons, for some wryters shew of hym to be a seynt; but Polycronycon, in the. xlii. Chapytre of his. vii. Boke, shewith otherwyse. But what so euer erthlye man in suche tydynges deme, it is farre from ỹ secret iugement of God; so that to hym & his sentence suche thynges are to be referryd.][1] From this tyme forthwarde, by ỹ terme of. v. yeres ensuynge, the fortune of the Spēsers hugely encreasyd, & as faste ỹ quenys discreasid, tyll she was releued by the kynge of Fraunce, than Charlys the. v. of ỹ name, & brother vnto hir, as after shall be shewyd. Thā to retourne vnto our former mater,

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

vpō ỹ foresayd daye ỹ erle Thomas was thus put in execuciō. syr Roger Tuckettis, syr Wyllyam Fizwyllyam, syr Waren of Iselde or Isell, syr Henry of Bradborne, & syr Wyllyam Cheyny, baronys & knyghtys, were drawyn & hangyd, & theyr hedes smytten of & sent vnto Lōdon, which all were put to deth at Pountfrete, foresayd, ẇ an esquyre, callyd Iohn̄ Page. And at Yorke soone after, was drawyn & hedyd syr Roger Clyfforde, syr Iohn̄ Monbray, and syr Goselyne Danyell, barons; & at Brystowe syr Henry Womyngton, & syr Henry Monforde, baneretys; & at Glowceſyr syr Iohn̄ Giffarde, and syr Wyllyam Elmynbrydge, knyghtys; & at Lōdon syr Iohn̄ Tiers or Tryers, baron; and at Wynchelsee syr Thomas Culpepyr, knyght; and at Wyndesore syr Frauceys Waldenham, baron; and at Cauntorbury syr Barthew de Bladysmoore, & syr Bartholl de Asbornham, baronys; and at Cardeeſſe in Walys, was put to lyke execucyon syr Wyllyam Flemynge, knyght; vpon whose sowlys and all Crysten, Iesus haue mercy. Whan the kyng had thus subduyd his barons, he soon after, about the feest of the Assencyon of our Lord, kept his parliamēt at Yorke: duryng which parlyamēt syr Hugh Spēser, ỹ father, was made erle of Wynchester, & syr Andrew of Harkeley, erle of Carleyle, or after some wryters, Cardoyll, and dysherited all such as before hadde holdyn with the erlys of Lancastre & of Hereforde, excepte syr Hugh Dandell and fewe other; the which syr Hugh was receyued to grace, by reason that he had maryed a kynswoman of the kynges. There was also ordeyned, or soon after, that, master Robert Baldok, a man of euyll fame, shulde be chaunceler of Englonde. Then forfaytis and fynes were gathered into the kynges treasoury without sparynge of prynylegyd placys or other; so that what myght be founde all was seasyd for the kynge. By reason whereof moche treasoure was broughte vnto the kynges coffers, besyde great thynges that were brybed and spoylyd by the offycers of dyuerse shyres.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxii.

Richarde Constantyne.

Hamonde Chikwell. Anno. xv.

Richarde Hakeney.

IN this. xv. yere the kyng gaderyd the. vi. peny of temporall mennys goodys thoroughe Englāde, Irelande, and Walys, that to hym was grauntyd at the foresayde parlyament, for the defence of the Scottys, which was payed with great murmure and grudge, consyderynge ỹ manyfolde myseryes that the common people at those dayes were wrappyd in. This yere also the sonne apperyd to mannys syght as blode, & so contynued by the space of. vi. houres, that is to meane in the monyth of Octobre, and laste day of the sayd moneth, from. vii. of the clocke in the mornynge tyll one of the same day. After some wryters about this tyme the Scottis entendynge to wynne an enterpryse in Irelande, and for to wynne that countrey to theyr obeysaūce, entryd it ẇ a stronge hoost vnder theyr capitayne, Edward le Bruze, brother to ỹ Scottisshe kyng. But how it was, by ayde of Englysshemen or of theymselfe, the Irysshe quyt them so wele and bare theym so manfully, that they vaynquysshed the Scottis, and chasyd them out of that countrey; in the whiche chase and fyght the sayd Edwarde le Bruze, and many of the noble men of Scotlande, were slayne.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxiii.

Iohn̄ Grantham.

Hamonde Chikwell. Anno. xvi.

Richarde of Ely.

IN this. xvi. yere the kyng made great prouysyon for to make a voyage into Scotlande; so that about the begynnyng of August he entryd that coūtrey. But the Scottys consyderynge the great multytude of his hooste, drewe them into ỹ moūtaynes & other placys where

where as the Englysshemen myght not wynne to them, & all to the entent for to wery and tyre ỹ kynges great hoost. Thā dyuerse maladyes fell amonge the Englysshemen, sō that many of theym dyed & were loste in that iournay, as well for lacke of vytayle as by infyrmyte & sykenesse; so ỹ the kynge, for theyse causes & other, was cōstrayned to retourne into Englonde about ỹ Natyuyte of our Lady: whereof ỹ Scottis beyng enfourmyd, syr Iamys Dowglas ẏ other capytaynes of the Scottis, with a stronge hooste, folowyd or costyd the kyng in suche wyse, that about ỹ feest of seynt Luke they had almooste takyn the kyng at dyner at an abbey callyd Bella Launde or Beyghlande. Than the kynge of pure constraynt defendyd hym, & withstoode the Scottys as he myghte; but after short and weke fyght the kynge was cōpellyd to flee, and by that meane to saue hymselfe. In this skyrmysshe was takē syr Iohn̄ Brytayne, erle of Rychemōde, and the kynges treasoure was there spoyled and borne away, and the ordenauuce belongynge to the hooste great part of it was by the Scottis conueyed into Scotlande. Then the Scottys in theyr retournyng homewarde, wan the castell of Norham, and robbyd the towne of Northallertō and other. Of this losse and harmys was syr Andrew of Harkeley put I wyght by mysledyng of the kynges hooste, as in the next yere shalbe shewyd. *Fol. lxxxviii.*

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxiiii.

Adam Salesbury.

Symon Franceys. Anno. xvii.

Iohn̄ of Oxynforde.

IN this. xvii. yere ỹ kynge beyng enfourmyd that he and his people were so put vnto dyshonoure, (as in the precedyng yere is touchid) of the Scottis, by the vntrouthe & treason of the forenamed syr Andrewe, erle of Carleyll or Cardcyll, sent a knyghte, namyd syr Anthony Lucy, for to arest the sayd erle, and to brynge hym safely vnto the kynges presence; the whiche syr Antony sped hym in suche wyse, ỹ vpon ỹ day of seynt Chadde, or ỹ seconde day of Marche, the sayde erle was takyn, and so kepte in pryson longe after tyll Octobre folowyng, at which season, as affermyth Geffrey of Monmouthe, at Cardoyll in Walys, the sayde syr Andrewe was arregned and cōuycte that he had takyn money of the Scottis to betray the kynge, his natural lorde: for the which treason he was there, or after other, at Weschester or at Shrowisbury, drawen and hangyd, & his hede sent after to London and sette vpon the brydge. In this yere the warre began to quekyn in Guyan, atwene the Englysshemen and the Frensshe; whereof the occasyon was, as sayth the Frenshe booke, for a bastyle or fortresse made by the lorde of Mount Pesayne or Pesart, a lord of Gascoyne, vpō the Frēshe kynges grounde, as the Frenshemen sayde: but the Gascoynes & Englysshemen iustyfyed it to be within the terrytorye of Guyan. For this firste began great wordys, & after manassys, but lastlye mortall warre; so ỹ the Gascoynys, with ayde of the kynges stewarde of Englande, slewe many Frenshemen that came to ouerturne the sayd bastyle. Whan Charlys the v. or Charlys the fayre, which at that day was kyng of Fraunce, harde of the ouerthrowe of the Frenshemen, & howe the Gascoyns fortyfyed the foresayde bastyle within his sygnory, as he was enfourmyd, he sent in all spede, with a stronge hooste, his vncle Charlys de Valoys; ỹ which made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Gascoynys, and wan frome theym the townys of Angeon or Amyas with other, & in processe came vnto the towne or cytie of Ryoll, and layed his siege vnto the same. But the Englysshe with the Gascoynys, issuyd out of the towne & gaue batayle vnto ỹ Frenshemen, and put theym to the worse, and slewe vpō. xiiii. C. of them, amonge the which a lorde, callyd the Lorde of Seynt Florentyne, ẏ other noble men of Fraunce were slayne, and the other constrayned to lye forther from ỹ towne. Howe be it, in conclusyon, the sayde towne, by appoyntment, was yelden to the Frēshemen, vpon condycion that all suche Englysshemen as were within that towne shulde go freely with theyr goodis to Burdeaux, or if they wold remayn there styll, than to be sworne to ỹ Frenshe kynge, and to dwell there as Frenshemen. After which towne so yeldyn,

syr Edmunde of Woodstoke, the kynges brother, than beynge at Burdeaux as ŷ kynges deputye, made such resystens agayne the sayde Charlys de Valoys, that a trewce was takyn for that yere. Than about mydlent ŷ kyng hauyng knowlege of this warre in Guyan, and howe the Frenshe kynge entendyd to sease all Gascoyne and Guyan for brekynge of certayne couenauntys before tyme atwene theym made, and not by kynge Edwarde parfourmyd, sent ouer the quene his wyfe, the Frenshe kynges syster, to entreate a concorde & peace atwene them. And in the begynnynge of Auguste folowynge, syr Roger Mortymer of Wygmore, by meane of a slepyng poison, or drynke, that he gaue vnto his kepars, as ŷ comon fame went, escapyd out of the towre of London, and went to the quene into Fraunce: and soone after were takyn within the castell of Wallyngeforde, syr Iohñ Goldyngton and syr Edmunde of the Beche; the whiche syr Iohñ was sent vnto Yorke, & there hangyd and drawen for the barons quarell, and his hede sent vnto London brydge. And about the feest of the Natyuytie of our Lady, ŷ kynge sent ouer syr Edwarde his sone into Fraũce for to do homage vnto the Frensh kynge for ŷ duchye of Guyan, whom the Frenshe kynge Phylyp le Beawe reseyued ioyouslye, and causyd hym to tary with the quene his mother, in ŷ coũtie of Pontyen, lenger than kynge Edwarde was pleasyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxv.

Benet of Fulham. Hamon Chickwell.

Anno. xviii. Iohñ Canston[1].

IN this. xviii. yere, kynge Edwarde beynge enfourmyd that ŷ Frenshe kyng hadde geuyn vnto syr Edwarde his sone the duchie of Guyan, cõtrary his mynde and pleasure, and that also the quene his wyfe nor ŷ sayd syr Edwarde made no spede into Englande, notwithstandynge his oftyn sendynge for theym, was with his sayde wyfe and sone greuouslye dyspleasyd, in so moche that proclamacyons were made at London in ŷ moneth of Decembre, that if the quene and hir sone entryd not the lande by the octauis of ŷ Epyphany of our Lord nexte folowynge in peasyble wyse, that they shuld be takyn for enemyes to the kyng and his realme of Englande. But for the quene feeryd the trecherye of the Spensers and other that were nere vnto the kynge, she abode styll in Fraunce; wherefore kyng Edwarde after the expiracion of ŷ foresayd daye, causyd to be seasyd all suche landys as to his sayde wyfe and sone belongyd, and the profyttis of theym toke to his owne vse. When this rumour was knowyn thoroughe the more parte of Englande, dyuerse men of name of ŷ lãde, as syr Wylliã Trussell, syr Iohñ Cromewell with dyuerse other, departyd secretly out of Englande, & sayllyd vnto the quene. Whan kynge Edwarde was ware of this, he sente vnto the Frenshe kynge so sharpe and sore letters, that he monysshed ŷ quene out of his lande, and wolde nother ayde hyr nor hir cõpany: but as sayth Iohñ Froyzarde, (that made a cõpendyous werke in Frensshe, of the hole lyfe or story of the thyrde Edwarde, and therwith expressyd many other storyes and Cronycles, as of Fraunce, Flaunders, and other regions,) at this tyme, when the quene was thus monysshed to auoyde out of Fraunce, syr Iohñ de Henawde, brother to ŷ erle of Henawde, a man of great fame, was then in the Frenshe kyngis courte; the whiche hauynge compassyon of the quene and of hyr yonge sone, requyrynge hyr to goo with hym vnto his brothers courte foresayde: whereof the quene beynge fayne, grauntyd vnto his request & sped hyr thyther shortlye after, where she ẅ hir company was ioyously and honorably resayued. In the tyme and season that the quene with hyr sone lay thus in the courte or countrey of the erle of Henawde, by meanys of suche as were about hyr, a maryage was cõcludyd atwene syr Edwarde hir sone & Phylyp the sayde erlys doughter, ypõ certayne condycions; whereof one was, that the sayd erle shulde at his propre costys

Fol. lxxxix.

[1] Caston. edit. 1542. 1559.

sette

sette ouer into Englãde, the sayd syr Edwarde ẅ a crewe of. CCCC. men of armys, for the which prouysyon was made with all dylygence. Of this ŷ fame sprange shortly in Englãde; wherfore the kynge in all haste made prouysyon to haue the hauyns and the portis of his lãde surely kepte, for to resiste the landynge of his enemyes: for subsydie[4] whereof the cytezyns of London were constrayned to fynde, at theyr propre costis, an hundred men of armys, ŷ whyche, contrary theyr liberties, with a condycion, that after that daye it shulde be no presedent, they seynt vnto Portchestre. In this season and passe tyme, the quene with syr Edwarde hyr sone, with a small cõpany of Englysshe men and a crewe of Henauders, of ŷ which syr Iohñ of Henawde the erles brother was capytayne, toke shyppynge in those parties, and had the wynde so fauorable vnto them, that they landyd in Englonde at a porte called Orwell besyde Harwych in Suffolke, the. xxv. daye of Septembre, ẅout any resistens of men of warre ageyne hyr made: to whom after hyr lãdyng, the people of ŷ coũtre drewe to her by great cõpanyes, and so sped hyr towarde London. At this tyme of the quenes thus landyng, the kynge was at his cytie of Londõ; but when he harde of the greate people that drewe to hyr owt of all cuntres, he fered: wherfore in safegardynge of hym selfe, he fled with a small companye to warde Walys, and lefte master Walter Stapyltõ bisshop of Excetyr behynde hym, to haue the rule of the cytie of Lõdon. It was not long after the kynges departynge, that the quene sent a lettre vnto the mayre and comynaltye of the cytie, and requyred of theym ayde to subdue ŷ oppressours of the comon weale of the realme; but to that lettre was made noone answere; therefore she wrote the secõde tyme, aduertyzynge them of theyr landynge, and of the entent that she had to refourme the enormytees & mysgouernance of the lande, in admonestynge theym of theyr ayde and socoure, as by the tenure of ŷ sayd lettre more playnlye apperyth: where of the cyrcumstaunce I haue lefte out of this booke, for so moche as I fynde varyaunce in the contentys thereof, and also for the copyes thereof bene sette out in the Cronyclys of Englande, and dyuers other bokes. Thẽ this sayd lettre was tacked vpõ ŷ crosse in Chepe, whiche at that daye was called the newe crosse, in the nyght before the day of seynt Denys, or the. ix. daye of October, and other copyes of the same were fastenyd in dyuerse other places of the cytie, whereof one was fastened vpon the mayres gate. After which letters thus publysshed in the cytie, the bysshop of Exetyr, to whom as before is sayde the kynge had commytted the rule of the cytie, sent vnto the mayer to haue the kayes of the gates of the cytie, by vertue of his cõmyssyon, by the whiche he stode so fermely, & vsed so sharpe wordes in the kynges name, that varyaunce grewe atwene hym & the cytezens, so ferfourthe that the cõmons of the cytie in theyr rage, toke ŷ sayde bysshoppe, the. xiiii. day of Octobre, and hym with. ii. of his howsholde esquyers, behedyd vnreuerẽtly at ŷ stãdard in Weschepe; and the same daye was takyn for a spye a cytezyn callyd Ihñ Marshall, which fauourid ŷ Spẽsers partye, and in the same place also behedyd without processe of lawe: & thẽ the corps of the sayde bysshop ẅ his. ii. seruauntys, were haryed to Thamys syde, where the sayd bysshop had begunne to edyfye a toure, & there in the rubbusshe & sande of the same, they buryed or conueyed these. iii[or]. bodyes: whiche dispyte to hym was doone, after some auctours, for so moche as he had vsurpyd of the comon grounde of ŷ cytie, in settynge of the sayd towre; but for what cause was he thus vngoodly & vnreuerẽtly delte ẅ, no mẽcion is made. And i this passe tyme, ŷ quene easyly & a foote pace folowyd ŷ kyng, which by this season was cõmyn to Brystowe, hauynge with hym the Spensers & his dyffamed chañceller Mayster Robert Baldocke, syr Iohñ erle of Arũdell and other, where, by theyr counsaylles it was agreed, that syr Roger[1] Hugh Spenser the fader shuld remayne there, and haue the rule of the towne and castell, while the kynge ẅ the other toke shyppynge, and sayled from thens into Wales, to rayse the Welshemen; and so the kynge with syr Hugh Spenser the sone, and the other toke shyppynge

[1] auretye. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] iiii. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

at Brystowe, and so saylyd into Walys. Whē the certayntie thereof came vnto ỹ quene, anon she sent to Brystowe the erle of Kent the kyngys brother, syr Iohñ of Henawde, with dyuerse other, for to take syr Hugh Spenser the father, the which put them in such deuour, that they toke the sayde syr Hughe, and lefte a certayne to holde the towne and castell, tyll the quene with hir powar came thyther: in the whiche tyme they sped them into Walys, and in processe tooke the kynge, his chaunceller, the erle of Arundell, & syr Hugh Spenser the sone, and brought them all to the towne of Hereforde. And i this whyle the cytezyns of Lōdō wanne ỹ Towre of Lōdō, & kepte it vnto ỹ enemyes vse.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxvi.

Gylbert Moordon.

Rycharde Betayne[1]. Anno. xix.

Iohñ Cotton[2].

IN this. xix. yere, & begynnyng of this mayres charge, vpon the morowe folowynge the feest of Symon and Iude, the same day that the mayer rode to Westmynster to take his charge, the same daye, at Bristowe, was syr Hugh Spenser the fadyr, put to deth, and after buryed at Wynchestre; and vpō seynt Huys[3] day folowynge, or the. xviii. daye
Fol. lxxxx. of Nouēbre, was syr Hugh his sone, drawen, hangyd and quarteryd at Herforde, and his hed sent to London, & set amonge other vpon the brydge. The comon fame of hym went, that after he was takyn he wolde take noo maner of sustenaunce, wherfore he was ỹ sooner put vnto deth. Of this Hugh a vercyfyer made theyse two versys folowynge.

Funis cum lignis a te miser, ensis et ignis,
Hugo securis, equus abstulit omne decus.

Whiche versys to them that vnderstande no Laten, maye in this wyse be expownyd or Englysshyd.

With ropes were thou bounde and on the gallowe honge,
And from thy body thyne hed with swerde was kytte,
Thy bowellys in the fyre were throwe and burnyd longe,
Thy body in. iiii. pecys eke with an axe was slytte,
With horse before drawyn, fewe men pyteynge it.
Thus with these turmentys, for thy synnys sake,
From the wretchyd Hugh all wordly welthe was take.

IN this meane tyme and season the kynge was conueyed vnto the castell of Kenelworthe, and there kepte vnder the garde of syr Henry of Lancastre, or brother vnto the erle Thomas of Lācastre, that was behedyd at Pounfrette; & master Robert Baldoke, the kynges chaūceler, was sent vnto London, and put into ỹ pryson of Newgate, were after he dyed myserably. The erle, Iohñ of Arundell, was also put to deth at Herforde, within. iiii. dayes of syr Hugh the yonger Spencer. Thē the quene, with syr Edwarde hyr sone, & w a goodly cōpany of lordys & gētylmen retournyd vnto London, and there of ỹ cytezyns with great honoure & ioye was receyuyd, [vpon the daye of seynt Barbara][4] or the. iiii. daye of Decembre, and so conueyed vnto Westmynster, where in the octaues of the Epyphany of our Lorde a parlyament was holden: durynge ỹ whiche certayne solempne messyngers were sent vnto the kyng to the castell of Kenelworth, ỹ is to saye. iii. bysshopp-

[1] *Above the name of* Richard Betayn *the* MS. *has that of* Hamond Chykwell: *and in the margin,* "Md. that the within namyd Hamond Chykwell, mayer, was dyscharged abowth the landyng of the quene, and that othir chesyn for hym." [2] Conton. edit. 1559. [3] Hugh's, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1559.

is.

is. iii. erlys. ii. abbottys. ii. baronys, and. ii. iustycis, with the procuratoure of that parlyamēt syr Wyllyā Trussell, to depose hym of all kynglye dygnyte, as before was agreed by all the lordis spirituell and temporell & cōmons of ȳ sayd parlyamēt, & they to resygne vnto ȳ kyng all homagys & feawtyes to hym before made, in ȳ name of all the barony of Englāde. The ȳ fore named syr Wyllyam Trussell, vpon the daye of ȳ cōuersyon of seynt Pawle, or ȳ. xxv. day of Ianuarii, by the auctoryte of his offyce, in the presence of the fore sayde lordys, had theyse wordys folowynge vnto the kynge: "I Wyllyam Trussel, in the name of all men of this lande of Englāde, & procuratour of this parlyament, resygne to ȳ Edwarde ȳ homage that was made to ȳ some tyme, & frome this tyme forth depryue the of all kyngly powar, & I shall neuer be attendaunt vnto the as kynge after this tyme." And thus was Edwarde the secōde deposyd and his sone made kyng, when he had reygned full. xviii. yeres. vi. monethes & odde dayes. Than Edwarde thus remaynynge in pryson as fyrste in the castell of Kenelworth, and after in the castell of Barkle, tooke great repentaunce of his former lyfe, and made a lamentable complaynt for that he hadde so greuously offendyd God; whereof a parte I haue after sette out, but not all, leste it shulde be tedyous to the reders or herers.

Dampnum michi contulit tempore brumali
Fortuna satis aspera vehementis mali.
Nullus est tam sapiens, mitis, aut formosus,
Tam prudens virtutibus, ceterisq; famosus,
Quin stultus reputabitur et satis dispectus
Si fortuna prosperos auertat effectus.

Theyse, with many other after the same makynge, I haue seen, which are reportyd to be of his owne makynge in the tyme of his enprysonement; the whiche, for lengthe of tyme, I haue lefte out of this werke, and shewyd the effecte of them in Englysshe, as folowyth.

Whan Saturne with his colde isy face
The grounde with his frostys turnyth the grene to whyte,
The tyme of wynter which trees doth deface
And causyth all verdure to a voyde quyte:
Than fortune, whiche sharpe was with stormys not alyte,
Hath me assautyd with hir frowarde wyll,
And me beclypped with daungeours right yll.

What man in this worlde is so wyse or fayre,
So prudent, so vertuose, or famous vnder thayre,
But that for a foole, and for a man dyspysed,
Shalbe take, whan fortune is from hym deuyded?

Alas now I crye, but no man doth me moone,
For I sue to them that pytye of me haue noone.
Many with great honours I dyd whylom auaunce,
That nowe with dyshonoure doon me stynge and launce;
And such as some tyme dyd me greatly feere,
Me dyspyse and let not with sclaunder me to deere.

O mercyfull God, what loue they dyd me shewe!
And with[1] detraccion they do me hacke and hewe.
Alas, moste synfull wretche, why shulde I thus complayne,
If God be pleasyd that I shulde thus[2] susteyne
For the great offence before by me doone?

[1] Now with. MS. [2] this. MS.

Wherefore to the good Lorde I wyll retourne efte soone,
And hooly cõmytte me thy great mercy vntyll,
And take in pacyence all that may be thy wyll;
And all onely the serue with all dylygence.
Alas! that before this tyme I had not that cence.
But nowe good Lorde, which arte omnypotent,
Beholde me mooste wretchyd and greatly penytent;
And of my trespace forgyuenes thou me graunt,
And by what sorowe my carkes is now daunt,
Graunt it may be to my sowle remedy,
That the sooner I may attayne[1] it by:
For to the swete Ihesu I yelde my[2] sore wepynge,
And aske of the pardon for my greuouse synnynge.

Fol. lxxxvi.

Moost blessyd Ihesu
Roote of all vertue,
Graunt I may the sue
In all humylyte;

Sen thou for our good
Lyste to shede thy blood,
And stretche the vpon the rood
For our iniquite.

[And thou moost mylde mother and vyrgyn moost pure,
That barest swete Ihesu, the worldys redempture,
That shynyst and florysshest as flowre moost sure;
And lyke as nardus of his swete odoure,
Passyth all other, so thou in all honoure,
Surmountys all sayntis, by thy great excellence,
Wherefore to praye for my greuouse offence.][3]

I the beseche,
Moost holsome leche,
That thou wylte seche,
For me suche grace.

That[4] my body vyle
My sowle shall exyle,
Thou brynge in short whyle
It in rest and peace[5].

LEwys the. xi. of that name, and sone vnto Phylyp le Beawe, or the. iiii. Phylyp, began his reygne ouer ŷ realme of Fraunce in the yere of our Lorde. M.CCC. and xv., & the. viii. yere of the seconde Edwarde, then kynge of Englonde. Anon as this Lewys was crownyd, Enguerram, which, as ye before haue hard, was chefe and moost secrete counceyloure with Phylyp the. iiii. last kynge of Fraunce, was callyd to accompte by the meane of Charlys de Valoys, vncle vnto this kynge; and for so moche as the sayd Enguerram had geuen sharpe and hastye wordys vnto the sayde Charlys, in affyrmyng ŷ moche of the kynges treasoure remayned in ŷ handys of the sayd Charlys, for this he toke so

[1] thy grace atteyn. MS. [2] me. MS. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. [4] that when. edit. 1538. 1542. 1559. [5] solace. MS.

great displeasure agayne the sayd Enguerram, and bare towarde hym suche rancoure and malyce, that he lefte not tyll he hadde bereuyd hym of his lyfe; so that in processe he was accusyd of. xxxvi. artycles, concernynge treason and iniury doone vnto kynge Phylyp foresayde, and vnto the realme of Fraunce; the which artycles in ordre are sete out in the Frensh Cronycle, which I here ouerpasse. By force wherof this Enguerram was lastly conuycte and iudgyd vnto dethe, and for the same in the euyn of the Assencion of our Lorde, hangyd vpon the gibet of Paris. This yere also fell great scarcete of corne and frute in Fraũce, by meane of vnsesonable wederynge as was in Englande in the. ix. and. x. yerys, (and before & after,) of the reygne of Edwarde the seconde at this daye and then kyng of Englande; by reason wherof great famyne and deth of poore people fell in Fraunce, as it then dyd in Englonde. Ye haue before, in the. xxvii. yere of Phylyp, father vnto this Lewys, harde howe the Flemyngys agayne rebellyd, and howe by the meane of Enguerrā the Frenshe hooste was then retournyd w dyshonoure into Fraũce. For reuẽgement wherof, this Lewys assemblyd a right stronge armye of the moꝛe partye of all the noble men of Fraunce, and in the monyth of Septẽbre entryd the countrey of Flaunders, & so came vnto the towne, or here there vnto, callyd Courtray, & lodgyd his people nere vnto the ryuer of Lys or Lyse, for so moche as the brydgys ouer that ryuer by the Flemyngys were brokyn; where the kyng with his hooste so lyinge, the Flemyngys vpon the other syde laye in howge noumbre for to defende the passage of the Frenshemen: in whiche tyme and season fell suche plente of rayne, ẏ the wayes waxyd noyous and foule in all that countrey; by reason whereof vytayll, which thā was, as aboue is sayd, scant, was than more scars, and ouer ẏ, the feelde where the hooste laye, was so wete and myry, that men and bestys were to greuoslye noyed. Wherefore in conclusyon, the kynge, consyderynge those great hynderauncys and harmys to his lordys and comons, and that he myght in no maner wynne ouer to his enemyes, he retournyd, as other before tymes hadde doone, with lytyll honoure into Fraunce, to the great losse of the kynges ordenaunce, and other stuffe that myght not be caryed thens, by reason of depenes of the waye; for whiche cause and causys the kynge was so soore dyspleasyd, that he made then a great othe, that if he myght lyue tyll the yere folowynge, that he shuld besette so the Flemyngys that they shulde not escape his daũger, and that he shuld neuyr take treatye nor ende with them, excepte they wolde fullye and holy put them in his grace and mercy. But in the yere folowynge, about the Feest of Pentecoste, when the sayde Lewys had scantlye reygned two yeres, he dyed at Boys in Vyncent, and the. vi. daye of Iunii honorablye was buryed at Seynt Denyze, leuynge after hym none issue male; wherefore his brother Phylyp succedyd hym in the kyngedome.

PHylyp the. v. of that name, and brother of the fore namyd Lewys, which for his heyth was surnamyd Phylyp the longe, beganne his reygne ouer the Frẽshemen in the yere of our Lorde. M.CCC. and. xvii. & the. x. yere of Edwarde ẏ seconde thā kyng of Englande. But first he reygned but as regent of Fraunce, for so moche as Clemence, the wyfe of kynge Lewys, was lefte of hir sayde husbonde with chylde, the whiche in processe of tyme was delyuered of a man chylde named Iohn̄, ẏ dyed shortlye after. After whose deth the sayde Phylyp was forthwith proclaymed kynge of Fraũce, & crowned at Paryze about Cristmas folowinge: albe it, that the duke of Burgoyn with other for a whyle withsayde that coronacion, and wolde haue preferryd the doughter of Lewys last dede; but other of the lordys & nobles of Fraũce wolde not be agreable, that a woman shulde enheryte so great a kyngedome: by meane whereof vnkyndenesse kyndelyd atwene the kynge and the sayde duke, but by wyse medyatours they were after accordyd, in suche wyse, that the sayd duke maryed ẏ eldest doughter of ẏ kynge. In this passe tyme, such meanys were made by the Flemyngys that an vnyte and accorde was stablysshed atwene Fraunce and them for the tyme that it helde, whiche peace, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, was laboured and endyd by a cardynall named Iosselyn, and sent frome the. *Fol. lxxxxii.*

xxii. Iohñ, then pope[1], soo that by medyacyon of the sayde cardynall, the erle of Flaunders was resayued vnto the kynges grace, & at Parys dyd vnto the Frēshe kynge his homage, & sware vnto hym feawtye. In ỹ thyrde yere of ỹ reygne of thys Phylyp, the prouoste of Parize hauynge in his prysone a Pycarde, a man of great rychesse, which for felony or lyke cryme was iugyd to be hāgyd, the sayde prouoste, for great benefyght to hym doone, and payment of great sūmys by ỹ sayd Picarde, toke another poore innocēt man & put hym to deth instede of the sayde Pycarde; of which offence, whan due profe of it was made before the kynges counceyll, the sayde prouoste for ỹ same dede was put vnto lyke iugement. In the. v. yere of the sayd Phylyp all the lazaris of the coūtrey of Langadocke were brent, for so moche as they were accusyd of theyr owne confessyon prouyd, that they had poysonyd, and entendyd to haue poysoned all the wellys of that countrey; & for many Iewys were vnto theym consentynge, therefore many of them sufferyd lyke iugemēt. In this yere also, for so moche as in those dayes, ī dyuerse placis of Fraunce, a fonde prophecye was broughte vp amonge the comon people that shepherdys and herdys shulde wynne the Holy Lande; and then they assemblyd themselfe in dyuerse placys and companyes, and lastly came to guyder at Parys, where they were so many in noumbre, by reason of other of the comon people that fell vnto them, that the prouoste of Parys was not of power to withstande theym, soo that they breke prysons and toke out suche personys as them pleasyd, and from thens went beggynge & robbynge tyll they came into Langadocke, where they fell vpon the Iewys and robbyd them of all suche mouables as they myght fynde, & slewe of them also. Wherefore the other of the Iewys ferynge the sayde comons, gatheryd them with theyr wyuys & chyldren to the noūbre of. v. C. into a towre, and thought to defende them and theyr wyues and chyldren from the sayde herdys; but anon, as they hadde wyttynge thereof, they assawtyd the sayde towre so egyrly, that in the ende, seyng they myght not escape, for very despyte they threwe theyr chyldren downe at theyr fiedys, & after slewe eyther other for they shulde not falle in the handys of theyr enemyes, or ellys to auoyde ỹ paynys of the fyre whiche the herdys hadde begunne to fasten vpon the sayd towre. When the sayd heerdys hadde thus robbyd and slayne the Iewys of Langadocke, they departyd thens, & yode towarde a countrey callyd Carcasson, entēdynge lyke robbery as they before had vsed; whereof the countrey beynge warnyd, stoppyd & kepte so the passagys, & withstode them with suche powar and strengthe, that they desseueryd theymselfe by small companyes, soo that many of them were taken and hangyd, and the other fled in sauegardyng themselfe, and so this folysshe prophecy was endid with synne & shame. Kyng Phylyp, by meane of ille counceyll, sette a great taske vpon his cōmons, that is to meane, the fyfthe parte of theyr mouable goodys; for the whiche, consyderynge he had no charge of warris in no place, they murmuryd & grudgyd wonder soore. But how it was, or this taxe were leuyed, he fell ī a feuer quarteyne and a great flyxe, whiche sykenesse fell vpon hym by prayer of the cōmons, after the Frenshe boke, for leueying of the sayd greuouse taxe. Than for hym was made many solempne precessyons and other prayers; howe be it, in longe processe he dyed, whan he hadde languysshed frome the begynnynge of August tyll the. viii. daye of Iannarii, vpon whiche daye he dyed, whan he hadde reygned vpon. iiii. yeres and. vii. monethes and odde dayes, leuynge after hym noone heyre male, wherefore the crowne dyscendyd vnto his brother Charlys erle of the Marches.

Caroli Quinti.

Francia. CArolus the. v. or Charlys ỹ yongest of ỹ. iii. bretherne, or sonys of Phylyp le Beawe, began his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in ỹ moneth of Ianuarii, and yere of our Lorde. M.CCC. and. xxii. and the. xv. yere of the seconde Edwarde, yet kyng of Englonde,

[1] Byssshoppe of Rome. edit. 1542.

& was

& was crownyd at Raynes the. xii. daye of Februarii nexte ensuynge; after whiche solempnyte fynysshed & endyd, he in short processe of tyme after, sent vnto the. xxii. Iohñ, thã pope[1], and assertayned hym of ỹ gossyprede ỹ was atwene hym & Blanche his wyfe, whereof[2] the examynacyon by the sayde pope[1] was cõmytted vnto ỹ bysshoppis of Parys, & of Beauuays, & master Godfrey de Plessys, prothonothayr of ỹ courte of Rome; ỹ whiche, after due & perfyte examynacion in that mater made, they founde ỹ Mawde, coũtesse of Artoys, and mother to the forenamyd quene Blanche, was godmother vnto ỹ kyng Charlys hir husbõde, of ỹ whiche, whã they had made report vnto ỹ pope[1], he gaue sentẽce ỹ the sayd matrymony was not legyttimat, & cõmaũdid a deuorce & a separacion to be made atwene those. ii. persons, ỹ which was shortly after executyd. In ỹ secõde yere of this Charlys dyed Robert erle of Flaũders, without issue, wherefore ỹ sayde erledam fell into the Frenshe kynges handys; so that of it he was in processe, by thagrement of ỹ lordys of the same, put in peasyble possessyon: albe it the erle of Neuers made thereunto a pretẽce and tytle. And in this yere kyng Charlys, about the feest of seynt Mathewe, in Septembre, maryed his secõde wyfe, namyd Mary, the syster of the kynge of Bohemy or Beme, & doughter of Henry, erle of Lucenbourgh, and late emperoure of Almayn, namyd in the lyne of the emperours Hẽry the. viii., or after some wryters, the. vii. Also in the sayd yere one namyd Iourdan of ỹ Ile, a Gascoyne borne, [and a man of noble lynage, but lowe][3] & vyle of condycyon, to whom the foresayde pope Iohñ[4], in maryage had geuen his nyese for reuerence of his byrthe, this season, by the meane of his vyle cõdycyons, and suche dyshoneste companye as he drewe vntyll hym, he fell into many and sclaunderous vycys, so that lastlye he was accusyd of rape & murdre and of felony, of the whiche he was at length in. xviii. artycles by due profe made, conuycte by ỹ lawe, and iugyd to be hanged; but the kynge, at the requeste of the pope[5] and for the honoure of his bloode, grauntyd to hym a chartyr, & pardonyd hym of all former transgressyons. But that not withstandyng, he ĩ processe of tyme fell or retournyd vnto his olde accustomyd cõdycyons, and amonge other great crymes by hym executyd, he slewe a sergeaunt of armys belongynge to the kynge, ỹ to hym was sent in message, for which murdre and other detestable dedys he was newelye accusyd, and vpon that somonyd to apere at Parys before the kynge & his coũceyll, at which daye of apparence he came to the sayde cytie w̃ a great companye & some noblemen which were to hym nere of kynne, and excusyd hym to the vttermooste of theyr powars: but agayn hym & to accuse hym came many other lordys and baronys, of ỹ which the marquys of Ampton or Dampton, with his sone, were chefe, that put causys of cõplaynt agayne hym; ỹ which made such prouys and declaracyons agayne the sayde Iourdan, that he was cõmytted vnto the chastelet of Parys, & there to remayne as a prysoner; and in processe of tyme, suche maters & trespaces prouyd vpon hym, that he, by auctoryte of a parlyament holdyn at Compeyng, was lastlye iugyd to dye, and soone after, that is to meane, the. vii. day of Maii, he was drawyn to the gibbet of Parys and there hãgyd. In the thyrde yere of his reygne, this Charlys gaue vnto the erle of Neuers, that before tyme hadde made clayme to the erledam of Flaunders, the sayde erledam, the whiche of the Flemynges and inhabytauntys of that countrey was wele and ioyouslye receyuyd. Than he in short whyle after gaue vnto the townys of Gaunt, Brugys, Ipre and other, dyuerse pryuylegys and grauntys to theyr great auaũtage & profyte. But it was not longe after ỹ he wañe of them as moche grudge & hatred as he to fore hadde loue & good wyll, & all for a taxe that he sette vpõ ỹ dwellers of Brugys, and the countrey nere there vnto, & specially of them that dwellyd in ỹ coũtrey; for they thought ỹ theyr charge excedyd farre the charge of the dwellers w̃in the towne. Wherefore by secret meanys they appoynted a daye of assemble amonge theymselfe, & sodeynly well armyd entryd ỹ towne of Brugys, & slewe therin dyuerse of

Fol. lxxxviii.

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. bisshop of Rome. edit. 1542.
[2] wherefore. edit. 1542. 1559.
[3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542.
[4] Iohn
[5] bisshope of Rome. edit. 1542.

ŷ erlys seruauntys, & some of the borough maisters of the sayde towne, suche as they suspectyd to be of counceyll of the leuyinge of the sayde taske[1]. In the. iiii. yere of his reygne this Charlys, after ŷ deth of Mary, his seconde wyfe, by dyspensacion of the pope the. xxii. Iohñ[2], he maryed Iane his cosyn germayne, the doughter of Lewys erle of Enroux, & vncle vnto this kynge Charlys, or brother to his father Phylyp le Beawe.

IN this abouesayde iiii. yere, the quene of Englãde, and syster vnto this kyng Charlis, came ito Fraũce to treate an vnyte & peace atwene hir lorde and hir brother, for the warre made in Gascoyne, as before is touchyd in the. xv[t]. yere of Edwarde the seconde, hir lorde and husbande, & there taryed, and retourned, as aboue in the sayde yere is expressyd. In this yere also the erle of Flaunders forenamyd, for suspeccyon that he had to Robert of Flaunders his vncle, lest he for his synguler auauntage wolde supplant hym of that erledam, he made letters vnto the gouernours of the towne where ŷ sayde Robert was ressyaũt & abydyng that they shuld put hym to deth; but by the warnyng of his olde & trusty frende the erlys[4] chaunceller, he was warnyd, and so auoydid ŷ towne. For this, great malyce and rancoure arose betwene this Roberte and the erle, whiche was not shortelye pacyfyed. But it was not longe after that a nother taxe or imposycyon was leuyed of the townys of Gaunt, Brugis, Ipre, and other townys of Flaũders, the which taxe was leuyed in recompensement of suche warris made vpon Flaunders by Phylyp le Beawe, or more dyrectlye for paymẽt of. xii. M.*li.* awardyd by Ioselyn ŷ cardenall, as before is shewid in the seconde yere of the. v. Phylyp, that the Flemynges shulde paye to the Frenshe kynge for byinge of theyr peace. Of this taxe to be leuyers or gaderers was assygned ŷ pryncypall men of the sayd townes, the which, by theyr demeanure in ŷ leuyinge therof, demeanyd them in such wyse that they ranne in great hatred of the cõmon people, in so moche that they accusyd theym & sayd, ŷ they had leuyed or gatheryd moche more than the sayd taxe amoũtid; wherefore they desyred of the erlys coũceyll that the sayd personys myght be callyd to accoũpte: but this request myghte not be opteynyd, which causyd the cõmons to runne in further grudge and murmure. An other thynge also causyd suspeccion; for ŷ erlys coũceyll and the sayde collectours had so many secret assembles. At length, whan the erlys counceyll appersayued the murmure of the comons, the which ŷ collectours cõdyssendyd for a trayne to haue takyn certeyne capytaynys of the sayde cõmons, that at Tournay, at a daye assygned, the sayde collectours shuld yelde vp theyr accoũpte; at which daye, the erle in propre persone, came vnto the sayd towne of Tournay, & there, whan the erle with the other of his coũceyll shulde haue executyd theyr purposyd entẽt, how it was by some warnyng or monycyon that the cõmons had, they withstoode the erle and his companye, and in the ende slew many of theyr enemyes, and toke the erle and put hym in sure kepynge within the towne of Brugys; but ī this skyrmysshe, by mean of the erlys partye, a great parte of the foresayd towne was brent: wherefore the towne toke partye with ŷ Flemyngys, and were a great cause that ŷ erle was so takyn and put from his entent. Than the foresayd cõmons, to the more displeasure of ŷ erle, admytted for theyr lorde and capytayne, Robert, the vncle of the erle foresayde, & amõge them reputed hym for erle of Flaundris; the which so takynge vpon hym delyueryd from pryson his frẽde ŷ erlys chaũceler, whiche, as aboue is sayde, had delyueryd hym from former daũger, and made hym chefe of his counceyll. But to all this was the towne of Gaunt repugnaunt, in so moche ŷ mortall warre begañe to sourde atwene ŷ sayd towne and the towne of Brugys and other, & so farfourthe contynued, that, shortlye after, the people of Gaunt and of the other townys mette with theym of Bruges in playne batayll, and fought cruelly; but in the ende they of Gaunt chasyd them of Brugys, and slewe of theym beyonde. v.C. men, but yet the erle was neuer the rather delyueryd. After this ŷ Frenshe

Fol. lxxxviii.

[1] Taxe. edit. 1542. [2] of the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] xvii. MS. [4] dukes. MS.

kynge

kynge sent vnto them of Brugys, requyrynge theym in curtoyse maner, that they wolde sette theyr erle at lybertie; but they sent the messangers agayne without spede of theyr message. In this whyle dyed Charlis de Valoyes brother vnto Phylyp le Beawe, & vncle vnto this kynge Charlys, the which lāguysshid lōge in a cōsūpcion or he dyed; in so moche ỹ the opynyon of the people was, ỹ he was so punysshid for ỹ iniury & malyce that he bare towarde Engwerram, the which, as ye haue before harde, in the firste yere of this kynge was put vnto deth; & the rather this fame ranne vpon the sayd Charlys, for so moche as in ỹ tyme of his syckenes he gaue great almesse, and to suche personys as he gaue or sent his almesse vnto, he wyllyd them as wele to praye for ỹ sowle of ỹ sayd Engwerram, as for his owne hele. This Charlys de Valoyes lefte after hym a sone namyd Phylyp de Valoyes, the whiche Phylyp, for soo moche as this Charlys, nowe kynge of Fraunce, dyed without issue, he by fauoure of the lordys of that regyon was made kyng of Fraunce, and put by the ryght and tytle of Edwarde the thyrde, thā kyng of Englāde, ỹ sone of Issabell, & doughter of Phylyp le Beawe, which Isabell by dyssent was rightfull enherytour of the crowne of Fraūce: for which tytle was after cruell warre atwene the sayde Edwarde and Phylyp, as in the story of the sayde Edwarde after shall apere. In ỹ. v. yere of kyng Charlys, the burghmasters and skepyns, that is to meane ỹ rulers of the towne of Brugys, delyuered theyr erle and sette hym at large, vpon certayne condycions folowynge, the whiche to be obseruyd they causyd hym to be solemply sworne: firste ỹ after that day he shulde not punysshe nor hurt any of ỹ lāde of Flaūders, for any displeasure to hym doone or any of his seruaūtes, or coūceyll them sen the tyme that he was erle, concernyng any cause of theyr rebellyon; secūdaryly, that he shuld not abrydge nor mynysshe any of theyr lyberties ỹ they of olde tyme haue had, or by hym newely to thē graūtyd; thyrdlye, that in all grose maters that concernyd the gouernaunce of his realme, suche as he knewe well dyuerse of them to be experte therein, that he shuld noo thynge conclude or doo wout theyr aduyces and assentis; and fourthlye, ỹ after that day he shuld neuyr vse the coūceyll of the abbot of Versellaye, whiche they knewe for theyr dedely enemy, for so moch as they before tyme had slayne his father named Petyr Floce or Floze, in the batayll of Courtray, as ī the. xvi. yere of Phylyp le Beawe is before shewyd, how be it the name of the sayd Petyr is not there expressyd: after whiche artycles with other fermely by the erle promysyd to be kepte & holdyn, he was delyuered and sette at large. In the. vi. yere of the reygne of this Charlys, a great dyssencyon and varyaunce arose atwene the dolphyn of Vyen and the duke of Sauoy, so that mortall batayll ensuyd vpon the same, in the whiche moche people were slayne vpon bothe partyes; but in the ende the dolphyn of Vyen had the better, and toke, as prysoners in the feelde, the duke of Burgoyne & the erle of Ancerne, with other noble men. In this yere also, the Gascoynys w̄ the Englysshemen made warre vpon the borders of Fraunce, agayne whome kynge Charlys sent a cosyn of his namyd syr Alphons de Spayne, but he spent the kynge great good, & retournyd w̄ lytle worshyp into Fraūce, where he dyed shortlye after. Then the kyng sent agayne the sayd Gascoynys ỹ erle of Ewe & syr Robert Barthram than marshall of Fraūce, with dyuerse other noble men. In whiche season the Gascoynys with the sayde Englysshe men had gotten the castell of a towne standynge in the countre of Poyteawe or Poytyers, namyd Seynt Oyngne, within whiche towne the sayde erle & other ỹ noblys of Fraūce were lodgyd, so that atwene them daylye cruell assautys were exercysed, to the great hurte of bothe partyes; lastly atwene them was a daye of batayle in playne feelde accordyd, where the Frēshe men, to the entent to haue the aduaūtage of the sayd feelde, and there to enbatayll themselfe to theyr moost auaūtage, the day of the sayde appoyntement issuyd of[1] the towne and to ỹ place assygned, which was a good dystaunce from the foresayd towne, & there

[1] owte of. MS.

taryed

taryed theyr enemyes; but the Gascoynys entendynge an other purpose, yoode streyght vnto the foresayde towne, and knowyng it to be without great deffence, assautyd & shortlye gatte it, and sette it on fyre, not sparyng churchis nor other places of relygyon, as affermyth the Frenshe booke, & that doon retournyd vnto the foresayde castell, & i processe of tyme after retournyd agayn into Guyan. Whan kyng Charlys was assertaynyd of this delusyon, he was greuouslye dyscõtentyd agayne the Gascoynes, and manyssyd them veray sore; but in the monyth of Decembre shortlye ensuynge, he was takyn with a greuouse sykenesse, so that he dyed vpon Candelmas euyn folowynge at Boys in Vyncent, and was enterrid at Seynt Denyse, whã he had reygned. v. yeres and odde dayes, leuynge after hym none heyre of his body; excepte the quene was than with chylde, which chylde dyed soone after the byrthe; wherefore some questyons for that kyngedome were mouyd, as before is towchid in ỹ ende of the. iiii. yere of this Charlys, & after shalbe forther expressyd.

Edwardi Tertii[1].

EDwarde, the. iii. of that name, and sone of Edwarde ỹ seconde and of Isabell the allonly doughter & chylde of Phylyppe le Beawe, or Phylyp the fayre, father to Charlys laste kyng of Fraũce, began to reygne as kynge of Englande, his father yet lyuynge, the. xxvi. daye of Ianuarii, in the ende of the yere of grace. M.CCC. and. xxvi. and the. iiii. yere of Charlys the. v. laste kyng of Fraũce, & was crownyd at Westmynster vpon the day of the Puryfycacion of our Lady nexte ensuynge. In his begynnynge came forth plente and gracyous happys, for the erthe toke plente, the ayre tempour, the see quyetnesse, and to the churche grewe peace. In his fyrste yere he confermyd ỹ lybertyes & fraunchyses of the cytie of London, & ordeyned that the mayre for the tyme be-
Fol. lxxxxv. ynge, shuld sytte in all places of iugement within the lybertye of the same for chefe iustyce, the kynges parsone onelye excepte, & that euery aldreman that had ben mayre, shulde be iustyce of peace in all Lõdon & Myddelsex, & euerych aldreman that hadde not be mayre shuld be iustyce of peace within his owne warde: also he grauntyd to the cytezyns the fee ferme of Lõdon for. CCC.*li.* & that they shulde not be cõstrayned to goo out of the cytie to fyghte or defende the lãde, for any nede: also ỹ after that daye the fraunchyse of the cytie shulde not be seasyd into the kynges handys, but onely for treason or rebellyon done by the hole cytie: and Southwerke was admyttyd to be vnder the correccyon & rule of the cytye, & the mayre of Lõdon to be baylyffe of Southwerke, & ỹ mayre to chose and ordeyne such a baylyffe of ỹ borough as hym lykyth, which ordenaũce enduryth to this day. In ỹ monyth of Aprell, for so moche as means were made by ỹ frere prechours, or ỹ blacke freres, for the delyuery of kynge Edwarde the. ii. out of pryson, therfore he was had out of the castell of Kenelworth, & cõueyed vnto the castell of Berkeley; where after, about seynt Mathewys tyde, the sayd Edwarde, by the meanys of syr Roger Mortymer, was myserably slayne. Of this Edwarde are lyke opynyons as were of Thomas of Lancastre, whiche I referre to Goddys iugement, for certeyne it is that for his former wylde and insolent lyuynge he tooke great repentaunce, and so he had great cause, for durynge his reygne there was hedyd & put to deth by iugement vpon. xxviii. baronys and knyghtys, ouer ỹ noble men that were slayne in Scotlande by his infortunyte. Kyng Edwarde as yet beynge of tender age, not passyng. xv. yeres, heryng of the great pryde & presũpcion of the Scottys, & howe they dayly warryd vpõ ỹ borders & entryd ỹ lãde in breñyng & spoylyng his people, assẽbled his people about Easter, & so sped hym towarde Scotlãde; i which mean tyme the Scottys were entryd

[1] *Here the Museum* MS. *adds,*
Richard Betayn Goldsmith. Rychard Rothyng. Roger Chawntclere. Anno primo.

the

the lāde, and were comyn as farre as Stanhop in Viridale, and had lodgyd theym in the woddys of Stanhop parke in dyuerse busshementis; whereof the kynge beynge enfourmed, made suche prouysion that he be sette them rounde about, & trustyd well to haue broughte them vndre his subieccion: but when the kynge thoughte to be of theym mooste sure, by treason of some of his hoost the Scottis were clene escapyd, and retournyd in to Scotlande, whereof the fame ranne vpon syr Roger Mortymer; but howe so it was, the kynge loste that iournay, and retournyd into Englande with lytle worshyp. And here ye shall vnderstande ŷ to this daye the olde mayre & shryuys, that is to meane, Hamunde Chyckewell, Benet Fulham & Iohñ Canston[1] stode in offyce tyll the day folowyng of Symon & Iude, which was almoste ŷ full of the fyrste yere of ŷ sayd Edwarde the thyrde, and then for the resydue of ŷ firste yere, and for the more party of the secōde yere was electe, and chargyd the mayre and shryues folowynge,

Nota quomodo Scoti euaserūt parcum de Stanhope.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxvii.

Henry Darcy.

Rycharde Betayne. Anno. i.

Iohñ Hawteyne.

IN the ende of ŷ firste yere of this kynge Edwarde, & begynnynge of this mayres yere, the kynge after Crystemasse maryed dame Phylyppe, the erlys doughter of Henawde, in the cytie of Yorke, in the euyn of the Conuersyon of seynt Pawle, or the. xxiiii. daye of Ianuarii.

And soone after the kynge, about the feest of Pentecost, helde his parlyament at Northhampton, at the which parlyament by cuyll coūceyll, whereof syr Roger Mortymer & the olde quene bare the blame, the kynge made with the Scottis an vnprofetable and a dishonorable peace; for fyrst he releasyd to them theyr feauty & homage; also he delyueryd vnto them olde auncyent wrytynges sealyd with the sealys of the kynge of Scottys, and of dyuerse lordys of that lande, both spyrytuell and temporell, with many other chartyrs and patentis, by the whiche the kynges of Scottis oblygyd theym to be feodaryes vnto the crowne of Englande. At which season also was delyueryd certeyne iuellys whiche before tymes hadde ben wonne from the Scottys by kynges of Englande, amonge ŷ which ŷ blacke crosse of Scotlande is specyally namyd, a relyke accōptyd of great precyosyte, & not allonely the kynge, by his synystre coūceyll, lost his tytle and ryght that he had to the realme of Scotlande, as farre as the sayde counceyll myghte helpe it, but also all lōrdys and baronys, and all other men of Englande that had any lādys or rentys within Scotlāde, loste theyr ryght in lyke maner, excepte they wolde dwell vpō the sayd landys, and become the kyng of Scottis lyege men; and soone after was concludyd a maryage atwene Dauyd le Bruze sone of Robert le Bruze, and Iane the kyngys suster, whiche of dyuerse wryters is surnamed Iane of the Towre, or Iohan of Towirs.

Dauyd le Bruze kynge of Scottis.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxviii.

Symon Fraunces.

Hamonde Chyckewell[2]. Anno. ii.

Henry Combmartyn.

IN this yere, which at thys day was the seconde yere of the kynge Dauyd foresayd, the sone of Robert le Bruze thē kynge of Scottys, maryed vpō the day of Mary Magdaleyne, at his towne then of Berwyke, ŷ fore named Iane syster vnto ŷ kyng of Englande; but it was not lōge after or the Scottis in despyte of ŷ Englysh men, callyd hir Iane make

[1] *The* MS. *which appears to have been altered in an old hand, says* Rychard Bytan, Rychard Rothyng & Roger Chauntcleer. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer.

peace,

peace, and also to theyr more derysyon made dyuerse truffys, roundys, & songys, of the which one is specially remembryd as folowyth.

Longe beerdys hartles,
Paynted hoodys wytles,
Gay cotis graceles
Makyth Englande thryfteles.

Whiche ryme, as sayth Guydo, was made by the Scottys pryncypallye for the deformyte of clothynge that at those dayes was vsyd by Englysshemen. Thē the kynge at his parlyament holdyn at Salysbury, made syr Roger Mortymer erle of the Marche, and syr Iohn of Eltham his owne brother he made erle of Cornewayll, where after ỹ sayd syr Roger toke moche more vpon hym than other lordys wer contentyd with, so that by the kynges mother & hym all thyng was rulyd & guydyd, & such lordis as before tyme were assygned to haue the rule & guydynge of ỹ kyng, as ỹ erle of Kent syr Edmūde of Wodestok the kynges vncle, the erle of Lācastre, the erle Marshall, w̄ dyuerse bysshoppis & baronys, & knyghtys, to ỹ noūbre of. xii. the whiche in short processe of tyme, for the more party, were sette by, so that the allonely rule of the lāde restyd in the quene & the sayde syr Roger; by meane whereof many & great thynges of ỹ realme grewe out of ordre, which were tedyous to reherce.

Fol. lxxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxix.

Rycharde Lazar.

Iohn Graunthamᵗ. Anno. iii.

Henry Gysours.

IN this thyrde mayres yere, the abouesayde syr Edmūde of Wodestoke erle of Kent, entendynge the reformacion of the mysse ordre of the realme, beynge enfourmyd ỹ his brother syr Edwarde was in lyfe, deuysed certeyn letters towchynge the delyuery of his sayde brother, and sent them vnto his sayd brother; of which dede he was shortlye after accusyd, and by auctoryte of a parlyament holdyn at Westmynsterᵃ, aboute Pentecoste folowinge, he for that dede was iudgyd to haue his hede smytten of, whereof execucion was done the. xvᵗʰ. day of May folowynge in the foresayde cytie of Wynchester, and soone after kyng Edwarde saylyd into Fraūce, and dyd homage vnto Phylyp de Valoyes, thē newly made kyng of Fraūce, for the duchie of Guyan, in the towne of Amyas: after which homage so done he was rychely feastid of the Frensh kynge, and solaced in dyuerse maner of fourmys, as by iustys, huntynge, hawkyng, and many other pleasurys, and then in louynge maner toke his leue of the kynge, and so retourned into Englāde. The. xv. daye of Iune folowynge was borne the kynges firste sone, and at Wodestoke crystenyd, and namyd Edwarde, whiche, in processe of tyme, grewe to a noble & famouse man, and is moost comonly callyd in all cronycles prynce Edwarde, of whome in this story some excellent dedys shall be expressyd. In ỹ moneth of Octobre, vpō the. xvii. daye, and euyn of seynt Luke, syr Roger Mortymer before named, by means of syr Wyllyam Moūtaygneᵈ, syr Rafe Staforde, syr Iohn Neuyle, and other, by a compassyd meane was takyn in the castell of Notyngham, notwithstandynge that the keyes of the sayde castell were dayly and nyghtlye vnder his warde and kepynge; the kynge, the quene, the olde quene, with dyuerse other noblys thā beynge in the same castell lodgyd. The maner of the takynge of this erle syr Roger Mortymer I passe ouer, for the dyuersyte that I haue seen thereof of sundry wryters; but many agreen, ỹ he with syr Symonde of Bedforde, & other, were in that nyght takyn, and after sent vnto the Towre of London, and there put in streyghte kepynge. Then the kynge,

Nota de homagio quod fecit Edwardus tercius Philippo regi Frācie.

Capcio Rogeri Mortimer militis.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. [2] Wynchester. MS. [3] xxv. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] Mountague. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

In short processe after, callyd a parlyament at London for ŷ reformaciō of many thynges mysorderyd in the realme, by meane of the foresayde syr Roger, as the cōmon fame then went.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxx.

Robert of Ely.

Symon Swaylond. Anno. iiii.

Thomas Harworde.

IN this. iiii. mayres yere, & ende of ŷ thyrde yere of thys kynge, durynge the foresayd parliament, as aboue is towchyd, at London, the foresayde syr Roger Mortymer was accusyd before the lordys of the parlyament of these artyclys with other; wherof, v. I fynde expressyd. And firste was layed vnto his charge that by his meanys syr Edwarde of Carnaruan, by mooste tyrannouse deth in the castell of Barkley was murderyd; secondaryly, that, to the kynges great dyshonoure and dāmage, the Scottys, by his meanys and treason, escapyd from the kyng at the parke on' Stanhope, whiche theu shuld haue fallen in the kynges daunger, ne had been the fauoure by the sayde Roger to them thā shewyd; thyrdely to hym was layed, that he, for execucion of the sayd treason, receyued of the capytayne of ŷ sayd Scottis, namyd syr Iamys Dowglas, great sūmys of money, and also for lyke mede he had, to the kynges great dyshonoure & hurte of his realme, concludyd a peace atwene the kynge & the Scottis, & causyd to be delyuered vnto theym the chartyr or endenture called Ragman, with many other thynges, to the Scottys great aduauntage and inpouerysshynge of this realme of Englande; fourtlye, was layed to hym, that where by synystre & vnlefull meanys, cōtrary the kynges pleasure and wyll, or assent of the lordys of the kynges coūceyll, he had gotten into his possessyon moche of the kynges treasoure, he vnskylfully wasted & mysspent it; by reason whereof the kyng was in necessyte, and dryuen parforce to assaye his frendys: fyfthlye, that he also had enproperyd vnto hym dyuerse wardys belongynge to the kynge, to his great lucre & the kynges great hurt, and that he was more secret ẇ quene Isabell, the kynges mother, thā was to Goddes pleasure or the kynges honoure: the whiche artycles, with other agayne hym prouyd, he was, by auctoryte of ŷ sayde parlyament, iugyd to deth, and vpō seynt Andrewys euyn next ensuynge, at London, he was drawyn and hangyd. About the begynnynge of August folowynge, syr Edwarde Bayloll, the sone of syr Iohn̄ Bayloll, some tyme kynge of Scottys, by meanys before purchasyd, opteynyd suche fauoure that with ŷ ayde of syr Hēry Beawmoūt, syr Dauyd of Stroley, syr Geffray Moūbray, & with the ayde of. MM. Englysshemen, entryd Scotlande by water, where in shorte space drewe vnto them suche multytude of Scottis, ŷ the sayd Edwarde was lord of a great hoost, & so kepte on his waye tyll he came to a place callid Gledismore, or after some wryters, Crackysmoore, where he was encountryd of the powar of Scotlāde, & fought there a cruell batayll, in the whiche were slayne a great multitude of Scottes; by reason of which victorye he was crownyd kynge of Scottis at the towne of Scone shortly after, & shortly after he met ẇ kynge Edwarde at the towne of Newe Castell, and there vnto hym made his homage and feawty for the lāde of Scotlande.

Execucio Rogeri Mortimer.

Syr Edwarde Bayloll, sone of syr Iohnne Bayloll, kyng of Scottes, newly made ayen by thassystence of Englysshmen.

Homagium per regem Scocie factū regi Anglye.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxx. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxi.

Iohn̄ Mockynge.

Iohn̄ Pountnay[1]. Anno. v.

Andrewe Awbrey.

IN this. v. meyres yere &. vi. yere of the kynge, in the moneth of Iulii, for soo moche as the Scottis had busyed them to haue slayn Edwarde Bayloll theyr kynge, & hym had constrayned to auoyde his lande, or ellys to kepe hym in some strōge hold tyll he myght

[1] of. MS. [2] *the* MS. *adds* Draper. [3] processe. edit. 1559.

by his frendys or lyegys be socouryd; kynge Edwarde, for the same entent, ẏ a strong powar persyd the realme of Scotlãde, & after layde his syege vnto the towne of Berwyke. Vpon ẏ. xix. day of the foresayd moneth of Iulii, ẏ Scottis with a great power, purposynge to remoue the sayd syege, came towarde ẏ sayde towne; wherof kyng Edwarde beyng enfourmyd, made towarde them, & at a place callyd Halydone Hyll, gaue to the sayde Scottys batayll, & of them had tryumphaunte victorye, in so moche ẏ he slewe of them, as testyfyen dyuerse wryters. viii. erlys. ix.C. knyghtis & banerettis. iiii.C. esquyres & vpō. xxxii. M. of ẏ cōmō people, & of Englysshemen were slayne but onely. xv. persones. After which victory thus by the kynge opteyned, the capytayne of Berwyke vpon the morowe folowynge, beynge seynt Margarettis day, yeldyd to ẏ kyng the sayd towne with the castell; & that done, kyng Edwarde betoke the guydynge thereof, ẇ all other castellys & townys within ẏ lande vnto ẏ fore namyd syr Edwarde Bayloll, as kynge of Scottis, & shortly after retournyd into Englande. Than Dauyd, the sone of Robert le Bruze, beynge as before is sayde, kynge of Scottys, was constraynyd with his wyfe secretly to sayle into Fraũce, & thyder was brought by a Flemyng, namyd Marcuell, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle. Where of Phylyp de Valoyes, thã Frẽshe kynge, the sayd Dauyd, ẇ Iane of the towre his wyfe, was receyuyd; & for theyr comforte the sayd Frenshe kyng gaue vnto them the castell of Gaylarde, tyll fortune to them wolde be more frẽdelye. This yere also, as witnessyth ẏ sayde Frẽshe Cronycle, the Frẽshe kynge sent vnto the kyng of Englande, ẏ bysshop of Beauuays and the hygh conestable of Fraũce, which shewid vnto kyng Edwarde ẏ theyr soueraygne lorde entendyd a voyage into the Holy Lande, & requyred hym of his ayde & cōpany for perfourmaũce of ẏ sayd iournay. Whereuntō ẏ kyng gaue answere vnto ẏ request, thã whã ẏ Frẽsh kyng had perfourmyd all such cōdiciōs as he before tymes had promysed to doo, thẽ he sayd he shulde be cōtentyd to geue such answere vnto ẏ request by them in his name made, as therunto shulde be cōuenyent; & more he addyd to ẏ same, ẏ he marueylyd greatlye ẏ the sayd Frenshe kynge entendyd any suche voyage tyll he had clerelye acquytyd hym of ẏ sayd promesse & couenaũt. With whiche answere ẏ Frẽshe kyng was nothynge cōtentyd, so ẏ malyce & murmur grewe & encreasyd atwene them daylye after, and an occasyon of this sharpe answere was, for so moche as kynge Edwarde was credyble enfourmyd that ẏ Frenshe kyng had vytayllyd & mannyd. x. great shyppys to haue sayllyd into Scotlande, and there to haue warryd; the which by tempest were wedyr dryuen into Flaũders, & so sore betyn ẇ the see, that after they had solde moche of theyr stuffe at ẏ hauyn of Scluce, they were compellyd of necessyte to retourn without worshyp into Fraũce. This ẇ other, kyndelyd suche a dedly hate atwene theyse. ii. Crysten pryncys ẏ moche Crysten blode, in processe of tyme folowinge, was for theyr quarellys shadde.

Fol. lxxxxvii.

Nota bellum, crudelissimũ inter Angliã et Scociã, in quo interfecti fuerint octo comites, nōgẽti milites et banerettis quadriti armigeri & triginta et duo millia de cõmunibus, et de Anglis solũ modo quĩdecim persone.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxi.

Iohñ Preston[a].

Nycholas Pyke[b].

Iohñ Husbande[c].

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxii.

Anno. vii.

IN this. vii. yere ī the wynter season, and as sayeth Guydo, in the monyth of Nouẽbre, the kyng yode agayn towarde Scotlãd, & helde his Cristmas at Yorke, and after the solempnyte of ẏ hyghe feest endyd, so sped hym into Scotlande, where he layed syege vnto the castell of Kylbrydge, and lastly wan it by strengthe, and set the coũtrey in some quyetnesse, and after retournyd vnto Newe Castell vpon Tyne, and taryed there a certayn of tyme, and helde there his feest of Pentecoste ẇ great royalte, whyther with in shorte space after, came syr Edwarde Bayloll, kynge of Scottys, and vpon the daye of seynt Geruasi & Prothasi, or ẏ. xix. day of Iune, made his homage vnto kynge Edwarde, and in presence of many other noblemen of bothe landys, sware vnto hym feawty or fydelyte,

[a] Iohn Hamond. edit. 1559. [b] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. [c] William Hansarde. edit. 1559.

and

and that done he retournyd into Scotlande, and kyng Edwarde vnto Yorke and so vnto Wyndesore. Then were all suche lordys of Englande, as before tyme were in Edwarde ỹ secondis dayes dysseasyd of suche landys as they had in Scotlande, restoryd agayne to theyr sayde possessyons, and for theym made theyr homage vnto the kynge of Scottis, sauynge theyr allegeaūce vnto theyr naturall soueraygne lorde.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxiii.

Iohñ Hamonde.

Iohñ Ponteney'. Anno. viii.

Wyllyam Hansarde.

IN this. viii. yere, certayne ambassadours were sent from Phylyp de Valoyes, kynge of Fraunce, as the bysshop of Thuroyn and the lorde of Ferry & Peynguy for to conclude certayne artycles of varyaūce atwene theyr lorde & the kyng of Englande; but theyr purpose toke none effecte, excepte that the kynge grauntyd to sende vnto the Frenshe kyng shortly after a certayne of his lordys, to haue forther comunycacyon with hym towchynge the sayde artycles, the whiche promyse he fulfylled, as apperyth in the nexte yere ensuynge.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxiiii.

Iohñ Hynkstone.

Reynolde at Cunduytte. Anno. ix.

Walter Turke.

IN this nynth yere fell excedynge plente of rayne, & therupō ensuyd great moreyne of beestys: and in ỹ moneth of Decembre the kynge entryd agayne into Scotlande and helde his Crystmas at the castell of Rokkysboroughe, the whiche he causyd to be newely repayred, & after thyngys there orderyd to his pleasure, he retournyd into Englāde, and soone after he sent the archebysshope of Caūterbury, syr Phylyp de Mountaygue, & syr Geffrey Scrope vnto the Frenssh kyng, to the entente to haue concludid an amyte atwene hym and the sayde Frensshe kynge, whiche before was mouyd by ỹ Frēssh ambassade, as before is shewyd in the. viii. yere of his reygne. But whā theyse sayde lordys were landyd in Fraūce, they were lōge delayed or they myght ćome to the kynges presence, in so moche, that they sayde playnlye vnto suche lordys of Fraunce as were assygned by the Frenshe kyng to passe the tyme with theym, that they supposyd that it was not the kynges pleasure to speke with them; by meane of which wordis they were shortlye after broughte vnto ỹ kynges presence, of whom they were receyuyd with ioyous coūtenaūce, and so contynued by a certayne of tyme, in furtherynge of theyr ambassade, soo that in processe of tyme a conclusyon of a peace to be hadde atwene Englande and Fraunce was accordyd, and soo far fourth spedde, that proclamacyon therof shulde haue been made in Parys and ỹ coūtrey thereabout vpon the morowe folowyng: but howe it came in ỹ kynges mynde, ỹ Englysshe ambassadours were scantlye retournyd to theyr lodgynges whā they were agayne sent fore, and farther enfourmyd then that the kynges pleasure and mynde was to haue Dauyd, late kynge of Scottis, to be includyd within the same peace, and that he shuld agayne be restoryd vnto his kyngdome. Whereunto it was answeryd by ỹ Englysshe ambassadours that theyr cōmyssyon stretchyd not soo farre, nor that theyr prynce had geuyn vnto them any suche auctoryte; wherefore all the former comunycacyon was reuokyd and adnullyd, and they retournyd into Englande without any conclusyon takynge. *Fol. lxxxviii.*

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. Iohn Pountney. edit. 1559.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxv.

Walter Mordon.

Reynolde at Cunduyt. Anno. x.

Richarde Vpton.

IN this. x. yere, for so moche as no conclusyon of vnyte and peace myghte be had atwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraūce, therefore warre was proclaymed vpō bothe partyes; the whiche warre was greatly procuryd by the meane of syr Robert of Artoys, as in ỹ story of Phylyppe de Valoyes shall be aftir shewyd. Then eyther prynce sought the wayes & meanys howe eyther of theym myght dyscōtent other: in so moche ỹ the Frēsh kynge sent soone after into Scotlande a crewe of Frenshemen, to ayde suche enemyes as kyng Edwarde there had; by reason whereof the sayde Scottys made sharpe warre vpō the kynges seruauntys & frendys, and put the lande to great vexacion & trouble, in so moche ỹ the kynge was forcyd to assemble his power, and to spede hym agayne thyther. Thā about Mydsomer, ỹ kyng entryd Scotlande by ỹ see, & warryd vpō ỹ Scottys and Frenshemen, of ỹ which noo notary batayle' is specifyed, excepte in ỹ iournay ỹ kyng subdued his enemyes & toke there dyuerse prysoners, amōge ỹ which one callyd erle of Morrette a Frēsheman was chefe, ỹ after was w̄ other ī processe of tyme there delyuered in exchaūge for ỹ erle of Namur another Frēshe lord, which than was takyn by gyle of Scottes as he was comyng toward seynt Iohn̄s towne, for to ayde ỹ partye of kyng Edwarde. Whā kyng Edwarde had agayn pacyfyed ỹ Scottis, & takyn homage of such as before rebellyd, he thā, as testyfyeth ỹ Frēsh Cronycle, stablysshed ỹ fore namyd Edwarde Bayloll as kyng of Scottys, & cōmyttyd ỹ rule of ỹ lāde vnto hym as he before tymes had done: then ỹ Scottis for the great kyndenesse whiche they had foūde in ỹ kyng, & in recōpensemēt of the great charge which he by sundrye tymes had had in ỹ defendyng of theyr enemyes, graūtyd & boūde them vnto hym & to his heyres, kynges of Englād, ỹ they shuld ayde & assyste hym agayne all pryncis, & whā so euyr he had warre, or any kyng of Englād beyng ryghtfull enrytoure[2] agayne any prynce outher within his lāde or wout, the Scottys at theyr propre costys & expēsys shuld fynde. CCC. horsemen well armyd, & a. M. fotemen well & sufficiētly arrayed for the warre, ỹ whiche. xiii.C. men the Scottys shuld wage for an hole yere, & if the kynge of Englande endyd not his warre w̄in ỹ yere, thā he to hyre & wage ỹ sayd Scottis as he doth ỹ other of his souldyours. After which graūtes made & bondys for the suretie therof receyued by the kynge, as wytnessyth the Frensh Cronycle, the kynge leuynge at Edenboroughe a certayne of his knyghtys, to strengthe the Scottys agaynste the Frenshe men, whiche compassyd all the wayes they myght to brynge Dauyd ỹ sone of Robert le Bruze in possessyon of that lande, he shortlye after retournyd into Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxvi.

Wyllyam Brykelsworthe.

Iohn̄ Pontnay[1]. Anno. xi.

Iohn̄ Northall.

IN this. xi. yere, the kynge remēbryng the great charge that he hadde with the warre in Scotlande, and also for the charge that he dayly had in Guyan, and more contynuelly shuld haue in defending of ỹ Frēshe men & wynnynge of his ryght, he therefore gatheryd treasoure vpon euery syde, and by dyuerse & sundry wayes, wherof the maner is not expressyd; but soo great plente came to his vse that it was scant thorowout ỹ realme: by reason of which scarcetie vytayll & moche other mercymonyes were excedynge good chepe, for at Lōdon a quarter of whete was solde for. ii.*s.* a fatte oxe for. vi.*s.* viii.*d.* a

Nota victualia in bono foro.

[1] act. MS. edit. 1559. [2] enherytoure. edit. 1533, 1542. [3] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. [4] the same.

fatte

fatte shepe for. vi.*d.* and. viii.*d.* vi. peions for a peny, a fatte goos for. ii.*d.* a pygge for a peny, & soo all other vytayll after ỹ[1] rate. This yere also, vpō Holy Roode day, or ỹ. xiiii. day of Septembre[2], dyed Sir Iohñ of Eltham, erle of Cornewayle, & brother vnto ỹ kyng, without issu; wherefore ỹ sayde erledā fell into the kynges hande. This man lyeth buryed at Westmynster, vpon the right hāde of the hyghe aulter. In this yere also aperyd Stella Cometa, in Englysshe namyd the Blasynge Starre, in an huge stremynge maner, whereof many and dyuerse construccions were had amonge the comon people, whiche I passe ouer.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxvii.

Walter Neale.

Henry Darcy[1]. Anno. xii.

Nycholas Crane.

IN this. xii. yere, the kynge helde his parlyament at Westmynster, about the tyme of Lent; durynge the which he made of the erledam of Cornewayle a duchy, and gaue it with the erledam of Chestre vnto Edwarde his sone: and at this parlyamēt were made. vi. erlys, that is to saye, of Derby, of Northampton, of Huntyngedon, of Salysbury, of Gloucetyr, and of Suff. as Hēry of Lācastre was creatyd erle of Derby, or, after some wryters, of Leycetyr, Wyllyam de Bothum[4] erle of Northāpton, Wyllyam de Clynton erle of Hūtyngedon, Wyllyam de Moūtague erle of Salesbury, Hughe of Audeley erle of Gloucetyr, and Robert of Vfforde erle of Suffolke. And in this parlyament was an acte enacted that no man shulde were no maner of sylke in gowne, cote, or doublet, but if he myght spende of good rent an hundreth pounde by yere; whiche acte was not lōge holdyn. In this yere also the kyng, amonge dyuerse pryuylegys, grauntyd vnto the cytezyns of Lōdon that the offycers of the mayres and sheryffes shuld, from ỹ day forthwarde, vse macis of syluer parcell gylte. The kynge of Fraūce this yere, for so moch as he was credyble enfourmyd ỹ kyng Edwarde wolde entre ỹ lāde of Fraūce, and to make warre vpon the same; he therefore made great purueyaunce to resyste hym, for the cōmon fame ranne then in Fraunce, that kynge Edwarde entendyd not only to clayme Gascoyne and Guyan, but also all Fraunce, as his propre and rightfull enherytaunce in the ryght of his moder: wherefore the Frēshe kyng assemblyd an huge hoost, and commytted the rule of it vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and to the erle of Alenson, brother vnto the sayd Frensh kynge; which sayde capytaynes with theyr people, awayted daylly the kyng of Englondes commynge, which thēm for that yere dispoynted. But, as testyfyeth the same Frenshe Cronycle, kyng Edwarde in this whyle sent into Flaunders a knyght callyd syr Bernarde de Brette, for to treate of an amyte atwene hym and the Flemynges: for this cause the erle of Flaunders, which was very faste with the Frenshe kyng, callyd his counceyll to hym, to haue theyr aduyce how he myght best order hymselfe and his people. In which counceyll were dyuerse opynyons, so that many thought it better for dyuerse cōsideraciōs, which were longe to reherce, that ỹ erle shulde rather preferre the amyte of the kynge of Englonde, thā of the kyng of Fraūce: of whiche oppynyon was a great furtherer or promoter, a knyght of Flaunders called Countryssie, with whom ỹ erle beynge for that cause dyscontent, sent hym vnto pryson, & soone after at ỹ requeste of the Frēsh kyng, which layed vnto his charge, that he had receyued great sūmes of money of the kyng of Englande, for to procure and styre the Flemynges agayne hym, he was behedyd: for which dede ỹ dwellers of Gaūt, and of Brugis, were so myscontēte, that they vtterly refused ỹ erle and his coūceyll, & made them stronge to withstāde his pleasure[5]. Thē the erle was cōstraynyd to gather his lordys and knyghtys, for the more parte of the cōmons were agayne hym; and in short processe after, mette in playne bataylle in a place callyd Marchye, where after lōge fyght the erle & his hoost was put to flyghte, and forcyd for

Fol. lxxxix.

[1] the same. edit. 1559. [2] October. MS. [3] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer. [4] Bohum. MS. [5] displeasure. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

his

his safegarde, to take a castell named Mall, or Malet. In which season kynge Edwarde beynge enfourmyd of the amytie that the Flemynges bare towarde hym, anon sent vnto thē a knyght callyd syr Galtier, or Walter de Magny, w a good cōpany of archers, the which arryued in an ile callyd then Cazanter; whom the erle of Flaunders, with a certeyne of his knyghtys, encoūtryd and gaue vnto the Englysshemen bataylle: but in the ende the erle was shamefully chased, and many of his gentylmen slayne and takyn, as syr Iohñ Rodys, syr Wyllyam Gyll, syr Nicholas Chauncy, with many other slayne; and syr Guy, bastarde brother vnto the erle, with dyuerse other taken, of ŷ whiche some were sent as prysōners into Englonde. When the Frenshe kynge had vnderstandynge of the dewysyon ŷ was atwene the erle and his subiectys, and howe feythfull the erle was vnto hym; (entendynge to wynne by fayre meanys the fauoure of the Flemynges, whiche he knewe well he myght not wynne by rygoure;) then he sent vnto Gaunt, the bysshop of Seynt Denys with other, which made vnto ŷ rulers of ŷ towne, and of Brugys, & other townys there assemblyd, many fayre behestis and promysys: amonge the which one was, that the Frenshe kynge wolde acquyte vnto them, and delyuer vnto theyr vse, all such lordshyppis & sygnoryes as he than whelde of theyrs, and his progenytours before hym. But all was in vayne, for kynge Edwarde had so sped his nedys with them, by the meanys of one namyd Iaques de Artyuele a man of Gaunt, which was of great substaunce, and passynge other in boldenesse & capacyte of wytte & dyscressyon, that the sayde towne of Gaunt, with Brugys, Ipre, Courtryke, or Courtrey, Cassyle, and other there about, condyssendyd & promysyd ioyntly and hooly to refuse the Frensh kynge, and to take the kynge of Englondis partie, & the rather for the warre whiche before tyme Phylyp de Valoys made vpon them, in the begynnynge of his reygne; as in the fyrste yere of the story of the sayde Phylyppe shall after appere.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxviii.

Wyllyam of Pountfreyt.

Henry Darcy. Anno. xiii.

Hugo Marbre.

IN this. xiii. yere, kyng Edwarde with quene Phylyp his wyfe, for more assuryd stablysshemēt of amyte to be had atwene hym & the Holanders, Selanders & Brabanders, passyd the see in the begynnyng of the moneth of Iunii, & saylyd with a goodlye company into the countrey of Braban; the quene than beynge great with chylde: where of the erle of Braban he was honorablye resayuyd. In which season of his there beynge, kynge Edwarde gat vnto hym many frendys, amonge the whiche Lewys of Bauyere, which then toke vpō hym as emperour, (albe it that before that tyme he was of ŷ xxii[1]. Iohñ then pope[2] accursyd,) was one. This Lewis hadde suche fauoure vnto kynge Edwarde, that he assygned and ordeyned hym for vycayr of ŷ empyre; by reason of whiche offyce, kynge Edwarde made out his cōmaundementys, and dyd many thynges to his aduauntage and profyte. In this season, quene Phylyp lyinge at Andwarpe, was delyueryd of a man chylde, that was named Lyonell. And Phylyp de Valoys hauing knowledge of all this demeanure of kyng Edwarde, gatheryd vnto hym great strengthe; so that he had about hym innumerable people, & taryed with theym at Amyas and there about, from the ende of August, tyll the begynnynge of Octobre: and whan he sawe that kyng Edwarde came not, he deuided that great hoost, in retournynge many of theym into theyr owne countreys, & the other he sent vnto stronge holdys and castellys, for to lette the passage of kynge Edwarde and his hoost, into the lande of Fraunce. And in this passe tyme the Frēshe kynge had sent dyuerse shyppys vnto the see, with men of warre for to take Englysshe marchauntys and other that came in theyr course; and so befelle that they encountryd

[1] xxi. edit. 1559. [2] b. of Rome. edit. 1542.

with.

with. ii. great shyppys of Englande, callyd the Edwarde, and the Cristofer, the whiche, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, were freyght with great rychesse, and also well manned. Anon as eyther was ware of other, gunnys, and shot of longe bowes, and arblasters, were not sparyd on nowther syde, so that atwene theym was a cruell fyght; but not egall, for of the Frenshe men were. xiii^{c}. sayles great & small, & of ỹ Englyshe men but. v., that is to meane, thevse. ii. foresayde great shyppys, ii. barkys, & a caruyll: the whiche thre small shyppys escaped by theyr delyuer saylynge, & the. ii. abode & fought beyonde. ix. howres; in so moche that there was slayne vpō both partyes, aboue. vi.C. men: but in ỹ ende the sayd. ii. shyppes were takyn, & brought into ỹ Frēshe kynges stremys, & many of ỹ Englyssh men ỹ were sore woundyd, were cast into the see. In this yere also the sayde Frenshemen of that nauye landyd at Southampton sodeynly, & *Fol. C.* spoylyd the towne & brent a great parte thereof: & ouer this the Frēshe kynge made warre in Gascoyn, & wañe there dyuerse small pylys & one stronge castell standynge in the countrey of Gascoyn, callyd Agenois, which castell was namyd Penne. But all this season was kyng Edwarde in Almayne, and made allyaunce w^{t} dyuerse prynces of that countrey & other, and toke assurauncis of theym that they shulde ayde and assyste hym to wynne his right & tytle ỹ he had to ỹ crowne of Fraunce, & after retournyd into Flaūders where he taryed all this mayers yere.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxix.

Wyllyam Thorney.

Andrewe Awbry[2]. Anno. xiiii.

Roger Forsham.

IN this. xiiii. yere kynge Edwarde spedyng his busynesse in Almayn & Flaūders, as in the precedynge yere is towchid, retournyd this yere into Englande, and callyd his hyghe courte of parlyament at Westmynster about ỹ tyme of Lent, in which parlyament the kynge axyd of his cōmons for the mayntenaūce of his warre and to recouer his ryght in Fraunce the v. parte of theyr moueable goodis, the custome of woolys for. ii. yeres to be payed afore hande, & the. ix. shefe of euery manys corne, ỹ which at length was graūtyd, & for the leuyinge therof he causyd ỹ lordys of euery shyre thorough his lande to answere to hym euery lorde for that cyrcuyte he dwellyd nere vnto; but or all this graunt were gaderyd & payed, the loue of the poore people tournyd into hatred, & prayer into cursynge. And for the kynge shulde nede and occupye for his prouysyons moche money or this graūt myght be leuyed, he therfore borowyd many notable summys of dyuerse cyties, & partyculer parsones of this lande; amonge the whiche he thē borowed of the cytie of Lōdon. xx. M. marke to be repayed of the money cōmynge of the foresayd graūt, the which foresayd xx. M. marke was leuyed in the wardys of the cytie in fourme as foloweth.

The Towre warde was sessyd at. CCC.lxv.*li.* whereof Wyllyam of Bryklesworthe lent. C.*li.* & ỹ resydue was leuyed of. xii. persones of that warde.

Byllyngisgate warde was sessyd at. vii. C.lxiii.*li*[1]. wherof Iohn̄ de Cawstō lent. CC.*li.* & Aleyn Gyll CC. & the residue was lent by. xxvi^{ti}. persones o that warde.

The Brydge was sessyd at. vii.C lxv.*li.* vi.*s.* viii.*d.* whereof Iohn̄ Louekyne bare. CC.*li.* Iohn̄ Malwayne & Rauffe de Lenone. CC.*li.* & ỹ resydue was borne by. xxxiii. persones of that warde.

The warde of Dowgate was sessyd at vi C lx.*li.* x *s.* of the whiche Henry Pycarde lent. CC. marke, Bartholmewe Freslyng & Wyllyam Lengtysshe. CC. marke, & the resydue was leuyed of. xxv. persones of that warde.

Lāgbourne warde was sessyd at CCC.lii.*li.* vi.*s.* viii *d.* whereof Thomas Horwolde lent. C.*li.* Iohn̄ Peche. C. marke, & the rest was lent by. xv^{ti}. dwellers of ỹ warde.

Walbrooke warde was sessyd at. ix C.xi.*li.* whereof Iohn̄ Adam lent. CC.*li.* Iohn̄ de

[1] xiiii. MS. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. [3] eyghte hundred. edit. 1559. [4] xxv. MS.

Bery & Symon Pistour peperer. CC.*li.* & Adam de Bery & Iohñ Not. CC. marke, and the rest was leuyed of. xxiii[1]. persones of that warde.

Bisshoppysgate warde was sessyd at. v.C.lix.*li.* vi.*s.* viii.*d.* whereof Adam Fraunceese lent. CC.*li.* and Symonde Browne & Iohñ de seynt Alboñ. CC.*li.* & ŷ resydue was leuyed of. x. persones of ŷ warde.

Lymestrete warde was sessid at. C.x.*li.* wherof Augustyne Waleys lent. C.*li.* and. x.*li.* was leuyed of. iii. dwellers of that warde.

Cornehyll warde was sessyd at. CCC.xv[2].*li.* wherof Iohñ Colynge & Robert Manhale, drapers, bare that one. C.*li.* and ŷ laste. C. marke, & the rest was leuyed of. xx. persones of ŷ sayd warde.

Chepe warde was sessyd at. v.C.xvii.*li.* x.*s*[3]. whereof Barthewe Thomasyn, mercer, lent. CC.*li.* Stephan Caundysshe, draper, Wyllyam Holbech, and Iohñ Harwarde, eyther of them. C. marke, Iohñ Dolsoby, goldesmyth. CC. marke, and Iohñ Fawkys and Iamys Naware, eyther of them. C.*li.* and the rest was leuyed of. lxi. persones of the same warde.

Bradstrete warde was sessyd at. v.C.lxxx. &. viii. *li.* whereof Thomas Legge, skynner, lent. CCC.*li.* Iohñ Harwardestoke. CC. marke, and the resydue was leuyed of. viii. persones of that warde.

Vyntrye warde was sessyd at. vi.C[4].xxxiiii.*li.* xvi.*s.* viii.*d.* wherof Walter Turke, fysshmonger, lent. CC. marke, Iohñ Stoday, vyntener. C.*li.* Symōde Bolsely and Iohñ Rothynge. CC. marke, and the rest was leuyed of. xxiiñ. persones of that warde.

The warde of Bredstrete was sessyd at. iiii.C.lxi.*li*[5]. xvi. *s.* viii.*d.* whereof Adam Brabesone lent. CC.*li.* and the reste was leuyed of. xxx. dwellers of ŷ warde.

The warde of Quene Hyth was sessyd at. CCCC.xxxv.*li.* xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.* whereof Richarde of Kyslyngbury lent. CC.*li.* and Iohñ of Gloucetre. C. marke, & the resydue was leuyed of. xvii. persones of that warde.

Cordwayner strete warde was sessyd at. MM.C.lxxx.xv.*li.* iii.*s.* iiii.*d.* whereof Andrewe Awbrey, grocer, lent viii.C. marke, Wyllyam de Cawston. CC.*li.* Iames Andrewe and Thomas Brandon, eyther of theym. CC. marke, Wyllyā of Worcetyr. CC. marke, Iohñ Bechamp and the wyfe of Iohñ Halle, eyther of theym. C.*li.* and Iohñ Bulle, Iohñ Gonwardby[6], & Wyllyam Hampstede, eche of theym. C. marke, and the rest, which is. vi.C. lxi. xvi.*s.* viii *d.* was lent by. xliiii. persones of that warde.

The ward of Faryngedone within was sessyd at. vii.C.xxx.*li.* xvi.*s.* viii.*d.* whereof Gylbert Staynedrope lente. CC.*li.* and the reste was leuyed of. lxvii. persones of that warde.

Faryngedone without the wallys was sessyd at. C.xiiii.*li.* xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.* whiche sūme was leuyed of xxi. persones of that warde.

Crepulgate warde was sessyd at. CCCC.lxii.*li.* x.*s.* whereof Rycharde Lazar, mercer, lent. CC. marke, Symōde de Bedyngton. C. marke, and the resydue was leuyed of. xxxvii. persones of ŷ sayde warde.

Colmanstrete warde was sessid at. M.li.*li.* xvi.*s.* viii.*d.* wherof Symon de Fraunces[7] lent. viii.C.*li.* Henry of Ware and Iohñ Denys. CC. marke, and the resydue was lent by. vi. persones of that warde.

Candelwykestrete ward was sessyd at. C.xxxiii.*li.* vi.*s.* viii.*d.* the which sayde sūme was leuyed of. xxiii. dwellers of ŷ sayd warde.

The warde of Algate was stynted or sessyd at. xxx.*li.* and leuyed of. vi. enhabytauntys of the sayde warde.

Portsokyn warde was sessyd at. xxvii.*li.* x.*s.* and was leuyed of. vii. persones of that warde.

[1] xiiii. edit. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.* [2] CC.xv. edit. 1542. 1559. *evidently by mistake.* [3] *in the margin of the* edit. *of* 1559, *it is said* this ward lent. CC.*li.* more than their assessment. [4] v.C. edit. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.* [5] iiii.C.xxxv. edit. 1559. *but erroneously.* [6] Wardby. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] *the Museum* MS. *adds* Mercer.

Castell

Castell Baynarde warde was sessyd at. lxiii.*li.* vi.*s.* viii.*d.* and lente by twelue personys of that warde.

Bassyngeshawe warde was sessyd at. lxxix.*li.* xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.* and leuyed of syxe persones.

Aldryshe gate warde was sette or sessyd at. lvii.*li.* x.*s.* and layed out or lente by. v. persones of that warde: whiche summe totall of the foresayde. xxv. wardys, amounteth to the summe of. xiii. thousande. CCC.lxxx. fyue. *li.* xiii.*s.* &. iiii.*d.* whiche summe exceedyth the summe of. xx. thousande marke. li.*li.* vi.*s.* viii.*d.* And ye shall vnderstande that he that payed leest towarde this lowne payed. l.*s.*: and so ascendynge to theyse summys aboue rehercyd, whereof many was sessyd at xl.*li.* l.*li* &. lx.*li.* & many other of dyuerse meane sūmys. In this yere also the kynge chaungyd his coyne, & made ỹ noble & the halfe noble of the value of. vi.*s.* viii.*d.* which at this day is worthe. viii.*s.* ix.*d.* or. x *d.* & the halfe noble after the rate, if they kepe the trewe weyght; & prouydid dyuerse other thynges for the weale of his realme & spede of his iourney into Fraunce. *Fol. Ci.*

WHan kyng Edwarde had sette his lande in an ordre & had all thyng metely prouyded for his nede, he thē about Lammesse saylyd into Braban, & there helde his counceyll with his frendis, & by theyr aduyces made clayme to the hole crowne of Fraūce as his rightfull enherytaūce; & for more auctoryte of the same, entermedelyd the armys of Englande with the armys of Fraunce, as by the scochoune sette here aboue[1] doth to you openlye apere. Then kynge Phylyp beynge of theyse thynges warned, gatheryd an howge hoste & came with them to a towne callyd Vermendois, & kyng Edwarde w̄ his people entryd the countrey callyd Theresse, & brent & wasted the coūtrey before hym. Then kynge Phylyp drewe towarde ỹ Englysshe hoost, & came vnto a place or towne, callyd in Frenshe Buyrō Fosse, where he entēdid, as sayth the Frenshe boke, to haue set vpō the Englysshemen, but by coūceyll of his lordys for dyuerse causys he was let to his dyspleasure; for after that day he myght fynde no conuenyent tyme for to assayle his enemyes, so that in cōclusyon eyther hoste departyd from other without batayll or fyght, & kynge Edwarde toke his wey towarde Gaunt, & kynge Phylyp retournyd into Fraūce. Thā kyng Edwarde, by meanys of his frende Iaques de Artyuele, had all his pleasure of the towne of Gaūt, & receyuyd of them othe & homage, & after dyuerse conclusyons with them & other taken, he leuyng there the quene, after the testymony of some wryters, retournyd agayne into Englāde, & lefte with the quene, which then was great with chylde, the erlys of

[1] In the border of this werke. MS. *The* edit. of 1533. 1542. and 1559. *say only* as ye see them at this daye.

Salysbury & of Oxynforde, whiche in the kynges absence aydyd well ȳ Flemynges agayne the Frenshe kynge, & dyd dyuerse marcyall actis whiche I here passe ouer; but in processe the erle of Salysbury was taken prysoner, & dyuerse Englysshemen slayne at ȳ assaute of a towne callyd the Ile in Flaūders or of Flaunders.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xxxix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xl.

Adam Lucas.

Andrewe Awbry[1]. Anno. xv.

Bartholmewe Marres.

IN this. xv. yere whyle the kynge was busyed in Englande to make prouysyon for mete & money to wstande the Frenshe kyng, as well for ȳ warre ȳ ȳ sayd Frēshe kyng made vpon the Flemynges & other, beyng ȳ kynges frendys, as for his owne partyculer causys, the quene, as before is sayde, beynge at the towne of Gaunt, was delyueryd of a sone, whiche after was named Iohn̄, about Cristmas, in the begynnynge of this mayers yere & ende of this. xiiii. yere. This chylde whā he came to mannys astate was surnamed Iohn̄ of Gaūt, & was first erle of Rychmount & after duke of Lancaster. And all so faste as kynge Edwarde prouyded for abylementys of warre in Englonde, so faste & hasty prouysyon made ȳ Frēshe kyng to wstāde kyng Edwarde both by lāde & by water, so ȳ he had a great & stronge nauy vpō ȳ see. Kynge Edwarde thē in the moneth of Iunii, with. CC. sayles toke shyppynge & saylyd towarde Flaūders, & vpō the see mette or came vnto hym syr Robert Morley with the north nauye of Englonde, so that he hadde in all aboue[1]. CCC. sayles, and that at Mydsomer vpō seynt Iohn̄s euen he fought with the Frēshe kynges nauy, whiche lay in awayte for hym nere to the towne callyd the Scluse. Of this nauye, whiche were in noūber by the reporte of the Frenshe boke vpon. iiii.C. sayles, wherof were chefe admyrallis syr Hugh Queret & syr Nycholas Buchet, & one named Barbe Noyre, or in Englysshe Blacke Berde; the which capitayns or admyrallys anon as they espyed ȳ Englysshe flote, they made towarde them to begynne the fyght. iiii. galeys set vpō a shyppe of auaūtage which sayled before the other, namyd the Ryche Olyuer, ȳ which. iiii. galeys ȳ forenamed Barbe Noyre hadde the cunduyt of, & assaylyd this sayde shyppe on euery parte & bette hir w gunneshot & hir men w hayle shot exceedyngely, so ȳ of the men within hir were many slayen & mo woūdid, & lykely to haue ben shortly wonne ne had ben the rescous of her cōpany. Thē were the sayde foure galeys soone beclepyd w ȳ Englysshe nauye, & so cruelly assaylyd ȳ they were borded or they myght be rescowyd: thē approchyd the hoole flote vpon both sydes with hydous & ferefull dynne & noyse of gunnys, with terryble flamyng of wylde fyre & other, w thycke shot of quarellys & arowys, and crusshynge of shyppes ȳ hydous & wōderfull it was to beholde, so ȳ many a soule was there expellyd from theyr bodyes ī short whyle. This mortall & cruell fyght contynued, as sayth the Frenshe story, by the space of. viii. howres or more, in such wyse, ȳ harde it was to knowe whether parte had the better, & so many dede & woundid men were caste into the see, that the water whiche was in cyrcuyte about theym, was colouryd or dyed as redde; but in the ende, by grace & great manhode of ȳ kynge, which there was sore woundyd, and by his great comforte the Frēshemen were chasyd, & many of theyr shyppys bowgyd & taken with many prysoners in them, amonge the which the forenamyd admyrallys or capytaynys syr Nycholas Buchet & syr Hugh Queret were. ii. the whiche, in dyspyte of the Frenshmen, were hanged vpō the saylys of theyr shippis which they were taken in: & amonge the shyppis ȳ were at this season taken, were recouered the. ii. foresayde shyppys named the Edwarde & the Cristofer, the whiche before were takyn by the Frēshemen, as it before is shewyd in the. xiii[4]. yere of this kynge. In this batayll also, as it is testyfyed of many & dyuerse wryters, were slayne vpō the noūber of. xxx.M. Frenshemen, albe it the Frēshe boke nameth so many

Nota de bello crudelissimo facto super mare prope Scluce.

[1] *The Museum* MS. *adds* Peperer. [2] men. MS. [3] about. edit. 1559. [4] iii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. *by mistake.*

to

to be slayne vpon both partyes, & excuse this mysfortune by the neclygēce of syr Nycholas Buchet, which kepte the Frensh nauy so longe within ỹ hauyn ỹ they were so closyd in with the Englysshe nauy ỹ a great nouber of theym myght neuer stryke streke nor shote theyr ordenaunce but to the hurte of theyr owne cōpany. Whā kynge Edwarde had opteynyd this tryūphaunt victory of his enemyes, he yeldyd great thākys vnto God; how be it he was fayne to tary a season with his shyppe by reason of a wounde, the which he had receyuyd in his thyghe: in whiche season ỹ quene his wyfe came to vysyte hym, & retournyd agayne vnto Gaūt, & after a fewe dayes passyd, the kynge departed from Swynne & rode vnto our Lady of Ardenburghe, & sent his nauy in the nexte hauyn to Brugys, & moche of his people vnto the towne of Gaunt, & when he had accomplysshed his pylgrymage he rode vnto Brugys, and from thense vnto Gaūt, where of ỹ dwellers he was ioyously receyuyd. Thē kyng Edwarde there callyd a great counceyll by ỹ which it was determynyd that he shuld prepare. ii. hostis, whereof ỹ one shuld be of the men of Gaūt & of ỹ townes there about, of ỹ which certeyn lordys of Almayne shuld haue ỹ rule, & the other hoost shuld be of men of Brugis & of Englysshe archers, & of ỹ hoost was ordeynyd syr Robert of Artoys to be leder & capitayne. Whā the sayd. ii. hostys were all garnysshed or furnysshed w̄ all thyng for them nedefull, ỹ fyrste of them was sent vnto the towne of Tourney, and the other vnto ỹ towne of Seynt Omers, the whiche. ii. townes at ỹ day were lyke strength vnto Fraūce as Calays is nowe vnto Englonde; wherefore the Frēshe kynge, for the more suretye of them, sent vnto Tournay the erle of Foys & syr Barthan, than marshall of Fraunce, w̄. iiii.M. men of armys, & vnto Seynt Omers he sent the duke of Burgoyn w̄ a great companye of lordys & other. When syr Robert of Artoys had lyen a certeyne tyme before Seynt Omers, and many sharpe assawtys by hym & his people had ben geuen to it, in ỹ which dyuerse fortunys fell & chaūcys of warre which were tedyous & lōge to wryte, fynallye, vpon the morowe after seynt Iames day, or ỹ. xxvi. day of Iulii, the duke of Burgoyne with his retynue issuyd out of ỹ towne & foughte with the sayd syr Robert & his people a longe season; in the whiche fyght was slayne of the dukys partye the lorde of Hamelcourt, syr Froysarde de Beaford[1], the lorde of Seynt Vran, a lorde of Spayne, & a Burgonyon lorde callyd ỹ lorde of Branges, with other dyuerse knyghtys & gentylmen to the noūber of. liiii. as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, & of the cōmon people vpon. iii.M.: but in short tyme after the power of the duke encreasyd in suche wyse that syr Robert with his company was fayn to departe thense, & so yode vnto Ipre & there helde hym. Then, as aboue is sayde, when kynge Edwarde had sent forth the fore namyd. ii. hostis, he with the reste of his people yode vnto a place within. ii. Englysshe myles of Tournaye, callyd in Frēshe le Pount de Prce, & there lodgyd hym & his people; & Phylyp de Valoys the Frēshe kynge came with his people vnto an house of relygyon, which then was callyd ỹ Pryory of seynt Andrewe, at which. ii. places theyse sayde. ii. prynces thus lyinge with great strengthys vpon eyther syde, kynge Edwarde, by counceyll of his lordys, sent vnto the Frenshe kynge a letter conteynynge as folowyth. *Fol. C.ii.*

Nota pro Tourney & Seynt Omers.

"EDwarde by the grace of God, kyng of Englonde & of Fraunce, & lorde of Irelonde, syr Phylyp de Valoys by lōge tyme we haue exhortyd by messyngers & other manyfolde maner of wayes, to the ende ỹ ye shulde restore vnto vs, & to do vnto vs reason of our rightfull enherytaunce of the realme of Fraunce, the which ye haue longe tyme occupyed w̄ great wrōge, and for that ỹ we se well that ye entēde to perseuyr in your iniuryous withholdynge without to do vnto us reason for our right to demaunde, we are entryd into our lande of Flaunders as soueraynelorde of the same, and passe by ỹ countrey, doynge you farther to vnderstande that we haue takyn, with ỹ helpe of our Lorde Ihesu Cryste, the ryght with the power of the sayde countrey, and with our people them allyed: behold-

[1] Beaufforde. MS.

ynge the right whiche we haue in ỹ herytage that ye vs wholde[1] with great wronge, and drawe vs towarde you to make a short ende vpon our rightfull demaunde and chalenge, if ye wyll towardys vs approche. And for so moche that soo great powar of men of armys that came vpon our partyes may not longe holde them togethers without great dystruccyon of the people, whiche euerye good Cristen man ought to eschewe, and speciallye a prynce or other that haue the gouernaunce of people; we therfore moche desyre that in shorte dayes they may mete. And for to esche we the more mortalyte of the people, so that the quarell apparent atwene vs to the dystruccion of our chalenge may stande in tryall atwene vs two, which thynge we offer vnto you for the causes aboue sayd: how be it that we remember well the noblenesse of your persone, and your great wysedome and aduysement, and in case that ye wyll not thereof, that then in our chalenge be sette to afferme the batayll of yourselfe with an hundreth persones of your partye of the moost suffycyent, and we in lyke wyse with as many, and if ye wyll that one wey nor the other, ỹ then ye wyll assygn a certeyne day before the citie of Tournay to fyght with strengthagayn strengthewin. x. dayes after the syght of theyse letters. And we wolde that all the worlde knewe ỹ these thynges abouesayde in this our desyre is not for pryde nor for great presumpcion, but for that that our lorde myght set the more reste and peace amonge the Crysten, and for that that the enemyes of God myght be resysted, and Crystendome enhauncyd, and the waye that ye wyll chose of theyse offers abouesayde, wryte agayne to vs by the brynger of theyse letters, to hym makynge hastye delyueraunce. Gyuen vnder our great seale at Eschyne sur le Scaut, nere vnto the cytie of Tourney, the. xv[2]. day of ỹ moneth of Iulet." Vpō receyte of which letters the Frenshe kyng, by the aduyce of his counceyll, wrote agayn vnto kyng Edwarde in maner and fourme as foloweth.

"PHylyp, by the grace of God, kynge of Fraunce, to Edwarde kynge of Englonde. We haue seen a letter sent to Phylyp de Valoys brought to our courte, in the whiche letter were certeyne requestys; and for so moche as the sayd letter came not to vs, the sayd requestys were not made to vs lyke as it apperyth by the tenoure of the sayde letter. We therefore to you make none answer; neuerthelesse for that, that we vnderstonde by the sayd letter & otherwyse, ỹ ye are enbatellyd in our realme of Fraunce, doynge great domage to vs and our sayde realme, and to the people, mouyd of wyll without reason, not regardynge ỹ which a lyege man ought to regarde to his lyege and soueraygne lord, for ye are entryd into our homage in youreselfe, aknowlegynge as reason is to the kynge of Fraunce, and promysed obeysaūce such as a liege man ought vnto his soueraygne lorde, lyke as it appereth by youre letters patentys sealyd with your great seale, the which we haue by vs, and for that shulde you be obedyent vnto vs. our entente is such that whā we shall thynke it good, we shall chase you out of oure realme, to our honoure and mageste royall, and to the profette of our people; and in this doynge we haue feythfull hope in oure Lorde Ihesu Cryste, frome whom all good to vs commyth: for by your enterpryze, whiche is of wyll not reasonable, hath bene lette the holy voyage ouer *Fol. cliii.* the see, and great quantite of Cristen people put to deth, and the holye seruyce of God lefte, and holye churche vnworshyppyd & vnhonouryd, w many great enormyties; and in that, that ye thynke to haue the Flemynges in youre ayde, we thynke vs to be assuryd that ỹ good townes and the commons wyll behaue them in suche wyse agayn vs and agayn our cosyn the erle of Flaunders, that they wyll saue theyr honoure and trouth, and in that that they haue mysse done, tyll nowe hath ben by euyll counceyle of suche people which regarde not the common weale of the people, but of theyr owne profyte onelye. Gyuen in the feelde of the Pryory of seynt Andrewe besyde Ayre, vnder the seale of our secret sygnet, in absence of our great seale, the. xxx. daye of the moneth of Iulet."

It was not longe after, ỹ the Frēshe kyng hadde thus rescrybed vnto kynge Edwarde,

[1] witholde from us. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] xxvii. MS.

but

but that a messynger came vnto hym from Tourney for hastye rescouse, for the towne was dayly and sharplye assautyd of the Englysshe hoste; wherfore in all haste he sent thyther the duke of Athenesse, the vycount of Thonart, the vycount of Dannaye, with dyuerse other to ỹ noumber of. xv. men of name, ẅ a great noũber of people: the which sped them streyghte vnto the Mount of Cassyle, but or they came, ỹ sayd Moũt was gotten by the Flemynges; so that of theyr lodgynge they were dispoynted, by reason wherof they feryd to sette vpon the Englysshe hoste, or yet to trauayll for the remouynge of ỹ sayd syege of Tourney, but toke theyr counceyll, and swaruyd from Cassyle, and entryd the lãde of the erle of Barry, and dyd moche harme thereyn: and where' they had there executid theyr pleasures, they retournyd vnto the Frenshe kynge. In this meane whyle kynge Phylyp counceyled with his lordes whether it were better for hym to drawe towarde Tourney to remoue the syege, or to goo into Flaunders, and to make warre vpon the townys that helde with kynge Edward; by which coũceyll it was thought moste honorable, that he shulde endeuer hymselfe to remoue the sayde syege: after which conclusyon so taken, he with his hoste drewe towarde Tourney, & in the ende lodged hym and his people at a place or towne callyd at that day Bowyns, within. iii. myles of Tourney; in whose company was ỹ kyng of Nauerne, the kynge of Bohemy, or Beame, the dukys of Normandy, and Loreyñ, and of Athenesse, or Athens, the erlys of Alensone, of Flaunders, and of Sauoy, with other to the noumber of. xiiii. erlys besyde vycoũtys, barouettis & knyghtis to a great noũbre. And ẅ kyng Edwarde were theyse lordys folowinge, the erle of Herforde, the erlys of Northampton, of Derbye, of Southhampton, of Oxynforde, of Henaude, of Harflete, and of Rondell[2]; also of straungers, the duke of Geldre, and of Sclauonye, and Braban, with manye other vycountys, banerettys[3], and knyghtys, whiche I passe ouer. And thus laye these two prynces, with two great and myghty hoostys, within v. myles without great batayll or fyght a certeyn of tyme; but euer in meane whyle the towne of Tourney was assaylyd of the Englysshe men and Flemynges, the which defendyd theym manfully and well. In the whiche passe tyme, the countesse of Henaude, whiche was mother vnto the quene of Englonde, and as testyfyeth the Frẽshe Cronycle, syster vnto ỹ Frẽsh kynge, a woman of passynge dyscressyon, and eloquency, with ỹ ayde of other prynces, as the kynge of Beame and other, laboured such a meane of treaty, that a daye of dyet was atwene the two kynges appoyntyd: albeit ỹ dyuerse of kyng Edwardys coũceyll were sore agayn it, & specyally Iakes de Artyuele. Thã for kyng Edwardis party was assygned ỹ bysshop of Lyncolñ, syr Geffrey Scrope, syr Iohñ of Henaude, brother to the erle, and syr Wyllyam Cheyny with other: and for the Frenshe kynge was assygned the kynge of Beame, the erlys of Armenake, and of Sauoy, syr Lewys de Sauoy, and other: & to the ende that this appoyntment myght take the better effecte, a day of trewys was cõcluded tyll Mydsomer folowyng. But moste wryters testyfyen that kyng Edwarde lefte the syege before Tourney, for defaute of money, & necligẽce of his slowe procuratours in Englãde, that sped not his nedys there as they shulde. For that one cause and for that other, the kynge with his hooste departyd thense vnto Gaũt, and taryed there a certeyne of tyme; in whiche season the forenamyd lordys & knyghtis mette at Tournay, and there debated the maters of chalẽge of kyng Edwarde, and certeyn artycles concernynge the countrey of Flaunders: in whiche counceyll it was graunted by ỹ Frenshe kynges partye, that the Frẽshe kynge shuld frely departe towarde the maryage of kyng Edwardis chyldren, with the hole sygnoryes of Gascoyne & Guyan, & the erledome of Poytiers in so fre maner, ỹ none offycer of ỹ Frẽshe kynge shulde medle or haue to do with in any parte of those lordshyppes. And for Flaũders it was by the sayd lordes grauntyd, that the cõmons of that countrey, in all customys and lawys, shuld be iugyd and rulyd as they of olde tymes had vsyd; & also that all boudys & oblygacyons that, in tymes passed, the chefe townes had made to ỹ Frenshe kynge for any cause, shulde

[1] when. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] Arondell. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Baronettes. edit. 1542. 1559.

be

be cancellyd and delyueryd, and of theyr erle they shulde be acquyted in lyke wyse for all offencys done before that daye: also all cēsuryes or cursys ỹ they before were wrapped in, shuld be clerely adnullyd and reuokyd, with other cōclusyons and offers which I passe ouer.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xl. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xli.

Richarde Berkynge.

Iohñ Oxynforde[1]. Anno. xvi.

Iohñ Rokyslee.

IN this. xvi. yere, kyng Edwarde, vpon seynt Andrewys euyn, came to the Towre of London, & sent for suche lordis as before he had made his procuratours, to leuye his money in his absence, &, for theyr neclygence and mysdemeanure cast them in pryson. But in this voyage that the kynge passyd from that other syde of ỹ see into Englonde, he had excedynge tempest of wether, so that he passyd ẁ great fere and daunger; which tempest, after ỹ oppynyon of some wryters, was reryd by ỹ negromauncers of ỹ Frēshe kynge, to the ende to haue perisshid the kyng, or ellys to geue hym the lesse courage to take the see agayn. In this yere also were sent from the. xii. Benet thā pope[2], ii. cardynallys to treate of a peace atwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce; the which concluded a peace atwene the sayde. ii. kynges, aswell for them, as for other countreys whiche to them were allyed, for the terme of. iii. yerys and more: in whiche tyme it was agreed ỹ both ỹ sayde kynges, by theyr proctours, shulde publysshe & declare before the pope[2], theyr claymes and causes, to the ende that by hym and his coūceyll, a fynall dyreccyon and concorde myght be sette atwene them: Whiche agrement of the sayd cardynallys was thus concluded in the towne callyd Malestret, about the feaste of seynt Gregory in Lent; beynge there present for the kynge of Englande, the erlys of Derbye, and of Northampton, with other, & for the Frenshe kynge, the dukys of Burbon & of Burgoyne, with other for his party: but this agrement stoode to lytle effecte, for it notwithstādyng, the warre atwene theyse. ii. kynges was cōtynued, so that eyther fortyfyed theyr frendys & allyes. And soone after happenyd that where Iohñ duke of Brytayne dyed ẁout issu, varyaunce fell atwene Charlys de Bloys and Iohñ erle of Moūtforde for the tytle of that dukedome; so that atwene them mortall warre was exercysed, as in the story of Phylyp de Valoys shall after more playnlye be declared, which warre so contynuyng, the kynge of Englande aydyd the party of the erle of Mountforde, and the Frēshe kynge aydyd Charlys de Bloys; and ouer that, durynge the terme of the sayd trewys, the Frenshe kyng made warre vpō the Gascoynys as after shall appere: & in Scotlāde some styryng was made this yere by excytyng of ỹ Frēsh kynge, in so moche that the kynge was fayne to sende thyther a crewe of soudiours to strēgth suche holdys as he there helde. And in this yere was the quene delyuerid of a man chylde at the towne of Langeley, the whiche after was named Edmunde, and surnamed Edmunde of Langley.

Fol. C.iiii.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xli. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlii.

Iohñ Luskyn.

Symonde Fraunces[3]. Anno. xvii.

Rycharde Kyslyngbury[4].

IN this. xvii. yere, kynge Edwarde, at ỹ requeste of dyuerse of his yonge lordys & knyghtys, sufferyd to be exercysyd certeyne poyntis and featis of warre, as iustys, turnamentys and other, whiche were executid at Dunstable, where the kyng and the quene were present, ẁ the more partie of the lordys and ladyes of the lande. This yere dyed the fore namyd Iohñ duke of Brytayne, by reason of whose deth ỹ warre, as in ỹ pre-

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Vyntener. [2] byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer.
[4] Kelsyngbury. MS.

cedynge yere is touchyd, grewe atwene the sayde Charlys de Bloyes & the erle of Moūtforde. This Charlis de Bloyes made his clayme to that duchery by tytle of his wyfe, that was doughter of Guy vycout of Lymogys, and seconde brother of the foresayde Iohn duke of Brytayn; and Iohn erle of Mouttort, claymyd by ỹ tytle he was thyrde brother vnto the fore namyd duke: but of this mater I entende to shewe more playnly, and of the eode therof in the story of Phylyp de Valoys, as before I haue sayde, and rather there thā here, be cause the fayte[1] therof was not done inEnglonde, but in Brytayne wherof the sayde Phylyp pretendyd rule and chefe sygnorye.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlii. Anno Domini. M.CCC. xliii.

Iohn Stewarde[2].

Iohn Hamonde. Anno. xviii.

Iohn Aylesham.

IN this. xviii. yere, the kyng shortlye after Easter callyd a parlyament at Westmynster; in tyme wherof Edwarde his eldyst sone was creatyd prynce of Wales, and many ordenauncys for the weale of the lāde there were enactyd, which for lengthe I passe ouer. In this yere also, Clement the. vi. of that name, whiche newelye was made pope[3], toke vpō hym to geue dyuerse bisshopryches & benefycys, which thē fell voyde in Englāde, wherw ỹ kyng was nothyng contentyd, in so moche that he sent out commyssyons and strayte commaundementys, that no man in tyme folowynge shuld present or inducte any suche persone or persones that so by the pope[3] were promoted, wout the agrement of the kynge, as farre as towchyd his prerogatyue. The sayd [pope][4] Clement was firste archebysshop of Roan and mūke of seynt Benettis ordre, a Frensheman of byrthe, and before callyd Peter, a man of eccellent cunnynge but a waster of Goddys patrymony, and promoted to that dygnyte by instaunt labour of the Frenshe kynge, which sent his sone Iohn duke of Normādy, & ỹ duke of Burgoyn, vnto ỹ cytie of Auynyon or Auygnon to procure & further the eleccyon; by meane whereof he was there chosen pope[3] about the. vii. day of May, and tronysed in the sayd moneth of May, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace, after thaccompte of ỹ Churche of Englonde. M.CCC. &. xliii[5]. By meanys and fauoure of which pope[3] the Frenshe kynges causes and maters atwene kyng Edwarde and hym were somedeale promoted, for, as testyfyeth ỹ Frenshe booke, the Frenshe kyng this yere put to deth one maister Henry de Malestrete, a graduat man & brother vnto syr Godfrey de Malestrete knyght, lately also put to deth by the sayd Frēshe kynge, for theyr fydelyte which they bare towarde kynge Edwarde as his feodaries: wherof kyng Edwarde made his complaynte vnto the pope[3] of this & other thynges to be done, cōtrary the cōstytucyons of the former peace cōcludyd by the. ii. cardynallys, & had thereof no remedye. In this yere also, kynge Edwarde made a coyne of fyne golde, and namyd it the floryne, that is to say, the peny of the value of. vi.s. viii.*d.*, the halfe peny of the value of. iii.s. iiii.*d.*, & the farthynge of the value of. xx.*d.*, which coyne was ordeynyd for his warris in Fraūce; for the golde thereof was not so fyne as was the noble, whiche he before in his. xiiii. yere of his reygne had causyd to be coyned.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xliii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xliiii.

Geffrey Wychyngham.

Iohn Hamonde. Anno. xix.

Thomas Legge.

IN this. xix. yere the kynge helde a solēpne feest at his castell of Wyndsore, where atwene Candelmasse and Lent were holden or executed many marcyall actys, as iustys,

[1] facte. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Syward. MS. [3] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] xliii. edit. 1542. 1559.

tournamentys,

Inicīū ordinis de le Garter.

tournamentys, with dyuerse other, at the which were present many strañgers of other landys, and in the ende therof' he there deuysed the order of the Garter, and after stablysshid it as at this daye it is contynued. In this yere about Mydsomer, kynge Edwarde w a stronge armye saylyd vnto Scluse, and so into Lytle Brytayne; but for he was dyspoyntyd of the ayde of ỹ Flemynges, by reason of ỹ deth of his trusty frende Iakes de Artyuele, which than was slayne of ỹ Flemynges of Gaunt, by a conspyracye that they made agayne hym by suche as fauoured the partye of the Frēshe kyng, he tournyd home into Englande agayn the same yere, leuynge behynde hym the erle of Salesbury with a stronge company to ayde Iohñ erle of-Mōntforde agayn syr Charlys de Bloys, the which Iohñ by the ayde of ỹ Englysshe wañe dyuerse townes and holdys in Brytayne, vpon the sayd syr Charlys & his Frenshemen: but in the ende of this yere he was takyn with suche sykenesse ỹ he dyed in a towne called Corentyne; after whose deth the sayde Charlys possedyd the more parte of the duchye of Brytayne. This yere the kynge sent ỹ erle of Derby with a stronge army into Guyan for to ayde the erle of Northhampton, whom the kynge before had lefte there at Burdeaux to strength that countrey agayne the Frenshemen, to whom, after the dethe of the forenamed syr Iohñ erle of Mountfort, drewe many of the soudyours that were on his partye.

Fol. C.v.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xliiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlv.

Edmunde Hempnale.

Richarde Lacer[2]. Anno. xx.

Iohñ Gloucester.

IN this. xx. yere, or later ende of ỹ. xix. yere, ỹ is to wyt about seynt Nycholas tyde, in the begyñyng of this mayers yere, ỹ foresayde erlys of Derby and Northāpton had wonne the towne and castell of Bergarat in Gascoyne, & slewe there ỹ erle of Valētynoys, chefe capitayn therof, & toke there a noble man called ỹ erle of ỹ Ilys, with many other ryche prysoners. And about Aprell the sayd erlys wanne a stronge towne callyd ỹ Ryall; wherof herynge, Phylyp de Valoys, ī all hast, sent his sone Iohñ duke of Normandy to withstande and to geue batayll vnto the sayd erlys; but when the sayd duke was nere vnto the Englysshemen, he had suche tydynges of theyr strengthe, ỹ he retournyd vnto his father agayn, for ỹ which dede his father with hym was greuously dyscontentyd, in so moche that by the occasyon, to auoyde his fathers displeasure, he retournyd into Gascoyne, and layed siege vnto ỹ castell of Aguyllon, and there remaynyd tyll ỹ moneth of August folowynge without gettyng of it any aduauntage, at which season he retourned agayn to his father; after whose departure the erle of Northhamptō with his cōpany gatte a strōge towne, callyd in Frenshe la Roche Daryen, which is to meane ỹ Roche or rocke of Aryen. In tyme of whiche warre thus contynued in Brytayne & Guyan, the Frenshe kyng made purueyaunce to defende his lande agayne kynge Edwarde, for whom he awayted daylye, & kynge Edwarde as faste gatheryd money, and made his daylye purueyaunce to prepare hym thyderwarde.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlvi.

Iohñ Croydon.

Geffrey Wichyngham. Anno. xxi.

Wyllyam Clopton.

IN this. xxi. yere, kynge Edwarde helde his parlyament at Westmynster, about the tyme of Lent, and in the moneth of Iuly folowynge he toke shyppynge & saylyd into

[1] *The* MS. *adds* he made a sumptuous and honorable sowper, in tyme whereof he there dyvysed, *&c.*
[2] Rychard Lazar, Mercer. MS.

Normādy,

Normãdy, & lãded, as wytnessyth ỹ Frẽsh Cronycle, at a place in ỹ prouynce named in Frenshe la Hougue, sent vast with. xi.C'. saylis great & small the. xii. day of ỹ foresayd moneth of Iulet, and anon as he was landed, he cõmaundyd his people to waste the coũtrey before them, and by the ledyng of a knyght callyd syr Geffrey[2] Harcourt he was broughte vnto a towne called Melly, & from thens vnto Moũtboure, where the kynge with his people restyd hym a season; in the which tyme ỹ sayd syr Godfrey brent & spoylyd the countrey of Cõstãtyne there nere adioynyng. Than kynge Edwarde departyd from ỹ foresayd towne, & went vnto a strõg towne callyd Karentene or Karenton, the which he gate with the castell to the same belongynge, and so contynued his iourney, ỹ vpon the. xx. daye of the sayd moneth of Iulet he layed his siege before the cytie or towne of Caen, wherin were at that daye chefe capytaynes the bysshop of Bayen, the erle of Ewe, the lorde of Turnebu, ẅ other dyuerse knyghtys and men of name. Thã kyng Edwarde cõmaundid ỹ the sayd towne shuld be assaylyd, the whiche was done with so great force, & specyally ẅ suche stronge & cõtynuell shot, that the Frẽshe men forsoke the wallys & drewe theym towarde the castell, & in processe, after longe & cruell fyght, the Englysshe men entryd the towne & there toke prysoners, amõge ỹ which there was taken ỹ cõstable of Fraũce & the kynges chaũberleyne. Then the Englysshe men spoylyd & pylled the towne of Caen, & bare the pyllage vnto theyr shyppis, which after was conueyed by them into Englande. Whã kynge Edwarde had thus spoyled and brent a parte of the towne of Caen, and forcyd the bysshoppe of Bayen & the other capytaynes to take the castell for theyr refuge, cõsyderyng the strength of the same, departyd thens & so sped hym towarde ỹ cytie of Roan, chefe & pryncypall cytie of Normandye: but the Frenshe kyng with a great powar was ĩ this whyle comen vnto Roañ, & had broken the brydges & stoppyd ỹ passagis in such wyze, ỹ kyng Edwarde was fayne to leue that way, so that he costyd towarde Parys & came to a strõge towne callyd Vernon, & from thens to a towne namyd Amyrlene, at whiche townes he was resysted & lost some of his soudiours; & the. xii. day of August he came to a towne namyd Poysy, and taryed there. vi. dayes, and from thens yode vnto Seynt Germayn, & euer syr Godfrey de Harcourt, beynge in the vawarde, brent the townes & spoylyd the countrey as he went, & lyke as kynge Edwarde with his host thus passyd ỹ coũtrey towarde Parys, so in lyke maner the Frenshe kynge with his power passyd or helde his waye towarde the sayd cytie, beyng so nere sundry tymes ỹ eyther hoost had syght of other, but ỹ ryuer of Seyne was euer atwene them, so that for it they myght not ioyne in batayle. Whan kynge Edwarde was comyn to a towne callyd Seynt Clowe, he sette fyre therein, which was seen vnto Paris, whiche put the cytezyns in great fere, in so moche, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle, ỹ if the Frenshe kynge had not bene there present ỹ cytie shulde haue be yelden vnto kyng Edwarde. Thã kynge[3] seynge he myght not passe the ryuer of Seyn towarde ỹ cytie of Paris, occupyed all ỹ chefe palaysys & royall manours where ỹ Frenshe kynges were accustomed for to soiourne & lye at, & dranke the wyne and occupyed such stuffe & necessaries as he there fãde, and at his departynge set fyre vpõ them and consumed the more parte of theym; as at Poyzy one, at Seynt Germayne an other, and at Mount Ioy the thyrde, and brent the towne of Poyzy, rescruynge an house of nunnys, whiche was foundyd by Phylyppe le Beawe father vnto kynge Edwardys wyfe. Here ye shall vnderstande that the auctours or wryters fauoureth[4] theyr owne nacyon, for the Englysshe wryters say that the Frenshe kynge fledde, and brake the brydgis as he went, to the ende that the Englysshe hoost shulde not wynne to the Frenshemen to geue vnto them batayle; and the Frenshe booke sayeth that kynge Edwarde fled, and wolde not abyde batayll ẅ the Frenshmen, wherfore the Frẽshe kynge brake the brydges, to the entent that the Englysse men shulde not escape his daunger: but howe it was, as sayth an other wryter callyd Iohñ Froysarde, the cõmons of Fraunce thought it a great dishonour vnto all the lande, that the Englysshe hoost shuld so passe

Nota.

Fol. C.vi.

[1] *The edit. of* 1542 *and* 1559. *say* xi. *only.* [2] Godfrey. edit. 1559. [3] kyng Edward. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] favour eyther. MS.

thoroughe ỹ harte or myddell of Fraunce, and to occupy the kynges chefe lodgynges, and not to be foughtē with of all that season, whiche myght not be after the opynyon of the sayd cōmon people, without great treason of such as were nere about the kynge. Than kyng Edwarde was so closyd by reason of brekynge of brydges, that he was forcyd to drawe backe and to reedyfye the brydge of Poyzy, the whiche was repayred in so stronge wyse that he and his hoost passyd there ouer without parell; how be it, that in ỹ tyme of repayrynge of it, ỹ Frēshe kyng sent thyder. MM. men to lette the sayd werke, but the archers kept them of w̄ theyr shot in so sharpe maner, that the more partye of them was slayne, and ỹ werke perfyghtyd as aboue is sayd. Thā kynge Edwarde entryd the countrey of Pycardy, and the Frenshe kynge remoued from Seynt Denys vnto Seynt Germayns, and from thens to a towne callyd Aubeuyle in Poyteau, and from thens to Antoygne. In this whyle, kyng Edwarde with baner dysplayed came vnto the cytie of Beauuayze and assaylyd the towne; but the towne was wele garnyssbyd w̄ soudyours which defendyd theyr enemyes vygourously; wherfore kynge Edwarde cōciderynge he myght not lyghtly wyn̄e that towne, sette the bulwerkys on fyre, and so departyd thens and yode vnto a place callyd in Frēshe Soyngnouyle or Blanke Tache, where he passyd the water of Sum vpon a Fryday the xxv. daye of August, and lodgyd hym and his people nere vnto a forest callyd Cressy or Crecy: wherof when the Frenshe kyng was ware, anon he sped hym from the fore named towne of Antoyngne vnto Aubeuyle agayne, where after he hadde refresshyd hym and his people, he rode vnto an abbey fast by the fore named towne of Cressy. In this passe tyme, Iohn̄ duke of Normandy and sone of Phylyp de Valoys, which, as in the precedynge yere is towchyd, layd his syege vntō the castell of Aguyllon, herynge that his father was thus warreyed w̄ the kynge of Englonde, brake vp his syege and came with his strengthe vnto his father.

Bellum de Cressi.

THeyse ii. great hostis thus lodgyd within lytle compasse, nere vnto the fore named towne of Cressy, vpon the Saterdaye folowynge the feest of seynt Bartholmewe, beyng the. xxvi. day of the moneth of August, eyther cruelly assaylyd other, and foughte there a mortall & sharpe batayll, whereof in the ende kynge Edwarde gloryouslye was victour, & chacyd the Frēsh kynge. and slewe in that fyght, after the saynge of moost wryters, the kynge of Bohemy or Beame, sone of Henry ỹ emperoure. vii. or. viii. the duke of Loreyne, the erle of Alenson, brother vnto ỹ Frēshe kyng Charlys, erle of Bloys, erlys[1] of Flaunders, of Sancer, of Harcourt & of Fyennys, with dyuerse other to the noūber of. viii. bysshoppys & erlys, and. xvii. lordys of name, and of banerettys, knyghtys, & esquyers beyonde the noūber of. xvi.C. so that, as cōcludeth the Frenshe hystorye, in ỹ batayll was slayne the flowre of ỹ chyualrye of Fraūce, and of the cōmons vpon. viii.M. men, and that the realme of Fraūce that day susteynyd such confusyon that the lyke therof had not be seen many yeres passyd, and that by people and men of no reputacion as archers, by the vyolence of theyre importune shotte, whiche hors nor mā myght stōde ageyne. Than the Frenche kynge with a smalle company fledde sore hurte vnto a towne called Broy, & lodgyd there that nyght folowynge, and kynge Edwarde beynge warned that an other hoste of enemyes was cōmynge towarde hym, abode styll in ỹ same feelde, and sette good watchys & made great fyres thoroughe the hoost, and so cōtynued tyll the Munday folowinge, vpon which day in the mornynge apperyd to them a newe hoost of Frēshemen, to the which they gaue batayle, & slewē of theym more in noumbre than was slayne vpon the Saterday before; but of capytaynes or men of name the auctor rehersyth none. Than kynge Edwarde gaue great thankys vnto God of his tryumphant vyctory, and after departyd from that towne of Cressye and toke his way towarde Moustruell, and from thens to Boleyne, and lastlye to Caleys, wherof then was capytayn, vnder the Frenshe kynge, a Burgonyō knyght named syr Iohn̄ de Vyenne, to whom kynge

[1] the erlys. edit. 1533. 1542.

Edwarde

Edwarde sent ŷ he shuld delyuer vnto hym the sayde towne of Caleys; but for the kynge receyuyd from hym no comfortable answere, he immedyatly layde his siege vnto the sayd towne, which was vpō the thyrde day of the moneth of Septēbre, & there abode a certen of tyme in makynge of assautys to the same. In whiche tyme & season the erle of Derby lyinge at Burdeaux, and hauynge ŷ rule of Gascoyne and Guyan, wan dyuerse townes and holdys from the Frenshemen, as ŷ townys callyd Sayntez in Poyteawe, Seynt Iohn̄ de Angely and ŷ towne of Poytiers, in the which he hadde excedyng treasour and rychesse, so that he and his sowdyours were greatlye enrychēd by the pyllage that they wanne in those townes and countrey to them adioynaunt; and when the sayde erle hadde spoylyd the sayde townes, and brent a great parte of the foresayde cytie of Poytyers and the kynges palays within the same, he than at his pleasure retournyd vnto Burdeaux.

In this passe tyme also the Frenshe kynge, to the entente to haste kynge Edwarde into Englaude, sent Dauyd le Bruze, some tyme kynge of Scottys, into that lande with a stronge army, the which gatheryd vnto hym such lordys and knyghtys [of Scottys][1] of Scotlande as before tymes fauouryd his partye, and with theym entryd the boundys of Northumberlande and spoylyd that coūtrey without pytie: but it shall appere by other auctours ŷ this Dauyd le Bruze at this daye had recouеryd the crowne of Scotlande, & that Edward de Bayloll was than dede, which before was kynge. Then it foloweth, whan ŷ archebysshoppe of Yorke, with other lordys then lefte in Englonde, harde tell that the Scottys were thus entryd the lande, anon the saide archebysshoppe, with syr Henry Perse, syr Rafe Neuyle, and syr Gylbert Vmfreyle, knyghtys, and other gentylmen, as well spyrytuell as other, apparaylyd them in theyr best maner and sped them towarde ŷ Scottys, so that they mette with theym and gaue vnto them bataylle vpō the euyn of seynt Luke or the. xvii[2]. day of Octobre, in a place fast by Durham, callyd at that daye Neuyles Crosse, where God shewyd to the Englysshemen suche grace ŷ they scōfyted ŷ Scottys, and slewe of them great foyson, & toke prysoners the sayd Dauyd le Bruze, syr Wyllyā Dowglas, syr Thōlyn Fowkys, ẅ other of ŷ nobles of Scotlāde, ŷ which shortly after were surely conueyed vnto ŷ Towre of London, and there kepte as prysoners.

Capcio Dauyd le Bruze Regis Scocie.

Whan kynge Edwarde from the third day of Septembre, as before is sayd, had by sondry tymes assayled the towne of Caleys, & sawe well he myght nat shortly wynne it, prouyded for hym & his people to lye there all that wynter folowyng; so that for the lodgyng of hym and his hoost he made so many houses and lodges, that it semyd an other Caleys; wherfore in processe of tyme durynge ŷ siege, of the vytelers and suche as dayly resorted vnto the kynges hoost, it was named newe Caleys, where the kyng in proper persone abode all the wynter folowyng, and the more parte of the nexte somer, as after shall appere. *Fol. C.vii.*

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlvii.

Adam Bramson.

Thomas Legge[3]. Anno. xxii.

Richarde Basyngstoke.

THis. xxii. yere kynge Edwarde after the stormy wynter was ouerpassed, he cōmaunded certayne shyppes to be ioyned moo in nombre vnto suche as before had kept ŷ see, that no vytayll shuld come to ŷ inhabytauntes of Caleys, so that the sayd towne was fayne to holde theym content with suche of olde store as they had, for any newe that to them myght be cōueyed or sent; and for the kynges hoost it was plenteously vytaylled by ŷ Flemynges & by other vytayllers dayly cōmynge out of Englande.

Kynge Philip[4] hauyng dayly worde of the strength of his enemyes, and the encreace

[1] *Omitted in the* MS. *and later editions.* [2] xxvii. edit. 1559. [3] *the* MS. *adds* Skynner. [4] *In the margin opposite to this paragraph, the Museum* MS. *has* "Her of becam the name of Iacobes Doseyn, whereby the Estryrlyngs have all theyr lybertees in England."

of theym, as by Esterlynges and other nacõns that kynge Edwarde had to hym allyed, & sawe well that without the sayd towne were shortly rescowed, it shulde shortly be yolden into the handes of his enemyes, to the great hurte of all the realme of Fraunce; wherfore after a great counsayll holden at Parys, he chaunged his money to his great auauntage, and ouer that sette an inposicõn vpon his cõmons to theyr great grudge and murmure: and that done he toke his leue of seynt Denys about ỹ quyndene of Pasche, and so yode vnto a towne called Hesdom, where he taryed the gaderyng of his hoost so longe that it was nere vnto the feast of Mary Magdaleyn or his people were all assembled, at whiche season he set forthwarde to the towne of Caleys, to remoue the kyng of Englande from that siege, and so spedde hym, that aboute the ende of the moneth of Iulet he drewe nere vnto Caleys, the whiche before his cõmynge was yolden vnto kyng Edwarde; so that the Frenshe Cronycle sheweth no thynge of the Frenshe kynges shamefull departynge, lyke as it is rehersyd in ỹ Englisshe Cronycle, and of other wryters that wryteth of the same.

Capcio ville Calesie.

Than after most wryters, the towne of Caleis was yolden to kynge Edwarde aboute the ende of Septẽbre, after the kyng had contynued there his siege an hole yere, and somedeale more. After receyte wherof, he taryed in the towne vpon a moneth, and voyded clene all the olde inhabytauntes & Frenshemẽ, and storyd it with Englysshmen, and specially with Kentyshmen; & whan he had set that towne in a suyr ordre and gydynge, and grauted a peas for. ix. monethes at the request of. ii. cardynalles sent from the forenamed [pope][1] Clemẽt the. vi., to be holden atwene hym and ỹ Frenshe kyng, he sayled with great tryumphe into Englande, and came to Lõdon aboute the feast of seynt Romayne or the. xxiii. daye of Octobre, where he was ioyously receyued of the cytezyns, and so conueyed vnto Westmynster.

In this yere also, an Englysshe knyght called sir Thomas Agorn. capitayne of the Roche of Aryan, before spoken of in ỹ. xx. yere of this kyng, was fyersly warred of sir Charlys de Bloys; but after many bykerynges and skyrmysses, a day of batayll was set atwene the sayd Charlys and Thomas, or, after ỹ Frenshe bokes declaracion, the sayd Charlys assautynge that towne vpon one partie, the sayd sir Thomas ẇ a company of stalworth archers and sowdyours issued out at an other parte of the towne, and sette the sayd sir Charlys and his cõpany aboute and assayled theim in suche wyse, that in the ende the more partie of his company was taken and slayne, and the sayd sir Charlys there taken among the other, and of men of name were there slayne, the vicoũt of Roan, the lord Dernall, the lorde of Quyntyne ẇ sir William his sone, the lorde of the castell of Bret, the lord of the Roche & sir Geffrey Turneuewe, with many other men of honour whiche I passe ouer: and after the sayd Charlys was healed of suche woundes as he hadde receyued in that fyghte, he was conueyed into Englande, and there kept as a prysoner.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlviii.

Henry Pycarde.

Iohñ Lufkyn[2]. Anno. xxiii.

Symonde Dolsely[3].

IN this. xxiii. yere fyll great cõtynuell rayne from Mydsomer to Cristmasse, wherof ensued excedynge floddes, by reason wherof the grounde was sore corrupted, so that dyuers inconuenyences ensued vpon ỹ same, as sykenes and other, as in the yeres folowynge shall appere. And in Fraunce this yere the people dyed wonderfully in dyuers places of the realme, so vehemently that in the cytie of Parys dyed in this yere or lytel more ouer. l.M. people; and at Seint Denys beyonde. xiiii.M.: and in Italy and many other

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.
[2] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. Iohn Luskyn. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.
[3] Dolsell. MS.

countreys

countreys this mortalytie aboute this season reygned also importunely, and that in Hethennesse aswell as in Cristendome.

And in the ende of this yere, about ỹ ende of August, this mortalytie beganne in dyuers places of Englande, and specially at London, & so contynued to the sayde moneth of August next ensuynge, and vpon that ensued sterylite or barenesse as well of the see as of the lande, so that vytayll and corne was more scant than it was before.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlix.

Adam Bury.

Wyllyam Turke[1]. Anno. xxiiii.

Rauffe Lynne.

IN this. xxiiii. yere, the mortalytie beforesayd in Englande, and specyally in Lõdon, moost feruently raynynge, a treason, as after apperyth, was cõspyred, to haue brought the towne of Caleys agayne to ỹ Frenshe kynges possessyon. Kynge Edwarde before tyme had cõmytted one of ỹ toures of Caleys vnto a Ianuay, to whome he moche trusted, with the whiche Ianuay a knyghte of Burgoyne, named sir Godfrey de Charny, was very famylier, in so moche that the sayde sir Godfrey, at conuenyent leyser, brake vnto the said Ianuay for the betrayinge of the towne of Caleys, the whiche gaue vnto hym lykynge answer, so that the sayd Ianuay aggreyd for certayne sũme of money to be payde in hande, to delyuer vnto the sayd sir Godfrey and suche other as he then shuld bringe w̃ hym to ỹ toure that he thenne had in kepynge; by meane wherof he shulde shortly after haue ỹ rule of the towne. *Fol. C.viii.*

In tyme of dryuynge and of appoyntynge of whiche bargayne, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, this Ianuay sent secrete worde vnto the kynge of Englande, requyrynge hỹ in secrete wyse to come vnto Caleys; the whiche thenne holdynge his Cristmasse at Hauerynge Bower in Essex, vpon ỹ morowe after Newe Yeres Daye toke his shyppynge, and landed that nyght at Caleys in so secrete maner, that fewe of the towne knewe of his there beynge.

Whanne the daye of appoyntement of delyuery of this foresayd tower was cõmyn, and this Ianuay had receyued his payment, at an houre assygned atwene the said sir Godfrey and hym, a token was gyuen by this sayd Ianuay, that the Frenshemen shulde drawe nere vnto the sayd towre to wynne their praye.

Thenne the sayd sir Godfrey with a certayne nombre came within the daunger of the towne of Caleys, warnynge the resydue of his company that they shulde tary there tyll he were enterde the towne, and thenne at his sendynge to come in all spedy wyse.

But so soon as the sayde sir Godfrey was nere vnto the toure, a busshement of sowdyours were sent out at a posterne, the which closed hym and his Frenshemen vpon all sydes, and slewe of them many, amonge the which sir Henry de Boys knyght, with sir Gawtier de Valence and sir Robert of Beauuais knyghtes were slayne, and the sayd sir Godfrey taken sore wouded, and the lorde of Mountmorency escaped with great daunger, the whiche gaue warnynge vnto the other company, and retourned theym into Fraunce. Thenne the sayde Godfrey de Charney was layde vpon a borde, and so presented vnto kynge Edwarde; the whiche hadde suche pyte of hym that he commaunded his owne surgyons to looke vnto hym, and to cure hym in theyr beste maner, and whanne he was somedeale curyd, he was sente as a prysoner with other into Englande.

In this yere also the kynge caused to be coyned grotes and halfe grotes, the whiche lacked of ỹ weyghte of his former coyne. ii.*s.* vi.*d.* in a. *li.* Troy[2], and aboute the ende of August sessed the mortalyte or deth in London, the whiche was so vehement & sharpe within the sayd cytie, that ouer the bodies buryed in churches and churchyerdes, monas-

[1] Walter Turk, fyshmonger. *MS.* [2] *The* MS. *adds* "and aftir soom wryters v.*s.* in a pound Troy."

teryes and other accustomed buryinge places, was buryed that same yere in the charterhouse yerde of London. l.M. persones and aboue.

This yere also was the yere of iubyle or clene remyssyon, whiche is kepte at Rome at euery. l. wynter ende, lyke as ꝧ yere of iubyle or grace is contynued at Caunterbury.

And this yere by the laboure of. ii. cardynalles sente from [pope][1] Clement the. vi. was a peas concluded atwene the. ii. kynges of Englande and of Fraunce for a yere, nere vnto the towne of Caleys, where for the stablysshynge of the sayd peas for the sayd yere, assembled the. ii. sayd cardynalles, and for the kynge of Englande, the bysshop of Norwyche than tresourer and chief counsayller[2] of the kynge, with other vnto hym by the kynge assygned, and for the Frenshe kyng was there the bysshop of Laoñ and the abbot of Seynt Denys with other.

And the. xxiii. daye of the moneth of August, in this yere and yere of our Lorde. xiii.C. and. l. dyed Philip de Valoys kynge of Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.xlix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.l.

Iohñ Notte.

Richarde Killyngbury[3]. Anno. xxv.

Wyllyam Worcestre.

IN this. xxv. yere, aboute the feast of the Decollacion of seynt Iohñ Baptyst, in the latter ende of August, a noble man of Spayne called sir Charlys, to whom kynge Iohñ of Fraunce hadde newely gyuen the erledome of Angolesme, entendynge to wyn some honoure vpon the Englysshemen, with a stronge nauye of Spaynardes entrede the Englysshe stremys, and dyd moche harme vnto kynge Edwardes frendes; soo that the kynge aboute the season abouesayd, mette with the sayde nauy vpon the coost of Wynchelsee, where atwene the kynge and theim was a longe and mortall fyghte, to the great losse of moche people vpon both parties; but in the ende God sent vnto the kynge victory, so that he chased his enemyes, and wanne from them. xxii. of theyr shyppes, after most wryters, with many prysoners.

And this yere sir Thomas of Agorne, whiche as in the. xxii[4]. yere of this kynges reygne toke prysoner sir Charlys de Bloys and other, was slayne by chaunce medle of a knyght of Fraunce or Brytayn, called sir Rauffe de Caours.

And this yere were solempne messangers sent vnto Rome, for to cõclude and parfyte the pease atwene the. ii. kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, so that kynge Edwarde shulde resigne and gyue vp all his tytle and clayme that he made vnto the crowne of Fraunce, and ꝧ Frenshe kynge shulde clerely gyue vnto hym all the duchie of Guyan, with all suche landes as at any tyme before were taken by any of his progenytoures from it.

And that kynge Edwarde and his heyres, kynges, shuld freely holde and occupie the sayd duchie without doynge of homage to any Frenshe kynge after that daye; but the conclusion of this matier was so prolonged and deferryd by the pope[5], and suche delayes as dayly been vsed in the court of Rome, that the erle of Derby with other whiche were appoynted for the kynge of Englande, retourned without spede of their cause: wherfore kynge Edwarde made newe prouysyons to warre vpon kynge Iohñ of Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.l. Anno Domini. M.CCC.li.

Iohñ Wrothe.

Andrewe Awbry[6]. Anno. xxvi.

Gybboñ? Stayndrope.

Fol. C.iv. IN this. xxvi. yere the castel of Guynys was yolden vnto the Englysshemen dwellynge

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] chaunceler. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Kylsyngbury. MS. [4] xxi. edit. 1559. *erroneously.* [5] byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. [6] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. [7] Gilb't. MS.

in

in Caleys, whiche, as testifyeth ỹ Frenshe Cronycle, was done by treason of a Frenshe man named Guyllyam de Beauconroy; for the whiche treason the sayd Guyllam was shortly after put in execucyon in the towne of Amyas.

And aboute the myddell of August, vpon the euyn of our Lady Assumpcion, sir Guy de Neale than marshall of Fraũce with a strong companye gaue batayll vnto the Englysshmen than beynge in Brytayne, in the whiche the sayd sir Guy with the lorde of Brykebet, and the chasteleyne of Beauuays with many other noble men were slayne, and many taken prysoners.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.li. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lii.

Iohñ Peche[1].

Adam Fraunceys[2]. Anno. xxvii.

Iohñ Stodeney.

THe somer of this. xxvii. yere, was soo drye that it was many yeres after called the drye somer, for from the latter ende of Marche tyll the latter ende of Iulii fyll lytell rayne or none, by reason wherof many inconuenyences ensuyd.

And one thynge whiche is specyally noted, corne the yere folowynge was scant, wherof the pryce this yere began to enhaũce greatly, and befuys and motons were also dere for scantnesse of grasse and pasture, and that aswell was experte in Fraunce as in the ile of Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.liii.

Iohñ Welde.

Adam Fraunceys. Anno. xxviii.

Iohñ Lytell.

IN this. xxviii. yere, kynge Edwarde holdynge his parlyament at Westmynster, amonge other thynges there enacted, soon after Pentecost created the erle of Derby duke of Lancastre, and sir Rauffe Stafforde was created erle of Stafforde. Than this duke of Lancastre was sent agayne ouer the see; where in ỹ ende of this yere, as wytnessyth Iohñ Froysarde, he was appealed of the duke of Bryswyke, a duke of the countree of Almayne, of certayne wordes contrary his honoure, for the whiche he waged batayll with the sayd duke in the court of the Frenshe kynge.

Then this Henry, whiche of some wryters is named Henry Bolyngbroke duke of Lancastre, purchased his sauffe conduyt of the Frenshe kyng, and kepte his daye appoynted for that batayll, in a felde called in Frenshe Lapre Aux Clers, where for theim was ordeyned a place lyestyd and closed in goodly wyse, kynge Iohñ beyng present, with the more parte of his nobles of Fraunce; and there came in firste into that felde the forenamed duke appellaunt, and after, this noble duke of Lancastre, to ỹ great honour of all Englande, and soon after dyuers obseruaunces accordyng to the lawe of armys done, and solempne othes taken, eyther sette in the rest to haue ronne the firste course.

But kynge Iohñ of his especyall grace ceased the matier, and toke the quarell into his handes, so that eyther of theym departed the felde without any stroke strykynge, and pacyfyed the appeale to the honoure of the duke of Lancastre, as wytnessyth the Frenshe bõke, natwithstandyng he was the Frenshe kynges enemye.

And soone after the sayd duke of Lancastre, with other nobles assigned to hym by the kynge of Englande, went to Arrynyon with the archebysshop of Roan than chaũceller of Fraunce, and the duke of Burbon and other appoynted for the kynge of Fraunce, to

[1] Pecchy. MS. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer.

conclude

conclude esse a peas atwene theyr. ii. prynces; the whiche at the cytie beforesayd, were harde at length before the newe pope[1], than named Innocent the syxth, whiche also lyke to his predecessour was a Frensheman, and cardynall of Lymosyne in Normandye, called by his proper name Stephen Aubert, in cõclusion, after great argument made on eyther partie, before ỹ pope[2] and his counsayll, fynally it was agreed, that the peas atwene the. ii. kynges shuld be kept and holden inuyolate tyll Mydsomerr next folowynge.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.liii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.liiii.

Wyllyam Totyngham[3].

Thomas Legge[3]. Anno. xxix.

Richarde Smert.

IN this. xxix. yere, kynge Edwarde, by the aduyce of his counsayll, for somoche as the townes of Flaundres brake theyr promesse before tyme made, and helde nat the bandes of amyte by theym promysed by the lyfe of Iaques de Artyuele, but fauouryd the Frenshe kynges partie; therfore he withdrewe from theym the markettes and staples of wolles, that in soudry townes of Flaundres hadde than lately by the prouycion of the foresayd Iaques, to theyr great aduauntage, vsed to be kept, and ordeyned than the sayd staples to be holden in sondry good townes of Englande, as Westmynster, Chychester, Lyncolñ, Brystowe and Cauuterbury.

And shortly after Easter, the Frenshe kynge sent his eldest sone Charlys dolphynne of Vyenne into Normandy, for to take the rule of that coũtre, and specially for to sease certayne landes and castellys, whiche at that daye belonged vnto the kyng of Nauerne, whiche than was out of the Frenshe kynges fauoure for the deth of sir Charlys of Spayne, constable lately of Fraunce, that he had by his meanes murderyd [one][4] in a towne called the Aygle in Normandye, vpon. ii. yeres before passed. And whyle the sayd Dolphynne was thus besyed in Normãdy, he made suche meanes to the rulers therof, that they graunted vnto hym ayde of. iii.M. men for. iii. monethes, at their proper costes and charges.

Of this soone after sprange suche tydynges, that the kynge of Englande was enfourmed that the Frenshe kynge hadde gyuen to his sone Charlys, the duchye of Normandy, with all Gascoyne and Guyan, and how the Normannes had graũted vnto ỹ sayd Charlys. iii.M. men for. iii. monethes, to warre at theyr costes vpon the Englysshmen; which, as the Frenshe boke testyfyeth, was graunted to hym oonly to defende the kynge of Nauarne, that came to Constantyne shortly after, for to repossesse all suche landes as the sayd Dolphyn of his had there seased; and for that with a bygge armye made warre vpon the sayde Dolphyn. *Fol. C.x.*

But were it thus or otherwyse, trouth it is, as dyuers wryters agreen, in the moneth of Octobre and ende of this yere prynce Edwarde with a great hoost entred Gascoyne, and passed by Tholouse, and passed the ryuer of Gerounde or Geroñ, & so passed by Carcassyon, and brent the bulwerkes of that cytie, & from thens he rode to Narboñ in pyllynge and spoylynge the countre as he went.

And in the same yere kynge Edwarde with his power landed at his towne of Caleys, where he restyd hym by all the tyme of this mayres yere.

And in this yere was the hous of the Freres Augustynes of London fynysshed, whiche was reedyfied by sir Humfrey Bohum erle of Hertforde and Essex, whose body lyeth buryed in the quere of ỹ sayd howse or churche the hygh aulter.

Anno Domini.M.CCC.liiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lv.

Thomas Forster.

Symon Fraunceys[5]. Anno. xxx.

Thomas Brandon.

IN this. xxx. yere, the kynge, as ye before haue harde, beynge at Caleys shortly after

[1] Bysshop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] Tontyngham. edit. 1542. [3] Skynner. MS. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [5] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer.

the

the feast of Alhalloyne, toke his iourney towardes the Frenshe kynge, and contynued his iournay tyll he came vnto a towne named Hesden, and brake there the Frenshe kynges parke & toke suche pleasurs as hym there lyke[1], in which season of his there beynge tydynges were brought vnto hym that the Scottes hadde goten the towne of Berwyke, and howe they made dayly assautes to wynne the castell, wherfore the kynge made the more hasty spede and retourned to Caleys, and so into Englãde: for whiche cause sayth the Frenshe Cronycle ỹ kynge Edwarde fledde from the Frenshe kynge, that than with a stronge power came frome Amyas vnto Seynt Omers.

Thanne kynge Edwarde spedde hym into Scotlande, so that in the moneth of Ianuarii and begynnyng of his. xxx. yere of his reygne, and. xxvii. daye of the sayd moneth, he layde his siege to the towne of Berwyke, and hadde it yolden vnto hym in shorte processe of tyme after; and that done he entred ferther into the lande and subdued the chief townes and holdes, as he went & pursued the Scottisshe kynge soo narrowly, that in the ende he was fayne to submytte hym to the kynges grace as prysoner, and resygned his power into the kynges hande. And whan kynge Edwarde hadde sette that countre in a rule he retourned with the Scottysshe kynge agayne into Englande, & called his court of parlyament at Westmynster: in the whiche, amonge other thynges to the kynges aduantage, was graunted, to the mayntenaunce of his warres. l. s. of a sak of woll, for the terme of. vi. yeres; but it contynued lenger, though the marchauntes staplers ther at grudgyd.

Thanne lette vs nowe retourne vnto that noble prynce Edwarde, the firste begoten sone of the kyng, whiche by all this tyme warred vpon the Frenshemen, as in the precedynge yere is touched: so that lastly he retournyd to Burdeaux with many rich prysoners and pyllages to the great honour of hymselfe, and the great auauncement of his sowdyoures. And albeit that in that countrees whiche he then passed, were the erles of Armenak, and of Foyze, of Potyers, & of Cleremount, with sir Iames de Burboñ, and many other knyghtes, the whiche hadde dowble the people, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, that the prynce had, yet passed he from Tholous to Nerboñ, and fro Nerboñ to Burdeaux withoute batayll.

And after the prynce hadde there a whyle rested hym & his people, and sente dyuers of his prysoners into Englande, he with his hoost entrede the prouynce or countre of Berry, in the moneth of Iulet, and made therin sharppe and cruell warre. In whiche season also the duke of Lancastre, with the ayde of Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauarne, was entred the coũtre of Constãtyne, and so with a companye of. iiii. M. men came vnto a place called Lyseux, vpon [the see coste, and remoued a siege of Frenshemen that had lyen at that castell vpon.][2] viii. wekes, and after repayred the sayd castell.

Whanne kynge Iohn had leuyed many great sũmes of money to the great grudge of his cõmons [and rebellyon of some of the sayd cõmons][2] as in the story of kynge Iohñ shall be towched, and apperyd[3] his hoost, he firste made towarde the duke of Lancastre; but the sayd duke hadde so fortifyed the passage, that he myghte nat wynne to hym without great ieopardy and daunger: wherfore he lafte that way, and yode to a castell named Bretnell, and layde his siege therunto and wanne it in ỹ ende of. viii. wekes by appoyntment. Thenne he yode to ỹ castell of Chartres, and taryed there a certayne tyme for more people; and frome thens tooke his iourney towarde prynce Edwarde, the whiche prynce in this season was passed the ryuer of Loyre or Leyre, and so by the towne of Romungtyne, where he was encoũtred of dyuers nobles of Fraunce, and hadde with theym a sharpe conflict; but in the ende God sent to hym the victorye, so that he slewe many of his enemyes, and toke of theym many prysoners, amõge the whiche were taken the lorde of Craoñ, and a knight called sir Bouciqñt, with dyuers other to ỹ nombre, as

[1] lyked. [2] *Omitted in edit.* 1542. 1559. [3] prepared.

sayth the Frenshe boke, of. liiii. persones. And whan he hadde sent the sayde prysoners vnder sauffe kepynge to Burdeaux, he sped hym towarde Towrys.

And the duke of Lancastre with his company, after he hadde repayred the foresayd castell of Lyseux, and bestowed suche ordenaunce as the Frenshemen for haste lafte behynde theym at the sayde siege, he than toke his waye towarde Bertneyll, and from thens vnto Enroux, in byrnynge and wastynge the countre and townes as he went, and from thens to Vermeyll in Perche, and toke by strengthe bothe the towne & castell, [and whan he hadde spoyled and pylled the towne he sette it on fyre, and brent a great parte therof,]¹ and whan he hadde done moche of his wyl in that countre, he retourned into Brytayne and helde hym there.

Kynge Iohñ thenne, as aboue is sayd, holdynge his waye towarde prynce Edwarde, came to the cytie of Towrys to fortyfye the sayd towne agayne the sayd prynce Edwarde, wherof, heryng ŷ prynce toke his waye towarde Poytiers; in holdynge of whiche waye, as testifyeth the Frenshe booke, a parte of his hoost mette with an hoost of Frenshemen, and gaue vnto theym batayll, and at length chasyd the multytude of them, and slewe an hondreth sowdyours, & toke vpon. lx. prysoners, amonge the whiche were taken the erle of Sauncer, the erle of Iurrygny, the lorde chastelleyn maister of the kynges palays, and a knyght named sir Guylliam de Denebam.

The which prysoners were also sent vnto Burdeaux, and soone after prynce Edwarde lodgyd hym and his hoost nere vnto Poytiers, and shortly after that came the Frenshe kyng and lodgyd hym in a place called in Frensh Chamgny, nere also vnto Poytiers; so *Fol. cxl.* that the frontes of bothe hoostes laye within a quarter of a myle: than the cardynall of Pernigourt, sent from pope Innocent the. vi²., rode atwene the kynge and the prynce sondry tymes to haue agreed some treatye and peas atwene theym, if it myght by his laboure haue ben opteyned; but whan he sawe his labour myght nat preuayle, he departed to Poytiers, and taryed there the ende of the batayll. The whiche was foughten vpon a Mondaye, the. xix. daye of Septembre, in the yere of our Lorde. xiii. C.lvi. and begynnynge of the. vi. yere of ŷ sayd kynge Iohñs reygne, as [by this fygure here vnder apperyth, and]³ after shalbe shewed.

THan as before is said, for so moche as the foresayd cardynall myght nat purchase any treaty or meane of peas atwene these. ii. prynces, prouycion was made vpon both sydes to trye theyr matier by mortall batayll; so that about ŷ houre of. ii. at after noone of ŷ foresayd Monday, the duke of Athenesse or Athens, with suche other nobles as were with hym in the Frenshe kynges vawewarde, set vpon ŷ Englysshe hoste, the whiche was myghtely fensyd with wood and tryes⁴ in suche wyse, ŷ the Frenshe sperys myght nat wyn vnto them, and therwith the shotte of the Englysshmen was so fyers and sharpe, that it turnyd ouer horse and man.

Bellū de Poytiers in quo bello Iohēs rex Francie per Edwardū pricipē Angl' capt fuit vnacū q̄mplurimis aliis nobilibus Francie vt patet in historia.

And whyle the said duke of Athenesse with sir Iohñ de Cleremount, than marshall of Fraūce, with other, thus assayled the prynce & his people vpon one parte, the duke of Normandye, kynge Iohñs eldest sone, and the duke of Orleaunce, the kynges brother, assayled hym vpon another parte, the whiche. ii. dukes were leders of. ii. stronge hoostes; but as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle, these. iii. bataylles dyd lytell scath vnto the Englysshemen.

But by reason of theyr shotte they were so woūded and many slayne, that the resydue fledde, to the great discomfort of the Frenshe kynges people. Than kyng Iohñ in all that he myght, comforted his people, and with a fresshe company set vpon the Englysshemen, that all wayes kepte theym hole togyder, and receyued the Frenshmen vpon their wepens poyntes with so great force, that in the ende ŷ Frenshemen gaue backe and were vaynquysshed, by the helpe of God [and seynt George]⁵, and slayne, as wytnessyth the

¹ *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. ² Innocent the vi. byshope of Rome. edit. 1542. ³ *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. ⁴ trees. ⁵ *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

sayde Frenshe Cronycle, to the nombre of. xvii.C[1]. men of armys, besyde other meane sowdyours; among the which of noble men were slayne, the duke of Burbone, the duke of Athenes, sir Iohñ de Cleremount marshal of Fraũce, sir Reynolde Camyan baneret, (whiche that daye bare the oryflambe, a speciall relyke that the Frenshe kynges vse to bere before them in all battayles,) and the bysshop of Chalons with dyuers other, to the nombre of. liiii. banerettes, besyde knyghtes and other. And of prysoners taken at that batayll, was Iohñ kynge of Fraunce, Philyp his. iiii. sone, sir Iaques de Burbon erle of Poytiau and brother vnto the duke of Burboñ before slayne, sir Iohñ of Artoys erle of Ewe, sir Charlys his brother erle of Longeuyle, sir Guyfiarde cosyn germayne vnto the Frenshe kynge, [sir Iohñ de Melcoun erle of Cancaruyle,][2] sir Iohñ his sone & heyre, doctour Willyam archebysshop of Sens, sir Symon Meleon brother vnto the erle of Cancaruyle and erle of Vantadurre, the erles of Dampmatyne, of Vendosme, of Salysbruche, of Moyson, the marshall of Deneham, and many other, as banerettes, knyghtes, & men of name, to the nombre, as sayth ỹ Frenshe Cronycle, of. xvi.C[1]. & aboue. And from this batayll escaped by flyght, Charlys eldest sone of kynge Iohñ and duke of Normandye, the duke of Orleaũce & ỹ duke of Amow, w̃ fewe other of great fame; the whiche yode streyght vnto Parys, where shortely after was called a great counsayll, for matyers, whiche in the story of kynge Iohñ shall after be shewyd.

Whan the felde was thus fynysshed, prynce Edwarde, after dewe thankes and louynges gyuen to God [and seynt George][3] for this tryumphaunt victory, he with his sayd prysoners spedde hym towarde Burdeaux, where the sayd kynge was kepte tyll Easter after.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lv. Anno Domini M.CCC.lvi.

Richarde Notyngham.

Henry Pycharde. Anno. xxxi.

Thomas Dosell[4].

IN this. xxxi. yere, that is to saye the. xvi. daye of the moneth of Apryll, the noble prynce Edwarde, thanne vpon ỹ age of. xxviii. yeres, toke shyppynge with his prysoners at Burdeaux, & arryued in Englande shortly after. And the. xxiiii. daye of May he was with great honoure and gladnesse receyued of the cytezyns of London, and so conueyed vnto the kynges palays at Westmynster; where the kyng syttynge in his astate in Westmynster hall, receyued hym with due honoure, and after conueyed to a lodgynge for hym prouyded, where he laye a certayne season: and after was the sayde Frenshe kynge hadde vnto a place called Sauoy, whiche thenne was a pleasaunt palays and fayre lodgynge belongyng that tyme vnto the duke of Lancastre, and after brent and dystroyed by Iak Strawe and his fawtours, in the. iiii[i]. yere of Richarde the seconde, nexte kynge of Englande, as in the sayde yere after shalbe shewed, in whiche place the sayde Frenshe kynge laye longe after.

And in the wynter folowynge were royall iustes holden in Smythfelde of London, and many goodly and knyghtly feates of armys doon to the great honoure of the kynge, and all his realme and gladdynge of al beholdours; at the whiche disporte was present, the kynge of Englande, the Frenshe kynge and the kynge of Scottes, with many noble astates of all ỹ thre prouynces or kyngdoms, wherof the more partie of the straungers were thanne prysoners.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lvii.

Stephyn Caundysshe.

Iohñ Stody[5]. Anno. xxxii.

Bartylmewe Frostelynge.

IN this. xxxii. yere, [pope][6] Innocent the. vi. of that name[7], sente into Englande. ii.

[1] viii.C. edit. 1542. 1559. *erroneously.* [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] xv.C. edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] Dollsell. MS. [5] iij. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] *The* MS. *adds* Vyntener. [7] *The* edit. of 1542. *adds* then byshop of Rome.

cardynalles to treate of a peas atwene the. ii. kynges; the whiche. ii. cardynalles taryed the more parte of a yere in London and other places of the lande, to brynge theyr purpose to some effecte, but they spedde lytell of their cause.

And in this yere, after moste wryters, Dauyd le Bruze[1] of Scottes was delyuered from the castell of Odyham at his lybertie, whan he hadde put kynge Edwarde in a suertie of an hondreth. M. markes for his raunsome.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lviii.

Fol. C.xii.

Iohñ Bernes.

Iohñ Luffyn[2]. Anno. xxxiii.

Iohñ Buris.

IN this. xxxiii. yere, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle, sir Robert Knollys, syr Iames Pype, with other of theyr retynewe, warred in Brytayne, and, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, in the moneth of Marche, and. x. daye of the sayde moneth, the sayde capytaynes with one which the Frenshe boke nameth Thomlyn Fowke, came erely in the mornynge vnto a towne that was nere vnto Ancerre, called Regennez, beynge in the rule of Englysshmen, where ŷ sayd capitaynes takyng w̄ them more strēgth, yode streight vnto ŷ foresayd towne of Ancerre, beyng within. ii. Englysshe myles, and scaled ŷ wallys with ladders, and quyt theym so manfully, that they hadde the rule of the towne or the sonne rysynge. And in that castell was taken prysoner, sir Guyllyam de Chalon, the sone of the erle of Ancerre, his wyfe, and many other; in takynge of whiche towne castell[3] fewe folkes were slayne, howe be it there were of armyd men aboue. MM., as sowdyours to defende the towne. Thenne the Englysshemen serchyd so nere, that, as the cōmon fame went, they fande iuellys[4] as they hadde been preuy to the hydynge of theym, and that of great value; amonge the whiche, as sayth ŷ sayd Cronycle, they fande certayne skyñes, the whiche were valued at. v. M. motons of golde.

Ye shall vnderstande that a moton is a coyne vsed in Fraunce and Brytaygne, and is of value, after the rate of sterlynge money, vpon. v.*s.*, or thereabout. Whanne the Englysshemen hadde pylled and spoyled the towne by the space of. viii. dayes, and raunsomed suche as were of any substaūce, then they shewed vnto the rulers of the towne that they wolde sette it vpon a fyre, except that they wolde gyue vnto theym a certayne sūme of money, for the whiche, after longe treaty of this matyer, the rulers of the towne to haue[5] possessyon thereof, and to haue it preserued from fyre, agreed to gyue vnto the Englysshe capitaynes. xl. M. motons, and. lx. perlys, valued at. x. M. motons, whiche. l. M. motons shulde amount, after ŷ rate of sterlyng money, to. xii. M. and. v. C. *li.* or nere aboute. So that what they fande within that towne of any value, they bare it with theym, except the iuellys and ornamentes of the churche of seynt Germayne, the whiche goodes & iuellys they toke for pledge of such money as was vnpayde of ŷ foresayd. xl. M. motons of golde, for the raunsome of the towne; for the whiche goodes, the towne of Ancerre was bounde vnto ŷ hedes of the churche to paye for, or to redeme the sayde goodes by the feastes of Mydsomer nexte folowyng, or ellys to paye yerely, in perpetuyte, to the sayd churche i maner of quyte rent. iii. M. motōs[6], whereof ŷ value is shewed in ŷ first chapitre or[7] Philip the. iiii. And ouer all this, the dwellers of the towne agreed that the Englysshmen shuld brene the gates of the towne, & in dyuers parties of the towne, thorugh the wallys to ŷ groūde.

Vpon. iiii. dayes folowynge the ende of the sayde agrement, the foresayd sir Iamys Pype, and sir Othan of Holande, and other, to ŷ nombre of. xvi. or xviii. Englysshmen,

[1] kyng of. [2] Iohn Luffkyn, Grocer. MS. [3] towne and castell. [4] goodis & ioywellis. MS.
[5] haue agayn. MS. [6] florynys. MS. *The mistake of* motons *runs through all four editions.* [7] of.

entendyng

entendyng to haue wone some enterpryse, were layde for by the sowdyours of a place called the great Semir, and by theym taen and holden as prysoners.

And in the moneth of Aprill next ensuynge, a towne, called in Frenshe Dabygny sur le Metre, was by the Englysshemen gotten in lyke maner and fourme as was the foresayd towne of Ancerre. And the. ii. daye of May was wonne by sir Robert Knolles, and his company, a towne called Chasteleyn sur Louuayn, and pylled it as they dyd the other, and after with theyr pyllage and prysoners, amonge the whiche were many women and childerne of. iiii. and of. v. yeres of age, the sayd Englysshemen yode to the newe castell vpon Loyre, and ye shall vnderstande that ỹ partie of the Englysshemen was greatly strengthed by the helpe of the kynge of Nauarne, & of sir Philip, his brother, & other, as more playnely shalbe shewed in the Frenshe Cronycle, or story of kynge Iohñ folowynge: and thus the sayd sir Robert Knolles, with ayde of the kynges men of Nauarne, dayly wanne many townes and stronge holdes in Bretayne.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lix.

Symonde Wymondham'.

Symonde Doffelde'. Anno. xxxiiii.

Iohñ Chychester.

IN this. xxxiiii. yere, or more veryly in the moneth of Nouembre, and ende of ỹ. xxxiii. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne, he, with prynce Edward, and the duke of Lancastre, with a puyssant army, landed at Caleys, and from thens passed by lande vnto Artoys, and by Vermendoys, to the cytie of Reynes, and layde his siege aboute that cytie, & beclypped it in such wyse, ỹ no man myght entre or go out of the cytie wout lycence of the Englysshemen.

Whanne kynge Edwarde had lyen. xl. dayes at the siege of Reynes, without great dere or hurte vnto it doynge, he remoued his siege, and passed by ỹ countre of Champayne, tyll he came to a towne called Guyllon, where ỹ kynge restyd hym a season; in whiche tyme came vnto hym certayne men of the duchie of Burgoyne, as lordes of dyuers holdes and townes within that duchery, and gaue vnto hym, to the entent he shulde nat molest or hurte that coũtre. CC. M. floryns of golde, which is to the value of sterlyng money, of. xxxv. M. *li.*; and ouer that the sayd Burgonyons couenaunted with hym, that they wolde mynystre to hym & his hoost such vitayles as was in that countre plentuously for his money. And that done, he departed from thens, & yode vnto Neuers, and passed there the ryuer of Dyon, or Ion, and yode to Colanges vpon Ioñ, and from thens in the moneth of Marche, and begynnynge of his. xxxiiii. yere of his reygne, he yode by the countre of Gastenoys, towarde the cytie of Parys. And prynce Edwarde with his cõpany, passed by Moret, tyll he came to an holde whiche Englysshemen than kepte, called Tournellys, or Cournellys, before the whiche towne or holde laye, at that season, certayne Frenshemen in a stronge bastyle, and assayled the Englysshe men dayly, and remoued nat thens. Albeit they were monysshed of the prynces cõmynge, they trusted so moche *Fol. C.xiii.* in the strengthe of theyr bastyle, which them disceyued; for within. v. dayes of ỹ prynces cõmynge theyr bastyle was goten, and many of theym slayne, and to the nombre of. xlvii. persones of that company taken prysoners, amonge the whiche were. iiii. men of name, that is to say, the lorde of Bouyle, or Bouile, the lorde of Daygreuyle, or of Aygreuyle, sir Iohñ de Barres, and sir Wyllyam de Plassies.

Thus kynge Edwarde w̃ his people spedyng his iourney towarde Parys, vpon the Tuysday, beynge ỹ laste daye of Marche in the weke before Easter, came vnto a place called the Hostell of Chastelon, betwene Mountlehery and Chastes, and lodged hym a certayne

[1] Bedyngton. MS. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer.

of his people there; and the prynce with other lordes of his hoost were lodged in the townes theraboute, from thens vnto the towne of Corueyll[1] and an other towne called Longe Iumell.

Thanne Charlys, eldest sone of kynge Iohñ, and at that daye regent of Fraunce, made meanes of treaty whiche was laboured by a frere called Symonde de Langres, prouyncyall of the Freres Iacobynes and legat of the pope[2], by whose meanes a daye of treaty was appoynted to be holden vpō Good Fryday in the maledery of Le Longe Iumell; where at the same daye and place apperyd for kynge Edwardes partye the duke of Lancastre, the erles of Warwyk and of Northamptoñ, with syr Iohñ de Chaude, syr Waltier de Maury[3], and sir Wyllyam Cheyny, knyghtes, and for the regent apperyd there the lorde of Fewe, thanne constable of Fraunce, the lorde Boncyquant than marshall of Fraunce, the lorde of Sarancyers, the lorde of Vygnay of the countre of Vyenñe, sir Symond Bucy, and sir Guycharde de Auglie, knyghtes, whiche treaty came to none effecte.

Wherfore kynge Edwarde, vpon the Tuysdaye folowynge Easter day, remoued from the sayde Hostell, and lodgyd hym nere vnto Parys, at a place named Chastelloñ, nere vnto Mountrouge, and the resydue of his hoost was lodgyd at Vaunys, at Vaugerart, at Gentylly, and other townes there aboute. Thanne vpon the Frydaye folowynge, beynge the. x. daye of Apryll, by meanes of the abbot of Clugny, whiche newely was sent from the pope[2] Innocent the. vi. the foresayd lordes and knyghtes agayne assembled at a place called the Banlyen to treate of an accorde atwene the kynge and the regent; but theyr labour was spent in vayne as it before had ben.

Vpon the Sondaye next folowynge, a parte of the kynges hoost came before the towne of Parys and enbataylled theym in a felde faste by Seynt Marcellys, and taryed there from ỹ mornynge tyll. iii. of the clok at after noone to abyde batayll of the Frenshemen; the whiche made noone issue oute of cytie[4], natwithstandynge that, as testyfyeth ỹ Frenshe boke, within Parys at that day were great plente of sowdyours, ouer and besyde the great foyson of the enhabytauntes of the same.

Whanne the Englysshemen perceyued that they shulde haue noo batayll of the Parysiens, they, aboute thre at after noone, departed the felde, and toke theyr waye towarde Chartres, and so vnto Bonneuale nere vnto Chaceadon. Thenne kynge Edwarde was lodged at a place called Dones, to the whiche place came vnto hym out of Parys the bysshoppe of Beauuays, thañe chaunceller of Normandy, with other, and so behaued theym vnto the kynge that a newe daye of treaty was appoynted to be holden at Bretynguy, within a myle or lytel more of Chartres foresayd, vpon the first day of Maii next ensuynge.

AT whiche daye of appoyntement the foresayd duke of Lancastre, with the sayd erles of Warwyk & Northamptoñ, and other, at the sayde place apperyd for kynge Edwarde, and for the regent apperyd there ỹ forenamed bysshop, with many other lordes and knyghtes and spirituell men, to the nombre of. xxii. persones, whose names I ouer passe for lengthyng of tyme, the whiche soo dylygently behaued theim that in the space of. viii. dayes they agreed vpon an vnyte and peas, the whiche was comprysed in. xli. articles, as at length is rehercyd in the Frenshe Cronycle, wherof the effect is this.

Firste, the kynge of Englande and his heyres kynges, with all the landes as he than hadde in Gascoyne and Guyan, shulde haue to hym and his heyres for euer, the cytie and castell of Poytiers, with all the appertenaunces to that lordshyp belongynge; also the cytie of Lymoges, with all the landes of Lymosyne and all other theyr appertenaunces;

[1] Corbueyll. MS. [2] bisshop of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] Manny. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] the cytie.

The

the cytie and castell of Perigort, with all landes and reuenues to that lordshyp belongyng; the erledome of Bygorre, w all thynges to that lordshyp belonge[1]; the erledome of Poyteau, with all the appertenaunces; the signorie of Beleuyle; the lordshyp of Exanctes, Exaucdoure, and Exaucõn; the cytie of Agen; the cytie of Agenoys; the cytie of Caours, and lordshyp of Caoursyn; the cytie of Tarbe; the cytie & countre of Gaure, Angoulesme, of Rodes, and of Rouerñ; the lordshyp of Mõstruell, with al reuenues therunto belongynge; the sygnorye of Caleys, of Marqueli, of Sandgate and Colyngñ; the lordshyp of Hammys, of Walys, and of Ouye; and the erledome of Guynes, with all profytes therunto belongyng. All whiche lordshyppes, honoures, castelles, toures, cyties, and townes, the kynge of England, than Edwarde the thirde, and his heyres kynges of Englande, shuld haue and holde for euermore, in as ryal wyse and lyke maner as done the kynges of Fraunce, wout doynge for theym any homage, fealtye, or other duetye.

And kynge Edwarde after that daye, for hym and his heyres kynges of Englande, shulde clerely renounce and gyue ouer all his tytle, ryght and interest that he hadde vnto the crowne of Fraunce, and specially the name of kyng of Fraũce.

Also all his ryght and tytle that he hadde vnto the duchye of Normandye, of Thorayn, of Amowe[2], of Brytayne, & of the soueraryntie of the erldome of Flaundres, and of all other lordshyppes, cyties, castelles, honours, townes, towres and manoures, that any kynge of Englande before that day had any right vnto win the realme of Fraũce, and to holde hym contente with the abouenamed lordshippes, without any ferther clayme.

Nota de redemptione regis Francie.

Ferthermore it was agreed, that the Frenshe kyng shuld pay for his raũsome thre millyons of scutes of golde, wherof. ii. shuld alway make a noble Englysshe. Ye shall vnderstande ỹ a myllyon of scutes is. x.C. thousande of scutes, which extende after ỹ value of sterlynge money, vnto the sũme of. CC.l.M. marke; and so thre millions amounte vnto. vii. hondreth &. l.M. marke, which maketh iuste. v. hondreth thousande pounde of sterlynge money: of the whiche. iii. millions of scutes, x. hondreth. M. to be payde at Caleys by the firste daye of Iunii next folowynge the sayd treaty, and an other. x.C.M. or million to be payde at the sayd towne of Caleys, within. viii. monethes after the Frenshe kyng was cõmyn vnto Caleys, and the thirde million to be payde at London in ii. yeres and an halfe, that is to say, at Mighelmasse. xii. monethes after the agrement made. iiii.C.M. scutes, and at Mighelmas nexte after ensuynge. iiii.C.M. scutes, and at Easter than next folowyng. CC. thousande scutes, in full payment of the thre millions. or. xxx.C. thousande scutes.

And further it was agreed, that after the Frenshe kynge was comen vnto Caleys, he shulde reste hym there. iiii. monethes; wherof the firste moneth shuld be at the charge of kynge Edwarde, and the other. iii. monethes to be at ỹ coste & charge of the sayd Frenche kyng, and to pay for euerych of ỹ sayd thre monethes, if he so longe taryed there for the perfourmaunce of the sayd accorde. x.M. royalles of Fraunce, which at that tyme were in value after the rate of sterlynge money, euery royall. xxi.*d.* or. xiiii. sous Parys, and so he shuld paye for a monethes charge. viii.C.lxxv.*li.* *Fol. C.xiiii.*

And ouer that it was accorded that the Frenshe kynge Iohñ, for that tyme beynge, nor no kynge of Fraunce after hym, shall ayde or assyste the Scottes agayne kyng Edwarde, nor agayne his heyres kynges of Englande.

Nor kynge Edwarde nor his heyres, kynges, shall allye theym with ỹ Flemynges, nor ayde nor assyste theym agayne the sayd kynge Iohñ, nor heyres[3] kynges of Fraunce.

And for the tytle or right of the duchye of Brytayne, whiche was in questyon atwene the erles of Bloys and of Mountforde, it was accorded that both kynges beynge at Caleys, the sayd parties shuld be called before theym, and if a peas atwene theim by the. ii. kynges myght nat be sette, then the sayd kynges to assygne certayne indyfferent persones to agre the sayd erles, and they to haue halfe a yere of respyte for to quyet ỹ matyer; and if the said persones so by the kynges assygned myghte nat agree the sayd erles by the terme,

[1] belongynge. [2] Anjow. edit. 1559. [3] his heyres.

that

that then eyther of the sayd erles to make the beste puruyaunce for hym selfe, that eyther of theym coude make ẅ the helpe of his frendes or otherwyse, wherby they myghte attayne to theyr ryght and clayme of the sayd duchye.

Prouyded alway that nouther of the sayd kynges nor of theyr sõnes shuld ayde or assyste any of the sayd erles, by reason wherof the peas atwene theym accorded myght be lowsed or broken. Also prouyded is, ẏ whether[1] of the sayd. ii. erles the sayde duchye falle, by sentence of man or otherwyse, that the homage for it shall alwaye be done to the kynge of Fraunce.

All whiche ordenaũces and agrementes, with many moo that wolde aske longe leysour to wryte, were ratysfyed and confermyd by the instrumentes and seales of the prynce of Walys, vpon the partie of kynge Edwarde for Englandes partie, and by Charlys regent of Fraunce for that partie, as by theyr letters patentes thanne sealed apperyd, berynge date, that one at Louers in Normandy, the. xvi. day of May, in the yere of grace. xiii. hondreth and. lx., and that other at Parys the. x. daye of the sayde moneth and yere.

And ouer ẏ eyther of the sayd. ii. prynces, that is to saye Edwarde prynce of Walys was sworne in presence of. vi. Frenshe knyghtes, vpon the sacrament of ẏ aulter, after the thirde agnus was sayd, in tyme of a lowe masse at the foresayd Louuers songe or sayd, that he to the vttermost of his power shuld vpholde and kepe the foresayd peas in euery poynt, as ferre as in hym was: and in lyke maner was Charlys than regent of Fraunce, sworne[2] in presence of. vi. Englysshe knyghtes to perfourme the same.

After whiche treaty thus fynysshed & ended, kynge Edwarde with his sõnes and nobles of Englande, toke shyppynge at Humflete in Normãdy vpon the. xx. day of Maii, and sayled into Englande, leuynge behynde hym the erle of Warwyk for to gyde the Englysshmen that remayned in Guyan and other places, and to se that the peas whiche then was proclaymed thorough Fraunce were kept, & nat broken by them, whiche endured nat longe without vyolacion, as saythe the Frenshe boke.

HEre I leue a parte ẏ great reioysynge and honourable receyuynge of the kyng by the cytezyns of Lõdon, & other ceremonyes whiche at that season I spare, to thentent I may the more substancially shewe vnto you the fynall ende of this accorde. Than trouth it is that in this season of ẏ kynges beyng in Fraũce, kyng Iohñ for his more consolacõn was remoued from Sauoy vnto the Toure of London, where after the kynges retourne, he fested the kynge and his lordes vpon the. xiiii. day of the moneth of Iunii: and the. viii. daye of the moneth of Iulet next ensuynge, the Frenshe kyng in the morenynge landed at Caleys and was lodged in the castel, & there abode the cõmynge of kynge Edwarde.

Vpon the. ix. daye of Octobre kyng Edwarde arryued at Caleys, and went streyght vnto the castell for to vysyte kynge Iohñ, the whiche welcomyd hym in a louynge and frendly coũtenaũce: and whan the kynge shuld departe to his lodgynge into the towne, the Frenshe kyng requyred hym ẏ he ẅ his sõnes shulde dyne with hym vpon the morowe folowynge, whiche of ẏ kynge was graũted to be vpon the Monday folowyng, ẏ. xii. daye of the sayd moneth. At whiche daye kynge Edwarde was firste sette & kept the astate, and then secundaryly the Frenshe kynge, thirdely the prynce of Walys, and fourthly the duke of Lancastre, without moo at that table: in the tyme of whiche dyner came to the castell the erle of Flaundres, whom ẏ Frenshe kynge welcomyd in moste louynge maner. And whan the sayde dyner with all honour was ended. ii. of the kynges sõnes of Englande, and. ii. of the Frenshe kynges toke leue of theyr faders, and rode towarde Boleyñ, where at that tyme the regent of Fraũce was; the which mette theym in the mydde way atwene Caleys and Boleyñ, and so conueyed theym vnto Boleyñ, and restyd there with theym that nyghte.

[1] that to whether. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] sworn at Paris. MS.

And

And vpon the morowe laſt theym there, and hym ſelfe came vnto Caleys firſte to his fader, and after his fader & he came bothe to the kynges paleys to dyner, whiche kynge Edwarde receyued with moche ioye & honour, and made vnto them a sumptuous feast. Vpon the. xiiii. daye of Octobre the sayd regent departed from Caleys, and retourned vnto Boleyñ, and the. ii. sonnes of kynge Edwarde retournyd from Boleyn to Caleys.

And vpon a Saterdaye, the. xiiii[e]. daye of the moneth of Octobre, both kynges beynge in. ii. trauersys, & in one chapell at Caleys, a masse was said before them; to ỹ offeryng of whiche masse nouther of theym came; but whanne the pax was borne firſte to the Frenshe kynge & eſt to kyng Edwarde, and eyther refused to kysse it firſte, the Frenshe kynge roose vp & came towarde kynge Edwarde, wherof he beynge ware roose vp and mette with hym, and refuced the pax, and kyssed eyther other: at the whiche masse eyther of theym was solemply sworne to maynteyne ỹ articles of the sayde peas, and for more assuraunce of ỹ same, many lordes vpon both parties were also sworne to maynteyne the same to theyr powers. Ye shall also vnderstande that in this season, that the Frenshe kyng soiournyd thus at Caleys, both for ỹ payment of his raunsom and also for the delyuery of certeyne holdes and townes which as yet were nat delyuered, he put in suche suerties as foloweth, the duke of Oulyaunce, the duke of Burgoyn, the duke of Burbone, the erles of Angeou, of Poyteau, of Bloys, of Alenson, of Seynt Poule, of Escamps, of Valētynoys, of Brame, of Ew, of Lōgeuyle, of Cancaruyle, of Ancerre, of Dampmartyne, of Vendature, of Salisbruge, and of Vendosme; the vicountes of Baudemount, of Beawmount and of Ancuerre; the lordes of Craon, of Deruall, of Dabyguy, of Consy, of Fyers, of Preaux, of Seynt Venant, of Garanciers, of Aluerne, of Moūtmorency and of Angest, and also the lorde or wardeyne of the forestes, and knyghtes, sir William de Craon, sir Lowys de Harcourt, sir Iohñ de Layguy and sir Galtier de Donebam. Of the whiche. xxxvii[e]. persones, dyuers of theim, as before is touched, were taken prysoners at the batayll of Poytiers; for the whiche it was agreed, that as many as had nat payde theyr fynance before the thirde daye of May last past, shulde be acquyted by the kynges fynaunce, with dyuers other cōdycions whiche I passe ouer. *Fol. C.xv.*

Than vpon the morowe folowynge of the takynge of the foresayd othe by the. ii. kynges, that is to saye, Sonday, the. xxv. daye of Octobre, the Frenshe kyngē was freely delyuered, the whiche, the sayde daye before noone, departed from Caleys, and rode towarde Boleyn, whom kynge Edwarde conueyed a myle vpon his waye, at whiche myles ende they departed with kyssynge, and other louyng maner; and pryce Edwarde kept on his waye with kynge Iohñ, and so conueyed hym to Boloyn, where he taryed that nyght.

And vpon the morowe, the sayd prynce Edwarde, and Charlys, duke of Normandy, with the erle of Escamps, and other noble men, there theñe beynge present, were agayne sworne to maynteyne and holde ỹ sayd peas without fraude, colour, or disceyte; and that done, the sayd prynce takynge his leue, retournyd that nyght vnto Caleys. And so it nowe apperyth vnto you, that kyng Iohñ stode as prysoner, by the space of. iiii. yeres; and asmoch as from the. xix. day of Septembre, vnto. xxv. daye of Octobre.

And whan kynge Edwarde had sped his nedes at Caleys, he after, as shalbe shewed in the yere folowynge, sayled into Englāde.

It is also to be noted, that, this yere, whyle the kynge was occupyed in his warres in Fraunce, as before is towched, the erle of Seynpoule, with an army of Frenshemen, sayled aboute the borders of Kent and Sussex, and landed in sundry places, as Rye, Wynchelsee, and Hastynges, and spoyled the townes, and slewe many of the men, and dyd moche harme to the poore fysshers.

[1] xxiiij. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] xxxviij edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. *erroneouſly.*

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lx.

Iohñ Denys.

Iohñ Wroth[1]. Anno. xxxv.

Walter Borney[2].

VPon ŷ euyn of seynt Quỹtyne, or the. xxx. daye of Nouembre, in the ende of the. xxxiiii. yere of kyng Edwarde, and begynnynge of this mayres yere, the kynge toke shyppynge at Caleys, and sayled towarde Englande, bryngynge with hym certayne of his hostages, that is to say, Lowys, the seconde sone of kynge Iohñ, newely made duke of Amon and of Mayn, whiche before was erle of Angeou, & Iohñ his brother newly made duke of Aluerne and of Berry, which before was erle of Poytiers, whiche erledome nowe belongyd to kynge Edwarde, by reason of the foresayd treaty. He also had w̄ hym sir Lowys duke of Braban, & ŷ erles of Alenson and of Escampis, whiche were nere of the Frenshe kynges blode, with. viii. other erlys and lordes named in ŷ Frenshe Cronycle, with the whiche the kynge landed at Douer shortely after, & so came to London the. ix. daye of Nouembre.

And in this. xxxv. yere men and bestys were perysshed in Englande, in dyuers places, with thondre and lyghtenynge, [and the fendes was seen in mannes lykenesse, and spake vnto men as they trauayled by the waye.][3]

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lx. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxi.

Willyam Holbech.

Iohñ Pecche[1]. Anno. xxxvi.

Iames Tame.

IN this. xxxvi. yere, prynce Edwarde wedded ŷ coũtesse of Kent, whiche before was wyfe vnto sir Thomas Holande, and, before that, wyfe vnto the erle of Salesbury, & deuorsed from hym and maryed vnto ŷ sayd sir Thomas. In this yere also was great mortalitie of men in England, durynge the whiche the noble duke Henry of Lancastre dyed; this of wryters is named the seconde mortalytie, for it was the seconde that fylle in this kynges dayes. Whan duke Henry was deed, sir Iohan of Gaunt the kynges thirde sone, whiche hadde maryed the sayde dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In this yere also were sene two castelles in ŷ ayre, wherof that one apperyd in ŷ South East, and that other in the Southwest, out of the whiche at sondry tymes, as it were aboute the noon tyde, issuyd of eyther of theym an hoost of armyd men to mannes syght; and ŷ hoost whiche issuyd oute of the castell of the South East apperyd whyte, and that other apperid blacke: these. ii. hostes apperyd as thoughe they faught eche of theym with other, and shewed as ŷ whyte was firste victoryous, & lastly ouercomyn, and so disaperyd.

In this yere also a great company of dyuers nacyons assembled them in Brye, and Champayne, wherof the leders or capitaynes were Englysshemen, the whiche dyd moche harme in Fraunce; but, after the affirmaunce of the Frenshe Cronycle, this company, whiche there is called the newe company, began theyr assembles in the forenamed countre of Brye, or kynge Iohñ were delyuered frome Caleys. And whanne they were ware of his delyueraunce, they departed oute of Brye, and yode into Champayne, and toke there dyuers holdes, and spoyled & robbyd dyuers small townes, & raunsomed many men. And in this yere, as saythe the Frenshe booke, they toke the brydge and towne of Seynt Sprytes, vpon the daye of the Innocentes, or the. xxviii. daye of Decembre; and, as affermyth Polycronycon, aboute the same tyme another company in lykwyse assembled theym in Italye, whiche was called the whyte company, and mo-

[1] *The* MS. *adds* fyshmonger. [2] Barney, MS. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559.

lested that countre in lyke maner. And in the moneth of Apryll folowynge, kynge Iohñ sent the erle of Cancaruyle, the erles of Salesbrugh, of the Marchez, of Forez[1] and of Ioyuguy, the whiche erles, with theyr retyneue, mette with the sayd company at a place, thanne named Bruke, nere vnto Lyon Rosne[2], at whiche place was foughten a cruell fyght; but in ŷ ende the Frenshemen were ouersett and scomfyted, so that the sayd erle of Cancaruyle was taken prysoner, and the. ii. erles of Marchez and Forestez slayne, with moche of the comon people.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxii. *Fol. Cxvi.*

Iohñ of Seint Albones.

Stephen Caundissh[3]. Anno. xxxvii.

Iames Andrewe.

IN this. xxxvii. yere, vpon the daye of seynt Mauryce, or ŷ xv. daye of Ianuarii, blewe so excedynge a wynde that ŷ lyke therof was nat seen many yeres passed. This began about euynsong tyme in the South, and contynued with suche sternesse[4] that it blewe downe stronge & myghty buyldyngs, as toures, steples, houses & chymneys, & contynued for the more partie ī suche sternesse[4] by ŷ space of. v. dayes after: and in this yere and. xxiiii. daye of the sayde moneth of Ianuarii, came Iohñ kynge of Fraunce vnto Eltham besyde Grenewych, & dyned there that day w̄ ŷ kyng, & vpon ŷ afternoon he was honourably conueyed thorough the cytie of London vnto Sauoye, as well by the cytezyns as other, the whiche mette with hym vpon Blakheth well horsed in a lyuerey of one coloure. And whyle the sayde kynge Iohñ laye at the sayd place of Sauoy, aboute the begynnynge of Marche folowynge, a greuous sykenesse toke hym, of the which he dyed the. viii. daye of Apryll folowynge, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace. xiii.C.lxiiii. and after was caryed into Fraūce and buryed at Seynt Denys, ŷ. vii. day of Maye folowynge.

The frecōnynge of kyng Iohnne of Fraūce into Englād to sporte hym at his pleasur, at whiche tyme he dyed in Englande.

And in this yere kynge Edwarde created sir Leonell his sone duke of Clarence, and sir Edmunde his other sone erle of Cambrydge.

And in the ende of this yere &. xvii. daye of Septembre began a great frost, the whiche endured to the begynnyng of the moneth of Apryll, by reason wherof moche harme grewe and ensuyd of the same.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxiii.

Richarde Croydoñ.

Iohñ Notte[5]. Anno. xxxviii.

Iohñ Hyltoste[6].

ANd that yere came. iii. kynges into Englande for to speke w̄ kyng Edwarde: [firste the kynge of Fraunce, the kyng of Sipres, and the kynge of Scottes.][7]

IN this. xxxviii. yere prynce Edwarde sayled to Burdeaux, and receyued ŷ possessyon of Guyan, that kynge Edwarde hadde newely gyuen vnto hym, for the whiche he after dyd his homage to his fader, in lykewyse and maner as his fader & other kynges of Englande were wont to doo, for the sayde duchie, vnto the kynges of Fraunce. And vpon Michelmasse daye, beynge than vpon a Sonday, before the castell of Danhoy, faste by the cytie of Vaunes in Brytayne, mette the hoostes of sir Charlys de Bloys and of syr Iohñ de Mountfort, whiche longe before had stryuen, as before is shewed, for the sayde

[1] Forezstes. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] Lyon sur Rosne. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. [4] stormes. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] Peperer. MS. [6] Hylltoft. MS. [7] *Not in the Museum* MS. *In the* edit. of 1559, *this passage is placed at the end of the preceding year.*

duchie of Brytayñ, and there foughten a cruell batayll; but by the helpe of God and of the Englysse archers, the victorye fyll to syr Iohñ de Mountforte, and in that fyghte syr Charlys de Bloys was slayne, and many Frenshemen and Brytons that toke his partie: after whiche victorye, natwithstandynge that the wyfe of the sayde sir Charlys laye within that countre, there was agayne the sayde sir Iohñ made no resystence, but that he enioyed that countre in peasyble wyse.

Theñe Charlys the. vi. of that name, newely crowned kynge of Fraunce, in the ryght of the woman, sente the archebysshop of Reynes and the marshal of Fraunce into Brytaygne, for to sette an vnyte and restfull peas atwene ỹ sayd sir Iohñ and the laste[a] wyfe of sir Charlys, the whiche endeuoryd theym so well that in the moneth of Apryll folowynge the sayde batayll they agreed theym, so that the enherytaunce of that duchie shuld remayne to the sayd sir Iohñ and his heyres for euermore, and the wyfe of sir Charlys shulde holde hir contented with the erledome of Penyture and the vycountie of Lymoges, the whiche of olde tyme belonged to hir ancetours.

And aboute this tyme was an ordenaunce and statute made, that sergeaũtys and prentyses of the lawe shulde plede theyr plees in theyr moder tunge; but that stode but a shorte whyle.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxiiii.

Symonde Mordoñ.

Adam of Bury[b]. Anno. xxxix.

Iohñ of Metforde.

IN this. xxxix. yere, after some wryters, kynge Edwarde, vpon seynt Stephans daye, fynysshed his warres, wherfore in the worshyp of God and seynt Stephan, he this yere, after the opynyons of the sayd auctours, began the foũdacyon of seynt Stephens chapell at Westmynster, the whiche was fynysshed by Richarde the seconde, and sone of prynce Edwarde, next kynge of Englande after this thirde Edwarde.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxv.

Iohñ Brikylsworth.

Iohñ Luskyñ[c]. Anno. xl.

Iohñ Drelande[d].

IN this. xl. yere and moneth of Februarii, was borne the firste sone of prynce Edwarde, and was named Edwarde, the whiche dyed whan he was aboute the age of. vii[e]. yeres; and in this yere one named Barthran de Claycon, a Norman, with an armye of Frenshemen entred the lande of Castyle, and warred vpon Peter, than kynge of that lande, and soo behaued hym that in lesse than. iiii. monethes space he chased the sayde Peter oute of his owne lande, and crowned his brother, named Henry, kyng of Castyle,
Fol. C.xvii. at a towne called Burges, vpon Easter day: wherfore the sayde Peter constrayned of necessyte, was compellyd to come to the cytie of Burdeaux for to haue and aske ayde of prynce Edwarde. This Peter was ryghtfull heyre vnto the crowne of Castyle, and Henry his brother, after moste wryters, was bastarde; but this Peter was so vyle of condycions ỹ his subgettes had to hym but lytel fauoure: and so the warre contynued a season atwene his brother and hym, as after shall appere, in the which prynce Edwarde with his archers toke partie with this Peter, and the Frenshe kynge with his sperys tooke partie with Henry.

And in this yere, at the kynges cõmaundement, Adam Bury, thanne mayre of London,

[a] late. MS. [b] Adam de Bury, skynner. MS. [c] Luffkyn. MS. [d] Ireland. MS.
[e] viii. edit. 1542. 1559.

was

was dyscharged the. xxviii. daye of Ianuarii, and for hym electe and chosen mayre Iohñ Louekyn, grocer; and, as wytnessyth Policronicon & other, this yere was cõmaunded by the kynge that Peter penyes shuld no more be gaderyd in Englande nor payde vnto Rome, as they of longe tyme hadde been vsed and graunted in ŷ tyme of Iuo or Iewe, som tyme kynge of West Saxons, as before in his storye is shewed; but how so at that dayes it was than by the kyng forbodyn, yet neuerthelesse at this present tyme and season they be gaderyd in sondry shyres of Englande.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxvi.

Iohñ Warde.

Iohñ Louekyn. Anno. xli.

Willyam Dykman[1].

IN this. xli. yere was borne the seconde sone of prynce Edwarde, at Burdeaux, named Richarde, in the moneth of Apryll; and the thirde daye of ŷ sayd moneth the sayde prynce Edwarde, with the kynge of Nauerne and the foresayd Peter kynge of Castyle, mette with Henry, bastarde & vsurper of the sayd kyngdome, nere vnto a towne called Domynge, where atwene theym was cruell and longe fyght: howe be it in the ende the victorye fyll vnto the Englyssemen, and Henry and his men were chased. In this batayll was taken sir Barthram de Glaycon, and sir Arnolde Dodenham, thanne marshall of Fraunce, with other, as well Frenshe as Brytaynes, and slayñ vpon. v.M. men vpon the partie of the said Henry, and vpon. xvi.C. vpon prynce Edwardes partie: after whiche victorye, the prynce, with the sayde Peter, spede theym vnto the cytie of Burgys, whiche was yolden to theym shortely after theyr cõmynge, and after holpe the sayd Peter to wynne other cyties and holdes, so that he taryed there tyll the moneth of August folowynge, at whiche season, as sayth the Cronycle of Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeaux without payment of wages for his sowdyours, that before was to hym by the sayde Peter promysed.

In this season ŷ prynce Edwarde was thus in Spayne, Henry, bastarde, fledde with his wyfe into Fraunce, and abode in a place or countre called Carcasson; but so soone as he was warnyd that prynce Edwarde was retourned vnto Burdeaux, he gaderyd to hym a newe company and passed by the mountaynes of the forestes, and so entred the sayde lande of Castyle the xxvii. daye of the moneth of Septembre folowynge, and hadde the cytie called Calahore yolded vnto hym, where vnto hym drewe moche people of the countre, so that his strengthe encreased hougely: thenne from thens he yode vnto the cytie of Burgys where he was ioyously receyued, and behauyd hym in suche wyse that in short whyle after he had the hole rule of the lande of Castyle: and his brother was fayne to auoyde the lande and to seche ayde of the Sarazyns, as affermyth the foresayd Cronycle.

And in this yere aboute the monethes of Iunii, the company before mynded in the. xxxvi. yere of this kynge, entred the duchie of Guyan, and there helde theym in doynge moche harme to that countre, lyke as they before hadde done in dyuerse places of Fraunce by all that season of. iiii. yeres passed; and in ŷ moneth of Decembre they departed from thens and yode into the countrees of Alverne and Berry, and in the moneth of Februarii they passed ŷ ryuer of Loyre or Leyre, and toke the waye towarde Marcyll, and after entred the countre of Burgoyne, and euer as they passed the countrees, they raunsomed men & spoyled many townes as they wente.

And albe it that the Frenshe kynge appoynted dyuers of his lordes and knyghtes to go

[1] Thomas Otle. MS.

agayne

agayne theym, yet at suche seasons as they drewe nere vnto theym, they wolde suffre theym to departe without batayll, for they were so many that they were nombred at. lx. M. but of theyr capitaynes is noone named; how be it there were Englysshemen, Gascoynes, Pycardes, Frenshemen, men of Nauerne, and of many other nacions, whiche the Cronycle rehersyth nat, contynued in theyr force and strength longe after to the great damage of the countrees whiche they passed thorugh, as Normãdy, Gascoygne, Guyan, Burgoyne, and all the chief countrees of Fraunce, and lyued by rauen and pillage to the great enpouerysshynge of ŷ sayd countrees and townes whiche they passed by or lodgyd in.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxvii.

Iohñ Torgolde.

Iames Andrewe[1]. Anno. xlii.

Wyllyam Dikman.

Blasynge sterre. IN this. xlii. yere and moneth of Marche, apperyd Stella Comata, that is a blasynge sterre.

And in the moneth of Apryl next ensuynge, that is to say, the. vi. daye of the sayd moneth, Leonell the sone of this kyng Edward entred ŷ cytie of Parys, where he was of the dukes of Berry & Burgoyne honourably receyued, and so by theym conueyed vnto theyr brother the kynge of Fraũce vnto Lounure[2], where he at ŷ season was lodgyd; of whom he was also ioyously receyued and lodgyd within the kynges palays, and dyned & souped with the kynge at his awne table, and vpon the morowe folowynge, he dyned with the quene at a place of ŷ kynges nere to Seynt Poule, where the quene than was lodgyd, and when after dyner he hadde a whyle daunsed and passed the tyme with other disportes, he than with the sayde. ii. dukes was agayñ conueyed vnto the kynge, & souped with hym agayne that nyght, & vpon the mornynge, beynge Tuysday, the sayd dukes festyd the sayde sir Leonell at a place of theyrs in Parys named Artoys, and vpon the Wednysdaye he dyned & souped agayne with the quene, and vpon the Thursday and morowe folowynge, the sayde sir Leonell toke his leue of the kynge and quene, the
Fol. Cxcviii. whiche gaue vnto hym gyftes, and to suche as were in his company to the value of. xx. M. floryns and aboue, and was cõueyed with noblemen, as ŷ erle of Cancaruyle and other, tyll he was comyn to Sens, and with knyghtes tyll he came to the borders of Fraunce, where he gaue vnto theym ryche gyftes with thankes, and after cõtynued his iourney tyll he came vnto ŷ cytie of Mylayne, where shortly after he maried the doughter of Galyace, duke of the sayde cytie and countre, and hadde by her great possessyons by reason that her sayd fader dyed shortly after.

And in the ende of this yere, the erles of Armenak, of Bret and of Perigort, with dyuers other nobles of the duchie of Guyan, appelyd the prynce of Walys in the Frenshe kynges court, that he had broken the peas and wrongyd theym, cõtrarye the peas stablysshed atwene Englande & Fraunce, and requyred the Frenshe kynge that the sayde appeale myght haue due processe agayne the sayde prynce; the whiche, as sayth ŷ Frenshe Cronycle, kynge Charles deferryd for certayne causes there towched, whiche were to longe to reherce.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. [2] Louure. edit. 1559.

Anno

Anno Domini. M CCC.lxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxviii.

Adam Wymbyngham.

Symon Mordoñ'. Anno. xliii.

Robert Gyrdeler.

IN this. xliii. yere, or more certeynly in ỹ ende of the precedyng yere, one Walter Bernes, Mercer, was, vpon the daye of the Translacyon of seynt Edwarde kynge and Confessoure, or the. xiii. daye of Octobre, chosen, by the mayre & aldermen, mayre of the cytie of London; but howe it was for lacke of substaunce, or by other impedyment whiche is nat noted, the sayde Walter vpon the daye of Symonde & Iude folowynge, whan he shulde haue taken his othe at Guylde halle, apperyd nat: wherfore in his rūme by electcion of the foresayd mayre and aldermen, was admytted for that yere folowynge, Symonde Mordoñ fysshmonger mayre of that cytie.

And in this yere and moneth of Marche, Peter kynge of Castyle, whiche by the ayde of the Sarazyns dwellynge in the borders of Spayne, hadde wonne and recoueryd some parte of the lande of Castyle, encountrede with his bastarde brother Henry beforesayd, and gaue vnto hym batayll nere to a towne called Sybylle, where after longe fyght, the sayde Peter was scomfyted and moche of his people slayne, and hym selfe dryuen vnto a castell, out of the whiche he was shortly after by treason goten, and presented vnto his brother fore named, by whose sentence he was immedyatly byheded. After whose deth the sayd Henry enioyed ỹ hole lande of Castyle, whiche infortunytie and myschaūce fylle to this Peter, after dyuerse wryters, for so moche as he cruelly slewe his awne wyfe, the doughter of the duke of Burboñ.

And in this yere and moneth of May, the kynge of Fraunce in his hyghe court of parlyament holden at Parys, procedyd in iugement vpon the appellacions before made by the erle of Armenak, the lorde of Bret and erle of Perigort, agayne prynce Edwarde, as before is towched in the precedyng yere; wherupon discorde and varyaunce began to take place atwene the. ii. kynges, in so moche that by meane of the sayd. iii. lordes, natwithstandyng ỹ they were before sworne to be to ỹ kynge of Englande trewe liege men, dyuers townes of the countre of Poyteaw, yelded theym to the Frenshe kynge, as Albeuyle, Rue, and the more partie of the sayde townes of the sayde countree: wherupon ambassades were sent vpon bothe parties, and dyuers meanes of treaty were comoned, whiche conteyneth a longe werke, with resonynge made vpon the same. But in conclucion al came to none effecte, so that breche of the peas, whiche before atwene the. ii. kynges was so substancyally concluded, was broken, & eyther kynge for his partie made prouysion for the warre, in so moche that kynge Charlis spedde hym to Roan in Normandy, and there in the moneth of Iulet ryggyd his nauy, to set theym forewarde for to warre vpon Englande.

In whiche tyme and season that kyng Charlys was thus occupyed in Normandy, the duke of Lancastre lāded at Caleys, with a stronge company of archers & other warryours, and from thens passed to Thorouenne, and so to Ayre, in wastinge the countre with irne and fyre as he went: wherfore the Frenshe kynge in defence of those parties, sent ỹ duke of Burgoyn with a puyssaunt armye to withstande the sayd duke of Lancastre; the whiche duke of Burgoyn spedde hym in suche wyse, that aboute the. xxiiii. daye of August, he lodgyd his hoost vpon the moūtayne of Turnehan nere vnto Arde, and the Englysshe hoost was lodgyd atwene Gygowne and Arde, soo that the frountes of both hoostes were within a myle, atwene whom were dayly skyrmysshes and small bykerynges, without any notarye batayll.

And whan the sayde duke of Burgoyn had thus kept ỹ sayd mount, from the. xxiiii.

The MS. *adds* Fishmonger.

daye

daye of August vnto the. xii. day of Septembre, he remoued his hoost and yode vnto Hesden; for the which dede he was after blamed of kynge Charlys his brother. After whiche departure of the Frenshemen, the duke of Lancastre with his hoost tooke the waye towarde Caus or Caux, and passed the ryuer of Sūme, and so rode towarde Harflewe, entendynge, as sayth the Frenshe boke, to haue fyred the Frenshe kynges nauy; but at theyr cōmynge thyder the towne was so strongly mannyd, that they dyd there lytell scathe: wherfore the sayd duke departed shortly thens and spedde hym into the coūtie of Poyteau, and so came vnto the towne of Albeuyle, where with out the Frenshemen encountred hym & gaue vnto hym batayll: in the whiche was taken sir Hugh Chasteloñ knyght, with other knyghtes, esquyres, & burgeyses of the towne, and vpon. xvi. score Frenshemen slayne. Whiche sayd prysoners to the nombre of. xlv. were sent vnto Caleys, and the duke with his company yode vnto Burdeaux, in spoylynge of the Frenshemen as he went.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxix.

Iohñ Pyell.

Iohñ Chychester[1]. Anno. xliiii.

Hugh Holdiche[2].

IN this. xliiii. yere and moneth of Ianuarii dyed the erle of Warwyke at Caleys, after he was retourned from the duke of Lancastre, whiche was a man of great fame.

And in the moneth of August dyed ŷ noble woman quene Philyp, and wyfe vnto Edwarde ŷ thirde, the which was a great benefactour vnto the chanons of Seynt Stephans chapell at Westmynster.

Fol. Cxiiij.

And soon after dyed dame Blaunche, somtyme the wyfe of Henry duke of Lācastre, and was buryed at Poules vpon the northe syde of the hyghe aulter, by her husbande; where she ordeyned for hym and her. iiii. chaūtres for euer, and an annyuersarye yerely to be kept: at ŷ whiche, ouer great thynges besette vnto the deane & chanons of the sayd churche, she ordeyned that the mayre beyng present at the masse, shuld offre i.*d.* and take vp. xx.*s.*, the shyreffes eyther of theym a peny, and to receyue eyther of theym a marke, the chamberlayn of the cytie. x.*s.*, the swordberer. vi.*s.* viii.*d.*, and euery offycer of the mayres there present. xii.*d*[3]., and to euery offycer to the nombre of. viii. eyther of theym. viii.*d.* admytted for the shyreffes, the whiche obite at this daye is holden; but by reason that the lande is decayed, these foresayd sūmes ben greatly mynysshed, so that ŷ mayre at this daye hath but. vi.*s.* viii.*d.*, bothe the shyreffes. vi.*s.* viii.*d.* and other after that rate.

These chauntries & annyuersarie were founded for sir Iohnne of Gaunt, as after sheweth, in y^e. xxi. yere of Richarde ye seconde^e.

In this yere also the kynge helde his parlyament at Westmynster, in the whiche was graūted vnto hym thre fyftenys, to be payde in thre yeres folowynge, and by a conuocacyon of the clergye was also graūted vnto hym thre dysmes to be payde in lyke maner.

And in this yere was the thirde mortalytie, wherof dyed moche people, and suche a morayne fyll also amonge beestes that the lyke therof was nat seen many yeres before; and vpon ŷ ensuyd suche excessynes[4] of rayne that corne was therwith drowned in ŷ erthe, and so bukkyd with water, that the yere ensuynge whete was at. xl.*d.* a busshell.

And in the ende of ŷ moneth of Iulet sir Robert Knollys, accompanyed with dyuers noble men and soudyours entred Seint Omers, and whan they hadde executed theyr pleasures there and in the countre enuyron, they thañe rode vnto Arras in wastynge and spoylynge the countre as they went; and whenne they had brent the bulwerkes of ŷ sayd

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Goldsmyth. [2] Holbacch. MS. [3] *To this, in the Museum* MS. *is added* for that othir duke namyd sir Henry Grosmond was buried ellis wher & not in Pawlys. [3] xxij.*d.* edit. 1535. 1542. 1559. [4] excessyvenes.

towne of Arras, they passed by Noyñ and Vermendoys, and brent the houses of all suche as wolde nat to theym gyue due raunsome; and thus holdyng their waye, they passed the ryuers of Oyse and of Syrre, and so came vnto the cytie of Raynes, and passed there the ryuer, and rode towarde Troyes, and passed the ryuers of Aube and of Sayne, and so helde theyr waye to Seynt Floryntyn, and there passed ỹ ryuer of Ion, in holdynge theyr cours towarde Ioyngny, and so to Corbueyll and Esson or Essoyne, and vpon a Monday, beynge the. xxii. daye of Septembre, the sayd Englysshemen[1] lodged theym vpon the mount of Seynt Alboñ and in the countre there aboute, and vpon Wednysday folowynge they enbataylled them in a felde atwene the townes of Iunie and Parys.

In all whiche season they passed, without batayll, thorough those foresayd coũtres in spoylynge them and raunsomynge the inhabytauntes therof, wont resystens or impedyment; and albe it that in the cytie of Parys at ỹ daye were. xii^c.C. men of armys wayged by the Frenshe kynge, besyde the sowdyours & strengthe of the cytezyns of that cytie, yet the sayd hoost of Englisshmen lay, as before is sayd, enbataylled tyl it was past noone of the foresayd daye; at whiche tyme, for so moche as they were credybly enfourmyd that they shuld there haue no batayl, they brake theyr felde and sped theym to a place or towne called Antoygny & there lodgyd that nyghte, and vpon the morowe tooke theyr iourney towarde Normandy: but after. iiii. dayes labour they tourned theyr waye towarde Estampis or Estamps, by Beause in Gastenoys, in pyllynge & domagynge the coũtrees as they before hadde done, contynuynge theyr iourney tyll they came into the erledom of Angeau, where they wan by strength the townes of Was[2] & Ruylly, with other stronge holdes theraboute.

But than as the deuyll wolde, whiche is rote of all enuy and dyscorde, the lorde Fitzwater and the lorde Grauntson[4] fyll at varyaunce w sir Robert Knollys and his companye, whiche grewe to so great hatred and displeasure, that sir Robert Knollys with the flour of the archers and sowdyours departed from the sayde. ii. lordes, leuynge theym in the foresayd townes of Vaas and Ruylly, and he thenne yode into Brytayne.

Wherof whañe certayntie was broughte vnto the Frenshe kynge, anone he cõmaunded syr Berthram de Glaycoñ, newely made marshall of Fraũce, with a stronge armye to entre the sayd countie of Angeou, and to make sharpe warre vpon the sayde Englysshmen, the whiche, vpon the. xii. daye of Octobre folowynge, layde siege vnto the sayd towne of Vaas, wherof issuyd out the said lordes of Fitzwater and Grautson, and gaue vnto the marshall batayll; but in the ende the discomfyture fyll vnto the Englysshemen, so that of theym was slayne. vi.C. and the reste put vnto the flyght, in the whiche was taken the said lorde Grauntson with other: & that done the sayd sir Barthram yode vnto the towne of Vaas and gat it by assawte, where also were slayne vpon. iii. hondred of Englysshemen, and the other put to flyght, and many taken prysoners. And after this the sayd Barthram pursued ỹ Englysshemen that were fledde vnto a towne called Versure, where in assawtynge of the sayde towne he slewe and toke prysoners vpon. iiii.C. Englisshmẽ: and this[5] by stryfe and dissencyon amonge theymselfe, those that before by amyte and good accorde were victours, now by hatered and discorde were slayne and taken prysoners.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxx.

Wyllyam Walworth.

Iohñ Bernes[6]. Anno. xlv.

Robert Gayton[7].

IN this. xlv. yere, and begynnynge of the moneth of Marche, the archebysshoppe of Wynchester, thanne beynge a cardinall, and present at Auynyon with [pope][8] Gregorie

[1] Englysh hoost. MS. [2] ii.C. edit. 1542. 1559. *erroneously.* [3] Vaas. [4] *The* MS. *adds* which the Frensh book namyth sir Thomas Grantsoun. [5] thus. [6] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer. [7] Bayton. edit. 1559. [8] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542.

the. xi. of that name, was put in cōmyssion with ŷ archebysshop of Beauuays, [of Englād][a] to make or treate a peas and vnytie atwene the. ii. realmes of Englande and of Fraunce; whiche sayd cardynall of Wynchestre after his departynge from the pope[b] came downe towarde Meleoun, where by the said archebysshoppe and also cardynall of Beauuays he was honourably mette, and so conueyed vnto the cytie of Meleon: and whan he hadde restyd hym there vpon. iiii. dayes, the. ii. cardynallys ensemble sped theim vnto Parys, where they with kynge Charlis hadde cōmunycacion towchynge the sayd peas, and, after his pleasure knowen, the sayde archbysshop and cardynall toke his leue, & was conueyed towarde Caleys, where he toke shyppyng and so sayled into Englande, and shewed vnto the kynge the popes' pleasure with the Frenshe kynges answere.

And in this yere, folowynge the somertyde, in Guyan, were made and foughten many and dyuerse sskyrmysshes, in the whiche for the more partie the Englysshmen were put vnto the worse, so that many of theym were slayne and taken prysoners, & dyuers holdes and townes taken from theym, and specyally in the countre of Lymosyne; for by the fyrste daye of the moneth of Iulii the cytie of Lymoges, with all the countre of Lymosyne foresayd, was vnder the obeysaunce of the Frensh kynge, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle.

Fol. C.xx. Wherof the occacyon was, as affermeth the Englysshe boke, for so moche as prynce Edwarde hadde lately before arreryd of the inhabytauntes of that cytie and coūtre a great and greuous taske, to theyr great hurte and enpouerysshynge, by meanes wherof he leste the loue of the people.

Whan the Frenshe kynge hadde thus opteyned the rule of the countree of Lymosyne, he immedyatly after sente sir Barthram de Glaycon into the erledome of Poyteawe or Poytyers, and wanne there many townes and castellys, and lastely layde his siege vnto Rochell, as after in the folowynge yere shall be shewyd.

And to the ende that good and merytoryous dedys shulde be holden in memorye, here is to be noted that the mayre for this yere, beynge Iohn̄ Bernys, mercer, gaue vnto the comynaltie of ŷ cytie of London a chest with. iii. lockes and keyes, and therin a. M. marke of redy money, wyllynge the keyes therof to be yerely in the kepyng of. iii. sondry persones, that is to meane, the maister of the felysshyp of the Mercery to haue one, the maister of the felysshyp of Drapars the seconde, and thirde to be in the kepynge of ŷ chamberlayne of that cytie, and so therin the sayde. M. marke to be kept to the entent that at all tymes when any cytezyn wolde borowe any money, that he shulde haue it there for the space of a yere, to laye for suche a sūme as he wolde haue plate or other iuellys to a sufficient gayge, so that he exceedyd nat the sūme of an hondreth marke: and for the occupynge therof, if he were lernyd, to say at his pleasure De profūdis for the soule of Iohn̄ Bernys and all Cristen soules, as often tymes as in his sūme were comprysed. x. markes: as he that borowyd but. x. marke shuld say but ones that prayer; and if he hadde. xx. marke, thenne to saye it twyes, and so after ŷ rate: and if he were nat lernyd, then to saye soo often his Pater noster. But howe so this money was lent or gyded, at this daye the cheste remayneth in the chambre of London, withoute money or pledges for the same.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxx. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxi.

Robert Hatfelde.

Iohn̄ Bernes. Anno. xlvi.

Robert Gaytoñ[c].

IN this. xlvi. yere and moneth of Februarii, kynge Edwarde helde his parlyamēt at

[a] *Omitted in the* MS. *and later editions.* [b] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [c] the B. of Romes. edit. 1542. [c] Adam Staple. MS.

Westmynster,

Westmynster, in the whiche he askyd of the spiritualtie. l.M.*l.* and as moche of laye fee[1]: the whiche by the temporall was graunted, but the clergye kepte theym of with plesaunt answeres, soo that the kynge and his counsayll was with theym discontented, in so moche that, theyr[2] displeasures, dyuers offycers, as the chaunceller, the preuay seale, the tresourer and other were remoued, beynge spirituall men, and in theyr offyces and places temporall men set in; and shortly after the foresayd cardynall of Beauuays came into Englande to treate of the peas atwene the. ii. realmes, but he spedde no thynge to the effecte therof.

Wherfore in the moneth of Iulet, the Frenshe kynge sente into the countre of Poyteawe the forenamed sir Barthram de Clayco̅ with a stronge armye, where he wanne dyuers holdes and fortressys frome the Englysshemen. In whiche season kyng Edwarde (for strengthynge of the countre, and specially to defende the towne of Rochell, whiche, as aboue in the other yere is shewed, was as this yere besiegyd by the sayde sir Barthran) sent the erle of Penbroke with other noblemen to fortyfye the sayde towne and to remoue ỹ siege; but or he myght wyne to the sayde towne, he was encountred with a flote of Spaynyardes, the whiche kynge Henry of Castyle had sent into Fraunce to strengthe the Frenshe kynges partie, of the which flote after longe and cruell fyght, the sayd erle was takyn with sir Guycharde de Angle and other, to the nombre of. C. &. lx. prysoners, and the more partie of his men slayne & drowned, with the losse of many good shyppes.

And in the begynnynge of the moneth of September folowynge, a Gascoygne borne, a man of good fame, whome the kynge of Englande had admytted for his lieutenaunt and gouernoure of the countre of Peytou, named le Captall de Bueffe, faught with an armye of Frenshemen before a towne named Sonbyse, where in conclucyon his men were slayne & chased, and he with. lxx. of his partie taken prysoners. Theñe the dukes of Berry and of Burgoyne, vnpon the. vi. daye of Septembre came before Rochell, and hadde certayne cōmunycacyons with ỹ rulers of the sayd towne for the delyuery therof. In this passe tyme and season kynge Edwarde herynge of ỹ takynge of ỹ erle of Penbroke, and of the losse that he dayly had of his men in dyuers parties of Fraunce, with also the ieopardye that the towne of Rochel and other stode in, made hasty prouysion, and entendyd to haue passed the see, but the wynde was contraryous that he myght haue noo passage, wherfore he retourned, as sayth Policronicon, agayne into the lande.

Thanne vpon the. viii. daye of Septembre before sayd, the capitayne of Rochell hauynge no comforte of shorte rescous, yelded it, vpon certayne appoyntementes, the sayd towne vnto the forenamed dukes vnto the Frenshe kynges vse; and shortly after were also yolden to them the townes of Angolesme, of Exanctes, of Seynt Iohñ de Angely, with dyuers other.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxii.

Iohñ Phylpotte.

Iohñ Pyell[3]. Anno. xlvii.

Nicholas Brember.

IN this. xlvii. yere, at a wrestelynge holden vpon the Blake Hethe besyde London, was slayne a mercer of London, named Iohñ Northwode; for the whiche great dyssencion grewe amonge the felyshyppes of that cytie, to the huge distourbaunce of it, and a good season after or the rancoure therof myght be duely appeased.

In this yere also the duke of Lancastre sir Iohñ of Gaunt, & sir Edmūde his brother erle of Cambridge, wedded ỹ. ii. doughters of Peter, which was late kyng of Castyle, put to deth by Henry his bastarde brother, as before I haue shewed in ỹ. xliii. yere of this kynges reygne; of the whiche. ii. doughters sir Iohñ of Gaūt maryed ỹ eldest named

[1] the lay fee. [2] to theyr. [3] *the* MS. *adds* Mercer.

Constance, and his brother the yonger named Isabell, so ỹ by these maryages theyse. ii. bretherne claymed to be enheritours of the kyngdome of Castyle or Spayne.

Fol. C.xxxi. And in this yere, after the duke of Brytayne hadde receyued many exortacyons and requestes from the Frenshe kyng to haue hym vpon his partie, he sent for certayne sowdyours of Englysshemen, and strengthed with theym some of his castellys and holdes; wherof herynge, kynge Charlys sente thyder with a stronge power the forenamed sir Barthran de Claycon[1], warnyng theym to make warre vpon theym[2] as an enemye vnto the howse of Fraunce: the whiche, accordynge to theyr cõmyssion, entrede the lande of Brytayne in wastynge it with irne and fyre, and in shorte processe had yolden vnto hym the more partie of the chief townes, excepte Brest, Aulroy, and Dernall. Thenne in the ende of Iunii ỹ said sir Barthran layde siege vnto Brest, and the lorde of Craon, with other, laye before Daruall. In al whiche season ỹ duke of Brytayne was in Englande; for so soone as he had, as before is sayde, bestowed the foresayd Englyssh sowdyours, he sayled into Englande to speke w̃ kyng Edwarde.

In the moneth of Iulii the duke of Lancastre, with sir Iohñ de Mountfort, duke of Brytayne, & other, with a myghty puissaunce landed at Caleys, and after they hadde rested theym there a certayñ dayes they rode vnto Hesden, and lodged them within the parke an other season, and after passed by Dourlons by Benquesne, and soo vnto Corbie, where they passed the ryuer of Some, and rode vnto Roy in Vermendois, where they restyd theym by the space of. vii. dayes, at which terme ende, they sette fyre vpon the towne and toke theyr way towarde Laemoys, and burned & spoyled the countre as they went; and in processe of tyme passed the ryuers of Osne, Marne, and of Aube, and rode thorughe Champayne, and by the erledome of Brame streyght vnto Guy, and passed the ryuer of Seyn, and so towarde the ryuer of Leyr, and vnto Marcynguy the nonnery, and whan they were passed the sayde nonnery[3] they kepte theyr waye towarde the ryuer of Ancherre, and so vnto Burdeaux: in all whiche iourney they passed without fyghte or batayll, natwithstandynge the great hurte and domage they dyd vnto ỹ townes and countres as they passed, except at a place or towne called Orchie, a knyghte of Fraunce, called sir Iohñ de Vyenne, encountred. l. sperys and. xx. archers that were strayed frome theyr hoste, and sette vpon theim and slewe some parte of theym, and tooke the resydue of theym prysoners; so that the Frenshe booke sayth, for so moche as for lacke of mete for theyr horses and other paynfull thynges that in that iourney to theym happenyd, that though that iournay were vnto the Englysshmen honorable to ryde soo ferre in the Frenshe kynges lande vnfoughten with, yet it was to theym very paynfull, consyderynge the manyfolde chaunces fallynge to theym, as losse of horses and other thynges durynge that passage.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxiii.

Iohn Awbry.

Adam of Bury[4]. Anno. xlviii.

Iohñ Fysshyde[5].

IN this. xlviii. yere were sente fro the pope[6], than beyng ỹ. xi. Gregory, the archebysshop of Rauẽne, and the bysshop of Carentras[7], for to treate of the peas attwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, the whiche assembled theym at Bruges in Flaunders, whyther also for kynge Edwardes partie came the duke of Lancastre and the bysshop of London with other, and for Charlys ỹ Frenshe kynge, apperyd there the duke of Burgoyne, and the bysshop of Amyens and other, the whiche cõmyssions[8] after they hadde spente a great parte of the Lent in disputacions of this matier, the parties for the

[1] *The* MS. *adds* and the lord of Craon. [2] hym. MS. [3] ryuer of Loyr. MS. [4] Adam de Bury. Skynner. MS. [5] Fyfeelde. MS. [6] the B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [7] Carpentras. MS. [8] cõmyssioners.

Frenshe

Frenshe kynge desyred a lycence of the legattes that they might ryde vnto Parys, and shewe vnto the kynge the offycers[1] of the Englysshe partie, and so to retourne with his pleasur: wherupon it was agreed that a certayne shulde ryde and to shewe vnto the Frenshe kynge that the Englysshe men abode styffely vpon the soueraynte, that the kynge of Englande and his heyres kynges shall enioy all the former landes comprysed in the peas made atwene hym and Iohñ then kynge of Fraunce, as before is shewed in the. xxxiiii[2]. yere of this kyng, without homage or other duyte for theym doynge. For this matier, as sayth the Frenche Cronycle, kynge Charlys assembled at Parys a great parte of the nobles of his realme, with many other wyse men and doctours of diuynyte to haue that case sufficiently argued and debated; in the whiche counsayll it was plenerly determyned that the kynge myght nat gyue ouer the sayd soueraynte without great peryll of his soule, as there was shewed by dyuers reasons. Whan this reporte was brought vnto Bruges, the sayde treaty was dissoluyd without any conclucion takynge, excepte the peas was contynued tyll the Feast of all the Sayntes[3] next ensuynge.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxiiii.

Richarde Lyons.

Willyam Walworth[4]. Anno. xlix.

Willyam Wodhowce.

IN this yere, that is to vnderstande in the begynnynge of this mayres yere and ende of the. xlviii. yere of kynge Edwarde, a newe assemble was appoynted for treaty of the foresayde peas, to be kept at Seynt Omers, but after at Bruges, where for kyng Edwarde apperyd agayne the duke of Lancastre and sir Edmunde his brother erle of Cambridge, w dyuers other of his coũsayll, and for the Frenshe kynge the dukes of Angeou and of Burgoyne, with dyuers other of his counsayll, where ỹ sayd lordes with the other helde theyr assembles and courtes tyll it was nere Easter, to the great charge and coste of bothe parties, and in the end departed agayne without effect, except that they prolonged the peas tyll the firste day of Apryll next ensuynge.

And after by laboure of the sayd legattes, the kynge of Englandes counsayll beynge at Caleys, and the Frenshe kynges counsayll at Boleyne, a longer day of the sayd peas was concluded tyll Mydsomer nexte folowynge: in whiche tyme and season the ii. legattes rode frome Boleyne to Caleys, and from Caleys to Boloyn, to conclude some treaty atwene the. ii. realmes, but in conclusion none was taken, wherof, after the Englisshe wryters, the Frenshemen bare the wyght, and after the Frenshe auctours, the Englysshe are put i the blame; but were the faute in the kynge of Englande or in the Frenshe kyng, trouth it is, that ỹ Frenshe kyng durynge this treaty wan many townes & holdes, as well in Goyan as in Brytayñ & in other places, to his great aduauntage.

This yere also dyed docteur Wyllyam Wyttylsey archebysshop of Caunterbury; after *Fol. C.xxii.* whose dethe the monkes chase to that see the cardenall of[5] , with whiche elec-cyon the kynge was noo thynge contented; so that after great gooddes spente by the monkes to opteyne theyr entent, by the consent of the pope[6] and the kynge, doctour Symonde Sudbury was lastly admytted to that dignyte, whiche before was bysshop of London.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxv.

Iohñ Hadley.

Iohñ Warde[7]. Anno. l.

Wyllyam Newporte.

IN this. l. yere, fyl many wonderfull sykenesses amonge the people, wherof ỹ people

[1] Offirs. MS. [2] xxiiii. edit. 1559. [3] All Saints. [4] *The* MS. *adds* Fyshmonger. [5] of Winchester. edit. 1559. [6] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [7] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer.

dyed

dyed wonderly faste as well in Italye as in Englãde; amonge the whiche dyed sir Edwarde called the lorde Spencer, a man of great fame, whose body was enteryd at Teukesbury. [And for this mortalytie was so sharpe and sodayne, pope Gregory beforenamed, graũted of his goodnesse to suche as were contrite and confessyd, clene remyssion of theyr synnes; the whiche indulgence contynued in Englande by the terme of. vi. monethes.][1]

And this yere a great murmur and grudge beganne to sprynge agayne certayne persones as were about ỹ kynge, as the lorde Latymer thenne the kynges great chamberleyne and other, by whose synystre counsayll the kynge in his age was myslad, and his treasoure myspended to his great dishonour, and all his trewe subiectes great hynderaunce.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxvi.

Iohñ Northamptoñ.

Adam Staple[2]. Anno. li.

Robert Launde.

IN this. li. yere, the kynge assembled his hyghe courte of parlyamẽt at Westmynster, in the whiche was axyd a subsydye of the cõmons for the defence of his enemyes; whervnto it was answeryd by the cõmon howse, that they myght noo lenger bere suche charges, consyderynge their manyfolde charges by them borne in tymes passed, and ferther, they sayd they knewe well ỹ kynge was ryche and hadde good inoughe to defende hym and his lande, if the lande and his treasour were wele gyded, but it hadde ben longe tyme euyll ruled by euyll offycers, that the lande myght nat be plentuously of chafre, marchaundyse or rychesse; by meane wherof and by theyr inportune charges, the comynaltie was greatly eupouerysshed. More ouer the sayd cõmons complayned them vpon dyuers offycers, causers of this mysordre; wherof the lorde Latymer was noted for pryncipall, ẅ also dame Alys Pyers, the whiche ỹ kyng had lõge tyme mysused for his cõcubyne, and one named syr Richarde Scurry knyght, by whose cõusaylles and sinistre meanes the kynge was mysgyded, and the rule of the lande mysorderyd.

Wherfore the sayde cõmons prayed the mouth[3] of theyr speker, than sir Piers Dalemere, that the sayde persones with other myght be remoued from the kyng, and other to be sette in auctorytie about his persone, as were for his honoure and weale of his realme; whiche request of the cõmons, by the meanes of the noble prynce Edwarde, was accepted, so ỹ the sayde persones were from the kynge amoued, and other by the aduyce of the sayd prynce, and otherwyse lordes of ỹ realme, for the sayd persones about ỹ kynge deputed and ordeyned. And shortly after the cõmons graunted the kynges pleasure, so that he had of euery man and woman ouer the age of. xiiii. yeres. iiii.*d.* beggers oonly excepted; and by ỹ clergy was graunted that the kyng shuld haue of euery benyfised man. xii.*d.* and of preestes nat benyfysed. iiii.*d.*, the. iiii. ordres of freres oonly excepted; but or this money were leuyed, the kynge was fayne to borowe sũmes of money in dyuers places, amonge the which the cytie of Lõdon was sent to for. iiii *M.li.*; but for ỹ mayre, than Adam Stapulle, was nat quyk or fortherynge in that mater, he was, by the kynges cõmaundemẽt, discharged the. xxi[4]. daye of the moneth of Marche, and for hym was than Richarde Whytyngton mercer chosyn.

Obitus pricipis Edwardi.

And vpon the. viii. daye of Iunii, beynge then Trinite Sondaye, dyed that noble and famous man prynce Edwarde, within the kynges paleys of Westmynster, and was after with great solempnyte conueyed to Caunterbury, and there honourably buryed [agayn the shryne of that glorious martyr seynt Thomas:][5] after whose deth, the kyng contrary his promesse before made, called to hym agayne all suche persones as he to fore, for his

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer. [3] by the mouth. [4] xxij. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1559.

honoure and profyte of his realme, auoyded out of his courte, and admytted theym agayne to the same offyces ỹ they before occupyed; by the meanes of whom the foresaid speker of ỹ parlyament, sir Pyers Delamere, was in suche wyse complayned vpon to the kyng, that he was throwen into pryson, where he laye many yeres after.

Than kynge Edwarde created Richarde, sone of prynce Edwarde, prynce of Walys, and gaue vnto hym the erledoms of Chester and Cornewayll. And also for the kynge waxed feble and sykely, he than betoke ỹ rule of the lande vnto sir Iohñ of Gaunt duke of Lancastre, and ordeyned hym as gouernour of the lande, which so contynued duryng his faders lyf.

In this yere also, the tenaũtes or menyall seruauntes of the erle of Warwyk, made a ryot vpon the monkes of Euysham, and slewe and hurte many of the abbottes tenauntes, and spoyled and brake his closures and warynes, and sewyd their pondes and waters, and dyd vnto them many displeasures, to the vtter ruyne of that monastery; ne had the kynge ỹ soner haue sent downe to the erle his letters, chargynge hym to sease and withdrawe his men from that ryot, whiche afterwarde was pacyfyed without any notary punysshement of suche persones as were begynners or executours of that ryot.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxvii.

Androwe Pykman.

Nicholas Brembre[1]. Anno. lii.

Nicholas Twyforde.

IN this. li[a]. yere, and. xii. daye of the moneth of Apryll, syr Iohñ Mynsterworth knyghte, for certayne tresons of the whiche he was conuyct before the mayre and other iustyces of the kynge in the Guyld halle, was this foresayd day at Tyborne put in execucyon, that is to meane, hanged, heded & quarteryd, and his hed sette after vpon London brydge; cause of whose dethe was, for somoche as he beyng put in trust by the kynge, receyued great sũmes of money to paye with the kynges sowdyours, the whiche he kepte vnto his owne vse, and destroyed[2] the kynge and his sowdiours. And whanne therof he was to the kynge accused, he, ferynge punysshement, fledde into Fraunce, and there conspyred newly agayne his naturall prynce, and so lastly was taken and receyued his meryte. *Fol. Cxxiiii.*

In this yere also, began a wonderfull cysme in the Churche of Rome, for after the deth of the pope[4] the. xi. Gregory, was chosen. ii. popes[5], wherof the fyrste was named the. vi. Vrban, and that other the. vii. Clement; the firste an Italyon borne, and that other a Frensheman; of the whiche ensued such discorde in eleccyon of the pope, that by the terme of. xxxix. yeres after, there was euer. ii. popes[5] in suche auctorytie, that harde and doughtfull it was to knowe, whether was indubitat pope[6].

And vpon the. xxii. daye of the moneth of Iunii dyed at his manour of Shene, now called Rychemont, kynge Edwarde the thirde of that name, whan he had reygned. li. yeres, and. v. mouethes, and odde dayes, leuynge after hym. iiii. sonnes; that is to saye, Leonell duke of Clarence, Iohñ of Gaunt duke of Lancastre, Edmonde of Laugley duke of Yorke, and Thomas of Woodstok erle of Cambrydge: of the whiche sonnes with other nobles of his realme, he was honourably conueyed frome his sayde manoure of Shene, vnto the monastery of Westmỹster, and there solemply[7] vn the chapell of seynt Edwarde, vpon the[8] syde of the shryne with this epytaphy or superscripcion in a table hangyng vpon his tombe. Obitus regis E. iii.

Hic decus Anglorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, rex clemens pax populorum,

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Grocer. [2] lii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] deceyved. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. [5] Bishops of Rome. edit. 1542. [6] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [7] solemnly buried. MS. [8] the North. MS. South. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Tercius

Tercius Edwardus regni complens iubileum,
Inuictus pardus, pollens bellis Machabeum[1].

The whiche is thus to be vnderstande in our moder tunge as folowynge.

Of Englysshe kynges here lyeth the beauteuous flour
Of all before passyd, and mirrour to them shall sue,
A mercyfull kynge, of peas conseruatour,
The thirde Edwarde; the deth of whom may rue
All Englysshmen, for he by knyghthode due
Was lyberde inuyct, and by feate marcyall,
To worthy Machabe, in vertue peregall[2].

PHylyp de Valoys, erle of Valoys, and sone of Charlys de Valoys, brother vnto ŷ. iiii. Philip, was admytted for protectour of ŷ realme of Fraũce, in the begynnyng of the moneth of February, and vpon Trinite Sondaye next ensuynge, he with his wyfe were crowned at Raynes, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande. CCC.xxviii. and the seconde yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrde, thanne beynge in possessyon of the crowne of Englande. Atwene this Philyp and the sayde Edwarde kynge of Englande, as some deale before in the story, and. iiii. yere of Charlys the. v. is towched, great disputacyons and arguinentes arose atwene theyr counsaylles, for the ryght and tytle to the crowne of Fraunce; for it was thought by the cõsayll of Englãde, forsomoche as Edwarde was cosyn to Philyp le Beaw, & sone of the sayd Philippes doughter, whiche had no mo childer but Edwardes moder, that he shuld rather be kyng of Fraũce than Philip de Valoys, that was but cosyn germayn to Philip le Beaw, & sone of his brother Charlys. Of whiche dispucions and argumentys, the fynall cõclusyon was, that for an olde decre and lawe, by auctoryte of parlyament longe before made, was enacted that no woman shuld enheryte ŷ crowne of Fraũce. Therefore the tytle of Edwarde by myght of the Frenshemen was put by, & this Philyp admytted to the gouernaũce of ŷ same. After whiche direccyon thus taken, and specyally by the meanes of sir Robert erle of Artoys, this Philip anone was proclaymed regent of Fraunce vnto suche tyme as the quene, wyfe of Charlys the. v., which then was with childe, were delyuered; and so receyued the rule of the lande as regent: in tyme whereof Peter Remy, pryncipall tresorer of kyng Charlys last dede, (which Peter, lyuynge the sayd Charlys, was accused of mysspendynge of the kynges tresoure & enrychyng of hymself contrary to ryght & reason, so that his goodes shulde be estemyd at. iiii.C.M.*li.* after Parys money, wherof the value is set out in dyuers places before in this werke,) was taken out of pryson & areygned at Parys, and there conuict & adiuged; and vpon ŷ xxiiii. day of Marche drawen thorugh ŷ cytie, and hanged vpon the comon gybet of Parys. And vpon the firste day of Apryll folowynge, the olde quene, and wyfe of Charlys last kyng, was lyghted of childe, and brought forth a doughter at Boys in Vincent, whych after was named Blanche. Where before ŷ sayed Philip de Valoyes ruled before but as regẽt, nowe he was allowed & takyn for kynge and crowned as before is sayd at the cytie of Raynys, with ŷ quene his wyf vpõ Trinyte Sonday: and whan ŷ solempnyte of his coronacion was ended, he then assembled before hym & his counsayl Lowys the erle of Flaũdres, & receyued of hym homage for the sayd erledom; and that done he besought the kynge of ayde, to oppresse certayn townes of his coũte, whiche rebellyd agayne hym, whereunto the kynge graunted: & by counsayll & exortacyon of syr Gaunter, or Walter de Crecy, than constable of Fraunce, the kynge sent out his cõmyssyoners, chargynge his lordes with theyr assygnes sowdyours, to mete with hym in diffensyble arraye at the cytie of Arras by Marymawdeleyne day next ensuyng.

Fol. C.xxiiii.

[1] Machabeus. edit. 1538. 1542. 1559. [2] *After these verses the Museum* MS. *has the following entry in a different but contemporary hand.* Yt ys to be notid that the above namyd Edmund of Langley had a sone called Richard of Quynysborgth, the which Richard, beyng duke of York, hadd a sone namyd Richard that was also duke of York and fader vnto Edward the iiiᵗʰ, late kyng of Engeland.

At

At whiche daye the kynge with his lordes and people there metynge, toke forewarde vpon his iourney & sped hym towarde Cassyle, a towne of Flaundres, wher wtin lytel space of ỹ towne, he pyght his pauylyons and tents, & wastyd and pylled the countre thereabout: but the Flemynges kepynge within the sayd towne, feryd nothynge the Frenshe kynge, but in dirision of hym & of his lordes, they caused a red cok to be paynted vpon a whyte cloth, and wrote in great letters in the sayd cloth, this ryme folowynge, and hangyd it out ouer the walles.

Quant ce quoc icy chantera,
Le roy troue ca entrera.

Whiche is thus to meane in our vulgare speche.

Whan that this cok loo here doth synge,
Than shall this founde[1] kyng his hoost in brynge.

WHan this was redde of ỹ Frenshmen, & report therof vnto[2] the kyng, he was therwith sore amoued, and specyally for that that they named hym the foundyn kynge. Therefore they[3] assayled them strongly vpon all parties; but they of ỹ towne defended theim manfully, so that theyr enenyes had of theim none aduauntage. Then the kyng sent sir Robert de Flaūdres, a knyght of the erles, with a certayne sowdyours, cōmaūdyng hym to assayle the Flemyges towarde seynt Emers[4], & ỹ erle so beyng monysshed ỹ he with his people shulde assayll theym towarde the ile. Then the comons of Brugys, Ipre, of Courney[5], of Fourneys, & of Cassyle, assembled theim & prouyded that a certayne of them shuld kepe ỹ mount of Cassyle, and another company shuld kepe the coutre towarde Tourney, and the thirde hoost shuld fortyfye ỹ coutre towarde ỹ ile, the whiche people orderid[6] euery host his[7] lymyt to hym assygned, and dayly skyrmysshe with ỹ Frenshmen, so that atwene them men were slayne vpon both parties. Whan the kynge had thus lyen before the towne a certayne season, the Flemynges nat feryng theyr enemyes, yssued oute of the towne, and pyght their tentes vpon the mount of Cassyle, & shewyd theym boldly of vnto theyr enemyes. Thanne kynge Phylyp seynge the boldnesse of the Flemynges, and how lytell they feryd hym, toke cōsayll of his lordes, how he myght cause theym to discende the hylle, for so longe as they kept the hyll it was iuperdous and perylous to stye towarde theym. Lastly it was agreed by the kynge & his lordes, that sir Robert de Flaundres ỹ other, shuld assayle an holde or towne there by, called Terroner de Bergner, by meane whereof, the kynge thought ỹ they wolde discende the mount to rescue the sayde towne, whiche accordyng to the kynges mynde was done, and a bulwerke set vpon a fyre; but the kynge had neuer the rather his entent, for they kepte theym and theyr gates in so sure wyse ỹ the Frenshe kyng for all his great power, myght to theym do no scathe, in so moche that the kynge consyderynge theyr strength, was condiscendyd to famyshe theym by hunger, ỹ they[8] myght nat wyn strength: and for that toke the lesse watche or regarde to his people, but sufferid theym to playe and disport theym out of theyr harneys, eche of theym in others tente, thynkyng hym sure of his enemyes, for any assaute or warre by them to be procured, or attempted agayne hym or his lordes.

But whether it were that his enemyes of this were warnyd, or ỹ of theyr owne courage and pryde they wolde assayle the Frenshe hoost, vpon ỹ. xxiii. daye of August toward ỹ nyght, the sayd hoost of Flemynges aualyd ỹ mōut in a secret wyse as mē of warre myght, and drewe theym towarde the Frenshemen, whiche thenne were vnarmed, and in theyr disportes of dysynge and playinge at the chesse and other gamys; vpon whom the Flemynges came so sodaynly, that they slewe many of theyr enemyes, and forced many to fle towarde seynt Emers[4] for theyr sauegarde. And so the Flemynges helde on their waye tyll they came nere vnto the kynges tent, which then was also vnarmyd; but by ỹ noyse

[1] newe found. MS. [2] made unto. [3] he. MS. [4] Omers. [5] Tourney. [6] thus orderid. MS. [7] kept his. MS. [8] he. MS.

& crye he beyng warned in al hast armyd hym: in the whiche season as God wold for the Frenshe hoost, certayne marchallys of the Frenshe hoost w a stronge compuny retourned from ỹ assaute of an holde therby and encountred the Flemynges, and helde with theym batayll whyle the kynge and his lordes made them redy, so that in processe the Flemynges were closed with their enemyes and hadde a sharpe and cruell fyghte, wherin they diffendyd theym vygurously, but in ỹ ende the losse of the felde tourned vpon ỹ Flemynges, so that the capitayñ named Zaunqun' was slayne with many other, to the nombre of. xviii.M. & aboue, as wytnessyth ỹ Frenshe boke, ouer many whiche were there taken prysoners of poore men and artyficers, for the multitude of ỹ gentylmen were vpon the erlys partie.

After whiche victorye thus opteyned by the kynge, anone he caused the sayde towne of Cassell to be sette vpon a fyre, and after yode vnto Bruges and hadde it yolden vnto hym, & in lyke wyse was Ipre, Poperynge, Fournays, Tournaye, Terrouer, and many other good townes yolden vnto hym, amonge the whiche Gaunt is nat named; wherfore it is to deme ỹ it was none of those townes that at this season rebelled. Than in shorte processe folowynge the kynge had the rule of the hole erledome of Flaunders, and delyuered the possessyon therof vnto Lowys the foresayd erle of that coũtre, and after retourned into Fraunce with pompe, leuynge the erle in his countye of Flaundres; the which dyd after so cruell iustyce vpon his subiectes that he put to deth by dyuerse tourmentes, as rakkynge, heddynge, & hangynge in sondry townes & places of his lordshyppes, vpon ỹ nõbre of. x. M. ouer and aboue many and dyuers which were banysshed, some for fewe yeres, some for many, and some for euermore.

Nota de homagio quod fecit Edwardus tertius Philippo regi Francie.

IN the seconde yere of this kỹge Phylyp, lyke as before is shewyd in the thyrde yere of kynge Edwarde, the sayd Edwarde made his homage vnto the sayde Phylyp in the towne of Amyas, for the duchy of Guyon and countye of Poytiers; and soone after this Phylyp sent into Flaũdres dyuerse bysshoppes and other noble men, by whose meanes ỹ gates of Bruges, of Ipre, of Courtray, and of other townes were abated and throwyn downe, for fere leste the sayd townes wolde ofte rebell agayne hym or theyr erle.

In this yere also sir Robert de Artoys beganne his plee in parlyament agayne Iohanne countesse of Artoys, for that erledome, in claymynge the right therof by certayne endentures of couenaũtes of maryage atwene sir Phylyp de Artoys his fader and dame Blaunche of Brytayne his moder, whiche wrytynges hadde ben by longe tyme kept[1] from hym and nowe newly foũdyn: and for to haue the better expedycion in his matyer he brought vnto the kynge ỹ erle of Alenson, the duke of Brytayne, with dyuerse nobles, the whiche made requeste for hym to the kynge that he myght haue iustyce; and with the countesse came the duke of Burgoyne, Lowys erle of Flaundres, and dyuers other noble men, makynge lyke request for her and for her ryght. Thenne sir Robert shewed forth a wrytynge sealed with the seale of armys of the erle of Artoys, cõteynynge than[2] whan the maryage was solempnysed of sir Philip de Artoys, fader to the sayd Robert, & of dame Blaunche, doughter vnto the duke of Brytayñ, and moder vnto the said Robert, the whiche accorded that the sayd sir Philip his fader gaue vnto the sayd dame Blaunche and to her heyres ỹ erledome of Artoys, whiche wrytynges, at the instaunce & prayer of the countesse of Artoys, were then delyuerid ĩto ỹ court to be kept, sayinge ỹ the sayd wrytynges were vntrewe & coũterfetyd; vpon the whiche the sayd countesse brought suffycyent prouffe ỹ the sayd wrytynges were falsly made and sealed by a gentylwoman, doughter vnto the lorde of Dyguon of the castell of Bethune, ỹ which was so lernyd ĩ astronomy ỹ she toke vpon her to shewe thynges to come, wherin somtyme she happed vpon the soth, but more oftener she fayled: by meanes of whiche woman, an olde chartre, sealed with the seale

Fol. C.xxv.

[1] Colyn Zaunqun. MS. [2] hydd. MS. [3] that.

of

of ỹ forenamed sir Philip was foũde, ỹ which she craftely toke of & set it vpon a newe wrytynge made to the auauntage of the sayd sir Robert of Artoys, & after presented theym vnto the sayd sir Robert, sayinge ỹ she had founde them in the towne of Acras[1], the which he ioyfully receyued, and made his tytle and clayme vpon the same.

This matyer thus hangyng before the kyng and his lordes, in the thirde yere of his reygne, in the cytie of Parys, after due prouffe made vpon ỹ same, the sentence was gyuen agayne sir Robert of Artoys, to his great displeasure, in so moche, that he sayde openly, "By me he was made a kynge, and by me he shal be dismyssed if I maye." And for he feryd to be caste in pryson by the Frenshe kynge, he therfore conueyed his horse and goodes secretly vnto Burdeaux vpon Geroũde, and there toke shyppyng, and so passyd into Englande his sayd horses & tresoure, and hymself yode vnto his cosyne ỹ duke of Braban, with whome he bode a certayne of tyme, and after passed into Englande, and excyted kynge Edwarde hougely for to make warre vpon the Frenshe kynge.

In the. iiii. yere of the reygne of this Philip, the sayde sir Robert was proclaymed opyn enemy to the crowne of Fraunce, and his landes seased into the Frenshe kynges handes, and he banysshed ỹ lande for euer, except ỹ he, ẅin a moneth after Easter nexte ensuynge, wold come into ỹ kynges court & submytte hym hooly vnto the kynges grace, whiche sentence passed agayn him, for so moche as he apperyd nat.

In the. vi. yere of the reygne of this Philip, the wyfe of sir Robert of Artoys, the whiche was suster vnto kyng Philip, was accused to be a great occasioner of ỹ offence of her husbande, for the which, she with her childer was sent into Gastenoys, & there holden in strayte pryson.

In the. viii. yere of his reygne, kynge Philip vysited dyuerse parties of his realme, and in that doyng vysyted many places of pylgrymages, whiche before he had promysed to seche for ỹ restytucion of helth to his eldest sone Iohñ, then duke of Normandy, whiche the yere before, by meane of sekenes, was in greate ieoperdy of lyfe; &, continuing the sayde iourney, rode vnto Auyngton[2], & visited there the pope[3], than beinge Benet the. xii. of that name, and whã he hade sped hys nedis wyth hym, he yode into ỹ prouynce of Mercyle for to se there his nauye, and after retourned by Burgoyne, where of the duke he was royally resaiuyd & feested: in whiche seasõ of his there tarienge, a complaynte was broughte before hym by the saide duke ageyne sir Iohñ de Chalon, for clayme of certen londes within that duchye, the whiche variaunce to apese, the kynge toke therein some payne, but no direccion he myghte set therein, so that the saide duke & sir Iohñ deperted with wordes of diffiaunce; and shortly after the sayde sir Iohñ, accompanyed with dyuerse noble mẽ of Almayne, entred the duchye of Burgoyne, & therein dyd moche harme to the countre and people, and gat certayne castelles & them fortyfyed with Almaynes. Then ỹ duke hauyng in his ayde the kyng of Nauerñ, the duke of Normandy, with the erle of Escamps and of Flaundres, assieged ỹ castel of Chausy, & at the ende of vi. wekes wan the same, & after yode vnto the cytie of Besenson & layd siege to it also; but whan he had leyne there a longe season he was fayne to cõclude a trewes, his hooste was in suche distresse of vytayll, by reason of which peas or trewes the hostes were desceuered, and the ende of ỹ warre vnparfyted: but in the yere foloynge, by meane of the Frenshe kynge, a direccion was taken atwene the sayd parties. And this yere kynge Philip sent certayne messengers vnto kynge Edwarde, vpon certayne demaũdes for ỹ castel of Yauntes[4]; & for ỹ whiche contrauersie firste began to kyndle atwene the sayd. ii. prynces, as in the. x. yere of Edward is touched with the other yeres folowynge.

In the. ix. yere of this Philip apperyd a blasynge sterre, after the which ensuyd great mortalyte Blasynge sterre

[1] Arras. MS. [2] Avygnon. [3] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] Yantz & othir. MS. *and* edit. 1542. 1559.

mortalyte ẅin the realme of Fraunce, aswell of men as of bestes: and in this yere a nother man of the prouynce of Langedok, named Arnolde of Normandy, was hedyd & hanged vpon the cōmon gybet of Paris, for asmoche as by his meanes it was proued that the Englysshemen had won the castell of Paracoll.

And in ỹ. x. yere of kynge Philip, kyng Edward of Englande sent sir Barnarde de Bret into Flaūdres, for causes touched & shewed in the. xii. yere of the sayd Edwarde; and in ỹ. xi. yere of this Philip, kyng Edwarde sayled into Braban & alied hym with Lowys the emperour: and whyle the Frensh kynge taryed ẅ his hoost at Seinte Quyntyn in Vermandoys, kynge Edwarde entered into Fraunce and spoyled & brent a parte of Treresse, nat without some note or' of cowardyse arrected to the Frenshe kyng & his hoost of his owne subgettes. And in the same yere beganne the towne of Gaunt to rebell, with other townes of Flaūdres, by ỹ mocion of Iaques de Artyuele, as in the. xiiii. yere is shewed of kynge Edwarde the thirde.

In the. xii. yere of this Philip, whiche the Frenshe boke calleth the yere of confucyon, kynge Edwarde beynge retourned into Englande, the Frenshe kynge assembled a mighty hoost to go agayne the Henauders, Flemynges, and Brytons, & came with the sayd hoost vnto Arras, and sent from thens a part of his people with his sone Iohn, than duke of Normādy, into Henaude, for to warre vpon the countie there, whiche went streyght vnto Cambraye, & after layd siege to ỹ castell called Esthandune, and within. xv. dayes folowynge the Frenshe kyng his fader came vnto ỹ sayd siege with innumerable people, the whiche castell, at thende of a moneth after the kynges cōmyng, was gyuen vp by apoyntement: and that done the kynge remoued his siege to a castell of the bisshop of Cambray named Thune, standyng vpon the ryuer of Lestant, where the kyng lay longe tyme without harme doynge vnto the sayde castell. At length the duke of Braban, with the erle[2], with a stronge host of dyuerse nacyons came for to remoue that siege, so that the Frenshe hoost lay vpon that one syde of the ryuer and the Brabanders vpon that other; but by meane of. iiii. brydges which were made ouer that ryuer, both hoostes at sondry tymes mette & faughte dyuers sharpe skyrmysshes to the losse of people vpon both parties: but in the ende the castell was so betyn with gonnes that the capitayne therof put all his mouables in a shyp, and after with such sowdyours as were left entred the sayd shyp, and set the castel vpon a lyght fyre, wherof whan the Frenshe kynge was ware, in all haste he caused the walles to be scaled, & so entred & stanched ỹ fyre, and the same nyght ỹ host of Brabanders departyd also.

Fol. Cxxvi. Whan the kyng had thus wonne this castell, he then sent the dukes of Normandy & of Burgoyn vnto a towne named Quesnoy, & whan ỹ sayd dukes had brent a parte of ỹ towne & other vyllages there about, they retourned agayn vnto ỹ Frenshe hoost, & shortly after the kyng retourned into Fraunce & there made prouycion to sende forth his nauy to mete ẅ kynge Edwarde, whiche were to the nombre of. CCCC. or aboue, the whiche, as in the ỹ. xv. yere of Edwarde the thirde is before shewyd, met the Englysshe nauy, & ther at a place called ỹ Swyn, were ouer cōmyn, [as here vnder apperyth.][1]

AFter this great victory thus opteyned by the kyng of Englande, the Frenshe kyng ẅ a great host, heryng comfortable tydynges of the discomfyture of sir Robert de Artoys, before the towne of Seynt Omers, as before, ī ỹ. xv. yere of kyng Edwarde is also shewyd, sped hym tyl he cam to the pryory of seint Andrew; where he taryng with his people, certayn lettres were sent to hym by kyng Edward, wherof the tenour with ỹ answere of ỹ same are set out in the foresayd. xv. yere, with other matyers apperteynyng to the actes of both prynces. Whan the peas was concluded atwene the sayd kynges, as in the sayd.

[1] or slaūdir. MS. [2] with the erle of Gelre. MS. Gerle. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] as by this pictur here under apperyth. MS. *Omitted in the* edit. of 1533. 1542. 1559.

xv. yere is declared, the kyng of Fraũce retourned to his owne. And in the. xiii. yere of his reygne dyed Iohñ duke of Brytayne, after whose deth Charlys de Bloys & Iohñ de Moũtfort claymed seuerally to be enherytoures of ỹ duchy; whiche Charlys was sone vnto ỹ erle of Bloys & neuew vnto the Frenshe kyng, by reason that Margaret his suster was moder vnto the sayd Charlys, the whiche Charlys had maryed the doughter of Guy de Brytayne vycoũt of Lymoges. ii. brother of the forenamed Iohñ duke of Brytayn: & the sayd Iohñ de Moũtfort was the thirde brother vnto ỹ foresayd Iohñ duke of Brytayn, now deed: so ỹ this questyon of this clayme restyd vpõ this poỹt, whether the doughter of the ii. brother shuld enheryte ỹ duchy, or ỹ yonger brother, cõsyderyng ỹ Iohñ the eldest brother dyed wout heyre of his body, & Guy the seconde brother without heyre male; wherfore ỹ thirde brother, Iohñ de Moũtfort claymed to be duke of Brytayn: whiche case & question was brought before ỹ Frensh kyng & his lordes, & there debatyd & argued by a longe season, but in ỹ ende sentence passed agayne sir Iohñ de Moũtfort, & Charlys de Bloys was put in possession of ỹ duchy by kynge Philip, to whom the sayd Charlys dyd his homage for the same. For this sentence arose mortall warre atwene the sayde sir Charlys & sir Iohñ, in the whiche the. ii. kynges of Englande & Fraunce toke partie; so ỹ kyng Edward ayded sir Iohñ de Moũtfort, & kyng Philip his neuew sir Charlys. Than sir Iohñ de Moũtfort before ỹ sentence gyuen, feryng ỹ sequell' of the same, departed from ỹ court, & gat hym into a stronge towne of Brytayne, & there held hym: wherof kyng Philip beyng aduertized, sent sir Iohñ his sone duke of Normãdy & his brother sir Charlys erle of Alenson for to warre vpon ỹ sayd sir Iohñ de Mountfort, the whiche sped them with a nombre of people into Brytayne, & besieged a stronge castel stãdynge in an ile by ỹ ryuer of Loyer, & after the wynnyng therof they yode vnto ỹ cytie of Nauntes, the which ỹ cytezeyns yelded vnto them without stroke. And soone after, as testifieth the Frenshe story, vpon certayne condycions & couenaũtes, the sayd sir Iohñ de Moũtfort yelded hym vnto the duke of Normãdy, the whiche sent hym vnto ỹ kyng his fader to Parys, where the sayd kyng was' imprysoned in the castell of Louure; but how it was by fauour or otherwyse he escaped pryson, after. ii. yeres prysonement, or after some wryters, he was after. ii. yeres delyuered vpon certayne condycions, wherof one was ỹ he shuld nat come in Brytayn, nor any thynge medle or haue to do in ỹ coũtre. But this prysonement of sir Iohñ de Moũtfort natwithstandyng, the warre was maynteyned in Brytayn by ỹ frendes of the sayd sir Iohñ, & many townes & castellys therof was holden to the vse of the sayd sir Iohn; wherof to shewe vnto you the circumstaũce & processe it wold aske a longe tyme, but in cõclucion and fyne of this warre shalbe shewed, in ỹ story of the. vi. Charlis & sone of kyng Iohñ.

In the. xv. yere of this Philip, the erle of Salisbury, accompanyed with sir Robert of Artoys & other noble men, entrede Brytayn & ayded ỹ frendes of sir Iohñ de Moũtfort, in doyng great domage to that coũtre, & brent moche of the Frenshe kynges nauy; in assayling wherof sir Robert of Artoys was woũded in the thygh with a gunne, wherupon he laye syke, & vpon ỹ ensued a flux, & so therof dyed, & after cõueyed into Englande, & there buryed[a]. And soon after kyng Edward entred Fraũce with a stronge army; but a peas was atwene hym & the Frenshe kyng condiscendyd for a certayne terme, by labour of. ii. cardynalles, as before in the. xvi. yere of kyng Edwarde is declared. And in this yere kyng Philip areryd a taske[1] of his people called a gabell in Frenshe; this was prouyded ỹ no subiet of the kynges nor other ỹin his lande shuld bye any salt, but of the kyng & at his pryce, and ouer ỹ he areryd & lowyd ỹ coynes & moneys of his lande, to the great auaũtage of hymself & enpouerysshyng of his sayd subiectes; by meane wherof he fyl in great hatered of his people.

[1] by the said kyng he was. MS. *and* edit. 1542. 1559. [a] *In the margin of the* MS. *in the same contemporary hand already noticed, is the following remark.* "Her apperith variaũce of wryters, for sir Robert erle "of Artoys was slayn, as it sheweth befor in ffo. C.xxxix[x]. which shuld seme to be oon persone." *See* p. 411. [1] taxe. edit. 1559.

In

In the. xvi. yere of his reygne, a great discencõn grewe amonge the nobles of Normãdy, by reason of parties takyng some with sir Iohñ of Harecourt, & other with sir Robert Barthran then marshal of Fraũce; for couenaũtes of maryage appoynted atwene the sone of ỹ said sir Robert vpon that one partie, & ỹ doughter of sir Roger Bacoñ, whose wyfe or maides moder was than maryed vnto sir Godfrey de Harecourt, brother of the abouesaid sir Iohñ vpon ỹ other partie: for varyaũce wherof great warre was lykely to haue ensued, if the kyng the sooner had nat sent streyght cõmaũdement ỹ eyther partie shuld kepe his peas, & to appere before hym & his lordes at Parys, & there to haue theyr greuaũce by hym & his lordes determyned. At whiche day of apperaũce the sayde sir Godfrey apperyd nat, nor none for hym, but contrary the kynges cõmaundement assieged sir William Berthran bysshop of Bayoñ, & brother to the foresayd sir Robert, than beyng in a castell. And when he sawe he myght nat preuayll agayne hỹ, he then drewe vnto the Englysshemen, & ayded them agaynst the Frenshe kynge. In this yere also kyng Philip entendynge to releue the duche of Burgoyn with whete, whiche there than was scant, ordeyned that certayn quarters of whete shuld be gaderyd in the coũtres of Terroner, of Orleaũce, & Gastenoys, and so sent into Burgoyn: but the estudyaũtes of Orleaunce, with the burgeyses & cõmons of the cytie, toke therw̃ such grefe, that of one mynde they went downe vnto the ryuer of Loyer, wher at ỹ season certayne shyppes laye freyght with vytall to be had vnto the sayd countre, & there fet out the grayen & spoyled it in such wyse, ỹ moche therof came neuer to good: & that done, many of ỹ company beyng nedy & poore, yode vnto vyllages there by & robbyd the people, & dyde moche harme. Whan the prouost or ruler of Orleaũce behelde this rage & riot of the people, & consyderyd the multitude of them, he forbare for a tyme tyll they were somdele asswaged, and then with suche company as he had of his offycers & other, he toke a certayne of them & put them in sondrye prysons, tyll he knewe farther of the kynges pleasure. But it was nat longe after, that the other of ỹ affynyte heryng of the enprysonement of theyr felowes, assembled them of new, & lyke wood men rãne vnto the prysons, and nat alonely delyueryd theyr felowes, but also many other whiche laye there for great causes & crymes, and some suche as were condempnyd to deth for theyr transgressyons.

Fol. C.xxvii. Whan noticion of this great outrage and ryot came vnto the kynge, anone he sent thyder. ii. knyghtes of his court with a puyssaunt army, chargyng them to take all suche as were occasioners & begynners of this ryot, & as many as were foũde culpable to be put vnto deth: the whiche knyghtes accordyng to their cõmyssion, with ayde of the prouost of Orleaũce, toke suche as were dempte gylte of this cryme, & hanged them vpon the cõmon gybet or galous of the cytie, amonge ỹ whiche were dyuers clerkes, and one a deakyn & within orders. And in ỹ same yere & moneth of August, a noble knyght of Brytayne called sir Olyuer de Clicoñ, for treason ỹ he had conspyred agayne kyng Philip, or for he had fauoured kynge Edwardes partie, was taken by a trayne at a iuste or tournament holden for the same cause at Parys, and shortly after iuged to deth; as firste drawen thorugh the cytie vnto ỹ place of iugemẽt, & ther vpon a scaffold purposely ordeyned was byhedyd, & after, his body w̃ chaynes hãged vpon the gybet, & his hed standyng ther ouer vpon a stake, or, after an other auctour, had vnto the cytie of Nauntes in Brytayne, & there pyght vpon a gate of that cytie. And in ỹ same moneth sir Godfrey de Harecourt, which was, as before is sayd, alyed hym w̃ kynge Edwarde, & wold nat apere after certayn sõmaunces, was nowe openly banysshed as traytour & enemy to the crowne of Fraũce. And in the same moneth was sir Iohñ de Moũtfort delyuerid out of pryson, vpon suche condycyon as before is rehersyd in the. xiii. yere of this kyng. And soone after were put vnto deth at Paris, sir Iohñ de Malestreet, sir Godfrey de Malestrete, the fader & ỹ sone, sir Iohñ de Moũtalbone, sir Wylliam de Bruys, sir Iohñ de Cablat and sir Iohñ de Plessis knyghtes; and esquyres, Iohñ de Malestrete neuew to the

foresayd knyghtes, Guyllam de Bruze, Robert de Bruys, Iohñ de Senne, and Dauy de Senne.

And shortly after at Parys were put in execucion. iii. Norman knyghtes, for affynyte or fauour whiche they had borne towarde sir Godfrey de Harecourt, and theyr heddes sent vnto Seynt Loup in Constantyne, a cyte of Normandy, which sayd knyghtes were called sir Willyam Bacon, sir Roulande de la Roche Tessoñ, and sir Richarde de Percy.

IN the. xvii. yere of this Philyp, one maister Henry de Malestrete, clerke & deaken, & brother to the abone named sir Godfrey, before put in execucion, whiche sayde maister Henry was maister of the requestes w̄ kynge Philip, for so moche as he after the deth of his sayd brother yode vnto kynge Edwarde and counsayled hym agayne kynge Phylip, (and after, by assignement of kyng Edwarde, was set in great auctorite within the towne of Vaunys in Brytayne. whiche towne was after goten by ȳ Frenshemen, and he therin as one of the chefe capytaynes of the same takyn,) was imprysoned within the castelet of Parys, out of ȳ whiche, at this season, he was taken thens and sette in a tumbrell, & therunto fastenyd with chaynes of iren, and so conueyed, bareheded, with dynne and crye, thorough the hyghe stretes of Parys tyll he came vnto the bysshoppes palays of Parys, and there delyuered vnto the bysshop; and soone after, by vertue of a cōmyssion purchased by kynge Philip of the pope[1] to haue the sayd maister Henry disgraded, he was deprysed of all degrees and ordres of the churche, and then delyuered vnto the execucioners, the whiche by. iii. dayes contynuell, a certayne season of ȳ daye, set hym vpon a ladder in the syght of all people, to the entent ȳ euery man and childe myght throwe at hym al fylth and ordour of the strete, the whiche was done without all compassyon & pyte in so cruell wyse, ȳ by the thirde dayes ende he was deed, & after buryed inreuerently.

In the sayd. xvii. yere of kyng Philip, also as before is shewid in the. xix. yere of kyng Edward the thirde, Iaques de Artiuele, whiche was especiall promoter of ȳ sayd Edwardes causes, came vnto ȳ towne of Gaūt, & shewyd vnto them dyuerse appoyntments to be holden atwene them & other townes of Flaūdres, vpon the. xv. day of Iulet, by dyuers[2] cospiratours of the sayd towne of Gaūt, he was pursued[3] from one hous to an other, & lastly slayne & murdred by them, to the kyng of Englādes great displeasure & hurt; wherfore ȳ sayd kyng Edwarde was fayne to retourne into Englande w̄out spede of his purpose, lyke as before in the sayd. xix. yere of his reygne is declared. In this yere also & moneth of Decembre dyed sir Iohñ erle of Moūtfort, which, as before is said, claymed ȳ duchy of Brytayne, [& left after hȳ a sone named also sir Iohñ, & erle of Moūtfort, the whiche in lyke wyse claymed the sayd duchy of Brytayne,][4] & maynteyned the warre agayne sir Charlys de Bloys, as his fader before had done. In ȳ. xviii. yere of kyng Philip & firste day of Iuly, at Parys, was than put to deth by cruell execucōn a cytezyn of Compeyñ, named Symōde Poylet, a man of great ryches, the which for he had sayd in open audyence ȳ the right of the crowne of Fraunce belonged more rightfully vnto kyng Edwarde than to kyng Philip, he was firste hanged vpon a tree lyke as an oxe is hāged in the bochery, & there dismēbred, as firste ȳ armys, & after ȳ legges cut from his body, & lastly his hed stryken of, & the trunke of his body hāged by chaynes vpon the ȳ cōmon gybet of Parys. And vpō a Saterday, beyng the. xxvi. day of August in the foresayd. xxviii[5]. yere of kyng Philip, was foughten at Cressy ȳ batayll before expressed in ȳ. xxi. yere of kyng Edwarde the thirde, where the flour of ȳ chyualry of Fraūce was slayne & taken prysoners. Than soon after kyng Philip, for ȳ defence of ȳ charge of his warres, asked a subsidie of the monkes of Seynt Denys, and amonge

[1] Bisshop of Rome, edit. 1542. [2] the which Iaques by dyuers. MS. [3] was immediatly pursuyd. MS.
[4] *Omitted in the* edit. *of* 1559. [5] xxviii. *in* edit. 1542. 1559. *erroneously.*

certayne

certayne ioyalles of ỹ place to be had, he demaũded the great crucyfix of golde standyng ouer ỹ hygh aulter of that monastery; wherunto the monkes answered ỹ they myght nat depart with ỹ crucifixe, for Eugenius ỹ thirde of that name, pope[1], accursed al them ỹ layd any hande vpon ỹ crucifixe, to the entent to remoue it from ỹ place, as it apperith by wryting set vnder ỹ fote of ỹ said crosse: by which answere the kyng was pacyfied. And in the moneth of Decembre sir Godfrey de Harecourt, ẅ a towell double folden about his necke, came vnto the presence of kyng Philip, & yelded hym holy to his mercy & grace: the whiche graũtyd vnto hym his pardon. And in shorte whyle after al the Lumbardes vsurers ẅin the realme of Fraunce were taken & sent to dyuers prysons, & all suche persons as stode boũden vnto them for any bargeyn or lowne of money by way of vsury, it was ordeyned ỹ the sayd persons beynge dettours to the sayd vsurers shuld paye the pryncipall dette vnto the kynge at theyr dayes of payment, & the resydue whiche remayneth to the vsurer for his lucre of gayne, for ỹ lowne of his money, shuld be pardoned to ỹ dettour, & after ỹ sayd Lumbardes vsurers were deliuered from pryson by paying of great & greuous fynaũce.

In the. xix. yere of this Philip, for somoche, as wytnessyth the Frenshe Cronycle, ỹ the Flemynges by great manacis & per force had cõstrayned theyr erle to be assured, by bonde of assuraũce, vnto ỹ doughter of kyng Edward, cõtrary his volũte & wyll, the sayd erle nat wyllynge to accomplysshe ỹ maryage, in ỹ Ester weke, by a cautele departed out of Flaũders & cam to ỹ Frensh kyng to Parys, of whom he was honourably & ioyously receyued.

And in the same yere one named Gawyn de Belemont an aduocat of ỹ spũel lawe, entendynge to betray the cytie of Laoñ, acqueynted hym ẅ a poore man than dwellynge in ỹ cytie of Meaus, named Colyn Tomelyn, the whiche before tyme was fled the cytie of Laon, & was than for lacke of substaunce comyn to Meaus, & there mayntened a poore lyfe, to the which this Gawyn resorted and releuyd[2]; & lastely whan he thought he hỹ was somdele of hym assured, he brake vnto hym his mynde & sayd, if he wolde be ruled by hym he wolde restore hym to his former prosperyte & welth, wherunto this Colyner[3] graunted. Than anone this Gawyn shewed hỹ a lettre, & wylled hym to bere it vnto the kyng of Englande, ẅ certayne rewarde to hym gyuyng, and also promysynge of moche more with that, ỹ he retourned to hym shortly to ỹ cytie of Raynys with ãswere of the same. Whan this poore & indygent man had receyued this lettre, he cast many perellys ī his mỹde; how be it ỹ fynally, contrary his othe & promyse, he toke his waye towarde the Frenshe kynge, and presented hym with that letter, in the whiche was expressed all the maner & ordre how the sayd cytie of Laon shuld be betrayed. Whan ỹ kyng was aduertysed of all the circumstaunce of this treason, he enfourmed this Colyner[3] how he shuld behaue hymself in berynge of his answere, and prouyded his tyme accordynge as thougth he had ben in Englande; & by conuenyent day came vnto hym to Raynys, accordynge to the former appoyntmẽt: in whiche season the kynge had sent in secrete maner vnto the prouost of Raynys, that so soone as the sayde Colyner[3] had shewyd to the sayde Gawyn his answere, that the sayde Gawyn shuld be attached & had vnto pryson, the whiche was accordyngly executyd. And in short processe folowyng, forsomoche as he was within ordres, he was by ỹ prouost sent vnto the cytie of Laon, and there put to the bysshoppes pryson; but when the comons of the sayd cytie harde of suche a man there being prysoner, ỹ wold haue betrayed their cytie, they assembled them in great multytude & wold haue broken the pryson, to the ende to haue slayne hym: but they were so pacyently answered by the bysshoppes officers that they retourned vnto theyr houses. Vpon the morowe folowynge, to cease ỹ rumour of ỹ people, he was brought vnto his iugement, and there cõdempned for his dymerite vnto perpetueil pryson, & more therunto was added, ỹ for his more diffamy & shame he shuld be set ī a tumbrell vp on

Fol. C.xxviii.

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] hym releuid. MS. [3] Colyn. MS.

hyghe

hyghe barehedyd, ỹ of al people he myght be seen, & so ẏ moost shameful instrumẽtes lad thorugh ỹ hygh stretes of ỹ cytie, & brought agayn vnto ỹ bysshopes pryson, & there to remayne for terme of lyfe; but he was nat fer in such maner conueyed by the officers from the gaole, but that the cõmons fyll vpon hym with crye, & castyng of myre & stones, that, or he were halfe way lad of his circuyte or progresse, he was stonyd to dethe, & after his body buryed within a maroys nere vnto the sayd cytie.

And shortly after, at Parys, was done to cruell deth a cytezeyn of the sayd cytie, whiche entendyd to haue betrayed the sayd cytie of Parys; for the whiche treason he was firste dismembred of legges & armes, & after hanged by the nek vpon the gybet of Parys.

In the same yere, about ỹ feest of seynt Iohñ Baptyst, the Englysshemen ỹ had holden ỹ towne & castell called the Roch of Aryan in Brytayne, by the terme of. ii. yeres passed, at this season they were besieged & fyersly assautyd by sir Charlys de Bloys & his frendes, in so furious maner, that they rent with great ordenaũce dyuers places of the castell wallys, & in processe threwe downe ỹ rofe of a chambre, where the wyfe of the capitayne of ỹ castell lay in her child bed, & so ferre put in fere, ỹ the rulers of ỹ towne & castell graũted to delyuer ỹ towne & castell to ỹ sayd sir Charlys, ẏ that ỹ they myght departe with theyr lyues & goodes, ỹ whiche offer to his payñ & charge he refused.

For in shorte tyme after, sir Thomas of Agorñ an Englysshe knyght, with a stronge company of archers and other sowdyours, rescowed the sayd towne and castell, and after longe fyght & great daunger, as by a longe processe is declared in the Frenshe story, the sayd sir Thomas toke the sayd sir Charlis de Bloys prysoner, and slewe many of his lordes, as before is shortly towched in ỹ ende of the. xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde. After whiche victory thus opteyned, and his prysoners put in suer kepynge, he toke the ordenaunce of the duke left in the felde with other pyllage, and put it within the towne and castell aforesayd; & for the vyllages and men of the countre there about, had ayde[1] the duke agayne the towne and castell, therfore ỹ said sir Thomas punysshed the sayd vyllages and rurallis[2] by greuous fynes, and helde them ī great seruytude and daunger: and ouer that slewe many of theym, and many they held as drudges and captyues. And this done the Englysshemen repayred agayne the wallys, and suche other places as were before tyme betyn downe by force of the sayd siege, and strengthed it in theyr best maner.

IT was nat longe after, that kyng Philip at the request of the coũtre, sent thyder ỹ lord of Craoñ[3] with a stronge armye; to whom also great multytude of the people of ỹ countre resorted, with whose aydes the sayde lorde assayled the sayd towne and castell by. ii. dayes contynuell; but the Englysshemen deffended theymself vygurously, and threwe vpon theyr enemyes hote boylynge oyles and other gresys, with fyre colys and hote asshys, wherwith they greuyd theyr enemyes paynfully.

Thus contynuynge the siege, meanes of treatye were offeryd and cõdissendyd to yelde the towne, with condycion that they myght sauefely departe with theyr lyues & goodes; but the Frenshemen and Brytons wolde nat to it be agreable: then the assaute began of new, and the lorde of Craoñ[3] to encourage his sowdyours, henge a purse, and therin. l. scutes of golde vpon a sperys ende, and cryed with lowde voyce, that who that firste entred the towne shuld haue the sayde. l. scutes of golde. Whan the Ianuays or sowdyoures of the cytie of Icane & of ỹ cytie of Italye harde the promyse of their cheuytayne, a certayn of theym, with longe pycaxses and sharpe, approched them vnto the wallys, and so demeaned them, that in lesse then. v. houres they mynded[4] so ỹ wall, that there fyll therof, as testyfieth ỹ sayd Frenshe Cronycle, the length of. l. fote; by reason wherof entred firste the Ianuays, and after the hole host, the whiche without compassion or pyte slewe man woman & childe that came in theyr way, nat sparyng ỹ childer that 'souked vpon the moders brestes, & spoyled & robbyd the towne, euery man gettynge what he

[1] ayded. MS. [2] rulers. edit. 1559. [3] Caron. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] mynyd. MS.

myghte to his owne auaũtage. And whan the Frenshmen & Britons had them thus myserably slayne, many Englisshmen & also Brytons, & other inhabytaũtes of the towne, they thanne assayled the castell, to the which was fled vpon. CC. and. xl. Englysshmẽ; after dyuers assautes it was offeryd by ẏ sowdyours of the castell, ẏ they wold yelde the castell, theyr lyues & goodes saued: and fynally it was agreed theyr bodyes oonly to departe, and to be conueyed. x. myles vpon theyr waye towarde suche place as they wolde appoynt. Vpon the whiche appoyntement, ii. knyghtes, Brytons, that is to saye, sir Siluester de la Fulle and sir William de Stratton, receyued them in theyr cotes, & conueyed them with great payne & nat withoute losse of some; for theyr enemyes of the host caste stones at theym, and bete theym soo with theyr stauys, that dyuerse of theym dyed, and the remenaunt were brought nere vnto a castell, thanne in the power of Englysshe men named Quyntyne.

But whan the cõmons of the towne there nere, harde of the cõmynge of suche Englysshmen vnder saufe conduyt, the whiche before in the batayll of the Roche of Arian, where sir Charlys de Bloys was taken, hadde slayne theyr lorde, that is to meane the lorde of Quyntyne, anone they yssued out of the towne; and for they foude lytell resystence in theyr guydes, they slewe theym there, excepte one whiche was capitayne of the Englysshemen, whiche one of the sayde knyghtes caused to be set vpon his horse, and so fledde from the peryl. And whan the cruell Brytons hadde thus shamefully slayne the Englysshemen, they gaderyd the caryens vpon an hepe and suffered theym there so to lye, to the ende that bestes and fowles myght deuoure them. And in short tyme after, the erle of Flaũdres, by meanes of the Frenshe kyng, left the doughter of kynge Edwarde, and was maryed vnto the doughter of the duke of Braban. *Fol. C.xxiv.*

In the. xx. yere of Phylyp the towne of Calays was goten lyke as the circumstaũce therof is declared in the. xxii. yere of kyng Edwarde the thirde: and in the same yere the mortalyte or sykenesse, whiche after reygned in Englande, reygned nowe feruẽtly in Fraunce, and moste specyally in the cytie of Auynyon, by force wherof the thirde parte of the people of that cytie dyed; and from thens it came vnto Seynt Denys and soo vnto Parys, in whiche coost it was so feruent that there dyed in those. ii. townes ouer the nombre of. lvi.M. within ẏ space of. xviii[t]. monethes.

And in this yere the dolphyn of Vyen, named sir Ymbert, solde his dolphynage vnto the Frenshe kynge, & became a frere at Lyon vpon the Rosne, of the ordre of the frere prechours or blacke freres.

In the. xxi. yere of this Philip, Charlys the first begotten sone of Iohñ duke of Normandy, eldest sone of this Phylyp, toke possession of the sayd dolphynage of Vyen[e]. And in the moneth of August folowynge dyed the duchesse of Normandy and moder of the sayd Charlys. And in the moneth of Decembre folowynge dyed dame Iane quene of Fraũce, and doughter of Robert duke of Burgoyn. And in this yere was the treason wroughte by sir Godfrey de Charny, to haue agayne wonne the towne of Calays, lyke as I to you before haue shewid in the. xxiiii. yere of kynge Edwarde the thirde. And in ẏ moneth of Ianuary next ensuynge, and. ix. daye of the same kynge, Philip spoused his seconde wyfe Blaunche, somtyme the doughter of the quene of Nauarñ, lately dissesid, which was suster vnto the erle of Foyz; whiche espousayles were secretly done in the manour of Robert erle of Bray, & so the said kynge Phylyp was wedower from the. xii. daye of Decembre to the. ix. day of Ianuarii, whiche was by the space of. xxvii. dayes. And vpon the. ix. daye of the moneth of February Iohñ duke of Normãdy, eldest sone of this Phylyp, spoused his seconde wyfe Iohanne countesse of Boloyngñ, at a towne called Miriaux nere vnto Menlene; and so he morned for his wyfe, whiche was named the good duchesse of Normandy, by the terme of. vi. monethes &. ii. dayes lackynge.

[e] xxviii. edit. 1559. [f] *The* MS. *adds* in the cite of Vyen in the monyth of Apryll. M[i]

In the. xxii. yere of kynge Philyp and monethe of Iulii, sir Thomas de Agorne beforenamed, was by chaunce medley slayne of a Bryton knyght called sir Raufe de Cuours.

And vpon the. xxiii. daye of August folowynge dyed sir Philip de Valoys kynge of Fraunce, whan he had reygned ouer the Frenshmen in great vexacyon and trowble by the space of xxii. yeres lackynge. v. monethes and odde dayes, and was after entered at Seynt Denys by his firste wyfe, and left after hym Iohñ duke of Normandy for his heyre.

Of kynge Iohñ.

IOhñ the first of that name, and sone of Philip de Valoys, began to rayngne ouer the Frenshemen in the moneth of August, and yeer of our Lorde. M.CCC. and. l. and. xxiiii. yere of Edwarde the thirde, than kynge of Englande, and was crowned at Raynys ỹ. xxvi. day of Septembre folowynge with dame Iohane his wyfe, in tyme of the whiche solempnyte kyng Iohñ dubbyd his eldest sone dolphyn of Vyen, and Lowys his seconde sone erle of Alenson, knyghtes, with other noble men.

And vpon the. xvi. daye of Nouembre folowynge sir Rauffe erle of Ew & constable of Enemyes[1], whan it was Frenshe, the whiche was newly cõmyn oute of Englande where he hadde ben longe prysoner, was accused of treason, and so cõmaundyd vnto pryson at Parys, within whiche pryson he was shortly after byhedyd in the presence of the duke of Burgoyne and other nobles.

In the thirde yere of kynge Iohñ, and. viii. day of Ianuarii, Charlys kynge of Nauarne caused to be slayne within the towne of the Aygle in Normandy sir Charlys de Spayne constable of Fraunce, for the whiche murdre sourdyd great warre atwene kynge Iohñ and the sayde kynge of Nauerne, whiche contynued many yeres after, natwithstandynge ỹ the said kynge of Nauerne hadde maryed the doughter of ỹ sayd kynge Iohñ. Than by medyacyon of frendes a peas was dryuen atwene theym, so that kynge Iohñ shuld gyue vnto the kynge of Nauarne, for contentacyon of certayne sũmes of money yet owynge vnto hym for the dowar of his wyfe, certayne landes within the duchye of Normandy, & ouer that the Frenshe kynge shulde pardone all suche persones as were consentynge to the deth of the constable before murdred; after whiche treaty thus concludyd, the kyng of Nauarne, vnder assuraũce of hostage, cam vnto kyng Iohñs presence at Parys, and after he had taryed there a season he departed with dissimilacion on eyther partie vsyd, as after shall appere.

In the. iiii. yere of kynge Iohñ sir Godfrey de Harecourt, whiche with his sone and other hadde ben consentyng vnto the deth of the constable of Fraunce, were reconsyled agayne to ỹ kynge; the whiche ensensyd hym agayne the kynge of Nauarne by meanes of their sinister report, so that the peas atwene theym before concluded was disapoynted and broken. And soone vpon this sir Robert de Lorize, that was chãberlayne vnto kynge Iohñ, auoyded the courte, for fere lest the sayd sir Godfrey hadde shewyd of hym any thynge to the kynge, and so yode vnto the kyng of Nauarne into Normandy, after whose cõmynge the kynge of Nauerne departed shortly thens and spedde hym towarde Anynyon. It was nat longe after that the kyng of Nauarne was departed out of Normandy but ỹ kynge Iohñ sped hym thyder & seased all the landes that the kynge of Nauarne had within that duchy, and put offycers and rulers in his castellys & townes suche as hym lyked, and discharged the other, excepte. vi. castellys, that is to saye, Euroux, Le Pount Audemer, Chirebourt, Ganeray, Auranches, & Martayngne[2], the whiche were holden by the seruaũtes of the kynge of Nauerne & men of Nauarne borne.

[1] Guynes. [2] Mortaingne. MS.

In the moneth of Ianuarii folowynge sir Robert de Loryze abouenamyd, vnder condoyte[1] came vnto kynge Iohñ to Parys, and there was to hym in processe reconsyled.

And in this yere were ỹ artycles of peas atwene ỹ kynges of Englande & of Frãnce prolongyd tyll ỹ feest of seynt Iohñ Baptyst nexte ensuynge, as before in the ende of the. xxviii. yere of kyng Edwarde is more at length declared. In this. v. yere of kyng Iohñ and moneth of Apryll, he sent sir Charlys his sone, dolphyn of Vyenne, into Normandy, to aske ayde of the Normãnys agayne the kyng of Nauarne, the whiche graunted vnto hym. iii. M. men at theyr charge for. iii. monethes; and in the moneth of August folowyng ỹ kyng of Nauarñ accõpanyed with. ii. M. sowdyours, came vnto the castell
Fol. Cxxx. of Cõstantyne & there taryed with the sayd people, with whose cõmynge the sowdyours of the forenamed. vi. castelles were so well comforted that they robbyd and pylled all the countre aboute them, & some of the sayd sowdyours came vnto a castell of ỹ Frensh kynges named Conket, & wan it by strenght, and after vytayled & manned it in most warly wyse[2], & dyd many other thynges to the Frenshe kynges great displeasure.

The whiche warre thus contynuyng, by medyacion of frendes, the kynge of Nauarn rode vnto the dolphyn to a towne called the Vale de Rueyll, where they metynge & eyther to other shewynge louynge countenaunce, vpon the. xviii. day of Septembre, they togyder toke theyr waye towarde Parys, where the kyng of Nauarne was brought vnto the Frenshe kynges presence, where he excusyd hỹ of all trespasses don agayne the kynge syne the tyme of ỹ last accorde, besechynge the kyng to be good and gracious lorde vnto hym, & he shuld be to hym as a sone ought to be vnto the fader, and as a trewe man vnto his soueraygne lorde; and after, the kynge, by ỹ meanes of the duke of Athenesse, forgaue vnto hym his offences, & promysed to stande his good and gracyous lorde, and so eyther departed from other in louynge maner.

And soone after kynge Iohñ gaue vnto the dolphyn of Vyen, sir Charlys his eldest sone, ỹ duchye of Normãdy, for the whiche he dyd vnto his fader homage in the house of maister Martyn, chanon of Parys, in the cloyster of the mynster called Noterdame; and by auctoryte of a parlyament holden in the cytie of Parys, was graunted vnto kyng Iohñ of the thre astates of his realme, that is to meane the spũaltie, the lordes and nobles, and the hedes or rulers of cyties and good townes of his realme, that he shuld haue. xxx. M. men wagyd for a yere, for to defende his auncient enemye the kyng of Englande; for puruyaunce wherof, certayne persones of the sayd. iii. astates assembled shortly after to prouyde for the leuyinge of ỹ great sũme of money.

After whiche prouycion or sessyng agreed or cõcluded by the sayd persones, and cõmyssyoners sent out to dyuers coostes and good townes for the leuyeng of the sayd money, in the towne of Arras fyll a dissencion atwene ỹ ryche & the poore of that towne, the poore sayinge that the ryche men had layde all the burthen vpon the poore men, & theimself bare lytell charge or none. For the firste began great altercacion of wordes, & after ensuyd strokes and strypes, so that of the hedes & chief burgeyses of ỹ towne were. xvii. men slayne, and the day folowynge they slewe. iiii. mo, & banysshed dyuers that at that tyme were absent & out of the towne, and so the towne of Arras restyd as than in the gydynge of the poore artyfycers of that towne.

IN the. vi. yere of the reygñ of kynge Iohñ & moneth of Marche, he being accompanyed with a secret meny, before the day, departed from the towne of Manuyle and rode stryght, he and his lordes beynge armyd, vnto ỹ castell of Rouan, & entred sodaynly into the same, where he fande in ỹ chief hall of the castell sir Charlys his eldest sone, duke of Normandy, Charlys kynge of Nauarn, sir Iohñ erle of Harecourte, the lordes

[1] safe conduyte. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] guise. MS.

of

of Preaux, and of Grauile, and the lord of Cleremoūt, sir Lowys & sir Guylliam de Harecourt, brethern of ŷ foresaid erle, sir Friquet de Friquant, the lorde of Tournebu, sir Manbuc de Mamesmares, with Colmet Doubliec, and Iohñ de Poutalu, esquyres, the which lordes and knyghtes the kyng toke at dyner within ŷ sayd halle, & them toke sodaynly & diuers of them put vnder suer kepinge: & as soone as ŷ kyng had there taken a small & short repast, he w̄ his sōnes & other nobles ī his company toke their horse and rode into a felde vpon a baksyde of the castell, whether shortly after were brought in bandes the foresayd erle of Harecourt, the lorde of Grauile, the foresayd sir Manbuc, and Colinet Doubliet, whiche. iiii. were there behedyd, and after the bodyes of them drawen to the gybet of Roan and there hanged, and theyr heddes sett ouer theym vpon the same gybet: at the whiche tyme of execucyon of hedyng of the sayd. iiii. persones, the Frenshe kynge, as before is sayd, was present in proper persone.

After the whiche execucyon, the kynge, vpon the morne folowynge, delyueryd many of the other prysoners, so that there remayned no mo as prysoners but. iii. that is, the kynge of Nauarne, sir Friquet de Friquant, and Iohñ de Poūtalu, the whiche were sent vnto Parys, where the kynge was kept in the castell of Lourre[1], and the other. ii. in the chastelet. In whiche tyme of his inprysonment sir Philip, brother to the sayd kyng, with sir Godfrey de Harecourte, vncle to the erle lately hedyd, helde certayne castelles in Normādy, and came with theyr powers into the countre of Constantyne & helde it maugre the Frenshe kynges wyll and pleasure.

In the moneth of Apryll sir Arnolde de Denham, than marshall of Fraunce, rode by the kynges sone vnto Arras, and there without great dystourbaunce of the towne, toke vpon an hondreth of suche as before hadde made the former rebellyon within the same, and vpon the daye folowyng he caused to be behedyd in the market place vpon. lx. of the same, and the remenaunt he sent vnto pryson there to abyde the kynges pleasure.

In this tyme and season was ŷ noble prynce Edwarde at Burdeaux, and warryd vpon the Frenshe kynges landes, lyke as it is before to you shewyd in the. xxx. yere of kynge Edwarde the thirde.

This tyme this kynge Iohnne was taken prysoner by prynce Edward of England, as it appereth before in y^e. xxx. yere of kynge Edwarde y^e. iii.

And in the. vii. yere of kynge Iohñ, and begynnyng of the same, was the batayll of Poytiers, in the whiche kynge Iohñ was taken prysoner of prynce Edwarde, and many of his lordes taken & slayne, as before in the. xxx. yere of ŷ foresayd Edwarde is declared at length. After the whiche scomfyture ŷ duke of Normandy, whiche hardly escaped from the sayd batayll, entred the cytie of Parys the. xxix. daye of Septembre, and called there a great coūsayll of the thre astates of the realme, and the. xv. day of Octobre nexte ensuynge there to be assembled; at whiche daye the sayd duke with the sayd. iii. astates of the realme beynge in the parlyament chambre, Peter de la Forest, archebysshop of Roan & chaunceller of Fraūce, declared there the great mysfortune that to the lande was lately fallen by the takynge of theyr hede and prynce, and exorted them by a longe oracion to ayde & assyst, euery man after his power, for ŷ redelyuerey of their prynce agayne.

Wherunto it was answeryd for theyr clergy of spirituall by ŷ mouth of maister Iohñ de Caroñ[2] than archebysshop of Raynes, and for ŷ nobles or the cheualry of Fraunce by the mouth of sir Philip duke of Orleaunce, and brother vnto kynge Iohñ, and for the cōmons of the good townes of Fraūce by the mouth of Stepyn Martell, burgeys of Parys and prouost of the same, that eyther of them shuld helpe to ŷ vttermoste of theyr powers, and prayed ŷ they myghte haue conuenyent leysure to counsayll and cōmon for prouycyon of the same, the whiche to theym was graūted.

Thanne the sayd thre astates helde theyr coūsayll at ŷ Fryer Mynours or Gray Frerys in Parys by the space of. xv. dayes, in which season they appoynted amonge them to the

[1] Lovur. MS. [2] Craon. MS.

nombre

nombre of. l. persones to take a viewe and make serche of certayne thynges than myslad and euyll gyded within the realme; the whiche. l. persones whan they hadde appoynted. vi. of theymselfe to goo vnto the duke, they in the names of the other made request vnto the duke that he wolde kepe secreet such thynges as they entendyd to shew vnto hȳ, which request he graũted. Then they shewyd vnto the duke that the realme before tyme had been mysseguydyd by offycers, and excepte that remedye for it were shortlye foundyn, it shulde stande in great parell to be loste; wherfore they besought hym to discharge all suche as they wolde name vnto hym, & ouer ẏ to forfayte theyr goodys vnto the kynges vse. And firste they namyd master Petyr de la Forest, archebysshop of Roan and chaunceler of Fraunce, syr Symonde de Bucy, chefe coũceloure of the kyng and chefe presydent of the parlyament, syr Robert de Loryze, that before tyme was chaũberlayne vnto the kyng, syr Nycholas Brake, knyght, and master of the kynges paleys, Enguerã of ẏ Celer, burioys of Parys and vndre tresourer of Fraũce, Iohñ Prylle, burioys, also soueraygne maister of the money and maister of thaccomptys of the kynge, and Iohñ Chãnean de Chartres, tresourer of ẏ kynges warrys, all which offycers the sayde persones wolde that they shulde be dyschargyd of all royall offycys for euer; also the sayde constytutyd persones wolde that the kyng of Nauerne were delyuerid free from pryson, also that he hymselfe wolde be cõtentyd to be aduertyzyd and coũceylyd by suche as they wolde appoynt vnto hym, that is to say. iiii. prelatis. xii. knyghtis, and. xii. burioys, the whiche. xxviii. persones shulde haue auctoryte to rule and ordeyne all thynges necessarye for the realme, and to sette in and put out all offycers apperteynynge to the weale of the realme, with dyuerse other requestys whiche vnto the duke were nothynge agreable. Vpon ẏ whiche requestys the duke gaue answere ẏ he wold gladly fele the opynyon of his coũceyll, and vpõ that shape vnto them some reasonable answere; but firste he desyryd of them to knowe what ayde the. iii. astatys wolde gyue vnto hym for the delyuery of his father: whereunto it was answeryd that the clergy had grauntyd a dyme and an halfe to be payed I a yere, with that that they may haue lycence of the pope[1] and the lordys asmoche to be leuyed of theyr landys, and the comons ẏ. x. peny of theyr mouable gooddys. Then vpon the morne folowynge within ẏ palays of Louure, the duke assemblyd his coũceyll & there shewyd vnto them the desyre & requeste of ẏ. iii. astatys, whereupon were made many reasons, & many messagys sent atwene the duke and theym to reforme some parte of the sayde artycles; but it was fermely answeryd by them, that, excepte he wolde reforme the sayde defautys, & conferme[2] hym vnto theyr myndys for ẏ common weale of all the lãde, they wolde not ayde hym with theyr goodys, lyke as they had to hym shewyd. Wherefore the duke by secret meanys sent letters vnto his father, shewynge vnto hym ẏ cyrcũstaunce of all his mater, the which wrote vnto hym agayn that in no wyse he shulde be agreable vnto the sayde requestys: then the duke to the ende that he wolde not that theyse maters shulde be towchyd in ẏ opyn parlyamẽt, sent for suche personys as were the chefe rulers of ẏ sayde. iii. astatis, so that to hym came for the clergy the archebysshoppis of Raynys and of Lyons, & the bysshop of Laon: and for the lordys came syr Waraỹne de Lucẽbourgh, syr Iohñ de Conflans marshall of Champeyne, and sir Iohñ de Pygueny thã ruler or gouernoure of Artoys; and for the comons Stephan Martell than prouost of the marchauntys of Parys, Charlys Cusake, ẅ other of other good townys. Thã the duke shewyd vnto them of certeyne newys that he had lately receyuyd from the kynge his father, and ẏ done he askyd theyr aduycys whether it were beste that daye to shewe theyr requestys openly in ẏ parlyament chaũber, or ellys to deferre it for ẏ day: & lastlye, after many reasons made, it was agreed that it shulde be deferryd tyll the. iiii. daye after, at the which. iiii. daye the duke with the other assemblyd in the parlyament chambre, at whyche season the duke sayde that he myght not entende that day to here and argue the

Fol. C.xxxi.

[1] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] conform. MS.

sayde requestys, for certeyne tydynges that he had lately receyued from his father, and from his vncle the emperour of Almayne, of the whiche he than shewyd some openly, and after dyssoluyd for that daye the counceyll. In the moneth of Octobre the. iii. astatys of ỹ prouynce of Languedocke, by the auctoryte of the erle of Armenake, than lyeutenaunt for the kynge, assemblyd for to make an ayde for the kynges delyueraunce; and first they agreed to puruey at theyr propre costys. v.C. men of armys, with a seruyture to euerych spere, and ouer that a. M. sowdiours on horsebacke, and a. M. of arblasters, w ii. M. of other callyd paũsiers ī Frẽshe, all which to be wagyd for an hoole yere, the sperys to haue for them and theyr custrun euery day halfe a floreyn, and euery sowdyour and arblaster. viii. floryns for a moneth, and the paũsiers after the same rate.

Also it was farther ordeyned by the sayde. iii. astatis of Languedocke that no man shuld were any furrys of any great pryce, and that women shulde leue ỹ ryche atyre of theyr heddis, & were neyther perle nor golde vpon them, nor syluer vpō theyr gyrdellys, so longe as ỹ kynge remaynyd prysoner: also that all maner of mynstrellys for that season shulde be put to sylence, with dyuerse other thynges for the weale of that prouynce, which wolde aske a longe leysoure to wryte.

VPon All Sowlyn day, or the seconde daye of Nouẽbre, the duke of Normandy, by ỹ aduyce of his coũceyll, dyssoluyd the counceyll of the. iii. astatys assemblyd at Parys, and commaundyd euery man to retourne vnto his owne withoute effecte growynge of theyr longe counceyll or assemble, wherwith many of the sayde personys were greuously myscontent, sayinge amonge theymselfe, that they aperceyued well that this was doon by ỹ duke, to ỹ entent that the requestys by them deuysyd shulde not take place, but that the olde mysgouernaunce shuld cōtynue lyke as it before tymes had done: wherefore dyuerse of theym assemblyd after agayne at the Graye Frerys, and there made out dyuerse copyes of the sayde requestys, to the ende that eyther of theym myght bere them into theyr coũtreys, and there to shewe them vnto the good townys. And albe it that ỹ duke, after this counceyll thus dyssoluyd, askyd ayde of the cytie of Parys & other good townys, to mayntayne his warris, he was playnly answeryd that they myght not ayde hym without the. sayd. iii. astatys were agayne reassemblyd, and that the graunte of the ayde myght passe by theyr auctoryte: whereunto the duke i no wyse wolde be agreable. In the moneth of Nouẽbre aforesayde, syr Robert de Cleremount, than lyeutenaunt for the duke in Normandy, fought with syr Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and syr Godfrey de Harcourt, ỹ which then toke partye agayne the Frenshe kynge for the deth of his neuewe before put to dethe by kynge Iohn̄, the whiche knyghtys with other helde the more parte of the countrey of Constantyne within Normandye, maugre the dukys power. In this sayd fyght the vyctory turnyd vnto the Frenshe partye, so ỹ the sayde syr Phylyp was chasyd, & syr Godfrey de Harcourt slayne with. viii.C. men of that partye; and the fourth day of Decembre folowynge was the castell De la Pount nere vnto Roan, whiche by a longe season hadde been in the rule of the forenamed syr Phylyppe, gyuen vp by appoyntement, the whiche by the dukys sowdyours had ben besyegyd from the monyth of Iuly to that daye, so that than the holders of the sayde castell departyd with all theyr gooddys &. vi.M. frankis for a rewarde for the yeldynge vp of the sayde castell; a franke is in value after sterlynge money. iis. or therupon. Vpon the. x. day of Decembre were proclaymyd at Parys, certeyne coynys and valuys of money, newely ordeyned by the duke and his counceyll: with the which proclamacyon the comons of the cytie were greuously amouyd, and for reformacyon the prouoste of the marchauntys, with other, yoode vpon the seconde daye folowynge vnto the castell or palays of Louure, there to treate with syr Lewis erle of Angeou, brother vnto the duke and his lyeutenaunt, whyle the sayd duke was goone vnto the cytie of Meaus, there to speke with Charlys of Bo-

Fol. C.xxxii.

hemye

hemyc or of Beaume, then emperoure of Almayne and vncle vnto the sayde duke; where the sayde prouoste with the other made requeste vnto the erle, that he wolde sease ẏ vse of that money, & if not they wolde so demeane them that it shuld not be sufferyd to be put forth nor taken within ẏ cytie: whereupon it was answeryd by ẏ erle, that he wolde take aduyce of his counceyll, and vpon the morowe gyue to them an answere. Vpon the daye folowynge, the sayd prouoste with a great cõpany of the cytie retourned; at which season the erle in curteyse maner desyred them to retourne that other day, for as moche as yet he had not suffycyently cõmonyd with his coũceyll. Vpon the morne the sayde prouoste retournyd ẅ a moche greatter company; where after longe debatynge of the mater, it was agreed by the sayde erle and prouoste and his company, that the money shuld be stoppyd, and not to be put fourth tyll they had further knowlege of the dukys pleasure, for knowlege whereof the erle sent forth messyngers in all spedy wyse: and in this passe tyme Petyr de la Foreste, archebisshop of Roan, & chaũceler of Fraunce, was made and publysshyd a cardynall. And the. xxiiii. daye of the moneth of Ianuary, ẏ duke retournyd vnto Parys with the sayde cardynall in his company, the whiche for reuerence of the cardynall was fette into ẏ cytie with processyon and other ceremonyes, as well of the clergy as of the cytezyns. The. xxvi. day of the moneth of Ianuary, the prouoste of the marchauntis of Paris with other of the cytie, apered before the dukys counceyll at Seynt Germayns, where it was desyryd of the sayd prouoste that he shuld suffre the foresayd money to ronne and be curraũt thorough the cytie, ẏ which the sayd prouost with his company vtterly denyed, and after many great and bolde wordys, departyd from the sayde counceyll in great ire; and after theyr retourne vnto the cytie, encensyd so the comynaltie ẏ they sette aparte all werkemanshyp and occupacion, in shyttynge in theyr shoppys, & drewe vnto theym theyr armoure and harnesse. Whã the duke was enfourmyd of this murmor of the cõmynaltie of the cytie, he sent vnto the prouoste cõmaundynge hym straytely that the kynges peace were kepte within the cytie; and ouer that, ẏ he with a certayn of the cytezyns shuld apere before hym ī ẏ palays of Louure, vpõ the morowe folowyng at an houre assygned: at whiche houre the sayd prouost ẅ his company came vnto Louure, and so were conueyed into the parlyament chaumbre, where the duke with his counceyll was thã present. Than ẏ duke, after certayne chalengys made vnto the prouoste for his obstynacy in this mater, and mysledyng of the comynaltie of the cytie, sayd vnto hym, that albe it ẏ the kynge by his prerogatyue myght at his pleasure, and for his auaũtage, make his moneys whan he wolde, and so to suffre them to be curraũt thoroughe his realme; yet for the weale & ease of his subiectys, consyderynge theyr manyfolde & late charges, he was cõtente that at this season this newe money shulde be spared, & that the. iii. astatis shuld be agayn assemblyd, and that they shulde depryue all suche persones than beryng offycis as they shuld thynke preiudycyall to the realme, and ouer that to ordeyne suche money as myght be benefycyall for ẏ lãde. Of all which grauntys, the prouoste, to the entent ẏ he myght of auctoryte shewe theym vnto the comynaltie of the cytie, desyred wrytynge, the whiche the duke to appease the people, thoughe it were some deale contrary his mynde and pleasure, graũtyd vnto his request; for the which graunt dyuerse of the sayd offycers, as the chaunceler or cardynall and other, absentyd themselfe and came not in Parys by a tracte of tyme after. The. xxx. day of Ianuarii ensuynge, the duke at the requeste of the sayde prouoste, sent certeyne offycers vnto the houses of syr Symonde de Bucy, and of syr Nycholas Brake, and of Enguerran of ẏ Celer, and of Iohñ Prylle, which before with other were accusyd of mysgouernaũce of the realme, whose houses were by the sayde offycers kepte, and inuentuaryes made of suche goodys as than remayned within the sayde houses: and that doone, the duke sent out cõmyssyoners that the. iii. astatys shuld reassemble at Parys, the. xv. day of February nexte folowynge, which was obseruyd and kepte. Whan the sayd. iii. astatis were agayne assemblyd in the parlyament chaumber at Parys, in the presence of the duke and his bretherne, ẅ dyuerse other nobles of Fraunce, master Robert Coke, bysshop of

Laon,

Laon, by the cõmaundement of the sayde duke, made a longe preposycion of ỹ mysguydynge of the kynge and the lande, by the meane of ylle offycers, as well by chaungynge of the moneys as other many vnlefull excysys and taskys, to the great inpouerysshynge of the comynaltye of the realme, great dysclaũder to the kynge, and to the synguler enrychynge and auauncement of the sayd offycers; wherfore the. iii. astatis prayen, and specyallye the poore comons, ỹ all such offycers may be remoued from theyr offycys, & other ỹ shall be thought more benefyciall for the kynge and his realme to be admytted: of the whiche ỹ cardynall was notyd for pryncypall, and other to the noumbre of. xxi., wherof some were ryght nere vnto the duke.

AFter which preposycyon or oracion thus by the sayde bysshop endyd, syr Iohñ de Pygqueny in the name of the. iii. astatys, offeryd ỹ the sayd. iii. astatis shulde gyue vnto ỹ kyng. xxx.M. men for an hoole yere, ẅ that that all thynges myghte after that daye be orderyd as the bysshop had before deuysed; all whiche artycles were vnto them by the duke graunted: and incõtynently all suche offycers as they before had named were clerely auoydid, and other suche as by the sayd. iii. astatys were thought moost necessary, were put and chosen to theyr roumys, except ỹ some of the olde, as maisters of thaccomptys, and some of the presydentys & masters of the requestys were holdyn ī for a tyme, to practis & shewe vnto the newe how they shuld ordre & guyde the sayd offyces. And the. xxvi. daye of the moneth of Marche, was a newe money proclaymed thoroughe Parys, such as the sayd. iii. astatis had newely deuysed. Vpõ the. vi. day of Aprell was proclaymed ī Paris, ỹ the people shuld not pay such subsydy as ỹ. iii. astatis had ordeynyd, for the wagyng of. xxx.M. men aforesayd or for the kynges fynaũce, & also ỹ the sayd. iii. astatis after that day shuld noo more assemble for any causes or maters before towchyd, tyll they had farther knowlege of the kynges pleasure: for the which proclamacion the cytezyns of Parys were greuously amoued agayne the bysshop of Sens, the erle of Ewe cousyn germayne to the kynge, & agayne the erle Cancaruyle, by whose meanys they sayde this proclamacion was purchasyd, and trouthe it is, ỹ the sayd archebysshop of Sens with the sayde. ii. erlys were sent from the kynge from Burdeaux, yet there beinge, to the entente that they shulde see ỹ sayde proclamacyon put in vre; but so soone as the sayde proclamacyon was made, they herynge of the murmure of ỹ people of ỹ cytie, sped them thens shortlye after. Then, vpon this the cõmons waxed so wylde that they leyfte theyr occupacions, and drewe theym to counenticulys and companyes, and had many vnsyttynge wordys by the kynge and his counceyll; whereof in avoydynge of inconuenyency, the duke cõmaunded a watche to be kepte within the cytie bothe by day and by nyght, and certeyne gatys of ỹ cytie kept shytte, & the remenaũt watchid with men of armys. Vpon the. viii. day of Aprell, than beyng Ester euyn, an other proclamacyõ was made all contrary to ỹ other, by vertue whereof it was chargyd ỹ the foresayd subsydye shuld be leuyed, & that also ỹ. iii. astatis shuld reassemble at Parys ỹ. xv. daye after Ester, & there to procede vpon all suche maters as before was by them beguñe. Vpõ the. xvi'. day of Aprell, ỹ Frenshe kyng shyppyd[1] at Burdeaux, and so conueyed into Englande, lyke as before is shewyd ī the. xxxi. yere of kyng Edwarde. And about Mydsomer folowynge the duke of Lãcaster, which by a longe season had lyen before a towne in Brytayn named Rosne, brake vp his syege, takyng them[2] of ỹ towne for a fynaũce. lx.M. scutis of golde. A scute is worth. xl.*d.* sterlyng. About ỹ feest of Mary Magdaleyne, in ỹ moneth of Iulii, cõtrauersy and varyaũce began to aryse amonge ỹ personys assygned for the. iii. astatys; wherof ỹ cause was, for somoche as the sessynge whiche they had auewyd & sessyd for ỹ. xxx.M. men, wolde not extẽde vnto ỹ sũme by large & great sũmes, so that the clergy answeryd that they wolde paye no more than they were fyrste sessyd vnto, and in lyke maner answeryd suche as were apoynted for the lordys & for the good townys: wherefore the archebys-

Fol. C.xxxiiij.

[1] vi. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] was shypped. MS. [3] of them.

shop of Raynes, whiche before was one of the chefe rulers of theym, refusyd theyr partye & drewe hym all to the duke, by meanys of which contrauersy many of theyr actys fayled, and such as before were put out of theyr offycys were agayne restoryd. About the myddell of August, the duke sent for the prouoste & Charlys Cusake with Iohñ de la Ile, the which bare the prynepall rule within the cytie, and also were great sayers & doers in the assembles of ỹ. iii. astatys, & had taken vpō them moche rule in that busynesse, so that moche of ỹ busynes was rulyd by thē & theyr meanys; to whom the duke gaue strayght cōmaundemēt that they shulde cease of theyr auctoryties, and not to deale any more with the rule of ỹ realme, but onely to ỹ good rule and gouernaūce of the cytie of Parys: & that done the duke rode aboute vnto dyuerse good townys and made requeste vnto them for ayde, and also to haue the money to be curraūt amonge them, whiche as before is shewyd the. x. daye of Decembre, were at Parys proclaymed; but he sped lytle of his purpose. In this meane whyle the cytezyns of Parys, [of one wylle and mynde, offeryd before seynt Remyge a taper of waxe of wonderfull lengthe and greatnesse, the whych they ordeyned to brenne day and nyght whyle it wolde laste: & shortlye after they]' sent vnto the duke so plesaunt message, that he retournyd agayn vnto the cytie, whom they receyued ẇ all honoure and reuerence. And vpon ỹ morowe after his retourne, the prouost with certayne other of the cytie, shewyd vnto the duke that they wolde make a great shyfte for hym towarde the mayntenaunce of his warrys, and to brynge that mater to good conclusyon, they besought hym that he wolde assemble at Parys, shortly, a certayne personys of. xx. or. xxx. good townys there nexte adioynaunt, the whiche was vnto them graūted; so that shortlye after there assēblyd at Parys vpon. lxx. personys, the which helde theyr counceyll to gether by sundry dayes: howe be it in the ende they shewyd vnto the duke, that nothynge they myght brynge to effecte without assemble of the. iii. astatys, & besoughte hym that they myght be efte reassēblyd, trustynge that by theyr presence the dukys mynde shulde be content and satysfyed. Vpō which requeste, the duke sent his cōmyssyons, chargynge the sayd. iii. astatys to apere before hym at Parys, the Wednysday nexte folowynge ỹ day of All Sayntys, and full fayne he was to do all thynge that the cytezyns of Parys hym requyred to do; for, as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, he was so bare of money that he had not suffycyent to defende his cotidian charge.

IN the viii. yere of kynge Iohñ and Wednysday after Alhalowen day, the. iii. astatys reassēblyd at Parys, and helde theyr counceyll within the Blacke Freris, durynge which coūceyll the kyng of Nauerne that longe had ben holden in pryson ẇin the castell of Alleux, was delyueryd by the meanys of syr Iohñ Pyquygny, than gouernoure of the countrey of Arthoys, and after conueyed by the sayde Iohñ vnto the towne of Amyas. Whā the kynge of Nauerne was thus set at large, anon his syster and other of his frendys made meanys vnto the duke of Normandye for an vnyte and a peace to be had atwene theym, and by them a mean was foūden that the kyng with such as were in his company shuld come vnder safe conduyt to Parys to cōmon with the duke. Whan dyuerse of the. iii. astatys, as suche as were of Chāpeyne and Burgoyne, knewe of the commynge of the kynge of Nauerne vnto Parys, they without leue takyng departyd; and vpon the euyn of seynt Andrew the sayde kynge entryd Parys with a great cōpany of men of armys, amōge the which was ỹ bysshop of Parys, ẇ many other of the sayd cytie. Vpon the morowe folowynge the day of seynt Andrew, the kynge entendynge to shewe hys mynde vnto the comynaltie of the cytie, causyd an hyghe scafolde to be made by the wall of Seynt Germayne where he was lodgyd, where moch people beynge assemblyd, he shewyd vnto them a longe processe of his wrongefull enprysonement and of the mysgydyng of ỹ lāde by meanys of ille offycers, with many couert wordys to the dyshonour of the Frenshe kynge,

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

and

and iustyfycacion of hymselfe and excusynge of his owne dedys, and so retournyd into his lodgynge. Vpon the. iii. daye of December, the prouoste with other of ŷ cytie yode vnto the duke, & in the names of the good townys or comynaltyes of the same, requyred of hym ŷ he wolde do vnto the kynge of Nauerne reason and iustyce; to whom it was answeryd by the bysshop of Laon that the duke shulde not all only shewe vnto the kyng reason and iustyce, but he shulde also shewe vnto hym frendly brotherhoode with all grace and curtesy: and albe it ŷ at that season many of the dukys coũceyll were present, to whom the geuyng of that answere had more conuenyently apperteynyd, than to the sayd bysshop, yet they were at that tyme in suche fere that they durste not moue any thynge ŷ shulde sounde contrary the dyspleasure[1] of the kynge of Nauerne, or of the prouoste and other. Than it was agreed that vpon the Saterdaye folowynge, the kynge and the duke, whiche as yet had not spoken together, shulde mete at the place of the syster of the sayd kynge, where they mette with vnfrendely countenaũce, & after they had cõmyned there a longe season departyd with lytle loue or charyte; and vpon the Munday folowynge were shewyd vnto the duke & his counceyle certeyne requestys desyred by the kyng of Nauerne, the which the duke was forsyd to graunt, whereof the substaunce was that the kynge shuld haue agayne and enioye all suche lãdys, castellys, and townys, with all mouables to them belõgynge, as he was in possessyon of the daye that kynge Iohñ was takyn within the castell of Roan, and ouer that he shulde be pardonyd of all offencys by hym done agayne the crowne of Fraunce before that daye, and all other his adherentys or suche as had takyn his partye before that tyme. And soone vpon this was ordeynyd that the erle of Harcourte and other, whiche kynge Iohñ hadde causyd to be behedyd & after to be hangyd vpon the cõmon gibet of Roan, shuld be delyuered vnto theyr freendys to be buryed at theyr pleasures. After which conclusyons takyn, and assurauncys made, as farre as the dukys auctoryte wolde extẽde vnto, syr Almary Menlene[2], knyght, with. iii. or. iiii. men of honoure moo were sent into Normandye to repossesse the kynge of Nauerne in all suche landys, castellys, and townes as he before tyme was in possessyon of, with all mouables vnto the sayd lãdys apperteynynge; and then the sayd kynge and duke helde famylyer company, & dyned & sowpyd together often sythes at ŷ manoir or lodgynge of quene Iohan, syster vnto the sayd kynge, & other placys: also the sayde kynge delyuered out of prysone all prysoners as well spyrytuell as laye, suche as were thought any thyng fauourable vnto his cause, among the which some there were that for theyr demerytys were adiugyd to perpetuall prysone. In this tyme & season tydynges sprange within the cytye of Parys ŷ the kynges of Englãde and of Fraũce were agreed, & that kyng Iohñ shuld shortly returne into Fraũce. By reason of whyche tydynges, the kyng of Nauerne made the more haste to dyspache hym out of Paris, so that he with his cõpany departyd from Parys ŷ. xx. daye of December, & rode towarde the cytie of Maunte in Normandy. Soone after the kynge was thus departyd, dyuerse enemyes to ŷ noũbre of. x. or. xii.C. came within. iiii. or. v. mylys of Parys, whiche were demyd to be of the cõpany of syr Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauerne: theyse robbyd & pylled the countrey thereabout, in so moche that the people of the countrey of Preaux and Trappys, and other there about, were cõstraynyd with theyr mouables to flee vnto Parys. Wherfore the duke sent out his letters and cõmyssyons for to assemble his knyghtys to withstãde the sayde enemyes; but the sayde cytezyns of Parys caste an other way, and thought it to be done to the greuaũce or correccyon of theym: for dowte whereof the prouost with other that had the gouernaũce of the cytie, causyd the gatys to be kepte, & none shulde entre but such as lyked theym. In this passe tyme the kynge of Nauerne beynge in Normandye, requyred delyueree of the castellys of Bretneil, of Enroux, & other, ŷ which to hym by the capitaynys were denyed. Wherfore he thynkyng ŷ the duke performyd not to hym his promesse, gatheryd vnto hym great strengthe to wynne by strẽgth ŷ he

Fo. C.xxxiiii.

[1] pleasur. MS. [2] syr Almary de Menleuc. MS.

myght not haue his former bande and promesse; of this was put ī great wyte ŷ bysshop of Laon, which was the chefe cõceyloure of the duke, and esspeciall frende vnto the kynge, so that what thyng was spokyn in the dukys counceyll, was shortly after manyfestyd by hym and his meanys vnto the kynge of Nauerne. This also was one of the chefe rulers of the assemble of ŷ. iii. astatis, and after lefte them, & fell by his great dowblenesse & dyssymylacyon in the dukis fauoure, and so became chefe of his councevll, for the whiche of the comon people he was named the beste with. ii. mouthes. The the cytezyns of Parys herynge of the denayinge of the sayd castellys vnto the kynge, knewe well that mortall warre shuld growe atwene hym and the duke, and for they wolde haue the cytezyns knowen from other straũgers, therfore they ordeyned them hodys partyd of rede and blewe, chargynge euery man that he shuld not passe his lodgynge without that hood and conysaunce. Vpon the. viii. daye of Ianuarii the kyng of Nauerne entryd the cytie of Roan with a great cõpany of men of armys, and drewe vnto hym many Englysshemen, & suche as were enemyes vnto the Frenshe kyng; and vpon the. xii. daye of Ianuarii the sayde kynge assemblyd the people of that cytie, and made a lyke sermon vnto theym as before he had done vnto ŷ comynaltye of Parys, & dyd a solempne obsequy to be done for the erle of Harcourt and the other with hym put to deth, as aboue is sayd, by kynge Iohñ. In this whyle the duke of Normandy, ŷ longe whyle had taryed in Parys I hope & ayde of ŷ cytezyns, & was euyr by the prouoste & other dryuen of from daye to daye, it was aduysyd hym by hys counceyll ŷ he shulde shewe his mynde vnto the comynaltye of the cytye: wherof when ŷ bysshop of Laon and ŷ prouost were ware, anon they shewyd vnto hym many doughtys and impedymeutys, & also parellys for to treate w̃ a comynaltye. Notwithstãdyng he refusyd theyr cõceyll, & causyd ŷ people to be assemblyd at theyr cõmon hall, whyther he with a small company came the. xi. daye of Ianuarii, aboute. ix. of ŷ clocke in the mornynge, where he shewyd vnto the commons a longe and a plesaunt oracion, whereof the effecte was that he bare very feythfull mynde vnto the cytie, & for the weale therof he wolde put his lyfe in ieopardye; and where as by his enyll wyllers he was reportyd that he shulde gether men of armys to greue the cytie, he sayd & sware it was neuer his entencion, but only tõ auoyde such enemyes as dayly pylled & robbid theyr neyghbours & frendys; & where he also knewe well that great sũmes of money were gatheryd of ŷ people towarde the kynges fynaunce, he lete them vnderstande that no peny thereof was comyn to his handys, but his mynde was that suche persones as had receyuyd that money, shulde, with theyr assystence, be callyd to a due accompte: whiche oracion with many kynde and louyng wordys endyd, the people with it were very well contentyd, so that of them he was well commendid and allowed. Vpon the morowe, beynge Frydaye &. xii. day of Ianuarii, ŷ prouost and other of his affynyte herynge of the fauoure that many of ŷ cõmons bare vnto the duke, and ferynge lest the duke shuld by his' meanys turne the comons vpon theym, assemblyd a great parte of the cytie at a place callyd seynt Iamys hospytall, and specyallye such as they knewe well fauoured theyr partye. Whan the duke was ware of ŷ assemble, anon he sped hym thyther, hauynge with hym the bysshop of Laon, where by the mouth of his chaunceller he causyd to be shewyd a parte of the mater whiche he hymselfe had shewyd the daye before vnto the comynaltye, with more that where as such as ought vnto hym no good
Fol. C.xxxv. wylle, reportyd hym that he kept not promyse made with ŷ kyng of Nauerne, he shewyd there the contrary, & if any thynge were not to hym parfourmyd, it was contrary to his mynde and pleasure, and that that ī his power lay not to fulfyll. And so soone as the chaũceller hadde endyd his tale, Charlys Cusake stode vp to the entente to haue shewyd his mynde, but there was suche a rumoure and noyse amonge ŷ people, that he myght not be harde, so that than the duke partyd² with suche companye as he broughte, excepte the bysshop of Laon which taryed there with the prouost and other: and whã the duke was

¹ this. edit. 1559. ² departid. MS.

departyd,

departyd, Charlys Cusake began his tale & spake boldely agayne the kynges offycers, & by couert wordys somwhat agayn the duke: after which tale fynysshed, one named Iohñ de Seynt Oñde, which by auctoryte of the. iii. astatis was newlye made one of the generall gouernours of the subsydy, stood vp & sayd that ỹ prouoste nor no other persone of the. iii. astatis had no peny of that subsydye in theyr hãdys, ỹ which sayinge the prouoste also affermyd; forthermore shewyd than there the sayde Iohñ that certayne knyghtis, which he there namyd, sent from the duke, hadde receyuyd of the sayde subsydye to the sũme of. l. or. lx.M. motons of golde, the which were enployed to no good vse. After whiche processe endyd by the sayde Iohñ, Charlys Cusake agayne began to speke, and made a longe comẽdacion of the prouydẽce and good dysposycion of the prouoste, which had takyn vpon hym great peyne and dyspleasure, and spent largely of his owne for the comon weale of the cytie; wherfore if he myght knowe that the comynaltie wolde not ayde and stande by hym for the furtheraunce of the saue, he wolde be content to leue of and gete hym there as he shuld be quyte of all trowble, and also out of the daunger of all his enemyes: whereunto was anon made a great exclamacyon by the people, sayinge they wolde lyue and dye with hym in that quarell.

VPon the. xiii. day of Ianuary ỹ duke sent for dyuerse personys of the. iii. astatys, and exortyd them by goodlye and amyable wordis ỹ they wolde demeane theym agayne his father and hym as feythfull & louynge subiectys, & he shulde so reporte them vnto the kynge that they of hym shulde haue great thankys; and as touchynge hymselfe, he wolde be so good lorde vnto them ỹ they shuld thynke theyr kyndenesse and fydelyte well bestowed: the which graunted vnto hym theyr trothe and seruyce to ỹ vttermoste of theyr powars, aduysynge hym to take vpõ hym the gouernaũce of the realme, for they thought he taryed to longe or he toke ỹ rule thereof. Than soone vpon this the sayd. iii. astatys ordeynyd a more feble money than they before hadde made to the auauntage of the duke, to the ende that he shulde withstande the enemyes forenamed, whiche as yet remaynyd in the countrey about Parys, and pyllyd the vyllagys & toke prysoners, ỹ which they cõueyed vnto suche holdys as they than helde in that countrey. Thus durynge theyse manyfolde aduersytees amonge the Frenshemen, vpon the. xxiiii. daye of the sayde moneth of Ianuary, Iohñ Baylet, tresourer vnto the duke, was slayne at Parys of a yoman or varlet of the Chaunge, callyd Peryn Marke, the whiche Peryn, after ỹ cursyd dede done, fledde vnto seynt Mary churche; but at nyghte the duke sent syr Iohñ de Shalous[a] his marshall, w the prouoste of the cytie, namyd Guyllyam Scayse, & other, the whiche brake vp the Churche dorys and toke the sayd Peryn out by force, and ladde hym vnto peyson callyd the Chastelet, out of ỹ whiche vpon the morne he was takyn, & his handys smytten of, & so drawen vnto ỹ gibet of Parys & there hãged: but vpon the thyrde day folowynge, by meanys of the bysshop of Paris, he was taken downe & buryed within ỹ foresayde churche of our Ladye with great reuerence & solempnyte, at whiche obsequy was present ỹ prouost of the marchaũtys, with many other burgeysys of the cytie. The firste daye of the moneth of Februarii syr Iohñ de Pyquyny came vnto Parys from ỹ kynge of Nauerne, and made requeste vnto hym[b] of dyuerse couenauntys by hym to be perfourmyd towarde the kynge, which as yet were not accomplysshyd; whiche requeste the duke toke inpacyently and gaue vnto the sayd syr Iohñ many hyghe and dyspleasaunt wordis: howe be it in the ende the bysshop of Laon sayd that the duke shulde be aduysed vpon the answere of the kynges demaũde. Vpõ the thyrde day of Februarii the prouoste of marchaũtis, with certeyne of the vnyuersyte of Parys, & other burgeysys, yode vnto the duke vnto Louure, where it was requyred by the sayd persones ỹ he wolde fulfyll vnto the kynge of Nauerne all suche couenauntis as were lately made with hym, & specyally that the castellys of Enroux & other before named myghte be delyuered vnto hym accord-

[a] Shalons, MS. [b] the duke, edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

ynge

ynge to his apoyntmēt; and farthermore it was shewyd vnto the duke by a doctour of diuinite, ỹ if he or ỹ kynge of Nauerne wolde swarue from any poynt or artycle of the sayd former agrement, that the. iii. astatys had vtterlye determyned to ayde and assyste hym that wolde kepe the sayde agrement, and to withstande the other that wolde not obey or vpholde the sayd concorde & agrement: whereunto the duke was well agreable, sayinge that he had performyd all his promesse excepte the delyuere of certayn castellys which the capytaynys withholde cōtrary his myude and pleasure, layinge for theyr excusys that by the kyng his father to thē they were delyuerid, & to hym & none other they wyll delyuer them agayn. Vpon the. xi. day of Februarii, certayne of the. iii. astatis beinge at councell in theyr place accustomyd, the prouoste of marchauntys assembled theyr craftys of the cytie at a place callyd Seynt Clowe or Cloy, in harnesse, in which tyme of his with thē there beinge, an aduocat of the parlyament callyd master Reynolde Dacy, as he was goinge from the dukys palays towarde his owne house, he was slayne by men of ỹ towne, & soone thereafter the sayd prouost, with a great companye of armyd men, entryd the palays of Louure, and so with a certeyn[1] complyces entryd the dukys chaumbre, & there without salutynge of the duke sayde vnto hym, "Syr dysmay you nothynge whatsomeuer ye see vs do, for we entēde to your persone no harme;" and or these wordys were fully endyd, his company fell vpon a knyghte callyd syr Nycholas de Conflans than marshall of Champayne, & vpon syr Robert de Cleremoūt, lenynge vpon the dukys bedde, and slewe them out of hande. Whan the duke behelde this horryble dede, he was in meruelous fere of his owne persone, and prayed ỹ prouoste with his cappe in his hande that he wolde safegarde his persone, the which the prouost grauntyd, with that he wolde by hym be aduertysed. Thā ỹ sayd. ii. deed corses were drawē downe the steyers without pytie, and layed in ỹ court that all men myght beholde that myserable spectacle. And for the dukys safegarde ỹ prouoste toke vnto his partye a hood[2] of redde and blewe, ỹ whiche he
Fol. C.xxxvi. put vpon his hed, and the prouoste receyuyd the dukys hood, beyng of burnet & garnysshed with a frēge of golde, & so eyther ware others hode all ỹ day. And that done the prouoste with his company went vnto theyr comon hall, where he shewyd vnto the comynalty that the. ii. persones were esspecyall enemyes vnto the comon weale, & false traytours to God and to the crowne of Fraunce, and that he and his adherentys entendyd ỹ preseruacion of ỹ cōmon weale of the realme and the cytie, and wolde vnderstāde of them whether they wold stāde by hym in that doynge or not: the whiche cryed with one voyce wy, wy, ỹ is to saye, ye, ye. And whan he had receyuyd this cōforte of the people, he retournyd agayn vnto the duke: then he recomfortyd hym and sayd that all ỹ was done by thassent of the people, and for to auoyde the gretter inconuenyence, for theyse that were slayen were great enemyes vnto the cōmon weale, and traytours vnto the crowne; wherefore he wyllyd the duke to alowe that dede, & if any pardō were requysyte for ỹ dede, or any other to be had, that he shulde lyberallye graunte it: all whiche thynges the duke was fayne to saye ye vnto, & prayed hym and the other then also of ỹ cytezyns to be his frendys, & he wolde in lyke wyse be theyrs. And after this agrement the prouoste sent for. ii. clothes, one of redde and that other of blewe, & wyllyd the duke to make hoodys of ỹ same for all his seruauntys, and so the duke and his seruauntys were clothed in the lyuery of the towne, the blewe sette vpon the ryght syde. Then, agayne nyght, when the sayd. ii. corpsys hadde lyen all day vpon the stonys of the paleys, the prouost cōmaundyd theym to be layed in a carte, & so, without preest or other reuerence, to be conueyed vnto a place of Seynt Katheryne, there to be buryed; & whan the sayd corpsys were thus brought vnto the sayde place, the carter toke one of theyr garmentis for his laboure and so departyd. It was not lōge after that a messanger came from the byssbop

[1] certeyn of his. MS. [2] vnto hym his party hood. MS.

of

of Parys whiche warnyd the bretherne of that house to spare the buryinge of syr Robert de Cleremount, for asmoche as the bysshop notyd hym accursyd for brekynge vp of seynt Mary churche, when he by force fette out Peryn Marke, as before is shewid; but after, they and also the aduocat maister Reynolde Dacy were buryed secretlye. Vpō the morne folowynge the prouost assemblyd at the Frere Augustynys a great cōpany of the cytie, with all suche as thē were there of the good townys, by reason of the foresayde counceyll; to whiche assemble, by the mouthe of maister Robert de Corby, a man of the cytye, was shewyd a protestacyon of all ỹ cyrcumstaunce of the foresayd mater, & how that by the dukys counceyle, and also by the. iii. astatys, many good thynges were cōcludyd for ỹ delyuere of the kynge, & shuld or ỹ tyme haue comyn to good effecte, ne had ben ỹ enpechement of. iiii. persōs, ỹ which at ỹ season were not namyd. This busynesse thus cōtynuyng, ỹ kyng of Nauerne, came vnto Parys ỹ. xxvi. day of February, w̄ a good cōpany of armyd men, & was cōueyed by ỹ cytezyns vnto a place of ỹ dukys callyd the Neel, & there lodgyd; to whom ỹ prouost w̄ his cōplycys made requeste ỹ he wolde make allyaūce w̄ them, & to supporte them in ỹ that they had done, ỹ which by hym was graūtyd. Then the quene his sister, & other, made instant laboure to agree hym & the duke, which in cōclusyō toke such effecte, ỹ the kyng shuld haue in recōpence-mēt of his wrongys, the erledam of Bygorre, & the vynery of Ramer, with ỹ erledam of Maston and other landys, to the extent of. x.M.li. of Parys money by yere; and ouer ỹ his syster, callyd quene Blāche, shulde haue the lordeshyp of Moret for hir dowayer. After whiche accorde thus cōcludyd, the kynge and the duke kepte together very frendelye and louynge famylyaritie; dynyd and sowpyd eyther with other by many & sundry tymes, and eyther vnto other gaue ryche gyftys: amonge ỹ whiche one was that the duke gaue vnto the kynge ỹ sayd place of Neell whiche he than lodgyd in. Vpon the. xii. daye of Marche the duke of Normādy was proclaymed regent of Fraunce thoroughe the cytie of Parys, and after thorough all Fraunce, & soone after he departyd from Parys, & rode into the countrey of Champayne, where he taryed a season, and the kyng of Nauerne returned to Maūte in Normandy. Than the regent drewe vnto hym the nobles of Champayne and of Prouynce, and began to manace ỹ prouost and other of Paris that before had put hym to dyshonoure, and slayne so vylaynously his treue counceylours; & after promesse takyn of ỹ erle of Brene, and other nobles of that countrey, that they shuld ayde hym agayn his faders rebellys and his enemyes, he than rode vnto ỹ abbey of Pouley in Mostruell, and after yode vnto a castell whiche belonged vnto quene Blauche, syster vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and wyllyd ỹ capytayne, namyd Tanpyne, to delyuer to hym that castell; the which, after dyuerse denayes, openyd the gatys & receyued ī the regent, and lodgyd hym there in ỹ nyght: vpō the which the regent causyd ỹ sayd Tanpyne to swere vnto hym that he shulde kepe ỹ castell to his vse, and after made hym styll wardeyn of the same, and so departyd thens and rode to Meaux, where his wyfe lay. In this tyme and season the prouoste of the marchauntys of Parys, heryng of the regentis doynge, and of the affynyte that he made with them of Champayne, feryd the sequell thereof; wherefore, by ỹ aduyce of such as fauoured his cause, he yode into ỹ castell of Louure, and there toke out artylery, gunnys, & other abylymentys of warre, and put them in the store house of the cytie, to be redy whā tyme requyred. The regēt spedynge his iournay, returnyd agayne to Compeyngne, and where, as before was appoynted that the thre astatys shulde the firste daye of May assemble at Parys, the regent than sent out his cōmyssyons and chargyd the sayde thre astatis to assemble the thyrde daye of the sayde moneth of Maye at Compeyngne aforesayde, wherewith the sayde cytezyns of Paris were greatlye amoued. At this assemble was grauntyd vnto ỹ regent a subsydy both of the clergy and also of the laye fee, so ỹ the regent waxyd dayly stronger & stronger: wherof heryng, the kyng of Nauerne remouyd from a towne callyd Merlo, and with a strōge cōpany came vnto a place or towne named Domage, purposelye

purposelye for to treate with the regent for the cytezyns of Parys, where in ỹ begynyng of May the sayde two pryncys mette, eyther hauynge great strengthe of men of armys.

WHan the kynge of Nauerne badde by. ii. dayes contynuell made requeste vnto ỹ regent for the citezyns of Parys, and myght not spede of his requeste, he departid the thyrde daye and rode vnto Parys, where he was honorably receyued and festyd by the space of. x. or. xii. dayes; in which season he warnyd theym of the great dyspleasure that the regent bare towarde the cytie, and aduysyd theym to make theym as stronge as they myght. In this passe tyme the bysshop of Laon, beynge with the regent at Cõpeyngne, was lyke to haue ben vylonyed by some of the regentis counceyll, wherefore in secret wyse he departed vnto Seynt Denyse, and from thens he was fette by the kynges seruauntys of Nauerne vnto Parys, in whom was put great faute of all this trowble. Aboute the myddell of Maye, one namyd Guyllyã Calley, gatheryd vnto hym a cõpanye in the prouynce of Beauuaysyn, as of ỹ townes of Cerreux, Norecell, Cramoysye, and other there about, the which beyng euyll dysposyd, slewe dyuerse knyghtis & esquyers of ỹ coũtrey, & theyr wyues & seruauntis, & pyllyd & spolyd the coũtrey as they went, & threwe downe certayne pylys and other strengthis, and a parte of the castell of Beawmount, & foresyd the duchesse of Orleaunce to forsake that castell, that than was there lodged, and for hir safegarde to goo vnto Parys. Vpon the. xxx. daye of Maye the prouoste and other gouernours of the cytie of Parys causyd Iohñ Paret, maister of the brydge of Parys, and the maister carpenter of the kynges werkys, to be drawen, hanged, hedyd, & quarteryd; for it was put vpõ them that they shulde haue brought into the cytie a certeyne noũbre of the regẽtis sowdyours, and so to haue betrayed the cytie. And the foresayde people of Beauuaysyne gatheryd vnto them dayly more people, as laboures and vylaynes, the which came into ỹ coũtrey of Moũtinerencie[1], and slewe and robbed there the gentylmen of that coũtrey, as they had done of other, and so passed ỹ coũtrey without resystence. And the regent in this whyle came to ỹ cytie of Sens in Languedocke, where he was honorably receyuyd, (albe it that the comons of that cytie, and gentyles of that countrey, were greatly lenynge vnto the cytezyns of Parys,) and there taryed a season to expresse to theym his mynde. In which meane tyme a spycer or grocer namyd Petyr Gylle, of Paris, with one Iohñ Vayllaunt, prouoste of the kynges money, with a companye of. viii.C. men in harnesse, rode vnto the cytie of Meaux, where of the mayre of that cytie they were ioyfullye receyued, contrary his promesse before made vnto ỹ regent; where with assystence of the sayde mayre and other of that cytie they entẽdyd to haue takyn ỹ wyfe of the sayde regent with other noble women than there soiournyng with hyr, and so to haue conueyed them vnto Parys, there to haue kepte thẽ tyll the cytezyns myght purchase the fauoure and grace of ỹ regent. But whã the erle of Foyze, which then had the rule of the sayde gentylwomen, knewe theyr entent, anon he gathered vnto hym his cõpanye, & with assystence also of some of the sayde cytie, he made vpõ. vi. or. vii.C. men in harnesse, and issuyd boldly agayne ỹ foresayd persones and skyrmysshed with them, in which skyrmysshe, in ỹ ende, the men of Parys were sconfyted and chased, & ỹ mayre of Meaus, named Iohñ Soulas, taken with other, whiche after, for theyr rebellyon, were put in execucyon. And after this vyctory thus opteyned, & in reuẽgement of the deth of a knyght callyd syr Lewys de Chamblye, there slayne with other gentylmen, and for the vntrouthe of the cytie, the foresayde erle sette fyre vpon a syde of the cytie and brent a great parte thereof, as well churchys as other, whiche fyre was scantly stenchyd in. viii. dayes after. In this whyle the kynge of Nauerne, herynge of the great harme and dystruccyon that the companye of Guyllyam Calley made of the gẽtylmen in Moũtmerency and other placys, lyke as before is shewyd,

Fol. C.xxxvii.

[1] Montmerency.

yood agayne hym, and, nere vnto a place callyd Cleremount, encountryd hym and his people, and gaue vnto them batayle, and slewe moch of his people, and tooke hym on lyue and causyd his hede to be stryken of: and soone after the cytezyns of Paris sent vnto hym, requyryng hym to draw towarde them, at whose request he sped hym thytherwarde, and entryd the cytie vpon the. xv. daye of Iunii, and was cõueyed vnto Seynt Germayne in Pree, and there lodgyd; and vpon the morne he went vnto the comon halle of ỹ cytie, where the comons beynge assemblyd, he made vnto theym a longe & plesaunt oracion of the great kyndenesse that he had founde in many of the good townys of Fraunce, and specyallye in the cytie of Parys, for the whiche they hadde bounde hym to take theyr partye agayne all other, makynge none excepcion. After whiche tale by hym endyd, Charlys Cusake stoode vp and shewed vnto the people what ruynous poynt ỹ lande stode in for lacke of a wyse hedde and gouernoure, wherefore he reported[1] the people to chose the kynge for theyr gouernoure, which than was so done; & he there toke vpon hym the rule, and promysed with them to lyue and dye. Vpon the. xxii. day of the sayde moneth of Iunii, the kyng of Nauerne, with a company of. vi.M. sperys of the cytie and other, departyd from Parys & rode vnto a towne callyd Gonnesse, where an other company of the cytie taryed for hym, & from thens rode towarde Senlys; but whē ỹ gētylmen of his hooste vnderstoode that he hadde takyn vpon hym to be capytayne of the comynaltie, where agayne the more partye of the nobles of Fraunce were of the contrary partye, they lefte hym many of theym, & specyally suche as were of the duchye of Burgoyne, and, with congy of hym takyn, resortyd into theyr countreys. Whan the regent had vysyted dyuerse coũtreys, and wonne vnto hym the benyuolence of the same, & had also gatheryd vnto hym great strength, he spedde hym towarde Parys, and lodgyd hym in the ende of the moneth of Iunii in a place callyd ī Frenshe Le Pount de Charenton, faste by Boyes in Vyncent; in whose company were noumbred vpon. xxx.M. horsemen: so that the countre there about was pylled and wasted ỹ that hooste. Whereof heryng, the kyng of Nauerne retournyd backe agayne, & came with his hoste vnto Seynt Denys, within. ii. mylys of Parys, & the cytie of Parys was kepte day and nyght, that no man myght entre or goo out wout lycēce of the prouoste and other rulers therof. In this meane whyle that ỹ sayd. ii. pryncys laye thus with theyr. ii. hostis about the cytie, quene Iohan, syster vnto the kyng, made an instaũt laboure vnto the regent for grace for the cytezyns, by whose meanys a comunycacyon was appoynted to be holden atwene the kynge and the regent the. viii. daye of Iulii, at a place callyd the Wynde Mylle, fast by ỹ house of seynt Anthoyn: at which metynge it was lastlye accordyd atwene the sayde pryncis, ỹ the kynge of Nauerne shuld doo his best to brynge the cytezyns of Parys vnto due obedyence, & if he sawe in them such obstynacy that they wolde not doo theyr dutye, and to gyue for theyr rebellyon suche sũmes of money as by hym and the regent shuld be thought accordynge, that than the kynge shulde vtterly refuse theyr partye and turne vnto the regent with all his power; and ouer that the kynge, for all demaundys that he cowde aske of ỹ regent for any cause ouer the agrement atwene theym laste made, shulde haue. iiii.C. M. florynys of golde, wherof an. C. M. to be payed that daye. xii. monethis, and yerelye after. l.M. tyll the fulle were payed; & farther it was accordyd that the kynge after that daye shulde take partye with ỹ regent agayn all personys, excepte onely the kynge of Fraunce: and to the ende that this accorde shuld be fermely holdyn vpon bothe sydes, the bysshop of Lyseux there beyng present, with many other lordys, sange there masse within the tente where this accorde *Fol. C.xxxvii.* was cõcludyd, and, after Agnus Dei, sware the sayde. ii. pryncys vpon the sacramēt, that without collusyon or fraude they shulde obserue and kepe euerychc artycle of the sayde accorde: after whiche cõclusyon thus takyn, the regent repayred vnto his hooste, and the kynge vnto Seynt Denys. Than vpon the morowe the kynge entryd Parys, and

[1] exhorted. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

cõueyed thyther with hym but a certayne, & so taryed there all that daye withoute any reporte sendynge vnto the regent; and the secõde daye, for the more strengthynge of ỹ towne, he sent for certeyne Englysshe sowdyours, as archers & other, and sette them in the towne wagys, and nother sent nor retournyd vnto the regent with any answere. Thãn towarde the nyght, howe it was, assaute was made by some of the regentis people vpon a parte of the towne, so that dyuerse men were slayne vpon bothe sydys, but the moo vpon the partye of the cytie. Then the kynge of Nauerne vpõ the morowe retournyd vnto Seynt Denys, leuynge within the cytie the foresayde strengthe of Englysshemen with other. Whan the regent was ware of the kynges beynge at Seynt Denys, he sent vnto hym, and hym requyred of perfourmaunce of suche accorde as latelye atwene theym was condyssendyd, & sen by his meanys myght not enduce ỹ cytezyns to due obedyence, that he wolde accordynge to his promesse take partye with hym, whereby they and other enemyes to the comon weale myght be recouficeylyd. Whereunto the kynge answeryd and sayde, that the regent had broken ỹ sayd accorde; for where he by his dylygẽce and laboure had brought the cytezyns to a nere poynt of reconcylyacion and submyssyon, the regent, by the meane of that assaute whiche he made vnto the towne, caused the sayd cytezyns to renounce all theyr former graunte, & to bynde them vpon theyr former wylfulnesse. After whiche answere thus geuen by the kynge, the regent causyd his people to passe the ryuer of Sayne by a brydge made of botys, & so to brenne the towne of Vyttry and dyuerse other townys, & robbed and pylled the countrey there about. Vpon the. xiiii[i]. day of Iulii dyuerse of ỹ towne of Parys issuyd out of the towne, and, with the ayde of the Englysshemen, endeuouryd them to haue socoured the sayd towne of Vyttry, with also to haue destroyed ỹ brydge; at which iournay they bare them so well, that ẁ theyr shotte woundyd[a] many of theyr enemyes, & toke prysoner the regentys marshall namyd syr Reynolde de Foũtaynys, with dyuerse other, and after retournyd vnto theyr cytye. Vpon ỹ. xix. daye of Iulet the quene Iohan, syster vnto the kynge of Nauerne, with the archebysshope of Lyons, the bysshop of Parys, with certayne other temporall persones of the cytie, yood vnto a place assygned ẁout ỹ towne, where with them mette ỹ regent & certeyne of his coũceyll, & at lengthe concludyd an vnyte & cõcorde atwene ỹ sayd regent & cytezyns ẁout farther payne or exaccyon to be put vnto them, excepte ỹ the sayde cytezyns shuld humbly submytte them vnto the regent in a knowlegyng theyr offence, & askynge of hym mercy & grace for the same; & ouer ỹ to be ordered forther as ỹ kyng of Nauerne, the sayde quene Iohan, with the duke of Orleaunce, & the erle of Escãps wolde deme and adiuge: and that graunted, ỹ regent to opyn all wayes & passagys, as well by lande as by water, that all marchauntis may passe as they before tymes vsyd, and in lyke wyse they of the cytie to opyn the gatys of the towne and to receyue all straungers.

AFter which agrement thus cõcludyd and agreed, with all other before made, atwene the kynge & the regent, to be maynteyned and vpholden, the regent sent from hym moch of his people, and appoynted the sayde bysshoppys & the other for the towne, to mete with hym the. iiii. day folowyng at a place callyd Laiguy sur Marne, where he wolde haue also the kynge of Nauerne, and the other, to perfyght and clerelye fynysshe the sayde agrement, & vpon this made proclamacyons thoroughe the hoost that a good and perfyght peace was agreed: wherefore many of the hoste for dyuerse causys them mouynge, yode towarde the cytie, trustynge there gladlye and louynglye to be receyuyd. But vpon the morne whã they came vnto ỹ gatys, they fande thẽ watchyd with harnessyd men, whiche wolde none suffre to entre but suche as them lykyd; amonge the whiche one named Macequette, a seruaunt of ỹ regentis, was mysse entreatid: & notwithstandynge that ac-

[a] xxiii. edit. 1542. 1559. [b] they wounded. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

corde,

corde, yet mouable[a] goodys of suche as were w̄ the regent, and had howsys within the cytie, were dysperblyd and stroyed. Vpon the. xxi. day of Iulii and euyn of Mary Magdaleyne, a stryfe began to kyndell within the cytie, so that the cytezyns complayned them vpon the Englysshe men, surmysynge agayne them dyuerse causes, by meane whereof the comonte in a fury yoode vnto the paleys of Neell, where at that tyme many of the capytayns of the Englysshemen dynyd with the kyng of Nauerne, vpō whom they fell sodeynly & slewe of them vpō. xxiiii., and after in dyuerse placys of the cytie, toke the other deale to the noumbre of. CCCC. or thereupon, and closyd them in dyuerse prysons: with which doyng the kynge of Nauerne, with also ȳ prouoste and other the gouernours of the cytie, were right sore discōtentyd, wherfore, vpon the day folowynge, ȳ kynge assemblyd the comynaltie at theyr comon halle, entēdynge by plesaunt wordys to haue causyd them to haue ben repentaunt of the murder of the foresayde capitayns, and also to haue gotten the remenaūt out of pryson; but the more the kynge spake for the Englysshemen, the more woder were they dysposyd agayne them, sayinge, that those whiche were within the cytie shulde not alonly be put to deth, but also suche as were at Seynt Denys, whiche there spoylyd ȳ towne and countrey enuyron, & had suche wordys vnto the kynge, that in ȳ ende he with the prouost and the other gouernours, were fayne to graunte vnto them that they wolde goo with them for to helpe to dystresse the sayde Englysshemen. And so the same day agayn nyght, the comons issuyd by the gate of Seynt Honoure, and ȳ kyng of Nauerne with the prouoste and theyr company went out by the wyndemylle, soo that in the sayd assembles of the kynge and the comons were noumbred vpō. xvi.C. speris, and of foote men vpon. viii.M. Whan the kynge with his company was comyn into the feelde where the sayd wyndemylle stādith, he houyd there well vpon halfe an houre, to see what the other company wolde doo; the which sent out. iii. sperys to espye where the Englysshemen were, and espyed of them vpon. xl. or. l. ȳ aperyd by a wooddys syde nere vnto Seynt Clow, and wenynge that of the sayde Englysshemen there hadde ben no moo, retournyd and shewyd what they had seen: wherupon the sayd comons in all haste sped them thyther, and whan they were within ȳ daunger of theyr shotte, ȳ Englysshe men issued out of dyuerse partyes of ȳ wode, and wondyd and slewe many of them, wherwith the other beynge feryd, fled incontynētly, whom the Englysshe men pursuyd so cruellye, that they slewe of the fotemen vpon. vi.C. in all: whiche season the kynge of Nauerne and also the prouoste w̄ theyr people stode *Fol. Cxxxiiii.* styll, & neuer mouyd towarde them for theyr defence or ayde. After this scomfyture thus susteynyd by the Parysyens, the kynge lefte the cytie & rode vnto Seynt Denys, and the prouoste with his company returnyd vnto Parys, where he was receyuyd with hydyous noyse and crye aswell of women as men, for that he so cowardly had sufferyd his neyghbours to be wondyd & slayne: by reason of this, murmure of ȳ people encreasyd dayly more & more agayne the prouost, so that ī maner a party was takyn atwene the prouoste and the other gouernours of the cytie and ȳ comynaltye, for the comons wolde haue put to deth many of the prysoners of the Englysshemen; but the prouost with his affynyte lette them, and preseruyd them from theyr fury and malyce. And vpon the. xxvii. daye of Iuly, beynge Frydaye, the sayd prouost beynge encompanyed with. viii. score or. CC. men in harnesse, yode vnto Louure and other prysons, and toke oute of ȳ sayd Englysshemen, & conueyed them vnto the gate of Seynt Honoure, and so sent theym vnto theyr other felysshyp than beyng at Seynt Denys, of whom they were ioyfully receyuyd and welcomed, and specyally of the kynge of Nauerne, at whose requeste, as the comon fame went, the prouost w̄ the other rulers of the towne them delyueryd. Thus more & more ciuile dyscorde began to encreace within the cytie, so that the rulers of the cytie were now in as great doughte & fere of theyr neyghbours, as before tyme they were of the regent and his knyghtys, so ȳ vpon the Tuysday folowynge, beyng the last day of

[a] the mouable. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Iuly, ỹ prouoste with other of his company beynge in harnesse, as dayly they were vsyd, went to dyner vnto ỹ bastyle of Seynt Denys, and there beynge at dyner, the prouost cōmaunded to suche as then kepte the keyes of that bastyle, that they shulde delyuer them vnto Geffrey de Maston, thē tresourer of the warrys of ỹ kynge of Nauerne; but the porters denayed that cōmaundement, and sayde presysely that they wolde not delyuer ỹ keyes to hym, nor yet to any straunger; for the whiche answere many hawte wordys were blowen on eyther partye, so that people gaderyd about them: wherof herynge one namyd Iohn Maylart, to whom belonged the watche of a quarter of the cytye, wherein and in whiche quarter the sayde bastyle stode, drewe nere and gaue ere vnto the wordys, and shortly after in bolde maner sayd vnto ỹ prouost, that the keyes shuld remayne styll with the sayde kepers, & not to be takyn out of theyr possessyon; by meane of whiche wordys the prouost with his company were encēsyd with more malyce, and vtteryd many hyghe and disdaynous wordys to fere the sayde Iohn Maylart & the other: wherefore ỹ sayd Iohn Maylart ferynge the prouost, leste he shulde shortly call his strengthe to hym, and by mean therof put hym and other to an afterdele, sodēlye gate hym on horsebacke, & berynge a baner of the Frenshe kynges in his hāde, cryed with a lowde voyce, "mon ioye seynt Denys, au roy et a duke." Whā ỹ people sawe hym thus ryde about, & cryed ioye to ỹ kynge & the duke, anon moch people folowyd hym & cryed in the same wyse, & in lyke wyse dyd the prouost & his company, whiche toke ỹ way towarde ỹ bastyle of Seynt Anthoyne, & the sayde Maylarde rode towarde ỹ market place, & there houyd with his cōpany. In which tyme & seasō one callyd Pepyn de Essars, not knowinge of ỹ feat of Iohn Maylart, in lyke maner gat hym on horsebacke, & beryng a baner of the armys of Fraunce, rode about crying ỹ foresayd crye, & so lastly came vnto ỹ other. Whyle ỹ commons were thus assemblyd in ỹ market place, the prouost came vnto ỹ foresayd bastyle of Seynt Antony, where it was reportyd to ỹ kepers of ỹ bastyle, that the prouoste had lately receyuyd letters from the kynge of Nauerne, which they desyred to see; wherof the prouost denayed the syghte, & specyally one namyd Guyffarde: wherefore after some wordys of dyspleasure, one strake at the sayd Guyffarde & through his harnesse woundyd hym, where with the prouost beyng amouyd, made resystēce agayne the sayd kepers, so that eyther ranne at other ẇ theyr wepyns, in whiche stryfe ỹ sayd Guyffarde was first slayne, & after ỹ prouoste ẇ one of his cōperys named Symonde Palmeyr: whereof herynge, ỹ foresayd Iohn Maylart & his cōpany, in all haste, sped them thyther, & pursued vpon other ỹ than were fled for fere, & so streyghtly serchid ỹ they fonde one callyd Iohn of ỹ Ile, & Giles Marcell clerke vnder the prouost of marchaūtis, whiche they also slewe without pytie; & after at ỹ bastyle of Seynt Martyne they foūde one callyd Iohn Paret ỹ yonger, whom they slew also, & soone were they spoylyd of all that they had, & layde nakyd in ỹ opyn strete for all men to loke vpon: and whā they. vi. corpsys had so lyen by a certeyn tyme, they were thā put ī a carte & drawen vnto a house of seynt Katheryne, & there buryed inreuerently. And vpō the morowe folowynge, were takyn Charlys Cusake & Iosseron or Geffrey Maston, & put into the chastelet & there kepte ī strayte pryson. And thus seasyd this ryot ẇin the cytie of Parys, ỹ had contynued for the more partye by ỹ space of a yere &. ix. monethes, as from ỹ begynnynge of ỹ moneth of Nouēber in ỹ. vii. yere of kynge Iohn, vnto thēde of ỹ moneth of Iuly in ỹ. viii. yere of this sayd kyng, or from ỹ takynge of ỹ duke in his chaūbre, to ỹ deth of ỹ prouost, by ỹ space of. vi. monethes. After whiche persones thus slayen, the sayde Iohn Maylart sent vnto the regent, requyrynge hym ỹ he wolde spede hym vnto the cytie, & in ỹ meane whyle to sende some noble man to haue ỹ rule of the same; & in that whyle the comons made serche & toke many of the former rulers, as Petyr Gylle grocer, whiche, as before is sayd, was capytayne vnto thē ỹ were sent vnto Meaus, & ẇ hym was taken syr Piers Caylart knyghte and wardeyne of the castell of Louure, also one callyd Iohn Prenost, with Petyr Bloūt, also a vocat' named maister Peter Puyssour, and a felowe of

[a] an advocat. edit. 1542. 1559.

his

his named maister Iohñ Godarde; all which persones were shortly after put to dethe by sundry tymes, & theyr bodyes caste into a ryuer callyd Bone Voycyne. And vpon the. xii. daye of August the regent was receyuyd into Paris w̄ all honour & gladnesse, whereof herynge the kyng of Nauerne, & of the puttynge to deth of Iosseran his tresourer, sent vnto ỹ regent wordys of defyaunce, lettyng hym to vnderstonde that he wolde be reuengyd of that wronge and other.

VPon the. xiiii. daye of August, the regent causyd to be assemblyd within the comon hall of Parys ỹ cytezyns, to whom he made a longe declaracion of the treasons and ryottis done by theyse personys put to deth, & by the bysshop of Laon & other yet lyuynge, which entendyd, as he sayd, to haue made the kynge of Nauerne kynge of Fraunce, & to haue yelden the cytie of Parys into the power of Englysshemen. Thē ỹ kynge of Nauerne with the Englysshemen yode vnto Meloon, where they by fauoure & strengthe occupyed ỹ Ile & all ỹ coūtrey which stretchyd towarde Byer, & warryd vpō the coūtrey towarde Gastenoys, & dyd therin moche harme aswell by fyre as otherwyse. And shortly after syr Iohñ Pyquegny & syr Robert his brother, which were capytaynys vnder the kynge of Nauerne, made warre vpō the towne of Turnay & other townys of Pycardye, *Fol. C.xl.* & slewe many of the cōmon people, and toke prysoners of the gentylmen of that coūtrey to the noūbre of an C. & aboue, amonge the which ỹ bysshop of Noyen was takyn, & with ỹ other ladde vnto a castell or towne callyd Creeyll, whereof the foresayde syr Robert was capytayne, & so cōtynued in doynge domage in dyuerse placis, as well nere vnto Paris as ellys where. Duryng which warre thus made by the kynge of Nauerne & his accessaryes, in the moneth of Septembre & begynnynge of the. ix. yere of kynge Iohñ, the foresayde syr Iohñ de Pyquygny layed his syege vnto the cytie of Amyas, & wan within the bulwerkys of the same, so ỹ the cytie was lyke to haue ben yelden vnto hym, ne had ben ỹ rescous of the erle of Seynt Powle, whiche draue the sayde Iohñ & his people a backe; but ỹ sayd syr Iohñ, with ayde of the Englysshemen, quytte hym so manfully, ỹ he had the domynyon of all that coūtrey of Bewuasyne, so ỹ wyne nor no marchaundyse myght passe to Tournay nor other townys there about, without his saufe cōduyt or lycēce: & in lyke maner syr Robert Knollys capytayne of the Englysshemen in Brytayne, gatte there many holdys & townys, whiche I passe ouer. Vpon ỹ. xxv. day of Octobre. dyuerse of the burgeysys & rulers of the cytie of Parys, as Iohñ Guyffarde, Nicholas Poret, and other to the noūbre of. xix. personys, by the cōmaūdemēt of the regent, were arestyd & sent vnto pryson, & so remāynyd by the space of. iiii. dayes; wherefore the frēdys of the sayd prysoners yode vnto the prouoste of the marchauntis, thā named Iohñ Culdoe, and requyryd hym to make laboure with other vnto ỹ regent, than beynge at Louure, for the delyuery of theyr frendys, or at the lest to knowe the cause of theyr inprysonement, which requeste the prouoste and other executyd. It was answerid to thē by the regent, that vpon the morowe he wolde be at theyr cōmon hall, where before the comynalty the cause of theyr inprysonement shuld be shewid, and if than the cytezyns thoughte good to haue theym set at large, he wolde therwith holde hym contentyd. At whiche howre apoyntyd the regent came vnto ỹ sayd hall, & there shewyd ỹ one named Iohñ Damyens, which had maryed ỹ doughter of Iohñ Restable, one of ỹ sayd prysoners, had causyd his sayd father and the other ỹ they had allyed them with ỹ kynge of Nauerne contrary theyr allegeaunce, wherfore he thought they had deseruyd to dye; but for ỹ fauoure that he owyd vnto the cytie and to them, for they were of good substaunce he wolde not do any thyng to them tyll they were enquerid of by theyr neyghbours. After the which declaracion thus made by the regent, euery man feryd to speke any more for them, but sufferyd the lawe to haue his course; how be it ī the ende they were acquyted of ỹ treason, & fynallye delyueryd by the ende of the nexte moneth. Vpon the thyrde daye of Decēbre entryd into Parys, the cardynallys of Pierregort & of Vrgell, to treate a concorde & peace atwene the regēt and the kynge of Nauerne;

but in conclusyon no thynge they sped of ỹ they came for, wherefore they retournyd vnto Auynyon; in whiche retourne they were robbyd of great substaunce, wherof Englysshemen bare the dysclaūder. And thus this grudge hangynge atwene the kynge & the regēt, many robberyes & other harmys were done vnto dyuerse townes in Fraunce, to the great enpouerysshynge of the people of ỹ lande, & to the great enrychyng of such Englysshmen as than were there abydynge in daylye warris, bothe w̄ the kyng of Nauerne & also in Brytayn: for shortly after this ỹ foresayd syr Robert Knollys & other Englysshemen wan the towne of Ancer & other, lyke as in the. xxxiii. yere of kynge Edwarde is before more at lēgthe declared. In ỹ moneth of May &. xix. day of ỹ same, ỹ regēt, for tydynges whiche he hadde receyuyd from his father out of Englonde, by ỹ reporte of ỹ archebysshop of Sens & other, assemblyd many of ỹ good townys at Parys, but for ỹ ways were so stoppyd by men of warre, he was fayne to tary tyll ỹ. xxv. day of ỹ sayd moneth folowyng; at which seasō was shewyd to ỹ people there assēblyd, ỹ the kyng of Englāde, to haue a fynall cōcorde w̄ the kyng of Fraūce, wolde haue, ouer & aboue his raūsome, ỹ duchy of Normādy, ỹ duchy of Guyan, ỹ duchye of Exanctis, ỹ cytie of Ageu, ỹ cytie of Carbe, ỹ cytie of Pierregort, the cytie of Lymoges, ỹ cytie of Caours, w̄ all the dyocis of ỹ sayd cyties belongynge, the erledamys of Bygorre, of Poytiers, of Amowe[1], and of Mayne, of Thorayne, of Bouloyne, of Guynys, of Pounteissys or Pountieu, the townys of Mounstruell, of Calays, and of Marquet, w̄ all appertenauntys to the sayde duchyes, erledamys, cyties & townys belongynge, them to enioye & holde wout feawte or homage for them doynge, with many other thynges to ỹ kyng of Englondys great aduaūtage: which tydynges were right displesaunt vnto all ỹ company, in so moche ỹ they answeryd ỹ the sayd treaty was neyther honorable nor profetable, & rather than the kynge shulde bynde hym & his lande to suche incōuenyēce, they wolde prepare to make sharpe warre agayne Englande, w̄ which answere the sayde assemble was dissoluyd. Vpō the. xxviii. day of May, the regent reassemblyd ỹ sayd people, where it was cōdyssēdyd ỹ the nobles of the realme w̄ a certeyn persōnys, euery man after his astate, shulde serue ỹ regent i his warrys by ỹ space of a moneth, at theyr owne propre costys, & the cytie of Parys graūtyd to fynde to hym at theyr charge. vi.C. sperys, CCCC. archers, & a. M. of other sowdyours; & for so moche as ỹ other good townys wolde not graunt any subsydie, tyll they had spokyn w̄ theyr cōmynalties, therefore they were lycencyd to departe home, & to brynge reporte agayne within. xiiii. dayes: at which season they shewyd vnto the regent ỹ theyr countreys were so pyllyd and wastyd by the kynge of Nauerne & Englysshe men, ỹ the people myght nothynge ayde hym as they thought to haue done, wherfore with moche peyne they graūtyd to hym. viii.M. men for. iii. monethes. In ỹ begynnynge of ỹ moneth of Iunii, ỹ regēt with a strōge power, sped hym towarde Meleon, where the kynge of Nauerne laye w̄ his people, so ỹ the kynge occupyed the cōutrey towarde Byeir, & the regēt ỹ cōutrey towarde Brye, where both hoostis thus lyinge, wout notary feate of warre, a treatye of accorde was yet agayne moued: at lengthe, by agrement of ỹ Parysyens, accordyd moche lyke vnto the former accorde cōcludid at Parys, so that by mediacion of certeyn tēporall lordys of both hoostis, ỹ sayd pryncys agreed to mete at Meulane, & there to conclude the sayde peace, where about the. xx. daye of August, w̄ hostage delyuyred vpon bothe partyes, the sayd pryncis mette, & after rode vnto Poyntouse, where they were bothe lodgyd w̄in the castell, where bothe theyr counceylys were assygned to mete for the perfyghting of this accorde; but so it was, that for suche landys as shuld be assygned vnto ỹ kyng, they cowde not agree, wherfore ỹ regent, in cōclusyon, sent vnto the erle of Stāps or Escamps, chargynge hym to saye ỹ he, to ỹ entent to haue his good wyll, had offeryd vnto hym resonable offers, which if he wold accepte, he wolde be fayne therof, & if not he let hym vnderstonde that he shuld haue no peace w̄ hym whyle he lyued. By reason of whiche message, ỹ cōunceylys on bothe partyes cōceyued

[1] Angeou. edit. 1559.

none

hone other, but ỹ this treaty shulde haue concludyd no amyte nor peace; but howe it was *Fol. C.xli.* by coũceyll & of his owne lyberalyte, whā ỹ kynge had degestyd this mater ī his mynde by all ỹ nyght folowynge, he on ỹ morowe sent for ỹ coũceyll of ỹ regent, & wyllyd theym to shewe vnto ỹ regent, ỹ he cõsyderyd well ī his mynde ỹ great daũger & mysery which ỹ realme of Fraũce stode ī; wherfore he, beyng of ỹ naturall house of Fraũce, & one of ỹ flouredelyce, ought to see ỹ mayntenaũce of ỹ honour of the same, & for that ỹ to hym no ruyne of the sayd realme shulde to hym, if any fell after, be arectyd. Therfore he was cõtentid to set a parte all such great offers & promyses, as to hym before tyme had ben offeryd & promysed, & to holde hym onely contentyd w̄ his owne right as he before tymes had enioyed: & to the ende that this his wyll & pleasure myght to ỹ people be knowen, he wyllyd the regēt ỹ the people of ỹ towne of Pountoyse shuld be assemblyd in ỹ courte of ỹ castell, ỹ he myght declare it to them in propre persone, the which accordyng to his mynde was done, all which rehersall he made before the regent & comynaltye of the towne, promysynge there to delyuer out of his possessyon all such townes, castellys and holdys as he hadde wone, sen he stode enemye to ỹ crowne of Fraunce, & to become true subiecte vnto the kyng, & louynge neuewe and frende vnto the regent from that daye forewarde. Whereof the regent & all the cõmons were very glad & ioyfull; albe it ỹ some trustyd lytle to this accorde, nor yet to the contynuaũce thereof, cõsyderynge the manyfolde accordis which before tymes had ben atwene them concludid. After which accorde thus endyd, the kynge with his people retournyd to Menlant & the regēt to Paris, appoyntynge atwene them to meete at Paris ỹ first day of Septembre next folowyng.

ACcordyng to the appoyntment made at Pountoyse atwene ỹ kyng & the regēt, vpon the first day of Septembre & begynnyng of ỹ. x. yere of kynge Iohn, the sayd kyng & regent met at Parys, where atwene them was holden famylyer company & great kyndenesse shewyd vpon eyther partye: there also they coũceylyd how they shuld w̄stāde ỹ kyng of Englonde, which entendyd to entre Fraunce shortlye after w̄ a stronge power; & after many amytes & freendely dealynges atwene them executyd, the kyng rode to Meleon to delyuer ỹ towne & castell into the regentys possessyon, as ỹ story shewith. But whan he was cõmyn thyther, were it w̄ his wyll or contrary, ỹ sowdyours toke greuouse tollys of all wynes & other marchaũdysys ỹ passyd ỹ waye, which after was knowen to be for the wage & sowde of the Nauaroys and Englysshemen, whiche helde the sayde towne & castell, & so the Frenshemen were constraynyd to paye the wagys of theyr enemyes, which greuyd them very sore, consyderynge ỹ manyfolde harmys & pyllagis of thē before were receyued. And after ỹ kyng had auoydid ỹ sayd sowdyours, he departyd & rode vnto Maũte, leuynge Creyell ī ỹ possessyō of Englysshmen & other; & ouer theyse manyfolde myseryes & myscheuys thus fallynge in the realme of France, there fell so great habūdaũce of water in the heruest season, ỹ the corne was lost, so ỹ it rose to an hygh pryce, to the great damage of the comon people. And in the moneth of Nouembre folowynge, the kynge of Englande, with prynce Edwarde and other many lordys, with a stronge power, lādyd at Calays, & so percyd Fraũce by Artoys, in Pycardy & Vermendoys, & subdued ỹ coũtres before hym tyll he came to Reynis, lyke as before is shewid in the. xxxiiii. &. xxxv. yeres of kynge Edwarde, it with[1] the tenour of the peace atwe the sayd kynges of Englonde and Fraũce is more at lengthe declaryd. The last day of the moneth of Decembre, one Marten of Pysdo, burgeyse of Parys, was drawen vnto the place of iugemēt, & there vpon a scaffolde had first his armys cutte of, & after his leggys by the thyes, & lastly his hede, & than he was quartered, & his. iiii. quarters sette vpō. iiii. pryncypall gatis of the cytie, & his hede sette vpon the pyllory; the cause of this iugement was, for so moch as one callyd Denysot Palmer, to whome he had dyscouеryd his coũceyll, & causyd hym to be as an accessary in all his workys, had accusyd hym, ỹ the

[1] where all thys mater wyth the. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

sayd

sayd Marten had agreed & couenauntyd with certeyne offycers & capytaynes of ỹ kyng of Nauerne, ỹ they at a tyme appoynted shulde haue entryd the cytie of Parys, & to haue slayne the regent & other, & to haue had the cyte at theyr rule & pleasure. And so the season, than of the. x. yere, tyll the moneth of Iuly, passyd in ỹ warrys & treaty before towchyd, so that the. viii. day of Iuly the Frenshe kyng landyd at Calays, & there taryed as prysoner tyll the. xxv. daye of Octobre folowinge, as before in the. xxxiiii. yere of kyng Edwarde is more playnly shewid. Than vpon the. xxix. day of Octobre, & begynnynge of his. xi. yere, kyng Iohñ came to Seynt Omers, where they' taryed tyll the. iiii. daye of Nouembre, & the. xi. day of December he came vnto Seynt Denys, where vnto hym vpon the. xii. daye came the kyng of Nauerne, which had not seen hym sen he was delyuerid from pryson, & brought with hym certeyn hostagys which the Frēshe kyng had sent vnto hym for his sauegarde, puttynge hym holy in the Frēshe kynges grace & mercy. And vpō the morowe folowynge he was newely sworne vnto the kynge, to be his trewe & feythfull sone & subgecte, & the kynge agayne vnto hym to be his kynde father, & good & gracyous soueraygne lorde, & fourthew were sworne the duke of Normandy, & Phylyp brother vnto the sayd kyng of Nauerne, to meynteyne all couenaũtys made & to be made atwene the sayde. ii. kynges, so ỹ they were fynysshyd & concludyd by the. xviii. day of Ianuary nexte folowyng. And soone after retournyd the sayd kyng of Nauerne vnto Maunt, & kynge Iohñ vpon the. xiiii. daye of Decēber w̄ great tryumphe was receyuyd into Parys; & whan he was comyn vnto his paleys, the prouoste of marchauntis, with certeyne burgeysys of the cytie, in the name of the comynaltye of the same, presentyd hym with a present to the value of a. M. marke sterlynge. Vpō a Tuysday beynge the first day of Iuly, was foughten a batayll at Parys atwene. ii. knyghtys, wherof the appellaunt was namyd syr Foukes Dorciat, & the defēdaũt syr Maugot Mawbert, which appellaunt was sore vexyd with a feuer quarteyne; by reason whereof & of the great hete ỹ that day apperyd, after longe fyght the sayd appellaũt lyght from his horse for his refresshement: wherfore his frendis of hym were ī great dowte, but his enemye was also so sore trauaylyd, ỹ what for hete & laboure he was also ouercome, and was lykely to haue fallen frome his horse, &, or he myght be taken downe, he swownyd & dyed. Whā syr Fowkis was ware of the feblenesse of his enemye, anon as he myght, he dressyd hym on fote towarde his aduersary, and fande hym starke dede, which by lycence of ỹ kyng was after had out of ỹ feelde & secretly buryed, & the sayd syr Fowkys, for feblenesse, was by his frendis ladde vnto his lodgynge. In the. xii. yere of kyng Iohñ, & xxi. daye of Nouembre, Phylyp duke of Burgoyn, erle of Artoys, of Aluerne, & of Boloygne, a chylde of the age of. xiiii. yeres or lesse, dyed at a towne nere vnto Rome callyd Guyon; by reason of whose deth kynge Iohñ as nexte heyre had after possessyon of all
Fol. Cxlii. the sayd landys, & toke possessyon therof shortly after. In the. xiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Iohñ, and thyrde daye of Ianuary, he for specyall causys hym mouyng, as for the enlargynge of his sone the duke of Orleaũce and other yet pledgys for his raunsome, he toke shyppynge at Boleyne, and so saylyd into Englande, and arryued at Douer the. vi. day of the sayd moneth, and after yode to Eltham, and from thens was conueyed vnto Lōdon, as before is shewyd in the. xxxvii. yere of kyng Edwarde. In tyme of whose there beynge, syr Barthran de Glaycon made warre vpō the kyng of Nauerne, and wan from hym the towne of Maũt in Normandy, and by the duke of Normandy soone after was wonne from the sayde kynge the towne of Menlence, within the whiche were taken dyuerse Parysyens, that shortlye after for theyr infydelyte were put in execucion at Parys, and thus the warre atwene ỹ kynges of Fraunce & Nauerne was newely begonne. Than kynge Iohn, beyng as before is sayde in Englande, a greuouse malady toke hym in the begynnynge of Marche, of the whiche he dyed at London vpon the. viii. daye of Aprell folowinge, and so with great honoure and solempnyte conueyed to the sees syde, & there shypped, and then in

' he,

processe

processe caryed into Fraunce, where vpon the. vii. day of May, and yere of our Lord God. M.CCC.lxiiii. he was solempnely enteryd in ỹ monastery of Seynt Denys, when he hadde reygnyd. xiii. yeres. vii. monethes and odde dayes, leuynge after hym thre sonnys, that is to say Charlys, which was kyng after hym, Lewys and Phylyp.

CArolus or Charlys the. vi. of ỹ name, or. v. after some wryters, the eldest sone of kynge Iohñ, beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce the. ix. daye of Aprell, in the begynnynge of the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCC.lxiiii., & the. xxviii. yere of Edwarde the. iii. than kynge of Englonde, and was crowned with dame Iane his wyfe, at Raynes, the. xix. daye of May folowyng. In this first yere, syr Barthran de Glaycon lieutenaũt of the sayd Charlys in Normãdy, fought ẅ a capitayne of the kyng of Nauerne namyd le Captall de Bueffe, nere vnto a place callyd Cocherell, nere vnto the crosse of seynt Lyeffroy, in which fight ỹ sayd Captall was scõfyted & great noũbre of his people taken & slayen, & hym selfe chasyd & taken, for whom ỹ Frẽshe kyng gaue after vnto ỹ sayd syr Barthrã ỹ erledam of Longeuyle; & whan he had receyuyd hym, he sent hym vnto a strõge pryson callyd ỹ Merchy ī Meaux. At Myghelmas folowynge, the duke of Brytayne, syr Charlys de Bloyes, & syr Iohñ de Moũtfort, sone & heyre of ỹ fore named syr Iohñ Moũtforde before dede, (which by a longe season bothe father & the sone had holdẽ warre ẅ the sayd syr Charlys,) met in playen batayll, in ỹ which, as before is shewed in ỹ. xxxviii. yere of kyng Edwarde, the sayde syr Charles was slayen, & dyuerse noble men of Frañce ẅ hym. In ỹ moneth of Iunii, and seconde yere of this Charlys, an other accorde was yet concluded atwene this Charlis and the kynge of Nauerne, by reason of whiche accorde ỹ Captall of Bueff was clerely delyuered, & Maũt & Menlene agayne also to ỹ kynge restored; & ouer that to ỹ kyng of Nauerne was geuyn, for a recõpensmẽt, the erledõ of Longeuyle, whiche, as aboue is sayd, ỹ Frenshe kynge had geuen vnto syr Barthran de Glaycon, for to haue the Captall to his prysoner; and also to the sayd kynge of Nauerne was gyuen ỹ lordshyppe of Moũtpyller. And in ỹ moneth of Februarii began the warre in Spayne, where prynce Edwarde ayded Peter kyng of that lande, as before is shewed in the. xl. &. xlii. yeres of kynge Edwarde. In the. iiii. yere, the pease atwene ỹ kynges of Englonde & of Frañce began to breke, by meanys of the erle of Armenake & other, as in ỹ the. xlii. yere of kynge Edwarde is before shewed. And in ỹ moneth of Decembre, & the sayde yere, the quene was lyghted of a man chylde in the hostell of seynt Paule, the whyche was after cristened ẅ excedyng solempnite ouer other before passed, ī ỹ churche of seynt Paule in Parys ỹ. vi. daye of Decẽbre of the cardynall of Parys; to whome were godfaders the erles of Mountmerency & of Dãpmartyn, & godmoder Iane quene of Euroux, & bare ỹ name of Charlys after the erle of Mountmerẽcy. In ỹ. v. yere of this Charlys he called his coũcell of parlyamẽt at Paris, duryng ỹ which the appellacyõs of ỹ erle of Armenake & other purposed ageyn prince Edwarde were publysshed & rad, & ỹ answeris of ỹ sayd prynce vppõ ỹ sayd appellacyons made, which I ouer passe for length of the matier; but ỹ conclusion was, ỹ the prynce had broken ỹ peas & couenauntis of ỹ same, as they there demyd: wherfore all suche townes & holdes as ỹ Frenshe kynge had gotten, he shuld thẽ reteyne, & make warre vpon ỹ kynge of Englonde for ỹ recouery of ỹ other. Wherevppon kyng Charlys in ỹ moneth of Iuly folowynge, rode vnto Roan & there ryggyd his nauy, entendyng, as sayth ỹ Frenche history, to haue made warre vppõ Englonde, & to haue sent thydder his yongeste brother, Philippe than duke of Bourgoyne, ẅ a strõge army; but whyle he was there besyde abowte his purpose, the duke of Lancastre arryued with a stronge power at Charlys', and so passed Tyrwyn and so vnto Ayr: wherefore kyng Charlys thẽ chaunged his purpose, & sente his sayde brother into those parties. Then by that season that the sayd duke was preparid with his people, the Englysshemẽ

' Caleys.

were comyn vnto Arde, & the Frenchemē sped them in suche wyse ỹ they logged theym, the. xxiiii. day of Auguste, vppō ỹ mountayne of Tournehawe nere vnto Arde, so that both hoostes were lodged within an Englysshe myle, atwene whom were dayly bekerynges & small skyrmysshes; all whiche season ỹ Frenche kynge taryed styll abowte Rowan. Then ỹ kyng of Nauerne, which by a long season had dwellyd in Nauerne, came by shyp into Constantyne, & sent vnto kyng Charlys that, if he were so pleasyd, he wolde gladlye come vnto hym for to shewe to hym his mynde; wherefore the kynge sent vnto hym as hostagys, the erle of Salebruge, the deane of Parys, with. ii. other noble men, the which the kynge of Nauerne wolde not accepte. In the moneth of Septembre, & vpon the. xii. day, when the duke of Burgoyne had lyen, as before is sayd, nere vnto ỹ Englysshe hooste, he that daye remoued his people, and so went vnto Hesden, and ỹ Englysshe
Fol. Cxliii. hoost, remoued to Caux and other placis, as before I haue shewid to you in the. xliii. yere of kynge Edwarde, with other thynges apperteynynge vnto the same mater. And, in the sayde moneth of Septēber, kynge Charlis mannyd and vytaylyd certeyn galeys and other shyppes, and sent them into Walys & so to haue entryd into Englonde, but they retourned with lytle worshyp, notwithstandynge that he had ii. noble men of Walys named Owan & Iames Wynne[1], whiche made to hym faste promesse of great thynges, by reason ỹ they were enemyes vnto the kynge of Englonde. For this and for other chargys, ỹ kynge callyd a conuocacion of the temporalte & spiritualte at Paris, where, to meynteyne his warrys, was graūtyd to hym of all thynge bought & solde, excepte vytayle, the. iiii. peny, so ỹ all thyng that was solde by retayle, the seller shuld pay ỹ exaccion, & that which was solde by great, the byer shulde paye the sayde exaccyon, & the spiritualte graunted a dyme to be payed in. ii. halfe yeres, & the lordis and gentylmen were stynted at certeyne men[2], after the value of theyr lādys. In ỹ moneth of February ỹ kyng sent vnto the kynge of Nauerne, thā beinge at Chierbourgth, certeyne messyngers to parfyght an amyte atwene thē, lest he toke party agayne hym with the Englysshemen; but this treaty contynued a longe season, so that in the. vi. yere, and moneth of Iuny, the kyng of Nauerne hauynge suffyciēt hostagis, came to the Frenshe kyng to Vernon, where, in conclusyon, the kynge of Nauerne made his homage vnto ỹ Frēshe kyng, and became there his feodary, whereof the Frenshemen made moche ioye. After whiche accorde, the sayde kynge of Nauerne ỹ thyrde day folowynge toke his leue of the kynge, and so rode vnto Enroux. All whiche season ỹ warre was contynued by Englysshemen within ỹ realme of Fraunce & prouynce of Brytayne, as before is expressyd, in the. xliiii. xlv. and. xlvi. yeres of kynge Edwarde. In the. vii. yere, and moneth of August, the duke of Braban, with many nobles of Fraūce, mette in playne batayll with the duke of Iuyllers and the duke of Guellre; in which batayll, after cruell fyght, the duke of Braban was chasyd, & vpon his syde slayen the erle of seynt Poule w many other noble men, which the story nameth not, and vpō the other syde was also slayen, ỹ duke of Guellre with many other vpon that partye.

IN the. xi. yere of kynge Charlys & moneth of May, he assēblyd his great counceyll of parlyamēt at Parys, where, amōge many actis made for the weale of his realme, he with assent of his lordys and cōmōs there assemblyd, enactyd for a lawe after that daye to be cōtynued, ỹ all heyres to the crowne of Fraunce theyr faders beynge dede, may be crownyd as kynges of Fraūce so soone as they attayne vnto the age of. xiiii. yeres. And in this yere was the treatye of peace laboured by the. ii. cardynallys sent from the pope[3], as before is shewyd in the. xlix. yere of kynge Edwarde; after whiche treatye not concludyd, the kynge of Englonde lost dayly of his landis in Fraunce, for in the moneth of August folowynge, the duke of Berry, the duke of Angeow, and other many lordys to them assygned in dyuerse placys, as in Guyan, Angeow, and Mayn, gate and wan from ỹ

[1] Guinne. edit. 1559. [2] a certaintie. edit. 1559. [3] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

Englysshemen many coũtreys, townes, and castellys, as Pierregrot, Rouerge, Caoursyn, Bigorre, Basyndas, Berregart, Daymet, with many other townys & holdis, which wolde aske a longe leysour to reherce, to ỹ noũber of. vi. score &. xiiii. what of townes, castellys, & other holdis, which in short whyle were wonne from the Englysshemen in the partyes of Fraunce and Brytayne. In the. xiii. yere of this Charlys, the emperour of Rome and Almayne named Charlys the. iiii. of that name, came into Fraũce by Cambray, to do certeyne pylgrymagys at Seynt Denys and ellyswhere, and so was conueyed with honorable men, as the lorde of Cousy and other, vntò Seynt Quyntyne, where he taryed Crystemasse daye, and after he was conueyed to a towne callyd En or Ewe, and from thense to Noyen, & then to Compeygne, where he was mette ẅ the duke of Burbon and other nobles: then he rode to Senlys, where he was mette with ỹ dukys of Berry & of Burgoyne, bretherne of the Frenshe kynge, and many other, as bisshoppys & other lordys: and ye shall vnderstande that all suche as rode in the companyes of theyse foresayd dukys, except bysshoppis and preestis, rode in theyr lyuereys; as ỹ company fyrst of the duke of Burbon brother vnto ỹ quene, to ỹ noũber of. CCC. men, were all cladde in whyte and blewe; the company of the. ii. other dukis the noũbre of. v. C. men in blacke and russet; that is to meane, the erlys and other lordys in cloth of golde, ỹ knyghtys in veluet, the gentylmen in damaske and satyne, and the yemen in clothe. Then from Senlys he was brought vnto Louuris, where mette ẅ hym the duke of Barre with a companye of. CC. horse, and his companye cladde in grene and redde; and frome thens he was had to Seynt Denys vpon the thyrde day of Ianuary, whyther the kyng sent to hym a chare rychely garnysshed, for so moche as he was vexyd with the gowte, and the quene sent to hym an horse lytter with. ii. whyte palfreys, where he was also mette with a great cõpany of bysshoppys and other spyrytuall men, as abbottis, pryours & other, & taryed there. ii. dayes. Vpõ the v. day of Ianuarii, beyng Mõday, he rode toward Paris; but or he were halfe a myle from Seynt Denys he was mette ẅ the prouost of ỹ marchaũtys with a cõpany of. xv. C. horse, ỹ cytezyns beyng cladde in whyte and vyolette, and so rode before hym tyll he came to Parys. Whan the kynge was warned that he was nere the cytie, he lepte vpõ a whyte palfrey, and accompanyed with many lordys and other, to the noumbre of a M. men, all his housholde seruauntys beyng cladde in one lyuerey of browne, blewe and darke tawny, & the seruauntys of the dolphyn of Vyen in blewe and cremesyne, euery man after his degre; and so the kynge with his company mette with the emperoure at ỹ myle without the towne callyd the Wynde Mylle; where, after due salutys made, eyther vnto other, the Frenshe kynge put the emperour vpõ his ryght hande, and toke the kyng of Romayns, sone vnto the emperour, vpõ his lefte hande: and so the Frenshe kynge rydynge in the myddys, passyd thoroughe the hygh stretys, of Parys tyll they came to the kynges palays, where he was lodgyd with all honour, and after festyd with ỹ kynge & ỹ quene by the space of. xvi. dayes; whiche terme endyd, lyke as with all honoure he was conueyed into the lãde, so with great honoure and ryche gyftys he was agayne conueyed out of the lande. In the moneth of February folowynge & the. vi. daye, dyed ỹ quene of Fraunce, in the hostell of seynt Poule in Parys, & after buryed with great solempnyte and honour in the monastery of Seynt Denys. In ỹ moneth of Marche the kyng receyuyd letters from certeyn lordys of his lande, in ỹ which was cõteygnyd ỹ the kyng of Nauerne had imagenyd & cõspyred ẅ one Iaquet [de Rue his chaũberleyn, for to poyson hym, the which Iaquet][1] was than comyn into Fraunce to execute his cursyd purpose. Wherfore the Frenshe kynge layed such wayte for hym ỹ he was takyn, & founden vpon hym a byll of certeyn ỹstruccions howe he shuld behaue hymselfe in accõplysshyng his euyll porpose. Thã he was brought vnto the kynges presence, to whom *Fol. C.xliiii.* he confessyd the circumstaũce of all his treason to be done at the commaundement and coũceyll of the kynge of Nauerne. Soone after the eldest sone of the kynge of Nauerne,

[1] that was. edit. 1542, 1559.

whiche was newely cūmyn into Normandy, sent vnto kynge Charlys, shewynge to hym ȳ, if it were his pleasure, he wolde gladlye come vnto his presence for to speke with hym, with ȳ he myght haue a sure safe conduyt for hym & all suche as he shuld bryng with hym; the which to hym was graūted, & vpō the same came vnto Sēlys, where the kynge than was: & after he had comoned a season with ȳ kynge, he made to hym request for the delyuere of the foresayd Iaket de Rue, laying for hym sundry excusys; but whā the kyng had causyd ȳ sayd Iaket to be brought forthe before the sayd sone of the kynge of Nauerne, namyd syr Charlis, he auouchyd suche thynges before hym that he cowde not denaye but ȳ his father had cōmyttyd many & sūdry treasons, aswell agayn kynge Iohn, as nowe agayne kyng Charlys his sone: wherfore after dyuerse assembles & coūceyllys hadde vpon this mater, the kyng & the sayd syr Charlys agreed, ȳ all suche townys & holdys as the sayde kynge of Nauerne had within Normādy, shuld be delyueryd vnto the duke of Burgoyne to the Frensh kynges vse. And for that promesse shuld be trulye parfourmyd, the kynge firste sware the sayde syr Charlys, and after many of the capytaynes whiche had the rule of the sayde townes & castellys: and for so moche as the sayde syr Charlys had there present with hym a capytayne namyd syr Fernande de Oyens, in whose guydynge many of the sayd holdys than were, & suspectyd hym that he wolde not perfourme the sayd promesse, therfore he causyd hym to be arestyd, and to be had vnto pryson tyll the holdys, beynge vndre his guydynge, were clerely delyuered. Vpō which agrement thus concludyd and sworne, ȳ duke of Burgoyne, with the sayd syr Charlys, and also the sayd syr Fernande as a prysoner, was sent into Normandye ẅ a conuenyent army, where with awe & fauoure the duke in processe of tyme had to hym delyuered all suche townys and holdys as the kyng of Nauerne there had, except the towne and castell of Chirebourgth. In whiche passe tyme & season was also takyn, in a towne callyd Bretnell, a secretary of the kynge of Nauerne, with certeyne wrytynges beinge in a coffer within the chamber; by reason of whiche wrytynges, & also by the confessyon of the party, many mo thynges concernynge the confessyon of Iaket de Rue was thā manyfestyd and approued: whiche secretarye was namyd master Peter de Tertre, a Frenshe man borne, but he had seruyd the kyng of Nauerne by ȳ more terme of his lyfe. Vpon this cōfessyon made and wryten by the sayd secretary, the kynge callyd his court of parlyament, durynge the whiche both the sayde master Peter, & also the sayd Iaket were brought before the lordys and cōmons, where theyr confessyons were redde, and they examyned vpon euery artycle of the same, and affermyd all theyr former sayinges: wherefore shortlye after, by auctoryte of that courte, they were demyd to dye for theyr treasons, and so were hangyd and hedyd, and theyr viii. quarters hāgyd at sundry gates and placys of Parys. And whan the kynge had receyuyd into his possessyon the foresayd holdys belongynge vnto ȳ kynge of Nauerne, the whiche so often had rebellyd agayne his father and hym, he was coūceylyd by his lordys, that he shulde throwe to grounde dyuerse of the sayde castellys, lest the kynge of Nauerne them recoueryd agayne, & by meane of theyr forcys wrought vnto hym & his realme new displeasurys; by reason of which coūceyll, ȳ kyng made cuen with ȳ groūde these fortressys folowynge, first, the castell of Bretnell, of Dorlet, of Beaumount le Roger, of Pacy Damyet & cloysters of the same, the towre & castell of Nogent le Roye, the castell of Enroux, the castell of Pount Andemer, the castell of Mortaygne, & of Ganraux or Ganray, with other in the countrey of Constātyne, but the towne Chirebourgth remaynyd styll ī the possessyon of ȳ Nauaroys, the which, ẅ ayde of Englysshemen, was kepte from the Frenshe kyng, & the forenamed syr Farnande was contyrmaūdyd to pryson, for so moche as he was capytayne of the same towne, thynkyng in hym defaute that the sayde towne was not delyueryd ẅ ȳ other.

IN ȳ. xiiii. yere of this Charlys & moneth of August, tydynges came vnto hym of the scysme which was begunne ī the Church of Rome; for after the deth of the. xi. Gregory, which dyed in the moneth of Aprell fore passyd, by meane of ȳ Frenshe cardynallys, which

which were. xi. in noũbre, after ỹ other Italyen cardynallys, with other of theyr affynyte, had electyd & chosen a Napolytan & archebysshop of Barre, ỹ Frenshe cardynallys with ỹ eleccyon not beynge cõtẽtyd, with suche as fauoured theyr party, denoũcyd & publysshed one named Robert, cardynall of Basyle, & named hym Clemẽt the. vii. where ỹ first was named Vrban the. vi. Of ỹ maner of this scysme somewhat I haue shewyd to you in ỹ. lii. yere of Edwarde the iii.; but to expresse ỹ certeynte of this scysme, trouth it is, ỹ after ỹ deth of ỹ forenamyd. xi. Gregory, ỹ cardynallys beyng in ỹ cõclaue or coũceyll chaũbre, where ỹ pope' is accustomyd to be chosen, ỹ Romayns beynge ī harnesse, made suche exclamaciõs vpõ ỹ cardynallys beyng in ỹ cõclaue, for to haue an Italian pope', that ỹ cardynallys, for fere to be slayne, electid & chase one namyd Bartholmew, a Napolytan & archebisshop of Barre, & named Vrbã ỹ. vi.; but this, after he was admyttid, was so proude & so cõbrous, ỹ he rulyd all by wyll & nothyng by ryght or goodlye ordre of reason or concience: wherfore the cardynallys beynge repẽtaunt of ỹ that they had done, a certeyne of them beyng in ỹ cytie of Fondes, the. xx. day of Septembre electyd & chase an other namyd Robert, cardynall of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. & by theyr auctorytees pubblysshed hym for very pope', & dysalowed ỹ other before chosen. But the Romayns wolde not therunto be agreable, but helde them vnto theyr former pope', with whom also helde ỹ prouyncis of Germany & Pannony, with ỹ more parte of Italy: & with ỹ laste chosen pope' helde Fraũce, Spayne, Cateloyne, & Englõde, & thus began the scysme which cõtynued by ỹ terme of. xxxix. yere after. In ỹ. xv. yere of kynge Charlys, he, for so moche as syr Iohñ de Mountforte, duke of Brytayn, toke partye with ỹ Englyssbemen agayn hym, & wolde not appere at suche dayes as to hym were assygned, therfore the sayde kyng Charlys sent into the duchye of Brytayne (to sease ỹ lãde into ỹ kynges hãdis,) ỹ duke of Burbon, syr Lewys de Sancer marshall of Fraũce, syr Iohñ de Vyenne, admyrall of Fraunce, & syr Berian' de Ryuyer his chamberleyne, with other men of name, with a great cõpeny of men of armys, ỹ whiche at theyr cõmyng into Brytayn fande ỹ coũtrey all otherwyse dysposyd than they supposyd, for where as they at theyr comynge thought to haue receyuyd ỹ possessyon of the townys & castellys in peasyble wyse, they were denayed & playnlye ausweryd ỹ they were sworne to theyr duke to bere to hym trewe fydelyte & seruyce, which they entẽdyd to obserue & kepe. With which answere ỹ sayd duke & his company were fayne to returne vnto ỹ Frẽshe kyng, ỹ which shortly after sent thyther ỹ duke of Angeou with a strõge army to warre vpon ỹ countrey. *Fol. C.xlvj.*
In whiche season syr Iohñ de Moũtfort, heryng of the Frenshe kynges entent, arryuyd in Brytayne w̃ a cõpany of Englysshe archers, to whom drewe suche multytude of Brytons, ỹ the duke of Angeou was fayne to retourne into Fraũce without worshyp there thã wyñyng. In the moneth of Octobre, ỹ Flemyngys of Gaũt & other, for greuouse exaccion vpõ them set, rebellyd agayn theyr erle, & slew his baylly & offycer assygnyd by the erle to gather his tollys, and after besiegyd other townys which toke party w̃ the erle agayne them, as Audenarde, Terremõde, & other: wherof herynge, ỹ duke of Burgoyn, whose doughter the sayde duke had maryed, assemblyd his Burgonyons & sped hym into ỹ marchys of Flaũders, and so layed his siege vnto Tourney; but ỹ Flemynges defẽdyd ỹ duke in suche wyse ỹ the duke was agreable to fall to a treaty; in the which it was first accordid & agreed ỹ the erle, at ỹ requeste of ỹ duke, shuld pardon & forgyue clerely to his subiectis all offencys by them to hym done before ỹ daye, & also ỹ he shall graũt vnto thẽ all theyr former lyberties & pryuylegys in as ample & large wyse as they had them graũtyd at his first cõmynge in, & to maynteyn & vpholde theyr auciẽt customys, & to rule them after ỹ same; secondaryly, if any letters haue ben made & sealyd cõtrary theyr pryuylegys sen ỹ tyme of this rebellyon, ỹ the erle shall renoke theym & cancell them for euer; thyrdely, that all such capitaynys of Almayne as at this tyme haue ben in ỹ dukys or erlys wagis agayn ỹ Flemyngis shalbe solempnlye sworne, ỹ for any hurt or harme by

[1] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1548. 1559. [2] Bryan. edit. 1542. 1559.

theym

theym in this warre receyuyd, they nor none of theyr naciō, as farre as they may lette it, shall not hurt nor harme any man of ỹ coūtrey of Flaūders at any tyme hereafter in reuēgemēt of this warre; and fourthlye, ỹ of. iiii. of ỹ best townes of Flaūders. xxv. men to be chosē by ỹ burgeysys of ỹ same, ỹ which shall haue correccyon of all defautys not towchynge lyfe & deth done by ỹ Flemynges; & also to haue power to correcte all suche as be foūde culpable of ỹ erlys coūceyll in cōplayntis or offencis crymynall; lyftely, ỹ the sayd. xxv. persones shall haue auctoryte & power to make inquysiciō from yere to yere of ỹ gouernaūce of ỹ lāde, & what fawtis ben to them presentid, as oftē as. xiii. of thē be syttyng together ī one counceyll, they shall haue full power to geue sētēce vpō ỹ same, & ỹ sentēce to be obeyed ẇout interrupciō, and what by them is semēsyd ỹ erle to vpholde and maynteyne ẇ all his myght and power; sixtelye, it was desyryd, but not concludyd, ỹ for somoche as ỹ towne of Audenarde & of Terremoūde toke partye agayne theyr neyghbours, ỹ the wallys of them in certeyne placys shuld be euenyd ẇ the groūde, ī tokyn of theyr vnnaturall dealynge; and seuēthlye & lastlye it was cōcludyd ỹ the prouost of Brugys shuld after ỹ day be put out of ỹ erlys counceyll, & not after therunto to be admyttyd ẇout cōsent of ỹ forenamyd. xxv. persones: all which artycles were agreed vnto ỹ erle[1], and passyd & auctorysyd by his lettre & seale, albe it this accorde cōtynued noo whyle as here after shall apere. In ỹ. xvi. yere & moneth of Octobre, ỹ inhabytaūtis of ỹ cytie or towne of Moūtpyller, in ỹ countrey of Lāguedoke, for an inposycion or ayde ỹ was put to them by ỹ duke of Angeou, arose by one accorde agayne the mynysters & coūceyllours of ỹ duke, (whiche duke was lewtenaūt generall vnder his brother the Frēshe kyng,) & ẇout reason or dyscressyon, in theyr furye & rage, slewe syr Guyllyam Poncell knyght & chaūceller to the duke, syr Guy Dessesyke stuarde of Rouerge, maister Arnolde gouernoure of Moūtpyller, maister Iamys de Chayny secretary to the duke, & many other offycers & seruaūtis of the sayd duke, to ỹ noūbre of. lxxx. persones; & whā they had them slayne, as tyraūtis, not beyng cōtent ẇ that cruelnesse, but threwe ỹ dede bodyes into dyuers foule & stynkynge pyttis, not sufferyng them to be buryed as Cristen men shulde. Whereof whan knowlege was brought vnto the duke, he was therew greuously amoued, & made his othe ỹ he shuld punysshe them to ỹ fere & example of all other, & therupō gatheryd his people for to reuēge this cruell dede. Whā ỹ rumour of this myscheuouse dede was somedeale apeasyd, & the wyse men & aūcient of ỹ towne had degestyd this hasty & cruell dede, & lokid vpō ỹ ende therof, thē they were appallyd in theyr myndis, & were very repētaūt of ỹ dede ỹ they had done. And whā they had cōsyderyd all thynges as ỹ dede detestable of itselfe, ỹ great myght of ỹ duke, and ouer ỹ the ayde which shuld to hym be geuen of the kyng, they cōceyuyd well there was no remedy but to seche for meanys of mercye & grace, for opteynyng wherof they made dyuerse wayes to the duke, but none wolde be accepted: lastly, in the moneth of Ianuarii, whā ỹ duke had preparyd all thynges necessary to ỹ warre, he toke his iourney towarde the sayde towne of Moūtpiler, ledynge ẇ hym a stronge hoost of men of armys, vtterly entēdynge to subuerte ỹ towne & to dystroye ỹ more parte of ỹ people: wherof herynge, ỹ people of ỹ towne toke theyr aduyce & orderid thē as foloweth: first they sent out agayn hym dyuerse offycers of the kynges, suche as they knewe were ī his fauoure, & ordeyned them to be in a place, and there knelynge to aske grace & mercy for the towne, secōdaryly, they sent the cardynall of Albany; & thyrdely, all the collagys & men of religion, as well nūnys as other; & fourthly, they sent ỹ estudyaūtys of ỹ lawe, canon & cyuyle, and also of medycyne or physyke: all beynge set vpō eyther syde of the waye where ỹ duke shuld passe, &, knelynge vpon theyr kneys, shuld crye ẇout ceasyng "mercy, gracyous prynce, mercy." Thā after theyse were set ỹ cōsuls or rulers of the towne in gownys ẇout theyr clokis, vngyrde, euery man ẇ a corde about his necke, hauyng ẇ them the keyis of ỹ cytie; & at ỹ entre of the cytie stode ỹ women ẇ the maydens of the same, and all

[1] by the erle.

men

men chylderne which were vnder the age of. xiii. yeres, & atwene ẏ age &. vi. yeres, were set next after ẏ studyaūtis foresayd. Whā this innumerable people was thus ordryd, & eueryche taught in what wyse they shulde behaue them, vpō the. xxv[1]. day of Ianuary, about ẏ howre of. iii. the duke ẇ his people approchid ẏ towne, & beholdyng ẏ multytude & the lamentable crye, was somewhat mouyd ẇ cōpassyon, & so holdynge his waye mette ẇ the sayd cardynall, ẏ which, after cōuenyent salutacion vnto hym made, shewyd, ẏ as a legat & messynger he was sent vnto hym from pope[2] Clemēt ẏ. vii. requyryng of hym pardon for ẏ towne & people of Moūtpiller, admonestyng hym farther in ẏ sayd popys[3] behalfe, ẏ what so euer punysshemēt he dyd vnto ẏ towne, ẏ he shuld absteyne hym from ẏ shedynge of Cristen blode, & specyally of suche as he myght knowe was innocēt of ẏ dede: to which message ẏ duke gaue none answere, but toke the cardynall vpon his right hande, and so rode forth together, where euer ẏ people knelyd on eyther syde of the way, & cryed lamentably "mercy, gracious prynce, mercy;" & so passyd tyll he came where the cōsuls stode, which knelynge offerid vnto hym ẏ keyes of ẏ towne: but he, as though he regardyd thē not, cast his loke from thē, & cōmaundid ẏ senesshall of Beaucayr to receyue ẏ sayd keyes, & so passyd on tyll he cam vnto ẏ cōpany of womē, which relentyd his stony herte to see the great lamentacyon they made with theyr wofull crye; wherefore to be rydde of them, he callyd vpō his fore ryders to passe on more faster, so ẏ lastly he came to his lodgynge.

WHan the duke was comen vnto his lodgynge, anon he cōmaūdyd all the offycers of the towne, with the cōsulat or rulers of the same, vnto a place called Seynt Germayne; & the gatys of ẏ place he toke to be watchyd with men of armys; & vpō the morowe folowynge cōmaundyd all the armoure and artylery belongyng vnto ẏ towne, to be brought to a place by hym assygned, & there to be kept by his offycers. Then the cardynall came agayn vnto the duke, & brought with hym dyuerse doctours of dyuynyte & other, which made vnto hym assyduat labour for mercy to be shewyd vnto the towne, & to the inhabytauntys of the same, but all they cowde gette no graunte of hym, but that as vpon the morowe they shuld knowe the sentence that he wolde gyue vpon the towne & inhabytauntys of the same; & for that sentence myghte be well vnderstandyn of the people, cōmaūdyd that at after noone a scaffolde to be made ī the chefe place or strete of the towne, where upon ẏ morowe, beyng the. xxvii. day of Ianuary, dyuerse of ẏ dukys coūceyll beyng vpon the sayd scaffolde, & the people of the towne beynge there present, as well prysoners as other, after a longe oracion made by the dukys chaūceller, of ẏ great & heynous dede lately there done by the inhabytauntys of ẏ towne, for the whiche correccyon temporall myghte not be to greuouse, albe it that the duke at the cōmaundement of the pope[2], & requeste of his legat & cardynall there present, had mytygate or lessyd the punysshement, as after shulde well appere by declaracyon of the sentence folowynge. After which protestacyon, ẏ sentence was proclaymed as foloweth: fyrst, the comynalty of the towne for theyr rebellyon & dysobedyence agayne ẏ prynce done, shulde paye vnto the kyng. vi. score. M. frākes: a frāke is worth. ii.s. sterl[3]. & so ẏ towne shuld be chargyd ẇ. lx.M. *li.*, & ouer ẏ to pay all such costys & chargys as ẏ duke had spent by occasyō of this iournay: secōdaryly. vi.C. persones of the towne, suche as myght be tryed moost culpable in this offence, shuld suffre deth, ẏ is to witte. CC. to be hangyd with chaynys, CC. to be behedyd, (and theyr hedis to be sent vnto dyuerse good townys of Fraunce,) & the other. CC. suche as of the. vi.C. shalbe foūde moost gyltye of the begyñynge of ẏ ryot, shuld be brent, & that they & also ẏ other. CC. which shuld be hangyd shuld be caryed vnto dyuerse good townys of Fraūce, & there to haue theyr execucion to the vtter fere & terrour of all other, & all theyr goodys to be forfaytyd to the kynge: thyrdely. ii. gatys of the towne, such as the duke wolde appoynt, with ẏ wallys & towrys

Fol.C.xlvi.

[1] xv. edit. 1559. [2] the bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] the bishop of Romes. edit. 1542. 1559.

stādyng

stādyng atwene the sayd gatys, to be made playne w̄ the groūde, & the dyke of ỹ towne to be fyllyd w̄ ỹ same: fourthly, all maner of ordenaūce & abylymentys for warre belongyng to ỹ towne to be forfayted vnto ỹ kyng: fyftely, ỹ comynalty of ỹ cytie to buylde a chapell, & to endowe it w̄ so moche lāde as myght fynde. vi. preestis therein to synge for euer, & to praye for ỹ soulys of ỹ persones before slayne, & ỹ bodyes whiche they had throwē before into ỹ foule & stynkyng pyttis, ỹ consull & chefe rulers of ỹ towne shuld vpō theyr propre backys brynge them vnto the sayde chapell, & there cause them solēply to be enterryd: sixtly, ỹ all such goodis as ỹ sayd personys so slayne had, w̄in ỹ towne or ellys were, spoylyd by the sayde cytezyns, ỹ it shulde be restoryd vnto ỹ wynes or next kyñesfolkis of them so dede. Whā ỹ proclamacion of this sentence was endyd, there was an exclamacion & cryinge of mercy, & such sorowe and lamentynge made of ỹ people, ỹ the noyse therof soūdyd to the heueuys: but to brynge this tragedy to cōclusyon, fynnally such laboure was made vnto ỹ duke, aswell by exortacyon of sermons & other, that all thynges were pardonyd excepte the foūdacion of the chapell, & execucion of certeyne personys whiche were accusyd to be the occasyoners of this myschefe, & also the costis of ỹ iournaye, the which were cessyd at. xxiiii.M. frankys, or. xxiiii.C.li. sterlynges. After which ende thus made, consulat' of the towne were restoryd agayne to theyr habyte & rule, and to them was admytted all theyr former offycys & rule of ỹ towne, excepte the offyce of ballywyke. In ỹ moneth of Iuly began the inhabytauntys of Gaunt in Flaunders to rebell agayne theyr erle of newe, the cause whereof is not shewyd; but they with ayde whiche they had of Ipre, Courtray, & other townys, made a great hoste, & yode streyght vnto a towne in Flaūders callyd Dyxmewe, entendynge to haue taken it, but the erle beyng warnyd therof, w̄ ayde of Brugys & of Frāke & other, mannyd out a company agayn the other, & mette with them ī playne felde, & after a sharp skyrmysshe put them of Gaunt to flyght, & slewe of them dyuerse & toke of theym certeyne prysoners, & pursued them vnto the towne of Ipre, & layed syege to the same. Whā the heddys of the towne knewe that the erle was there in propre parsone, vnder a certeyne apoyntemēt they openyd the gatys & receuyd hym in; but many of his enemyes were fled vnto Courtray: & whan the erle had restyd hym in ỹ towne. ii. dayes, & done there some execuciō, he departyd thens & rode vnto Brugys & helde hym there. In which season ỹ other, whiche as aboue is sayd were fled vnto Courtray, fell at varyaunce within them selfe, & slewe theyr capytayne, & after fled ỹ towne & shyfted euery man for hym selfe. Thā a knyght, callyd syr Soyer of Gaūt, came vnto the towne of Courtray, & so exortyd the rulers of the towne ỹ they promysyd hym to take his parte; wherupō he gate a baner of the erlys armys in his hande, & so rydyng about ỹ towne, cryed who that wolde take ỹ erlys party, and his, lette hym folowe that baner: whom the people folowed in great nombre. And whā the erle was asserteynyd of that dede, & howe the towne of Courtray was turnyd vnto his party, anone he assemblyd of other townys, & also of that & of Ipre, so moche ỹ his hoost was estemyd at. lx.M. men, w̄ the which he spedde hym vnto Gaunt, and layed a stronge syege there aboute; but by the deth of the Frenshe kynge, whiche dyed shortly after, ỹ erle was fayne to chaunge his mynde & to remoue his syege, or ellys, as some wryters report, for strēgth of the sayde towne, whiche myght not lyghtly be gottē, & for lacke of good vpō the erlys partye to maynteyne ỹ siege. Than, in ỹ moneth of Septēbre &. xxvi. day of the same, kynge Charlys dyed at his manoyr callyd Playsance sur Marne, & was buryed by his wyfe in ỹ monastery of seynt Dēys, whan he hadde reygnyd. xv. yerys &. vi. monethes with odde dayes, leuynge after hym. iii. sonnys, Charlys whiche was kynge after hym, & Lewys that he had made erle of Valoys & after duke of Angeowe, and Phylyp erle of Poytiers.

Fol. C.xlvii. RIcharde the secōde of that name, and sone of prynce Edwarde, eldest sone of Ed-

' the consulat.

warde

warde ỹ thyrde, a chylde of ỹ age of a. xi. yeres, began his reygne ouer ỹ realme of Englande the. xxiii[1]. daye of Iuny, in the yere of our Lorde. M.CCC.lxxvii. & the. xiii. yere of the. vi. Charlys, than kynge of Fraunce. This Rycharde was borne at Burdeaux, of whose byrthe some wryters tell wōders, ỹ whiche I passe ouer, and vpō the. xv. daye of Iuly in the yere aboue sayde, he was crownyd at Westmynster, beyng the day of ỹ trāslacion of seynt Swythyn; in which tyme and season stood mayre & shryues of the cytie of Lōdon these persones folowyng.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxviii.

Andrewe Pikman.

Nicholas Brembre, grocer. Anno. i. Inicīū primi anni.

Nycholas Twyfforde.

THe which contynued so in theyr offycys, that is to saye, the shryuys tyll Myghelmasse, and the mayre tyll the Feest of Symonde and Iude, at whiche season were chosen & admytted for newe offycers,

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxix.

Iohn̄ Boseham.

Iohn̄ Phylpot, grocer. Anno. ii.

Thomas Cornwaleys.

IN the moneth of August, & begynnyng of the seconde yere of kynge Richarde, for varyaunce which was atwene ỹ lorde Latymer & syr Rafe Ferrers vpon that one partie, and Hawle & Shakeley, esquyers[2], vpō that other partye, for a prysoner takyn beyonde ỹ see[3] callyd ỹ lorde of Dene, whom the sayd esquyers helde in theyr possessyon contrary the wylles of ỹ foresayd knyghtis; for ỹ sayd cause ỹ sayde knyghtys entryd the churche of seynt Petyr[4], and there fyndynge Hawle[5] knelynge at masse, without reuerence of the sacrament or place, slewe hym in the churche at the hygh masse season, & after that other, namyd Shakeley[6], was by theyr meanys arrestyd and had to the Towre of London, where he was kept as prysoner longe after.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.

Iohn̄ Heylysdone.

Iohn̄ Hadley, grocer. Anno. iii.

Wyllyam Baret.

IN the moneth of Maye & ỹ later ende of the seconde yere of kynge Rycharde, certeyne galeys & other shyppys sent by Charlys the. vi. than kynge of Fraūce, of the which was chefe patron or capytayne a knyght named syr Olyuer de Clycō, landyd in dyuerse placys of Englande & dyd moche harme, & lastly entryd the ryuer of Thamys and so came to Grauysende, where he spoylyd the towne & brent a parte thereof, & retournyd into Fraunce with moche rychesse, as affermyth the Frenshe Cronycle. In this yere also was holdē a parlyamēt at Westmynster, in the which was graūted ỹ all men & women beyng of thage of. xiiii. yerys & aboue, shuld paye vnto the kynge iiii. *d.*; by reason whereof great grudge & murmur grewe amōge ỹ cōmons, as after shall apere. Thā with

[1] xxii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] and syr Robert Hal and Shakerley, esquyer. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] beyonde the see in Spayne. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] *The* MS. *adds* of Westminster. *The edit. of* 1542. and 1559. *say* in London. [5] the sayd syr Robert. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [6] Shakerley. edit. 1533. 1559.

that money an army was preparyd, & thereof was made chefe gouernour syr Thomas of Woodestoke erle of Cambrydge, & vncle vnto the kynge; the which with a cõpany of. vii. or. viii.M. as testyfyeth the Frenshe Cronycle, passyd the water of Sum, & in the begynnynge of August, & also begynnynge of the thyrde yere of kyng Richarde, & so came to Soysons, & passyd ỹ ryuerse of Oyse & of Marne and other, & so went before Troys and wañe it, & after lodgyd thē atwene Newtowne & Sens, & euer as they passyd the countreys other they toke great fynañcis or ellys fyred the townys as they went: & albe it ỹ the Frensshe kyng had sent agayn them an army of Frēshemen to withstande them, they lettyd them nothynge of theyr purpose; but & they had any skyrmysshys with them, the Frēshemen were put vnto ỹ worse, so that they bette them and toke of them dyuerse prysoners, & raunsomed them at theyr pleasurys. And thus, holdynge theyr iourney, passyd by the countrey of Gastynoys, & so into Brytayne, where they were ioyously receyuyd of syr Iohñ de Mountforde, duke of that prouynce, than newly comyn thyther.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxi.

Walter Doket.

Wyllyam Walworth, fysshemonger. Anno. iiii.

Wyllyam Knyghthode.

IN this mayers yere and ende of the thyrde yere of kyng Richard, towarde ỹ somer seasō, ī dyuerse places of ỹ lāde, ỹ cōmons arose sodeynly and ordeynyd to them rulers and capytaynys, & specially in Kent & Essex, the whiche namyd theyr leders Iacke Strawe, Wyl Wawe, Watte Tyler, Iacke Shepeherde, Tomme Myller, and Hobbe Carter. Theyse vnrulyd cōpany gatheryd vnto them great multytude of the cōmons, & after sped them towarde ỹ cytie of Lōdō, & assemblyd them vpō Blacke Hethe in Kent, within. iii. mylys of Lōdon, & vpō Corpus Christi day, beynge than the. xi. day of Iunii, they entryd the towre of Lōdon, and there the kynge beynge than lodgyd, toke from thens par force maister Sudberye, than archebysshop of Cauntorbury, syr Robert Halys, lorde or pryoure of Seynt Iohñs, & a whyte frere, confessoure vnto the kynge, whiche. iii. personys, with huge noyse and crye, they ladde vnto the hyll of the sayd towre & smote of theyr heddys, & whā they had so done, they returnyd into Southwerke by botis & bargys, & there slewe & robbyd all straūgers ỹ they myght fynde: & ỹ done they went to Westmynster, & toke ẅ them all maner of seyntwary men, & so came vnto ỹ duke of Lancasters place standyng ẅout ỹ Temple Barre, callyd Sauoy, & spoylyd ỹ was therin, & after set it vpō fyre & brent it; & from thens they yode vnto the hede place of Seynt Iohñs in Smythfelde, & dyspoylyd that place in lyke wyse. Thā they entryd the cytie & serchid the Temple and other innes of court, & spoylyd theyr placys & brent theyr bokys of lawe, & slewe as many men of lawe & questmongers as they myght fynde; & that done they went to Seynt Martyns ỹ Graunde, & toke with them all
Fol. Cxlviii. seyntwary men, & the prysons of Newgate, Ludgate, & of bothe Coūters, & distroyed theyr registers & bokis, & in lyke maner they dyd ẅ the prysoners of the Marshalse & Kynges Benche in Southwerke. Whā Iacke Strawe had thus done all thynge at his wyll, & sawe ỹ no resystence was made agayne, he was smytten ẅ so huge a presūpcion ỹ he thought no man his pere, & so beynge enflawmyd ẅ that presumpcion and pryde, rode vnto the Towre, where the kyngbeynge smally accōpanyed of his lordis, causyd hym to ryde about some parte of ỹ cytie, & so cōueyed hym into Smythfelde, where, in the kynges presence, he causyd a proclamaciō to be made, & dyd full small reuerēce vnto the kynge. Whiche mysordre & presumpcion whan Wyllyam Walworth, thā mayer of Lōdon, behelde, of very pure dysdayne ỹ he had of his pryde, ran to hym sodeynlye with his swerde, & woūdid hym to deth, & forthwith strake of his hede & arerid it vpō a sperys poynt, and

 therw

therw cryed "Kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde." Whan the rebellys behelde theyr capytaynys hede, anon they fledde as shepe; howe he it many were takyn, and many were slayen, & the remenaunt chasyd, ỳ the cytie & subbarbys of ỳ same was clene voydyd of theym ỳ nyght, whiche was Mōday & the. xv. day of Iunii. Whā the kynge had beholdyn the great manhode of the mayre, and assystence of his bretherne ỳ aldermen, anon, in rewarde of ỳ dede, he dubbyd the sayd Wyllyam Walworth, Nycholas Brembre, Iohn̄ Phylpot, Nycholas Twyfforde, Robert Laūdre, & Robert Gayton, aldermen, knyghtis. And in this season also, called the hurlynge tyme, the commons of Norfolke & Suffolke came vnto ỳ abbey of Bury, & there slewe one of ỳ kyngis iustycis, callyd Iohn̄ Caundysshe, & the pryour of ỳ place w̄ other, & after spoylyd and bare away moche thynge out of ỳ sayde place; but after this, aswell the one as the other of theyse rebellys, were takyn in dyuerse & sundry placis & put in execucion, by. x. by. xii. by. xv. &. xx. so that one of theym accusyd the other to ỳ dystruccion of a great noumbre of them.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxii.

Iohn̄ Rote.

Iohn̄ Northampton[1]. Anno. v.

Iohn̄ Hynde.

IN this mayers yere, & moneth of Aprell, landyd in Kent dame Anne, the doughter of Charlys the. iiii. late emperoure of Almayne, latelye dede, & syster vnto Wensyslaus, at ỳ day emperoure; the which of the mayer and cytezyns of London was honorably mette vpon Blacke Heth, & conueyed with great tryumphe vnto Westmynster the. viii. daye of the moneth of Maye, & shortlye after there solemply maryed vnto kynge Rycharde: and about the same season, or after some wryters, in the later ende of Iunii was an erthquaue in Englande, that the lyke thereof was neuer seen in Englande before that daye nor sen.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxiii.

Adam Bame.

Iohn̄ Northampton. Anno. vi.

Iohn̄ Sely.

THis yere mayster Henry Spencer, bysshop of Norwyche, w̄ a great power of spirituell men & other, croysyd[2] by ỳ cōmaūdemēt of ỳ pope[3], than Clement the. vii., endurynge the scisme before towchyd in ỳ last chapitre of Charlys the. vi. than kynge of Fraūce. This sayd pope[3] gaue this auctoryte to the sayd bysshop to make warre vpon the kynge of Spayne, as some wryters haue, for so moche as he, contrary the sayde popis[4] cōmaūdement, with helde certeyne possessyons belongynge of ryght vnto ỳ duke of Lancaster, syr Iohn̄ of Gaunt, & specyally vnto dame Cōstaūce his wyfe. In perfourmaūce of which acte, the sayd bysshop entrynge the coūtrey of Flaūders fande there the Flemynges with dyuerse myscreaūtys, such as the foresayde kynge of the coūtrey of Spayne hadde thyther sent, makynge resystence agayn hym; wherfore he made to them sharpe warre & wanne vpon them certeyn townys, as Grauenynge, Burburgth, & Dūkyrke, & wan great & ryche pyllage, so ỳ he & his sowdyours stuffed & freyght w̄ it, as testyfyeth Policronycon. xli[5]. shyppis. But soone after the Flemynges assemblyd w̄ suche strength ỳ about Dunkyrke they gaue vnto hym such assaute, ỳ he was cōstrayned to geue backe;

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Draper. [2] was croysed. edit. 1559. [3] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] Bishop of Romes. edit. 1542. [5] lj. MS.

& for the sayd shyppis & goodys shuld not come vnto ŷ possessyon of his enemyes, he set theym on fyre wiñ ŷ hauyn, & so was wasted both shyppys & goodys : & albe it that after this mysse happe he recouered his strēgthe, & layed syege vnto ŷ towne of Ipre, & wrought ŷ Flemynges moche care & trowble. Shortlye after suche sykenessys fell amonge his people, as the flyxe and other, ŷ his sowdyours dyed of them great noumbre ; for the which he was cōpellyd to leue his iourney & to retourne into Englonde. In this yere also was a batayll or featys of armys done in the kynges palays of Westmynster atwene one callyd Garton, appellaunt, and syr Iohñ Ansley, knyght, defēdaūt, of which fyght at lengthe the knyght was vyctor, & causyd his enemye to yelde hym ; for the which the sayd Garton was from ŷ place drawen vnto Tyburne, & there hāgyd for his false accusasyon & surmyse.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxiii.

Symonde Wynchecombe.

Nycholas Brembre, grocer. Anno. vii.

Iohñ More.

In this yere ....

Fol. Cxlix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxv.

Nycholas Exton.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno. viii.

Iohñ Frenshe.

THis yere kynge Rycharde holdynge his Cristemasse at Elthā, thyder cam vnto hym the kyng of Ermony, which was chasyd out of his lande by ŷ infydelys & Turkys, & requyryd ayde of the kynge to be restoryd vnto his domynyon. The kynge festyd & comfortyd hym accordynge to his honour, & after coūceyll takyn with his lordys concernyng ŷ mater, he gaue vnto hym great sumes of money & other ryche guyftys, with the whiche, after he had taryed in Englonde vpon. ii. monethes, he departyd with glade coūtenaunce : & soone after Ester the kynge, with a great army, yode towarde Scotlande ; but whan he drewe nere vnto the borders, such meanys were sought by the Scottys that a peace was concludyd atwene both realmys for a certeyne tyme. After whiche cōclusyon so takyn, the kyng returnyd vnto Yorke, & there restyd hym a season : in which tyme varyaūce fell atwene Iohñ Holande, brother to the erle of Kent, & the erlys sone of Stafforde, by reason of whiche varyaunce, in conclusyon, the sayde sone of the erle was slayne of the hande of the same syr Iohñ Holāde ; for the which dede the kynge was greuouslye amoued, & departyd shortly after ẇ his company towarde London.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxvi.

Iohñ Organ[r].

Nycolas Brembre, grocer. Anno. ix.

Iohñ Chyrchman.

THis yere kynge Rycharde assemblyd at Westmynster his hyghe court of parlyament, duryng ŷ which, amōge other many actys in the same counceyll cōcludyd, he creatyd

[r] Oran. edit. 1542. 1559.

ii. dukys,

ii. dukys, a marquys, and. v. erlys ; of the which, first syr Edmunde of Langley, the kynges vncle & erle of Cambrydge, was creatyd duke of Yorke ; syr Thomas of Woodstoke his other vncle, erle of Buckyngeham, was creat duke of Gloucestyr ; syr Lyonell Vere, that was erle of Oxynforde, was made marquys of Denelyn ; syr Henry Bolyngbrooke, sone and heyre of Iohñ of Gaunt, duke of Lācastre, was made erle of Derby ; syr Edwarde, sone & heyre vnto the duke of Yorke, was made erle of Rutlande ; syr Iohñ Holande, brother to ỹ erle of Kent, was made erle of Huntyngdone ; syr Thomas Monbray[1] was made erle of Notyngham & marshall of Englande ; and syr Mychaell de la Poole was made erle of Suffolke, and chaũceller of Englande ; and by auctoryte of the same parliament syr Roger Mortymer, erle of the Marche, & sone and heyre vnto syr Edmũde Mortymer, (and of dame Phylyp eldest doughter & heyer vnto syr Lyonell, the seconde sone of Edwarde the thyrde,) was soone after proclaymyd heyer paraunt vnto ỹ crowne of Englonde ; the which syr Roger shortly after saylyd into Irelande, there to pacyfye his lordeshyp of Wulstyr, whiche he was lorde of by his foresayde mother : but whyle he was there occupyed abowte the same, the wylde Irysshe came vpon hym in noũbre, & slewe hym and moche of his cõpany. This syr Roger had issu Edmũde, & Roger, Anne, Alys, and Elyanoure that was made a nunne ; the. ii. forcsayd sonnys dyed wout issu, and Anne the eldest doughter was maryed to Rycharde erle of Cãbrydge, whiche Rycharde was sone vnto syr Edmũde of Langley, before namyd ; the which Richarde had issue by the sayde Anne, Isabell ladye Bowchier, Richarde that after was duke of Yorke, and father to kynge Edwarde the. iiii. which sayd Rycharde, erle of Cãbrydge, was put to deth by Henry the. v. as after shall appere. In this yere also syr Henry Bolyngbrooke, erle of Derby, maryed the countesse doughter of Herforde, by whom he was lorde of that coũtrey, & by hyr he had issu Hẽry, that after hym was kyng, Blaunch duche[2] of Barre, & Phylyp that was weddyd to the kyng of Denmarke, also Thomas duke of Clarence, Iohñ duke of Bedforde, and Humfrey duke of Gloucetyr. [And ouer this he hadde of bast, whiche after were made legyttymat, by dame Katheryne Swynforde. iii. sonnys, Iohñ, whiche was after duke of Somerset, Thomas erle of Huntyngedone, or duke of Exetyr, & Henry, which was callyd ỹ ryche cardynall, theyse were namyd Beawforde, & the other first sonys, after moste wryters, were namyd Plantagenettys, which sayde dame Katheryne Swynforde was after made countesse of Herforde ; & for that name of Swynforde he, ỹ is to meane syr Henry of Derby, gaue the S in his colers or lyuereys bothe to knyghtys and esquyers.][3]

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxvii.

Wyllyam Stondon.

Nycholas Exton, goldsmyth. Anno. x.

Wyllyam Moore.

IN this. x. yere the erle of Arundell was sent into ỹ duchye of Guyan for to strengthe such soudyours as the kynge at that tyme had in those parties, or after some wryters, to scowre the see of rouers & enemyes ; the whiche erle, in kepynge his course or passage, encountryd a myghty flote of Flemynges laden with Rochell wyne, and set vpon them and distressyd them and theyr shyppys, & so brought them into dyuerse portys of Englonde : by reason whereof the sayde wyne was so plenteuouse in Englonde, that a tunne therof was solde for a marke, &. xx.*s.* the choyse, & amonge other in that flote was taken the admyrall of Flaunders, whiche remaynyd here longe after as prysoner.

[1] Moũbray. MS. [2] duchesse. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. of 1533. 1542. 1559.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Wyllyam Venour.

Nycholas Exton, goldsmyth. Anno. xi.

Hugh Fostalfe.

THis. xi. yere of kyng Richarde, syr Thomas of Wodstocke duke of Gloucetyr, ỹ erle of Arũdell, ẅ the erlys of Warwyke, of Derby, & of Notynghã, cõsyderynge howe the kynge & his lãde was mysseladde by a fewe personys aboute ỹ kyng, entendynge reformacion of the same, assemblyd them to haue a coũceyll at Radecok[1] brydge, & after arreryd great people, and so with a strõge power came to London & there causyd the kyng to call a parlyamẽt. Wherof herynge, maister Alexhander Neuyle, than archebysshop of Yorke, syr Lyonell Vere marquys of Deuelyn, & syr Mychaell de la Poole chaunceller & erle of Suffolke, feryng punysshement fled the lande, & so dyed in straunge countreys. Thã the kyng by coũceyll of the othe of[2] aboue named lordys durynge ỹ parlyamẽt, causyd to be takyn syr Robert Treuylyan chefe iustyce of Englãde, syr Nycholas Brẽbre late mayer of the cytie of London, syr Iohñ Salysbury knyght of housholde, syr Iohñ Beawchamp stewarde also of the kynges house, syr Symonde of Beuerlay[3] knyght, syr Iamys Bernes, & syr Robert Belknap, knyghtis, & a sergeaunt of armys callyd Iohñ Vske; the which, by auctoryte of ỹ sayd parlyament, were conuycte of treason, & for ỹ same put to execuciõ at Tybourne, and at the Towrehyll: & Iohñ Holte, Iohñ Locton, Rycharde Gray, Wyllyam Burgth, & Robert Fulthorpe, iustis, with the other foresayd lordys, which as before is sayde voydyd the lãde, & by auctoryte of the sayd court of parlyament, were banysshed & exylyd the lande for euer.

Fol. C.i.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxix.

Thomas Austeyne.

Syr Nycholas Twyfforde, goldsmyth. Anno. xii.

Adam Cathyll.

IN the. xii. yere & moneth of Nouember, yet durynge the parlyament, was executyd in Smythfeelde of Lõdon a marciall iustis & tournemẽt, where as all such persones as came in vpõ the kynges party, theyr armour & apparayle was garnysshyd with whyte hertys & crownys of golde about theyr neckys; and of ỹ sorte were. xxiiii., with. xxiiii. ladyes also apparaylyd as aboue is sayd, lad ẅ. xxiiii. cheynys of golde the horses of them, and so cõueyed them thorough the cytie vnto Smythfeelde from the Towre of London, where ỹ kyng, the quene, & many other great astatys beyng present, after proclamacions by the herowdys made, many goodly and marcyall actys of warre were there put in vre, to the great recreacion & comfort of the kynge and quene, & all other beholders of ỹ same. To this disporte came many straungers, amonge the whiche the erle of Seynpoule, the lorde Ostreuaunt sone & heyre vnto the duke of Holande, & a yonger sone of the erle of Ostryche were greatly cõmẽdyd: and whan this iustys had contynued by sundry tymes by the space of. xxiiii. dayes, to the great comfort & recreacion of many yonge & lusty bachyllers, desyrous to wynne worshyp, & to ỹ kynges great honoure, that by all that season kepte open housholde for all honest comers, it was fynysshyd, and the straũgers retournyd to theyr coũtreys with many ryche gyftys.

[1] Radecot. MS. [2] the other. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] syr Symonde Burley. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Anno.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxix. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.x.

Iohñ Walcot.

Wyllyam Venour, grocer. Anno. xiii.

Iohñ Loueney.

IN this. xiii. yere of kynge Rycharde, an esquyer of the prouynce of Nauerne by Fraunce accusyd an Englysshe esquyer, called Iohñ Welshe[1], of certeyn poyntys of treason, for the tryall wherof a day of fyght was atwene theym takyn, to be foughten in the kynges palays at Westmynster, where eyther of them kept his daye and fought there a stroge fyght: but in the ende Iohñ Welshe was vyctoure, & cõstraynyd ỹ other to yelde hym, where after he was dispoylyd of his armoure, and drawen to Tyburne, & there hãged for his vntrouthe.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.x. Anno Domini. M.CCC. lxxx.xi.

Iohñ Fraunces.

Adam Bamme[2]. Anno. xiiii.

Thomas Vyuent.

IN this. xiiii. yere of kyng Richarde, syr Iohñ of Gaũt, duke of Lancaster, with a goodlye company of men of armys, saylyd into Spayne to clayme suche landys as he there shuld haue in ỹ right of dame Costaũce his wyfe, which was ỹ doughter of Petyr, rightfull kynge of Spayne, as in ỹ. xl. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrde is more playnly declared. Whan the sayde duke was vpõ ỹ other syde of the see, there came vnto hym the kynge of Portyngale with a stronge army, & so enteryd the terrytory of Spayne; but whether it were of the Englysshemen longe or of the Portyngaleys, moche harme was done to the Spaynyardys in robbynge & pyllynge of the coũtrey, which was cause of grudge atwene the kynge of Portyngale & the duke, and causyd many Spaynyardys, whiche ought to theym good wyll, to wdrawe & departe from them; in reformacion of which ille certeyne personys, as well Englysshe as Portyngaleys, that were founde gyltye of such robbery, were put vnto deth, by meane whereof the other feryd so ỹ where by that mean the kynge and the duke were before put to great afterdeale, by reason of reformacion of that ille, they gat dayly vpon theyr enemyes, so that in processe of tyme folowynge, the kynge of Spayne was dryuen of necessyte to treate with the duke of a peace & concorde. Of the which peace, as witnessyth Polycronycon in his laste booke & vii. Chapyter, the condycyon was, that, firste, for a fynall concorde, the kynge of Spayne shuld mary the dukys eldest doughter namyd Constaunce, and that done he shuld geue vnto the duke in recompẽsacion of his costys, so many wedgys of golde as shulde charge or lade. viii. charettis; and ouer that, yerely, durynge the lyues of ỹ sayd duke and his wyfe, he shulde, at his propre coste & charge, delyuer to the dukys assygneys. x. M. marke of golde within the towne of Bayon: and after this peace was stablysshed and sureties takyn for the perfourmaũce of the same, the duke departyd with the kynge of Portyngale, to whome shortlye after he maryed his seconde doughter namyd dame Anne. In this yere also for cruell warre whiche ỹ Turkys made agayne the Ianueys of[3] men of Icane, they requyred ayde of the kynges of Englande and Fraunce; for which cause out of Englonde was sent a noble warryour callyd erle of Alby, w. ii.M. of archers, and out of Fraunce ỹ duke of Burbon and the erle of Ewe with. xv. C. sperys, the which kept theyr iourney tyll they came vnto a cytie in Barbary namyd Thunys, & sometyme belõgynge to the sayd Ianuays, where the sayd Englysshe and Frenshemen bare them so manfully with the ayde

[1] Walsh. MS. [2] *The* MS. *adds* Goldsmith. [3] or.

of

of the Ianuayes, that in processe of tyme they wanne the sayd cytie from the Turkys, and put the Ianuays agayne in possessyon therof, and toke of them many prysoners, the which were exchaungyd for Cristen prysoners before takyn, & ouer that forsyd the sayd Sarazyns to velde vnto the Ianuayes. x. M. ducatys of golde for confyrmacion of a peace for a
Fol. C.li. certeyne tyme. But the Frenshe Cronycle sayth that for so moche as the duke of Burbon had vnderstandynge that ỹ duke of Lancaster made warre vpon kynge Iohñ of Spayne, he therefore lefte this iourney & aydyd hym agayne the sayd duke of Lancaster, to his lytle honour. But how so euer it was, many of the Englysshmen were lefte' ī those coũtreys by reason of the flyxe and other sykenessys. Also Antonyus[2] sayeth that ỹ Sarazyns at this iourney were not dispossessyd of ỹ cytie of Thunys; but for a trewys to be had for. ii. yerys they grauntyd vnto the Cristen men a certeyn sũme of money and restytucyon of many Crysten prysoners.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xii.

Iohñ Chadworth.

Iohñ Heende, draper. Anno. xv.

Henry Vamere.

IN this. xv. yere of kynge Richarde, he kepynge his Crystmas at his manour of Woodstocke, the erle of Penbrooke beynge yong of age was desirouse to lerne to iuste, & requyred a knyght named syr Iohñ Seynt Iohñ to renne with hym certeyne coursys; at whose requeste the sayde knyght ranne with hym in Woostoke Parke certeyne coursys, ī the whiche, were it with stroke or other myshap, the sayde erle receyuyd there his
An horse lofe taken from a bakers seruaunt. dethys wounde and dyed shortly after. In this yere also and moneth of Iunii, a bakers man beryng a basket full of horse brede to serue his masters customers in Flete Strete, whan he came for agayne the bysshop of Salesburyes place standynge in Salysbury aley, a seruañt of the bisshoppis start vnto the basket and toke out one of the louys; and for the baker wolde agayn haue recoueryd his horse lofe, the bisshoppis seruaunte with his dagger brake the bakers hede. Than came the inhabytauntys of the strete, & wolde haue broughte the yoman vnto warde for brekynge of ỹ kynges peace; but he was rescowed by his felowes, & so hadde vnto the bysshoppys palays, which ỹ day stoode tresourer of Englonde. For this rescous the people beyng in a fury, in great multytude gatheryd about ỹ palays, and wolde haue entryd par force to haue fet out ỹ yomā, agayn whom the bysshoppys seruauntys made resystence, so that the rumour grewe more and more, and the people of the cytie, aswell suche as were of ille dysposycion as other, encreasid into a great noũbre. Fame of this doyng than sprange to the mayer, whiche in all haste with dyuerse aldermen & the sheryues, sped hym thyther to se the peace kepte, & dyd that he cowde to withdrawe the people; but after the mayer and the offycers of the cytie were comyn thyder, the cõmons out of all partyes of ỹ cytie drewe thyder in moche more multytude than they had before, so ỹ the more they were in noũbre ỹ worse they were to ruie: in so moche, ỹ they wolde not be satysfyed but they myght haue the yoman delyueryd, whose name was Walter Romayne, and for to brynge about theyr foly they made many assawtys at the gatis of ỹ sayd palays, the bysshop hymselfe beinge then at Wyndesore. Lastlye, after many showtis & lyftis at the gatis made by dyscrescion of ỹ mayer & aldremen, w̄ other discrete comoners of the cytie, the people was mynysshed and sent agayn euery man to his dwellynge, & all was sette in quyet and reste. Whan worde of this came vnto ỹ bysshop, ī moch worse maner than the thynge was in dede, he, geuynge lyght credẽce without examynacyon made in the mater, associat vnto hym master Arũdell, than archbysshop of Yorke and chaunceler of Englonde, and so greuously enfourmyd

[1] loste. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] Antoninus.

the

the kyng, that he toke agayne the cytie ryght greuouse displeasure, so that in all haste the mayer was sent fore to the kynge; at whose commynge was layed vnto his charge great and heynous maters, that he none other wyse rulyd the cytie, but sufferyd the cytezyns to make suche assawtys vpon the kynges hed offycers, to the kynges great dyshonour, & ieopardy of such great treasoure as he thā had of the kynges in his custody & kepynge, and after brought vnto the kynges presence, of whom, not withstādynge his reasonable excuse before made, he was of the kynge ryght sore blamyd & greuouslye sayde vnto. Than was the mayre and the sheryues discharged of the rule of the cytie, and the lybertyes of the same seasyd into the kynges handys, & a knyght of the court callyd syr Edwarde Dalyngryge, a good man & fauourable to the cytezyns, was made gouernoure of the cytie the. xxi. daye of Iunii, & contynued in that offyce to the fyrste daye of Iulii nexte ensuynge; at whiche day, beynge in the begynnynge of the kynges. xvi. yere of his reygne, he was dyschargyd, & syr Baldewyn Radyngeton, knyght, put in his rome, & so contynued tyll the feest of Symonde & Iude folowynge. And for the more dyspleasure of the cytezyns, all plees and sutys kepte before tyme in Westmynster Hall, were than remouyd and holden at Yorke, to the great noyaūce of all ȳ lāde, which so contynued tyll Crystmas; and in this mayers yere also was a great trāslacion of bysshoppys. This dyspleasure thus hangynge towarde ȳ cytie, the cytezyns made cōtynuell labour vnto the kynges grace, by meanys of ȳ quene & of doctour Grauysende, than bisshop of London, which ought theyr especiall fauours vnto ȳ cyte; by whose meanys the cytezyns were restoryd vnto theyr lybertyes, & had lycence to chose of themselfe a mayer &. ii. sheryues, so that vpō seynt Mathewis day folowinge, they chase for sheryues Gylbert Manyfolde or Manfelde, & Thomas Newyngeton; & vpon seynt Edwardis day, kynge & confessoure, they chase for theyr mayer Wyllyam Stondon, grocer, whiche by the lyeutenaunt of the towre were at that tyme admyttyd & sworne; but yet the kynges dyspleasure was not reconcylyd, nor the cytezyns admyttyd vnto his grace and fauour.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xiii.

Gylbert Manfeylde.

Wyllyam Stondon, grocer. Anno. xvi.

Thomas Newyngton.

IN this mayers yere, and xvi. yere of kyng Richarde, this newe mayer, with ȳ worthyest men of the cytie, made assyduat & daylye meanys vnto the kynges grace for to haue his moost bounteuouse pardon and his especiall fauoure vnto the cytie, the which, at lengthe, by meanys of such frēdys as they purchasyd about ȳ kyng, & specially by laboure of ȳ good quene Anne, and ȳ forenamyd bysshop of Lōdon, they were put in good cōforte, vpō theyr demeanoure & submyssyon, at the kynges cōmynge to Lōdō. Vpō whiche cōforte ȳ cytezyns made royall & custodyous[1] purueyaūce to receyue ȳ kynge in theyr best maner, and hauyng monysyon that the kynge entendyd to come vnto his palays of Westmynster, apparaylyd theym in one lyuerey, and to the noūbre of. iiii. C. horsemen well be seen, mette with hym vpon the Heth on this halfe his manour of Shene, where in moste lowlye wyse, accordynge to theyr duties, they submyttyd theym vnto his grace, besechynge hym of his specyall grace & pardon, in all suche thynges as they before tymes had offendyd agayne his hyghnesse; and to ȳ entent that his grace myght see the cōformyte of all his other subiectis, the recorder made instaūce to hym that he wolde of his great bounte take so great peyne vpō hym as to ryde thoroughe his chaumber of Lōdon, the which request he graciously acceptyd, & so helde on his iourney tyll he came at London brydge, where he was presentyd with. ii. fayre stedys, trappyd in ryche cloth of golde, *Fol. CJii.*

[1] costious.

partyd of redde and whyte, the which present he thankefully receyuyd, & after helde on his way tyll he came at the standarde in Chepe, the cytezyns of the cytie stadyng vpō eyther syde of the stretys in theyr lyuereys, & cryinge "kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde," and at theyr backys ỹ wyndowys & wallys hāgyd w all ryche tapettys & clothys of arasse, ī moost goodlye & shewynge wyse; & at the sayd standarde in Chepe was ordeynyd a somptuouse stage, ī ỹ which were set dyuerse personagys in ryche apparell, amonge the whiche an aungell was ordeynyd, which set a ryche crowne of golde, garnysshyd with stone & perle, vpon the kynges hede as he passyd by; & that done he rode to Pawlys, & there offeryd, and so rode vnto Westmynster, where the mayer and his cōpany takynge theyr leue, returnyd vnto Lōdon. Vpon the morowe, which was the. xv. day of the moneth of the sayde mayer & his bretherne yode vnto Westmynster, and presentyd there the kyng with. ii. guylt basyns, and in them. ii.M. nobles of golde, besechyng hym in moste humble wyse to be good & gracyouse lorde vnto ỹ cytie, ỹ which he acceptyd ryght fauourablye, & gaue vnto them many comfortable wordys, and the thyrde daye folowynge they receyued a newe confyrmacion of all theyr olde fraunchyses and lybertyes; wherefore, by counceyll of theyr frendys, they ordeyned an auctor[1] table of syluer & ouer guylte, and therin imagery grauen & enamelyd moste curyouslye, of the story of seynt Edwarde, the which was valuyd at a. M. marke, & presentyd that also, & gaue it vnto the kynge, ỹ which he shortly after offerid to the shryne of seynt Edwarde within ỹ Abbay, [where yet it standys at this daye.][2] And for the great zele & loue which the fore sayd bysshop of London ought vnto the cytye, and that by his meanys theyr lybertyes were agayn restoryd, they therfore, of theyr owne goodly dysposyciō, after his decease, accustomyd theym, & yet at this day done, to goo yerely vpō theyse feest full dayes folowynge, that is to say, first, the morowe after Symonde and Iude, which day ỹ mayer takyth his charge at Westmynster, to Pawlys, & there to saye in ỹ west ende of ỹ churche, where he lyeth grauen (De profundys) for his soule & all Crysten; and ī lyke maner vppon Alhalowen daye, Cristemasse day and. ii. the next dayes folowyng, Newe yerys day, Twelfe day & Candelmasse day, with also ỹ morowe after Myghelmasse day, vpon the whiche the sheryues yerelye taken theyr charge at Westmynster; all which. ix. dayes not all onely the mayer and his bretherne vse this progresse and kepe this[3] obsequy, but also all the craftys of the cytie in theyr lyuereys vse the same yerely. And whan ỹ kyng had withdrawē, as aboue is sayd, his dyspleasure from the cytie, than, at Hyllarye terme, folowynge the feest of Crystmas, all the kynges courtys and plees of the crowne, with other, retournyd from Yorke to Westmynster.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xiiii.

Drewe Barentyne.

Iohn Hadley, grocer. Anno. xvii.

Richarde Whytyngeton.

IN this mayers begynnynge, &. xvii. yere of kyng Richarde, that is to meane the moneth of Nouembre, certeyn gētylmen of Scotlande entendynge to wynne honoure, chalengyd certeyne poyntys[4] of armys: as first the lorde Moryf chalengyd the erle of Notyngham & marshall of Englande, syr Wyllyam Darell knyght [chalengyd syr Peter Courtnaye knyght,][5] & Cokborne esquyer chalengyd syr Nycholas Hawberke knyght, which featis of armys were done in Smythfelde of London; but Marse was so frendelye vnto the Englysshemen, that ỹ honoure of ỹ iourney went w them, in somoche ỹ the erle marshall ouerthrewe his appellaūt, & so brusyd hym, ỹ in his returne towarde Scotlande he dyed at Yorke, & syr Wyllyam Darell refusyd his appellant, or they had ronne theyr full

[1] Avtir. MS. Aulter. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] his. edit. 1542. 1559. [4] chalengyd certayn gentillmen of Engelaud of certayn pweynts. [5] *Omitted in the* edit. 1559.

coursys, & the thyrde of them, ỹ is Cocborne, was throwen at ỹ secõde copynge to grõde horse & man. And vpon the. vii. daye of Iunii folowynge, dyed ỹ graciouse woman quene Anne, & lyeth now buryed at Westmynster by hir lorde kynge Rycharde, vpon the sowthsyde of seynt Edwardys shryne, to whose soule, and all cristẽ, oure Lord be mercyfull. And this yere in the moneth of Septembre, as witnessyth the Frẽshe Cronycle, by meanys of the erle of Derby & other, which then were in Fraunce for the kynge of Englondys partye, & the duke of Burbon & the erle of Ewe vpon the Frenshe partye, with other, a trewys was concluded at Seynt Omers for. iiii. yeres; but notwitstandynge ỹ peace, the Frenshemen & Englysshemen ranne together sundry tymes, whan the one espyed to haue any auauntage vpon that other.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xiiii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xv.

Wyllyam Brampton.

Iohn Frenshe, mercer. Anno. xviii.

Thomas Knollys.

THis. xviii. yere of kyng Rycharde, he, shortly after Cristmas, with a stronge army, saylyd into Irelonde, the which iourney was more to his charge than honoure; for the maner wherof, syn it soundyd to honoure[1] of the prynce, myne auctor therefore lyste not in his boke to make any longe processe of the mater. In this yere also, or about this tyme, began ỹ heresy of Iohn Wyclyffe to sprynge in Englande, the which was greatly auauncid by meane of the scysme in the Churche hangyng at those dayes atwene two popys[2] syttynge at onys, the whiche began, as before is shewyd, in the. xxiiii[3]. yere of Charlys the. vi. than kynge of Fraunce, Vrban the. vi. and Clement the. vi., and contynued vnder Bonyface the. ix. and Benet the. xiii. Of which erronyouse opynyons of ỹ sayd heresy, who so is desyrouse to see the contentis of thẽ, let hym serche Cronyca Cronycarũ, & there he shall see them brefely sette out. In this yere also was wonderfull tempest of wynde by the space of Iuly, August, and specially Septembre, by vyolence wherof, in sundry placys of this lande, great and wonderfull hurte was done bothe of churchys and housys[4]. *Fol. CJiii.*

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xv. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xvi.

Roger Elys.

Wyllyam More, vyntener. Anno. xix.

Wyllyam Sherynghan.

IN the begynnynge of this mayers yere, &. xix. yere of kynge Rycharde, &. xviii. daye of Nouẽbre, as affermyth the Frẽshe Cronycle, kynge Rycharde beyng thã at Calays, spowsyd or toke to wyfe, ẁin the church of seynt Nycholas, Isabell the doughter of Charlis ỹ. vi. thã kyng of Fraũce, whiche lady Isabell, as witnessyth the sayd Frẽshe story, at the day of hyr mariage was ẁin. viii. yerys of age, & as it is regestrid ĩ one of the bokis of Guyldehall of Lõdon, ỹ Frẽshe kyng in propre persone came downe ẁ a goodly cõpanye of lordys & knyghtis vnto a towne callyd Arde, whiche stãdyth vpõ ỹ vtter border of Picardy, where, ẁin his owne domynyon, a ryche & sumptuouse pauylyon was pyght; & in lyke maner a lytle beyonde Guynys, ẁin ỹ Englysshe pale, was another lyke pauylyon pyght for kyng Rycharde, so ỹ atwene ỹ. ii. sayde pauylyons was a distaũce of. lxx. pace, & in ỹ mydway atwene both was ordeynyd the. iii. pauylyon, at ỹ which bothe kynges cõmynge frome eyther of theyr tentis sudry tymes there mette, & had cõmunycaciõ eyther ẁ other, the weyes or dystaũce atwene sette ẁ certeyn personys

[1] no honour. [2] Byshoppes of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] xiiij. MS. [4] *Here the* edit. *of* 1533. 1542. & 1559. *add* "Thys yere dyed Constance second wyfe to Iohn duke of Lãcastre, and lyeth buryed at Leycester."

apoyntyd stādyng ī arme. ii. &. ii., ỹ one syde beynge set ẅ Englysshemen, & that other ẅ Frenshe; & a certeyne dystaūce from eyther of the. ii. first sayd pauylyons, stoode bothe hoostys of bothe pryncys, or such companyes as before eyther of them was appoyntid to bryng. Here if I shuld brynge ī the dyuerse metynges of the sayd pryncys, & the curyouse seruycys ỹ eyther causyd other to be fed & seruyd ẅ, within eyther of theyr tentys, or of theyr dalyaunce or passe tymes cōtynuyng the season of theyr metynges, & the dyuersyte of ỹ manyfolde spycis & wynys which there was mynystryd at ỹ sayd season; ẅ also ỹ ryche apparell of the sayde pauylyons, & cupbordys garnysshyd with plate & ryche iuellis, it wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme; but who ỹ is desyrous to knowe or here of the cyrcūstaūce of all the premyssys, let hym rede the werke of maister Iohn Froysarde made in Frenshe, and there he shall see euery thynge towchyd in an ordre. And here I shall shortly towche the gyftys ỹ were geuen of eyther of the pryncys & of theyr lordys: & first kyng Rycharde gaue vnto the Frenshe kyng an hanap or basyn of golde, ẅ an ewir to the same; thā agaynwarde ỹ Frenshe kynge gaue vnto hym. iii. stādyng cuppys of golde, ẅ couers garnysshyd ẅ perle & stone, & a shyppe of golde sette vpon a bere, rychelye garnysshyd with perle & stone. Thā at theyr seconde metynge kynge Rycharde gaue vnto hym an owche sette with so fyne stonys, ỹ it was valued at. v.C. marke sterl', where agayn ỹ Frēshe kyng gaue vnto hym. ii. flaggoñys of golde, a tablet of golde, and therin an image of seynt Mychaell rychelye garnysshyd; also a tablet of golde with a crucyfyxe therein well & rychely dyght; also a tablet of golde ẅ an image of the Tryuyte rychely sette' ẅ perle & stone; also a tablet of golde with an image of seynt George in lyke wyse sette with perle & stone; which all were valuyd at the sume of. xv.C. marke. Thā kyng Rycharde seynge the boūte of the Frenshe kynge, gaue to hym a bawderyke or coler of golde, sette ẅ great dyamantys, rubyes & balessys, beynge valued at. v.M. marke, the whiche for the preciosyte thereof, that it was of such an excellency and fynesse of stuffe, the Frensshe kyng therfore ware it about his necke, as often as the kyng and he mette together; than the Frenshe kyng gaue vnto hym an owche, [a] spyce plate of golde of great weyght, & valued at. MM. marke. Many were the ryche guyftes ỹ were receyuyd of lordis & ladyes of both pryncis, amonge the which specyally are notyd. iii. gyftys whiche kynge Rycharde gaue vnto the duke of Orleaunce, for the which he receyuyd agayne of the duke trebyll the value; for where his were valued at a M. marke, the dukys were valued at. iii.M. marke. Fynallye, whan the sayde pryncys had thus eyther solacyd with other, and concludyd all maters concernynge ỹ aboue sayd maryage, ỹ Frēshe kyng delyueryd vnto kyng Rycharde dame Isabell his doughter, sayinge theyse wordys folowynge: "ryght dere beloued sone, I delyuer here to you the creature ỹ I moost loue in this worlde nexte my wyfe & my sone, besechynge ỹ Father in heuyn ỹ it may be to his pleasure, & of ỹ weale of you & your realme, & that the amyte atwene ỹ. ii. realmys, ī auoydynge of effusyon of Cristen mennys blode, may be kepte inuyolet for the terme atwene vs cōcludid;" which terme was. xxx. wynter, as expressyth ỹ Frēshe Cronycle. After which wordis, ẅ many thankys gyuen vpō eyther partyes, preparacion was made of departyng; and after kynge Rycharde had conueyed ỹ Frenshe kynge towarde Arde, he toke his leue & retourned vnto his wyfe, the whiche was immediatlye ẅ great honoure cōueyed vnto Calays, & there after to the kynge [b] owsyd, as before to you I haue shewyd. After the which solempnysacion ẅ all honoure endyd, the kyng ẅ his yonge wyfe toke shyppyng, & so ẅin short whyle lādyd at Douer, & from thens sped hym towarde Lōdon; whereof the cytezyns beynge warnyd, made oute a certeyn horsemen well appoyntyd in one lyuerey of coloure, ẅ a conysaunce browderyd vpon theyr sleuys, wherby euery felysshyp was knowen from other, ỹ which, ẅ the mayer & his bretherne clothed ī scarlet, met ỹ kyng & the quene vpō ỹ Blacke Heth, & after due salutacion & reuerent welcomys vnto them made, by ỹ mouth of the recorder, ỹ sayd

[a] frette. MS. [b] and a. MS.

cytezyns

cytezyns cõueyed the kyng vpõ his wey tyll he came to Newingeton, where ỹ kynge cõmaũdyd the mayer w̃ his cõpany to retourne to ỹ citie, for he w̃ his lordys & ladyes was appoyntid ỹ nyght to lye at Kenyngtõ. It was not longe after but that she was from Kenyngtõ brought w̃ great pompe vnto the Towre of Lõdõ; at whiche season was so exceedyng preee at Lõdon brydge, ỹ by reason therof certeyn personys were thruste to deth, amonge the which the pryour of Typtre, a place in Essex, was one; & vpõ ỹ morowe folowinge, she was cõueyed throughe ỹ cytie, w̃ all honour ỹ myght be deuysyd, vnto Westmynster, & there crownyd quene, vpon the Sondaye, beynge thã the. viii. day of Ianuarii. In ỹ somer folowyng the kyng, by sinister cõuceyll, delyueryd vppe by apoyntment ỹ towne of Breste in Brytayne, to the duke, which was occasyon of displeasure atwene the kynge & the duke of Glowcetyr his vncle, as ĩ the yere folowyng shalbe more clerelye shewyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxxvi. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxxxvii.

Thomas Wylforde.

Adam Bame, goldsmyth. Anno. xx.

Wyllyam Parker.

IN this. xx. yere of kyng Richarde, & moneth of February, the kyng holdynge a *Fol. C.iiii.* sumptuouse feest in Westmynster Hall, many of the sowdiours which were newly comen from the towne of Brest foresayd, presyd into the hall & kepte a roume together. Which cõpany, whan the duke of Gloucester hadde beholdyn, and frayned and knowen what men they were, and how that sayde towne was geuen vppe cõtrarye his knowlege, was therwith in his mynde sore dyscomfortyd'; in soo moche, that whan the kynge was entryd his chaumber and fewe nere vnto hym, he sayde vnto the kynge, "Syr, haue ye not seen the felawes that satte in so great noũbre to day in your halle at such a table?" And the kyng answeryd "yes," and axyd of ỹ duke what cõpany it was? To whom the duke answeryd & sayde, "Syr, these ben your sowdyours comyn from Brest, & as nowe haue nothynge to take to, nor knowe not how to shyft for theyr lyuyng, and the rather for that, as I am enformyd, they haue ben before tyme enyll payed." Than sayd the kynge, "it is not my wylle but ỹ they shulde be well payed, & if any haue cause to complayne, let theym shewe it vnto our tresourer, & they shalbe resonably answeryd." In resonynge of this mater farther, the duke sayd vnto the kyng, "Syr, ye ought to put your body to payne for to wyñe a stronge holde or towne by feate of warre, or ye toke vpõ you to sell or delyuer any towne or strõge holde gotten w̃ great dyffyculte by manhode of your noble progenytours." To this ỹ kyng, w̃ chaũgyd coũtenaũce, answeryd & sayd, "vncle how saye ye those wordys?" Than the duke boldelye recyted the foresayde wordys; wherunto ỹ kyng beynge more dyscontẽtyd sayd, "wene ye ỹ I be a marchaũt or a fole to sell my lãde; by seynt Iohn Baptyst nay; but troth it is, that our cosyn duke of Brytayne hath rendryd vnto vs all such sũmes of money as our progenytours lent vnto hym or his auncetours vpõ the sayd towne of Brest, for the which, reason & good concience wyll that he haue his towne restoryd agayn." By meane of whiche wordys thus vtteryd by the duke, such rãcoure & malyce kyndelyd atwene the kynge and hym, that it ceasyd not tyll ỹ sayd duke was put to deth by murdre vnlefullye. Than the duke apperceyuynge the kynges mysledyng by certeyne personys about hym, entendynge therof reformacion for the weale of the kynge and his realme, callyd vnto hym ỹ abbot of Seynt Albonys, and the abbot and pryour of Westmynster, and shewyd to them his secret mynde, by whose cõuceylys he made assemble shortly after at Arũdell; to which assemble came at the day appoyntyd dyuerse lordys bothe spyrytuell and tẽporell, as hymselfe, the erle of Arundell and other; also

[1] dyscontentid. MS.

thyther

thyther came ỹ erle of Notyngham, than marshall of Englonde, the erle of Warwyke, & of spirituell lordis the archebysshop of Cantorbury, the abbottys of Seynt Albonys and
Conspiraci. of Westmynster with other. After whiche assemble thus made, & eueryche of theym to other sworne within the castell of Arundell, the. viii. daye of August they toke there theyr counceyll, and condyssendyd ỹ dyuerse lordys about the kynge, as the duke of Lancastyr, the duke of Yorke, and other, shulde be put from suche auctoryte & rule of the lāde as they than bare, and other offycers, such as were thought preiudycyall vnto the weale of the lande, shulde be dyschargyd and punysshed for theyr demerytys. Whan this, with many other thynges was amonge theym cōcludyd, eueryche of them departyd tyll the tyme of
Counceyll disclosyd. an other metynge atwene theym appoyntyd; but the erle of Notyngham, contrary his othe & promyse, ferynge ỹ sequell of ỹ mater, yode shortly after vnto the kyng and dyscoueryd vnto hym all the premyssys. Wherefore the kynge in all hast callyd a secrete counceyll at London, in the sayde erle of Notynghamys place, or after some at the place of the erle of Huntyngdone, where it was cōcludyd that the sayde erle of Hūtyngdone and other shulde, by strength, fetche vnto the kynge the erlys of Arūdell & of Warwyke; & in ỹ meane whyle the kynge in propre persone arestyd his vncle syr Thomas of Woodestoke, at Plasshy in Essex, as sayth ỹ Englysshe Cronycle; albe it an other wryter in Latyne sayth, that kynge Rycharde in propre persone rode vnto the manoure of Grenewyche in the nyght tyme, & there toke hym in his bedde, and cōmaundyd hym vnto the Towre of London, which shortly after was cōueyed vnto Calays, and there piteously murdryd; and soone after were the forcsayd erlys of Arundell & Warwyke brought vnto ỹ Towre of London, with also syr Iohan Cobham, and syr Iohn Cheyny, knyghtys; but the erle of Arundell was takyn to batayll', & went at large, vnder suretye, tyll the begynnynge of the parlyament; in whiche season dyuerse other were brought to sundrye prysones. Than the kynge sent out his commyssions vnto the lordis of his realme for to come vnto his parlyament, whiche began after vpō the. xvii. daye of Septembre, in the begynnynge of the. xxi. yere of the kyng, & later ende of the mayers yere.

Here it is to be notid, ỹ Adā Bame, mayer, dyed in the begynnynge of the moneth of Iuny, for whom was after chosen & admyttyd the. viii. daye of the sayd moneth for mayer, Richarde Whytyngeton, to occupye the full of that yere, that is to meane, tyll the feest of Symōde & Iude; but vpon seynt Edwardys day folowinge, whan the newe mayer is accustomed to be chosen, then was he electe agayne for that yere folowyng, and so he stode ī the offyce of mayraltie an hoole yere and. v. monethes. Than to returne to our fyrste mater; whā the kynge had assemblyd his lordis, the whiche came with so stronge & myghtye companyes that the cytie suffysyd not to lodge the people, but were fayne to be lodgyd in small townys and vyllagys nere vnto the same. Within shorte tyme after the sayd parlyament was begūne, the erlys of Arundell and of Warwyke were brought before the lordys of the parlyamēt holdyn at Westmynster, & there fynally iudgyd as folowyth: the erle of Arundell to be ladde on fote from Westmynster and place of his iugemēt thoroughe the
Execucio. hyghe stretys of the cytie vnto the Towre hyll, where his hede to be stryken of. And the erle of Warwyke was also iudgyd to deth, but for his great age, by meane of his freendys, his iugement was pardonyd, and alteryd to perpetuall pryson, where as the kynge wolde cōmaunde hym; which after was had vnto the Ile of Man in Lācasshyre, where he cōsumed the resydue of his olde dayes. And the erle of Arundell, accordynge to the sentence vpō hym geuen, vpon the morowe folowynge the feest of seynt Mathewe, beynge Saterdaye, & the. xxii. daye of Septembre, was ladde on foote vnto the Towre hyll, beinge accompanyed with great strength of men, for so moche as it was demyd ỹ he shuld haue ben rescowyd by the way; howe be it none suche was attemptyd; but peasably he was brought vnto the sayde place of execucion, and there pacientlye & mekely toke his deth, whose

' bayll

body

body after was by the fryers Augustynes borne vnto theyr place within the warde of Bradestrete of London, and there in the north syde of the quyer solempnely buryed, & after vpon his graue a sumptuouse toumbe of marble stone sette and edyfyed. And by auctoryte of the sayde parlyament, the archebysshop of Cauntorbury was exylyd the realme, & vpō the Monday folowyng, beyng the. xxiiii. day of Septembre, syr Iohn̄ lorde Cobham, & syr Iohn̄ Cheyny, knyght, were iudgyd to be drawen, hāgyd, and quarteryd; but by instaunce and laboure of theyr frendys ỹ iugement was chaungyd vnto perpetuell pryson. And this done, the kynge ordeynyd a royall feest, and helde open housholde for all honest comers; for, as affermyth Petyr Pyctauyēce, a wryter of hystoryes, this prynce, kynge Rycharde, passyd all other of his progenytours in lyberalyte and bountie; the which feest and also parliament yet holdynge, the kynge creatyd. v. dukys, a marquys, and. v. erlys. As first, the erle of Derby, syr Hēry of Bolyngbrooke, sone and heyre of Iohn̄ of Gaunt, duke of Lancastre, was creatyd duke of Herforde; the seconde whiche was erle of Rutlād, was creatid duke of Amnarle'; the thyrde beynge erle of Kent, was creatyd duke of Surrey; the fourthe beynge erle of Notyngham, was creatyd duke of Norfolke; and the. v. was ỹ erle of Huntyngedon, the whiche than was creatyd duke of Exetyr; also of ỹ erle of Somerset was made a marquys of Dorset; and for the erlys, firste, [the lorde Spencer was made erle of Gloucetyr;][2] the lorde of Westmerlād, named Dan Raby Neuyll, was made erle of Westmerlād; [the lord Persy was made erle of Northumberlande;][2] the lord tresorer, syr Wyllyā Scrope, was made erle of Wylshyre; & syr Iohn̄ de Montaygue was made erle of Salesbury; and whan this busynesse was fynysshyd, the parlyament was remouyd vnto Shrewysbury vnto Hyllarye terme, where it was fynysshed to many mennys dyspleasures, & dysherytynge of many trewe heyres. *Fol. CJo.*

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xvii. Anno Domini. M.CCC. lxxx.xviii.

Wyllyam Askham.

Rycharde Whittyngton, mercer. Anno. xxi.

Iohn̄ Wodecok.

IN this. xxi. yere of kynge Richarde, the people of the lande murmuryd & grudgyd sore agayne the kyng & his coūceyll, for so moch as ỹ goodys belōgyng vnto ỹ crowne were dysperblyd and geuyn to vnworthy personys; by occasyon whereof dyuerse chargys and exaccyons were put vpon the people; also for that ỹ chefe rulers about ỹ prynce were of lowe birthe and of small reputacion, and the men of honoure were kepte out of fauoure; also for that that the duke of Gloucetyr was secretlye murdred without processe of ỹ lawe, and many thynges ellys mysorderyd by the last parlyament, whereof the wyte and blame was layed vnto the kyng & other persones after namyd, as well for wrongfull dysherytynge of sundry persones at the sayde parlyament, suche as were menyall seruauntys of ỹ foresayd duke of Glowcetyr, and of the erlys of Arūdell & of Warwyke, cōtrary his owne proclamacyons made concernynge suche maters; also that were dyuerse patentis & graūtis passyd the kynges great seale aswell for pardons and other great maters, yet for the kynges synguler auauntage, and suche fewe personys as bare the rule aboute hym, many of thē were callyd agayne; also, where for sherynes and other offycers of all shyrys of Englonde, were wonte to be named. iiii. by dyscrete personys, as iuges & other, of the which the kyng shuld assygne. ii. for the yere folowynge, he of his owne wylle & pleasure wolde refuse them, & chose suche. ii. as hym lykyd, the whiche he knewe well wolde lene more to his weale than to the cōmon weale of his lande or of his subiectys; also that where before tymes the kynges of Englonde vsed to sende out commyssyons vnto burgeysys of cyties & townes, to chose of theyr fre lybertie such knyghtys

[1] Aumarle. MS. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

of

of the shyre as they thought moste welefull for the cõmon weale of ỹ sayd shyre & lande, nowe kyng Rycharde wolde appoynte ỹ personys, and wyll them for to chose such as then he named, wherby his synguler causys were preferryd & the cõmon causys put by; also kynge Rycharde, thoroughe euyll counceyll, cõmaundid by his letters vnto the sheryffys of all shyres, fewe exceptid, ỹ all personys of hauoure[1] within theyr counties, as well spyrytuell as temporell, shuld make certeyn othes in generall wordis, and ouer that to wryte and seale certeyn boudys for perfourmaũce of the sayd othes; and also for blanke chartours, whiche many men of substaũce were cõstraynyd to seale to theyr great charges[2], ỹ people cõtynuelly murmuryd and grudgyd, so that for theyse iniuryes and many moo, whiche at the tyme of his deposynge, were artyculed agayne hym in. xxxviii. sundry artycles, with also the rumour that ranne vpon hym that he had letten to ferme the reuenuse of ỹ crowne to Busshey, Bogot[3], & Grene, whiche cawsyd as well ỹ noblemen of ỹ realme to grudge agayn hym as other of the comon people. Thus contynuyng this mysordre within the lande, dyed syr Iohñ of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, at the bysshop of Elyes place in Holborne, and from thens was caryed vnto seynt Paulys, & there vpon the northe syde of the quyer honourablye buryed, at whose enterrement all the chefe lordys of Englonde were present, [whiche sayd duke dyed in ỹ moneth of & yere abouesayd;][4] for whom after was foũdyd by dame Blaunche his wyfe, an honorable annyuersary, as before I haue shewyd in the. xliiii. yere of Edwarde the thyrde, whiche of ryght ought to be set in this place. This yere also, about ỹ feest of seynt Bartholmew, fell dyscencion & discorde atwene duke[5] of Herforde and the duke of Norfolke, wherefore ỹ duke of Herforde accusyd that other ỹ he had taken. iiii. M. marke of the kynges, of suche money as he shulde therew haue wagyd certeyne sowdyours at Calays, he lefte[6] vndon, and toke ỹ same money to his owne vse. But an other wryter sayeth, that as the sayd. ii. dukys rode vpon a tyme from the parlyament towarde theyr lodgynges, the duke of Norfolke sayd vnto ỹ other, "Sir, see you not howe varyable the kynge is in his wordis, and how shamefully he puttyth his lordes and kynnesfolkys to deth, & other exylyth & holdyth in pryson; wherfore full necessary it is to take kepe, and not for to truste moche i his wordis, for with out dowte in tyme to come, he wyll by suche lyke meanys bryng vs vnto lyke deth and distruccion." Of which wordys ỹ sayd duke of Herforde accusyd ỹ other vnto the kynge; wherefore eyther wagyd batayle w other before the kyng, to whom day of metynge was geuen to eyther vpon the. xi. daye of Septembre, to fyght w̃in listys at Couentre, where all thynge was ordeyned for. At whiche place, at the daye assygned, thyder came the sayde. ii. dukys, and apperyd in the feelde before the kynges presence, redy to do theyr batayll; but the kyng anon forbad that fyght, & forthewyth exylyd the

[1] havoir. MS. honoure. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] *Here the edition of* 1542 and 1559 *have the following interpolation.* And as Hardynge sayeth, he was verye prodigall, ambycyous, and lecherous. For there resorted to hys courte at their pleasures aboue the noumbre of ten thousande persones, that had theyr desyres and commaũdementes. And that in his kytchyn were thre hundreth seruytours, and in euery office a great noũbre. Moreouer, of ladyes, chaumberers, and lauenders, there were aboue the nombre of thre hundred, and they all exceded in gorgeous and costelye apparell, farre above theyr degrees: yomen & gromes were clothed in sylke, as saten and damaske bothe dobelettes & gounes, with clothe of grayne and skarlette ouer sumpteous, and had theyr garmentes cutte bothe in the courte and townes, farre otherwyse then it had bene before his dayes, wyth brodery werke, ryche furres and goldsmythes woorke; deuysynge euery daye a newe fassion, to the great ruyne & decaye of the welthe of Englande. Also that kyng Richarde dyd preferre suche byshoppes to byshoprickes as neyther coulde teache nor preache, ner knew any thynge of the scripture of God, but only to call for their tythes & dutyes, & to helpe to serue his lustes & pleasures; which in dede wer not worthye the name of byshoppes, but rather of naughty packes disguysed in byshoppes apparel. In this tyme reigned also plẽtie of the fylthy synne of lechery and fornicacion, with the abhomynable synne of aduoutry, specyally in the kynge, but moste chiefly in the prelacy, wherby the whole realme was so infect that it cryed for the wrath and vengeaunce of God. And as for taxyng and exactyng of the commons, it was a vsuall thynge with hym, & therfore was he hated in maner of al his whole realme, so that the people cõtinually murmured, &c. *as in the text.* [3] Bagott. MS. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [5] the duke. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] the which he lafte.

duke

duke of Herforde for. x. yeres, and the duke of Norfolke for euer, whiche sentence was shortly after put in execucion. Than the duke of Herforde saylyd [into Frauuce, and there taryed a season; but for lacke of ayde and comforte he departyd thens and came][1] into Brytayne, & the duke of Norfolke passyd dyuerse cõtreys, & lastely came vnto the cytie of Venyce, and there endyd his lyfe. And soone after this was master Roger Walden, *Fol. C.lvi.* a chapeleyne of the kynges, made archebisshop of Caũtorbury, the which was a specyall louer vnto ỹ cytie of Lõdon, and made great labour for them vnto the kynges grace, that greuously w̃ thẽ was of newe displeasyd, for so moche as he was enfourmyd of them that they shulde counceyll, w̃ other sheryffys, to withstande certeyne actys made in ỹ laste parlyament, for the which the comynalty of the cytie was endytyd with other sheryffys; in redresse wherof, by coũceyll of the sayd archebysshop and of maister Robert Braybrooke, thẽ bysshop of London, the cytezyns made a lamentable supplycacion vnto the kynge, which, by ayde and fauoure of the sayde. ii. bysshoppis and other louers of ỹ cytie, the kynges ire and indygnacyon, by meane of that lowly supplycacyon, was some parte appeasyd & with drawen; but yet to cõtent a parte of ỹ kynges mynde, many blãke chartours were deuysyd and brought into the cytie, whiche many of the moost substancyall men of the same were fayne to seale to theyr payne and charge in conclusyon, the whiche shortlye after was vsed thoroughe all countreys of Englonde.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xviii. Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xix.

Iohñ Wade.

Drewe Barentyne, goldsmyth. Anno. xxii.

Iohñ Warner.

IN thys. xxii. yere of kynge Rychard, the cõmon fame ranne that the kynge hade lettõ to ferme the realme of Englonde vnto syr Wyllyam Scrope, erle of Wylshere, and than tresourer of Englonde, to sir Iohn Busshey, syr Iohn Bagot, & syr Henry Grene knyghtis; the whiche tourned shortly after to theyre greate confusiõs. This yere also Thomas, the son & heyre of the erle of Arũdell, lately behedid, ỹ which Thomas, not all to his pleasure, was kepte in the howse of the duke of Eccetyr, passyd the see by ỹ meanys of one Wyllyam Scot, mercer, and yode vnto his vncle the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, and so contynued with hym in the cytie of Colayne than beynge. In this passe tyme great purueyaũce was made for the kynges iournay into Irelande, so that whẽ all thynges necessary to the honoure and nede of the kynge & his people was redy, he set forthwarde vpõ his iourney in ỹ moneth of Aprell, leuynge for his lyeutenaũt in Englãde syr Edmunde of Langley his vncle and duke of Yorke, and after toke shippyng at Brystow and saylyd with a myghty and stronge hoste into Irelande, where he had so prosperous spede, ỹ in processe of tyme, with manhode and good polycy, he subduyd to hym that countrey; in ỹ which voyage, were it for acte ỹ he dyd, or of ỹ kynges boũte, Hẽry, sone & heyre of ỹ duke of Herforde thã exylyd, was of ỹ kynge made knyghte. This Henry was after his father crownyd kyng of Englande, & named Hẽry the. v. Kynge Rycharde thus beyng occupyed in Irelande, and receyuynge of the capytaynes of the wylde Irysshe into his subieccion, and orderynge of that coũtrey to set in an order & rule, Henry of Bolyngebrooke, duke of Herforde, before exylyd with the archebysshop of Caũtorburye, and Thomas of Arundell and other, lãdyd with a small company at Rauyns Spore in the northe countrey, in the moneth of August, and vnder coloure of the clayme of his rightfull enheritaunce, reysyd the people as he went, to whom in short processe great multytude of the people drewe and gatheryd. Of this lãdynge kyng Richarde beynge warned, for hasty spede of returnynge into Englonde, lefte in Irelonde behynde hym moche of ordenaũce, & landyd at Mylforde Hauyn in the begynnyng of Septembre, and begyñynge

Busshey, Bagot, & Grene.

[1] *Omitted in the* edit. 1559.

also of the. xxiii°. yere of his reygne, and so yode vnto ỹ castell of Flynte in Walys, and there restyd hym and his people, and entendyd there to gather vnto hym more strength. In the whiche meane tyme the foresayd Henry, that than had proclaymyd hymselfe duke of Lancaster in the ryght of Iohñ Gaunt his father, was comyn to Brystowe, and there, without resystence, toke syr Wyllyam Scroope, erle of Wylshyre and tresourer of Englande, syr Iohñ Busshey, and syr Henry Grene; also there was taken syr Iohñ Bagot, but after he escapyd and fledde into Irelande. Than were the other thre there iuged and put in execucion; and kyng Richarde styll beynge at the castell of Flynte, herynge of the great strengthe ỹ was about the duke, feryd sore of hymselfe, and in lyke wyse sodyd all suche as were about hym. Wherfore syr Thomas Percy, erle of Worcetyr, and than stewarde of the kynges housholde, cõtrary his allegeañce, brake openly ỹ whyte rodde in the hall, and cõmaundyd euery man to shyfte for hymselfe. By reason wherof the people voydyd, and ỹ kyng lefte without comfort; so that he was shortly after takyn and presentid vnto ỹ duke, the which put hym vnder safe kepyng, & shortly after sped hym towarde London, and, whan he came nere vnto ỹ cytie, he sent kynge Rycharde with a secret company vnto the Towre, there to be safelye kepte tyll his commynge. Whereof many euyll dysposyd persones of the cytie beynge warned, assemblyd theym in great noumber and entendyd to haue mette hym without the towne, and there to haue taken hym from suche as ladde hym, and so to haue slayn hym for the great crueltie that he before tyme hadde vsed vnto the cytie; but as God wolde, the mayer and rulers of the cytie were enfourmed of theyr malycyouse purpose, and gatheryd to them the worshypfull cõmoners and sadde men, by whose polycies, not without great dyffycultie, they were reuokyd frome theyr euyll purpose; albe it that lastynge that rumour they yode vnto Westmynster, and there toke maister Iohñ Slake, deane of the kynges chapell, & frome thens brought hym vnto Newegate, & there caste on hym irons. Shortly after the duke came vnto London, & there, by the consent of kyng Richarde, a parlyament was begunne vpon the. xiii. day of the moneth of Septembre, endurynge which parlyament, many accusacyons and artycles of mysrulynge of the lande were layed vnto the charge of this noble prynce, kynge Richarde, which be engroced at length in. xxxviii. artycles; for the whiche voluntarylye as it shulde seme, by the copy of an instrument hereafter shewyd, he shulde renounce and wylfullye be deposyd from all kynglye mageste the Monday, beynge the. xxix. day of September, & the feest of Seynt Myghell the archaungell, in the yere of our Lordys Incarnacion, after the accompte of the Church of Englonde. M.CCC.lxxx.xix. and the. xxiiii[i]. yere of ỹ reygne of ỹ sayde Rycharde, the copy of which instrument here vnder ensuyth.

Execucio.

Parlyamentum.

THis present instrumẽt, made the Mõday the. xxix. day of Septembre, and feest of seynt Mychaell tharchaungell, in the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCC.lxxx. and. xix. and in the. xxiii. yere of kyng Rycharde the secõde, witnessyth: that where by the auctoryte of the lordys spyrytuell and temporell of this present parlyament, and cõmons of the same, the right honorable & discrete persones here vnder named, were, by ỹ sayd auctoryte, assygned to goo vnto the Towre of Lõdon, there to here and testyfy suche questyons & answerys as than and there shulde be by the sayd honorable and dyscrete persones harde. Knowe all men to whom theyse present letters shall come, that we syr Rycharde Scroope, archebysshop of Yorke, Iohñ bysshop of Herforde, Hẽry erle of Northũbrelãde, Rafe erle of Westmerlãde, Thomas lorde of Barkley, Wyllyam abbot of Westmynster, Iohñ pryour of Cauntorbury, Wyllyam Thurnyng, & Hugh Burnell, knyghtes, Iohñ Markham, iustyce, Thomas Stowe, and Iohñ Burbage, doctours of the lawe cyuyle, Thomas Feryby, and Denys Lopham, notaryes publyque, the day & yere abouesayde, atwene the howrys of. viii. &. ix. of the clocke before noone, were presente in the chefe chaumber of ỹ

Pol. C.Iohñ.

[i] xxiii. edit. 1542. 1559. [ii] xxiii. 1542. 1559.

kynges

kynges lodgyng within the sayd place of the Towre, where was rehersyd vnto the kynge by the mouthe of the foresayde erle of Northumberlande, that before tyme at Conwey in North Walys, the kynge beynge there at his pleasure and lybertye, promysyd vnto the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, thā Thomas of Arundell, and vnto the sayde erle of Northumberlande, that he for insuffycyent[1], which he knewe hymselfe to be of, to occupye so great a charge as to gouerne this realme of Englōde, he wolde gladly leue of and renouce the ryghte & tytle, aswell of ẏ as of his tytle to the crowne of Fraunce, and his knyghtlye[2] mageste vnto Henry duke of Herforde; and that to do in suche conuenyent wyse as by ẏ lernyd men of his lāde it shulde moost suffycyently be by them deuysed and ordeynyd. To the whiche rehersall ẏ kynge in our sayd presensys answeryd benyngly, and sayd, that suche promyse he made, and soo to the same he was at that howre in full purpose to parfourme and fulfyll, sauynge he desyred firste to haue personall speche ẇ the sayd duke and with the archebysshop of Caunterbury his cosyns; and farthermore, he desyred to haue a byll drawen of the sayde resygnacion, that he myght be perfyght in the rehersall therof. After which copy to hym by me the sayde erle delyueryd, we the sayde lordys & other departyd; and vpō the same afternoone, the kyng desyryng moche the cōmynge of the duke of Lācaster, at the laste ẏ sayd duke with the archebysshop entryd the foresayd chaumber, bryngynge with them the lorde Roos, the lorde Burgeyny, and the lorde Wylloughby, ẇ dyuerse other; where, after due obeysaunce done by them vnto the kynge, he, famylyerlye and with a gladde countenaunce to vs aperynge, talked with the sayde archebysshop and duke a good season; and that cōmunycacion fynysshed, the kyng with a gladde countenaunce, in presence of vs and ẏ other aboue rehersyd, sayd openly that he was redy to renouce and resygne all his kyngely mageste, in maner & fourme as he before seasons had promysed: & all though he had & myght suffyciently haue declared his renouncement by the redynge of an other meane persone, yet he, for the more suretie of the mater, and for the sayde resygnacyon shuld haue his full force and strengthe, he therfore redde the scrowle of resygnacyon hymselfe, in maner & fourme as foloweth. "In the name of God, amen. I Rycharde, by the grace of God, kyng of Englonde and of Fraūce, and lorde of Irelonde, acquyte & assoyle all archebysshoppys, bysshoppys, and other prelatis, seculer or relygyous, of what dygnyte, degre, state, or condycion that they be of; and also all dukys, marquys, erlys, barons, lordys, and all myne other lyege men both spyrytuell and seculer, of what maner, name or degre they be, from theyr othe of feawte and homage, and all other dedys & pryuylegis made vnto me, and from all maner bandys of allegeaunce and regaly or lordshyp, in the whiche they were or be boūden to me, or in any otherwyse constraynyd, and them, theyr heyres, successours for euermore from ẏ same bandis and othes, I release, delyuer, acquyte, and lete theym for fre dyssoluyd and acquyt, & to be harmelesse, for so moche as longyth to my persone by any maner, waye or tytle of ryght ẏ to me myght folowe of the fore sayde thynges, or of any of them. And also I resygne all my kyngely dygnyte, mageste, and crowne, with all the lordshyppis, power and pryuylegys to the fore sayde kyngelye dygnytie and crowne belōgynge, and all other lordshyppis and possessyons to me in any maner of wyse parteynyng, what name and condycyon they be of, out take the lādys and possessyons for me and myne obyte purchasyd and bought. And I renounce all ryght and colour of ryght, and all maner tytle of possessyon and lordeshyp, the whiche I euer had, or haue, or by any maner of meane myght haue, in the same lordeshyppis and possessyons, or any of them, or to them with any maner ryghtys belongynge or apperteynynge, vnto any parte of them.

And also the rule and gouernaunce of the same kyngedome & lordeshyppes, with all admynystracions of the same, and all thynges, and euerych of them that to the hole empyre and iurysdyccyon of the same belongeth of ryght, or in any wyse may belonge.

[1] insuffycyency. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] alle his kyngly. MS.

And also I renounce the name, worshyp & regaly, and kyngely hyghnesse, clerelye, frelye, syngulerlye and hooly, in the moost best maner and fourme that I may, and with dede & worde I leue of and resygne theym, goo frome theym for euermore, sauynge alwey to my successouris, kynges of Englōde, all the ryghtys, pryuylegys and appurtenauncys to the sayde kyngedome and lordeshyppys abouesayde, belongynge and apperteynynge: for weale I wote, and knowlege, and deme myselfe to be and haue ben vnsuffycyent and vnable, and also vnprofytable, and for myne open desertys not vnworthye to be put downe, and I swere vpon the holy Euaungelys here presentlye with my handys towchyd, that I shall neuer repugne to this resygnacion, dymyssyon or yeldynge vp, nor neuer inpugne them in any maner by worde or by dede, by my selfe nor by none other, nor I shall not suffer it to be inpugnyd, in asmoche as in me is pryuely nor apperte; but I shall haue, holde and kepe this renounsyng, dymyssyon, and leuynge vp, for ferme and stable for euermore, in all and in euerye parte thereof, so God me helpe and all seyntys, and by this holye Euaungelis by me bodyly towchyd and kyssyd. And for more recorde of the same, here openlye subscrybe and sygne this present resygnacion with myne owne hāde." And forthwith in our presencys, and other, subscrybed the same, and after delyueryd it vnto the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, sayinge, that if it were in his power, or at his assygnement, he wolde that the duke of Lancaster there present, shulde be his successoure & kyng after hym; and in tokyn thereof he toke a rynge of golde from his fynger, beinge his sygnet, and put it vpon the sayd dukys fynger, desyrynge and requyrynge the archebysshop of Yorke to shewe and make reporte vnto the lordys of the parlyament of his voluntary resygnacyon, and also of his entent and good mynde that he bare towarde his cosyn the duke of Lancaster, to haue hym his successour and kynge after hym, & this done euery man toke theyr leue and retournyd to theyr owne.

Fol. C.lviii. VPon ẏ morowe folowyng, beynge Tewysday, and ẏ laste daye of Septembre, all the lordys spyrytuell and temporell, with also the cōmons of the sayd parlyament, assemblyd at Westmynster, wherin, in the presence of theym, the archebysshop of Yorke, accordynge vnto the kynges desyre, shewyd vnto them seryously the voluntary renounsynge of the kyng, with also the fauoure the whiche he ought vnto his cosyn the duke of Lancaster for to haue hym his successour, and ouer ẏ shewyd vnto theym the cedule or byll of renouncement, sygnyd with kynge Rychardis hande. After which thynges in ordre by hym fynysshyd, the questyon was axed first of ẏ lordes, if they wolde admytte and alowe the sayde renouncement, the which whā it was of the lordys grauntyd and confermyd, the lyke questyon was axyd of the commons, and of theym in lyke maner affermyd. After which admyssyon it was then declared, that notwithstandynge the fore sayd renouncynge so by the lordis and commons admyttyd, it were nedefull vnto the realme, in auoydynge of all suspeccyon and surmyses of ille dysposyd persones, to haue in wrytynge and regestryd, the manyfolde crymes and defautys before done by the sayde Rycharde, late kynge of Englonde, to the ende ẏ they myght fyrste be openly shewyd vnto the people, and after to remayne of recorde amonge the kynges recordis, the whiche were drawen and compyled, as before is sayde, in. xxxviii. artycles, and there shewyd redye to be radde; but for other causes thā more nedefull to be preferryd, the redynge of the sayd artycles at that season were dyfferryd and put of: which artycles for that ẏ they wolde aske lōge tyme to wryte, and also wolde to some reders be but small pleasure to rede, I haue therefore lefte them out here of this werke, whiche at lengthe are sette out in the booke in[1] the mayers, & yere of Drewe Barentyne thā mayre of London. Than for so moche as the lordys of the parlyament hadde well consyderyd this voluntarye renouncement of kynge Rycharde, and that it was behouefull and necessarye for the weale of the realme to procede vnto the sentence of his deposayll, they there appoynted, by

[1] of.

auctoryte

auctoryte of the statys of the sayde parlyament, the bysshop of Seynt Asse, the abbot of Glastenbury, the erle of Gloucetyr, the lorde of Barkley, Wyllyam Thyrnynge iustyce, & Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Gray knyghtys, that they shuld geue & bere open sentence to the kynges deposycion: wherupon the sayd cōmyssyoners leyinge there theyr hedys together, by good delyberacion, good counceyll and auysement, & of one assent, agreed amonge them that the bysshop of Seynt Asse shulde publysshe the sentence for them, and in theyr names, as foloweth. "In ỹ name of God amen. We Iohñ bysshop of Seynt Asse or Asseuc̄, Iohñ abbot of Glastynbury, Rycharde the erle of Glowcetyr, Thomas lorde of Barkley, Wyllyā Thyrlynge iustyce, Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Gray knyghtys, chosen and deputed specyall commyssaries by the thre astatis of this present parlyament, representynge the hole body of the realme, for all such maters by the sayd astatys to vs cōmytted. We, vnderstandynge and concyderyng the manyfolde crymes, hurtys and harmys done, by Rycharde kynge of Englonde, and mysgouernaūce of the same by a longe tyme, to the great decaye of the sayde lande, and vtter ruyne of the same, shulde shortly haue ben, ne hadde the especyall grace of our Lorde God thereunto put the soner remedy; and also furthermore auertysynge ỹ the sayde kynge Rycharde, knowynge his owne insuffycient[1], hath of his owne mere volunte and fre wyll, renouncyd and geuen vp the rule and gouernaūce of this lāde, with all ryghtys and honours vnto the same belongynge, and vtterly for his merytys hath iugyd hym selfe not vnworthy to be deposyd of all kyngely magestie and astate royall. We, the premyssys well consyderyng, by good and dylygent delyberacion, by the power, name & auctoryte, to vs, as aboue is sayde, cōmytted, pronounce, dyscerne and declare, the same kynge Rycharde before this to haue bē, and to be, vnprofytable, vnable, vnsuffycient, and vnworthy to the rule and gouernaunce of the fore sayd realmys and lordeshyppys, and all other thappurtenauncys to the same belongynge. And for the same causes we pryue hym of all kyngely dygnyte and worshyp, of any kyngelye worshyp in hym lefte, & we depose hym by our sentēce defynytyfe, forbyddynge expresselye to all archbysshoppys, bisshoppys, & all other prelatis, dukes, marquysys, erlys, barons & knyghtys, & to all other men of the foresayde kyngedome and lordeshyppes, or of other placys belongynge to the same realmys and lordshyppys, subiectys and lyegys, what soeuer they be, that none of theym from this tyme forthwarde, to ỹ foresayd Rycharde, as kynge and lorde of the foresayde realmys and lordeshyppys, be neyther obedyent nor attendaūt." After whiche sentence thus openlye declared, the sayd astatys admytted forthwith the same persones for theyr procuratours, to resygne and yelde vp vnto kynge Richarde all theyr homage and fealtye, whiche they hadde made and ought vnto hym before tymes, and for to shewe vnto hym if nede were, all thynges before done that concernyd hys deposyng; the whiche resygnacyon at that tyme was spared and put in respyte tyll the morowe nexte folowynge. And anon as this sentence was in this wyse passyd, and that by reason thereof the realme stoode voyde without hede or gouernour for the tyme, the sayd duke of Lancastyr rysynge from the place where he before sate, & stādynge where all myght beholde hym, he mekelye makynge the sygne of the crosse vpon his forhed & vpon his breste, after sylence by an offycer was cōmaundyd, sayd vnto the people there beynge, theyse wordys folowinge. "In the name of the Father & Sone and Holy Goost, I Henry of Lancastre clayme the realme of Englande, and the crowne, with all the appurtenauncys, as I that am dyscendyd by ryght lyne of the bloode commynge from that good lorde, kynge Henry the thyrde, and throughe that right, that God of his grace hath sent to me, with helpe of my kynne and of my frendys, to recouer the same, the whiche was in poynt to be vndone for defaute of good gouernaunce and due iustyce." After whiche wordys thus by hym vtteryd, he retournyd and sette hym downe in the place where he before hadde sytten: than the lordys apperceyuynge and heryng this clayme thus made by this noble

[1] insufficiency.

man,

man, eyther of them fraynyd of other what he thought, and after a dystaunce or pause of tyme, the archebysshop of Cauntorbury hauyuge notycion of the lordys myndes, stode vp and askyd of the commons if they wolde assent to the lordys, which in theyr myndys thought the clayme, by the duke made, to be ryghtfull and necessary for the weale of the realme and of theym all; whereunto with one voyce they cryed "ye, ye, ye." After whiche answere, the sayde archebysshop goynge vnto the duke and settynge hym vpon his kne, hadde vnto hym a fewe wordys, the whiche endyd, he rose & takynge the duke by the right hande ladde hym vnto the kynges sete, and with great reuerence set hym therein, after a certeyne knelynge and oreson made by the sayd duke or he were therein set. And whan the kynge was thus set in his trone, to the great reioysynge of the people, the archebysshop of Cauntorbury began ryght there [an oryson or][1] colacyon, in maner as after foloweth.

Fol. CLix.

"VIr dominabitur in populo *primo regum Capitulo. ix.* These been the wordes of the hygh & moost myghtye Kynge, spekynge to Samuell his prophete, techynge hym howe he shulde chose & ordeyne a gouernoure of his people of Israell, when the sayd people askyd of hym a kyng to rule thē. And not without cause may theyse wordys be sayde here of our lorde ȳ kyng that nowe is; for if they be inwardely cōceyuyd, they shall geue to vs mater of cōsolacyon and comforte, whan it is sayde that a man shall haue lordeshyp and rule of the people & not a chylde, for God thretenyth not vs as he some tyme thret the people by Isaye, sayinge, (*Isaye. iii.* Et dabo pueros pricipes eorum, et effeminati dominabuntur eis.) I shall, sayth our Lorde, geue chyldren to be theyr rulers and pryncys, and weke or ferefull shall haue domynyon ouer theym. But of his great mercy he hath visyted vs, I truste, his peculier people, and sent vs a man to haue ȳ rule of vs, & put by chylderne that before tyme ruled this lande after chyldyshe condycyons, as by the werkys of them it hath ryght latelye apperid, to the great dysturbaunce of all this realme, and for want or lacke of a man. For, as sayth ȳ apostell Paule, (*ad Corinth. primo. Capitulo. xiii.* Cū essem paruulus, sapiebam vt paruulus et loquebar vt paruulus, &c. Quādo autem factus sum vir, euacuaui que erant paruuli.) That is to meane, whan I was a chylde I sauoured & spake as a chylde, but at the tyme whan I came vnto the state of a man, than I put by all my chyldysshe condycions. The apostell sayth, he sauoured and spake as a chylde, in whom is no stedfastnesse or constancy, for a chylde wyll lyghtly promyse, and lyghtly he wyll breke his promyse, and do all thynges that his appetyte geueth hym vnto, and forgetyth lyghtely what he hath done: by which reason it folowyth, that nedely great incōuenyence muste fall to that people ȳ a chylde is ruler and gouernour of, nor it is not possyble for that kyngedome to stāde in felycite, where such cōdyciōs reygne in the hede and ruler of the same. But nowe we ought all to reioyse ȳ all suche defautys ben expellyd, and that a man and not a chylde shall haue lordeshyp ouer vs; to whom it belongyth to haue a sure rayne vpon his tunge, that he maye be knowen from a chylde, or a man vsynge chyldysshe condycions, of whom, I truste, I may saye, as the wyse man sayeth in his prouerbys: (*prouerbiorū tercio Capitulo.* Beatus homo qui inuenit sapienciam, et qui affluit prudencia:) the which is to meane, blessyd be the man that hathe sapyence or wysedome, and that haboundyth in prudence: for that man that is rulyd by sapyence must nedys loue & drede our Lorde God, and whoso loueth and dredyth hym must consequentlye folowe that he muste kepe his commaundementys, by force wherof he shall mynyster trewe iustyce vnto his subiectis, and do no wronge nor iniury to any man, so that thā shall folowe the wordys of the wyse man, the whiche ben rehersyd (*prouerbiorum decimo*: benediccio domini super caput iusti, os autem impiorum operit iniquitatē:) whiche is to meane, the blessyng of our Lorde God shall alyght vpō the hede of our kynge, beynge a iuste & ryghtwyse man,

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. Oration. edit. 1542. 1559.

for the tunge of hym workyth equyte and iustyce, but the tunge of wycked [men]' and of synners coueryth iniquyte; and who ỹ werkyth or mynystryth iustyce in due ordre, he[2] allonely sauegardeth hym selfe, but also holdyth the people in a surete of restfulnesse, of the which ensuyth peace and plente. And therefore it is sayd of ỹ wyse kynge Salomon, (*Ecclesiastici decimo;* beata terra cuius rex nobilis est, et cuius pryncipes vescuntur in tẽpore suo:) which is to be vnderstande, that blessyd and happy is that lande of the whiche the kynge or ruler is noble and wyse, and the prynces ben blessyd that lyue in his tyme, as who wolde say they may take exaũple of hym to rule and guyde theyr subiectys: for by the dyscressyon of a noble and wyse man beynge in auctoryte, many euyllys be sequestryd and put aparte, and all dissimylers put vnto sylence, for the wyse man consyderith and notyth well the great inconuenyencys whiche dayly nowe growe of it, where the chylde or insypient drynkyth the swete and delycious wordis vnauysydly, and perceyuyth not entoxycacion, whiche they ben myngyd[3] or myxte with, tyll he be inuyroned and wrappyd in all daunger, as lately the experyence therof hath ben apparent to all our syghtys and knowlegys, and not without the great daunger of all this realme; and all was for lacke of wysedom in the ruler, whiche demyd and taught as a chylde gyuynge sentence of wylfulnes and not of reason; so that, whyle a chylde reygned, selfe wyll and luste reygnuyd, and reason with good conciẽce were outlawyd, with iustyce, stedfastnesse and many other vertuys. But of this parell and daunger we ben delyuered by the especiall helpe and grace of God, (quia vir dominabitur ī populo) that is to meane, he that is not a chylde but perfyght in reason, for he cõmyth not to execute his owne wyll, but his wyll that is sent hym, that is to wytte, Goddys wyll, as a man to whom God of his habundaunt grace hath geuen perfyght reason and discressyon, to dyscerne & deme as a perfyght man; wherefore not allonly of this man we shall say that he shall dwell in wysdome, but as a perfyght man and not a chylde, he shall thynke and deme, and haue suche a cyrcumspecte with hym, that he shall dylygentlye foreloke and see that Goddys wylle be done and not his. And therfore nowe I truste the wordys of the wyse man, (*Ecclesiastici decimo*) shalbe veryfyed in our kyng, sayinge, (iudex sapiens iudicabit populum suum, et pryncipatus sensati stabilis erit:) that is, as sayeth the wyse man, a wyse and dyscrete iuge shall nowe deme his people, and the domynyon or lordeshyp of a dyscrete wyse man shall stãde stedfast: wherupon shall than folowe the seconde verse of the same Chapyter, sayinge, (secundum iudicem populi sic et ministri eius, &c:) that is, lyke as the hede and soueraygne is replenysshyd with all sapyence and vertue, in guydynge of his people, admynystrynge to them lawe with due and conuenyent iustyce, so shall the subiectys agaynewarde be garnysshyd with awe and louynge drede, and bere vnto hym, nexte God, all honoure, trouthe and allegeaunce; so that thã it maye be concludyd with the resydue of the foresayd versys, (qualis rector est ciuitatis, tales et inhabitãtes in ea:) which is to meane, suche as the ruler of the cytie is, such than be the inhabytauntys of the same: so that consequently it foloweth, a good master maketh a good dyssyple, and ī lyke wyse an euyll kynge or ruler shall lose his people, and the cyties of his kyngedome shall be lefte desolate & vnhabyted; wherfore thus I make an ende: in stede of a chylde, wylfully doynge his lust & pleasure without reason, nowe shall a man be lorde and ruler, that is replenysshed with sapyence and reason, and shall gouerne the people by skylfull domys, settynge aparte all wylfulnesse and pleasure of hymselfe, so that the worde that I began with maye be veryfyed of hym, ecce quia vir dominabitur in populo, the which our Lorde graunt, and that he may prosperously reygne to the pleasure of God and weale of this his realme, amen." The whiche oracion beynge thus fynysshed, and the people answerynge with great gladnesse, "amen," the kynge, standyng vpon his fete, sayd vnto the lordys and cõmõs present, "Syrys, I thanke you my lordys spyrytuell and temporell, and all the statys of this lande, and do you to vnderstande that it is not my wyll

Fol. C.ix.

[1] MS. [2] he not. edit. 1533. 1542. [3] mingled. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

that

that any man thynke ŷ by the waye of conquest I wolde dysheryte any man of his herytage, fraunchyse, or other ryghtys that hym ought to haue of right, nor for to put hym out of that whiche he nowe enioyeth, & hath hadde before tyme by custome of good lawe of this realme, excepte suche pryuat persones as haue ben agayn ŷ good purpose and the cōmon profet of ŷ realme." And this speche thus fynysshed, all sheryffys & other offycers were put in theyr auctorytes, which ceasyd for the tyme that the kynges see was voyde, and after euery man departyd. And after noone[1] were proclamacyons made in accustumat placis of the cytie, in the name of kyng Henry the. iiii. and vpon the morowe folowing, being Wennisday & the fyrst day of October, the procuratours abouenamed, yode vnto ŷ Towre of London, and there certyfyed hym of the admissyon of kynge Henry. And ŷ foresayde iustice, Wylliam Thirninge, in the name of the other, and for all the statis of the londe, gaue vppe vnto Rycharde, late kynge, all homage and fealte to hym before tyme due, in lyke maner and fourme as before I haue shewed to you in the. xix. yere of kynge Edwarde the seconde. And thus was the noble prynce pryued of all kyngly dignyte and honoure, by reason of his euyll counceyll, and suche vnlefull wayes and meanys as he by his insolency in his realme sufferyd to be vsed, whan he had reygnyd. xxii. yeres. iii. monethes and. viii. dayes.

CHARLYS.

CArolus or Charlys the. vii. of that name, or the. vi. after thaccōpte of the Frensh Hystory, a chylde of. xiii. yeres of age, and sone vnto Charlys ŷ. vi. began his reygne ouer ŷ Frēshemen ī ŷ moneth of Septēber, & yere of our Lorde. M.CCC. and. lxxx. and the thyrde yere of the seconde Rycharde then kynge of Englonde. This Charlys was crowned kynge within the age of. xiiii. yeres, contrary a lawe made in the. xi. yere of his father, and where by hym he was cōmyttyd vnto the rule of Lewys his vncle, and duke of Angeou, to the tyme of the full of. xiiii. yerys; yet after the deth of the father, suche vnkyndenesse began to spryng atwene the lordys of the realme, that for the comon weale of the same, it was agreed by the more partye, that this Charlys shuld be crownyd at Raynys in all hastye spede; the whiche was done in short season after, and so contynued, not without disturbaunce of malyce whiche kyndelyd atwene his two vncles, and other inconuenyencyes, by the space of. iii. yeres ensoynge. The. iiii. yere of his reygne, the cytezyns of Parys murmurynge and grudgynge for dyuerse imposycions and taskys of theym leuyed, sodeynly arose in great multytude, entendynge to haue dystressyd some of the kynges housholde seruaūtys, and such as were men of parsone[2]; but by medyacyon of one dyscrete persone named Iohn Marsyle, with assystence of the prouost of the marchauntys, the rumoure was somedele appeasyd; in so moche that the great multytude was withdrawen and retournyd to theyr occupacyons. But some euyll dysposyd, which in suspecious congregacion[3] euer vse to exyte and styre the people vnto robbynge and other vnlefull actis, reassociat them, and sayde and cryed that they wolde haue the Iewys banysshyd the cytie; to whom it was answeryd that the kynge shulde be enfourmyd of theyr desyre, and that vpon it they shuld haue knowlege of the kynges pleasure: wherupon in a rage they ranne vnto the houses of the Iewys, and entryd theym by force, in robbynge and spoylynge theym, and bare away what they myght cary, in sleynge suche of the Iewys as any resystence and defence made agayne theym, and neuer after restoryd the sayd goodys, not withstandyng that the kyng, in that behalfe, gaue sore and strayt commaundementis. It was not longe after that such as were of the kynges secret counceyll, consyderyng the great chargys and nedys of ŷ kyng, and the wekenesse of his treasoure, by auctoryte of the kynges cōmyssyons, callyd before them the rulers of Parys, of Roan, & other good cyties, ŷ which beynge assemblyd, to them was shewyd the

[1] at afternoone. [2] nere vnto his person. MS. [3] in such congregacions. MS.

many and inportune chargis which the kynge daylye had for the defence of his realme and subiectys; wherfore by all wyse and polytike meanys that they myght vse, they exortyd the sayde commons to graunt vnto the kynge, in way of subsydye. xii.*d.* of the poūde, of all warys at that dayes curraunt. To the whiche requeste in conclusyon, after aduyse taken of theyr neyghbours, it was answeryd, that the people were so sore chargyd in tymes passyd, ŷ they myght not susteyne or bere any more chargys, tyll theyr necessyte were otherwyse releuyd; so that in conclusyon, at this season, the kynge and his counceyll were dyspoyntyd. In the. vi. yere of this Charlys, the Flemynges, which by a certeyne season had restyd them from bataylle, were it for necessyte or synguler couetyze of Lewys theyr duke, he asked of thē a great ayde or taske[1]; and for he knewe well that if he myght wyñe ŷ fauoure & graūt of the towne of Gaunt, he shuld the soner haue his pleasure of ŷ resydue, therfore he firste began by meanys of fayrenesse, and after, whan therby he sawe he myght take none aduauntage, he addyd therunto manassys and thretenynges, the whiche not withstandynge, the Flemynges bode stedfast in one opynyon, and denayed styflye theyr dukys request. Wherupon he lastly departyng from Gaūt, with great displeasure, sayd, "I shall shewe myselfe to be lord & soucraygne of this towne, *Fol. CJul.* & of ŷ obstynat people of the same." And shortly after the duke made sharpe warre vpon them of Gaunt, and they in lykewyse defendyd them vigurously, so that theyr enemyes wan of them lytle auauntage. And after this warre had ben a season contynued, not without losse of many men vpon bothe partyes, the Gaunteners remembrynge ŷ obedyence and fydelyte which they shuld bere to theyr souerayne lorde & duke, made meanys that they myght be barde; after graunt wherof, they sent vnto hym certeyn oratours, which had vnto hym the wordys in sentence folowinge. "Moost souerayne next God, we deny not but we accept ŷ for our prynce & leder, and to ŷ, as thyne, it becōmyth vs to obey with all reason. And thou agayn arte bounde to defende vs. If we any thynge, by our ouersyght and neclygēce, haue agayne the trespassyd, we mekely beseche the of forgyuenesse; and furthermore besechynge the, that such fraūchysys and lyberties to vs by thy noble progenytours before graunted, thou wylte not from vs withdrawe nor abrydge, by reason wherof thy people of Gaūt may not to any taxe, contrary theyr volunte, be constraynyd. But and to thy nede of warrys thou haue necessyte of ayde of thy cōmōs, they of fre wyll, all cōstraynt set aparte, are redy to ayde & helpe ŷ, as fre & as lyberall as thy trewe subiectys." By reason of which wordys the duke was of hys ire towarde them some what appeasyd; but after theyr departyng from the duke or erlys[2] precense, such yonge knyghtis as were of ŷ erlys hoost, had vnto them many hygh and disdaynous wordys, sayinge, that they were thrall vnto theyr erle, and that theyr obstynacye shulde be to the vttermost of theyr reproche & correccyon[3], & they by coaccyon[4] and constraynt forcyd to do theyr dutye. By occasyon of which wordys, the Gaūteners retournynge to theyr former wylfulnesse, kepte styll theyr former opynyō, and defendyd the erle and his people as they before had done. Wherefore the erle seynge he myght not by strengthe preuayle agayne his enemyes, studyed the wayes & meanys to famysshe theym by hunger, so that by that meane he myght drawe the towne to his subiecciō; & that to brynge to effecte, he gyrde the towne about with a strōge siege. Than the Gaunteners supprysyd with more obduracion of herte agayn theyr prynce, made theym a capytayne namyd Phylyp Artyuele, ŷ sone of Iakes de Artyuele, before slayne of the Flemynges, lyke as to you I haue before shewid in the. xvii. yere of Phylyp de Valoys, late kynge of Fraunce; the whiche furnysshynge his people with all habylymentys of warre, made out of the towne, & pyght his feelde in a playne ioynynge vnto it, where the erlis people and they foughte a sharpe fyght and longe; but in the ende fortune was vnto the erle or duke so frowarde, that with losse of. v. M. of his soudiours, he was

[1] taxe. [2] or elles in his. edit. 1559. [3] of theyr reproche correctyd. MS. [4] occasyon edit. 1542. 1559.

forcyd to take Brugis for his suretie. By reason of this vyctory, this Artyuele beynge not a lytle supprysyd with pryde, exortyd in suche wyse the dwellers within the towne of Gaunt, and all suche as were nere neyghbours vnto them, to set aparte all occupacyon as well husbandry as other, and gyue theyr hole study vnto actys & featis of warre. The erle thus beynge within the towne of Brugys, a day of great solempnytie yerelye holden by them of Brugys approchyd, which they worshyppyd in the honoure of our Lordys bloode. To this daye of solempnytie vsyd yerely to come all the inhabitaũtis of the vyllagys & coũtrey there about. Which day of feest Phylyp de Artyuele callynge to mynde, appoyntynge[1] vnto hym. MM. of his sowdyours, and warnyd theym with armoure beynge clad vnder theyr clothys, shulde ascende by two, by thre, by foure, and by lyke small companyes vnto this feestfull solempnyte, and at suche tyme as he gaue warnynge, euery man to be redye with swerde in hãde, to make rome amõge the prese, to the ende that they myght take ỹ erle thã of helpe destytute. Which cautele thus preparyd for, at the day comyn of this sayde feest, the towne beinge replenysshyd with people, the sayd Artyuele, vnsuspecte of any persone, with his company in maner abouesayde, entryd the towne of Brugis, and, whẽ he sawe his best tyme, he sodeynly cryed "asarmys, asarmys." With whiche sodeyn crye the erle beynge astonyed, manfully for a whyle withstode his enemyes and encouragyd the people agayne them; but for that the Gaũteners were ĩ armoure and ỹ other vnarmyd, they of the erlys party fled soone. That seynge, the erle w̃ great dyffyculte fledde, and so lepynge ieopardously into the howse of an olde woman, escapyd and went vnto Scluse, and there a whyle helde hym. Thẽ this Artyuele, seynge that by the ayde of thẽ of Brugys he was dispoyntid of ỹ erlis takynge, felle vpon the inhabytauntys of the towne, & slewe of them a certeyne, and after with great pompe & pillage retournyd vnto Gaunt.

IN ỹ. vii. yere of this Charlys, by procuryng of his vncle Lewis, duke of Angeou, a taxe was efte axyd of ỹ comons of Fraunce, the which to brynge to effecte, many frẽdys and promoters were made, as well of cytezyns as other; but anon as the comons of Parys vnderstode of this, they became wylde, and assemblyd in thycke companyes, not regardynge the reasonable allegacions to them layed and shewyd by Petyr Dylet, and Iohñ Marsyll[2], though in them they had great affeccion and truste, but toke theym to theyr affeccion & mynde, and made amonge them certeyn capytaynes and rulers, and kepte the watche by nyght as enemyes had lyen about the cytie. Whiche insurreccyon & rebellyon thus begun within the cytie of Parys, the cytie of Roañ takynge thereof exaumple, arreryd a lyke murmure, and fensyd the cytie of Roan with lyke prouysyon, & made them a mamet of a fatte & vnwyldely [as. A][3] vylayne of the cytie caryed hym about the towne ĩa carte, and namyd hym, in derysyon of theyr prynce, theyr kynge, and ceasyd not to fall into many inconuenyencys, as robbynge of holy placys and other, not without shedynge of blood, wherof the cyrcumstaunce were longe to tell. But as all operacion of man hath ende, so this foly and rebellyõ of Frẽshemen was ceasyd, & many for ỹ trespasse therof caste ĩ harde and derke pryson, of the whiche the kynge entendyd to haue takyn cruell correccyon, ne had ben the great instaũt labour made by the rulers of the vnyuersytie of Parys, and other suche as were nere about the kynge, by whose meanys the multytude was pardoned, & a fewe, suche as were the begynners, were put in execucion. And than, as testyfyeth myne auctour maister Robert Gagwyne, for to appease the kynges hyghe dyspleasure, to hym was grauntyd an. C. thousande frankys, which after sterlynge moncy amoũteth to ỹ sũme of. x. M. *li.* Ye haue before harde howe the erle of Flaunders with great ieopardy escapyd the handys of Phylyp de Artyuele, capitayn of Gaũt, and howe he came to Scluce & there safe gardyd hymselfe; where with all dylygence he gatheryd vnto hym his people & made a newe reyse vpon the sayd Artyuele, the whiche

[1] appoynted. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Matsyl. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* MS.

to hym had assocyat, as affermyth my sayde auctor. xl. M. men, so ỹ atwene the erle & *Fol. Clxii.*
hym was foughten a cruell fyght, wherof in the ende Artyuele was agayn vyctour, and cõstrayned the erle to forsake the feelde, w̃ losse of. x. M. of his knyghtes, and he hymselfe escapyd with great daũger vnto the ilelande of [1], and dyuerse of his people, as Frenshemen and other, in a good noũbre fled vnto a towne callyd Andwerpe, where a season they defendid thẽ agayn the malyce of theyr enemyes. In whiche passe tyme this Artyuele coniecturynge in his mynde that the Frenshe kynge wolde take the erlys partye, sent vnto hym an ambassade or message w̃ letters, besechynge hym not to entremedle of this warre atwene ỹ erle and the Gaũteners, which warre ỹ erle had cõmencyd onely of tyranny and not of iustyce, entendynge vtterly to distroy the[2] auncient lybertie and fraũchyse; shewynge also farther, that if he wolde not at theyr contemplacion and prayer, forbere to ayde theyr sayd erle, that thã, to defẽde theyr lyberte & ryght, they wolde seke ayde of the kynge of Englonde. To the whiche request none answere was made, neyther by the kynge nor by his counceyll; wherefore this Artyuele made stronge prouysyon to withstande the Frenshe kynge, and sette a certeyne of his sowdyours for to kepe the siege before Andwerpe, whyle he made prouysion for other nedys. In this meane whyle the erle went vnto the duke of Burgoyne, & they together yode after vnto kyng Charlis, shewynge to hym lamẽtably what wronges ỹ erle had susteynyd of the obstynat Gaunteners, beseechyng hym of ayde to redresse the sayde wronges; whiche complaynt the kynge gracyously herde, and benyngly grauntyd to them theyr petycion. And notwithstãdynge that the deed of wynter was cõmynge, he ī all haste assẽblyd his knyghtys, & takynge with hym the oryflambe, with a myghty strõge hoste, percyd the countrey of Flaunders towarde Marquet, in the ende of the moneth of Octobre. Wherof herynge, Artyuele made prouysyon to stoppe the wayes, by brekyng of brydges and other meanes, wherby the Frẽsh hoost was gladly empesched[3] and let, so that with great dyffycultie & daunger they passyd the ryuer of Lyze, at a brydge longe defendyd by the inhabytauntis of the countrey, with ayde of theyr capitayne named Peter Wood, which there was slayne with. MMM. of his adherentys. After wynnynge of whiche brydge, the Frenshe hoost passyd the ryuer and spoylyd the countrey before them, whiche vnto them was moche auaylable, for that cyrcuyte was inhabytyd with many ryche cloth makers. Than the kynge with his hoost made towarde ỹ mount of Ipre, wherof the dwellers of Ipre beyng ware, sent out. ii. fryers of the ordre of prechers, to beseche the kynge to accept ỹ towne and dwellers vnto his mercye, the whiche retournyd with comfortable answere; wherefore, forthwith yode forthe. xii. of the notablest of that towne, and offeryd the towne and dwellers to be in the kynges power, the which offer ỹ kynge acceptyd, and after entryd the towne, of whome the kynge receyuyd. xl.M. frankys, or. iiii.M.*li.* sterlynge, towarde the wagynge of his knyghtis; and shortlye after all the vyllagys there towarde ỹ see, submyttid thẽ vnto ỹ kyng, bryngyng vnto hym certeyn capitaynes which belongyd vnto Phylyp de Artyuele, with also. xl.M. frãkys towarde theyr costis, which capitaynys the kynge commaundyd to be fourthewith behedyd. Whan kynge Charlys hadde taryed. v. dayes at Ipre, worde was brought to hym that Phylyp Artyuele was commyng towarde hym with. lx.M. men; wherefore the kynge sette forwarde his hoost, and folowyd after [as fast he myght][4] somdeale to his peyne, by reason of rayne and fowle waye that he passyd, so that ỹnally he approchyd within. iii. myles of his enemyes. Vpon the morowe folowynge, beynge ỹ. v. daye of the moneth of Decembre, and yere of our Lordys incarnacyon. M.CCC.lxxx. &. viii. and begynnyng of the. viii. yere of this Charlys, ī a playne nere vnto ỹ towne of Courtray was foughten a cruell batayll, whereof in the begynnyng the Flemynges had the better, and forcyd ỹ Frenshe hoste to lose place; but in the ende, [by specyall callynge of the Frenshe knyghtys vnto our Ladye and other seyntys][5] halfe by myracle, as witness.

[1] the ileland of Cassyle. MS. called Lyle. edit. 1559. [2] their. MS. [3] gretely ennpechid.
[4] *Omitted in the* MS. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

yth myne auctor, ỹ Frēshmen opteyned victory, & put the Flemynges to flyght, & them chasyd ī so cruell wyse, that what by deth in the feelde, & drownynge in mareys & other waters, there was of them slayn at ỹ fyght vpō. xl.M. Than narowe serche was made for the capytayne, Phylyp de Artyuele, & lastlye a Flemynge, beynge a capytayne of his, sore woundyd, sayd ỹ he sawe hym fall in the feelde. Whereupon serche beynge[a], hys caryen was founden oppressyd of his owne people as they fledde. Anon as tydynges came vnto the Flemynges that laye about Andwerpe, of the losynge of ỹ feelde, they ī all haste, leuyng theyr ordenaunce behynde them, fledde from ỹ syege: that perceyuynge, theyr enemyes issuyd out of the towne, & slewe of them many, & many were drownyd in fennys and maryeys. Whan the Frenshe kyng had opteynyd thus this gloryouse victory, he thā entryd ỹ towne of Courtraye, where he so restynge hym, oratours were sent to hym frome the towne of Brugys, which than had newely takyn partye with Artyuele, and with the payment of an. C. &. xx. M. frākys, or. xii. M.*li.* sterlynge money, there made a peace for ỹ sayd towne of Brugys; and whan the kyng shuld departe from Courtray, he cōmaūdid his knyghtys to bete downe the gatys of the same, without harme doynge vnto the people. But the Frenshemen, beryng in mynde the rebukys and harmys which they before of that towne had susteynyd, bete downe great parte of ỹ wallys, robbed and slewe moche of the people, & set fyre vpon the towne whan they had done. In robbynge of this towne of Courtray, dyuerse letters were founde of the towne or cytie of Parys, which cōteynyd the rebellyon of the Parysyencis before declared, with comforte to them for ayde if they nedyd; which letters whā they came vnto the kynges syght, he was with them of Parys greuously dyspleasyd, and for the same theym by fyne greuouslye after punysshed. At suche tyme as the kynge had thus repossessyd the erle of the lordeshyp of Flaunders, Gaunt yet remaynynge in theyr firste errour, helde theyr towne so strongely, ỹ nother kynge nor erle myght wynne within them; albe it that after the Frēshe kyng was retournyd into Fraūce, they sent certeyne oratours vnto hym, the which he ī no wyse wolde suffer to come in his syght. In theyse passed yerys many skyrmysshes and fyghtes were done atwene the Frenshemen and Englysshemen, which somedeale are towchyd in ỹ begynnynge of Rychardys reygne, but nothynge to the honoure of the Frenshemen, as they in theyr cronycles boste & auaūce themselfe. Many moo rebellyōs and insurreccyōs of this people myght I here brynge in, but for dyuerse consyderacions which to wyse men may appere, I thynke it better to spare, & also ỹ rehersayll of theym wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme, wherefore I passe ouer.

AFter ỹ appeasynge of these inordynat insurreccions & murmurys, & that ỹ lāde was somedeale set in a quyetnesse, kynge Charlys, in ỹ begynnyng of the. ix. yere of his reygne, maryed Isabell ỹ doughter of ỹ duke of Bauary. In this yere also dyed Charlys, ỹ kyng of Nauerne, a man of great age, and by a wonderfull hap, as rehersyth myn auctor. For so it was, that for his feblenesse or debylyte of age, he, by councell of physycyons, was sowyd in a shete wesshyd with aqua vite, to the ende to cause his olde body to catche naturall hete; but howe it was, as this shete was tacked about his bodye, the sewer takynge his candell to burne of the ende of the trede, or he were ware the fyre fastened in the shete, & so brent his flesshe or it myght be lowsyd from hym, that he caught therof such dissease, that he dyed the thyrde daye folowynge; which mysbappe fell to hym, after the opynyon of myn auctour, by the wreche of God, as cōdygne meryte for his vnstedfastnesse and vntroth by hym before vsyd, as ī sūdry placys before, in the storyes of kyng Iohn, and Charlys his sone, are manyfestly shewed. In this yere also a batayll was done at Parys atwene. ii. knyghtis of the duke of Alenson, wherof the cause ensuyth. This sayde duke hadde in his court two knyghtys, whereof that one was named Iohn Carengon or Carongyon, and ỹ other Iaquet Gryse, which were both in good fauour of theyr

Fol. C.lxiii.

[a] beyng made.

mayster.

mayster. This Carongion, were it for delyte to se straũge coutreys, or cause of other auenture, as pylgrymage or other, departid out of Fraunce, leuynge his wyfe in a castell or fortresse of his owne; which wyfe was goodlye & fayer; after whose departynge, were it for beauty of the woman or for euyll wyll ỹ he bare towarde his felowe, thus laquet Gryse entryd ỹ castell, berynge his wyfe on hande that he was comyn to see that house, whiche shewyd so fayre outwarde. The woman castynge no parell, acceptynge hym for hyr husbandis frende and hyrs, shewyd to hym the cyrcuyte of the place; but he in contrary awaytynge his praye, whan he sawe the woman farre from company, forsyd hyr in such maner, that contrary hyr wylle he cõmysed with her auoutry; at whose departynge she gaue vnto hym many rebucous wordys, sayinge playnlye, that if hyr husbonde euer retournyd, she wolde of that velony be reuẽgyd. This dede was kepte secrete tyll the retourne of hyr husbonde, at whose home commynge, she with lamentable countenaũce shewyd tyll[1] hyr husbonde all the demeanure of the sayd laquet. After which complaynt by hyr husbonde well vnderstondyn, he yode streyght vnto the duke of Alenson, requyrynge hym to do correccyon vpon the auoutrer, or ellys that he myght trye with hym in the felde by fortune of batayll: wherof nother ỹ duke wolde graũt, but brought the quarell before the kyng, by whose agrement and commaundement a daye by the kynge was sette to fyght at Parys. Whan the daye of batayll was comen, Carongion brought his wyfe vnto the place to iustyfye hyr former sayinge; after affyrmacion whereof, eyther fyrste ranne at other with sharpe sperys, at whose course laquet wounded his enemye in the thyghe with his spere; but Carongion beyng with it nothyng dysmayed, lyght from his horse, & bare hym so manfullye, that he ouercame his aduersarye, and causyd hym to confesse his offence; for ỹ which he was streyght drawen vnto the gybet of Parys and there hangyd: and to the sayde Carongion the kynge gaue in rewarde a thousande frankys, or. C. *li.* sterlynge money; and ouer that he gaue vnto hym, as an annuall fee or rent. CC. frankys, which is ī value of. xx *li.* sterlyng money. [In theyse dayes, as wytnessyth Gagwynus, an anker berynge in his hande a rede crosse, a man to loke to of goostlye conuersacyon, came vnto the Frenshe kynges court, desyrynge to speke with the kynge, the whiche by the housholde seruauntys or famylyers of the court, was lõge kepte from his presence; albe it ỹ lastelye he was broughte vnto hym, to whom he shewyd that he was deuynely monysshed that he shuld charge hym to absteyne from his customable vse in leuyinge so often taskys and subsydyes, and if he dyd not, he shulde well vnderstande that the wrath of God was nere to hym, to punysshe hym if he refusyd his commaũdement; the which message the kynge toke at small regarde. But shortlye after the quene was delyueryd of a doughter that dyed soone after; wherefore, the kynge callynge to mynde the ankers wordys, for feere of other punysshement, refraynyd a season from leuyinge of trybutys and taskys; but by the exortacyon of his two vnkyllys, he ī short season after tournyd to his former custome.][2] Kynge Charlys thus passynge his tyme with great murmure of his commons, and rebellyon of the duke of Brytayn, with many other aduersaryes[3], whiche were lõge to wryte; lastlye in the. xiiii[4]. yere of his reygne or nere about, he made warre vpon the people of West Fraunce, callyd in Laten Cenomanni, [in Englysshe][5] Whan Charlys was entryd this countrey, whiche was in the domynyon of the duke of Brytayne, the duke sent vnto hym messyngers, sayinge to hym that he shulde not nede to inuade his countrey with so great strengthe, for he and his shulde be hoolye at his commaundement; but of this message the kynge tooke no regarde, for[6] sayth myne auctour, he was not moost wysest prynce, but was rulyd by his housholde seruaũtys, and beleuyd euery lyght tale that was brought to hym, and ouer that he was so lyberall, that it was of wyse men accõptid more prodygalyte than lyberalytye. As Charlys, not withstãdynge this message of the duke, helde on his iourney, commynge

[1] to. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] aduersytyes. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.
[4] xiii. edit. 1559. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [6] as sayeth. edit. 1542. 1559.

nere vnto a woode, he was sodeynly met of a man lyke vnto a begger, whiche sayde vnto hym, "Whyther goest thou sir kynge? be ware thou goo no farther, for thou arte betrayed, and into the handys of thyne enemyes thyne owne meynye shall delyuer the." With this monyssyon of this poore man, the kynge was astonyed, and stoode styll, and began to muse; in whiche study he so beynge, one of his folowers, which after hym bare his spere, slepyd vpō his horsebacke, and in his so slepynge lette his spere fall vpon the helmet of his felowe, with whiche stroke the kynge was sodeynly feryd, thynkynge his enemyes hadde commen vnwarelye vpon hym; wherefore he in gere[1] he drewe his swerde, and layed about hym at ŷ geynyst, and slewe. iiii. of his knyghtys or he were refraynyd, and toke therwith such an endelye fere, that he fell therwith dystraught; wherfore he was to a place there by brought, and lay there in poynt of deth a longe season after, in so moch that the fame ranne that he was dede; but by prayers and other great dedys of charyte done for hym, lastely he recouered and retournyd vnto Parys. And for he was not yet retournyd to his parfyght helth, his two vncles, than beyng that one duke of Berry, and that other duke of Burgoyne, toke vpon them, by auctoryte of the astatys of the lande, to rule the realme for ŷ season; in which season dyuerse offycers were alteryd and chaungyd. The kynge thus contynuinge his sykenesse, many interludys and gamys were deuysyd for the kynges recreacyon and comforte. And vpon a season, he beynge lodgyd in the quenys lodgynge in the subarbis of Seynt Marcell, dyuerse noblemen of ŷ court made a dysguysynge, and apparaylyd theym in lynnen clothes glewyd vnto theyr nakyd bodyes with pytche, and florysshyd theym with [dyuerse paynturys sette out with][2] dyuerse colours and oylys, so that they were coueryd all excepte the facys; and thus apparaylyd, ẅ torche lyght entryd the chaūbre where as the kynge was, and there in goodly maner shewyd theyr dysporte, so that the kyng was therwith well contentyd. But were it of rechelesnesse or of some euyll dysposyd persone, fyre was put to the vesturis of the disguysers, the which anon was vpon suche a flame that no man there coulde quenche it; wherefore the sayde dysguysers, beynge by reason of the pytche and oylys greuously turmentyd, ranne into pyttes and waters whiche they myght sonest attayne vnto, & so with great dyffyculte sauyd theymselfe: in meane tyme wherof, the chaūber beynge with the same fyryd, grewe in so great a flame, that in shorte whyle the more parte of that lodgynge was cōsumyd, to the great fere of the kyng and other astatys than there beynge present, and augmentynge agayn of his former sykenesse, so that certeyne apoyntementys to be holden atwene hym and Rycharde kynge of Englonde, were for ŷ tyme put of.

Fol. CJxiiii.

IN ŷ. xvi. yere of this Charlys, the maryage of peace atwene bothe realmys was concluded and fynysshyd at Calays, as before I haue shewyd to you in the. xix. yere of kynge Rycharde; and that tryumphe fynysshyd, Charlys, at the contemplacion and prayer of the kynge of Hungry, sent vnto hym Phylyp erle of Artoys, with dyuerse other knyghtys in good noūber, to ayde the sayde kynge agayn the Turkys; the whiche after that they hadde there a season warryd, the capytayns and the more party of the Frenshemen, of the Turkys were dystressyd & slayen, and many taken prysoners to theyr great charge. This Charlys, thus contynuynge his sykenesse, two frerys of seynt Augustynes order, beynge desyrous of money, toke vpon them to cure the kynge, and after they hadde shauen his hede and mynystryd to hym medycyns, the kynge daylye feblyd in suche wyse that he was nye dede; for which cōsyderacion, they examyned by phylosophers and doctours of physyke, [and they ŷ were][3] founde vncunnynge, were degradyd of theyr presthode, and after behedyd: to this folye were theyse frerys brought, by the excytynge of the duke of Burgoyne, as the common fame went. In the. xix. yere of this Charlys, ŷ lande of Fraunce was greuously vexyd with the plage of ipydymye, of whiche sykenesse a great multytude of people dyed. And that yere was there also seen a blasynge starre of

[1] anger. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

wonderful

wonderfull bygnes, with stremys apperynge to mennys syghte of moste feruent brennynge. In thys yere also, Charlys herynge of the subduynge of kynge Rycharde, sent into Englãde two of his houshold knyghtys, requyrynge kynge Henrye the. iiii., thã newly made kynge, to sende home his doughter Isabell latelye maryed vnto kynge Rycharde, w̃ suche dowar as with hir was promysed; in doynge of whiche message kynge Henrye toke suche dyspleasure, that, as sayth Gagwinus myne auctour, he threwe the sayde. ii. knyghtys in prysone, wherthrough one of theym namyd Blanchet, dyed in Englonde, and that other callyd Henry, after great sykenesse, retournyd into Fraunce. And shortly after kynge Henry sent the sayde dame Isabell vnto Calays, where she was ioyously receyued of the Frenshemen, and so conueyed vnto hyr sayde father, whiche as yet was not of his sykenesse curyd. By reason whereof, amonge the lordis of Fraũce, euerycne of theym coueytynge to haue rule, great dyssencion and malyce begã to kendle, and specyallye atwene the dukys of Orleaunce, of Burgoyne, and of Berry. Than the duke of Orleaunce entendyng to promote his cause, vnknowinge the other lordes, allyed hym with the duke of Geldre, and strẽgthyd hym with. v. hundreth men of his, and so entryd the feeldys of Parys. And in lyke maner the duke of Burgoyne with a stronge company kepte an other cooste of that countrey. Notwithstandyng, by meanys of other lordes, theyse two dukys were kepte asunder, and at lengthe the duke of Orleaunce, by the kynges commaundement, that some what was than amendyd, was ordeynyd regent of ỹ realme; the which anon as he was sette in auctoryte, fell to all rauyne, and oppressyd ỹ people with cotydyan taskys and tallagys, and the spyrytuell men with dymys and other exaccyons; wherfore, by reason of ỹ the studyẽtis of Parys, he was at lengthe dischargyd of that dygnyte, & the duke of Burgoyne for hym put in auctoryte. Than the duke of Orleaunce beynge dyscontentyd, yode vnto Lucenbourgth, a towne in hyghe Almayne, and soughte agayne ayde of the duke of Geldre foresayde; but by his frendys he was so aduertysed, that with his owne folkys he retournyd into Fraunce; but yet the malyce and stryfe atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyn seasyd not. About this season, or soone after, dyed ỹ duke of Brytayn, & as affermyth ỹ auctour afore namyd, kyng Hery ỹ. iiii. maried his wyfe. Wherof heryng, the duke of Burgoyn, with a companye of. vi.M. knyghtys entryd Brytayn, & there by strength toke from hyr, hyr. iii. sonnys, namyd Iohñ, Rycharde, Arthure[1], and presentyd them vnto kynge Charlys. In the. xxii. yere of this Charlis, was borne of Isabell his wyfe a man chylde, which also was named Charlys, the which, after the deth of his father, vnto the great aduersyte of all the realme of Fraunce, was kynge of that realme, and contrary the appoyntment taken atwene Henry the. v. after kyng of Englonde, & this Charlys the father, nowe kynge of Fraunce, as after shall more[2] appere in the story of the sayde kyng Henry ỹ. v. In this yere also was dame Isabell, some tyme wyfe of Rycharde, lately kynge of Englonde, maried vnto Charlys, eldest sone of the duke of Orleaũce; and Iohñ ỹ eldyst of the. iii. forenamed sonys of the duke of Brytayne latelye dede, toke to wyfe Margarete the douhter of kynge Charlys; and Phylyp, duke of Burgoyn, dyed soone after, leuyng an heyre after hym named Iohñ, the whiche after he was gyrde w̃ the swerde of the duchy of Burgoyne, he anon by euyll entysynge and counceyll, areryd warre agayne the duke of Orleaunce, to the great dysturbaunce of all ỹ realme. For the sayd duke of Orleaunce was a prynce of a wõderfull hyghe courage, & desyrous of great honoure, &, after the sayinge of Gagwynus, coueytyd to be kyng of Fraũce; ỹ which went to Auyngnyon, where as thã sate ỹ. xiii. Benet thã pope[3], duryng ỹ scisme, & admytted by some of ỹ cardynallys after the deth of Clement the. vi.; to which Benet the sayd duke made great labour to depryue ỹ vnyuersyte of Parys frome the great auctoryte that it at those dayes stode in, which was of maruelous auctoryte thã, as sayth the forenamed auctour. In this whyle thus enduryng, ỹ lãde [fell][4] full of myseries & aduersites, ỹ quene which ỹ moch

[1] and Arthur. [2] more clerely. MS. [3] B. of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

fauourid

fauourid ỹ dukis partye, accõpanyed w̃ ỹ sayd duke, rode to take hir disporte of huntynge into the coũtey of Meldon, to which place she sent letters vnto ỹ dalphyn by ỹ duke of Bauary hir brother, that he with his wyfe, whiche was doughter vnto the duke of
Fol. C.lxv. Burgoyne, shulde come for to dysporte them. Wherof Iohñ, than duke of Burgoyn, beynge warned, suspectyd the quene that she with ayde of the duke wolde cõuey the daulphyn into Germanye, and there to holde hym at theyr pleasures: and to enpeche that purpose, he in all haste sped hym towarde the daulphyne, and contrarye the mynde of the duke of Bauarye, whiche than was vpon his waye w̃ the sayde daulphyne towarde the quene, retournyd hym and lodged hym in a stronge castell callyd Lupar; whereof herynge, the duke of Orleaũce assembled to hym a company of. vi. thousande knyghtys, came agayne towarde Paris, where as that tyme the duke of Burgoyne was, and[1] herynge of the dukys cõmynge, made hym stronge to receyue hym, to whome the cytezyns of Parys were fauourable and aydynge, for the euyll wyll that they before bare vnto the duke of Orleaunce, and also for they hoped by hym to be defendyd from taskys and tallagys. Thus contynuynge the prouysyon vpon both partyes to mete shortlye in playne batayll, suche polytyke meanys was founde by a noble man callyd Mountagu, that a concorde and vnyte was for that tyme by hym sette atwene the sayd dukys; and for that newe occasyon shulde not by presence kyndle atwene them, therefore the duke of Orleaunce with his cõpany was sent into Guyan to warre vpõ the Englysshe men, and that other vnto Calays to laye syege vnto that towne, the whiche before had preparyd a wonderfull engyne sette vpon whelys, by the strengthe whereof he thought to wreke[2] great dysturbaũce vnto the sayde towne; and, as sayeth myne auctour Gagwyne, was in great hope to recouer it agayne to the subiectyon of the house of Fraunce. But that hope was soone dysprayed[3], for it was not longe after or the sayde duke by the kynge was coũtyrmaundyd and retournyd. And the duke of Orleaunce, after he knewe that rescous were commynge from Burdeaux, he remoued his syege layde by hym to Burgus, a towne of Guyan, and so retourned into Fraunce, to his confusyon as after shall appere.

IN the. xxvii. yere of this Charlys, ỹ former malyce and enuye contynuyng in the brestys of the sayd dukys of Orleaunce and of Burgoyne, as the sayde duke of Orleaũce was goyng towarde his lodgyng in the nyght of the. x. daye of December, fell vpon hym certayn knyghtes, of the which one named Rafe Auctouyle was leder, and slewe hym nere vnto a gate of the cytie of Parys named Barbet gate. After which murder fynysshed, ỹ sayde syr Rafe, with his adherentys, fled vnto ỹ place of ỹ erle of Artoys, where the duke of Burgoyne vsyd accustomably to resorte; and the dede corps was soone after, by suche as came to the exclamacyon, with also a seruaunt of his w̃ hym slayen, borne into the nexte housys. Whan the rumour of this murder was blowen abowte the cytie, anon Lewys, vncle vnto the kynge, and than kynge of Scecyle, the dukys of Berry and of Burbon with other, drewe thyder, & there with lamentacion beholdynge the corps, commaunded prouysyon to be made for ỹ buryinge of it w̃in the monasterye of Celestynys, where vpon the seconde daye folowynge he was buryed with great pompe, whom, amonge other lordys, folowed to his buryinge, the duke of Burgoyne, not wout great susspicion of the sayde murder. And that enterement with due obseruaunce fynysshed, auctoryte was geuẽ vnto. ii. knyghtys, namyd Robert Tuyller and Peter Orpheuer, to make enquery for the murder of this prynce: whereof the duke of Burgoyne beyng asserteynyd, voydyd the cytie, and brake the brydge of seynt Maxence after hym, that pursute after hym shulde not be made, and so hastely sped hym, that that nyght folowynge he came to Andwarpe, whiche is vpon an. C. myle from Parys. Whã Charlys the kyng harde of ỹ escape of ỹ sayd duke, feryng lest he wolde accuse hym to be cõsentynge vnto that euyll dede, sent vnto hym comfortable messagys, so that the sayde duke without warre restyd

[1] and he. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] werk. MS. [3] dyspayred.

all

all ỹ wynter, some tyme in Arthoys, and an other whyle in Flaũders at his pleasure. In the which passe tyme he sent into dyuerse placys of Fraunce sundry accusasyons of the duke before slayen, that he entẽdyd to depose the kyng, and to take vpon hym the rule and gouernaunce of the realme, & to haue poysoned the sayd kynge, as by dyuerse tokyns by hym affermyd for perfourmaunce of the same. And also ỹ the sayde duke of Orleaũce was cause of fyryng of the dysguysers garmentis before shewyd, to the ende to brynge the kynge in more daunger of sykenesse, or ellys to be cõsumyd with the same fyre, with sundry other diffamacions, as leuyinge of taskys and imposyciõs of ỹ people, to his synguler auaũtage & hugely enrychynge, whereby he myght ỹ soner atayn vnto his sayd purpose. Thus contynuyng[1] great vnkyndenesse grewe atwene ỹ duke of Burgoyn & the sone, and other of his blode of ỹ duke of Orleaunce, the sayde duke agayne the begyñynge of ỹ yere, herynge that the kynge and the quene were departyd from Parys to Chartris, assemblyd to hym a stronge power of Holanders and other, and came vnto Parys; in which cytie he moche trustyd, to the ende to cause the kyng, the quene and the doulphyne, to whom he had maryed his doughter, for to retourne vnto Parys. And to strength his partye, he brought with hym Wyllyã erle of Hanster, which Wyllyam was a man of great strengthe and allyaunce, and hadde maryed his syster vnto the duke of Burgoyne foresayd, and his doughter and heyre vnto one of kyng Charlys sonnys, and was gossyp vnto the quene: for which sayd cõsyderacions the sayd erle entendyng the weale of that realme of Fraunce, laboured suche wayes and meanys, that by hym for that tyme a concorde & vnyte was dryuen and made atwene the. ii. dukys of Orleaunce and Burgoyne, with assuryd othes and necessary actys to ỹ cõcorde belongyng, and the kyng with his retynewe was agayn retournyd vnto Parys. Theyse dukys thus appeasyd, and the duke of Burgoyne agayn restored to the gouernaunce of the realme, associat vnto hym the kynge of Nauerne, whiche varyed not from his fathers vnstable cõdicions, so that by hym newe occasyons of stryfe and varyaũce were moued atwene the sayde dukys & theyr allyes. For fyrste they sought occasyon agayn the forenamed Mountagu, a man of great wysedome & honoure in the kynges courte, & especyall frende vnto the duke of Orleaunce, & by theyr malyce and vntrewe surmyses, fynally put to deth[2]. And one namyd Peter Essayer or Sayer than prouoste of the cytie of Paris or gouernoure, they admytted to ỹ rule of ỹ kynges treasoury, & other dyuerse officers such as were any thyng fauoured of the duke of Orleaũce they clerely dyscharged; the whiche, for theyr relefe & comforte, resortyd vnto the sayd duke, shewynge to hym all the demeanure of theyr[3] aduersaries, addyng thereunto that all suche conuencions concernynge the amyte atwene hym & ỹ duke of Burgoyn before sworne and enacted, were clerely adnullyd and *Fol. Clxvi.* broken. With theyse tydynges the duke beynge fyred with new malyce, accompanyed to hym the dukes of Berry, of Burbon, and of Alenson, the erlys of Rychemount, of Alybert, & of Armenake, with other nobles not a fewe, by whose coũceyllys he determyned to be auengyd vpõ the duke of Burgoyn and other his fawtours; whereof the sayd duke beynge monysshed, drewe hym towarde Parys, and strengthyd the fortressys as he yode. To this duke of Burgoyne was brother the duke of Brabande named Antony, a man of great polycy and wysedome, the which forecastyng ỹ great shedyng of Cristen mannys bloode, with many other inconuenyencys lykely to haue ensuyd of this variaunce atwene theyse. ii. dukis, made such affectuouse labour, ỹ with great dyffycute he pacyfyed them agayn for that tyme, and brought them to personall cõmunycacion, and lastly to amyable and frendely departynge. After which concorde & amyte thus agayn concluded, the duke of Burgoyne departyd into Pycardy, leuynge behynde hym ỹ forenamed Peter Essayr to rule the cytie of Paryse, the whiche shortlye after drewe to hym such persones as before tyme had vexyd and dystourbyd ỹ duke of Orleaunce frendys and seruaũtis within that cytie: by whose meanys the sayde Petyr soughte fyrste occasyon agayne a

[1] continuyng this. edit. 1542, 1559. [2] put hym. MS. [3] his. MS.

knyght namyd Venyt Thorney, and by false suggestyon smote first of his hede, and after dyd his body to be hanged vpon the comon gybet of Parys, in dyspyte of the sayde duke, as testyfyeth myne auctour: wherewith the duke beynge wondersly amoued, reassemblyd his knyghtis, and sped hym towarde a towne named[1] ; and for to strengthe another towne named[2] , he sent a certeyne noumber of his knyghtys, chargyng them with the dwellers to withstande the force of his enemyes. Of this herynge the duke of Burgoyne, anon gatheryd vnto hym the noumber of. xvi.M. Flemynges and Pycardys, and sped hym vnto the sayd towne of[3] , and so with his instrumentis of warre assaylyd the gate of the sayde towne, whiche ledyth towarde Seynt Quyntynes, that in shorte space ỹ sayde Flemynges wan the entre of the towne. In which meane season, the dwellers with ỹ other soudyours by a backe waye or water, whereof the maner by this auctour is not expressyd, lefte the towne and yode vnto the duke of Orleaunce, beyng as yet at the foresayde towne of[4] . Whan the Flemynges were entryd the towne, & foũde it deserte of people and pyllage, were it for that that they lackyd theyr praye, or for other cause here not shewyd, they toke suche vnkyndenesse agayn ỹ duke, that for prayer, nor yet for manassis, they wolde[5] with hym any lenger tary, but retournyd them home in all hasty spede towarde theyr owne countrey; so that the duke was fayne to withdrawe, and for the more suretie, to aske ayde and helpe of Englisshemen, and so was holpen by the pryncis comforte[6], Henry sone of Hẽrye the. iiii., as after shall be towchyd in the. xii. yere of the. iiii. Henry.

IN ỹ. xxxi. yere of this kyng Charlys, whiche was the. xii. yere of the. iiii. Henrye then kynge of Englonde, the duke of Orleaunce seinge his enemye was turned from Parys, caused suche brydges as before by his sayde enemye were broken, to be reedyfyed, by the whiche he passyd the ryuer tyll he came to Seynt Denys, where as than he fande a capytayne a noble man namyd syr Iohñ Cabylon, of ỹ dukys of Burgoyne, there lefte by hym to strengthe ỹ towne; the which syr Iohñ, cosyderynge the wekenesse of the sayd towne, with also his lacke of strengthe, yeldyd hym and the towne vnto ỹ duke, swerynge to hym by solempne othe, that after that daye he shulde neuer bere armys agayne hym. In this passe tyme, an other capytayn of the Burgonyons, Gancourt[7], secretly by nyght wan vpon the Frenshe men the brydge of Seynt Cloalde[8]; but not longe after the duke of Orleaunce sent thyder certeyne Brytons, the which agayn recouered ỹ sayd brydge, and helde it vnto the sayde dukys vse. In which tyme and season, the duke of Burgoyne recouerynge his strenght, passyd the brydge of Melent, and so came vnto the cytie of Parys, & the day folowynge, with helpe of the cytezyns, recouered the aboue sayde brydge of Seynt Clodalde, & dystressyd vpon a. M. Brytons which had the warde of the same. Then the duke of Orleaunce made out of Seynt Denys ouer Sayne brydge towarde Paris; wherof ỹ other duke beynge warnyd, refusyd the cytie, and with the kynge thã there beyng present, remouyd with the dolphyne to a towne callyd Stamps, and sent the erle of Marche named Iamys, with a certeyne knyghtys to a towne named[9] to strengthe it agayne the duke of Orleaunce, the which of the sayd dukys knyghtys was encountryd with & taken, and so sent to prysone. Wherof herynge, the duke of Burgoyne, in shorte processe after, retournyd vnto Paris w the kynge and dolphyne, & the duke of Orleaunce yode to a towne callyd Seyntclowe. And in the. xxxii. yere of this sayd kynge Charlys, by counceyll of ỹ duke of Berry & other, seynge that the sayd cytye of Parys was so sette agayn hym, with also the kynge and the doulphyne, sent a noble man of his hoost named Albrete vnto Hery ỹ. iiii. yet kyng of Englonde, to[1] requyre hym of ayde to withstande the tyranny of the duke of Burgoyne, that with his

[1] named Schãny. edit. 1559. [2] named Hane. edit. 1559. [3] of Hane. edit. 1559. [4] of Shanny. edit. 1559. [5] wolde not. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] prince his cosin. edit. 1559. [7] called Gancourt. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [8] Clodalde. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [9] named Poysete. edit. 1559.

complycis

complycis entēdyd to subuerte the realme of Fraūce: to this requeste kynge Henrye gaue good ere, and lastly graunted to his petycion, & sent thyder, as sayeth the Frēsh Cronycle, Thomas his sone duke of Clarence, also ỹ duke of Yorke, w̄ Iohn̄ erle of Cornewayll, accompanyed with viii.C. knyghtis and sowdyours & a. M. archers; the whiche company when they were landyd i Fraūce, & harde that ỹ Frēshe lordis were i treatye of a peace, & no man to them gaue wagys as they tofore were promysed, fell vpō a towne callyd' , and it ryffled, and therin toke as prysoners the abbot of that monastery with other, & cōueyed them to Burdeaux and after into Englonde, where, for theyr fynaunce and other money due of olde by the Frenshe kyng, as affermyth Gagwyne, they remayned many yerys after. After ỹ the Englysshmen were thus departyd, albe it that in the Englysshe Cronycle, and. xiii. yere of the forenamyd kynge Henry, of them is other reporte made, ỹ lordis of Fraūce retournyd to theyr olde dyssencyon, and cōtynued in longe stryfe, wherof the cyrcumstaunce were longe and tedyouse to tell, and to shewe the vnstablenesse of them, howe some whyle the duke of Orleaūce was fauoured of the kynge and the dolphyne, & there agayne the duke of Burgoyne clene out of conceyte. The which cōtencyon thus endurynge, kyng Henry the. iiii. dyed, and Hēry his sone the. v. Henry, was admytted for kyng of Englonde after hym, that shortlye after sent his ambassadours vnto the Frēshe kynge, axyng of hym his doughter Kateryne i mariage, as affermyth ỹ Frēshe boke. But dyuerse other wryters shewe, that he asked the *hoole* landys due to hym within the realme of Fraunce, by reason of the composycion *Fol. Clxvii.* made i tyme passid, atwene his progenytour Edwarde the thyrde & Iohn̄ thā kynge of Fraūce. And for he was dysdeynously answeryd, he therfore made vpō thē sharpe warre, as in the. iii^{e}. yere of the sayd Henry after somedeale doth apere. By reasō of which warre, the cyuyle batayll or stryfe that longe whyle had contynued amonge ỹ Frensshemen, than dyd asswage: for in the. iii^{i}. yere of this Henry, which was the. xxxv. yere of this Charlys, ỹ sayd Hēry inuadyd the realme of Fraunce, & had at Egyncourt a tryumphaunt vyctorye, as in the sayde. iii. yere of Henry the. v. is more at lengthe declared. Than it foloweth in the story, after many townes & stronge holdys by the Englysshe men in sundry placys of Fraūce opteynyd, in xxx. &. viii. yere of this Charlys, a Frēsshe man named ỹ lorde of ỹ Ile of Adam & Iohn̄ Vyllers in proper name, gatherynge to hym a company of tyrauntis to the noumber of. CCC. or moo, whereof many were olde seruauntys of the kynges housholde, and than put out by the dolphyne & other, that than had the rule of the kynge, by treason of a clerke opteynyd the keyes of one of the gatys of Parys, & so entryd ỹ cytie by nyghte, & by a watch worde amonge them deuysyd, assocyat to them many Burgonyons, & so beynge stronge yode where the kyng was & gate ỹ rule of his parsone, & that done all such as they myght fynde that thā bare any rule, they slewe by one meane & other; so that vpon the day folowynge was noūbryd of dede corpsys within the cytie vpon. iiii.M. Amonge the whiche, of noble men was Henry de Marle than chaūceller of Fraūce, and Grauntpre[4] with many other. And for to haue the more assistence of the common people, the sayde Vyllers set the kynge vpon an horse, and ladde hym about the cytie as he that ladde small reason to guyde hym selfe, & so rulyd all thyng as he and his company wolde. Wherefore the dolphyne ferynge to fall in the daūger of so wylde a cōpany, yode to Meldune or , and there called to hym such as thē were lefte on lyue to wstāde theyse tyrauntys: & the duke of Burgoyne, than beynge within the cytie, & compasser of all this myschefe, as some construed and demyd. After which company to hym gatheryd, retournyd[5] to ỹ cytie of Parys, and assaylyd one of the gatys; but whā he sawe the cytezyns toke party agayne hym, he thought his trauayle lost, wherfore, without great assawte makyng, he callid thēse his knyghtys, and so departyd agayn to the place which he came fro, and from thens vnto

[1] Bellin. edit. 1559. [2] fourth. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] fourth. edit. 1559. [4] erle of Grantpre. MS. [5] he retornyd

Thuron, in appeasynge the countreys & townes as he went, whiche at those dayes were farre out of frame. And thā in the. xxxix[1]. yere of the sayde Charlys, kyng Henry the v. landyd with a strōge power at a place callyd Touke in Normandy, and after layde siege to many stronge holdys and townes, and them wanne, as Cane, Phaleys, Roan, and other, as in the. vi. yere of the sayd Henry folowyng is more at length declared. In tyme of whiche warre thus made by kynge Henry, ỹ dolphyne & the duke of Burgoyne, eyther of them prouydyd to defende the malyce of the other, in so moche that, as testyfyeth ỹ Frēshe Cronycle, the duke was aduysed to haue taken party with ỹ Englysshemen. This sayinge, as wytnessyth an auctour named Floure of Hystoryes, whiche towchyth in Laten many gestys and dedys done by kynges of Englonde, sayeth ỹ ỹ Frenshemen brynge in ỹ, for to excuse theyr infortune & cowerdyse, by reason wherof they losynat all onlye theyr lāde, but also the honour & name of the same. Thā lastly the duke beynge of mynde, by exortacyon of Phylyp Iosquyne & Iohn̄ de Tolongn̄, w̄ also a lady callyd the cōtesse of Grat, the duke was recounsyled vnto the dolphyne, and a day of metynge apoynted at Mōstruell, where eyther of them shuld be accompanyed with. x. lordes onelye wout moo: at whiche daye the sayde prynces with theyr assygned lordes beynge assēblyd, many reasons & argumētys were layed and replyed vpon both sydes, by occasyon whereof one of the dolphynes company sodeynly drewe hys knyfe & strake the duke vnto the herte, so that he dyed soone after; whiche murder was supposed to be done by a knyght callyd Tanguyde de Chastell, which oftyme passid had ben famylyer seruaūt with the duke of Orleaunce, before slayen by meanys of the sayde duke of Burgoyne. After which murder thus cōmyttyd, the lāde of Fraūce was brought in moche more stryfe & variaūce, in so moch that Phylyp the sone of the sayde Iohn̄ duke of Burgoyne beynge than in Parys, and hauynge the rule of the kynge and the cytie, toke partye with the Englysshe men agayne the dolphyne; by reason whereof, as sundry wryters agre, kyng Henryes party was greatlye augmentyd and holpen, so that fynally kyng Henry opteynyd moche of his wyll, and shortlye after maryed dame Katheryne doughter of Charlys kynge[2], in the. xli. yere of his reygne, with assuraunce & promyse of the enherytaūce of the realme of Fraunce to hym and his heyres, after the deth of the sayde Charlys, as to you more playnlye shall be shewyd in ỹ. viii. yere of the sayde Henry the. v. After which maryage concludyd & fynysshyd, yet the dolphyne ceasyd not to make newe moeyons and sterynges: durynge the whiche kynge Charlys dyed in Octobre, and was buryed at Seynt Denys, whan he hadde reygnyd in great trouble vpon the poynt of. xlii. yeres, leuynge after hym, as is affermyd by the forenamyd auctour Gaguyne, a sone and dolphyne of Vyenne callyd Charlis, which after was kynge of Frenshemen, and wasnamyd Charlys the. vii. or the. viii. after some wryters.

Nota de morte Iohānis ducis Burgōdie.

Henry the. iiii.

HEnry the. iiii. of that name, and sone of Iohn̄ of Gaunt late duke of Lancaster, tooke possessyon of the domynyon of the realme of Englonde, as before in the ende of the story of the seconde Rycharde is shewyd, vpon the laste daye of Septembre, in the yere of our Lorde a thousande. CCC.lxxx.xix. and in ỹ. xix. yere of Charlys the. vii. thā kynge of Fraunce. After whiche possessyon soo by hym taken, anon he made newe offycers. As the erle of Northumberlande he made constable of Englonde, the erle of Westmerlande was made marshall, syr Iohn̄ Serle chaunceler, Iohn̄ Newebery esquyer tresorer, and syr Rycharde Clyfforde knyght keper of the pryuey sygnet: and that done, prouysyon was made for his coronacyon agayne the daye of the Translacyon of seynt Edwarde the Confessour next than cōmynge, and the parlyament was prolongyd

Offycers.

Fol. C.lxviii.

[1] two and thirte yere. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] this kyng. MS.

tyll

tyll ỹ Tuysday folowynge the sayd day of coronacyon. Than vpon the euyn of the sayde daye of coronacyon, the kyng wiñ the Towre of Lōdon made. xli. knyghtys of the Bathe, wherof. iii. were his owne sonnys, and. iii. erlys, &. v. lordys; and vpon Monday, beynge the sayd day of seynt Edwarde and the. xiii. day of October, he was crowned at Westmynster of the archebysshop of Caũterbury: after which solempnyte fynysshed, an honorable feest was holden within the great halle of Westmynster, where the kynge beynge set in the mydde see of the table, the archebysshop of Cauntorbury with. iii. other prelatys were set at the same table vpon the right hande of the kynge, and the archebysshop of Yorke with other. iiii. prelatys was sette vpon that other hande of the kynge, & Hēry ỹ kynges eldest sone stoode vpō the right hande w a poyntlesse swerde holdynge vp right, & the erle of Northhumberlande, newely made constable, stode vpō the lefte hande with a sharpe swerde holdē vp right, and by eyther of those swerdys stode. ii. other lordys holdē[1]. ii. cepters. And before the kynge stode, all ỹ dyner whyle, the dukys of Amnarle[2], of Surrey and of Exetyr, with other. ii. lordys. And the erle of Westmerlande, thā newely made marshall, rode about the halle w many typped staues about hym, to see the roume of the halle kepte, that offycers myght with ease serue ỹ tables. Of the whiche tables the chefe vpon the ryght syde of the halle was begunne with the barons of the. v. portys, and at the table next ỹ cupborde vpō the lefte hande, sate the mayer and his bretherne the aldermen of Lōdō, which mayer that tyme beynge Drewe Barentyne, goldsmyth, for seruyce there by hym that daye done, as other mayers at euery kynges and quenys coronacion vse for to do, had there a standynge cuppe of golde. Than after the seconde course was seruyd, syn Thomas Dymmoke knyght, beynge armyd at all peacis, and syttynge vpon a good stede, rode to the hygher parte of the halle, & there before ỹ kyng caused an herowde to make proclamacyon, that what man wolde saye that kynge Henry was not rightfull enherytoure of the crowne of Englonde, and rightfully crownyd, he was there redy to wage with hym batayll, thā, or suche tyme as it shuld please the kynge to assygne. Whiche proclamacion he causyd to be made after in. iii. sūdry placys of ỹ halle in Englysshe and in Frenshe, with many moo obseruauncis at his solempnytie exercysyd & done, whiche were longe to reherse. Than this feest with all honoure endyd, vpon the morne beynge Tuysday, the parlyament was agayne begunne. And vpon Wednysdaye syr Iohn Cheyny, ỹ before that tyme hadde occupyed as speker of that parlyament, by his owne labourc, for cause of such infyrmyties as he thā had, was dyschargyd, and a squyer namyd Wyllyam Durwarde was electe to that roume for hym. And then was the parlyament and the actys therof laste eallyd by kynge Rycharde, adnullyd & set at nought, and the parlyamēt holden in the. xi. yere of his reygne, holden for ferme and stable. And the same day Henrye the kynges eldest sone was chosen & admytted prynce of Walys and duke of Cornewall, and erle of Chester, and heyre apparaunt to the crowne. Vpon the Thursdaye folowynge was put into the Comon House, a byll deuysed by syr Iohn Bagot, than prysoner in the Towre, whereof the effecte was, that ỹ sayde syr Iohn confessyd that he harde kynge Rycharde saye, dyuerse tymes, and at sundry parlyamentys in his tyme holdē, that he wolde haue his entent and pleasure concernynge his owne matiers, what soeuer betyde of the resydue, and if any withstode his wyll or mynde, he wolde by one meane or other brynge hym out of lyfe.

Coronacio.

Bagottys byll.

Also he shewyd farther, that kynge Rycharde shuld shewe and saye to hym at Lichefelde, in the. xxi. yere of his reygne, that he desyred no lēger to lyue, than to see his lordes & commons to haue hym in as great awe and drede as euer they hadde any of his progenytours, so that it myght be cronycled of hym, that none passyd hym of honour and dygnyte, with condycion that he were deposyd and put from his sayd dygnyte the morowe after. And if euer it came soo to, that he shulde resygne his kyngelye mageste, he sayde his mynde was to resygne to the duke of Herforde, as to hym that was moost

[1] holding. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Aumarle. MS.

abeleste

abeleste to occupye that honour: but one thynge he feryd lest he wolde do, tyrannyse agayne ỹ Churche. More ouer he shewyd by ỹ sayd byll, ỹ as ỹ sayde syr Iohñ Bagot rode behynde the duke of Norfolke towarde Westmynster, ỹ sayd duke layed to his charge, ỹ he with other of the kynges counceyll hadde murdred the duke of Gloucetyr, the whiche at that tyme to the sayde duke he denyed, and sayde at that daye he was on lyue. But within. iii. wekys after, the sayd sir Iohñ, by the kynges commaundement, was sent with other persones vnto Calays, where, for fere of his owne lyfe, he sawe the sayd murder put in execucion. And farthermore he shewyd, that there was no man of honour at that dayes more in fauoure with kynge Rycharde, thā was the duke of Amnarle[1], and that by his coũceyll he toke the lordes, and wrought many other thynges after the sayd dukys aduyce.

Also he shewyd that he harde the kynge, beynge thā at Chyltrynlangley, swere manye great othes, that the duke of Herforde, nowe kynge, shulde neuer retourne into Englonde, and, rather then he shulde agayne enheryte his fathers landys, he wolde gyue them vnto the heyres of the duke of Gloucetyr, and of the erlys of Arundell and of Warwyke, at the laste parlyament adiuged. And farther he shewyd, that of all theyse matiers he sent the sayde duke knowlege into Fraunce, by one named Roger Smert, admonastynge hym to prouyde by his wysedome to withstãde the kynges malyce, which shewyd hym to be his mortall enemye. And lastlye he shewyd in the sayde byll, that he harde the duke of Amnarle' say vnto syr Iohñ Busshey, and to syr Henrye Grene, "I hadde leuer than. xx. thousande pounde that this man were dede;" and whā they hadde axyd of hym which man, he sayde "the duke of Herforde, not for drede that I haue of his persone, but for sorowe and rumours that he is lykelye to[2] make within this realme." Whiche byll was thā borne vnto the kynges parlyamẽt chaumbre, & there radde: after redynge whereof, the sayde duke of Amnarle' stoode vp and sayde, "as touchynge such artycles as in that byll were put agayn hym, they were false and vntrewe, & that he wolde proue vpon his body, or otherwyse as the kynge wolde commaunde hym." Vpon Fryday the sayde syr Iohñ Bagot was brought into the sayde parlyament chambre, and examyned vpō euerye artycle of his byll, all the whiche he there affermyd. Then it was axyd of hym what he coulde saye of[3] the duke of Excetyr; whereunto he answeryd and sayed that he coulde laye nothyng to his charge, "but there is," he sayd, "a yoman in Newgate callyd Halle ỹ can say somewhat of you:" than sayde the duke, "what soeuer he or ye can or lyste to saye of me, this is trouthe that I shall here expresse: trouthe it is that the laste tyme that the kyng was at Woodestoke, the duke of Norfolke and ye had me with you into the chapell, and closyd the dore vpō vs, and there ye made me to swere vpon the sacrament there present, to kepe suche counceyll as there ye shulde then shewe vnto me; where after ye shewyd to me, ỹ ye coulde neuer brynge youre purpose aboute, whyle syr Iohñ of Gaunt late duke of Lancaster lyued. Wherfore ye were aduysed for to haue shortly after a counceyll at Lychefelde; by the whyche ye cõdyscendyd that the sayd syr Iohñ shuld be arestyd in suche maner, that he shuld haue occasyon to disobey that areste, by reason whereof by chaunce medley he shuld be there slayen. Whereunto my coũceyll than was, that the kynge shulde calle his secrete counceyll, and if they agreed thereunto, I for my parte wolde agree vnto the same." To whiche sayinge syr Iohñ Bagot gaue none answere. And vpō Saterday the sayd Bagot & Halle were bothe brought into the parlyamẽt chaumbre, and there examyned, and after countyrmaũdyd to prysone: and assoone as they were departyd, the lorde Fitzwater stoode vp and sayde, "moost redoughtyd souerayne lord, where as the duke of Amnarle' hath before tymes, and nowe lately excusyd hym of ỹ dethe of the duke of Gloucetyr, I saye & wyll iustyfye it, that he was cause of his deth, and that I shall proue vpon his body if your grace be so contentyd." To the cõtrary whereof the duke with sharpe wordys answerid, so that gaugys of batayll were

Fol. C.lxix.

[1] Aumarle. MS. [2] for to. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] against. edit. 1542. 1559.

offerid of both parties, and sealyd and delyueryd vnto the lorde marshall. Thā partyes began to be taken amōge the lordes, in so moche that the duke of Surrey toke partye with the duke of Amnarle[1], & sayde that all that by hym was done, was done by constraynt of Rycharde than beynge[2] kynge, and he hymselfe & other, consentyd parforce to the same. Where agayn ȳ sayd lorde Fytz Water and other replyed; wherfore sylence was commaundyd, and forthwith the fore named Halle, for ȳ he had cōfessyd before the lordes that he was one of them that put to deth the duke of Gloucetyr at Calays, he therefore was iuged to be drawen from the Towre of London vnto Tybourne, and there to be hanged and quarteryd: the whiche execucion was done vpon the Mondaye folowynge. Thus with theyse causes & many other, this parlyament contynued tyll a newe mayer namyd Thomas Knollis, grocer, was admytted & sworne, vpon the day folowyng the feast of Symonde and Iude. Halle for iugyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCC.lxxx.xix. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.

Wyllyam Walderne.

Thomas Knollys, grocer. Anno. i.

Wyllyam Hyde.

IN this firste yere of kyng Henry the. iiii., yet lastyng the foresayd parlyament, vpon the Wednysday next folowynge the feest of Symonde and Iude, the lorde Morley appealyd the erle of Salesbury of treason, and caste his hoode for a gauge to trye with hym by bataylle; the whiche sayinge he replyed, and caste from hym his gloues for a gauge to proue his sayinge false and vntrewe, whiche were there sealyd and delyueryd vnto the lorde marshall. And vpon the Mondaye passyd an acte, that no lorde nor other persone of no degre, shuld after that day lay for his excuse any constraynt or coartynge[3] of his prynce, in executynge of any wronge iugement or other crymynous and vnlefull dedys, sayinge that for fere they durste none otherwyse doo, for suche execuse after that daye shall stande hym in none effecte. And also that all sheryffys maye yelde accompte in the exchekyr vpon theyr othys, and that they be chaungyd in all shyres yerely. And also that no lorde nor other man of myght, gyue any gownys or lyuereys to any of theyr tenaūtys or other persones, excepte onely theyr housholde and meynyall seruauntys. And also than was enactyd, that all repers and other fisshers, cōmynge with fysshe from Rye and Wynchylsee, and other coostys of the sees syde, shulde sell it themselfe in Cornhyll and Chepe, and other stretys of London, to all men that wolde of them by it, excepte fysshemongers and other that wolde bye the sayde fysshe to make sale of it agayn. And vpon the Wednysdaye folowynge was enactyd, that Rycharde, late kynge of Englonde, shulde for his myssegouernaunce of the realme, be holdyn in such prysone as the kynge wolde assygne, durynge his naturall lyfe. And than ȳ kynge graunted to all persones generall pardons, so that they were fette out of the Chauncerye by Alhalowentyde nexte folowynge, excepte such persones as were present at the murder of the duke of Gloucetyr. And in this whyle was the archbysshop of Cauntorbury restoryd to his churche of Caūtorbury, and doctour Roger whiche there was sette by kynge Rycharde, was remoued & sette in the see of London, ẅ the which he was right well-contentyd. And than was the erle of Arundellys sone restoryd to all his fathers landys, with dyuerse other before by kynge Rycharde dysheryted. And shortlye after was the sayd parlyament dyssoluyd, and euery man had lycence to departe to his owne: and than was Rycharde late kyng had vnto the castell of Ledys in Kent, and there kepte, and prouysyon was made at Wyndesore for the kyng to kepe there his Cristemasse. In whiche passe tyme, the dukys of Amnarle[1], of Surrey and of Excetyr, with the erlys of Salesbury and of Gloucetyr, with other of theyr affynyte, made prouysyon for a dysguysynge or a mummynge, to be shewyd to the kynge vpon Twelfethe nyght, and the tyme was nere at hande & all thynge redy for the same. Vpon the sayd. xii. day came secretlye vnto the kynge the duke An acte for fysshe. Pardons generall. Cōspiracy.

[1] Aumarle. MS. [2] beynge. *omitted in* edit. 1542, 1559. [3] correcting. edit. 1542. 1559.

of

of Amnarle[1], and shewyd to hym that he with ŷ other lordys afore namyd, were appoyntyd to sle hym in the tyme of the foresayd dysguysynge shewynge, wherfore he aduysyd hym to prouyde for his owne suretye. At whose warnynge the kynge secretlye departyd from Wyndesore, and came the same nyght to London. Wherof the sayde lordys beynge ware, and that theyr counceyll was bewrayed, fledde in all haste west-
Execuciō. warde. But the kynge causyd hasty pursute to be made after them, so that shortly after the duke of Surrey and the erle of Salysburye were taken at Syrcetyr, where they were streyght behedyd, and theyr heddys sent to London and sette vpon the brydge. And at Oxenforde were taken syr Thomas Blont and syr Benet Sely, knyghtys, and Thomas Wyntercell, esquyer, the whiche were there hedyd and quarteryd, and theyr heddys sent to Lōdon brydge. And at Prytwell in Essex, was takyn syr Iohn Holande duke of Exetyr, & after brought to Plasshy, a place fast by, where he was behedyd, and after his hede was sent to Lōdon, & sette there with the other vpō ŷ brydge, pyght vpō a stake. And
Fol. Clxxx. nere about ŷ same tyme at Bristowe was taken the lorde Spencer, than erle of Gloucetyr, and there behedyd, and his hede sent vnto London brydge. And in the same yere, syr Barnarde Brokeys, syr Iohn Selley, syr Iohn Maundeley, and syr Iohn Fereby, knyghtys and clerkys, were takyn as prysoners in the Towre of London, and soone after foriugyd, hāged, and hedyd, and theyr heddys also sette vpon London brydge. In whiche passe tyme, Rycharde, late kynge, was remoued frome the castell of Ledys in Kent, and sent vnto Pounfreyt castell. In this yere also, as before is towchyd in the. xix. yere of the. vii. Charlys, kynge Henrye sent vnto Calays Isabell, late quene of Englonde, and wyfe vnto Richarde lately kyng, and with hyr great treasoure and many ryche iewyllys, as testyfyeth the Englysshe Cronycle, and there receyued by Frenshmen vnder safe cunduyt passynge, and by them conueyed vnto hyr father into Fraunce, and after maryed vnto Charlys, sone and heyer to the duke of Orleaunce, as before I haue shewyd in ŷ. xxii. yere of hyr sayd fathers reygne. Than it foloweth in the story of kynge Henry, whan he had fermelye consyderyd the great conspyracy agayne hym by the forenamyd lordys and other persones entendyd and imagenyd to his dystruccyon, & agayn releuynge Rycharde late kynge, he, in avoydynge of lyke daunger, prouydyd to put the sayd Rycharde out of this present lyfe; and shortlye, after the opynyon of moost wryters, he sent a knyght, named syr Piers of Exton, vnto Pountfreyt castell where he
Trucidatur Richardus. with. viii. other in his companye, fell vpon the sayde Rycharde late kynge, and hym myserably in his chaumbre slewe; but not without reuengement of his deth: for, or he were fellyd to the grōnde, he slewe of the sayd. viii. iiii. men, with an axe of theyr owne; but lastely he was woundyd to deth by the hande of the sayde syr Piers of Exton, & so dyed. After execucyon of which dedely dede, ŷ sayd syr Piers toke great repentaunce; in so moche that lamentably he sayd, "Alas! what haue we done, we haue now put to deth hym that hath ben ouer soueraygne and drad lorde by the space of. xxii. yeres, by reason whereof I shall be reprochyd of all honoure whereso[2] I after this daye become, and all men shall redounde this dede to my dyshonour and shame." Other opynyons of the dethe of this noble prynce are lefte by wryters, as by waye of famyne & other; but this of moost wryters is testyfyed & allegid. Whan the deth of this prynce was publysshed abrode, he was after opyn vysaged layed in the mynster of Pounfrayt, so ŷ all men myght knowe and see that he was dede. And the. xii. daye of Marche folowynge, he was w̄ great solempnyte brought thoroughe the cytie of London to Paulys, & there layed open visaged agayn, to the ende that his dethe myght be manyfestlye knowen, whiche was doutfull to many one, and speciallye to suche as oughte to hym fauoure. And then after a fewe dayes the sayd corps was caryed vnto the freris of Langley and there enterryd; but after he was remouyd by kynge Henry ŷ. v. in the firste yere of his reygne, and with great honoure and solempnyte conueyed vnto the monastery

[1] Aumarle. MS. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] wheresoever. edit. 1542. 1559.

Of

of Westmynster, and there within the chapell of seynt Edwarde, honourably buryed vpon the South syde of seynt Edwardys shryne, with this epytaphy vpon his toumbe as foloweth.

Prudens et mundus Richardus, iure secundus
Per fatum victus iacet hic sub marmore pictus.
Verax sermone fuit et plenus ratione,
Corpore procerus, animo prudens vt Omerus,
Ecclesiam fauit, elatos subpeditauit,
Quemuis prostrauit regalia qui violauit.

Whiche versys are thus to be vnderstande, in our vulgare and Englysshe tonge, as foloweth.

Parfyght and prudent Rycharde, by ryght the seconde,
Vaynquysshed by fortune, lyeth here nowe grauen in stone.
Trewe of his worde, and therto well resounde.
Semely of persone, and lyke to Omer as one.
In worldely prudence, and euer the Churche in one
Vp helde and fauoured, castynge the proude to grounde,
And all that wolde his royall state confounde.

But yet alas! thoughe that this metyr or ryme
Thus doth enbelysshe this noble pryncis fame,
And that some clerke which fauoured hym some tyme
Lyste by his cunnynge, thus to enhaunce his name,
Yet by his story apperith in hym some blame.
Wherefore to pryncys is surest memory,
Theyr lyues to exercyse in vertous constancy.

Whan this mortall prynce was thus dede and grauen, kynge Henry was in quyet possessyon of the realme, & fande great rychesse ẏ before tyme to kynge Rycharde belonged; for, as wytnessyth Polycronycon, he fande in kyng Richardys tresoury thre hundreth thousande pounde of redy coyne, besyde iuellys & other ryche vessellys, whiche were as moche in value or more: and ouer that he espyed in the kepynge of the tresourers handys an hundreth &. l. thousande nobles, & iewellys & other stuffe ẏ coũtyruayled the sayd value. And so it shuld seme ẏ kyng Rycharde was ryche, whā his money & iewellys amountyd to. vii.C.M *li.* And in the moneth of Octobre & ende of this mayers yere, was brent in Smythfelde of London, a preest named syr Wyllyam Sawtry, for certeyn poyntys of heresy. Mobilia Richardi.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.i.

Iohn Wakele.

Iohn Fraunces, goldsmyth. Anno. ii.

Wyllyam Ebot.

IN this secõde yere of kyng Henry, and moneth of February, were drawen & hãged for treason a knyght named syr Roger Claryngton, at Tybourne, w. ii. of his seruaũtis, ẏ pryour of lande, &. viii. Freris Mynours or Gray Frerys, of ẏ which some were bachelers of dyuynyte. And in this yere began a great discencion in Walys atwene the lorde Gray Ryffyn, & a Welsheman named Howen of Glendore, which Howen gatheryd to hym great strength of Welshemen, and dyd moche harme to that countrey, not sparynge the kynges lordshyppes nor his people, and lastlye toke the sayde lorde Gray prysoner, and helde hym prysoner tyll, contrarye his wyll, he hadde maryed the sayde Howens doughter; Execucio. Howen of Glendore.

el. Clxxi.

after whiche matrymony fynysshed, he helde the said lorde stylle in Walys, tyll he dyed, to the kynges great displeasure.

Wherfore the kynge with a stronge army spedde hym into Walys, for to subdue the sayde Howañ and his adherentes; but whan the kynge with his power was entred ŷ countre, he with his fawtours fledde into the mountaynes and helde hym there, so that the kynge myght nat wynne to hym without distruccyon of his hoost; wherfore fynally, by ŷ aduyce of his lordes, he retournyd into Englande for that season.

In this yere also whete and other greynes beganne to fayle, so that a quarter of Whete was solde at London for. xvi.*s.* and derer shuld haue been, had nat ben the prouycyon of marchauntes that brought rye and rye floure out of Spruce, wherwith this lãde was greatly susteyned and easyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.i. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.ii.

Wylliam Venour.

Iohñ Shadworth[1]. Anno. iii.

Iohñ Fremyngham.

In this yere the cunduyte standynge vpon Cornhylle in London was begon to be made. And in the somer folowynge, sir Thomas Percy erle of Worceter, and sir Henry Percy sone and heyre vnto ŷ erle of Northumberlande, gaderyd a great power, and vpon the daye of saynt Paraxede the virgyne, or the. xxi. daye of Iuly, mette ẅ the kynge nere vnto Shrowysbury, and there gaue vnto hym a cruell batayll[2]; but to theyr owne conclucõn[3]: for in that fyght thesayd sir Thomas Percy was taken, and his neuew the foresayd sir Henry, with many a stronge man vpon theyr partie, was there slayne; and vpon the kynges partie the prynce was wouñded in the heed, & the erle of Stafforde with many other slayne. And ŷ. xxv. day of Iuly folowynge, at Shrowysbury, ŷ sayde sir Thomas Percy was behedyd, and after his heed caryed to London, & there set vpon the brydge.

Batayl of Shrowesbury.

In this batayl was many a noble man slayne vpon eyther partie; and it was the more to be notyd vengeable, for there the fader was slayne of the sone, and sone of the fader, and brother of brother, and neuewe neuewe[4]. And in the moneth of August folowynge, ŷ duchesse of Brytayne landyd at Fulmouth, in ŷ prouynce of Cornwayll, and from thens was conueyed to Wynchester, where in shorte tyme after, kynge Henry maryed her in the cathedrall churche of ŷ sayd cytie. And soon vpon was the eldest doughter of kyng Henry, named dame Blanche, maryed at Coleyn to the dukes sone of Bayer.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.ii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC. iii.

Richarde Merlewe.

Iohñ Walcot, draper. Anno. iiii.

Robert Chichele.

IN this yere, and. xiiii. daye of the moneth of Septembre, was the foresayde duchesse of Brytayne, and wyfe of ŷ kynge, receyued with great honour into the cytie of London, and so by the mayre and the cytezyens cõueyed vnto Westmynster; where, vpon the morowe folowynge, she was crowned quene of Englande with great honoure and solempnyte, the circumstañce wherof I passe ouer.

Coronacio regine.

In this yere also Rupertus, whiche after the deposynge of Wessenselans[5], was by ŷ electours of the empyre, and by auctorytie of Bonyface the. ix. thenne pope[6], admytted for emperour of Rome, & came into Englãde with a goodly companye oonly to se the countre and cõmodyties of the same; the whiche of the kyng was honourably receyued

Imperator.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer. [2] *In the margin of the Museum* MS. *the following note occurs in a contemporary hand.* This batayll was foughtyn in a fyeld then namyd Bole fyeld and now Batayll feyld, wheryn standyth a chapell foundid in worshyp of seynt Mary Magdaleyn, by a revelacion made to kyng Henry the iiii. [3] confusyon. [4] of nevew. [5] Wessenselaus. edit. 1559. [6] Byshop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559.

and

and festyd, and lastly conueyed by the kynge towarde the see syde, where eyther departed from other, with exchaunge of ryche and precyous gyftes; for this Rupartus was named of wryters a man of excellent bounte and largesse. And he gaue more lyberally, for somoche as all the tyme of his beynge in Englande, he laye here at the kynges costes; and whyle he was at London, he was lodged at the house of seynt Iohis in Smythfelde. This yere also vpon seynt Laurence euyn, or the. ix. daye of August, a lorde of Brytayne named the lorde of Castyle in Frenshe, landed within a myle of Plymmouth, w a great company of Normans and Brytons, & came vnto the sayd towne and lodgyd there all nyght, and spoyled & robbyd the sayde towne; and vpon the daye folowynge, whan they hadde done what they wolde, they retourned agayne to theyr shyppes, with plente of pyllage and prysoners suche as they fande.

Anno Domini. x.iiii.C.iii. Anno Domini. x.iiii.C.iiii.

Thomas Fawconer.

William Askam[1]. Anno. v.

Thomas Pooll.

IN this yere, soone after Candelmasse, the foresayd lorde of Castyle, trustyng to wyñe a lyke enterpryse as in the yere passed he had done, he beynge accõpanyed with a stronge nauy of Frenshemen and Brytons, was encountred with the Englysshe floot, within. ii. myles of Dertmouth, at a place called Blakpooll, where, after longe and cruell fyght, the sayd lorde was slayne, with the more partye of ỹ people, and dyuers of his shyppes taken, as wytnesseth the Englysshe Cronycle, with dyuers other Englysshe auctours. Bellum.

But the Frenshe boke excuseth this scomfyture of Frenshemen, and sayth, that by treason of a Gascoyne named Peryn or Perot de Languyle, whiche shewed vnto the sayde lorde Castyle that he had espyed certayne Englisshe shyppes in a creke lyghtly without resystence to be taken, caused the sayde lorde to make sayle towarde the sayd towne of Dartmouthe, where, after he had contynued a certayne tyme his course, he espyed the hole flote of Englysshemen, whiche made towarde hym, and so at the sayd Blakpool encountred and faught, and lastly escaped the daunger of his enemyes, as testyfyeth the sayd Frenshe Cronycle, but nat vnhurt, for he was so wounded in that fyght ỹ he dyed shortly after.

And in the moneth of Apryll folowynge, the duke of Clarence with ỹ erle of Kent, and many other lordes, toke shyppynge at Meregate, & so sayled vnto Sluce in Flaundres, and after the sayd duke had there refresshed hym & his company, he toke shyppyng agayne, & holding his course toward Swyñe, he was encoũtred with. iii. great carykes of Ieane, the whiche he assayled, & after longe bekerynge, theym toke, beynge ladyn with marchaũdyse; and so with ỹ praye retourned to Cambre before Wynchelsee, in ỹ which hauen ỹ sayd goodes were cantyd & sharid. But how it was, by varyaunce amonge themself or otherwyse, one of the sayd carykes was sodeynly feryd[2] and so consumyd. For restytucyon of whiche goodes & shyppes, the marchaũtes Ianuence made after great and longe sute to the kyng & his counsayll; in which passe tyme they borowed cloth, wolle & other marchaundyses, amountynge vnto great & noble[3] sũmes, of dyuerse marchaũtes of Englande; & whan they sawe that they myght haue none hope of recouery of theyr losse, they sodeynly auoyded the lande, & lafte the foresayd notable sũmes vnpayd, to the great hynderaunce & vtter vndoynge of many Englysshe marchauntes. Fol. C.lxxii. Bellum. Discayte.

In this yere also, a yoman named Wylliam Serle, somtyme yoman of kynge Richardes robis, was taken in the marches of Scotlãde and brought vnto London, and there in the Guyldehall areygned for the murder of the duke of Glouceter at Caleys, vpon whiche murder he was atteynt & conuict, and vpon the. xx. day of Octobre he was drawen from

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Fishmonger. [2] fired. MS. [3] notable.

the Tower vnto Tyborn, and there hanged & quartred, & his hede was after set vpon London brydge, and his. iiii. quarters were sente to. iiii. sondry good townes.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.iiii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.v.

Wylliam Lowfthe.

Iohn Hyende, draper. Anno. vi.

Stephen Spilman.

Noto quod aparet in alia Cronica videlicet de nolbus maiorum, &c. quod hoc anno octo fratres Miorū susspenci fuerunt apud Tyborne.

Batayll.

IN this yere, and moneth of Ianuary, were certayn courses of warre ron in Smythfelde atwene sir Edmūde erle of Kent, and the lorde Moryf a baron of Scotlande, vpon the chalenge of the sayd Scottisshe lorde ; but ỹ erle of Kent bare hym so valyauntly, that to hym was gyuen ỹ pryce of ỹ iourney to his great honour. And in the same[1] sir Richarde Scrope, than archebisshop of Yorke, and the lorde Monbraye[2], than marshall of Englande, with other to theym allyed, for grudge that they[3] agayne the kynge, gaderyd vnto theym great strength, entendinge to haue put downe the kyng, as the fame than went. Wherof the kyng beyng enfourmyd, in all hast sped towarde them, and met with theym on this syde Yorke, where, after a skyrmysshe by the sayde lordes made, they were than taken, & after presented vnto the kynge at Yorke, where they were bothe demyd to suffre deth for theyr rebellyon[4]. [Then whan ỹ bysshop came vnto his place of execucion, he prayed

Bysshop Scroop.

the bowcher to gyue to hȳ. v. strokes in the worshyp of Cristes fyue woundes ; and for more[5] penaunce, at euerych of whiche. v. strokes, kynge Henry beyng in his lodgyng, had a stroke in his necke ; in so moche, that he demyd that some persone there beynge with hym present, had stryken hym. And forthwith he was stryken with ỹ plage of lepyr, so that then he knewe it was the hande of God, & repented hym of that hasty iugement, without auctoryte of the Churche. And soon after God shewyd many myracles for the sayde bysshop, whiche called the kynge vnto the more repentaunce.][6]

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.v. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.vi.

Henry Bartoñ.

Iohn Woodcok, mercer. Anno. vii.

Wylliam Crowmer.

IN this yere, dame Lucye ỹ duke of Myllanys suster, came into Englande, & was maryed vnto syr Edmūde Holande erle of Kent, in ỹ churche of seynt Mary Ouerey in Southwarke, vpon the. xxiiii. day of Ianuary, where ỹ kynge was present & gaue her that day vnto the preest ; and after the solempnyzacion of the maryage was fynysshed, she was with great honour conueyed vnto ỹ bysshop of Wynchesters palays there fast by, where ỹ day for her was holden a sumptuous and pompous feast. And in ỹ same yere & moneth of May, dame Phylip, the yongest doughter of kynge Henry, accompanyed w dyuerse lordes spirituell and temporal, was shypped in ỹ Northe, and so conueyed into Denmark, where, in a towne or cytie called London, she was maryed vnto the kynge of ỹ sayd countre.

In this yere also sir Thomas Ramstoñ, than constable of ỹ Towre, by ouersyght of his botemen, as he wolde haue passed ỹ brydge towarde the sayd Tower, was drowned. And in the same yere, for ỹ greuous complayntes that before tyme had ben shewyd, and euydently prouyd before the kynges counsayll, and also before the mayre and his bretheñ, of the great distruccon of fyre[7] & yonge fysshe, by reason of werys standynge in dyuerse places of the ryuer of Thamys, wherby the fysshe of the sayd ryuer was greatly mynysshed and wastyd ; and that also if the sayd werys soo contynued, the sayd ryuer shuld in short

[1] same year. edit. 1533. [2] Moubraye. edit. 1533. [3] they bare. edit. 1533. [4] and shortly after they were bothe beheded. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] for his more. [6] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [7] frye.

processe be distroyed: wherfore ỹ mayre and his bretherne the aldermen, as cõseruatours of that ryuer, made suche laboure vnto the kynge and his counsayll, that they opteyned cõmyssion to pull vp all the werys that stode atwene London and. vii. myles beyonde Kyngstoñ, and in lyke wyse for such other as stode atwene London and Grauysende, aswel crekes or seuerall groundes & other; the which cõmyssion by the sayd mayre & his officers was this yere put ī execucõn. And in this yere sir Robert Knollys, knyght, the which in Fraunce and Brytayne had before tyme don so many victoryous actes, as in the. xxxiii. yere of Edwarde the thirde and other yeres of his reygne is somdele tõwched, made an ende of his werke at Rochester bridge, and chapell at the sayd brydge fote, and dyed shortly after, whan he had newe reedyfied the body of the Whyte Fryers churche, standyng in Flete strete, and don to that house many notable benefytes, where after he was buryed in the body of the sayd churche; whiche churche & place was first founded by the auncetours of the lorde Gray Cotnore.

Sir Robert Knollys.

Rochester bridge & the chapell there.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.vi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.vii.

Nicholas Wotton.

Richarde Whytyngtoñ, mercer. Anno. viii.

Godfrey Brook.

IN this yere, and moneth of Nouẽbre, one named the Walshe clerke, apeched a knyght called sir Percyuall Sowdan, of treason, for tryall wherof, daye was gyuen to theym to fyghte in Smythfelde, the day abouesayd; at whiche daye eyther apperyd, & there faught a season; but in the ende the clerke was recreañt: wherfore immedyatly he was spoyled of his armour, & layde vpon an hardyll, so drawen to Tyborne and there hanged.

Duellum. *Fol. C.lxxiii.*

And in this yere also, sir Henry erle of Northumberlande, and the lorde Bardolf, cõmynge out of Scotlande with a stronge company, to ỹ displeasur & hurt of the kynge as they entendyd, were met and encountred with the gentylmen and comons of the north, & foughten with and distressyd, and after strake of their heddes, and sent them to London, whiche than were pyght vpon the brydge amonge many other.

Bellum.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.vii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.viii.

Henry Ponfreyt.

Wyllyam Stondoñ, grocer. Anno. ix.

Henry Halton.

IN this yere, & moneth of Decembre, began a frost, ỹ whiche contynued by the space of. xv. wekes after, or therupon, so that byrdes were wonderly famysshed[1] and distressed by vyolence of the same.

And in the same yere, sir Edmonde of Holande erle of Kent, was by the kynge made admyrall of the see; the whiche storyd[2] and skymmyd ỹ see ryght well and manfully, and lastly landed in the coost of Brytayne, and besieged there a castell named Briak, and wan it by strength; but in the wynnynge therof he was so deedly wounded with an arowe in ỹ heed, that he dyed shortly after, and than his corps was brought agayne into Englande, & buryed omonge his auncetours. And in the begynnynge of this yere was slayne and murderyd the duke of Orleañce in Parys, lyke as before it is more at length shewyd in the. xxvii[3]. yere of Charlys the. vii. kynge of Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.viii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.ix.

Thomas Duke.

Drewe Barentyne, goldsmyth. Anno. x.

Willyam Nortoñ.

IN this yere the seneshall of Henaude came into this lande with a goodly companye of Henauders & other straungers, for to do and parfourme certayne faytes of armys agayn

[1] wonderfullye. edit. 1559. [2] scowred. [3] xxviii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

dyuerse

dyuerse nobles and gentylmen of this lande. And firste the sayd seneshall chalenged the erle of Somerset, and other of his company, other gentylmen of this lāde, as after shall appere. For executynge of whiche disporte the place of Smythfelde by the kynge was appoynted, and barryd and fensyd for the same entent, and daye sette for euery man to be redy by the. xi. daye of[1] at whiche day the seneshall as chalenger entred the felde pompously. And after, with a goodly company of men of honour, was the erle of Somerset brought into ŷ same, where they rāne togyder certayne courses and executed other faytes of armys, wherof the pryse and honour was gyuen by ŷ herawdes vnto the erle, so that he wanne that day great honour.

Than the seconde day came in a knyght Henauder as chalengoure, to whome, as defendaunt, came sir Richard of Arundell, knyght, the whiche ranne certayne courses on horsebak, and after went togyder w̄ axes on foote, where sir Richarde was put to the worse, for ŷ Henauder brought hym vpon his kne.

Then the thirde daye came in an other knyght of Henaude chalenger, to whom, as defendaūt, came in sir Iohn Cornewayll, knyght, and so well bare hȳ, that he put the straunger to the worse. Vpon the. iiii. daye came into the felde an esquyre Henauder, agayn whom ranne the sone of sir Iohn Cheyny, the which, at the seconde course, sette his stroke so egerly, that he ouer threwe the Henauder horse and man; for whiche dede the kyng dubbyd hym forthwith knyght. Vpon ŷ. v. day played togyder an Henauder and a squyre called Iohn Stewarde, whiche daye also the Englysshman wan ŷ worshyp. Vpon the. vi. daye skyrmysshed there togyder an Henauder and an Englysshe esquyer named Wylliam Porter, the whiche gatte suche worshyp of the same Henauder, that the kynge, for his guerdon, made hym streyght knyght. Vpon the. vii. daye in lyke wyse played insamble an Henauder, and one Iohn Standysshe, esquyer; the whiche semblably for his prowesse & manly dealyng, was also of the kynge dubbyd knyght. And a Gascoygn, that the same day wan the pryce of an other straunger, was immedyatly made knyght of the kynge. And vpon the. viii. day or last day of this chalenger, came into the felde. ii. Henauders, vnto whom came. ii. bretherne, beynge sowdyours of Calays, the whiche bekeryd togyder a longe season, soo that eyther partie receyued plentie of good strokes, tyll peas by ŷ kynge was cōmaūdyd. And so this chalenge was fynysshed, to the great honour of the kyng, the whiche after feasted thyse straūgers, and with ryche gyftes, sent & retourned them agayne to theyr countrees.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.ix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.x[t]

Iohn Lawe[2].

Richarde Marlowe, irenmonger. Anno. xi.

Wyllyam Chycheley.

IN this yere, and moneth of Marche, a taylour of London, named Iohn Badby, was brent in Smythfelde for heresy; albe it that by meanes of the prynce, and one maister Courtnay, than chaunceller of Oxenforde, he was for a whyle reconcyled, and promysed to leue that errour; but when the sacramēt of the aulter was brought to fore hym, he dispysed it, and wolde in no wyse therin byleue; wherfore he had as he deserued. [Of whome a vercifier, in reproche of his errour, made thyse. ii. versys folowyng.

Hereticus credat, ve[3] perustus ab orbe recedat
Ne fidem ledat, sathell[4] hunc baratro sibi predat.

The whiche versys are thus moche to meane in Englysshe.

The peruerse heretyke, though that he do brenne,
And from this worlde be rasyd vtterly,
No force, syne that he lyst nat kenne

[1] *The MS. adds* May. [2] Iohn Lane. MS. [3] ut. [4] Sathan.

Our sacred fayth, but it right peruersly
Lyst of his wyll, erronyously to reply;
What force, though sathan, with his eternall payne,
Do hym rewarde, syn he wyll nat refrayne?][1]

IN this yere also, & moneth of April, within the lystes of Smytfelde, was foughten a sore fight atwene an esquyre named Glouceter, appellaūt, & an other esquyer called Arthur, defendaūt, the whiche acquyted them eyther partie so mānfully, that the kynge, of his especiall grace, seynge they were both so well fyghtynge mē, toke the quarell into his hādes, & pardoned ỹ offence to eyther partie.

The begynnynge of ỹ market called ỹ Stockys.

And this yere the market hous called the Stokkys, standynge by the churche of Seynt Mary Wolchirche of Lōdon was begon to be edyfyed. In this yere also, the kynge helde his parlyamēt at Westmester, duryng the whiche the cōmons of this lande put vp a bylle to the kyng, to take the temporall landes out from spūell mēnes handes or possession. The effect of whiche bylle was, ỹ the temporaltes, disordynatly wastyd by men of ỹ churche, myghte suffyce to fynde to ỹ kyng. xv. erles, xv. C. knyghtes, vi.M. and CC. esquyers, & an. C. houses of almes, to the releef of poore people, moo then at ỹ dayes were within Englande. And ouer all thyse foresayd charges, the kynge myght put yerely ī his cofers. xx.M.*li.* Prouyded that euery erle shuld haue of yerely rent. iii.M. marke, euery knyght an. C. marke, & iiii. plonghe lande, euery esquyer. xl. marke by yere, w̄. ii. plughe lande, and euery house of almesse an. C. marke, w̄ ouersyghte of. ii. trewe seculers vnto euery house. And also with prouycion ỹ euery towneshyp shuld kepe all poore people of theyr owne dwellers, whiche myght nat labour for theyr lyuynge, with condycyon that if moo fell in a towne than the towne myght maynteyn, than ỹ said almesse houses to releue suche townesshyppes. And for to bere thyse charges, they allegyd by their sayd bylle, ỹ that the temporalties, beyng in the possession of spirituell men, amounted to. CCC. and xxii. M. mark by yere, wherof they affermyd to be in the see of Caunterbury, with the abbeys of Cristes Churche, of Seynt Augustyns, Shrowsbury, Coggeshale, and Seynt Osiys. xx. M. marke by yere.

Fol. C.lxxiiii.

Billa porrecta parliamēto pro temporalibus extra manus religiosorū capiendis.

In the see of Durham and other abbeys there. xx. M. marke: in the see of Yorke & abbays there. xx. M. marke: in the see of Wynchester & abbays there. xx. M. marke: in the see of London, w̄ abbays & other houses there. xx. M. marke: in the see of Lyncolñ, with the abbays of Peterbourth, Ramsay, & other. xx. M. marke: in the see of Norwych, with ỹ abbays of Bury & other. xx. M. marke: in the see of Hely, with the abbays of Hely, Spaldyng, & other. xx. M. marke: in ỹ see of Bathe, w̄ the abbay of Okynborne & other. xx. M. marke: in the see of Worceter, with the abbays of Euisham, Abyngdoñ, & other. xx. M. marke: in ỹ see of Chester, w̄ precinct of ỹ same, w̄ the sees of Seȳt Dauyd, of Salisbury & Exceter, with theyr precinctes. xx. M. marke: the abbays of Raūens or Reuans, of Founteyns, of Geruons, & dyuers other, to ỹ nombre. v. mo. xx. M. marke: the abbays of Leyceter, Waltham, Gisbourne, Mertoñ, Circetir, Osney, & other, to the nōbre of vi. mo. xx. M. marke: the abbays of Douers, Batell, Lewis, Cowentre, Dauētre, & Tourney. xx. M. marke: the abbays of Northamptoñ, Thorntoñ, Brystow, Kelȳgworth, Wynchecomb, Hayles, Parchissor, Frediswyde, Notley, & Grȳmysby. xx. M. marke.

The which foresayd sūmes amoūte to ỹ full of. CCC. M. marke; and for ỹ odde xxii. M. marke, they appointed Herdford, Rochester, Hūtyngdoñ, Swyneshede, Crowlāde, Malmesbury, Burtoñ, Tewkisbury, Dūstable, Shirborñ, Tauntoñ, & Bylande.

And ouer this, they alledgyd by ỹ sayd byll, that ouer & aboue ỹ sayd sūme of. CCC. & xxii. M. marke, dyuers houses of relygion in Englāde possessyd as many temporalties as might suffyce to fynde yerely. xv.M. preestes & clerkes, euery preest to be allowed for his stipende. vī. marke by yere.

To the which byll none answere was made, but that the kyng of this matyer wolde take

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

dely-

delyberacion & aduycement, and with that answere it endyd; so that no ferther laboure was made.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.ix. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.x.

Iohñ Penne.

Thomas Knollys, grocer. Anno. xii.

Thomas Pyke.

IN this yere, a squyer of Walys named Rize ap Dee, ŷ whiche had longe tyme rebellyd agayne the kynge, and fortifyed the partie of Howan of Glendore, was taken and brought to London, and there, vpon the. ix. daye of Decembre, drawen, hanged, and quarteryd, and his hede set vpon the brydge, amonge the other. In this yere also was ŷ Guylde halle of Lõdon begon to be newe edyfied, and of an olde and lytell cotage, made into a fayre and goodly house as it nowe apperyth.

Nota pro Guilhalda London.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.x. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xi.

Iohñ Raynewell.

Robert Chycheley, grocer. Anno. xiii.

Wyllyam Cottoñ[1].

IN this yere, and vpon the. xii. day of Octobre, were thre flodes in Thamys, whiche thynge no man than lyuynge cowde remembre ŷ lyke to be seen.

And in this yere was the lorde Thomas, sone to the kyng, created duke of Clarence. And in this yere the kynge, at the request of the duke of Orleaunce, sent ouer the foresayd duke his sone, to ayde the sayd duke of Orleaunce agayne the duke of Burgoyne, of whose actes and his company I haue before made report in ŷ story of Charlys the. vii. kynge of Fraunce.

And in this yere, ŷ kyng caused a new coyne of nobles to be made, which were of lesse value thanne the olde noble, by. iiii.*d.* in a noble.

In this yere also, the kynge created Iohñ his son duke of Bedfordde; and his other sone Humfrey duke of Glouceter. He made also sir Thomas Beauforde erle of Dorset, & the duke of Anmarle[2] he created duke of Yorke.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xii.

Rauffe Leuenham.

Wyllyam Waldreñ, mercer. Anno. xiiii.

Wyllyam Seuenock.

IN this yere, and. xx. daye of the moneth of Nouembre, was a great counsayll holden at the Whyte Freres of London, by the whiche it was amonge other thynges concluded, that for the kynges great iournaye that he entendyd to take, in vysytynge of the holy sepulcre of our Lord, certayne galeys of warre shuld be made, & other purueaunce concernynge the same iournay.

Wherupon all hasty and possyble spede was made; but after the feest of Christenmasse, whyle he was makynge his prayers at Seynt Edwardes shryne, to take there his leue, and so to spede hym vpon his iournaye, he became so syke, ŷ such as were aboute hym, feryd that he wolde haue dyed right there; wherefore they, for his comforte, bare hym into the abbottes place, & lodgyd hym in a chamber, & there vpon a paylet, layde hym before the fyre, where he laye in great agony a certayne of tyme.

At length, whan he was cõmyn to himselfe, nat knowynge where he was, freyned of suche as then were aboute hym, what place that was; the which shewyd to hym, that it belongyd vnto ŷ abbot of Westmynster; and for he felte hymself so syke, he cõmaunded to aske if that chambre had any specyall name; whereunto it was answeryd, that it was named Iherusalem. Than sayd the kynge, "louynge be to the Fader of heuen, for nowe I knowe I

Fol. C.lxvo.

[1] Walter Cotton. MS. [2] Aumerle. MS.

shall

shall dye in this chambre, accordyng to ỹ prophecye of me beforesayd, that I shulde dye ī Ierusalem: and so after he made hymself redy, & dyed shortly after, vpon ỹ day of seynt Cuthbert, or ỹ. xx. day of Marche, when he had reygned. xiii. yeres. v. monthes, &. xxi. dayes, leuynge after hym. iiii. sōnes, that is to meane Henry that was kyng, Thomas that was duke of Orleaunce[1], Iohn duke of Bedforde, and Humfrey duke of Glouceter, [and the. v. was named Henry, ryche cardynall of Wynchester,][2] and ii. doughters, that one beynge quene of Denmarke, and that other duchesse of Barre, as before is shewyd. Progenies Henrici Quinti.

Whanne kynge Henry was deed, he was conueyed by water vnto Feuersham, and from thens by lande vnto Caunterbury, and there enteryd by the shryne of seynt Thomas. [To the foresayd Henry, the riche cardynall, kynge Henry had or begat. ii. other sōnes vpon dame Katheryne Swynford, as before is shewyd in the. viii. yere of Richarde ỹ seconde, whiche were named as there is expressyd.][3]

Henrici Quinti.

HEnry the. v. of that name, & sone of Henry the. iiii. began his reygne ouer this realme of Englande ỹ. xxi. day of the moneth of Marche, in the yere of our Lorde and ende of the same. xiiii. C. and. xii. and in the. xxxii. yere of Charlys ỹ. vii. yet kynge of Fraūce. And the. ix. daye of Apryll folowynge, whiche was that yere Passion Sondaye, beynge a day of excedyng rayne, he was crowned at Westmynster.

This mā, before ỹ deth of his fader, applyed hym vnto all vyce and insolency, and drewe vnto hym all ryottours & wylde dysposed persones; but after he was admytted to the rule of the lande, anone & sodaynly he became a newe man, and tourned al that rage and wyldnes īto sobernesse & wyse sadnesse, and the vyce into cōstant vertue.

And for he wolde contynewe ỹ vertue, and nat to be reduced therunto by the famyliarytie of his olde nyse company, he therfore, after rewardes to them gyuen, charged theym vpon payne of theyr lyues, that none of theym were so hardy to come win. x. myle of suche place as he were lodgyd, after a daye by hym assigned.

In this begynnynge of this kynge Henry, ỹ olde mayre and shryues contynued theyr offyces to the termys accustomed [of theyr alienynge as,][3]

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xiii.

Rauffe Leuyngham.

Wyllyam Waldern, mercer. Anno primo.

Wyllyam Seuenok.

ANone as kyng Henry was crowned, and ỹ solemnitye of the feest of Eester was passyd, he sent vnto ỹ fryers of Langley, where the corps of kynge Richarde was buryed, and caused it to be taken out of ỹ erth, and so with reuerence and solempnytie to be cōueyed vnto Westmynster, and vpon the south syde of seynt Edwardes shryne there honourably to be buryed by quene Anne his wyfe, which there before tyme was entered. And after a solempn̄ terment there holden, he prouydyd that. iiii. tapers shulde brenne daye and nyght about his graue, whyle the world endureth; and one day in the weke a solempne dirige, and vpon the morowe a masse of Requiem by note; after which masse endyd, to be gyuen wekely vnto pore people. xi.*s.* viii.*d.* in pens: & vpon ỹ day of his anniuersary, after ỹ sayd masse of Requiem is songe, to be yerely destrybuted for his soule. xx.*li.* in.*d.* And about heruest tyme was sir Iohn Oldcastell knyght appechyd for an heretyke and cōmytted to pryson; but howe it was he escaped for that tyme oute of the Tower of London, and so yode into Walys, where he lyued ouer. iiii. yeres after. The corps of kyng Richarde ỹ seconde remoued. Sir Iohnne Oldcastell.

[1] Clarence. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. of 1542 and 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. of 1533. 1542. 1559.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xiii.

Iohñ Suttoñ.

Willyam Crowmer, draper. Anno. ii.

Iohñ Mycoll.

The adherentes of sir Iohnne Oldcastel put in execution.

IN this yere and moneth of Ianuary, certayne adherentes of ỹ forenamed sir Iohñ Oldcastell, entendynge ỹ distruccion of this lande and subuercion[1] of the same, assembeld them in a felde nere vnto Seynt Gyles in great nombre, wherof the kynge beynge enfourmed, toke the felde before them, and so toke a certayne of theym; amonge the whiche was sir Roger Actoñ knight, sir Iohñ Beuerley preest, and a squiēr called sir Iohñ Browne, the whiche, with. xxxvi. mo in nombre, were after conuict of heresy & treason, & for the same hangyd & brent within the sayd felde of Seynt Gyles.

And in ỹ same yere, Iohñ Claydon skynner, and Richard Turmyn baker, were for heresy brent in Smythefelde.

Parliamēt of Leyceter.

And this yere the kyng helde his parlyamēt at Leyceter, where, amōge other thynges, the foresayd bylle put vp by the cōmons of the lande, for the temporalties beynge in the churche, as it is before[2] the. iiii. Henry, was agayne mynded. In fere wherof, lest the kynge wolde therunto gyue any comfortable audyence, as testyfye some wryters, certayne bysshoppes and other hede men of the churche, put ỹ kyng in mynde to clayme his ryght in Fraunce; & for the exployte therof, they offrede vnto hym great & notable sūmes. By reason whereof ỹ sayd byll was agayne put by, and the kynge sette his mynde for the recouery of the same; so ỹ soon after he sent his letters vnto the Frensh kynge concernyng that matyer, and receyued from him answere of dirision, as affermyth the Englysshe booke.

At whiche parliament was put vp ỹ^e byll whiche was put vp at ỹ^e parlyament in ỹ^e xi. yere of kyng Henry the. iiii.

And Gaguynus sayth in his Frenshe Cronycle, that kynge Henry sent his oratours vnto Charlys the. vii. than kyng of Fraūce, for to haue dame Katheryne his doughter in maryage, with other requestes towchynge his ryght and enherytaūce.

Answere disdeynous.

Wherevnto it was answered by ỹ coūsayll of Fraūce, that ỹ kyng had no leyser to entende such idelnes[3]. Wherupon kyng Henry made quycke prouicōn for to warre vpon ỹ Frenshe kynge, as after apperyth.

Fol. CLxxvi.

In this yere also, by procurement of Sigismunde than emperoure, a great counsayl or synod of bysshops were assembled at a cytie in hygh Almayn called Constaunce, for the vnyon of ỹ Churche, & for to auoyde the scisme whiche began in the. xiiii. yere of Charlys the. vi. as before in the said. xiiii. yere is touched. In the sayd synode or genrall coūsayll, was the. xxiii. Iohñ than pope[4] put downe, or resygned by his volunte.

Wyklyffe heretícus.

And by auctoryte of the same counsayll, the opynyons and heresy of Wyklyf were vtterly anulled & dampned, and. ii. of his disciples there present named Iohñ Hus or Husse & Ierom the herytyke, were there brent. And many notable actes for the wele of the churche there were enacted. And fynally, whan the sayd counsayll had endured nere vpon the terme of. iiii. yeres, they there by an hoole assent chase a newe pope[4], and named hym the. v. Martyne, [whiche occupyed Peters chayre. xiiii. yeres and odde monethes, as indubitat pope, and so other after hym.][5]

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xiiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xv.

Iohñ Mychell.

Thomas Fawconer, mercer. Anno. iii.

Thomas Aleyn.

The firste iourneye into Fraunce of kyng Henry the fyfte.

THis yere after the kynge hadde made sufficyent prouycion for all thynges cōcernynge his warre to be made vpon the Frenshe kynge, he, with his lordes honourably accompanyed, rode through Lōdon, vpon the. xviii. daye of Iuny, towarde the port of Southam-

[1] subjection. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] towchid in the xi yere of the iiiith Henry. [3] idle persones, edit. 1542. 1559. [4] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559.

toñ,

toñ, where he had appoynted his hoost to mete with hym. And whyle the kynge there was shyppynge of his people, dyuers of his lordes, that is to say, sir Richarde erle of Cambrydge & brother vnto the duke of Yorke, whiche sir Richarde berynge the name of Langley, had wedded dame Anne, the doughter of syr Roger Mortymer erle of Marche & Wolster, by whom he had yssue Isabell, which after was maryed vnto the lorde Boucher erle of Essex, & Richard whiche after was duke of Yorke & fader to kynge Edward the. iiii. To whom also was assentyng, sir Richard Scrop than tresourer of England, & sir Thomas Gray knyght, were there arrestyd for treason, & aregnyd, or[1] so examyned vpon ỹ same, that the. xxix. day of Iuly folowyng they were there all thre behedyd. After which execucion so done, the kyng vpon ỹ morowe or shortly after, with his lordes toke shyppynge there, & landed at a place called Kydcaus in Normãdy. And the. xvi. daye of August, he layde siege vnto the towne of Harflew, and assayled theim by lande and by water, and cõtynued so his siege vnto ỹ. xxii. day of Septembre; at whiche day, as sayth the Frenshe Gaguynus, it was delyuered by Albert thã there capitayne, vpon condicion ỹ kyng Henry myght sauely wynne or passe to Calays, & so he beyng there, the towne to be yolden vnto hym. But the Frenshe wryter Gaguynus vpholdeth ỹ honour of the Frenshmen in all ỹ he may, & boroweth of his conscyence for sparynge the trouth in report of many thynges. For after most wryters, ỹ sayd towne, after sondry appoyntementes of rescouse, was delyuered vnto the kyng wout any condycion the daye abouesayd, where, after the kyng had ordeyned sir Thomas Beauforde his vncle & erle of Dorset, capytayne of ỹ towne, he sped hym towarde Calays. Execucõn

Than the dolphyn with other lordes of Fraunce, whiche at ỹ tyme had the realme of Fraunce in gouernaũce, for somoche as the Frenshe kynge was vysited with suche malady as before I haue shewed, brake the brydge to lette ỹ kyng of his passage ouer ỹ water of Sum. Wherfore he was constrayned to drawe towarde Pycardy, & so passe by the ryuer of Peroñ[2], wherof the Frenshmen beynge ware, assembled and lodgyd them at certayne townes named Agyncourt, Rolandcourt and Blangy, with all the power of Fraunce.

And whan kynge Henry sawe that he was so besette with his enemyes, he in the name of God and seynt George pyght his felde in a playn, atwene the sayd townes of Agyncourt and Blangy, hauynge in his companye of hoole men ỹ myght fyght, nat passyng the nombre of. vii.M. But at those dayes the yomen had their lymmes at lybertie, for theyr hosyn were than fastened w̃ one poynt, and theyr iackes [were[3]] longe and easy to shote in, so that they myght drawe bowes of great strentgth, & shote arowes of a yerde longe, besyde the hede.

Then the kyng consyderyng ỹ great nombre of his enemyes, and that the acte of Frenshmen standynge moche in ouer rydynge of theyr aduersaryes by force of speremen, he therfore charged euery bowman to ordeyne hym a sharpe stake, & to pytche it a slope before hym, and whan the sperys came, somdeale to drawe bak, and so to shote at the horse men. And the[4] proper request of the duke of Yorke he ordeynyd hym to haue the vawewarde of that felde. And whan kynge Henry had thus prouidently orderyd for his batayll ouer nyght, vpon the morowe beynge the. xxv. daye of Octobre, & the daye of [the holy marters[3] Crispyne] and Crispinian, the kynge caused dyuers masses to be songyn. And wher ỹ nyght before the Englysshe hoost was occupyed in prayer and confession, he than caused the bysshoppes and other spirituell mẽ to gyue vnto theym generall obsolucion. The batayll of Agyncourt.

And that done, with a comfortable chere orderyd his people as they shuld fyght, hauynge vnto them good & comfortable wordes, and so abode ỹ cõmyng of theyr enemyes, which of dyuers wryters were and are remembred to be aboue. xl.M. fyghtynge men.

The whiche aboute ix. of the clok in ỹ mornynge, with great pryde set vpon the Englysshe hoost, thynkynge to haue ouer rydyn them shortly; but the archers lyke as befor

[1] and. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Pericon. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] and at the.

they were taught, pyght theyr sharpe stakes before them, and whan they sawe the Frenshe galantes approche, they a lytell yode back and receyued them, as hereafter ensueth.

The batayll of Agyncourt.

THat is to meane they shotte at them so feruently, ỹ what with the shotte & gorynge of their horses with the sharpe stakes, they stumbelyd one vpon another, so that he or they whiche ranne formest, were the confucion of hym or them that folowed, so ỹ in a short whyle a great multytude of horse & men were layde vpon the grounde. And after theyr shot spent, they layde aboute them with theyr glayues and axes, that by ỹ great grace of God and comfortable ayde of ỹ kynge, the victory fyll that daye to the Englysshmen, & with lytell losse of theyr company; for, after the oppinyon of sondry wryters, were slayne that day of Englysshmen, the dukes of Yorke & of Suffolke, and nat ouer. xxvi. parsones moo.

But of Frenshmen were slayne ỹ day, after Englysshe wryters, ouer ỹ nombre of. x.M. albeit that[1] Frenshe Gaguynus sayth, ỹ of the Englysshe hoost were slayne the duke of Yorke & with hym. iiii.C. men, and of[2] Frenshe hoost. iiii.M. of me of name, besyde other, whiche he nobreth nat.

Also he affermyth to be horsmen at that felde, vpon the Frenshe partie. x.M., ouer & besyde the fotemen, & that the Englysshmen were nombred at. xv.C. spere men, &. xviii.M. of yomen and archers.

The names of Frēche pryſoners.

At this sayd batayll was taken prysoners, the duke of Orleaũce, the duke of Burboñ, ỹ erles of Vendosme, of Ewe, of Rychemout, & Bursigaũt than marshall of Fraunce, with many other knyghtes and esquyres, which were tedyous to name, to the nombre of. xxiiii.C. and aboue, as wytnessyth ỹ boke of mayres.

Fol. Cclxxviii.

And in this batayl were slayne of the nobles of Fraunce, the dukes of Barre, of Alanson and of Braban. viii. erlis, and barons aboue. lxxx. with other gentylmen in cote armours, to the nombre of. iii.M. and aboue; by reason of whiche pyllage the Englisshmen were greatly auaunced, for the Frenshmen were soo assuryd of victory by reaso of their great nombre, that they brought the more plentye of rychesse with theym, to the ende to bye prysoners eyther of other. And also after the victory by them opteyned, to shew vnto Englisshmen their pryde & pompous araye; but God, whiche knewe the presumpcion & pompe, tournyd all thynge cõtrary to their myndes & ententes. Whan ỹ kynge by grace and power of God, more than by force of man, had thus goten this triumphaunt victorye, & retourned his people from the chase of theyr enemyes, tydynges were brought vnto hym that a newe hoost of Frenshmen were cõmynge toward hỹ. Wherfore he anon cõmaũded his people to be enbatayled, and that aboue made proclamacions thorugh the host, that euery man shuld slee his prysoner; by reason of which proclamacion, ỹ duke of Orleaũce and the other lordes of Fraũce were in such fere, that they anon by the lycence of the kynge, sent suche worde vnto ỹ sayd host ỹ they wdrewe them, and the kynge with his prysoners vpon the morowe folowynge toke his way towarde his towne of Calays, where he restyd hym durynge this mayres tyme.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xvi.

Wylliam Cambridge.

Nicholas Wottoñ, draper. Anno. iiii.

Aleyn Euerarde.

THis yere, and. xxix. daye of Nouembre, as the mayre rode towarde Westmynster for to take his charge, a pursyuaunt of the kynges came with letters vnto the mayre, gyuynge to hym knowlege of ỹ kynges good spede; wherfore the bysshop of Wynchester, than chaunceller of Englande, hauynge lyke wyttyng, came that daye to Paulys, & there caused

Te

[1] the. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] of the. edit. 1542. 1559.

Te Deum to be songyn with great solempnyte, and in lyke wyse was lyke obseruaunce don in ỹ parysshe churches & other relygyous houses thorough the cytie of London.

And at Poulys, by the sayd chaunceller, standyng vpon the steppes at the quyer dore, were the sayd tydynges denoūced vnto the people: and vpon the morowe folowynge, ỹ sayd chaūceller, with other bysshoppes and temporall lordes, with a general procession of ỹ mayre and comynalte of the cytie, yode from Paulis to Westmynster on fote, and offeryd at seynt Edwardes shryne, & so retourned to theyr owne [houses.]' Then kyng Henry w̄ his prisoners shypped at Calays, and so landed at Douer, & [after he had ben at Caūterbury and there made his offeryng vnto seynt Thomas, he]² than spedde hym on his iourney tyll he came vnto Eltham, where he rested hym a season.

Vpon the. xxiii. daye of Nouembre, he was mette with the mayre & his bretherne vpon the Blak Heth, & so conueyed with all honour thorugh the cytie vnto Westmȳster, wher, in dyuers places of the sayd cytie, as the bridge & crosse in Chepe, were ordeyned certayne pagētes to the kynges great comforte, the maner wherof, with also processions & other sercmonyes, I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme. The kynges cōmynge to London.

In this yere also, Sigismunde emperour of Almayne came into England, and in the month of May by the kynges cōmaundement, and. vii. daye of the sayd moneth, the mayre and bretherne mette hym vpon Blak Heth; and at Seynt Georges met hym the kynge & his lordes in great nombre, and so conueyed hym vnto Westmȳster with great honoure, & lodgyd hym in his owne palays. And shortly after was ỹ feest of seynt George holden at Wyndesore, whiche before was deferryd for his cōmynge; in tyme of whiche solempnyte, durynge the dyuyne seruyce, the kyng kept ỹ astate; but in syttyng at the feest, the emperour kept the astate; the seruyce and sotyltees of whiche feest, with syttynge of the lordes after theyr degrees, I passe ouer. And shortly after came the duke of Holande into this lande, for certayne causes concernynge the emperour, whom the kyng honourably receyued, & lodgyd hym in the bysshoppes palays of Ely in Holbourne; and so the kynge entreated & cheryd thyse straūgers, that for the season that they taryed in Englande, they laye here at the kynges coste and charge: and³ the emperour and he were made knyghtes of the Garter, and also a great duke of the emperours named duke of Briga. And whan the emperoure had taryed vpon. vii. wekys and odde dayes in Englande, whiche after some wryters, was to thentent to set an vnyte & rest atwene the Frenshe kynge & kynge Henry, he after tooke mynde to retourne into Almayne, whom the kynge for his comfort and nedes that he had to do at Calays, accōpanyed hym thyder, where eyther with gyftes⁴ & thankes departyd from other; and the duke of Holande went with the emperoure into Holande and other countres. Whyle ỹ kynge was thus at Calays, to hym came thyder vnder sauffe conduyt, ỹ duke of Burgoyn, & had w̄ them dyuers cōmunicacions, & after retourned to his owne. And soon after the kynge retourned into Englande, & came to Westmynster vpon seynt Lukes euyn, or the. xvii. day of Octobre. Aduentus imperatoris in Angliam. Seynt Georges feest.

This yere and season, whyle the kyng was at Calays, that is to meane vpon ỹ daye of the Assumpcyon of our blessyd Lady, the duke of Bedforde, accompanyed with the erle of Marche & other lordes, had a great floyt⁵ and batayll with dyuers carykkes of Ieane & other shyppes, where after longe and sore fyght, ỹ honour fyll to hym & his Englysshemen, to the great losse of the straungers, bothe of theyr men and also of theyr shyppes, as some drowned, and. iii. of the grettest of theyr carykkes taken.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xvii.

Robert Wodtyngton.

Henry Barton, skynner. Anno. v.

Iohñ Couentre.

THis yere the kynge holdynge his parlyament at Westmynster, to hym was graūted by A quyndecim

¹ *Omitted in the* MS. ² *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. ³ and both. MS. ⁴ grete gyfts. MS. ⁵ conflyct.

auctorytie of the same a fyftene; and by a conuocacion of ỹ clergy, was graunted to hym a dyme, for the mayntenaunce of his warrys: wherupon newe prouycõn was made for his seconde vyage into Fraunce.

Execucio. By auctoryte of this parlyamẽt also, Richarde, whiche was sone & heyre of ỹ erle of Cãbrydge, which erle was put to deth at Southampton, created[1] duke of Yorke, which after was maryed vnto Cecile ỹ doughter of Dariaby erle of Westmerlãde, by reason ỹ he boughte his wardshyp of ỹ kyng. By the whiche lady Cecile he had Henry ỹ dyed yonge, Edward ỹ after was kyng, Edmũde erle of Rutlãde, Anne duchesse of Exceter, Elizabeth duchesse of Suffolk, George duke of Clarence, Richard duke of Glouceter & after kyng, & Margaret duchesse of Burgoyn. And whan all thyng was redy for ỹ kynges viage, he ordeyned Iohñ duke of Bedforde his brother protecto[r] of this lande in ỹ tyme of his absence; & that done he with his lordes aboute Wytsontyde, toke his shyppyng at Southhampton, and so sayled into Normandy, and landyd vpon Lammas day at a place called Tooke or Towke. And after he was with his host there landed, for somoche as he was warnyd of certayne shyppes of warre ỹ entendyd to do some harme in Englande, beyng than vpon the see, he therfore to withstande theyr malycyous purpose, sent ỹ erle of Marche, the erle of Huntyngdon, with other, to store[2] the see; the whiche encountred the sayd enemyes, and after a lõge & cruell fyght, them venquysshed and ouercome; which fyght was vpon ỹ day of seynt Romayn, or the. ix. day of August, as hath the Frenshe Cronycle. And of the Frenshe nauy was chief capitayn the vycoũt of Narbon, whiche in that fight was taken with great plente of treaso[r]; for, as sayth Gaguynus, he with one Moũtney an other capytayne, to whome the sowdyours wages was cõmytted, of one assent, for theyr synguler lucre, withhelde the sayd wages, by reason wherof whan they shuld ioyne in batayll, many of them w̃ theyr shyppes withdrewe, and laft theyr capytayns in the daũger of their enemyes. But this is lyke to be a fayned excuse of the said Gagwyne, to saue ỹ honour of ỹ Frenshmẽ, as he many tymes semblably doth in many places of his boke.

The kynges seconde vyage to Fraũce.

Fol. Clxxix.

Nauale bellum.

Towke delyuered. Then to retourne vnto kynge Henry: whan he was thus landyd, he sent vnto the rulers of the towne of Towke, and had it vnto hym delyuered; but the castell was defendyd agayne hym tyll seynt Laurence daye folowynge: the whiche he gaue after vnto his brother the duke of Clarence, with all the signory therunto belongynge.

Caan delyuered. And this done, the kynge sped hym towarde Cane, and layd his siege therunto vpon the. xvii. day of ỹ foresayd moneth of August, the which contynued tyll the feest of the Natyuite of our Lady, & than won vpon the partie that the duke of Clarence assawted; but the castell helde by apoyntmẽt, if no rescouse were had tyll ỹ. xiiii. day folowyng, at whiche day the said castell was delyuered with other. xiiii. stronge holdes, which had before taken the same appoyntment. Than the kynge made the foresayd duke of Clarence capitayne of the sayd towne and castell. And in this passe tyme were diuers other townes & stronge holdes gotyn by diuers of the kynges retynew, as the erle marshall, the erle of Warwyke & other, the whiche wan Louers, Faloys, Neuelyn, Cherburgth, Argentyne, and Bayons the cytie, with many other strõge abbeys and pilx[3]. Than the kyng helde there seint Georges feest, and dubbyd there. xvi[4]. knyghtes of the Bath, and after cõtynued his warres duryng this mayres yere, in wynnynge vpon ỹ Frenshmen by appoyntmẽtes & otherwyse, wherof the circumstaunce were very longe to declare in ordre.

Mulieres fatue. In this yere also, and vpon the feestfull day of Ester, fyll a chaũce in Lõdon, whiche, to ỹ fere of all good christen men, is necessary to be noted; for vpon the[5] hygh & solempne day, by excytynge of the deuell, & yll disposicion of. ii. women, that is to meane the wyfe of the lorde Straunge, & the wife of sir Iohñ Trussel knyght, suche vnkyndnesse fyll atwene theyr. ii. husbandes, ỹ eyther wolde haue slayne other within the parysshe churche of Seynt Dunstanes in the East: in partyng of which persones dyuers men were

[1] was created. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] scoure. [3] pyles. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] xv. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [5] this. MS.

hurt & sore wounded, & one named Thomas Petwarden slayne out of hāde, whiche was a freeman and fysshemonger of ȳ cytie. Than lastly both frayers were taken & brought vnto the countour in the Pultry, & for the sayd lorde Straūge was demyd culpable of the begynnynge of this fraye, he therfore vpon the Sonday folowynge, & for suspendynge of the Church, was denoūced accursyd at Poulis crosse, & in all parysshe churches of London; and fynally he was demyd to open penaunce & dyd it, and made great amendes vnto the wyfe of the said Thomas for the deth of her husbande: and in the ende of this yere whete at London was solde for. ii.s. a busshell. Caristia frumenti.

Anno Domini. xiiii.C.xvii. Anno Domini. xiiii.C.xviii.

Henry Rede.

Richarde Merlowe, ironmonger. Anno. vi.

Iohn Gedney.

THis yere sir Iohn Oldcastell, lorde Cobham, the which, as before is shewed in ȳ ende of ȳ firste yere of this kynge, escapyd out of the Towre of London, was in the moneth of[1] sent vnto London by the lorde Powys out of Walys, the which sir Iohn for heresy and treason was conuict in the moneth of[2] folowynge, and for the same drawen vnto Seynt Gyles felde, where he was hāged vpon a newe peyer of galowys with chaynes, and after cōsumed with fyre. And aboute that season, the persone of Wortham in Norfolke, whiche tyme[3] had haunted Newmarket heth, and there robbyd and spoyled many of ȳ kynges subgettes, was nowe with his cōcubyne brought vnto Newgate where he lastly dyed. Sir Iohnne Oldcastell.

And kynge Henry beynge styll in Normandy, deuyded his people in the[4] parties, wherof one he reserued vnto hymself, the seconde he cōmytted to the rule of the duke of Clarance, and the thirde vnto ȳ erle of Warwyke, whiche sayde duke and erle employed theyr armyes so well & valyauntly, that eyther of theym encroched sore vpon the Frenshmen, and wanne from theym many stronge holdes and pilx[5]; and the kynge after longe sieges, by hym contynued aboute Argentyne, Cressy, Seynt Launde and other, he then in the ende of this yere, that is to say vpon ȳ daye of translacyon of Seynt Edwarde, or the. xiii. daye of Octobre, he layde his siege vnto the cytie of Roan, and contynued the same tyll the. xii. daye of Ianuary folowynge, in the whiche passe tyme the olde mayer was chaunged to a newe as foloweth. Vpon the. ix. day of Octobre dyed Iohn Bryan sherif, and for hym was chosen to that offyce Iohn Parnes draper. Roan.

Anno Domini. xiiii.C.xviii. Anno Domini. xiiii.C.xix.

Iohn Bryan.

Willyam Seuenok, grocer. Rauffe Barton[6]. Anno. vii.

Iohn Parnesse.

THis yere, the foresayd siege about the cytie of Roan contynuynge, vpon the. xii. day of Ianuary foresaid the Frenshmen offeryd to treate, whiche treaty ȳ kyng admytted vnto the erlys of Warwycke & Salysbury with other; and for the Frenshe partye was appoynted the capytayne of the cytie, named sir Guy de Bocier, and other; by reason of whiche treaty it was agreed, that the sayd capitayne vpon the. xix. daye of the sayd present moneth of Ianuary, at suche an houre as it shuld please the kynge to assygne, shulde delyuer vnto suche persones as the kyng wold appoynt, the cytie and castell of Roan in all peasyble wyse, except ȳ sayd cytie & castell be rescowyd by the dolphyn of Fraunce before the sayd. xix. daye, and the. xxii. daye of the sayd moneth the inhabytauntes of the said cytie to pay vnto the kynge. xv.C. tentes[7] of golde, wherof two shuld alway be worth an Englysshe noble; & other. xv.C. of lyke scutes they shuld paye vpon the xxiii. day of February next

[1] *The* MS. *adds* December. [2] of February. MS. [3] long tyme. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] thre. [5] pyles. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [6] Berton. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] scutes.

fol-

Fol. C.xxx. folowynge, whiche couenauntes, with many & dyuerse other comprysed in. xxv. articles, were by the assuraunce of both parties suerly ratysfyed & assuryd. And for no rescouse by the sayde dolphyn or any other Frenshman was made by the day aboue lymytted, therefore ỹ sayd capitayne, accordynge to his bonde and promesse, delyueryd the sayde cytie & castell, vpon the. xix. daye of Ianuary aforesayd, beynge the day of seynt Wolstan.

The cytie of Roan. The wynnynge of this cytie of Roan ascribeth Gaguynus, vnto the ciuile dyscorde that was atwene the cytezeyns and their firste capitayne, named erle of Dammale, whom they expulsyd the cytie with a stronge power of Normans; but yet, as he affermyth, the cytezeyns helde the cytie tyll they were constrayned for lacke of vytayll, to ete horses, dogges, cattes, rattes, and other vermyn.

Whan kynge Henry had set the cytie of Roan in an ordre, he then passed the countrees toward Fraunce, so that he subdued the cyues and townes as he rode, and the. xx. daye of Maye he came to Troys in Champeyne, where he was honourably receyued.

Troys in Champeyne. In whiche passetyme, Iohñ duke of Burgoyne, that before tyme had ben the occacion of the murder of the duke of Orleaūce, was nowe slayne in the presence of the dolphyn, lyke as before I haue shewyd to you in the. xxxix. yere of Charlys ỹ. vii. wherfore Philyp his sone, & duke after hym, refused the dolphyns partie, and drewe hym vnto kynge Henry, and delyuered to hym the possession of Charlys the Frenshe kynge and dame Katheryne his doughter, as affermyth Gaguynus.

Maritagiū ī ter dominū regē Henricum quintū, & dominam Katherinā filiā regis Francie. Then were meanes of concorde and vnyte sought and laboured by ỹ Frenshemen in so effectuell maner, that shortly after, for a fynall peas to be hadde atwene both realmes, kynge Henry at Troys in Champeyñ foresayd, by the meanes of the sayd Philyp duke of Burgoyn, maryed the forenamed Katheryne vpon Trynyte Sondaye, than beynge the. iii. daye of Iuny. Before solemnyzacion of whiche maryage a treaty and conclucōn of a peas, cōteynyng. xxxvii. articulis, atwene both kynges was concluded; wherof the effect was, that kynge Henry shuld be admytted and named regent of Fraunce, and that Charlys shuld be kynge for terme of his lyfe, and ressaive the issues and profytes of the same, and quene Isabell his wyfe to enioye her dower for terme of her lyfe, to quenes of Fraūce due and accustomed.

And quene Katheryne, kynge Henryes wyfe, to haue her dower in Englande to ỹ value of. xl. M. scutes, whiche shuld be in value of. x. M. marke Englysshe; and if she ouerlyued kynge Henry, then she to haue dower of ỹ realme of Fraunce, to the value of. xx. M. frankes yerely, to be leuyed, of suche lordshyppes as Blaunche, sometyme wyfe to Philyp la Beaw, helde.

And after the deth and tyme of the foresayd Charlys, ỹ crowne with all ryghtes belongynge to the same, of the realme of Fraunce, to remayne vnto kyng Henry and to his heyres kynges..

And for the sayd Charlys was vysyted with sykenesse, the kyng as regent shuld haue the hole gouernaūce of the sayd realme and defēce of ỹ same, and specially agayne the dolphyn; whiche entended & dyd his vttermost power to distourbe the sayd peas.

And that ỹ lordes & nobles of Fraunce, as well spirituell or[1] temporall, shall make othe vnto kynge Henry to be obedyent vnto his lefull cōmaundementes concernyng ỹ foresayd gouernaūce & defence, and they with the hedes and rulers of cyties, castellys, and townes, to maynteyne and vpholde the sayde peas to the vttermost of theyr powers, and after the deth of ỹ sayd Charlys, to become his trewe subgettes and liege men; and that all suche lordshyppes as after that daye shuld be conqueryd or wonne from ỹ dolphyn and other disobedientes, that they shuld remayne to the vse of the sayd Charlys durynge his naturall lyfe, prouyded that if any were wonne within the duchye of Normandy, that they shuld incontynently remayne to kynge Henryes vse; and that after the decease of the said Charlys, the duchy of Normādy, & all other lordshyppes therunto belongynge to

[1] as.

be

be as one monarchye vnder the crowne of Fraunce. And also, that duryng the lyfe of the sayd Charlys, king Henry shuld nat name or wryte hymself kynge of Fraunce; and that the sayd Charlys shuld in all his wrytynges name kyng Henry his moste derest sone, Henry kynge of Euglāde, & inheritour of the crowne of Fraūce: and that done[1] imposycion or taske shuld be put vpon the comons of Fraūce, but to the necessary defence and weale of the realme; and that by the aduyce of both counsaylles of the realmes of Englande & of Fraunce, suche stablysshed ordynaunces myght be deuysed, that when the sayd realme of Fraunce shuld fall to the possessyon of kynge Henry or of his heyres, that it might ẇ suche vnyte ioyne vnto ẏ realme of Englande, that one kynge myght rule bothe kyngdomes as one monarchy, reserued always to eyther pryncypat or realme, all ryghtes, lyberties, franchyses, & lawes, so that nother realme shuld be subget vnto other, and that perpetuell amyte & frendshyp with all famylyer cōuersacion as well by byinge, sellynge, & all other lefull, to be cōtynued atwene both subgettes for euer, all customes & pryuyleges to eyther realme to be payde & obeyed; and that kynge Charlys nor Phylip duke of Burgoyne shuld make any concorde or peas with the dolphyn of Vyen, without the assent and agrement of kyng Henry. Nor[2] in lykewyse, withoute the consent of the sayde Charlys and Philip. And the sayd Charlys durynge his lyfe shulde be honourably founde and entreated; and to haue in his housholde & about hym, noble men of his owne nacion, with al other thynges concernynge his estate, & to be longyng[3] in notable places of his realme, where the people to hym shuld be moste obedyent.

After whiche articles, by the consente both[4] prynces, well & nobly[5] ratysfyed & confermyd, and solempnyzacion of the foresayd maryage endyd, kyng Henry with his people sped hym towarde Parys, where he was honourably receyued. And whan he had with his newe wyfe restyd hym there a season, he then with the duke of Burgoyn and dyuers other lordes of Fraunce, layd seige vnto dyuers townes, whiche helde vpon ẏ dolphyns partie, & them wāne by strength or by oppyntemēt; and lastly layde siege & his ordenaunce aboute a stronge towne named Meldune or Meleon, wherof was capitayn a noble warryour named Barbasan, the whiche defendyd that towne manfully. Then the kynge seyng the forse and[6] sternesse of ẏ capitayne, beclypped that towne with a strong siege, lyinge hymselfe on that syde towarde the wood, and the duke of Burgoyne vpon the other syde agayne ẏ temple or monastery of seynt Peter, which siege so cōtynued durynge this mayres yere. Meldon.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xx.

Robert Whytyngham.

Richarde Whytyngton[7], mercer. Anno. viii.

Iohñ Botyller.

THis yere contynuyng styll the former siege about Meleon, tyll aboute the myddell of Nouembre, at whiche tyme the forenamed capitayne sore famysshed, sought meanes of treaty; by meane whereof it was agreed, that he ẇ al other shulde sauely auoyde by a daye lymytted, except all suche persones as before tyme had ben consentynge vnto the deth of Iohñ lately duke of Burgoyne; for the whiche cryme the forenamed capitayne Barbasan was after accusyd with many other, and sent vnto Parys, & ther holden in pryson. And that done, kynge Henry layde his siege vnto a towne called Melden, the whiche finally was also gyuen vp by a lyke appoyntement; wherein were founden certayne persones detected of the foresayd murder, for the whiche after due examynacion made, they were hanged vpon an elmyn tree, standynge by the way ledynge vnto Parys. Whan kynge Henry had thus wroughte moche of his wyll in Fraunce, he toke leue of his fader the *Fol. CLxxxi.*

[1] noon. [2] Nor he. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] lodged. [4] of both. [5] notably. edit. 1559. [6] foresaid. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [7] *The* edit. of 1533. 1542. *and* 1559. *have* Whytyngham *evidently by mistake.*

Frenshe kyng, & with the quene his wyfe sayled into Englande, & landed at Douer vpon Candelmas daye, leuynge in Fraunce for his deputie his brother the duke of Clarence.

The kynges cõmynge to London.

Than the kynge sped hym on his iournay towarde London, and came thyder vpon the. xiiii. daye of February, and the quene came thyder vpon the. xxi. daye of the same moneth. But here for length of tyme I wyll passe ouer the great and curyous ordynaunce prouyded by the cytezyns for the receyuynge of the kyng and quene, aswell of theyr ordurat' metyng with theym vpon horse backe, as of the sumptuous & honourable dyuyses prepayred within the cytie to the kynges & quenes great reioysynge; and forthe I wyll procede to shewe vnto you some parte of the great honour that was vsed & excercysed vpon the daye of the sayd quenes coronacion, whiche was after solempnyzed in seynt Peters churche of Westmynster, vpon the daye of seynt Mathy the Apostle, or the. xxiiii. day of February. After which solempnyzacõn in ŷ churche endyd, she was conueyed into the great halle of Westmynster, & there sette to dyner; vpon whose right hande satte, at the ende of the same table, the archebysshop of Caunterbury, and Henry, surnamed the rych cardynall of Wynchester; and vpon the lefte hande of ŷ quene sat the kynge of Scottes in his astate, ŷ whiche was seruyd with coueryd messe lyke vnto the forenamed bysshops, but after theym. And vpon the same hande & syde, nere to the borde ende, sat the duchesse of Yorke, and the coũtesse of Huntyngdon. The erle of the Marche holdyng a ceptre in his hande, knelyd vpon the right syde. The erle marshal in lyke maner knelyd vpon the left hande of ŷ quene. The countesse of Kent sat vnder the table at the ryght foot, and the coũtesse marshall at the left foot. The duke of Glouceter, sir Humfrey, was that daye ouerloker, and stode before the quene bare hedyd. Sir Richarde Neuyll was that daye caruer to the quene. The erlys brother of Suffolk cupberer, sir Iohñ Stewarde sewar. The lord Clyfford pãterer, instede of ŷ erle of Warwik. The lord Wyllugthby boteler, in stede of ŷ erle of Arũdell. The lorde Gray Ruthyn, or Ryffyn, naperer. The lord of Awdeley amner, ĩ stede of the erle of Cambrydge. The erle of Worceter was that day erle marshal, in absence of the erle marshall, the whiche rode aboute the halle vpon a great courser, w̃ a multytude of typped stauys aboute hym, to kepe the rome in the halle. Of the whiche halle the barons of the. v. portes began the table vpon the ryght hande towarde seynt Stepens chapell, and beneth theym at ŷ same table sat the bowchyers of the Chauncery. And vpon ŷ left hande, next vnto ŷ cupborde, sat the mayre & his bretherñ aldermen of Lõdon. The bysshops began the table foreagayn the barons of ŷ. v. portes, & ŷ ladyes ŷ table agayn ŷ mayre; of whiche. ii. tables, for ŷ bysshops began the bysshop of London & the bysshop of Durham, and for the ladyes ŷ countesse of Stafforde & the coũtesse of Marche. And ye shall vnderstande ŷ this feest was all of fysshe. And for ŷ orderyng of ŷ seruyce therof, were dyuers lordes appoynted for hede offycers, as stewarde, controller, surueyour, & other honourable offyces. For the whiche were appoynted ŷ erlys of Northũberlande, of Westmerlande, the lorde Fitz Hughe, the lorde Furneuall the lorde Gray of Wyltoñ, the lord Ferers of Groby, the lorde Ponynges, the lorde Haryngtoñ, the lorde Darcy, the lorde Dacre, and the lorde Delaware.

Regine coronacõ.

The whiche with other orderyd the seruyce of ŷ feest as foloweth, and thus for the firste course.

Brawne and mustarde.
Dedellys in burneux.
Frument with balien.
Pyke in erbage.
Lamprey powderyd.
Trought.

[1] ordinat. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Codlyng.

Codlyng.
Playes fryed.
Marlyng fryed.
Crabbys.
Leche lumbarde florysshed.
Tartys.

And a sotyltie called a pellycan syttynge on his nest with her byrdes, and an image of seynt Katheryne holdyng a booke, and disputynge with the doctours, holdynge a reason in her right hãde, sayinge, "madame le royne," & the pellican as an answere, *(Ce est la signe, Et du roy, pur tenir ioy, Et a tout sa gent, Elle mete sa entent.)*

The seconde course.

Gely, coloured with columbyne floures.
Whyte potage or creme of almandes.
Breme of the see.
Counger.
Solys.
Cheuen.
Barbyll with roche.
Fresshe samon.
Halybut.
Gurnarde.
Rochet broylyd.
Smelt fryed.
Creuys or lobster.
Leche damask, ẇ the kynges worde or prouerbe flourysshed, *vne sanz plus.*
Lamprey fresshe baken.
Flampeyn flourisshed with a scochoñ royall, therin thre crownes of golde plantyd with floure delyce and floures of camemyll wrought of confeccyons.

And a sotyltie named a panter, ẇ an image of seynt Katheryn, with a whele in her hande, and a rolle with a reason in that other hande, sayinge, *(La royne ma file, In ceste ile, par bonne reson, aues renoun.)*

The thirde course.

Datis in compost.
Creme motle.
Carpe deore.
Turbut.
Tenche.
Perche with goion.
Fresshe sturgeon with welkes.
Porpies rostyd.
Menuys fryed.
Creuys de eawe douce.
Pranys.
Elys rost with lamprey.
A leche called the whyte leche, florysshed with hawthorne leuys and redde hawys.

A march payne garnysshed with dyuerse fygures of aungellys, amonge the which was set an image of seynt Katheryne holdynge this reson, *(Il est escrit, pur voir et dit, per mariage pur cest guerre ne dure.)* And lastly a sotyltie named a tigre lokyng in a

mirrour, and a mā syttyng on horse backe, clene armyd, holding ī his armys a tiger whelpe, ẅ this reason, *(Par force sanz reson ie ay pryse ceste beste,)* and with his one hande makynge a countenaunce of throwynge of mirrours at the great tigre; the whiche helde this reason, *(Gile the' mirrour ma fete distour.)*

Fol. C lxiii. And thus ẅ al honour was fynysshed this solempne coronacion; after the whiche the quene soiourned in the palays of Westmynster tyll Palme Sonday folowynge, and vpon the morne she toke her iournaye towarde Wyndesore, where the kynge & she helde their Easter: and after that hygh feest passed, ỹ kynge made prouycion for his warre in Fraūce, duryng ỹ terme of this mayres yere.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xx. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxi.

Iohn Boteler.
William Cambryge, grocer. Anno. ix.
Iohn Wellys[a].

THis yere vpon Easter euyn, beynge than the. xxii. day of Apryll, the duke of Clarance, brother vnto ỹ kyng, whom at his departynge oute of Fraunce he had laft there for his deputie, was at a place called in Frenshe Baugy or Bauge, ouerset & slayne by a Frensh capitayne named sir Iohn de la Croise, and the erlys of Huntyngdon & of Somerset, with many mo gentylmen of Englande & Gascoyne taken prysoners to ỹ kynges great displeasure. Than shortly after, the kynge helde his parlyament at Westmynster, by auctorytie wherof, & of a conuocacion of the clergy holdynge at Paulis, was graunted to hym a fyftene & dyme; and for the money therof should nat be hastely called on of the cōmons, the bysshop of Wynchester, of his owne fre mynde, lent to the kynge. xx M *li.*

An quyndecym and an halfe.

The thirde viage of kynge Henry into Fraunce. And aboute Pentecost folowyng, kynge Henry shypped at Douer, and sayled to Calays, and from thens yode the thirde tyme into Fraunce, where he warryd durynge this mayres yere.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxii.

Richarde Gosselyn.
Robert Chicheley, grocer. Anno. x.
Wyllyam Weston.

Natiuitas Henrici sexti. IN the begynnynge of this mayres yere, and. vi. daye of Decēbre, was kyng Henry the. vi. born at Wyndesore. And in the. ix. day of the sayd moneth began a parlyament at Paulis; by the whiche was graunted to ỹ kyng a fyftene and a deme of ỹ clergy. And for ỹ coyne of gold at those dayes was great' mynysshed with clyppynge & washynge, to the great hurt of the cōmynaltie, therfore at this parlyament it was enacted & agreed, ỹ, in the payment of this ayde to the kyng graūted, his offycers should receyue all lyght coynes of golde, so that they wanted nat in weyght ouer the rate of. xii. *d.* in the noble, & if any noble wanted more than. xii. *d.* or any other pese of golde after the rate, than the owner to make vp ỹ value to. v. *s.* viii. *d*[b]. By reason of this also, syluer, as grotes and pens were geson, for all men put forth the golde & made store of syluer.

Regine trāsfretatio. This yere also, after Easter, the quene tooke shyppynge at Southamton, and sayled to the kynge into Fraunce, where she was honourably receyued of her fader and moder, and of the cyties and good townes; & in the cytie of Parys, vpon Whytsonday, the kyng and she sat crowne[c] at dyner, whiche had nat before tyme ben seen of any kynge of Englande. In this mayres yere also, but the. x. yere of the kynge, and. x. day of August, a newe wedyrcok was satte vpon the crosse of seynt Paulys steple of Lōdon. Than kyng Henry beyng styll occupyed in his warres in Fraūce, and dayly wynnynge vpon ỹ Frenshmen, in this sayd moneth of August, and. x. yere of his reygne, he waxed

Wedercok of Paulys.

Obitus regis.

[a] de. MS. [b] Wyllyam Weston. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [c] greatly. edit. 1533.
[b] vi.s. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [c] downe. edit. 1542. 1559.

syke at Boys in Vyncent, and dyed there lyke a good Cristen man vpon the laste daye of August, whan he hadde reygned. ix. yeres. v. monethes, &. x. dayes, leuynge after hym his oonly yonge sone Henry, of the age of. viii. monethes and odde dayes; and then his body was enbawmed and caryed[1], and after brought vnto Westmynster, as in the begynnyng of the next mayres yere shalbe shewyd. And in the moneth of Octobre folowyng, dyed the Frenshe kynge, fader vnto the quene, as in his story before is declaryd.

Who that wolde take vpon hym to reherce all the conquestes and triumphaunt victoryes opteyned by this most victoryous prynce, with other lawdable dedys, he shulde, to reherce them ceryously, make a great volume; but where to fore I haue shewyd to you breuely some parte of the famous dedys of this excellent prynce, touchynge ỹ actuell dedys of his body, nowe I wyll breuely towche the actes done by hym for ỹ meryte of his soule. And first, for asmoche as he knewe well that his fader had laboured the meanes to depose the noble prynce Richarde the Seconde, and after was consentyng to his deth, for which offence his said fader had sent to Rome, of ỹ great cryme to be assayled[2], and was by ỹ pope[3] enioyned, ỹ lyke as he had beraũ hym of his naturall and bodely lyfe for euer in this world, that so, by cõtynuel prayer & suffragies of the churche, he shuld cause his soule to lyue perpetuelly in the celestyall worlde. Whiche penaunce, for that his fader by his lyfe dyd nat perfourme, this goostly knyght in most habundaũt maner perfourmyd it: for first he buyldyd. iii. houses of relygyon, as the Charterhous of monkes called Shene, the house of close nunnes called Syon, and the thirde was an house of Obseruaũtes buyldyd vpon that other syde of Thamys, & after let fall by hym for the skyll that foloweth, as testyfieth the boke or regyster of mayres.

Lawde of this prynce.

Where it is reported, ỹ after this noble prynce had thus foũdyd thyse sayd. iii. houses, & endowyd them ẇ cõpetent lãdes, he of a goostly disposicion, ẇ a secrete company for to visyt them, & to se how they kept their dyuyne seruyce, wolde dyuers tymes go fro his mano[4] of Shene, now called Richemoũt, vnto ỹ sayd. iii. places, for ỹ causes abouesayd; at which tymes & seasons he euer foũde the. ii. houses of mõkes & nũnes occupyed as their statutes requyred, but ỹ. iii. hous, whiche was of Frensh fryers, he fande sõdry tymes necligẽt & slak ī doyng of their duety. Wherfore he called before hỹ the fader ẇ some other of ỹ place, & reasoned ẇ them sharply, why non otherwise they entẽdyd their diuyne seruice, & prayed more specially for hỹ as they were boũde of duety. Wherunto it was, after pardon requyred, lastly by ỹ sayd fader answered, ỹ in cõuenyent wyse they naturally myght nat pray for hỹ & his good spede, consyderynge ỹ he dayly warred vpon their faders & kynnesmen, & slewe of them & spoyled them dayly, & enpouerysshed ỹ lande which they of very kynde ought to loue & pray for. After whiche answer thus by thẽ made, ỹ kyng auoydyd ỹ hous of them, & turnyd ỹ lãde therof to such vse as hỹ best lyked, & suffred ỹ hous to fall ī ruyne. And ouer this great acte of foũding of thise. ii. religious houses, he ordeyned at Westminster to brẽne perpetuelly ẇout extinccõn. iiii. tapers of waxe vpon ỹ sepulture of kyng Richarde; & ouer ỹ he ordeyned ther, to be cõtynued for euer, one day ī ỹ weke, a solempñ dirige to be songe, & vpon ỹ morowe a masse; after which masse endid, certayn money to be gyuen, as before is expressyd, ẇ other thỹges in ỹ begyñyng of this kynges reign. And ouer this, his great besinesse ī warre natẇstanding, this most Cristen prynce by his lyf chase his place of sepulture ẇin ỹ foresayd monastery, & there ordeyned for hym to be songe. iij. masses euery day in the weke whyle the worlde lasteth, in maner and forme as by these verses folowyng doth appere.

Henrici misse. Quinti, sunt hic tabulate — *Fol. CLx.*
Que successiue sunt per monachos celebrate.

[1] cerid. [2] assoyled. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] bishop of Rome, edit. 1542.

Prima

Prima fit[1] Assūpte, de festo virginis alme;
Poscit postremam, Christus de morte resurgens.
Prima salutate de festo virginis extat;
Nunciat angelicis laudē postrema choreis.
Esse deū natū de virgine prima fatetur;
Cōmemora[2] natā sic vltima missa Mariam.
Prima celebretur, ad honorē neupmates almi;
Vltima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam.
Semper prima coli debet de Corpore Christi;
Vltima sit fata, de virgine purificata.
Condecet[3] vt prima celebretur de Cruce sctā
Atq; salutate fiet postrema Marie.
Omnes ad sctōs est prima colēda supernos;
Vltima de Requie pro defunctis petit esse.
Semper erit media, de proprietate diei.

Missa Assumpciōis Marie
Dñica Missa Dñice Resurrectōis. i.
Missa Salutationis Marie
Lune. Missa annūciatōis Marie. ii.
Missa Natiuitatis Christi
Martis Missa Natiuitatis Marie. iii.
Missa Sancti Spiritus
Mercurii Missa Conceptionis. iiii.
Missa Corporis Christi
Iouis Missa Purificationis. v.
Missa sancte Crucis
Veneris Missa salutatiōis Marie. vi.
Missa oīm sanctorum
Saboti Missa de Requie[4]. vii.
Omī die. Missa diei quotidie.

Whiche versis may thus to[5] vnletteryd be Englysshed.

Loo here is noted, and put in memory,
That ouer this[6] actes, noble and marcyall,
This excellent prynce, this fyfte kynge Henry,
His soule to endowe, he was memoryall;
For with suffrages, whiche euer laste shall,
Of masses thre, that folowe ceryously,
At Westmynster he ordeyned to be sayd dayly.

Sōday. Vpon Sonday the firste masse to begynne,
Deuoutly to be sayd, of the Assumpcion
Of our blessyd Lady, and nat therafter blynne.
But then the latter of the Resurrection.
Mōday. And on the Monday, of the Visitacion,
The firste masse after ordeyned is.
Of the Annunciation, the latter masse sayd is.

[1] sit. MS. [2] Commemorat. MS. [3] concedet. edit. 1533. 1542. [4] reliquie, *erroneously*. edit. 1559. [5] to the. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] these.

Vpon

Tuysday. Vpon the Tuysday, to kepe the ordre iust,
The firste to be sayd, of Cristes natiuite.
Then of our Lady byrth, the latter flowre[1] must.
Wednysday. On Wednysday, the Holy Ghost halowed to be,
And of the Concepcion the thirde wylled he.
Thursdaye. The Thursday to synge the firste of Corpus Christi,
Of the Purificacion, the laste of our Lady.

Fryday. Vpon the Fryday, a masse of Cristes crosse,
And of the Salutacion, the latter for to synge,
And for of daye or tyme shuld be no losse.
Saterdaye. Vpon Saterdaye, the firste of that mornynge,
A masse of all Seyntes, to praye for the kynge.
Than masse of Requiem, to be laste of all.
Quotidie. And euery day, the day masse, amyd thyse masses to fall.

Lenuoy.

O mercyfull God, what a prynce was this,
Whiche his short lyfe in marcyall actes spent
In honour of conquest, that wonder tyme[2] it is
Howe he myght compasse suche dedys excellent.
And yet for that his mynde nothynge detent,
All goostly helthe for his soule to prouyde,
Out of this worlde or fatally[3] shuld slyde.

So that though I had Tullyes eloquence,
Or of Senek the great moralyte,
Or of Salamon the perfyght sapience,
Or the swete dyties of dame Caliope;
Yet myght I nat in prose or other dytte,
Accordyngly auaunce this prynces fame,
And with due honour to enhaunce the same.

Consyderynge his actes, wherof parcell appere
In this rude werke, with many moo lefte oute;
The tyme also, whiche was lesse than ten yere,
That he so shortly brought all thynge aboute,
By dyuyne grace forthryde[4] without doute,
That myghtefull Lorde, he halpe his goostly knyght,
With grace and honour, to passe this worldes fyght.

And to haue rewarde, dowble and condyngne:
And firste, for marcyall actes by hym doone,
To be auauncyd amonge the worthy nyne,
And for his vertues, vsyd by hym efte soone,
With many good dedys, whiche he in erth had doone;
Aboue the gerachyes[5], he is, I truste, now stalled,
That was on erth, kynge of kynges called.

HEnry the. vi. of that name, and oonly sone of Henry ỹ. v. and of quene Katheryn doughter of Charlys the Seuenth, kynge of Fraũce, beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Englande the first day of September, in the yere of our Lord. M.iiii.C. and. xxii. *Fol. C.xxxviiii.*

[1] follow. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] to me. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] he fatally. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] furthered. [5] hierarchies. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

and in ẏ ende of ẏ last yere of the reygne of ẏ foresayd seuenth Charlys, thañne kynge of Fraunce.

This Henry, for the insufficyent of his age, whiche, as before is shewyd, was but of. viii. monethes and odde dayes, was cōmytted vnto ẏ rule of his vncles, the dukes of Bedforde and of Glouceter, the whiche, durynge his none age, ruled the realmes of Englāde & of Fraunce honourably, as the duke of Gloceter protectour of Englande, and[1] duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce. Theñe vppon the. xxi. day of October, duringe this mayers yere, Robert Chycheley, died at Paris the abouenamed ẏ[2] seuēth Charlis, kynge of Fraunce, by reason of whose dethe, by force of the appoyntment before made atwene Henry the. v. & hym, as before is towched in the. vii. yere of the sayd Henry, the realme of Fraunce & ryght thereof fylle vnto the yonge kynge Henry; to whose vse the nobles of Fraunce, except a fewe of suche as helde with the dolphyn, delyuered the possession therof vnto the duke of Bedforde, as regent therof duryng ẏ none age of this kynge.

Obitus Caroli.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxiii.

Wyllyam Estfeylde.

Wyllyam Walderne[3]. Anno. primo.

Robert Tatersale.

IN the begynnynge of this mayres yere, and firste yere of the kynge, that is to say, the vii. day of the moneth of Nouembre, the corps of that excellent prynce kynge Henry the. v. was with grete solempnyte & honoure brought vnto ẏ monastery of Westmynster, & there at ẏ fete of seynt Edward with due reuerence enteryd, to whose soule Ihesus be mercyfull. And vpon the. ix. daye of the sayde moneth, was a parliamēt called at Westmynster; by reason wherof, the kynges gouernaūce durynge his noneage was prouyded for, with also ẏ rule of both realmes of Englande & of Fraunce; & by auctoryte of ẏ same, the duke of Glouceter sir Humfrey, was ordeyned protecto[r] of Englande, & duke Iohñ of Bedforde regent of Fraūce. And duryng the same parlyament was graūted vnto ẏ kyng for a subsydie for. iii. yeres. v. nobles of euery sak of wolle ẏ shuld passe out of[4] the lande. And ẏ first day of Marche after, was of his preesthod deregradyd an herytike, named William Tayllour, & brent to asshes ī Smythfeld; whose oppinyons, for the heryng of thē shuld be tedious & vnfruttefull, I therfore wyll nat ẇ them blot my booke. In this moneth of Marche also, was ẏ towne of Poūt Melanc deliuerd by apoyntmēt vnto ẏ regent of Fraūce; of the whiche appoyntement one artycle was, ẏ al horses, abylementes of warre, harneys & other, shulde be lefte within the sayd place; and also golde and syluer, & other iewellys there to remayne hooly; and that if any persone were within ẏ[5] holde founde, whiche before tyme had ben gylty or consentyng to the deth of the duke of Burgoyn, that he shuld be delyueryd vnto ẏ regent, & nat to take any benefet or pryuelage by that appoyntemēt.

Parlyament.

Heryticus.

And this yere the west gate of the cytie called Newgate, was newly buyldyd & repayred by the executours of Richarde Whytyngdon, late mayre of Lōdon. And this yere, after Mydsomer, fyl great water or rayne, so that for the more party, euery daye atwene the begynnynge of Iuly & ende of Septembre, it rayned lytell or moche; and yet that natwithstandynge, that yere was conuenyent plentye of all grayne, so that whete passyd nat viii.s. at London, and malte. v.s.

Newgate.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxiiii.

Nicholas Iamys.

Wyllyam Crowmer, draper. Anno. ii.

Thomas Wadeforde.

THis yere, that is to meane, in ẏ begynnynge of this mayres yere, and. xiii. daye of

Varia constructio.

[1] and the. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the. *omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *The MS. adds* Mercer. [4] ouer. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] the. edit. 1542. 1559.

Nouembre,

Nouembre, the kynge, with the quene his moder, remoued from Wyndesore towarde London, and came that nyght vnto Stanys, [and vpon the morowe, beynge Sonday, whan he was borne towarde his moders chare, he shyrlyd & cryed so feruently, that ỹ noryce with her brestes, nor nothynge ellys ỹ the quene coude deuyse, myght content hym. Wherfore, the quene beynge feryd that he had ben diseasyd, retourned agayne to her chambre, where anone he was in good rest and quyet.

This, of some wryters, is noted for a dyuyne monycyon that he wold nat trauayll vpon the Sonday; but how it was, the quene taryed with hym there ỹ nyght,][1] and vpon ỹ morowe he was borne to the chare with glade semblant and mery chere, and so came to Kyngeston ỹ nyght, and vpon the morowe vnto his manour of Kyngeston. Vpon Wednysday, the quene syttynge in her chare, & he vpon her lappe, passed with great tryumphe thorugh the cytie, & so vnto Westmynster, where thenne was holden his parlyament, & there set in his kyngly mageste, within the parlyamēt chambre, amonge all his lordes: where ỹ speker of the parlyament made to hym a famous preposicion, wherof the effect was of the grace of[2] God had endowed the realme with, for the presence of so towarde a prynce, and soueraygne gouernour as he was, with many other wordes of cōmendacyon, whiche I passe ouer. The. xxvi. daye of the sayd moneth of Nouembre, the kynge with the quene remouyd from Westmynster vnto Waltham Holy Crosse; and after he had there a season soiourned, he remoued vnto Hertforde, where he helde his Cristenmasse, and the kynge of Scottes with hym. And ỹ foresayd parlyamēt was eniourned vnto ỹ. xx. day of Cristemas; in the which parlyamēt, amonge other actes, was ordeyned, that what prysoner ỹ for graūde or pety treason was cōmytted to warde, and after wylfully brake or escaped ỹ same, it shulde be demyd pety treason, & that the goodes of hym so escapyng, shuld be forfayted to the lorde of ỹ soyle that they were foūde in. In the moneth of February, sir Iamys Stewarde, kyng of Scottes, maryed in the face of the churche of seynt Mary Ouereys in Southwerke, dame Iohane, ỹ duchesse doughter of Clarence, whiche was doughter vnto the erle of Somerset, firste husbande vnto the sayd duchesse; & the feest was holden in the bisshop of Wynchesters place by. And soon after, vpon ỹ. xiiii[3]. day of February, the foresayd parliament beynge agayne holden at Westmynster, for brekyng of ỹ foresayd acte of breking of pryson, sir Iohn Mortymer was accusid by a yomā, named William Kyng, & seruaūt vnto sir Robert Scot, knyght, & keper of the Towre of Lōdon, of dyuers poyntes of treason, as folowen. First, he coūsaylled with ỹ sayd Wylliam kyng, to ỹ ende to breke out of pryson, & promysid to hym for ỹ same, ỹ yerely value of. xl. *li.* lāde, and ī processe an erledome; also ỹ the sayd Mortymer shuld say, that he wold go into Walys vnto the erle of the Marches, & there he wold reyse. xl.M. men, & with ỹ power he wold enter this lande, and stryke of the heddes of the lorde protectour, & of the bysshop of Wynchester, to the entent that he myght tell or playe with some of his money. *Fol. CLxxxvi.* Accusacyon of treason.

And ferthermore he accused hym, that the sayd Mortymer shulde saye, that the erle of Marche shulde be kyng, by ryght of enherytaūce, and that he hymselfe was nexte ryghtfull heyre to the sayd crowne, after the sayde erle of Marche; wherfore, if the sayd erle wold nat take vpon hym the crowne, & rule of the lande, he sayd ỹ he ellys wolde. And ouer this, the sayd William alledged, to the sayd sir Iohn Mortymer, that he shulde saye, ỹ if he fayled of his purpose, and myght nat wynne vnto ỹ erle of ỹ Marches, that than he wolde sayle vnto the dolphyn, & ayde & take his partie, where he wyst well he shuld be well accepted, and haue good ayde of hym, to bryng aboute his purpose. All which matyers were duely approuyd by the sayde William, agayne the sayd sir Iohn, before the lordes & cōmons of the sayd parlyament; for the which treasons he was after drawen & hanged.

In this yere also, the duke of Bedforde beyng in Fraunce as regent, warred strongly

[1] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] that. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] xiii. edit. 1542. 1559.

vpon the dolphyn, and wanne from hym many stronge holdes and townes: as Crotey, Basyde, Riell, Rulay, Gironde, Basyle, Mermonde, Milham, Femel, Seintace, Iesak Mauron, Duras, Montsuer, La Venak, Palageen, Cerneis, Noelam, Cusak, & Doual, w̄ dyuers other; & so cōtynued [his nobles tyl he came vnto Vernoyl, which of Englysh wryters is wryten Verneyl ī Perche;][1] the which he helde so streyght, ỹ lastly Girard, ỹ capitayn therof, agreed to delyuer it by a certayn day, except he were rescowyd. After which appoyntmēt so takē, the sayd Girande, as wytnesseth Gaguinus, sent word to Charlis ỹ. viii. of ỹ name, or the. vii. after diuers wryters, which of his fautours was than accōptyd for king of Fraūce. And he ī al possyble hast sent thyder the duke of Alanson, ỹ erle of Turoñ or of Douglas, of Bowgham or Boucam, of Daumayll, & the vicoūt of Narboñ, w̄ a strong power of Armenakkes, Scottes, & Frenshmē; the which host, or it myght approch to ỹ sayd towne to make rescouse, the daye expyred, & it vnto ỹ duke was deliuered. Whan ỹ duke of Alanson was asserteyned of ỹ deliuere of ỹ towne, he toke his aduyce of ỹ other capitaynes, whether it was better to retourne, cōsyderyng ỹ towne was yolden, or to gyue batayl vnto ỹ Englisshmē. But fynally, for no reproche shuld be to them arected, as they had flede for fere, kept on their iournay, & pight their feld ī a playn nere vnto ỹ said towne of Vernoyll, where they beyng strongly enbataylled, vpon ỹ. vii. day of ỹ moneth of August, ỹ duke of Bedforde, w̄ his retynue, gaue to them sharp & cruel batayl, the which enduryd longe wout knowleg of victory. But fynally, by Goddes ordenaūce & power, ỹ victory fyll to ỹ Englysshe partie, to ỹ great losse of theyr enemyes: for in ỹ fyght was slayne, as testifieth ỹ Frensh Gaguyne, the erles of Turon & Boucam, of Daumayle, w̄ ỹ vicoūt of Narboñ, & dyuerse other men of name; & of the cōmons were slayn to ỹ nombre of. v. M. And there was taken ỹ duke of Alanson, the marshall of Fraunce, and other; but the Englysshe wryters affermyth. x. M. to be slayne and moo.

The batayl of Verneyll in Perche.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxiiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxv.

Symonde Seman.

Iohñ Mychell. Anno. iii.

Iohñ Bywater.

Parlyamēt.

THis yere after Easter, ỹ kynge helde his parlyament at Westmynster, the whiche began vpon ỹ daye of seynt Erkenwalde, or the laste daye of Apryll. And two dayes before, the kynge, with the quene his moder, came thorugh ỹ cytie from Wyndesore: and whan he came at the west dore of Paulys, the lorde protectour toke hym out of the chare, and so was ladde vpon his fete, betwene the said lorde protectour and the duke of Exceter, vnto the steppes goynge into the quyer, fro whens he was borne vnto ỹ hygh aulter, & there kneled[2] in a trauers purueyed for hym. And whā he had be there, he yode to ỹ rode of ỹ north dore, & ther made his offerynges; he was then borne into ỹ church yerde, & there set vpon a fayre courser, & so cōueyed thorugh Chepe, & ỹ other stretes of the cytie, vnto Seynt Georges Barre, & so helde his iournay to his manour of Kenyngton. And contynuynge the foresayd parlyament, the kyng was sondry tymes cōueyed to Westmynster, & within ỹ parlyament chamber kept there his royall astate; by auctoryte wherof, to hym was graūted a subsydie of. xii.*d.* in the. *li.* of all maner marchaundyse cōmynge in or passyng out of this realme, and. iii.*s.* of a tunne of wyne, for the terme of. iii. yeres to be holden. And ferthermore it was enacted, that all marchaūt straūgers shuld be set to an Englisshe hoost, within. xv. dayes of theyr cōmynge to their porte sale, & to make no sale of any marchaūdyse, or they were so lodgyd, & then w̄in. xl. dayes folowyng to make sale of all ỹ they brought; & if any remayned vnsolde at the sayd. xl. dayes ende, that then all suche marchaūdyse, beyng than vnsolde, to be forfayted vnto the kyng. Also, ỹ al straūgers ỹ caryed any wolles out of this lāde, shuld pay. xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.*

[1] *Omitted in the* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

[2] sett. MS.

for a sakke custome, where ỹ Englyssh marchaunt & denyzen payde but. v. nobles, ẏr many other cõdicions & penalties, as well for Englysshe and ỹ other marchauntes, whiche wolde axe longe leysour to shewe, enacted and passyd durynge this sayd parlyament.

And the seconde daye of the moneth of August was yolden vnto the erle of Salysbury, appoynted with other by ỹ regent, the cytie of Mans, vnder appoyntement, comprysed in. ix. articles; wherof one specyall was, that if any persones were foũde within the cytie whiche had ben consentynge vnto the dukes deth, Iohñ late duke of Burgoyn, that they shulde staude at the grace of the sayd regent.

Also this yere the duke of Glouceter, lord protectoʳ, which lately before had maryed the duchesse of Holande, a woman of great possessyon, for cause of rule wherof, to haue domynyon of the same, he with the sayd duchesse sayled towarde that countre, and there of her subgettes was peasybly and with honour receyued; but fynally he had such chere that he was glade to retourne into Englande, leuyng his wyfe there in a towne of her owne, named Mounse. But after his departynge, the duke of Burgoyn so demeaned hym to the rulers of that towne, were it by batayll or otherwyse, that they delyuered her to the sayd duke, & he forthwith sent her vnto Gaunt, there to be kept as prysoner. But by the frendshyp of one named sir Iaques de la Grayll, a Burgonyon knyght & her owne polacy, escaped thens in a mãnes clothing, & came to a towne i Zelande, named Zierixe, & fro thẽs to an other towne in Zelãde, called Ghwode or Ghowde, where she wstode the dukes power. The duchesse of Holande.

Then the duke of Glouceter heryng of the escape of his wyfe, and of the malyce of the duke foresayd, in all haste prouyded a stronge cõpany of sowdiours and archers, and cõmytted them vnto ỹ rule of the lord Fitzwater; the which, in processe of tyme, landed with them at a place in Zelande called Brewers Hauen, where of their enemyes they were encoũtred and dryuen backe, & so retourned into Englande without any great fete doynge, leuynge ỹ duchesse behynde them for that season. *Fol. C.lxxxvii.*

This yere, aboute Myghelmasse, the pryuce of Portyngale came into Englande, and was honourable receyued and festyd of the kynges vncles, & taryed here ỹ tyme of this mayres yere. This yere also beganne a grudge to kyndle atwene the lorde protectour & his halfe brother the bysshop of Wynchester, the whiche after grewe to a great distourbaũce of ỹ cytie of London, as in the nexte mayres yere shall be shewyd. And in the ende of this yere were many honest men of ỹ cytie apechyd of treason, by a false & malycious persone belongynge vnto ỹ sayd bysshop, and put them vnto great vexacion & trouble, whiche was done by the procurement of the sayd bysshop, as the comon fame then went. And nat allonely men of the cytie were thus vexid, but also other burgeyses of dyuers good townes, as Leyceter, Caunterbury, Northamptoñ, and other. Variacio.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxvi.

Wyllyam Milrede.

Iohñ Couentre, mercer. Anno. iiii.

Iohñ Brokle.

THis yere, the. xxix. daye of Octobre, and selfe same day that the mayre for the yere folowynge yerely at Westmynster taketh his charge, at suche tyme as he was holdynge his great dyner, he was by ỹ lorde protectour sent for in spedy maner, & whan he was comyn to his presence, he gaue to hym a streyght cõmaundemẽt that he shuld se that the cytie were sueriy watched in that nyght folowynge, and so it was. Then vpon the morowe folowyng, aboute. ix. of the clok, certayne seruauntes of the forenamed bysshop, wolde haue entred by the bridge gate; but the rulers therof wolde nat suffre them i so great nombre, but kepte theym out by force, lyke as before they were cõmaunded. Wherwith they beynge greuously discontentyd, gaderyd to theym a more nombre of archers & men of armys, & assautyd the gate with shot and other meanes of warre; in somoch, Aryot.

that the cõmons of the cytie herynge therof, shytte in theyr shoppes and sped them thyder in great nombre. And lykely it was to haue ensued great effucyon of blode shortly therupon, ne had ben the discressyon of the mayre and his brether, that exorted the people, by all polytike meane, to kepe the kynges peas. And in this passe tyme, the archebysshop of Caunterbury, with the prynce of Portyngale, & other, toke great labour vpon theym to pacyfye this varyaunce atwene the lorde protectour and the bysshop; in so moche, that they rode atwene theym. viii. tymes, or they myght brynge theym to any resonable comformyte. Than lastly they agreed to stande to the rule of the regent, or of such as he wolde assygne; wherupon ỹ cytie was set in a more quyete. Then the bysshop of Wynchester wrote a letter vnto the duke of Bedforde, or lorde regent, wherof the tenure ensueth.

Litera Episcopi. "RIght hyghe & myghty prynce, and ryght noble, and after one, leuest erthly lorde, I reçõmanude me vnto your grace with all myne herte. And as ye desyre ỹ welfare of the kynge our soueraygne lorde, and of his realmes of Englande and of Fraunce, and your owne weale w̃ all yours, haste you hyder; for by my trouthe, & ye tary longe, we shall put this lande in a iupardye with a felde: suche a brother ye haue here, God make hym a good man; for your wysdome knoweth well, that the profyte of Fraunce standeth in the welfare of Englande. Right hyghe and myghty prynce, I beseche you, holde maister Iohñ Estcourt your coũcellour excused of his taryinge, for it is moche agayne his wyll; but the counceyll here hath made hym do cõtrary his mynde; and that it may lyke you to gyue credence vnto your chamberlayne sir Robert Boteler; and the blessyd Trinite kepe you. Wryten in great haste at London, the laste daye of Octobre." Vpon the. x. day of Ianuary next ensuynge, the sayd duke of Bedforde with his wyfe came vnto London; and with theym came also the sayd bisshop of Wynchester. And the mayre & the cytezyns receyued hym at Mertoñ, & cõueyed hym thorugh the cytie vnto Westmynster, where he was lodgyd in ỹ kynges palays, and ỹ bysshop of Wynchester was lodgyd within the abbottes lodgynge.

Donum ciuitatis. Then vpon the morowe folowynge, or the. xi. daye of Ianuary, the mayre presented the regent with a payer of basyns of syluer & ouer gylte, and in theym a. M. marke of golde; but the busshop had so incencyd hym agayne the cytie, ỹ they receyued but small thanke for all theyr labour and coste. Vpon ỹ. xxi. daye of February, than began a great coũsayl at Seynt Albonys, & after it was enlourned vnto Northampton. But for due conclusions myght nat be dryuen by the sayd counsayll, therfore, vpon the. xxv. daye of Marche ensuynge, was called a parlyment at Leyceter, the whiche enduryd tylle the. xv. daye of Iuny followynge. This was clepyd of the comon people the parlyamẽt of battes: the cause was, for proclamacyons were made, ỹ men shulde leue theyr swerdes & other wepeyns in theyr innys, the people toke great battes & stauys in theyr neckes, and so folowed theyr lordes and maisters vnto the parlyament. And whan ỹ wepyn was inhybyted theym, then they toke stonys & plũmettes of lede, & trussyd them secretely in theyr sleuys & bosomys. Durynge the parlyament, amonge[1] other notable thynges for the weale of the realme, [touchynge][2] the varyaũce ỹ was atwene the foresayd lordes was herein debated & arguyd. In so moche that the duke of Gloceter put ī a byll of complaynt agayne the bysshop, conteynynge. vi. articles. Wherof the firste was, that where the lorde protectour wolde haue had his lodgyng within the Towre of London, he was by the comforte & ayde defendyd and let of the bysshop, & of Richard Wydeuyle, esquyre, than beyng lieutenaũt of the same. The seconde was, for ỹ that the bysshop wold haue remouyd ỹ kynge from Eltham, and haue set hym at his gouernaunce, withoute the aduyce or counsayll of the lorde protectour. The thirde was, that when the duke was enformed of the bysshops entent, and he entendynge, accordynge to his offyce & duetye, in peasyble wyse to haue ryden to the kynge, to haue gyuen vpon[3] attendaunce,

A parlyamẽt at Leyceter.

A byll of cõplaynt.

[1] and amonge. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] upon him.

the bysshop entendynge the distruccōn of the duke, assembled a great multytude of men of armys and archers ī Southwarke, and there drewe ỹ cheyne at the bridge foot, and sette vp pypes & other engynes to stoppe ỹ kynges hygh waye, and ordeyned mē to stāde in chambres and solers to throwe stonys, & by theyr ordenaūces & pollycy to haue destroyed ỹ duke & his company. The fourth article was, ỹ kynge Henry the fyft shuld, by his lyfe tyme, shewe vnto the sayd duke, that by the openynge of a spaynell, a man was taken behynde a tapet, in one of the kynges chambres; the whiche man, after examyned by the erle of Arundell, confessyd that he was sente thyther by the sayd bysshop, to the ende to murder kynge Henry the. iiii.; after whiche confessyon, the sayd erle let sakke that man, and soo caste hym in the Thamys. *Fol. C.lxxvii.*

The fyfte was, that the sayd Henry ỹ. v. beyng prynce and heyre parant to the crowne, the sayd bysshop shulde come vnto hym and say, that for somoch as his fader was vexed with greuous sykenes, and was nat apt to come in conuersacion of the people, nor myght nat conuenyently gyde the realme, that he therfore shulde take vpon hym the rule and gouernaūce of the same, and put his fader from all kyngly power. The. vi and last artycle was, that sedyciously the sayde bysshop hadde, by his letters sent lately vnto the duke of Bedforde, wrongefully accused hym, that[1] he shuld areyse the kynges people, and iuparde this land by a felde, cōtrary the kynges peas and comon wele of this lande. All whiche artycles were by the bysshop wele and suffyciently answered and replyed, so that he layd from hym the blame. And fynally, by the prouydent counsayll of the lorde regent, all the sayd artycles and matiers of varyaūce atwene the sayd. ii. lordes hangynge, were put to the examynacion and iugement, with the assistence of the lordes of the parlyament, of Henry the archebysshop of Caunterbury, of Thomas duke of Exceter, of Iohn̄ duke of Norffolke, of Thomas bysshop of Durham, of Phylyp bysshop of Worceter, of Iohn̄ bysshop of Bathe, of Humfrey then erle of Stafford, of Rauffe lord Cornewell[2], & of maister Wyllyam Alnewyke, then keper of ỹ preuy seale. The whiche lordes, with assystence of the other lordes of the parlyament, made a decre and awarde, soo that eyther party toke other by the hande, with frendly and louynge wordes, none hauynge amendes of other, except the bysshop had wordes of submyssyon vnto the duke, in requyryng hȳ of his fauoure and good lordeshyp: and that accorde thus fynysshed, the parlyament was eniourned tyll after Ester. Vpon Whytsonday folowyng, was a solempn̄ feest holden at Leyceter foresayd, where ỹ regent dubbyd kynge Henry knyght, and then forthwith the kyng dubbyd Richarde duke of Yorke, that after was fader to kynge Edward. Also he dubbyd knyghtes, the sone and heyre of ỹ duke Iohn̄ duke of Norfolke, and the erles of Oxenforde and Westmerlande, with other lordes & gentylmen to the nombre of. xxxiiii. And after that feest with all honour was endyd, the kynge with the regent and other of his lordes drewe towarde London. And so the regent contynued with the kynge in Englande by the full terme of this mayers yere. *Respōcio.* *Agrement.*

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxvii.

Iohn̄ Arnolde.

Iohn̄ Raywell, fysshmonger. Anno. v.

Iohn̄ Hygtham.

THis. v. yere, and moneth of February, ỹ regent with his wyfe and housholde meyne[3] passyd the see vnto Calays, and so thorugh Pycardy into Fraunce. But or he departed thens, that is to meane, vpon the daye of the annunciacion of our Lady, the bysshop of Wynchester with[4] the churche of our Lady of Calays, was created cardynall, [by auctoryte of the bullys of pope Martyn the. v. of that name.][5] And after that solempnyte don, the regent toke hym on his ryght hande, and so conueyed hym vnto his lodgynge. *The regēt.* *Cardynall created.*

[1] in that. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] Lorde Cromewell. MS. [3] meny. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.
[4] within. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

This

This yere was vnresonable of wederynge, for it reyned mooste contynuelly from Ester to Myghelmasse, where thorugh hay & corne was greatly hynderid.

Orleaunce. And in this yere the duke of Alenson, that before was taken prysoner at ỹ batayl of Vernell in Perch, was delyueryd for a raunson of. CC. M. scutes of golde, as testifyeth Gaguynus, whiche is fyfty thousande marke sterlyng money.

In this yere also, the erle of Salysbury, whiche of dyuers wryters is named the good erle, accompanyed with the erle of Suffolke, the lorde Talbot & other, layde a stronge siege vnto the cytie of Orleaūce, and helde the cytezeyns very streyght, and malegre the duke of Orleaunce & the marshall of Fraunce, then named Bonssaak[1], the Englysshemen wan from theym dyuers stronge holdes adioynynge to the cytie, & forcyd theym to brenne a great parte of the subarbes of the cytie.

But sorowe it is to tell, and doolfull to wryte, whyle one daye the sayd good erle, sir Thomas Mountagu, restyd hym at a baye wyndowe, and behelde the compasse of the cytie, and talked with his famylyers, a gunne was leuellyd out of the cytie from a place vnknowen, whiche brake ỹ tymber or stone of the wyndowe with suche vyolence, that the pecys therof all to quasshed ỹ face of the noble erle, in suche wyse that he dyed vpon thre dayes folowyng, vpon whose soule and all Cristen Ihesu haue mercy. Amen.

This, after dyuerse wryters, was inicium malorū: for after this myshap, the Englysshmen loste rather than wan, so that lyteil and lytell they loste all theyr possessyon in Fraūce: and albe it ỹ some what they gat after, yet for one that they wanne they lost thre, as after shall appere.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxvii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxviii.

Henry Frowyk.

Iohn Gedney, draper. Anno. vi.

Robert Otley.

IN this. vi. yere, and begynnynge of the same, the kyng helde his parlyament at Westmynster. By auctoryte wherof, was graunted to hym a subsydie in maner as foloweth. Firste, of euery tonne of wyne that cam into this lāde, from the feest of seynt Ambrose, or the. iiii. daye of Apryll, tyll the ende of that yere, the kynge shuld haue. iii.*s.* belongynge to a denyzyn or the kynges lyege man. Also of all marchaundyse passynge or cōmynge into this lande, shyppyd by denyzon, the kyng to haue of euery. xx *s.* xii.*d.* except wolle, felle, & clothe.

Also to hym was graunted, that of all parysshens thorugh out his realme, beynge the benefyce of the value of. x. marke, that. x. of the sayd parysshons shulde pay of their mouables. vi.*s.* viii.*d.* after the rate of. viii.*d.* euery man: and of all benefyces that were of. x.*li.* value. x. parysshons to paye. xiii.*s.* iiii.*d.* all cyties & boroughes to be excepted. And so rate rate[2] lyke, from the lowest benefyce to the hyghest. And for the inhabytauntes of cyties, boroughes it was enacted, ỹ euery man beyng in value of. xx *s.* aboue his [illegible] of housholde & his apparayll, and his wyfes, shuld paye. iiii.*d.* and so after the rate [illegible]ychest.

[illegible]vere also, and daye of seynt Gyles, or the firste day of Septembre, ỹ cardynall [illegible]ier was met by the mayre & his brether & certayne cytezeyns on horse back, [illegible]vtie, and soo brought vnto his palays in Southwerke. About the same tyme a Bryton, that a good wydowe and honest woman had cherysshed & brought vp of

Murdre. almesse, dwellyng in Whyte Chapell parysshe wout Algate, murdred the sayd woman in a nyght slepyng in her bedde, and after conueyed suche iewellys and stuffe as he myght

Fol. C.lxxxviii. carye; but he was so pursued vpon, that for fere toke[3] a church in Essex, & there forswere the kynges lande. The constables caused hym to be brought to London, and so entendyd to haue conueyed hym westwarde; but so soone as he was cōmyn into the parysshe where before he hadde cōmytted ỹ murder, the wyfes cast vpon hym so moche fylthe &

[1] Boussaak. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] rate in rate. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] he toke. edit. 1542. 1559.

ordure

ordure of the strete, that natwithstandynge the resystence made by the constables, they slewe hym there out of hande.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxviii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxix.

Thomas Dushous.

Henry Barton, skynner. Anno. vii.

Iohn Abbot.

THis yere, vpon the. viii. daye of Nouembre, the duke of Norffolke, accompanyed ẏ many gentylmen, toke his barge at Seynt Mary Ouereys, entendynge to haue passyd thoroughe the brydge, and so vnto Grenewyche; but by the mysgydynge of the sterysman, he was set vpon the pylys of the brydge, and the barge whelmyd, so that all were drowned, except ẏ duke & a few persones ẏ lepte vpon ẏ pylys, whiche after were drawen vp with ropys and so sauyd. And in the moneth of Iuny followynge, the cardynall of Wynchester, with a warly company, passed ẏ see, entendynge to haue made warre vpon the herytykes or Lollers inhabyted[1] in the countre of Prage; but howe it was for nede of men ẏ the regent had in Fraunce, the cardynall chaungyd his purpose, & taried hym there a season with the sayd regent. Fortuna.

After some wryters it was for to strengthe and replenysshe certayne holdes, that wekyd[2] by reason of a conflut[3] that the Englysshmen had with the Frenshmen, at the which the lorde Talbot was taken prysoner, and the lorde Scalys, ẏ many other, to the nombre of. iii.M. Englysshemen, were slayne and taken. But after the oppinyon of the Frenshe Cronycle, this victory shulde be opteyned by Iane or Iohane, callyd in Frenshe la Puzele de Dieu, in the. ix[t]. yere of this kynge.

Of the foresayd heretykes of Prage, spekyth somdeale the auctour of Cronycarum[4]; and shewyth that the chief capitaynes of them were named Procapius, Saphicius, and Lupus a preest, with other both lernyd and vnlerned. And Polycronycon shewyth in the. xix. Chapiter of his laste Booke, that in the. xii. yere of kyng Henry. the foresayd. iii. capitaynes were slayne with the forenamed maister[6] Peter Clerke, beynge an Englysshman taken on lyue with dyuers other, & of the sayd herytykes slayne at. ii. iourneyes ouer. xxii.M.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxx.

Wyllyam Russe[7].

Wyllyam Estfelde, mercer. Anno. viii.

Raffe Holande.

THis. viii. yere, vpon the day of seynt Leonarde, the. vi. daye of Nouembre, kynge Henry beynge vpon the age of ix. yeres, was solempnly crowned in Seynt Peters Churche of Westmynster, at whose coronacion were made. xxxvi. knyghtes of the Bath. And after that solempnyzacion in the sayd churche fynysshed, an honourable feest in the great halle of Westmynster was kepte, where the kynge, syttynge in his astate, was seruyd with. iii. coursys, as herevnder ensuryth. Coronacio.

Frument with venyson.
Viand royall plantyd losvnges of golde.
Bore hedes in castellys of golde and enarmed.
Beef with moton boylyd.
Capon stewyd.
Signet rosted.
Heyron rostyd.

[1] that inhabited. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] were wekyd. MS. [3] conflyct. [4] xi. edit. 1542. 1559.
[5] Cronica Cronicarum. [6] one mayster. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [7] Ruffe. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Great

Great pyke or luce.
A rede leche with lyons coruyn therin.
Custarde royall, with a lyoparde of golde syttynge therein, and holdynge a floure delyce.
Frytour of sunne facion, with a floure delyce therin.

A sotyltie of seynt Edwarde and seynt Lowys armyd, and vpon eyther his cote armoure, holdynge atwene them a fygure lyke vnto kynge Henry, standynge also in his cote armour, and a scripture passynge from them both, sayinge: "beholde. ii. parfyght kynges vnder one cote armour," and vnder the fete of the sayd seyntes, was wryten this balade:

Holy seyntes, Edwarde and seynt Lowyce,
Concerue this braunche, borne of your blessyd blode,
Lyue amonge Cristen, moste soueraygne of pryce.
Inherytour of the flour delyce so gode:
This sixte Henry to reygne and to be wyse,
God graunte he may, to be your mode,
And that he may resemble your knyghthode and vertue,
Praye ye hertely vnto our Lorde Ihesu.

Viand blank barryd with gold.
Gely party wryten and notyd with Te Deum laudamus.
Pygge endoryd.
Crane rostyd.
Byttore.
Conyes.
Chekyns[1].
Fol. CIxxxix. Partryche.
Pecok enhakyll.
Great breme.
A whyte leche plantyd with a rede antelop; a crowne aboute his necke, with a chayne of golde; flampayne powderyd with leopardes, and flower delyce of golde.
A frytour, garnysshed with a leopardes hede, and. ii. estryche feders.

A sotyltie: an emperoure and a kynge, arayed in mantellys of garters, whiche fygured Sygysmunde the emperoure, and Henry the. v.; and a fygure lyke vnto kynge Henry the vi. knelynge to fore theym, with this balade takkyd by hym.

Agayne myscreauntes, the emperour Sygysmunde,
Hath shewyd his myght, whiche is imperyall.
And Henry the. v. a noble knyghte was founde,
For Cristes cause in actes marcyall,
Cherysshed the churche, to Lollers gaue a fall,
Gyuynge example to kynges that succede,
And to theyr braunche here in especyall,
While he doth reygne to loue good and drede.

Quynces in compost.
Blaūd sure, powderyd with quarter foyles gylt.

[1] Chekyns endorid. MS.

Venyson.

Venyson[1].
Egrettes.
Curlew.
Cok and partryche.
Plouer.
Quayles.
Snytes.
Great byrdes.
Larkys.
Carpe.
Crabbe.
Leche of. iii. coloures.
A bake mete lyke shylde, quarteryd red and whyte, sette with losynges gylt, and floures of borage.
A frytour crispid.

A sotyltie of our Lady, syttynge with her childe in her lappe, and she holdyng a crowne in her hande. Seynt George and seynt Denys knelynge on eyther syde, presentyd to her kynge Henryes fygure, berynge in hande this balade, as foloweth:

O blessyd Lady, Cristes moder dere,
And thou seynt George, that called art her knyght;
Holy seynt Denys, O marter most entere,
The sixt Henry here present in your syght,
Shedyth, of your grace, on hym your heuenly lyght:
His tender youth with vertue doth auaunce,
Borne by discent, and by tytle of ryght,
Iustly in[2] reygne in Englande and in Fraunce.

THis solempne coronacyon, with all honoure & ioye fynysshed, prouycyon was made for the kynges iournaye into Fraunce, in whiche passetyme, that is to meane vpon the xxiii. daye of Ianuary, an herytyke was brent in Smythfelde.

And vpon the morowe next folowynge was in that felde foughten a strōge fyght, atwene Iohñ Vptoñ appellant, & Iohñ Downe defendant; but for they quyt theym bothe so manfully, the kynge at length releasyd theyr quarell, and pardoned theym of their trespas. Duellum.

Than vpon seynt Georges daye folowynge, or the. xxiii. daye of Apryll, the kynge toke shyppynge at Douer, and landyd the same daye at Calays, hauynge in his company. ii. dukes, of Yorke and of Norfolke; thre bysshoppes, of Bathe, Ely, & Rochester. viii. erlys, that is to meane of Huntyngdoñ, Stafforde, Warwyke, Oxenforde, Deuynshyre, Mortеyñ, of Ewe, and of Vrmunde, and. xi. barons, that is to saye, lorde Bowchier, Beawmounde, Typtost, Fitzwater, Roos, Arundell, Awdeley, Fawcunbridge, Gray Codnoor, the lorde Scroope, and the lorde Wellys. In this tyme and season that the kynge lay thus at Calays, many skyrmisshes were foughten atwene the Englisshmen & ỹ Frenshmen in dyuers parties of Fraũce; and greatly the Frenshemen preuayled by the helpe of a woman, whiche they, as before is touched, named the Mayden of God. So that lastly she with her company came to a towne called Compeyne, to the entent to remoue the siege layde therunto by the duke of Burgoyñ, and other of the Englysshe capitaynes. And therupon the. xxiii. daye of May, she gaue batayll vnto the Englisshmen and Burgonyons, and faught with theym longe tyme; but in the ende, by the manhode of a Burgonion knyght, named sir Iohñ Luxemburghe, she was taken on lyue, & her company distressyd, and she caryed to Regis transfretacio. La pucele de Dieu.

[1] venyson rosted. MS. [2] to. edit. 1533. 1542.

the cytie of Roan, and there kept a season, for somoche as she feyned her ỹ childe; but whan the contrary of it was knowen, she was therefor iuged and brent.

Of this woman Gaguinus maketh a great processe of her parenty, and of her first takynge vpon her, whereof a part I entende to shewe after in the. vi. yere of Charlys next folowynge kynge of Fraūce.

And in this tyme and season, one Richarde Hounden, wolle pakker of Lōdon, was cōuict of herysy, and brent at Tower Hylle. Thenne kyng Henry, thus lodgynge at Calays, was asserteyned of the takynge of ỹ foresayd woman, by the letters of the duke of Burgoyn; and after he toke his small iournayes tyll he came into Fraūce, & so vnto Parys, of
Fol. CLxxxx. whose cytezeyns he was honourably receyued, and taken for the soueraygne & kynge, and there so taryed all this mayres yere: in whiche season, as wytnessyth Gaguynus, the Frenshmen wan dyuers holdes of the Englysshmen and Burgonyons in the countrey of Brye; and a capitayne named Barbasan scomfyted. viii.M. Englisshmen and Burgonyons, at a place called in Latyne Cathalanencis, as affermyth the foresayd auctour.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxx. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxi.

Water Chertsey.

Nicholas Wottō. Anno. ix.

Robert Large.

Heretykes. THis. ix. yere, aboute Mydlent, a preest named sir Thomas Baglev, and vicar of a vyllage in Essex, called Manueden', a lytell from Walden, was detect of heresy, vpon the whiche he was degrated, & than brent in the place of Smythfelde. And soone vpon Ester folowynge, the lorde protectour was warnyd of an assemble of heretykes at Abyndon; wherfore he sent thyder certayne persones, or rode thyder hymself, as some wryters afferme, and the[2] arrestyd the baylly of that towne, named Wyllyam Maundeuyle, a weuer, the whiche was appoynted for a capitayne of the sayd heretykes: & for to drawe
Iak Sharpe. ỹ people vnto hym, he chaūged his name, and called hymselfe Iak Sharpe of Wygmoris, lande in Walys. But after he was examyned, he confessyd to haue wrought moch sorowe agayne preestes, so that he wolde haue made theyr heddes as chepe as shepe heddes, so ỹ he wolde haue solde. iii. for a peny, or. x. after some wryters. And ỹ same season were taken many of his complicis, whiche were sent vnto dyuers prysons. And the sayd Iak Sharpe was for his offence, drawen, hanged, and hedyd, at ỹ forenamed towne of Abyndon, vpon ỹ Tuysday in Whytson weke, and his hede was sent to London, and there pyght vpon ỹ bridge; and the other of his fawtours were put in execucion in dyuers
Execucio. places & countrees, to the terrour of other. And vpon the. xiiii. day of Iuly that yere, was one named Richard Russell, a wolle mā, drawen, hanged, and quarteryd at Tyborne for treason.

And this yere, the kynge beyng styll in Fraunce, the erle of Arundell, accompanyed with. ii. M. of Englysshe sowdyours, sent a certayne of his companye vnto a towne
Beale Mount. called Beale Mount, to prouoke the [Frenshemen to issue out of the][3] towne. Whiche small cōpany, whan Bossicant & Seyntrales, than capitaynes, beheilde, anone they with their sowdyours of ỹ towne sped them forth to take ỹ sayd Englysshmen; the whiche lytell & lytell gaue bak, tyll they had tolled ỹ Frenshmen a good space from the towne, and then set vpō them with a sterne courage, & helde them on hande tyll the sayd erle with his company rescowyd theym. Thenne atwene them was a cruell fyght; but in the ende the Frenshmen were chased, and the sayd Seyntrayle, with many footmen of ỹ sayd towne, were slayne at ỹ iournay. And shortly after the duke of Burgoyne, with ayde of the Englysshmen, at a place called Barre, scomfited a great company of Frenshmen, & toke. ii. capitaynes belongynge to the duke of Barre, the whiche were named Renat

[1] Mavynden. [2] there. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559.

& Barbazan, for whose raũsom ŷ duke had yeldid to hym ŷ vale of Cassile in Flaũdres.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxii°

Iohñ Adyrlee.

Iohñ Wellys', grocer. Anno. x.

Stephyn Browne.

IN this. x. yere, and. vii. daye of Decembre, kynge Henry the. vi. was crowned in Parys, of the cardynall of Wynchester; at the whiche coronacion was present the lorde regent, the duke of Burgoyne, and dyuerse other nobles of Fraũce, whose names Gaguynus putteth nat in his booke, for reproche of the Frenshemen. And after ŷ solempnytie of this feest was endyd, wherof the circumstaunce to shewe in ordre wolde aske a longe leysour, the kynge departyd from Parys, and so came to Roan, where he helde his Cristemas, & that done he sped hym to Calays. Coronacio.

And whan he had soiourned there a season, he toke shyppynge & retourned into Englande, and landed at Douer the. ix. daye of February. Than he was mette vpon Baram Downe or Barham Howth, that is betwene Douer & Caũterbury, with a great company of gentyls and comoners of Kent, all cladde with rede hodes; the whiche accomponyed hym tyll he came to Blak Heth, where he was mette with the mayer and the cytezeyns of London vpon a Thursdaye, beynge the. xxi. daye of February, the cytezeyns beyng cladde in whyte, with dyuers werkes or conysaũces browderyd vpon their sleuys, after the facultie of theyr mysterys or craftes; and ŷ mayer and his brether were all clothed in scarlet. And after due obeysaunce and salutynge of ŷ kynge, they rode on before hym towarde the cytie. Whan the kyng was cõmyn to the bridge, there was deuysyd a myghtly[1] gyaũt standynge with a swerde drawyn, hauynge this speche wryten by hym. Obuiacio mate-tis.

All tho that been enemyes to the kynge,
I shall theym clothe with confucion,
Make hym myghty by vertuous lyuynge,
His mortall foon to oppresse and bere hym downe[2].
And hym to encreace as Cristes champyon,
All myscheuys from hym to abridge,
With grace of God, at the entry of this bridge.

ANd whanne the kynge was passid the firste gate, & was comyn vnto ŷ drawe bridge, there was ordeyned a goodly tower, hanged and apparayled with sylke & clothes of aras in moost ryche wyse; out of whiche sodaynly apperyd. iii. ladyes rychely clad in golde & sylke, with coronettes vpon theyr heddes: wherof the firste was named dame Nature, the seconde dame Grace, and the thirde dame Fortune; the whiche vnto the kynge had this speche.

We ladyes thre, all by one consent,
Thre goostly gyftes, heuynly and dyuyne,
Vnto the sir kynge, as nowe we do present,
And to thyne hyghnes, here we do this tyme
Vtterly shewe, and theym determyne.
As I Grace, firste at thy cõmynge,
Endowe the with scyence and connynge.

And I Nature, with strength and fayrenesse,
For to be loued, and drade of euery wyght.

[1] Welly. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] myghty. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] here adownne. MS.

And I Fortune, prosperyte and rychesse
The to defende, and to gyue the myght,
Longe to enioye and holde thy trewe ryght;
In vertuous lyfe, with honour to procede,
That thy. ii. ceptours[1] thou may well possede.

Fol. C.xxxxi. There was also in the sayd tower. xiiii. virgyns, all clothyd in whyte, wherof. vii. stode vpon the right hande of ŷ sayd thre ladyes, and. vii. vpon the left hande. The. vii. vpon the ryght hande had bawderykes of saphir colour or blewe; and ŷ other. vii. had their garmentes powdred with sterres of golde. Than the first. vii. presentyd the kyng with the. vii. gyftes of ŷ Holy Goost, as sapyence, intellygence, good cōsayll, strength, cunnynge, pytie, & drede of God; and the other. vii. gaue vnto hym the. vii. gyftes of grace in maner as foloweth.

God the endowe with crowne[2] of glorye,
And with the ceptre of clennesse and pytie,
And with a swerde of myght and victorye,
And with a mantell of prudence clad thou be,
A shylde of fayth for to defende the,
An helme of helth wrought to thyne encreace,
Gyrte with a gyrdyll of loue and parfyte peace.

And after they had thus saluted the kynge, anone they began this roundell with an heuynly melodye, and songe as foloweth.

Soueraygne lorde, welcome to your cytie,
Welcome our ioye, and our hertes pleasaunce,
Welcome our gladnesse, welcome our suffysaunce,
Welcome, welcome, right welcome mut ye be.
Syngynge before thy royall mageste,
We saye with herte withouten varyaunce,
Soueraygne lorde, nowe welcome out of Fraunce.

The mayer and cytezyns with all the comynaltie,
Reioyse your cōmynge newly out of Fraunce,
Wherby this cytie and they releuyd be
Of all theyr sorowe and former greuaunce.
Wherfore they say, and synge without greue[3]
Welcome, welcome, welcome our hertes ioye,
Welcome you be, vnto your owne newe Troye.

Than the kynge rode forthe a softe pase tyll he came at the entre of Cornhylle, wherupon the hylle was ordeyned a tabernacle of curyous werke, in the whiche stode dame Sapyence, and aboute her the. vii. artes or scyences lyberall. As first, grāmer, logyke, rethoryke, musyke, arsmetyke[4], gemetry, and astronomye, eueryche of theym exercisynge theyr connynge and facultie, and the lady herself hadde this speche to the kynge.

Lo I, chief pryncesse, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this sentence of scripture:
Kynges that been moost of excellence,

[1] Sceptres. [2] a crowne. MS. [3] cessaunce. MS. greuaunce. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] arsmetryke. MS. arithmetyke. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

By

By me they reygne, and moost ioye endure.
For trouth[1] my helpe and my besy cure,
To encrease theyr glory and their hygh renowne,
They shall of wysdome haue full possession.

Thanne the kynge passed on tyll he came to the conduyt in Cornehylle, where was sette a pagent made cercle wyse, and in the summet or toppe therof was sette a childe of wonderfull beaute, apparaylled lyke a kynge: vpon whose right hande satte lady Mercy, and vpon the lefte hande lady Trouth, and ouer them stode dame Clennesse enbrasynge ỹ kynges trone. Then before the kynge stode. ii. iuges &. viii. sergeauntes of the coyfe; and dame Clennesse had this speche to the. vi. Henry the kynge.

Loo by the sentence of prudent Salamon,
Mercy and right preseruyn euery kynge,
And I Clennesse obserued by reason,
Kepe his trone from myschief and fallynge,
And maketh it stronge with longe abydynge.
So I conclude, that we ladyes thre
A kynge preserue in longe prosperyte.

And Dauid sayd, the pselalme beryth wytnesse,
Lorde God thy dome thou to[4] the kynge,
And gyue to hym thy trouth and rightwysnesse,
The kynges sone here on erth lyuynge.
And thus declaryd he by his wrytynge,
That kynges and prynces shuld aboute them drawe
Folke that ben trewe and well lernyd in lawe.

After this speche thus declaryd, the kynge rode forthe a quycker pase tyll he came vnto the conduyte in Chepe, where were ordeyned dyuers wellys, as the welle of mercy, the welle of grace, & the welle of pyte: and at euery welle a lady standynge, that mynystered the water of euery welle to suche as wolde aske it, and that water was turnyd into good wyne.

Aboute thyse welles were also sette dyuerse tryes with florysshynge leuys and fruytes, as orenges, almandes, pomegarnardes, olyues, lymonys, dates, pepys[3], quynces, blaun- *Fol. C.lxxxiii.*
derellys, peches, and other more comon fruytes: as costardes, wardens, pomewardons, richardons, damysyns, and plummes, with other fruytes longe to reherse; the whiche were so cunnyngly wrought, that to many they apperyd naturall trees growynge.

In the bordour of this dilicious place, which was named Paradyse, stode. ii. forgrowen faders, reasemblyng Ennok and Hely, the whiche had this sayinge to the kynge.

Ennok firste with a benygne chere,
Prayed God to vpholde his prosperytie,
And that noone enemyes haue of the power,
Nor that no childe of false inyquytie
Haue power to perturbe thy felycitie.
This olde Ennok to[4] processe can well telle,
Prayed for the kynge as he rode by the welle.

After Helias with his lokkys hoore,
Sayd well deuoutly, lokynge on the kynge,

[1] thorwth. MS. through. [2] guyve to. MS. [3] pypynys. MS. [4] the. MS.

God

" God concerue the and kepe euermore,
And make the blyssed here on erth lyuynge,
And preserue the in all maner thynge ;
And specyall amonge kynges all,
In enemyes handes that thou neuer fall."

And that speche fynysshed, the kynge rode forthe a lytell ferther, and there ordeyned[1] a tower garnysshed with the armys of Englande and of Fraunce. This tower was wonderfull to beholde, for there was shewyd in ordre the tytle which the kynge had vnto the crowne of Fraũce. And vpryght by this tower stode. ii. grene trees artificially w grene leuys garnysshed & wrought, that one beryng ỹ genelogy of seynt Edwarde, and that other of seynt Lowys, and garnysshed with leopardes & flourdelyces. And ouer thyse. ii. foresayd trees, was ordeyned the thirde, whiche was made for the sprynge of Iesse, wherin was shewyd the genelogy of our blessyd Lady, set out in moste curyous wyse, and vpon the front of this tower were wryten thyse versys folowynge.

By thyse. ii. trees whiche here growe vpryght,
From seynt Edwarde and also seynt Lowys,
The rote I take, palpable to eche syght,
Conueyed by lyne from kynges of great pryce,
Whiche some bare leopardes, and some flourdelyce ;
Armys excellent of honour haue no lacke,
Whiche the sixt Henry may nowe bere on his backe.

As in degre of iust successiowne,
As olde cronycles truely determyne,
Vnto this kynge is nowe discendyd downe,
From eyther partye right as any lyne.
Vpon whose hede now fresshely doth shyne,
Two ryche crownes mooh[2] soueraygne and pleasaunce,
To brynge in peas atwene Englande and Fraunce.

Thanne from this, the kynge passyd on tyll he came at the conduyt at Paulys gate, where was pyght a celestyall trone, and therin was sette a personage of the Trinite, with a multytude of aungellys playinge and syngynge vpon all instrumentes of musyk ; and vpon ỹ front of the sayd crowne[1] was wryten thyse verses or balades folowynge, the whiche were spoken by the fader vnto the kynge.

To you my aungellys this precept ye assure,
This prynce that is so yonge and tender of age,
That ye entende and do your besy cure,
To kepe and saue hym from all maner damage
In his lyfe here, durynge all his age,
That his renowne may sprede and shyne ferre,
And of his two realmes to cease the mortall warre.

And I wyll ferther, as I shewe to hym here,
Fulfyll hym with ioye and worldly habundaunce,
And with length of many and[4] holsome yere,
I shall comfort and helpe with all pleasaunce,
And of his lieges to haue faythfull obeysaunce.

[1] was ordeynyd. [2] moost. MS. moche. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] trone. [4] an.

And

And also multyply and encrease his lyne,
And cause his nobles thorugh the worlde to shyne.

ANd this done he entred the churchyarde, wher he was mette with procession of the deane and the chanons of Paulys: with whom also in pontificalibus came the archebysshop of Caunterbury and chaunceller of Englande, with ẏ bysshop of Lyncolne, of Bathe, of Salysbury, of Norwiche, of Ely, & of Rochester, the whiche so conueyed hym into the churche, and there made his oblygacions[1]. And that done, he toke agayne his stede at the west dore of Paulys, and so rode forth vnto Westmynster, where agayne he was of the abbot and couent receyued with procession, and by theym conueyed vnto seynt Edwardes shryne, and there taryed whyle Te Deum was songe in the quyer. And that fynysshed, he was of his lordes conueyed vnto his palays, and thanne the mayre with his cytezeyns retourned ioyously to London. *Fol. C.lxxxxiii.*

Than vpon the Saterdaye folowynge, beynge the. xxiii. daye of Februarii, the mayer and aldermen yode vnto the kynge, and presented hym with an hamper of golde, and therin a thousande pounde of fayre nobles, for the which the kyng yeldyd vnto them louynge thankes. *Donū ciuitatis.*

This yere also, by reason of the sowdyours of Calays, a restraynt was made there of ẏ wollys, for they were nat cōtent of theyr wages. Wherfore the regent of Fraunce beyng than capytayne of Calays, came downe thyder in the Ester weke, at which tyme, beynge the Wednysdaye in the sayd weke, many sowdyoures were arrestyd & put in warde. And whan he had so done, he rode to Tyrewyn, & there by the meane of the bysshop of Tyrewyn, he maryed the erle of Seynt Paulis doughter, and shortly after retourned to Calays, and caused the sayde sowdyours to be enquyred of, and fynally. iiii. of them were demyd to dye; whiche. iiii. that is to say, Iohñ Maddely, Iohñ Lundaye, Thomas Palmer[2], & Thomas Talbot, were behedyd at Calays the. xi. daye of Iuny. And a hundreth and. x. of the sayd sowdyours were banysshed the towne, ouer sixscore banysshed before that tyme. And vpon Mydsomer euyn folowynge, the sayd lorde regent with his new spouse came vnto London, and soo taryed in Englande tyll the latter ende of August. *Execucio.*

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxiii.

Iohñ Olney.

Iohñ Parneys, fysshemonger. Anno. xi.

Iohñ Paddysley.

IN this. xi. yere, after some wryters, was, by the auctorytie of pope[3] Martyñ the. v. of that name, the counsayll of Basyle gaderyd. Durynge ẏ whiche, the herytykes of Prage, otherwyse called of Bohemy or Beme, were somonyd thider; the whiche, vnder a suertye or a saufe conduyte, sent thyder for them with other an Englysshe clerke, named maister Peter a renegat; the whiche defendyd so styfly theyr heronyous oppinyons, that they retourned without reconcylyacion. Thus hangynge this counsayll, pope[3] Martyñ dyed, and for hym was chosen Eugeny the fourth; the whiche beyng admytted, demeaned hym so nycely in the begynnynge, ẏ he was put out of Rome, and dyuerse prynces toke partie agayne hym in such wyse, that he was lykely to be deposyd. But after he bare hym so sadly, that he recoueryd suche as he had loste, & contynued ẏ see by the space of. xvi. yeres, and ruled so, that of some wryters he is called Eugenius gloriosus, and ẏ is of religious mē, for vnto them he had a speciall zele and fauour. And vpon ẏ. viii. day of Iuly, kynge Henry this yere began his parlyament at Westmynster, and so contynued it tyll Lammas, and then it was aiourned vnto seynt Edwardes daye.

And this yere in the South West apperyd a sterre, which was lyke to a blasynge sterre, *Stella Cometa.*

[1] Oblacyons. edit. 1533. 1542. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1559. [3] the byshop of Rome. edit. 1542.

and

and of some it is so named. The erle of Huntyngdon also this yere was sent into Fraunce with a warly company, and dyd there great feates, as sayth ỹ Englysshe Cronycle; but of that is nothynge towched in the Frenshe booke.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxiiii.

Thomas Chaltoñ.

Iohñ Brokley, draper. Anno. xii.

Iohñ Lynge.

THis. xii. yere, and. ix. daye of Nouembre, the terment of the erle of saynt Pawle, fader vnto ỹ duchesse of Bedforde, was solempnely holden in Pawlys Churche of London, where the more partie of the astates of this realme were present. And ỹ. ix. day of Marche folowyng, the lorde Talbot with a goodly company passed thorugh ỹ cytie of London towarde the see [syde, and so passyd ỹ see][1] into Fraunce, where he wrought moche woo vnto the Frenshmē, wherof the partyculers be nat touched. Cōtynuynge the fore-
Parys. sayd warre in Fraunce, the towne of Seynt Denys, whiche is within. ii. Englysshe myles of Parys, was goten by treason or practyse of one named Iohñ Notice, a knyght of Orleaūce, from Mathew Gougth and Thomas Kyriell capitaynes, & slewe therin many Englisshe men, & many they tooke prysoners. But soone after the sayd capitaynes w strengthe taken to them of the Parysiens and other, layde suche a stronge siege roūde aboute the sayd towne of Seynt Denys, ỹ fynally they agreed to redelyuer the towne, if they were nat rescowyd of the Frenshe kynge within. xv. dayes, so ỹ the sayd dayes expyred, it was retourned vnto the Englysshmen. But this natwithstandynge, the Frenshmen wan dayly vpon the Englysshmen, both in those parties and also in Normādy. Amonge
Narracio. whiche gaynys, the Frenshe Gaguyne bryngeth in a matier of game, as he rehersith, to the mockage of Englisshmen, & sayth that in this yere & feest of Myghelmas, at a place called Fewgery in Guyan, a stronge fyght was foughten atwene the Englysshmen & the Frenshmen, durynge the which, one named Boosaprest a Frenshe knyght, for fere fledde from ỹ fyght & hyd hym in a couert of busshes, & there stode styll tyll the fyght was endyd, & the Englisshmen scomfyted & scaryd. Of the which. ii. of auenture to sauegarde themself, fled to the sayd thycke busshe, where the cowarde Frenshe knyght stode. The whiche whan he had essayed & lerned of theym that the Frenshe partie had wonne ỹ feide, he became soo corageous, that he forsyd ỹ sayd. ii. Englysshmen to become his prysoners, and so with theym entred the hoost of ỹ Frenshmen, & bare a coūtenaunce as though he had wonne theym in the forsayd fyght. But at length whan all his demeanure was knowen, he was for his feat had in great dirision, and by his chief capitayne named Guillam de seynt Albyne, pryuyd of his prysoners.

And in this season also ỹ erle of Arundell, whiche Normādy[2] had knyghtly borne hym, herynge that one Hyrus a Frenshe capitayne hadde [newely][1] fortyfyed a stronge castell named Gerborym, before distroyed of Englysshmen, toke w hym a certayne of sowdyoures, & gyrde the castell with a stronge siege, & assawtyd it by sondry tymes mafully, as sayth the Frenshe Cronycle. But Gaguyne in his Cronycle saith, ỹ[3] the siege were fully layde or ỹ castel were fully repayred, the sayd Hyrus with his company issued out of the castell, and gaue vnto the said erle a cruell skyrmysshe, in ỹ whiche the sayd erle receyued a deedly woūde, and dyed shortly after. And that victory so by the Frenshmen opteyned, that castell was to the hurte of Englisshmen reedyfyed, and a place called Dyeppe with other also wonne from theym.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxv.

Thomas Bernwell.

Robert Odey, grocer. Anno. xiii.

Symonde Eyre.

Fol. C.lxxxxiiii. An huge froste. IN this. xiii. yere, and euyn of seyn Katheryñ, began a froste that enduryd tyll the

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] in Normandy. [3] that or the siege. edit. 1542. 1559.

feest of seynt Scolastica, or the. x. day of February, the which frase ỹ Thamys so feruently, ỹ shyp nor bote myght come with vytayll to Lōdon; wherfore such shyppes as came this yere to Thāmys mouth from Burdeux, were discharged there, & the wyne & other marchaūdyse by them brought caryed by lande to ỹ cytie. And in ỹ latter ende of Decembre this yere, endyd the parliament holden at Westmynster, begoñe at Myghelmasse terme before passyd.

This yere also, by meanes of the pope[1] than Eugeny the. iiii. at Aras in Picardy was holden a great counsayll, for to conclude an vnyon and peas atwene ỹ two realmes of Englande and Fraunce; to the whiche counsayll, by the sayd popes[2] comaūdemēt came as a persone indifferent, Nicholas cardynall of the Holy Crosse, with. vi. Romayne bysshoppes to hym assygned. And for the kynges of Englādes partie was there assygned the cardynal of Wynchester, the archebysshop of Yorke, the erlys of Huntyngdoñ & of Suffolk with dyuerse other. And for the Frenshe kyng was there the duke of Burboñ, the erle of Richemoūt, the archebysshop of Raynys chaunceller than of Fraūce, the deane of Paris, with many other which I passe ouer. There were also as fortherers of the matyer, the cardynall of Cypris. And for ỹ duke of Burgoyñ was there the bisshop of Cambray, and Nicholas Rawlyn the sayd dukes chaunceller, ẇ dyuers erlys & barons of that duchy. And for the duke of Brytayne were there the erlys of Alenson & of Barre, ẇ other, ouer & aboue dyuers oratours appoynted for the countie of Flaundres. At whiche assemble & counsayl thus holden, as testyfyeth dyuers wryters, many great offers by meane of ỹ abouenamed cardynall of Holy Crosse or seynt Crosse, to the Englysshe lordes wer offeryd; but as sayth Gaguinus, ỹ Englysshmen were so obstynatly sette and purposed vpon warre, that there myght no reason content theym; by reason of whiche obstynacy, the counsayll was deferryd tyll an other day: at whiche day the Englysshemen entendyng ỹ contynuaūce of warre, absented themself. Wherwith ỹ sayd cardynall beyng discōtentyd, made meanes of an entreaty of peas atwene Charlys, that toke vpon hym as Frensshe kyng, & Philip duke of Burgoyñ; wherof ỹ said Charlys was so fayne, that for stablysshyng of ỹ peas, & to satisfye hym for the murder of his fader, he gaue vnto hym all the vtter boūdes of Champeyñ marchayng vpon Burgoyn, with dyuers cyties, as Seyn Quyntyne, Corbye, Peroñ, Abbeuyle & other, ẇ the countie of Poytyaw and lordshyp of Macoñ; and, as wytnessyth the foresayd Gagwyne, many moo thynges were vnto the duke by ỹ sayd Charlys promysed, which after their bothe dethes were broken and stode for nought. After whiche peas thus atwene theym confermyd and proclaymed, the sayde duke became vtter enemye to the kyng of Englande, as after shall appere. And soone after the sayd duke began his ordre of the Lyle and ỹ Golden Flese, and ordeyned certayne knyghtes of that ordre, & made therunto many statutes and ordenaūces, wherof dyuers were lyke vnto the statutes of the Garter. And in the ende of this yere, &. xiiii. daye of Septembre, at Roañ in Normandye dyed ỹ noble prynce Iohñ duke of Bedforde and regent of Fraunce, and was after with great solempnytie buryed within the Churche of Notir Dame of ỹ same cytie, where for hym are foundyd wonderfull thynges, after some mennes reporte; but for I fynde therof in wrytynge no thynge, I passe it ouer.

A treaty of accorde.

The duke of Burgoynne.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxv.

Thomas Catworth.

Henry Frowyk, mercer.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxvi.

Anno. xiiii.

Robert Cloptoñ.

THis. xiiii. yere, & begyñyng of ỹ same, the duke of Barre accompanyed with Burgonyōs and Frenshemen, wan the towne of Harflew with dyuers other vyllages. And in Apryll folowynge, the sayde duke accompanyed with the lorde Teruan and the maister of the [Frenshe][3] kynges chyualry, toke the towne of Seynt Denys, and slewe therin aboue.

Perdicio.

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] bishop of Romes. edit. 1542. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559.

iiii. hondred Englysshemen, and toke prysoner Thomas Beleamounde their capitayne, knyght, with many other. And that[1] the Frenshmen assawud a tower thereby called Veuen, and toke it by appoyntement.

The cytie of Orleaūce leste.

Then one named Notyce a knyght of Orleaunce, with a strengthe of knyghtes, drewe hym nere the cytie of Parys, and there at a house of relygyon of the Charterhous ordre, lodgyd hym beyonde Seynt Denys, ouer the water of Sayñ, and confederyd with certayne cytezeyns of the cytie named Mychaell Laylery, Iohñ Frountayne, Thomas Pygacen, Iohñ de Seynt Benoit, Nicholas Loueryñ and Iaques Bergery, for to betraye the cytie, and to brynge it out of ỹ Englysshe possessyon; the whiche persones beynge hedes of the cytie, conueyed theyr purpose in suche wyse, ỹ they turnyd ỹ cōmous of ỹ cytie vpon the Englysshemen, and sodaynly arose agayne theym, and slewe of theym many, and many toke prysoners[2]. And as ỹ Englysshemen fledde or faught by the stretes, the womē & other feble persones cast vpon theym stones and hote lycours to theyr great confucion, so that the Englysshemen were in passynge mysery desolacion[3]. In this tyme of persecucion, the bisshop of Moref, which than was named Chaūceler of Englysshmen in those parties, w other, hardly escapyd, & toke the tower of Seynt Denys, whiche as yet restid in the Englysshe possession.

Thenne the other hoost of Frenshmen, heryng of this stronge[4] and rumour in the cytie, anon drewe nere, and entred by seynt Iamys gate, without moche resistence, & so enioyed the cytie at theyr pleasure.

The cytie of Parys.

Thañe the Englysshmen beynge in the tower of Seynt Denys, ferynge that they myght nat longe holde ỹ said place agayne their enemyes, fyll to a treaty, and condiscendyd to passe free with theyr lyues; the whiche, when they shuld passe vpon their iournay, were diryded and scorned of ỹ Frenshe nacion out of all measure. And whan ỹ cytie of Parys was thus subdued to the Frenshe domynyon, anone the Englisshe people that there abode vnder fyne and raunsom, were sworne to Charlys the Seuynth, thanne takynge vpon hym as Frenshe kyng. And anone after were wonne from the Englisshe power, ỹ holdes named Creoll and Seynt Germayne, [in laye passe tyme][5] and season, for to strength and haue ỹ gydynge of Normandy, the duke of Yorke, encompanyed with the erle of Salysbury, and the lorde Fawcoūbridge sayled into Fraunce; and the erle of Morteyñ beynge than at Calays, made a vyage into Flaundres, & skyrmysshyd with theym that borderyd vpon Pycardy, and slewe of theym ouer. CCCC. and gate a great droue of bestes, and brought theim vnto Calais. And for that certaynte was hadde that Phylyp duke of Burgoyn entendyd to laye his siege aboute Calays, therfore London and all ỹ good townes of Englande were charged to sende thyder certayne men, well and suffy-

Fol. Clxxxxv.

cyently for ỹ warre apparaylled, wherof London sent at theyr charge men[6].

The siege of Calays.

Than vpon the. ix. daye of Iuyll, the duke of Burgoyn, with a great multytude of Burgonyons and Flemynges, apperyd before Calays, and there pight his pauylions and tentes, so that euery towne of Flaunders had their tentes by themselfe. At whiche season was lieutenaunte of Calays sir Iohñ Ratclyf knight, and of the castell was lieutenaunt the baron of Dudley; and soo ỹ siege enduryd vpon. iii. wekes, in whiche season many knyghtly actes were done and excercysed vpon both parties, whiche for lengthynge of ỹ tyme I passe. Than vpon the seconde daye of August, the duke of Glouceter and protectour of Englāde, with a company of. v. C. sayles, as some wryters haue, landyd at Calays, and entendyd vpon the thirde day folowynge to haue issued out of the towne, and to haue gyuen batayll to ỹ Flemynges; but, as testyfyeth all Englyssh wryters, so soone as the duke of Burgoyn was ware of the great power of the lorde protectour, he toke with hym of his ordenaunce that he myght lyghtly cary, and the other that were heuy & cumbrusse, he lefte behynde hym; amonge the whiche one was left before Guynes, a greate gunne of brasse

[1] and after that. MS. then. edit. 1553. 1542. 1559. [2] and by force slew of them a great noumber, and they dyd take many prysoners. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] and desolacion. [4] styrryng. MS. [5] in whych passetyme. [6] CC. men. MS.

named Dygon, ouer dyuerse serpentynes and other great gunnes. And the Flemynges left behynde theym great quantyte of bere, besyde wyne and floure and other vytaylle.

But of this vyage wryteth otherwyse Gaguyne, and sayth that the duke well & manfully[1] cõtynued his siege before Calays ouer two monethes, and there dyd many notable actes in assaylynge of his enemyes. And after the Flemynges, by reason of theyr mourmour and rebellyon, hadde refusyd hym, and in maner lafte hym almoste withoute company, yet natwithstandynge he dayly assayled his enemyes; and after with suche small company as was lafte hym, whan he sawe he myght not preuayll, he retourned into his coũtre. And so thus alwaye in all the sayd Gagwynus boke, he wypeth from the Englysshmen in all that he maye the honoure, and excusyth theyr enemyes to his power. Whan the duke with his hoost was thus fledde, the lorde protectoure with his people folowed hym into the countre of Flaundres, and wastyd that countre by the space of a. xi. dayes; in whiche season he brent but two townes, whiche were named and yet be, Poperynge and Bell; and retourned to Calays, and after into Englãde.

And this yere was the castell or towne of Rokkysboruth in Scotlande besieged of ŷ kynge of Scottes; but so soone as he hadde wyttynge that sir Rauffe Gray knyght, was cõmynge with a competent nombre for to remoue that siege, anone he departed, leuynge some parte of his ordenaunce behynde hym, to his great dishonoure. Rokkysboruth

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.xxxvii.

Thomas Morsted.

Iohñ Michell[2]. Anno. xv.

Wyllyam Gręgory.

IN this. xv. yere, and thirde daye of Ianuarii, quene Katheryne moder vnto Henry the sixte, wyfe of Henry the. v. dyed at Barmũdissey in Southwarke, and after with due solempnyte brought thorugh the cytie, and so conueyed to Westmynster, & there buryed in the myddes of our lady chapell, vnder a tombe of marbyll. But whañe our soueraygne lorde Henry the. vii. than beyng kyng, caused ŷ chapell to be taken downe, & buylded a newe, without the lyke there vnto, as nowe to men doth appere, than the corps of ŷ excellent pryncesse was taken vp, & sette by the tombe of her lorde and husbande, durynge the tyme of the buyldyng of the sayd newe chapell, and after buryed by her sayd lorde within ŷ sayd chapell. And the. xiiii. day of the sayd moneth fyll downe sodaynly the furthest gate towarde Southwarke with the tower thereupon, and. ii. of the furthest arches of the sayd brydge; but, as God wolde, no creature was therwith perysshed, to[3] meane of humayne persones. Obitus reginæ Katherine. Casuelte.

And the. xxi. daye of this sayde moneth of Ianuarii, the kynge beganne his parlyament at Westmynster, which before was purposyd to haue been holden at Cambrydge. To this parlyament came the bysshop of Turuyn, and the counsayl of the erle of Armynac, wherof I fynde nat the cause expressyd. And after Easter was a daye of diot holden bytwene Grauenynge & Calays, for the matyers touchynge the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne, where, for the kynge apperyd the cardynall of Englande, the duke of Norffolke, and ŷ erle of Stafforde, with dyuers other; and for the dukes party, apperyd there the duchesse his wyfe, with dyuers other of the sayd dukes counsayl: where, by meanes of the sayd persones, an abstynence of warre was taken for a certayne tyme in the duchesse name, for the kynge wolde take none appoyntment with ŷ duke, for so moche as he had gone from his trouth and allegeaunce, that before tyme he had made with the kynge. And vpon the seconde daye of Iuly this yere dyed quene Iane, the whiche somtyme had ben the wyfe of kynge Henry the. iiii., and before that the wyfe of the duke of Brytayne, and was caryed from Barmundessey to Caunterbury, and there buryed by her husbande Parlyamẽt.

[1] *The* edit. of 1542. and 1559. *here add* as a valyaunte knyghte in hys actes. [2] *The* MS. *adds* fishmonger.
[3] that is to. edit. 1542. 1559.

Henry the. iiii. And this yere fell a chaūce that had nat ben seen many yeres before, for all lyons[1] dyed in the tower, the whiche had cōtynued there a longe season.

Kynge of Scottes murdred. In this yere also ŷ kyng of Scottes was trayterously murderyd by seruauntes of his owne, of the whiche traytours the capitayne of them was named Robert Grame, the which after was, with other of his company, taken & put vnto moost paynfull deth. This sayd kynge of Scottes hadde been prysoner. xv. yeres in Englande.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxvii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxviii.

Willyam Chapman.

Wyllyam Estfeylde, mercer. Anno. xvi.

Willyam Halys.

THis. xvi. yere, and moneth of Nouēbre, kynge Henry caused to be kepte a solempne obyt or terment within ŷ churche of Paulys, for Sysgysmonde the emperour and knight of the Garter. This was a man of meruaylous great & worthy fame, as by the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum is shortly expressyd; after whose deth the gydynge of the empyre fyll to Albert, that had maryed the oonly doughter of the sayd Sygysmunde.

In this yere also, &c.

Fol. CLxxxxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxviii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxix.

Hughe Dyke.

Stephen Browne, grocer. Anno. xvii.

Nicholas Yoo.

Chaunce. THis. xvii. yere vpon new yeres day in ŷ after noon, a stake of wood fyll downe sodaynly at Baynardes Castell vpō Thamys syde, and slewe. iii. men, & hurt dyuers other. And at Bedforde this yere, at the kepynge of a shyre day, by the fallynge of a steyer, were. xviii. murdred & slayne, besyde many other sore hurte and maymyd. And the last daye of Apryll dyed in Roan sir Richarde Beauchampe, called of comon fame the god erle of Warwyke. This was lyeutenaunt of ŷ kynge in Normandy, & demaned hym there full well and manfully, whose body was after brought vnto Warwyke, and there in a newe chapell buylded vpon ŷ southe syde of the quyer, buryed full honourably.

This yere also was great derth of corne in Englande, and also in Fraūce, insomoche that a busshell was solde at London for. iii.*s.* and. iii.*s.* iiii.*d.*; and in Fraunce in Parys, it was at lyke value; and there also they dyed sore of ŷ sykenesse of ipydymye. For this scarcyte of whete in Englande, in many places the people made them brede of fetches, pesyn, and benys: and after some wryters, for lacke of thyse foresayd graynes, some poore people made theym brede of ferne rotys. But yet by ŷ prouydence of Stephen Browne, this yere mayre, many shyppes were freyght w rye out of Pruce, and dischargyd at London, that easyd the people nere to the cytie greatly. This of many wryters is named ŷ seconde dere yere.

In this yere ended ŷ counsayll or synode holden at Basyle, begon as before is sayde in the. xi. yere of this kynge. By auctorite of whiche coūsayll Eugeny ŷ. iiii. was deposyd, & Amedeus a duke & prynce of Sauoy, [whiche][3] was chosen for pope[2] in ŷ place of ŷ forenamed Eugeny; but yet he had suche ayde, that he contynued in Rome as pope[2] all his lyues tyme. And that other, whiche was named of his ayders Felix the. v., cōtynued his dygnytie in other places, so that thenne arose a great scysme in the churche whether of thyse. ii. was indubytat pope[2]; for some coūtres vpholde that one, and some that other, so that there were allowyd none of them both, and that was called the new tralytie. This scisme contynued vpon. ix. yeres, the terme whyle Eugeny lyued; after whose dethe was

[1] the lyons. MS. [2] bishop of Rome. 1542. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

chosen

chosen a cardynall named Thomas Sarnzan, and after was named Nicholas the. v., to whom the sayd Felix, after he was admytted for [Peters successour][1] of his owne good mynde renouncyd his dygnytie of papacy, and submytted hym to the rule and obedyence of the sayd. v. Nicholas than beyng indubitat pope[2]; and thus seasyd ŷ scysme in the Churche, which had contynued by ŷ terme aboue specifyd. This Felix was a deuoute prynce, & sawe ŷ sõnes of his sõnes, and after lyued a deuout and holy lyfe; and lastly was chosen pope[2] as before is shewyd, for the whiche he is of dyuerse wryters accompted for happy. But and he had nat medelyd with the tytle of the Churche, and therwith blottyd his olde age, he had after the oppynyon of other wryters, be named or allowed moche more blessyd and happy.

And this yere, in the moneth of August, in London where two bawdes punysshed with werynge of raye hoodes, and after. xl. dayes enprysonement, they were banysshed the towne, & dryuen out with moste shame.

In this yere also ŷ conduyte in Flete strete was begonne by sir Wyllyam Estfelde knyght, and late mayer, and so fynysshed of his good disposicion without coste or charge to the cytie. And he was with sir Lowys, Iohn[2] of Essex, made knyghtes of the Bath the same yere. The conduyt.

And in this yere dyed Robert Chycheley, grocer, and twyes mayer of London, the which wylled in his testamẽt, that vpon his mynde day a good & competent dyner shuld be ordeyned for. xxiiii. C. poore men, and that of housholders of the cytie, if they myght be foũde. And ouer that was. xx.*li.* destrybuted amonge theym, which was to euery man. ii.*d.* Nota testamentũ. i. voluntatẽ.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xxxix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.Cxl.

Robert Marchall.

Robert Large, mercer. Anno. xviii.

Philyp Malpas.

THis. xviii. yere, vpon the day of seynt Botolph, or. xvii. daye of Iuny, a preest after he was degradyd of his prestelye dygnyte, named sir Richarde, [whiche][3] was brent for herysye at the Tower hylle, howe well in his latter daye he toke great repentaũce, & dyed Goddes man, and in the fayth of ŷ Churche. This, for wordes spoken by his lyfe, that the posterne of the tower shulde synke, as after it dyd, & other fãtastical dedys or wordes, he of many lewde folkes was accõptyd for an holy man. Wherefore after his deth they came to his place of execucion, and there made theyr oblacyons and prayers, and areryd a great hepe of stonys, and pyght there a crosse by nyght, so ŷ by thys meanes a great disclaunder ran vpon the churche, & specyally vpon suche as had put hym to deth. But to cease that rumour, cõmaũdement was sent from the kynge to punysshe all suche as thyder wente on pylgrymage; by vertue whereof the mayre and shyreffes dyd such dylygence, that shortly after all that sekynge and offerynge was fordone & layde appart.

This yere also the shyreffes of London sette out of Seynt Martyns le Graunt. v. persones beynge there in seyntwary, and ladde theym to the countoure in Bred strete, where they remayned certayn dayes, but those dayes expyred, they were by the kynges iustyces restoryd vnto seyntwary. In this passetyme the warre atwene Englande and Fraunce endurynge, in a wynter season whenne the grounde was coueryd with a myghty snowe, and therwith all a stronge froste hadde hardonyd the pondes and dytches, the Englysshemen, whiche laye in a stronge holdes nygh vnto a towne called Poũtlarge, arayed theym in whyte clothes ouer theyr harneys, and so in great nombre approchyd the dykes, & passed vpon the ise to the wallys and theym scalyd, and the watche of the towne slepynge, toke ŷ towne and distressyd therin moche people; from the which daunger escapyd ryght hardly. ii. capitaynes of that towne named Iohn de Vyllers, and Naraboñ a knyght

[1] bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] and Iohnne. [3] *Omitted in* edit. 1542, 1559.

Burgonyon. The countre aboute Parys was also sore veryd w the rauyne of wolues, that proclamacyon was made that euery grene or new flayne skyn of a wolfe that was brought vnto Parys, the prouost shulde gyue to the brynger. xx. shelynges, or. xx. sous of ŷ countree money, whiche amounteth to. ii.*s.* vi.*d.* sterlynge. It was nat longe after or
Fol. Clxxxxvii. Charlys the Frenshe kynge layde vnto the foresayd towne a strong siege; but it by the duke of Yorke & the lorde Talbot was well and knyghtly defendyd, insomoch that one tyme they put ŷ Frensshmen to rebuke, and were lykely to haue taken theyr kyng, ne had be ŷ soner rescous. Lastly, ŷ duke of Yorke & the sayd lorde Talbot, for vrgent causes, departed thens to Roan, and betoke ŷ towne to ŷ rule of sir Gerueys of Clyfton knyght, & other, hauynge with theym to the nombre of a thousande sowdyours. But the thirde daye after the dukes departynge, the Frensshe kyng so fyersly assayled the towne, that in the ende he wanne it by strength, and slewe therein many an Englyssheman, & toke many prysoners. And soone after was the townes of Meleon, of Corbeyll, & of Ebreouse[1] lost from the Englysshmen. For ye shall ve[r] [illegible] that sondry and many tymes, the townes and holdes in Fraunce were lost and este wonne; but euer the more losse turned to the Englysshe party, tyll all Normandy were loste, and all other landes of Fraunce apparteynynge to the kynge of Englande.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xl. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xli.

Iohn Suttoñ.

Iohn Paddysley, goldsmyth. Anno. xix.

Wyllyam Wetynhale.

THis. xix. yere began murder[2] and grudge to breke at large, that before hadde ben kept in mewe, atwene parsones nere aboute the kynge, and his vncle the famous Humfrey duke of Glouceter and protectour of the lande; agayne whom dyuers coniecturis were attempted a farre, whiche after were sette nere to hym, so that they left nat tyll they hadde brought hym vnto his confucion.

And firste this yere dame Eleanoure Cobham, whom he was to famylyer with, or she were to hym maryed, was arrestid of certayne poyntes of treason, and therupon by examynacion conuict, and lastly demyd to dwell as an outlawe in the Isle of Man, vnder the warde of sir Thomas Stanley knyght. And soone after were arrestyd as ayders and counsayllours of the foresayd duchesse, maister Thomas Southwell, a chanon of seynt Stephyns chapell at Westmynster, maister Iohn Hum, a chapelayne of ŷ sayd duchesse, and maister Roger Bolyngbroke, a man expert in nygromancy, and a womā called Margery Iourdemayne, surnamed the wytche of Eye besyde Wynchester[4]. To whose charge it was layde that thyse. iiii. persones shuld, at the request of the sayd duchesse, deuise an image of waxe lyke vnto the kyng, the whiche image they delte soo with, that by theyr deuyllysshe incantacyons and sorcery, they entēdyd to brynge out of lyfe lytell and lytell the kynges persone, as they lytell and lytell consumyd ŷ image. For the whiche treason and other, fynally they were conuict and adiuged to dye; but maister Thomas Southewell dyed in the Tower of London ŷ nyght before he shulde haue been iuged on ŷ morne, as in the next yere folowyng shal be declaryd.

A sotyltie of Englysshemen. Ye haue in precedyng yere harde howe the towne of Poūtlarge was wonne by Charlys, ŷ toke vpon hym as kynge; where as many Englysshemen were takyn prysoners and sent to a castell named Coruyle, where they so beynge in pryson, laboured vnto ŷ ruler of that holde, that one of theym myght be sette at large to laboure to theyr frendes for theyr raunsom. The whiche persone, whan he was at his lybertye, went vnto a strength there by, wherof an Aragon knyght was capitayne vnder ŷ duke of Yorke, and shewyd to hym that the castell of Coruyle was but sklenderly manned, and that it myght be wonne by polycy and lytell strengthe. Wherupon the sayd capitayne named Fraunceys, in the nyghte fol-

[1] Ebroyn. MS. [2] vndirstand. [3] murmur. [4] Westmynster. MS.

owynge,

owynge, sette a busshement nere vnto ŷ sayd castell, and in the dawnynge of the mornynge arayed. iiii. of his sowdyours in husbandemēnes aray, and sent theym with sakkes fylled with dyuers frutes to offer to sell to the occupyers of the castell; the whiche, whan they were comyn to the gate, and by the langage taken for Frenshmen, anone withoute susspicion were taken in, and seynge that few folkes were stirrynge, helde the porter muet whyle one gaue the foresayd busshment knowledge, so that shortly they entred and toke the capitayne in his bedde, and after spoyled the castell, & deliuered ŷ Englysshe prysoners, and conueyed the Frenshmen, with all the goodes that they myght carry of the castell, vnto Roañ.

Vpon the daye of the Translacion of seynt Edwarde, or. xii. daye of Octobre, vpon whiche daye the mayer is named by the mayer and his brother for the yere folowynge, that daye whan the comons of the cytie, after theyr auncyent custome, had chosen. ii. aldermen, suche as before had ben shyreffes of London & of Middlesex, that is to wete, Robert Cloptoñ, draper, and Rauffe Holande, tayllour, and theym presented by name vnto the mayer and his brother than syttynge in the vtter chambre where the mayers courtes ben kepte, to the entent that the sayde mayer & his brother myghte chose one of ŷ sayde two, such as they thought most necessary and worshypful for the rome. The sayd mayer and his brether chase there Robert Cloptoñ, & brought hym after downe vpon his right hande towarde ŷ halle: whereof, whan certayne tayllours there beynge were ware, and sawe that Rauffe Holande was nat chosen, anone they cryed "naye, naye, nat this, but Rauffe Holande;" wherwith ŷ olde mayer beynge astonyed, stode stylle vpon the stayer, and cōmaundyd theym to kepe sylence, and after helde on his way to the East ende of the halle, and there sette hym downe, & his brether aboute hym. In whiche meane tyme the sayde tayllours hadde contynued theyr crye, and encensyd other of lowe felysshypes of the cytie, as symple persones, to take theyr parte, and to crye as faste as they, & wold nat cease for speche of the mayre nor oyes made by the mayres sergiaunt of armes. Wherfore the mayer, to appease the rumour, sent downe the sheryffes, and cōmaundyd theym to take the mysdoers, and to sende theym vnto pryson; the whiche precepte obseruyd, and a. xii. or. xvi. of the chief of them sent vnto Newgate, the sayd rumour was anone ceasyd; of the whiche prysoners some were after fyned, and some punysshed by longe imprysonmēt.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xli. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlii.

Wyllyam Cumbys.

Robert Cloptoñ'. Anno. xx.

Richarde Ryche.

THis. xx. yere, and in the moneth of folowynge, the parties before in ŷ other yere arrestyd for treason, were brought vnto ŷ Guyldhalle of London, and there arreygned of suche poyntes as before ben reherced, and for the same fynally maister Iohñ Hum, & maister Roger Bolyngbroke were iuged to be drawen, hāged, & quarterd, & ŷ wytche to be brent; but maister Thomas Sothwell dyed in the tower the nyght before that he shuld haue be iuged. Then accordynge to the sentence of the court before passed, maister Roger was drawen to Tyborne, and there hanged, and quarteryd; the whiche at that season toke vpon his deth, ŷ he was nat gylte of ŷ treason ŷ he was put to & iuged for, & the next daye folowynge was the wytch brent in Smythfelde, and maister Iohñ Hum was pardoned & suyd out his charter. *Fol. Clxxxviii.* Execucio.

This yere also the lorde Talbot layde sige before an hauen towne in Normandy named Depe, and set his ordynaunce vpon an hylle called Polect, where, amonge other engynes and instrumentes of warre, he hadde deuysyd a myghty tower of tymbre, out of the whiche he shotte his gunnes and other ordynaunce, and therwith brosyd and crasyd the wallys, & wrought therby great displeasure vnto the tower[2] of Depe. In this towne was capytayne Dominus Talbot.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* draper. [2] towne. edit. *1533. 1542. 1559.*

Charlys

Charlys Mareys a Frenshe knyght, the whiche manfully defendyd the towne, tyll vnto hym with rescous came Iohñ Notice of Orleaunce, knyght, with a company of. M. sowdyours, And there after came to ỹ rescous of the sayd towne. ii. other knyghtes named Arthur Delongeuyle, and sir Thomas Droynon, with. vi.C. men. And after this Charlys, whiche named hymselfe Frenshe kynge, sent thyder the thirde rescous of. v.C. men of armys, and a. M. of other sowdiours vnder. ii. leders, called Theodalde, and Guillam Richauyll knyghtes; the which rescous notwithstandynge, the sayd lorde Talbot well & manfully contynued [his siege, & assawtyd the towne][1] in right cruell maner, so that they were fayne to call for more ayde; wherof the lord Talbot beynge ware, thynkynge that shortly the Frenshmen shulde be constrayned to gyue ouer the towne, left the gydynge of the siege vnto sir Wyllyam Pontoñ & sir Iohñ Rippelande, or Trippelande, knyght, and after departyd. After whose departynge, within shorte whyle, the dowlphyn of Vienne, Lowys by name, and sone vnto the forenamed Charlys, Frenshe kynge, accompanyed with the erle of Seynt Paule, and other, to the nombre of.xvi.C. knightes, came vnto the rescous of the sayde towne; and after he had a daye restyd hym and his sowdyours, he sent the forenamed Theodalde, with a strength of. CCCC. men, for to assayle the foresayd tower of tymbre, but lytell hurte dyd therunto[2]. Thenne the sayd dowlphyn sent another strengthe of. vi.C. men to assayle it; but ỹ Englisshmen quyt theym so manfully, ỹ they slewe. viii. score Frenshmen, and woūdyd ouer. iii.C.

Wherwith ỹ dowlphyn beynge greuously amoued, assembled the vttermost strengthe he myght make, as well of the towne and other, and set vpon the Englisshmen, whiche were sore brosyd w dayly fight, and few in nombre, & fynally scomfyted them, & slewe of them vpon. CCC. and toke the rest prysoners; among the whiche the foresayd two Englysshe capitaynes were taken, & a kynnysmā of the lord Talbottes, or more verily one of his bast sōnes. And thus was Depe rescowyd, & ỹ Englysshmē discomfyted, after they had manfully maynteyned that sige by the space of. ix. wekes and odde dayes.

Affray. Also this yere, in the moneth of August, was a great affray in Fletestrete, atwene ỹ getters of the innys of court, and the inhabytauntes of the same strete; whiche affray began in the nyght, and so contynued with assawtes and small bykerynges tyll the next daye, in whiche season moche people of the cytie thyder was gaderyd, and dyuerse men of bothe partyes were slayne & many hurte. But lastly, by the presence and discression of ỹ mayer and shyreffes, this affray was appeasyd; of the whiche was chief occacioner a man of Clyfforde Inne named Herbotell.

Assuraunce of mariage. In this yere also, by certayne ambassadoures that were sent out of Englād *into Guyon*, a maryage was concludyd in the begynnynge of the yere folowynge, atwene the kyng and the erlys doughter of Armenak, whiche conclucion was after disalowyd & put[3] by the meanes of the erle of Suffolke, whiche kyndelyd a newe brande of burnyng enuy atwene the lorde protectour & hym, and toke fyre in suche wyse, that it left nat tyll both parties, with many other, were consumyd and slayne, whereof ensued moche myschief within the realme, and losse of all Normādy, as after to you shal appere.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xliii.

Thomas Beaumoūt.

Iohñ Athirley, irenmonger. Anno. xxi.

Richarde Nordoñ.

IN this. xxi. yere, the foresaid erle of Suffolk, whiche, as before is towched, had fordon ỹ cōclusyon of ỹ maryage taken by ỹ ambassadours, atwene the kyng and the erle of Armenakes doughter, went ouer hymself, with other vnto hym assygned, and there in Fraunce concluded a maryage atwene ỹ kynge and dame Margarete the kynges doughter

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542.1559. [2] they therunto. [3] put apart. MS.

of

of Cecyle and of Iherusalem, as sayth ỹ Englysshe Cronycle. And for that maryage to brynge aboute, to the sayd kynge of Cecyle was delyuered the duchye of Angeou & erledome of Mayne, whiche are called the keyes of Normandy.

But the Frensh wryter Gaguyne sayth ī his Latyne Cronycle, that aboute this tyme the erle of Suffolke came vnto Charlys ỹ Frenshe kyng, to a towne in Lorayn, namyd Nauce or Naūt, & axed of hym his doughter to be quene of Englande, but he gyueth to her no name; the whiche request of the sayd Charlys to the sayde erle was graunted. Also he affermeth, lytell tofore that season a peas atwene bothe realmes was concludyd for the terme of xxii. monethes, whiche peas enduryd but a whyle after.

And this yere, vpon Candelmas euyn, ỹ steple of seynt Paulys churche in London, was sette on fyre by tempest of lyghtnynge, and lastly quenchyd by great dylygence and laboure of many persones; but of all that there laboured, the morowe masse preest of Bowe Churche in Chepe was moste comendyd and notyd. Fyre.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xliii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xliiii.

Nicholas Wyfforde.

Thomas Catworthe, grocer. Anno. xxii.

Iohn Norman.

THis. xxii. yere, the erle of Stafforde was made or created duke of Bukkyngham, the erle of Warwyke duke of Warwyke, the erle of Dorset marquis of Dorset, and the erle of Suffolke marquys of Suffolke; the whiche marquys of Suffolke soon after, with his wyfe and other honourable personages, aswell of men as of women, w̄ great apparayll of chayris and other costious ordenaunce for to conueye the forenamed lady Margarete into Englande, sayled into Fraūce, where they were honourrably receyued, and so taryed there all this mayres yere. Dux Suffolke. *Fol. CLxxxxix.*

In this yere was also an act made, by auctorytie of the comon coūsayll of Lōdon, that vpon ỹ Sondaye shuld no maner of thynge within the fraunchise of ỹ cytie be bought or solde, nother vytayl nor other thyng; nor none artificer shuld brynge his ware to any man to be worne or occupyed that day, as tayllours garmentes, or cordwayners shoys; and so in lykewyse of all other occupacions: the whiche ordenaunce helde but a whyle. An act for the Sondaye.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xliiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlv.

Stephyn Foster.

Henry Frowyke, mercer. Anno. xxiii.

Hugh Wyche.

THis. xxiii. yere, and moneth of the foresayd lady Margaret came ouer into Englande, and in the moneth of folowyng she was maryed vnto king Henry, at a towne called Sowthwyke, in the countre of Hamshyre. And from thens she was honourably conueyed by the lordes and estates of this lande, whiche mette with her in sondry [places, with great retynewe of men in sondry][1] lyueryes, with theyr sleuys browderyd, and some betyn with goldsmythes werkes in moste costly maner; and specyally of the duke of Glouceter, mette[2] with her with. v.C. men in one lyuerey. And so was[3] conueyed vnto Blacke Heth, where vpon the. xviii. daye of Maye she was mette w̄ the mayer, aldermen, and sheryffes of the citie, and the craftes of the same, in browne blew, with brawderyd sleuys. That is to meane, euery maister[4] or crafte with the conysaunce of his maister[4], & red hoodes vpon eyther of theyr heddes; and so the same daye brought her vnto London, where for her were ordeyned sumptuous and costly pagentes, and resemblaunce of dyuerse olde hystoryes, to the great comfort of her and suche as came with her, the maner wherof I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme. And so w̄ great tryumphe she was brought vnto Westmynster, wherupon ỹ. xxx. day of the moneth of May, ỹ this[5] was ỹ Sōdaye after Quene Margarete maried.

[1] *Omitted in the* edit. 1559. [2] which mett. MS. [3] she was. [4] mystery. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [5] that this yere. MS.

Trinite Sonday, she was solemply crowned. After whiche feest, iustes [of pease][1] were there holden by. iii. dayes cõtynuell, win the seyntwary before the abbey. Of this mariage, ar of diuers wryters left diuers remẽbrauũces, saying, ŷ this mariage was vnprofitable for ŷ realme dyuers[2] wayes. For first, was gyuẽ vp for her out of ŷ kynges possession, ŷ duchy of Angeou, & ŷ erledome of Mayne; & for ŷ costes of her cõueying into this lande, was axyd in playne parlyamẽt, a fyftene & an halfe by the marquys of Suffolke; by reason wherof he grewe in such hateryd of ŷ people, that fynally it coste hym his lyf. And ouer that, it such appered[3] ŷ God was nat pleasyd with that mariage. For after this day the fortune of ŷ worlde began to fall from the kynge, so ŷ he loste his frendes in Englande, & his reuenewes in Fraunce: for shortly after, all was ruled by the quene & her counsayll, to the great disprofite of the kynge & his realme, & to the great maugre & oblyquy of the quene. The whiche, as syn that tyme hath ben well prouyd, had many a wronge & false rẽporte made of her, which were to longe to reherse. All whiche mysery fyll, for brekynge of the promyse made by the kyng vnto the erle of Armenakkys doughter, as before in the. xx. yere of the kynge is towchyd, as agreyth most wryters; whiche mysery in this story shall somdeale appere. As firste, by the losynge of Normandy, the deuycion of the lordes within this realme, the rebellion of the comynaltie agayne theyr prynce and soueraygne, and fynally the kynge deposyd, and the quene with the prynce fayne to fle the lande, and loste the rule therof for euer.

Diuicio crescit.

[Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlvi.

Iohñ Derby.

Symonde Eyer, draper. Anno. xxiiii.

Godfray Fyeldynge.

Appele of treason.

IN this. xxiiii. yere, the pryourẽ of Kylmayn appechid the erle of Vrmõde of treason; for tryall wherof, the place of batayll was assygned in Smythfelde, and the barryers for the same there redy pyght. In which meane tyme, a doctour of diuinitie, named maister Gylbert Worthyngtõ, parsone of seint Andrewes in Holborne, & other gostly men, made suche labour to the kynges counsayll, that when the day of batayll approchyd, the quarell was taken into the kynges hande and there endyd.

This yere also came a great ambassade into this land out of Fraũce, for to cõclude a generall peas, a perpetuall peas, as the cõmon brute than went; but fynally it turnyd to a peas for a yere, of whiche ambassade spekyth nothynge the Frenshe Cronycle. And in this yere, an armurer named was appechyd of treason by a seruaunt of his owne; for tryall wherof, a daye to them was gyuen to fyght in Smythfelde; at whiche day of batayll the sayd armurer was ouercomyn and slayne, and that by mysgydynge of hymself: for vpon ŷ morowe, whan he shuld come to the felde, his neyghboures came to hym, and gaue vnto hym so moch wyne and good ale, that he was therwith distemperyd, that he relyd as he went, and so was slayne without gylt. But that false seruaunt lyued nat longe vnpunysshed, for he was after hãged for felony at Tyborne.][4]

Duellum.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlvii.

Robert Horne.

Iohñ Olney, mercer. Anno. xxv.

Godfrey Boloyne.

THis. xxv. yere, was a parlyament holden at Seynt Edmõdes Bury in Suffolke, to ŷ which towne, all the cõmons of that coũtre were warnyd to come in theyr moost defencyble aray, to gyue attendaunce vpon the kynge. And so soone as this parlyament was begon, and the lordes assembled, sir Humfrey duke of Glouceter, and vncle vnto the

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] diuers and sundry. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] it shuld appere. MS.
[4] *The whole of this year omitted in the* edit. of 1533 and 1542.

kynge,

kynge, shortly after was arrestyd by the vicoũt Beawmonde, thanne hygh constable of Englande, whom accompanyed the duke of Bukkyngham & other. And after this arest was executed, all his owne seruauntes were put from hym, &. xxxii. of ỹ pryncipall of them were also put vnder arest, & sent vnto dyuers prysons, wherof arose a great murmour amonge the people.

Than thus contynuynge this parliament, within. vi. dayes after ỹ duke was arrestid, he was foũde deed in his bedde, beynge the. xxiiii[1]. daye of February; of whose murdre dyuerse reportes ar made, which I passe ouer. Than his corps, [whiche][2] was layde opyn ỹ all men myght se hỹ, but no woũde was foũde on hym. Of that[3] honourable fame of this man, a longe style I myght make, of the good rule ỹ he kept this lãde in, duringe ỹ none age of the kynge, and of his honourable housholde & lybertie[4], whiche passyd all other before his tyme, and trewe of his allegeaunce, that no man cowde with ryght accuse, but malycious persones, whiche[5] his glorious honour & fame, lafte nat maligne[6] agayne hym, tyll he were put frome all worldly rule, and specially for it was thought that durynge his lyfe, he wolde withstande the delyuery of Angeou and Mayne, before promysed. This for his honourable & lyberall demeanure was surnamed ỹ good duke of Glouceter. Then after he had lyen opyn a season, that all men myght be assuryd of his dethe, the corps was honourably prouydyd for, and so conueyed vnto Seynt Albonys, and there buryed nere vnto the shryne of seynt Albone, to whose soule God be mercyfull. Amen.

The duke of Glouceter arrestyd.

Fol. CC.

And whan this noble prynce was thus enteryd, fyue persones of his housholde, that is to saye, sir Roger Chamberlayne, knyght, Myddelton, Herbarde and Arthur, esquyers, & one Richarde Nedam, yeman, were sent vnto London, and there argued[7] and iugyd to be drawen, hangyd, and quarterid; of the whiche sentence drawynge and hangynge were put in execucion. But when they were cut downe to be quarteryd, the marquys of Suffolke there beynge present, shewyd the kynges chartour for them, and so were delyueryd, to the great reioysynge of the multytude of the people there beynge present. But for this the grudge and murmour of ỹ people ceasid nat agayne the marquys of Suffolke, for the deth of the good duke of Glouceter, of whose murdre he was specially susspected.

A pardon.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlvii.

Iohñ Gedney, draper.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlviii.

William Abraham.

Anno. xxvi.

Thomas Scot.

IN this. xxvi. yere, after concordaunce of mooste wryters, or nere there aboute, the. xxiii. scisme of Churche ceasyd, that before had contynued atwene Eugeny the. iiii. and Felix ỹ. v. vpon. xvi. yeres.

Scisme.

This scisme, as before is towchyd, began by reason of the deposicion of ỹ sayd Eugeny at the counsayll of Basile, for that that he wolde nat obserue the decrees before made in the coũsayll of Cõstaunce, and other causes to hym layde. But yet that deposyng natwithstãdyng, perforse he cõtynued pope[8] by ỹ terme of. xiiii. yeres after. And the sayd Felix, at ỹ sayd coũsayll admytted in lyke maner, cõtynued as pope[8] by all ỹ sayd season, lyke as before to you I haue shewyd in the. xvii. yere of this kynge. And as nowe by exortacion of Cristen prynces, as the kyng of Englande, whose messangers in that behalfe was the bysshoppe of Norwyche, and the lorde of Seynt Iohñs, and other prynces, the sayd [pope][2] Felix, to set a parfyte vnyon in the churche, in this yere of his owne volunte resygned [his auctoritie of papacy,][2] & submytted hym vnto the obedyence

[1] xxiii. MS. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] the. [4] lyberalite. MS. [5] which envyed. MS. [6] to maligne. [7] arrayned. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [8] byshop of Rome. edit. 1542.

of Nicholas the. v. of ỹ name, natwithstandynge that the sayde Felix was a man of great byrthe, and allied to the more partye of all Cristen prynces, and this Nicholas a man of lowe byrth, and of vnknowen kynred within the cytie of Ieane.

Thanne was Felix made legat of Fraunce, and cardynall of Sauoye, and lyued after a blessyd & holy lyfe and so endyd. And as some wryters testyfye, God for hym hath shewyd dyuerse miracles syne he dyed. And for this scisme thus graciously was endyd, a vercifier made this verse folowynge.

Lux fulsit mūdo, cessit Felix Nicholao.

The whiche verse is thus to meane in our moder tunge.

Light into the worlde now doth sprynge and shyne,
For Felix vnto Nicholas all frely doth resyne.

Also, as testyfieth Gagwyne, & also some Englysshe wryters, ỹ trewys atwene Englande and Fraunce contynuynge, a knyght of the Englysshe partie, named sir Fraūceys Arrogonoyse, toke a towne vpon the borders of Normādy, belongynge vnto the duke of Brytayne; for ỹ whiche he complayned hym vnto Charlys the Frenshe kyng, and he, at the sayd dukes request, sent vnto the kyng of Englande Iohn Hanart, and Guillian Consynot, knightes, to axe restitucion of that harme; the whiche were answeryd of ỹ kynges counsayll, that the dede was ryght displeasaunt vnto the kynge, and that the sayd sir Fraunceys had enterprysyd that fayt of his owne presumpcion, and nothinge with the kynges mynde or pleasure. Than after this answere thus made, it was agreed by the duke of Somerset, than lieutenaunt vnder ỹ kynge of Normandy, that a comynycacion for this matier shulde be hadde at a towne named Louers. To the whiche place, at the daye assygned, apperyd and came certayne persones for both parties, where they so beyng occupied, a trayne which was compassyd by the Frenshmen to take from ỹ Englysshmen a stronge towne or hold named Pount all Arche, wherof the maner was this. A Frenshman or Norman, beynge a carter, whiche dayly vsed to entre this towne with vytayll & other lodynge of his carte, seyng the necligence of the Englysshmen, howe lytell hede they toke vnto ỹ watche of ỹ towne, warnyd a Frenshe capitayne, named Floquet, and sayd, that with lytell helpe ỹ towne wolde be goten. For expedycyon wherof, this Floquet, with other, couenaūtyd with the sayd carter to brynge aboute their purpose, and ordeyned vnto hym ii. hardy sowdyours of Frenshmen, whiche bare in theyr neckes. ii. carpenters axes, to shewe that they were carpenters. And after agremēt made amonge them, how they shuld entre into ỹ towne, & where they shuld mete, ỹ carter, which[1] after his olde custome, entre[2] the gates wout susspicion, and soon after, w̄ his axe ī his necke, came ỹ one sowdyour, and in a whyle after that other; and so with lytell questyonynge to them made, passed the gates, and so lastly vnto the house of ỹ carter before appoynted, & there kept theym secrete tyll nyght [was cōmyn thyder,][3] knowynge well that the host of the hous was enemy to Englysshemen, for an iniury to hym of an Englysshman before done, shewyd to hym all theyr counsayll, the whiche promysed to them all the assistence and ayde that he myght make. In this nyghtes passe tyme, for the fortheraunce of this purpose, the lorde of Bressy, with a chosen company of knyghtes, lodgyd hym in busshement nere vnto the towne, towarde the gate of seynt Andrewe; & the forenamed Floquet lodgid hym with an other chosen company vnder the parte of the towne which is towarde Louers, beynge with hym sir Iamys de Clere-mont and other men of name. These ordenaunces & prouycions thus ordeyned for, the forenamed carter, w̄ his. ii. sowdyours forenamed, in ỹ sprynng of ỹ mornynge, as in the moneth of Octobre, came erely vnto ỹ gate with his carte, and called the porter by

[1] *Omitted in* MS. [2] entred. [3] and when the carter at nyght was comyn thidir. MS.

name,

name, in fayre maner, to opyn the gate, and promysed to hym a rewarde for his laboure. The porter knowynge well the carter, and takynge lytell regarde to the other. ii. whiche came with hym, openyd ỹ gate, & sent an other felowe of his to opyn the former gate. When the firste was openyd, the carter sette his carte in the self gate, and drewe to his purs to gyue to the porter his rewarde before promysed. As he tolde the money into his hande, of a falshode he let part of the money fall vpon the grounde; the whiche, whyle ỹ porter stowpyd to take vp, ỹ carter, w̃ his dagger or other wepyn, gaue suche a stroke vnto the porter, that he ne spake nor cryed after. And so soon as this myschief was don, so soon was the other porter slayne of ỹ. ii. sowdyours: and that done, one of theym ran forth of the gates, and gaue assygne vnto the lorde of Bressy, whiche forthwith entred the towne, and toke and slewe al suche as to theym made resystence, and wanne, in shorte whyle, the castell as[1] the towne, and slewe therin moche people & toke many prysoners, amonge the which, as sayth Gagwyne, the lorde Facounbrydge, as capitayne of ỹ towne, was there taken prysoner. Whan this towne was thus won by the cautele of the Frenshemen, and the terme of the trewys was nat yet expyred, than was labour made vnto the Frenshe kynge for restytucyon of this towne, and other wronges done in wynnynge of the same. To ỹ whiche it was answeryd, that if the Englysshemen wolde restore the towne of Fogyers, with other harmys there done, that than the Frenshmen shulde restore this towne, with the other harmys. For treaty wherof, a daye of metyng was appoynted at a place called Boñ Port, where the tyme was spent in vayne of bothe parties, so that of that metynge came none effecte. *Fol. CC.i.*

Of the takynge of this sayde towne of Fogyers, ensuyd moche harme to the Englysshmen, for this was the occacion by the whiche the Frenshmen after gatte all Normandy.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlviii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlix.

Wylliam Cantlow.

Stephyn Browne, grocer. Anno. xxvii.

Wyllyam Marowe.

THis. xxvii. yere, as wytnessyth the Englysshe Cronycle, a knyght of Fraunce, called sir Lowys de Bueyll, chalengyd an esquyer of Englande, named Rauffe Chalons, of certayne feetes of warre; the whiche to approue, a daye to them was gyuen to mete at a towne in Frãce named Maunt or Maunce, where the Frenshe kynge, at that daye, was present. But fortune to Chalons was so frendly, that he ranne ỹ Frenshe knyght thorugh with his spere, wherof the sayde sir Lowys shortly after dyed. Than this Chalons, lyke a cherytable Cristen man, mournyd for his enemy, and kept for hym his obsequy as he had ben his carnall brother; for the whiche dede, of the Frenshe kynge he was greatly allowed, albe it, he was boũde so to do by ỹ lawe of armys. Duellum.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xlix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.l.

Wyllyam Hulyn.

Thomas Chalton. Anno. xxviii.

Thomas Canynge.

IN this. xxviii. yere, the kynge, callyng a parlyamẽt at Westmynster, the whiche was eniourned to the Blacke Friers at London, and after Cristemas to London agayne. In whiche passetyme, a shypman of the West coũtre, named Robert of Cane, with a fewe shyppes of warre, toke an hole flete of marchauntes commynge from the Baye, beynge ladynge with salt; the which were of Pruce, Holande, & Selande, & of other partis of Flaũders, and so brought them to Hampton, & there made his porte sale. For the whiche pryce, the marchauntes goodes of Englande were arestyd in dyuers places of Parliamẽtum.

[1] and. edit. 1559.

Flaundres,

Flaundres, as Bruges, Ipre, and other good townes, & myght nat haue ỹ sayd goodes delyuered, tyll they had taken appoyntment for to paye for the sayd pryce & theyr hurtes and damages.

The duke of Suffolk is arrestyd.

And cõtynuynge the foresayd parlyament, the duke of Suffolke was arestyd & sent as prysoner, to content some myndes, vnto ỹ Tower, where he was kept at his pleasure a moneth, and after delyuered at large; the whiche discontentyd many mennes myndes, for to hym was layde the charge of the delyuery of Angeoñ and Mayne, & the deth of that noble prynce Humfrey, duke of Gloceter. Than of this grudge ensued rebellyon of the cõmons; in somoche ỹ they assembled them in sondry places, & made of themself capitaynes, & named them Blewe berde and other counterfayte names, and so entendyd to haue gaderyd more company; but anone as the kynges coũsayl was therof warnyd, they were layde for & taken, & put to deth. Than the foresayd parlyament was adiourned vnto Leyceter, whether came ỹ kyng, and with hym the duke of Suffolke. Then the cõmons of ỹ cõmon hous made request to the kyng, that all suche persones as were consentyng & laboured for the gyuynge ouer of ỹ duchye of Angeou & erldome of Mayñ, myght be punysshed. Of whiche offence to be gyltie, they accusyd the foresayd duke of Suffolke, the lorde Saye, the bysshop of Salisbury, and one Danyell a gentylman, ẁ Treuylyan and other. Than to appease the cõmon hous, the duke was exiled for. v. yeres, and the lorde Saye, as tresorer of England, and the other were put apart for a whyle, & were promysed to be sent vnto the kynges gayoll or warde.

Blew berde.

Than the duke, in obeying the sentence foresayd, sped hym towarde ỹ sees syde in ỹ moneth of Apryll, and toke his shyppynge in Norfolke, entendyng to haue sayled into Fraunce. In kepynge of whiche course, he was mette with a shyp of warre, named Nicholas of the Tower, the whiche toke his shyp. And whan ỹ capitayne was ware of the duke, anone he toke hym into his owne shyp, and so kept his course towarde Douer: and when he was cõmyn vnto ỹ Roode, anone he caused hym to be confessyd of his owne chapelayne, & that done, shypmen put hym in a shyp boote, and there, vpon the syde of the bote, one strake of his hede, whiche hede with the body was soon after conueyed to the lande of Douer, & there left vpon the sandes, and the sayd shypmen retourned vnto the see agayne: and thus one mischief ensued vpon an other, to the distruccyon of the nobles of this lande. And so vpon the firste daye of May was this deed corps founde vpon Douer sandes, and after conueyed to his restynge place to

The duke of Suffolke slayne.

Annus Iubelius.

This yere also, beyng the yere of our Lordes Incarnacion. xiiii.C. and. l. was the iubyle [or the plenary pardon at Rome,][1] whiche of Englysshmen is called the yere of Grace.

And this yere, a towne in Normãdy, named Vernoyll, was taken by the treason of a Frensh baker, the maner wherof were longe to wryte; but fynally it came to the possession of Floquet, before rehersyd, to the great distruccion of Englysshmen: for nowe was the trewes endyd, & mortall warre was executed vpon bothe parties, and the Englysshmen vnto Frenshe wrought moch myschief diuers wayes, which were longe to wryte. But as tofore I haue shewyd to you sondry tymes, the most losse turned euer latewarde vpon ỹ Englyssh partie: for this season also were ỹ townes of Nogent & Poũt Andenere won by ỹ erle of Seỹt Paule & other.

Iak Cade.

Fol. CC.ii.

And in the moneth of Iuny this[2], the comons of Kent assemblyd them in grete multytude, and chase to theym a capitayne, and named hym Mortymer, and cosyn to the duke of Yorke; but of moste he was named Iak Cade. This kepte the people wonderously togyder, and made suche ordenaunces amonge theym, that he brought a great nombre of people of theym vnto the Blak Heth, where he deuysed a bylle of petycions to the kynge & his counsayll, and shewyd therin what iniuryes and oppressions the poore cõmons suffred by suche as were aboute ỹ kynge, a fewe persones in nombre, and all

[1] *Omitted in the edit.* 1542. [2] this yere.

vnder coloure to come to his aboue. The kynges counsayll seynge this byll, disalowyd it, and counsayled the kynge, whiche by the. vii. daye of Iuny had gaderid to hym a stronge hoost of people, to go agayne his rebellys, and to gyue vnto theym batayll. Than the kynge, after the sayd rebellys had holden theyr felde vpon Blak Heth. vii. dayes, made towarde theym. Wherof herynge, the capitayne drewe backe w̄ his people to a vyllage called Seuenok, and there enbataylled.

Then it was agreed by the kynges counsayl, that sir Hunfrey Stafforde, knyght, with Wyllyam his brother, and other certayne gentylmen, shulde folowe the chase, and the kynge with his lordes shulde retourne vnto Grenewyche, wenynge to theym that the rebellys were fledde and gone. But as before I haue shewyd, whene sir Humfrey with his company drewe nere vnto Seuenok, he was warnyd of the capitayne ỹ there abode with his people. And when he had counsayled with the other gentylmen, he, lyke a manfull knyght, sette vpon the rebellys and fought with theym longe; but in ỹ ende, the capitayne slewe hym and his brother, with many other, & caused the rest to gyue backe. All whiche season the kynges hoost lay styll vpon Blak Heth, beyng amonge theym sondry oppynyons; so that some and many fauouryd the capitayne. But fynally, whan worde came of the ouerthrowe of the Staffordes, they sayd playnly boldly[1], that except the lorde Saye and other before reherced were cōmytted to warde, they wolde take the capitaynes partye. For the appeasynge of whiche rumour, the lorde Saye was put into ỹ Tower; but that other as then were nat at hande. Then ỹ kynge hauynge knowlege of the scomfyture of his men, and also of ỹ rumour of his osteyng people, remouyd frome Grenewyche to London, and there with his hoost restyd hym a whyle. Sir Hūfry Staffordē.

And so soon as Iak Cade had thus ouer cōmyn the Staffordes, he anone apparaylled hȳ with the knyghtes apparayll, and dyd on hym his bryganders set with gylt nayle, and his salet and gylt sporis; and after he had refresshid his people, he retourned agayne to Blak Heth, & there pyght agayne his felde, as here tofore he had done, & laye there from the. xxix. daye of Iuny, beynge seynt Peters day, tyll the firste day of Iuly. In whiche season came vnto hȳ the archebysshop of Caunterbury, and the duke of Bukkyngham, with whom they had longe cōmunycacion, and fande hym right discrete in his answerys: how be it they coude nat cause hym to lay downe his people, and to submyt hym vnto ỹ kynges grace.

In this whyle, the kynge and the quene herynge of the encreasynge of his rebellys, and also the lordes ferynge theyr owne seruauntes, lest they wolde take the capitaynes partye, remoued from Lōdon to Kyllyngworth, leuynge the cytie without ayde, except oonly the lorde Scalys, whiche was left to kepe the Tower, and with hym a manly and warly man named Mathewe Gowth[2]. Thane the capitayne of Kent thus houynge at Blakheth, to ỹ ende to blynde the more the people[3], and to bryng hym in fame that he kept good iustyce, behedyd there a pety capitayne of his named Parys, for somoche as he had offendyd agayne such ordnaūce as he had stablisshed in his hoste. And heryng ỹ the kyng & all his lordes were this[4] departyd, drewe hym nere vnto ỹ cytie, so ỹ vpon ỹ first day of Iuly he entred the burgh of Southwark, beyng than Wednysday, and lodged hym there that nyght, for he myght nat be suffred to entre that cytie.

And vpon the same day the comons of Essex, in great nombre, pyght theym a felde vpon the playne at Myles Ende. Vpon the seconde day of the sayd moneth the mayer called a comon counsayll at ỹ Guyldhall, for to puruey ỹ withstandynge of thyse rebellys and other maiyers, in which assemble were dyuers opynyons, so that some thought good that the sayd rebellys shuld be receyued into ỹ cytie, & some otherwyse; amonge ỹ which, Robert Horne, stokfysshmonger, than beyng an aldermā, spake sore agayne theym that wold haue hym entre. For the whiche sayinges, the comons were so amouyd agayne hym, that they ceasyd nat tyll they hadde hym cōmytted to warde.

[1] plainly and boldly. [2] Fowth. edit. 1553. 1542. *erroneously.* [3] the cōmon people. MS. [4] thus.

And

Iak Cade entryth the cytie.

And the same afternoone, aboute. v. of ỹ clok, the capitayne with his people entred by the brydge; and whan he came vpon the drawe brydge, he hewe the ropys that drewe the bridge, in sonder with his sworde, and so passed into the cytie, and made in sondry places therof proclamacions in the kynges name, that no man, payne[1] of dethe, shulde robbe or take any thynge parforce without payinge therfore. By reason wherof he wanne many hertes of the comons of the cytie; but all was done to begyle w the people, as after shall euydently appere. He rode thorough dyuers stretes of the cytie, and as he came by London stone, he strake it with his sworde, and sayd, "Nowe is Mortymer lorde of this cytie." And whan he had thus shewyd hymselfe in dyuerse places of ỹ cytie, and shewyd his mynde to the mayre for the orderynge of his people, he retourned ito Southwarke, and there abode as he before had done, his people cõmynge and goynge at lawfull houres whan they wolde. Than vpon the morne, beyng the thirde daye of Iuly and Frydaye, the sayd capitayñ entred agayne the cytie, and causyd the lorde Saye to be fette from the Tower and ladde vnto the Guyldhall, where he was areygnyd before the mayre and other of the kynges iustyces. In whiche passe tyme he entendyd to haue brought before the sayd iustyces the forsayd Robert Horne; but his wyfe and frendes made to hym suche instaunt labour, that fynally, for. v.C. marke, he was set at his lybertye. Than the lorde Saye beyng, as before is sayde, at Guyldhalle, desyred that he myghte be iuged by his pyers. Wherof herynge, the capitayne sent a cõpany of his vnto the halle, the whiche parforce toke hym from his offycers, and so brought hym vnto ỹ standarde in Chepe, where, or he were halfe shryuen, they strake of his hede; and that done, pyght it vpon a longe pole, and so bare it aboute with theym.

The lord Saye behedyd & other.

In this tyme and season hadde the capytayne caused a gentylman to be taken, named Croumer[2], whiche before had been shryue of Kent, and vsed as they sayd some extorcyons. For which cause, or for he hadde fauouryd the lorde Saye, by reason ỹ he hadde maryed his doughter, he was haryed to Myles Ende, and there, in the capitaynes presence, byhedyd. And the same tyme was there also behedyd an other man, called Baylly, the cause of whose dethe was this, as I haue herde some men reporte. Then[1] Baylly was of the famylyer & olde acquayntaunce of Iak Cade, wherfore so soon as he espyed hym cõmynge to hym warde, he caste in his mynde that he wolde dyscouer his lyuynge & olde maners and shewe of his vyle kynne and lynage. Wherfore, knowynge that ỹ sayd Baylly vsed to bere scrowys and prophecye aboute hỹ, shewyng to his copany that he was an enchaũter and of ylle disposicõn, and that they shuld well knowe by such bokes as he bare vpon hym, and badde theym serche, and if they foũde nat as he sayd, that then they shulde put hym to dethe, whiche all was doone accordynge to his commaundement.

Fol. CC.iii.

Whan they hadde thus behedyd thyse. ii. men, they toke the hede of Croumer and pyght it vpon a pole, and soo entred agayne the cytie wit ỹ heddes of the lordes Saye and of Croumer; and as they passed the stretes, ioyned the poles togyder, & caused eyther deed mouth to kysse other dyuerse and many tymes.

Cade robbyth.

And the capitayne, the selfe same daye, went vnto the hous of Philip Malpas, draper and alderman, and robbyd and spoyled his house, and tooke thens a great substaũce; but he was before warnyd, & therby conueyed moche of his money & plate, or ellys he hadde ben vndone. At whiche spoylyng were present many poore men of the cytie, whiche at suche tymes been euer redy in all places to do harme, where suche riottes been done.

Then towarde nyght he retourned into Southwarke, and vpon the morne recntred the cytie, and dyned ỹ daye at a place in seynt Margarete Patyn parysshe, called Gherstis hous; and whan he hadde dyned, lyke an vncurteyse gest, robbyd hym, as the day before he hadde Malpas. For whiche. ii. robberyes, albe it, that the porayll and nedy people drewe vnto hym, & were parteners of ỹ ille, ỹ honest and thryfty comoners caste in their

[1] upon payn. [2] Wylliam Crowmer. MS. [3] This.

myndes

myndes ỹ sequele of this matyer, and feryd leste they shuld be delt with in lyke maner, by meane wherof he loste ỹ peoples fauoure and hertes. For it was to be thought, if he had nat executyd that robory, he myght haue gone ferre and brought his purpose to good effect, if he hadde entendyd wel; but it is to demeane' and presuppose that the entent of hym was nat good, wherfore it myght nat come to any good conclucyon. Than the mayer and aldermen, with assystence of the worshypfull comeners, seynge this mysse demenanour of ỹ capitayne, in sauegardynge of themself and of the cytie, toke theyr counsaylles how they myght dryue the capitayne & his adherentes frome the cytie, wherin theyr fere was the more, for so moche as the kynge and his lordes with their powers were farre from theym. But yet, in aduoydynge of apparent peryll, they cõdiscendyd that they wolde withstande his any more entre into the cytie. For the perfourmaunce wherof, the mayre sent vnto the lorde Scalys and Mathewe Gowgh, than hauynge the Tower in gydynge, & had of theym assent to parfourme the same.

Than vpon the. y. daye of Iuly, ỹ capitayne beynge in Southwarke, caused a mã to be behedyd, for cause of displeasure to hym done, as the fame went: and so kept hym in Southwarke al that day; how be it he myghte haue entred the cytie if he had wolde.

And whan nyght was comyng, the mayre and cytezeins, with Mathewe Gowth, lyke to their former appoyntment, kept the passage of the brydge, beynge Sonday, and defended the Kentysshmen, whiche made great force to reentre the cytie. Thenne the capitayne seynge this bekerynge begon, yode to harneys, & called his people aboute hym, and sette so fyersly vpon the cytezeyns, that he draue theym backe from ỹ stulpis in Southwarke or brydge fote, vnto the drawe brydge. [Then the Kentysshmen sette fyre vpon ỹ drawe brydge.][2] In defendynge wherof many a man was drowned and slayne, amonge ỹ whiche, of men of name was Iohñ Suttoñ, alderman, Mathewe Gowgh, gentylman, and Roger Heysande, cytezeyn. And thus contynued this skyrmysshe all nyghte tyll. ix. of the clok vpon the morne; so that somtyme the cytezeyns had the better, and thus soone the Kentysshmen were vpon the better syde; but euer they kept them vpon the brydge, so ỹ the cytezins passed neuer moche ỹ bulwerke at the brydgefote, nor ỹ Kentysshmẽ moch ferther than ỹ drawebridge. Thus cõtynuynge this cruell fyght, to ỹ distruccion of moche people on both sydes, lastly, after the Kentysshmẽ put[3] to ỹ worse, a trewe was agreed for certayne houres; durynge ỹ which trew, ỹ archebysshop of Caũterbury, than chaũceller of Englãde, sent a generall pardon to ỹ capitayn for hymselfe, and an other for his people: by reason wherof he and his company departyd the same nyght out of Southwarke, and so retourned euery mã to his owne. Batayll on the bridge.

But it was nat longe after that ỹ capitayne w̃ his company was thus departed, that proclamacõns were made in dyuers places of Kent, of Southsex, & Sowtherey, that who myght take ỹ foresayd Iak Cade, other on lyue or dede, shuld haue a. M. marke for his trauayl. After whiche proclamacõn thus publisshed, a gentylman of Kent, named Alexander Idẽn, awayted so his tyme, that he toke hym in a gardyn in Sussex, where in the takynge of hym the sayd Iak was slayne: and so beyng deed was brought into Southwarke the. daye of the moneth of[4] and there lefte in the Kynges Benche for that nyght. And vpon morowe ỹ deed corps was drawen thorugh the hyghe stretes of the cytie vnto Newgate, & there hedyd and quarteryd, whose hede was than sent to London brydge, & his. iiii. quarters were sent to. iiii. sõdry townes of Kent. Iak Cade is slayne.

And this done, the kynge sent his cõmyssions into Kent, and rode after hymselfe, and caused enquery to be made of this riot in Caũterbury; where for the same. viii. men were iuged & put to dethe; and in other good townes of Kent and Southsex, dyuers other were put in execucion for ỹ same riot.

In this yere also, in the west countree was slayne the bysshop of Salisbury, by the Episcopus trucidatur.

[1] deme. edit. 1533. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] were put. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.
[4] of September. MS.

cõmons of that coũtre. Wherfore, after the kynge had sped his besynesse in Kent & Sussex, he rode thyther to se also those malefactours punysshed.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.l. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.li.

Iohñ Myddyltoñ.

Nicholas Wyfforde[1], grocer. Anno. xxix.

Wyllyam Dere.

Parliamentum. THis. xxix. yere, vpon seynt Leonardes daye, or the. vi. daye of Nouembre, began the parlyament at Westmynster. And the firste daye of Decembre folowynge, the duke of Somerset, whiche newly was cõmyn out of Normandy, was put vnder arest, and his goodes by ỹ cõmons were fowly dispoyled and borne awaye out of the Blak Fryers; for at this season was moche people in ỹ cytie by reason of the parlyament, and specially of lordes seruauntes, whiche were awaytyng vpon their lordes and maisters in great multytude. For ye shal vnderstande that temporall lordes, in those dayes, kept other maner of housholdes and other maner of reteyndour of housholde seruaũtes, and other nombre, ferre excedyng ỹ the lordes at these dayes done. Wherfore at parliament tymes & other great coũsaylles, ỹ cyties or townes where they assemblyd, were hugely stuffed with people. Than after this riot this[2] comytted, vpon the morowe folowynge, proclamacion was made thorugh the cytie that no man shuld spoyle or robbe, vpon payne of dethe; and the same daye, at the standarde in Chepe, was a man behedyd for brekynge of the sayd proclamacion. And thus began rumour[3] & malyce to spryng atwene the lordes of the lande: and specyally the duke of Somerset and other of the quenes counsayll were hadde in great hateryd for the losynge of Normãdy, wherof ỹ chief cytie[4] Roan was lost or gyuen vp by appoyntement the yere precedynge, as wytnessyth Gagwynus, vpon condycion that ỹ duke of Somerset, with his wyfe and Englysshe sowdyours, shulde, with suche goodes as they myght cary, departe frely from the cytie, for which fre passage he shuld paye vnto ỹ Frenshe kyng. lvi. M. scutes, whiche amount to. xiiii. M. marke sterlynge. And also he was bounde to delyuer into the Frenshe kynges possessyon all townes and castellys that at that day were in ỹ possessyon of Englysshemen within the duchy of Normãdy; for perfourmaũce of which couenaũtys the lorde Talbot was set for one of the pledgys. And so by one Floquet, before named, all the sayde townes and castellys were by hym to the Frenshe kynges vse receyuyd, Harflewe[5] onely exceptyd; wherof the capytayn, named Corson or Curson, denyed the delyuery, with assystẽce of one named syr Thomas Auryngham. The which, in despyte of all the Frenshe kynges power layde both by see & by lãde, helde it from the begynnynge of December tyll the moneth of Ianuary, and than, for lacke of rescouse, gaue it vp by appoyntment in the begynnynge of this mayers yere. For this yeldynge vp of Normandy, moche dyspleasure grewe vnto the quene and hyr counceyll; in somoche that the duke of Yorke, father vnto kynge Edwarde the. iiii. with many lordes ẇ hym allyed, toke party agayn hyr and hyr counceyll, so that mortall warre therof ensuyd, as here after i this story shall appere.

Fol. CC.iiii.

The duke of Somerset.

Harflewe.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.li. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lii.

Mathew Phylyp.

Wyllyam Gregory, skynner. Anno. xxx.

Christofer Warton.

The duke of Yorke. IN this. xxx. yere &. xvi. day of February, the kyng beinge accompanyed with ỹ duke of Somerset & many other lordis, toke theyr iourney towarde the Marchys of Walys, for so moche as he was credybly assertaynyd ỹ the duke of Yorke, assysted with dyuerse other lordes and men of name, hadde in those partyes gatheryd great strẽgth of people,

[1] Nicholas Wyffold. MS. [2] thus. [3] newe rumours. MS. [4] cytie of. edti. 1542.
[5] Harflete. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

and

and with theym was entrynge the lande, and so helde on his iourney towarde hym. But whē the duke had wyttynge of the kynges great power, he swaruyd the way from the kynges hoost and toke the way towarde Lōdon. And for he had receyued knowlege from the cytie, that he myght not there be receyuyd to refresshe hym & his people, he therfore went ouer Kyngstone Brydge and so into Kent, & there vpō an heth callyd Brentheth, he pyghte his feelde. Whereof the kynge hauynge knowlege, sped hym after, & lastly came vnto Blackeheth, & there pyght his felde. Where both hoostys beynge thus enbataylyd, medyacyon was made of peace atwene both hoostys; for furtheraunce whereof, to the duke were sent the bysshoppis of Wynchester and of Ely, with the erlys of Salesbury & of Warwyke. To whom it was answeryd by the sayde duke, that he nor none of the company entendyd none hurt vnto ŷ kynges persone, nor to any of his counceyll, beyng louers of the cōmon weale and of hym and of his lande; but his entent & purpose was to remoue from hym a fewe euyll dysposyd persones, by whose meanys the cōmon people was greuouslye oppressyd, and the comynaltye greatlye enpouerysshed; of the whiche he namyd for pryncypall the duke of Somerset. Of whom it was fynallye agreed by the kynge, ŷ he shuld be cōmytted to warde, there to abyde and answere vnto suche artycles as ŷ duke of Yorke wolde lay agayne hym. Vpon whiche promesse so made by ŷ kyng, ŷ fyrste day of Marche, beyng Thursday, the duke brake vp his felde, and so came vnto ŷ kynges tent, where, cōtrary ŷ former promyse made, he fande the duke of Somerset as chefe awayter, and next vnto the kynge. And then was the duke of Yorke sent before to London, and was holden somedeale in maner as a prysoner; & more streygthter shulde haue ben kepte, ne had ben tydynges which dayly sprange, ŷ syr Edwarde his sone, than erle of the March, was cōmynge towarde London with a stroge power of Welshemen & Marchmen, which feryd so the quene and hyr counceyll, that the duke was lybertyd to go where he wolde. And so after he departed vnto hys owne coūtrey, and peace was dyssymuled with feynyd loue for a whyle. Promyse not kepte.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.liii.

Richarde Lee.

Godfrey Feyldynge[1]. Anno. xxxi.

Richarde Alley.

IN this. xxxi. yere, the kyng helde a solempne feest at Westmynster vpon the. xii. day of Cristmas, where he creatyd. ii. erlys, ŷ whiche were his bretherne vpō ŷ mothers syde, quene Katheryne, ŷ after the dethe of kynge Henry the. v. was maryed vnto a knyght of Walys, named Owayne, the which begatte vpon hyr theyse foresayde. ii. sonnys. Whereof that one this sayd daye was creatyd erle of Rychemount, which was named syr Edmonde, and the yonger callyd syr Iasper, was creat the erle of Penbrooke; the whiche lastly was creatid duke of Bedforde by our souerayne lorde kynge Henry the. vii. and so dyed. And in Marche folowynge, as wytnessyth Gagwyne, was ŷ towne of Herflewe wonne by the Frenshemen, & soone after the cytie of Bayons was geuen vp by appoyntment, so that the souldyours shuld leue theyr armour behynde them. And for euery woman there beynge, was graunted an horse to ryde vpon, & to euery horseman. x. scutis to pay for theyr costys; and to euery fote man. v. without more by them to be takē. And this yere the kyng laye longe syke at Claryngdowne, & was in great ieopardye of his lyfe. And in ŷ ende of this mayers yere, and begynnynge of the. xxxii. yere of the kyng, that is to meane, vpon the daye of Translancion of seynt Edwarde, or the. xiii. day of Octobre, the quene, at Westmynster, was delyuered of a fayre prynce, for the Natiuitas principis.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Mercer.

whiche great reioysynge and gladnesse was made in sundry placys of Englonde, and specially within the cytie of London, wherof the expressement of the cyrcumstaūce wolde axe longe leysoure to vtter. This prynce beynge with all honour and reuerence sacryd & crystened, was named Edwarde, and grewe after to perfyght and goodlye personage; and lastlye of Edwarde the. iiii. was slayen at Tewkysburye felde, as after to you shall be shewyd, whose noble mother susteynyd not a little dysclaunder and obsequye[1] of the cōmon people, sayinge that he was not the naturall sone of kynge Henrye, but chaūgyd in the cradell, to hyr great dyshonour and heuynesse, which I ouer passe. The yere also, which was ỹ yere of grace. M.CCCC. and. liii. Mahumet then prynce of Turkys, in the moneth of Iuny, and. iiii. day of ỹ sayd moneth, beyng the thyrde yere of his empyre or reygne, after. l. dayes of cōtynuell assaute by his innumerable multytude of Turkys to the cytie of Constantyne ỹ nobie, ẅ excedynge force & cruelty made & exercysed, wan & opteynyd ỹ domynyon & rule of the same, to the great hynderaunce & shame of all Crystendome, & enhauncynge of the power & myght of the sayde Turkes. Of the excedynge noūber of men, women, & chyldren that in ỹ cytie at ỹ daye were slayen, I wyll not speke of, for the great dyuersyte ỹ I haue seen of wryters. Amonge the whiche the emperoure named Paleologus, ẅ many other nobles of the cytie, beynge taken on lyue, were then bebedyd, & many a preest[2] relygyous man put vnto deth by sundry cruell turmentys. After whiche great crueltye, with many other long to reherce, put in execucion, a commaundement passyd from the sayd emperoure of Turkys, ỹ all chyldren beinge aboue the age of. vi. yeres, as well men as womē kynde, shulde be streyght put vnto deth, the which, after some wryters, excedyd the noūbre of.iiii.M. Here, for tydeousnesse & lamentable processe, whiche I myght [not][3] shewe in the rehersall of the abomynacyon of theyr[4] moost dampnable & accursyd Turkis, by them done vnto the [crucyfyxe and other images of the][3] churchys and templys within the cytie, I cease. For paynfull it were to rede, and more peynfull & sorowfull to here, that the feythe of Cryste shulde in so vyle maner be dyspysed.

Constantyne ỹ noble lost.

Fol. CC.o.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.liii.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.liii.

Iohn Walden.

Iohn Norman, draper.

Anno. xxxii.

Thomas Cooke.

THis. xxxii. yere, Iohn Norman foresayd, vpon the morowe of Symōde and Iudis daye, the accustomyd daye whā ỹ newe mayer vsyd yerelye to ryde with great pompe vnto Westmynster to take his charge, this mayer fyrste of all mayers brake that auncient and olde contynued custome, and was rowed thyther by water; for ỹ which ỹ watermen made of hym a roūdell or songe to his great prayse, the whiche began,

Rowe the bote Norman, rowe to thy lemman,

And so forth, ẅ a lōge processe. Ye haue in your remembrauce how I before in ỹ. xxx. yere of this kyng, shewyd to you of the apoyntmente takē atwene the sayd kyng & duke of Yorke at Brent Heth, whiche apoyntment, as before is sayd, was soone broken and set at nought, by reason wherof great enuye and discencion grewe atwene the kynge and dyuerse of his lordys, and moost specyally atwene the quenys coūceyll and ỹ duke of Yorke & his blode. For all contrary the kynges promyse, by meanys of the quene, which thā bare ỹ cure & charge of the lāde, the duke of Sumerset was set at large, & made capytayne of Calays, and had as great rule about the kyng as he before dayes hadde; wherwith [all onelye][3] not onlye some of the nobles of the lande grudgyd, but also ỹ cōmons, whiche by his coūceyll & other thā rulers, as the fame went, sustenyd many greuouse imposycions and

[1] obloquy. [2] priest and. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [4] the. edit. 1542. 1559.

chargys.

chargys. This fyre, rancour[1], & enuy, by the space of. xvii. or. xviii. monethes, smokynge & brennynge vnder couert dyssymulacion, now at this daye brake out in great & hote flamys of open warre and wrath, in so moche that ỹ duke of Yorke beynge in the marchys of Walys, callyd to hym the erlys of Warwyke & of Salisbury, ẅ other many honorable knyghtys and esquyers, & gathered a stronge hoost of people, and than in the moneth of Apryll toke his iourney towarde Lōdon, the kynge there than beynge with a great retynewe of lordys. Whereof when the quene & the lordys were aduertyzed ỹ the duke was cōmyng ẅ so great power, anon they caste in theyr myndes ỹ it was to none of theyr profetys; and for ỹ, in all possyble haste as they myght, they gathered by ỹ auctoryte of the kynges cōmyssyons such strengthe as they cowde haue, & entendid to haue conueyed the kynge westwarde, & not to haue encountryd the duke of Yorke. And for the execucion of this purpose, ỹ kynge, accompanyed with hym the dukys of Somerset[2] of Buckyngeham, the erlys of Stafforde and of Northumberlande, with the lorde Clyfforde & other many noble men of the realme, departyd vpō the. xx. day of May from Westmynster, and so helde his iourney towarde seynt Albonys. Then the duke of Yorke hauynge knowledge of ỹ kynges departynge from London, coostyd the countreys, and came vnto the ende of Seynt Albons vpon the. xxiii. day of May foresayde, then beyng the Thursday before Whytsondaye, where, whyle meanys of treaty and peace were comonyd vpō that one party, the erle of Warwyke with his Marche men entryd the towne vpon that other ende, & fought egerly agayne the kynges people, & so contynued the fyght a longe season. But in conclusyon the vyctory fell to the duke of Yorke and his party, in so moche ỹ there was slayen the duke of Somerset, the erle of Northumberlande and the lorde Clyfforde, with many other honorable men of knyghtis & esquyers, whose namys were tedyous to wryte. After which vyctory thus opteynyd by the duke, he with honoure & reuerence, vpon the morne folowynge conueyed the kynge agayn to London, and there lodgyd hym in the bysshop of Lōdons palays. And soone thereupon was callyd a parlyament, & holden at Westmynster, by auctoryte whereof the duke of Yorke was made protectoure of Englonde, the erle of Salesbury chaunceler, and ỹ erle of Warwyke capytayne of Calays; & all such persones as before were ī auctoryte & nere about the kyng, were clerelye amoued & put by; and the quene and hyr counceyll that before dayes rulyd, all vtterlye set a parte concernynge the rule of the kynge and of ỹ lande, whiche contynued for a whyle as after shall appere. In this yere also, as affermyth the Frēshe Cronycle, this mysery & vnkyndnesse thus reygnynge in Englonde, the lorde Talbot than beyng in Normādy, & in defendynge of ỹ kynges garysons, was beset with Frenshe men at a place named Castyllyon, and there strongelye assaylyd, where, after longe and cruell fyght, he with his sone, and to the noumber of. xl. men of name, and viii.C. of other Englysshe soudyours, were myserably slayen, and many moo taken prysoners.

The firste feelde of Seynt Albons.

A parlyament.

Dominus Talbot interficitur.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.liiii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lv.

Iohn Felde.

Stephan Forster[3], Anno. xxxiii.

Wyllyam Tayllour.

THis yere. xxxiii. of Hēry ỹ. vi. certeyn euyll disposyd persones, beynge seyntwarye men ẅin Seynt Martens the Graunde, issuyd out of the sayde place, & frayed with some cytezyns, and of them harte and maymyd, & that done reentrid ỹ seyntwary; wherewith the cōmons beyng amoued, with certeyne rulers of the cytie, entryd ỹ sayd sentwary by force & pullyd out the occasyoners of the sayd fraye, and commytted them to prysone. Of this mater, by the deane of Seynt Martens, and suche as fauoured hym, was a grieuous complaynt made vnto ỹ kyng and his counceyll, of the mayer and ỹ cytezens; for dyscharge whereof the recorder of the cytie, with certeyne aldermen to hym assygned,

Affray at Seynt Martens.

[1] fyre of rancour. MS. [2] and of. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *The* MS. *adds* fyshmonger.

were

Fol. CC.xi.

were sent vnto the kynge, then lying at the castell of Egle in Herefordeshyre, where after ỹ mater duly debatyd before the kynges coũceyll, they were with lettyr of commẽdacyon retournyd vnto the mayer, wyllynge hym to kepe the sayd persones safely tyll the kynges commynge to London, at whiche season he entendyd to haue the mater more clerely examyned.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lv. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lvi.

Iohñ Yonge.

Wyllyam Marowe, grocer. Anno. xxxiiii.

Thomas Dulgraue.

THis yere & moneth of Maye, an Italyẽs seruant walked throughe Chepe with a dagger hangynge at his gyrdell, wherof a mercers seruaũt that before tyme had ben in Italy, and there chalengyd or punysshed for weryng of a lyke wepen, chalengyd the straunger, and questenyd w̃ hym how he was so bolde to bere such a warely wepyn, consyderynge he was a straunger and out of his natyfe coũtrey, and also knowynge that in his countrey no straunger shulde be sufferyd to bere any lyke wepyn. To which questyon such answere was made by the Italyen, that the mercer toke his dagger from hym, & brake it vpon his hede. The straunger thus beynge delte with, cõplaynyd hym vnto the mayer, the whiche, vpon ỹ morowe folowynge kepyng a court at the Guyldhall, sent for ỹ yonge man, & after his answere made vnto this complaynt, by agrement of a full courte of aldermen, sent ỹ sayd mercer vnto prysone. And after this court was fynysshyd, for rumour ỹ he harde of to be amonge the seruauntis of the mercery, he with ỹ. ii. sheryffes toke his way homewarde throughe Chepe; but whã he was nere vnto ỹ ende of Seynt Lawrence lane towarde Chepe, he was met with suche a multitude of mercers seruaũtys and other, that he coulde not passe for ought that he myght do or speke, tyll he had, cõtrarye his wylle & mynde, delyueryd the yonge man, that before was commytted by hym and his bretherne to warde, & so was[1] forthwyth delyuered. This thus done, rumour sprange thereof lyghtely about ỹ towne, in so moche ỹ amõge many cytezyns it was construed, that this was done by thassent of the masters & housholders of the mercerye, to the entente to haue the straungers punysshed, for so moch as they toke from them great lyuynge, by reason of theyr vtteraunce of clothe of golde and sylkys to the estatis and lordes of the realme. But how so it was vnto men of honeste, to vacabondys and other that lokyd for pylfry & ryfflynge, it was a great occasyon & styrynge; & ỹ apperyd well, for ỹ same afternone, sodeynlye was assẽbled a multytude of rascall & poore people of ỹ cytie, which, w̃out hede or guyde, ranne vnto certeyn Italyens placis, & specially vnto ỹ Florẽtynes, Lukessys, & Venyciẽs, & toke & spoyled what they ī theyr placys myght fynde, & dyd great hurte in sundry placys, but moost in. iiii. houses standynge in Bredstrete warde, wherof. iii. stode ī Seynt Bartholmewys parysshe ỹ lytle, & one in Seynt Benettys parysshe, & moch more wolde haue don, had not ben ỹ spedy ayde of ỹ mayer & aldermen & worshypfull comoners of ỹ cytie, whiche w̃ all dylygence resysted them, & of them toke dyuerse ỹ robbyd, & sent them to Newegate. And fynally not w̃out shedynge of blode, & maymynge of dyuerse cytezyns, ỹ rumoure & people were appeasyd. Whã the yonge man begynner of all this busynesse sawe this inconuenyẽce ensue of his wantonesse, were it by coũceyll or otherwyse, feryng ỹ sequell of ỹ mater, yode streyght vnto Westmynster, and there taryed as a seyntwary man, tyll all ỹ mater were endid. It was not longe after or the duke of Buckynghã, w̃ iustycys & other noble men, was sent downe from the kynge into the cytie, & chargyd the mayre, by vertue of a cõmyssyon, that an enquery shuld be made of this ryot, & so by vertu of ỹ sayd cõmyssyon, callyd an oyer determyner, and a day was kept at Guyldhall vpõ ỹ day of ỹ moneth of[2] where ỹ sayd day sat for iugys ỹ mayre as ỹ kynges lyeutenaũt, ỹ duke of Buckynghã vpõ his right hãde, ỹ chefe iustyce vpõ the

Disturbaũce of alyauntis.

Robbery.

[1] was he. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] the viiith daye of the monyth of Maii. MS.

lefte

lefte hande, with many other men of name, which I passe ouer. Whyle ỹ mayer, the' sayd lordes were callynge of the panellys of the enquestys at Guyldehall, the other comoners of the cytie, not beynge cõtent with the order, many of them secretly armyd thẽ in theyr housys, & entẽdyd, as the cõmon fame after went, to haue rũge Bowe bell, & so to haue reysyd & gatheryd the comynaltye of the cytie, & by force to haue delyuerid such persones as before for robery were cõmytted to warde. But this mater was so dyscretely handelyd, by ỹ coũceyll and labour of some dyscrete comoners, which appeasyd theyr neyghbours ī such wyse, ỹ all this fyry haste was quẽchyd & came to none effecte, sauynge that worde was brought vnto the duke of Buckyngham ỹ the comynaltye of the cytie were in harnesse, and if he taryed longe there, he ẏ the other lordys shuld be in great ieopardy. With which vntrewe tydynges he beynge feryd, hastelye toke leue of the mayer, & so departyd vnto his lodgyng, & so ceasyd ỹ enquery for that daye. Vpõ the morowe, for so moch as ỹ mayer had vnderstãdynge of ỹ secrete murmure, he cõmaũdyd the cõmon coũceyll, with all wardeyns of felysshyppys, to apere vpõ the morowe at Guyldhall, where by the recorder in the kynges name, & the mayers as his lyeutenaunte, was cõmaũdyd to euerych wardeyns, ỹ, in ỹ afternoone folowyng, eyther of thẽ shuld assẽble his hoole felysshyp at theyr propre hallys, & there to geue enery cytezyn streyght cõmaundement ỹ euery man see & entende to see ỹ kynges peace within ỹ cytie; & if they fynde any person ỹ makyth any reasonyng, wherby they myght cõceyue or espye ỹ he fauoured any gatherynge of cõpanyes, or the delyuerey of such persones as were ī warde, ỹ the sayd wardeyns shulde with fayer wordys exorte hym to ỹ beste, & without sygne or token therof shewynge, secretly to bryngе the name or namys of hym or them vnto ỹ mayer. By meane of which polycy & good order, the cytezyns were brought in suche a quyetnesse, ỹ after ỹ dey ỹ foresayde enquery was duely pursued, &. iii. persones for ỹ sayd ryot put in execucio & hãged at Tybourne; wherof. ii. after some wryters, were seyntwarye men of Seynt Martens, and ỹ. iii was a shypmã or botemã. The quene, ẏ certeyn lordis which fauoured his[1] partye, dysdayned sore the rule which the duke of Yorke bare and other, and speciallye for that that the sayde duke bare the name of protectour, whiche arguyd that the kynge was insuffycient to gouerne the realme, whiche, as she thoughte, was a great dyshonoure to the kynge and to all the realme. Wherfore she made suche meanys, and wanne by hyr polycy such frendshyp of dyuerse of the lordis, both spyrytuell and tẽporall, that she causyd the duke of Yorke to be dyschargyd of his protectourshyp, and the erle of Salesbury of his chaũcellershyp, which was cause of newe warre, as after shall appere.

Inprysonement.

Womans polycy.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lvi. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lvii. *Fol. CC.xii.*

Iohñ Stewarde.

Thomas Canynges, grocer. Anno. xxxv.

Raufe Verney.

THis yere, and begynnynge of the same, the quene suspectynge the cytie of London, and demyd[2] it to be more fauourable vnto the duke of Yorkys partye than hyrs, causyd the king to remoue from London vnto Couentre, and there helde hym a longe season. In whiche tyme the duke of Yorke was sent for thyther by pryuey seale, with also the erle of Salesbury, & the erle of Warwyke, where, by couyne of the quene, they were all. iii. in great daunger. Howe be it by monysshement of theyr frendys they escapyd; and soone after the sayd duke or erle went into the Northe, and the erle of Warwyke, with a goodly company, saylyd vnto Calays. And shortlye after were taken at Eryth, within. xii. myles of London, iiii. wonderfull fysshis, wherof one was called Mors Maryne, the seconde a Sworde fysshe, and the other. ii. were Whalys, which, after some exposytours, were pronostycacions of warre & trowble to ensue soone after. In this

Fysshis taken.

[1] with the. [2] hir. [3] demyng. MS.

yere

The lorde Egremond.

yere also was a great fray in the north country, atwene the lorde Egremonde and the sonnes of the erle of Salesbury, & dyuerse men maymed & slayen atwene theym. But in the ende the lorde Egremonde was taken, and howe it was, by the dome of the kynges counceyll or otherwyse, the sayd lord Egremonde was founden in such defaute, that fynallye he was condempnyd in great summes of money to be payed vnto the sayd erle of Salesbury: for lacke of payment wherof, or of puttyng suretie for the same, the sayd lorde Egremonde was commytted to Newgate, where after he had contynued a certayne of tyme, he brake the prysone & escapyd with. iii. other prysoners, to the great charge of the sheryffys. It was not longe after that dyscencyon and vnkyndenesse fell atwene the yonge duke of Somerset and syr Iohn Neuyll, sone vnto the erle of Salysbury, beyng than both lodgyd within the cytie. Wherof the mayer beyng warnyd, ordeynyd suche watchys and prouysyons, that if they had any thynge styrred, he was able to baue [subdued bothe partyes, and to haue][1] put them in warde tyll he hadde knowen the kynges farther pleasure. Whereof the frendys of both partyes beinge ware, laboured such meanys that they agreed them for that tyme. In this yere also, as testifye the Englysshe Cronycle, and also the Frenshe, a nauye or flote of Frenshemen landyd at Sandwyche, & spoylyd & robbed the towne, and exercysed there great crueltie; of whiche flote was capytayne a Frenshe knyght, named after the Frenshe boke, syr Guyllyam de Pomyers. And this yere, after the opynyon of dyuerse wryters, began in a cytie of Almayne namyd Magounce, the crafte[2] of enpryntynge of bokys, which sen that tyme hath had wonderfull encreace, as experyence at this day prouyth. In this yere also the prysoners of Newgate, by neclygence of theyr kepers, brake out of theyr wardys, and toke the ledys of the Towre, & it defendyd a longe whyle agayn the sheryffys & all theyr offycers, in so moche, that they were forcyd to call more ayde of the cytezyns of the cytie; by whose ayde they lastly subdued them, and put the sayd prysoners in more strayter kepynge. Cronica Cronicarum sayth, that about this tyme was such an erthequaue in the prouynce of Naplys, that by force therof there were perysshed ouer. xl.M. cristen soulys. Of the aboue-sayd spoylynge of Sandwyche spekyth Polycronycon, and sayeth, that syr Piers de Bresy, seneshall of Normandy, with the capytayne of Depe, and many other capytaynys of Fraunce, came with a great and stronge nauy into the Downys by nyght, and vpon the morrowe came certeyne of them vnto Sandewyche, & there spolyd and robbyd the towne, and toke with them great prayes and many ryche prysoners, whereby or by which sayinge apperyth some dyuersyte atwene the Englysshe wryters and the Frenshe.

Ars impressure.

An erthquawe.

Sandwych spoylyd.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lvii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lviii.

Wyllyam Edwarde.

Godfrey Boleyn, mercer. Anno. xxxvi.

Thomas Reyner.

Episcopus Pecoke.

THis yere, and the thyrde day of December, Reynolde Pecoke, than beynge bisshop of Chichester, at Lambith, by the archebysshop, and by a cot' of dyuyns, was abiouryd for an herityke, and his bokys after brent at Paulys crosse, and hymselfe kept in mewe euer whyle he lyued after. And soone after, so to appease this rancour and malyce atwene the quene and the other lordys, a day of metynge was appoyntyd by the kynge at London, whyther the duke of Yorke with the other lordes were commaundyd to come by a certeyne day. In obeyinge of which commaundement the duke of Yorke came vnto London the. xxvi. daye of Ianuary, and was lodged at Baynardys Castell, & before hym the. xv. daye of Ianuary, came the erle of Salesbury to London, and was lodgyd at his place callyd the Erber: and soone after came vnto London the dukys of Somerset and of Exeter, and were lodgyd bothe without Temple Barre; and in lykwyse the erle of Northumberlande, the lord Egremonde, and the yonge lorde Clyfforde, came vnto

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] science. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] court.

the

the cytie, and were lodgyd in the subarbys of the same. And the. xiiii. day of February came the erle of Warwyke from Calays, with a great bande of men, all arayed in rede iakettys with whyte raggyd staues vpon them, and was lodgyd at the Gray Freris: and lastly, that is to say, the. xvii. day of Marche, the kynge and the quene, with a great retynewe came vnto London, and were lodgyd in the bysshop of Londons palays. And ye shall vnderstande, that with theyse foresayde lordes came great companyes of men, in somoche that some had. vi.C. some. v. and the leest. iiii.C. Wherfore the mayer, for so longe as the kynge and the lordys lay thus in the cytie, had dayly in harnesse. v.M. cytezyns, and rode dayly about the cytie and subburbys of the same, to see that the kynges peace were kepte, & nyghtlye he prouyded for. iii^M. M. men in harnesse, to geue attendaunce vpon. iii. aldermen: and they to kepe the nyght watche tyll. vii. of the clocke vpon the morowe, tyll the day watche were assemblyd. By reason whereof, good ordre and rule was kepte, and no man so hardy ones to attempte the breakynge of the kynges peace. Durynge this watche, a great counceyll was holden by the kynge and his lordys; by reason wherof, a dyssymulyd vnyte and concorde atwene them was concluded. In token and for ioy wherof, the kynge, the quene, and all the sayd lordys, vpon our Lady day annunciacion in Lent, at Paulys went solempnly in processyon, & soone after euery lorde departyd where his pleasure was. And in the moneth of [2] folowyng, was a great fray in Flete strete, atwene the inhabytauntys' of the sayde strete; in which fray a gentylman, beynge the quenys attourney, was slayen. Vpon the Thursday in Whitson weke, the duke of Somerset, with Antony Ryuers, & other. iiii. kepte iustis of peace before the quene win ȳ Towre of London, agayne thre esquyers of the quenys, & in lyke maner at Grenewych the Sonday folowynge. And vpō Trynyte Sōday or the Monday folowynge, certeyne shyppys, apperteynynge vnto the erle of Warwyke, mette with a flote of Spanyardys, & after longe & cruell fyght, toke. vi. of them laden with iron and other marchaūdyse, and drowned and chasyd to the noumber of. xxvi. not without shedynge of blode on both partyes; for of ȳ Englyssheme were slayen an hundreth, and many moo woundyd and sore hurte.

A watche.

Concordia dissimulata.

A fraye.

Fol.CC.viii.

Nauale prelium.

In this yere, after some auctours, a marchaunt of Brystowe, named Sturmyn, whiche w his shyp had trauaylyd in dyuerse partyes of Leuaunt and other partyes of the Eest, for so moche as the fame ranne vpon hym that he hadde gotten grene pepyr and other spycys, to haue sette and sowen in Englonde, as the fame went, therefore the Ianuays wayted hym vpō the see, and spoylyd his shyp and other. But this is full lyke to be vntrewe that ȳ Ianuays shulde spoyle hym for any suche cause: for there is no nacion in Englonde that delyth so lytle with spicis. But were it for this cause or other, trouth it is, that by that nacion an offence was done, for the which all the marchaūtys Ianuays in London were arestyd and cōmyttyd to the Flete, tyll they had founden suffycyent suretye to answere to the premysses. And fynally, for the harmys which theyr nacion had done to the sayde Sturmyn and to this realme, vi.M. marke was sette to theyr payne to paye; but howe it was payed no mencion I fynde.

Sturmyn.

In this yere also, was made an ordynaūce, by auctoryte of the kynge and his coūceyll, for the ordeiynge of the seyntwary men within seynt Martens the Graūde; whereof the artycles are at length sette out in the boke of. K. within the chaumbre of Guylde hall, i the leefe. CC.lxxxxix. wherof ȳ execucion of obseruynge were necessary to be vsyd, but more pyte it is, fewe poyntys of it ben exercysed.

Seynt Martyn le Graunde.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lviii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lix.

Rafe Iosselyn.

Thomas Scotte, draper. Anno. xxxvii.

Rycharde Nedeham.

THis yere, aboute the feest of Candelmasse, the foresayd dissymulyd loueday hāgyng

[1] ii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] of March. MS. [3] the men of court and the inhabytauntys.

by a smalle threde, atwene [ỹ quene and]' the fore named lordis, expressyd in ỹ precedynge yere, the kynge and many lordes than beynge at Westmynster, a fray happenyd to falle atwene a seruaunt of the kynges and a seruaunt of the erlis of Warwyke, the whiche hurte the kynges seruaunt and after escaped. Wherefore the kynges other meynyall seruaũtis seynge they myght not be auengyd vpõ the partye that thus had hurt theyr
The erle frayed. felowe, as the sayde erle of Warwyke was cõmynge from the counceyll, and was goynge towarde his barge, the kynges seruaũtys came vnwarely vpõ hym so rabbysshely, that the cookys w̃ theyr spyttys, and other offycers with other wepyns came rũnynge as madde men, entendynge to haue slayen hym, so that he escaped with great daunger and toke his barge, and soo in all haste rowed to London, not without great maymys and hurtis receyuyd by many of his seruaũtis. For this ỹ olde rãcour and malyce, which neuyr was clerely curyd, anon began to breke out; in somoch that the quenys counceyll wolde haue had the sayde erle arestyd and commytted vnto the Towre. Wherefore he shortly after departyd towarde Warwyke, and by polycy purchased, soone after, a cõmyssyon of the kynge, and so yode or saylyd vnto Calays. Than encreacyd this olde malyce more and more, in somoche ỹ where the quene and hir coũceyll sawe that they myght not be auengyd vpon the erle, that so vnto Calays was departyd, then they malygned agayne his father, the erle of Salysbury, & imagenyd how he myght be brought out of lyfe. And in processe of tyme after, as he was rydynge towarde Salysbury, or, after some, frome his lodgynge towarde Lõdon, the lorde Audeley, with a stronge cõpany, was assygned to mete with hym, and as a prysoner to brynge hym vnto Lõdon. Wherof the sayd erle beynge warned, gatheryd vnto hym the moo men, & kepyng his iourney,
Blore Heth feelde. mette with the sayd lorde Awdeley at a place callyd Blore Heth, where both companyes ran together & had there a stronge bykerynge; whereof in the ende the erle was vyctour, and slewe there the lorde Awdeley and many of his retynew. At this skyrmysshe were the. ii. soñys of the sayd erle sore woũdyd, namyd syr Thomas and syr Iohñ; the which shortly after, as they were goynge homewarde, were by some of the quenys party taken, and as prysoners sent vnto Chestyr. Whã this was knowen vnto the duke of Yorke and to the other lordys of this party, they knewe and vnderstode, that if they prouydyd not shortlye for remedy for themselfe, they shulde all be destroyed. And for that, they by one assent gatheryd to them a strõge hoost of men, as of Marchemen and other, and in the moneth of Octobre, that was in the begyñynge of the. xxxviii. yere of ỹ reygne of kynge Henrye, and the later ende of thi mayers yere, they drewe them towarde the kynge, to the entent to remoue from hym suche persones as they thought were enemyes vnto the cõmon weale of Englonde. But the quene and hyr coũceyll herynge of the entent and strength of theyse lordys, causyd the kyng in all haste to sende forthe cõmyssyons to gather the people, so that in short whyle the kynge was strongely accompanyed, & so spedde hym vpõ his iourney toward the duke of Yorke and his companye. Whereof herynge the sayde duke, then beynge with his people nere vnto the towne of Ludlowe,
Ludlowe feelde. pyght there a sure and stronge feelde, that none of his foes myght vpon any parte entre. Where he so lyinge, came to hym from Calays, the erle of Warwyke with a stronge bãde of men, amonge the whiche was Andrewe Trollop, and many other of the beste souldyours of Calays. The duke thus kepynge his felde vpon that one party, and the kynge with his people vpon that other, vpon the nyght precedinge the day that both hoostes shuld haue met, the forenamed Andrewe Trollope, w̃ all the chefe sowdiours of Calaies, secretly departed from the dukes hoost and went vnto the kynges, where they were ioyously receyued. Whan this thynge to the duke & the other lordes was asserteyned, they were therewith sore dysmayed, and specyallye, for the sayde lordes hadde to the sayd Andrewe shewyd ỹ hoole of theyr entẽtys, which than they knewe well *shuld* be clerelye dyscoueryd vnto theyr enemyes: wherefore, after coũceyll for a remedye taken,

[a] *Omitted in edit. 1559.*

they

they concludyd to flee, and to leue the feelde standyng as they had ben present & styll abydyng. And so incontynētlye the sayde duke with his. ii. sones, & a fewe other parsonys, fled towarde Walys, & from thens passyd sauely into Irelande. And ỹ erlys of Salesbury, of Marche, and of Warwyke, & other, with a secrete company also departyd & toke the waye into Deuonshyre, where a squyer named Iohñ Dynham, which after was a lorde and hyghe tresourer of Englāde, and so lastlye in Henry the. vii. dayes &. xvi. yere of his reygne dyed, [whiche Iohñ Dynhā foresayd]' bought a shyp for a. C. &. x^x. markys, or a leuen score nobles; & in the same shyppe the sayd lordys went, & so saylyd into Gernesey. And whā they had a season there soiournyd & refressyd themselfe, they departid thens, as in the begynnyng of ỹ nexte mayers yere shall be clerely shewyd. Vpō the morowe, whā all this couyne was knowen to the kynge and the lordes vpon his party, there was sendynge and rūnyng with all spede towarde euery cooste to take theyse lordys, but none myght be founde. And forthwith the kynge rode vnto Ludlowe & dyspoylyd ỹ towne and castell, & sent the duchesse of Yorke, with hyr chyldren, vnto the duchesse of Buckyngham hir syster, where she restyd longe after. *Fol. CC.ix.*

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lix. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lx.

Iohñ Plummer.

Wyllyam Hulyn, fysshemonger. Anno. xxxviii.

Iohñ Stocker.

THis yere, ỹ is to mean, vpō the Fryday next ensuyng Alhalowen day, after ỹ sayde erlys of Salesbury, of Marche, and of Warwyke, had, as before is sayd, refresshid thē in ỹ ile of Gernesey, they, vpō the Fryday foresayde, landyd at Calays, & there were at a posterne by theyr frēdys ioyouslye receyuyd. Than anon vpon this, theyse foresayde lordes were proclaymed rebellys and traytours, & the yonge duke of Somerset was made capytayne of Calays. Wherefore, in all haste, he made purueyaūce and saylyd thyther to take possessyon of the towne; but he faylyd of his purpose: for the foresayde erlys there beynge, kepte so ỹ towne, ỹ there he myght haue no rule, notwstandynge that he shewyd the kynges letter patentys, with many other straygbt cōmaūdementys of the kynge. For whiche cause the sayd duke yode vnto Guynys, and there helde hym for a season: & anon as the sayde duke was landyd, some of ỹ shypmen which had brought hym thyther, for good wyll that they owed vnto the erle of Warwyke, conueyed theyr shyppis streyght into Calays hauen, and brought with them certeyne parsones namyd Genyn Fenbyll[2], Iohñ Felowe, Kaylis, and Purser, whiche were enemyes vnto the sayd erle of Warwyk, the whiche were presentyd vnto the lordys, & soone after, within ỹ sayd towne of Calays they were behedyd. This rumoure thus cōtynuynge, dayly came vnto theyse lordys great socoure out of Englāde. And vpō ỹ other party ỹ duke, as before is sayd, lying in ỹ castell of Guynys, gate vnto hym ayde and strengthe of souldiours, made out and skyrmysshed with them of Calays many & sundrye tymes. In whiche assautys many men were slayen & hurte vpon both partyes, but moost wekyd the dukys partye: for albe it that the lordys lost many men, yet they daylye came so thycke to them out of dyuerse partyes of Englande, that theyr losse was not espyed; so that they wātyd no men, but money to meynteyne theyr dayly charge with. For remedy whereof they shyfted with the staple of Calays for. xviii. M. *li.* whiche summes of money whā they had receyued, ỹ sayd lordys of one assent made ouer ỹ forenamyd maister Iohñ Dynham ẅ a stronge companye, and sent hym vnto Sandwyche, to wynne there the kynges nauye, then there lyinge, and other thynges for theyr nedis necessary; the which sped hym in such wyse, that he toke the lorde Ryuers in his bedde, & wanne the towne, and toke the lorde Scalys, sone vnto the sayde lorde Ryuers, with other ryche prayes, and after tooke of the kynges nauy what shyppys them lykyd, & after retournyd vnto Calays, not without consent & agremēt of Proclamacio. Execucion. A shyfte. The lorde Ryuers.

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] CC.x. MS. [3] Fenkyll. MS.

many of the maryners, which owyd theyr synguler fauours vnto the erle of Warwyke. In this iourney was ỹ sayd Iohñ Dynham sore hurt, ỹ he was maymed vpon the legge, & haltyd whyle he lyued after. Thā after this iourney thus acheuyd, the sayde lordys vytaylyd & mannyd the sayde shyppes, & sent w̄ them a' chefe capytayne the erle of Warwyke, into Irelande, to speke w̄ the duke of Yorke, and to haue his cōceyll for maters cōcernyng theyr charge, as reentre into this lande & other: where, when he had happelye sped his nedys, he retournyd towarde Calays, bryngynge with hym his mother the countesse of Salesbury, and also kepte his course tyll he came into ỹ West countrey, where at ỹ tyme was ỹ duke of Exetyr, as admyrall of the see, with a cōpetent noūber of shyppes well mannyd; in so moche ỹ the erle of Warwyke prouyded to haue geuen batayll vnto ỹ sayde duke, if he had made any countenaunce towarde hym. But ỹ duke harde suche murmure and speche amonge his owne company, which soūded vnto ỹ erle of Warwykes fauoure, ỹ he thought it was more vnto his profyte to suffre hym to passe then to fyghte with hym. But were it for this cause, or for other whiche ỹ cōmon fame runneth vpō, which were longe to wryte, certeyne and trouthe it is, that the sayde erle passyd without fyght, and came in sauete to Calays. In this passe tyme, a parlyamēt or great cōceyll was holden at Couentre, by auctoryte whereof, the duke of Yorke, and all the other foresayde lordes, with many other, were atteyntyd, & theyr lādys and goodys seasyd to the kynges vse. And for the more surer defence ỹ they shuld not efte lande in Kent, prouysyon was made to defende the hauens and portys vpon the sees syde; & at Sandwyche was ordeyned a newe strengthe, w̄ a newe capytayne namyd syr Symonde Moūforde: and ouer this prouysyon was ordeynyd, that no marchaūt passynge into the costys of Flaunders, shulde passe or goo by Calays, for fere that any shuld come to the ayde of the sayde lordys. But this prouysyon not withstandynge, comfort to them was sent daylye out of Englonde. Than theyse lordes herynge of all this prouysyon, made vpō the sees syde to withstande theyr landynge, sent out another company vnto Sandewyche, the whiche there skyrmysshed with the sayd syr Symonde Mountforde, and in the ende toke hym and brought hym vnto Ryse Banke, & there smote of his hede. The foresayde lordys thā cōsyderyng the strengthe which they had with them, and the manyfolde freendys and hartys whiche they hadde in sundry placys of Englonde, condyscendyd for to sayle into Englonde, and so to brynge about theyr entent and purpose, which was, as ỹ cōmon fame went, to put aparte from the kyng all such persones as were enemyes to the common weale of the lāde. And this to brynge about, after they had set the towne of Calays in an order & sure kepynge, they tooke shyppynge, and so saylyd into Englāde, and landyd at Douer, & from thens helde on theyr iourney thoroughe Kent, soo that they came to Lōdon the secōde daye of Iuly. And after they hadde there refresshyd theym and theyr people, they departyd thense, and spedde theym towarde the kynge, which at the same tyme of theyr landynge was at Couentry, and there gatheryd his people, and so came vnto Northāpton, where he pyght his felde. Whereof the sayde lordes beynge enfourmyd, sped them thytherwarde, so ỹ vpon the. ix. daye of Iulet bothe hostys there mette & fought there a cruell batayll; but after longe fyght, the vyctory fell vnto the erle of Salesbury, and the other lordys vpon his partye, and the kynges hoost was sparbled and chasyd, and many of his noble men slayne; amonge the which was ỹ duke of Buckyngham, the erle of Shroysbury, the vycount Beaumonde, ỹ lorde Egremonde, with many other knyghtis and esquyers, & the kyng taken in the felde. After which vyctory thus by theyse lordes opteynyd, they in goodly haste after retournyd vnto London, and broughte with them ỹ kynge, kepynge his estate, and lodgyd hym in the bysshop of Londons palays. And after spedye knowlege sent of all ỹ premysses vnto the duke of Yorke, yet beynge in Irelande, a parlyament, in the name of the kyng, was then callyd, and holden at Westmynster. Durynge which par-

A parlyament.

Fol. CC.x. Northāpton feelde.

' as.

lyament,

lyament, the duke of Yorke came vnto Westmynster, vpon the Fryday before seynt Edwardys day, or the. x. day of October, and lodgyd hym in the kynges palays. Whereof anon arose a noyse thorough ỹ cytie, ỹ kynge Henry shulde be deposyd, and the duke of Yorke shulde be kyng. Vpō this, this parlyament thus contynuing, the duke came one daye into the parlyament chaumber, and there boldelye, beynge the lordys present, sette hym downe in the kynges sete; and soo there sytrynge, made a pretence & clayme vnto ỹ crowne, affermynge it to be his rightfull enherytaūce, and had there certeyn bolde wordys in iustyfying of ỹ same. Wherewith all the lordys present were greatly dysmayed. For this great and many opynyons were moued among the lordys: how be it, aswell dyuerse of his frendys as other, were of the mynde that he shulde not be admytted for kynge durynge the lyfe of kynge Hēry. For appeasynge whereof, many great counceylys were kepte, aswell at the Blacke Frerys as at Westmynster. In all which tyme & season, the quene with such lordys as were of hyr affynyte, helde theym in the North countrey, & assemblyd to them great strenght in the kynges name, to ỹ ende to subdue, as she sayd, the kynges rebellys and enemyes. Thus contynuinge this vnkyndenesse atwene ỹ kyng and the duke, albe it that at that season bothe the kynge and he were both lodgyd within the palays of Westmynster, yet wolde he not, for prayer nor instaūce, ones vysyte the kynge, nor see hym, tyll the counceyll were cōcludyd vpō some fynall ende concernynge this great mater, the which so cōtynued the full terme of this mayers yere.

A parlyament.

The dukys pretēce.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lx.

Rycharde Flemynge

Rycharde Lee, grocer.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lxi.

Anno. xxxix.

Iohn Lambarde.

THis yere, whiche was in the begynnynge of the. xxxix. yere of kyng Henryes reygne, that is to meane, vpō the euyn of All Seyntys. or the last daye of October, it was condyscendid by the lordes spirituell & tēporall, & by ỹ hole auctoryte of ỹ sayd parliamēt, ỹ kyng Hēry shuld contynue & reygne as kynge durynge his naturall lyfe, and after his deth, his sone prynce Edwarde to be sette aparte, & the duke of Yorke and his heyres to be kynges, and incontynentlye the duke to be admytted as protectour & regent of the lande. And if at any tyme after, the kyng, of his owne free wyll and mynde, were dysposyd to resygne and gyue vp the rule of ỹ lande, that than he shuld resygne vnto the duke if he than lyued, and to none other, and to his heyers after his dayes, with many other maters and conuencions whiche were tedyous to wryte. All whiche conclusyons, as then by mannys wytte myght be assuryd, for the parfourmaūce of them, whē tyme requyred parfyghted, the kynge, with the duke, & many other lordis thā there present, came that nyght to Pawlys, and there harde euynsong, and vpon the morowe came thyther agayn to masse, where ỹ kynge yode in processyon crowned with great royalte, and so lay styll in the bysshoppys palays a season after. And vpon ỹ Saterdaye folowynge, beynge the. ix. daye of Nouember, the duke was proclaymed, through the cytie, heyre parauntt vnto the crowne of Englonde, & all his progeny after hym. Then for asmoche as quene Margarete, accompanyed with prynce Edwarde hyr sone, the dukes of Somerset and of Exetyr, and dyuerse other lordys, helde hyr in the North, as aboue is sayd, & wolde not come at the kynges sendynge for. Therefore it was agreed by the lordys thā at London present, that the duke of Yorke shulde take ẅ hym the erle of Salesbury, with a certeyn people, to fetche in the sayde quene and lordys abouesayde; the whiche duke & erle departyd from Lōdon ẅ theyr people vpon the seconde daye of Decēber, & so sped them northwarde. Wherof the quene with hyr lordys beynge ware, & hauynge with them a great strength of northerne', mette ẅ the duke of Yorke vpon

Accorde vnstedfast.

Proclamacion.

' northerne men.

the.

Wakefelde skyrmysshe.

the. xxx. daye of December nere a towne in the northe callyd Wakefelde, were atwene them was foughten a sharpe fyght, in ỹ whiche the duke of Yorke was slayen, & his sone callyd erle of Rutlande, & syr Thomas Neuyll, sone vnto the erle of Salesbury, with many other, & ỹ erle of Salesbury was there taken on lyue with dyuerse other. Whan the lordys vpon the quenys partye hadde gotten this vyctory, anon they sent theyr prysoners vnto Pountfreyt, the whiche were after there behedyd, that is to meane, the erle of Salesbury, a man of Lōdon, namyd Iohn Harowe, and an other capytayne namyd Hanson, whose heddys were sent vnto Yorke, and there set vpō the gatys. And whan the quene hadde opteynyd this vyctory, she wyth hir retynewe drewe towarde London, where at that tyme, durynge this trowbelous season, great watchys were kepte daylye & nyghtlye, and dyuerse opynyons were amonge the cytezyns; for the mayer & many of the chefe comoners helde vpon the quenys partye, but ỹ comynaltye was with the duke of Yorke & his affynyte. Whan tydynges were brought vnto the cytie of ỹ cōmynge of the quene with so great an hoost of Northernmen, anon such as were of the cōtrary partye, brought vp a noyse thoroughe the cytie, that she brought those Northernmen to the entent to ryffle and spoyle the cytie, where thoroughe she was encreacyd of enemyes. But what so hyr entent was, she with hyr people helde on hyr way tyll she came to Seynt Albons. In the which meane tyme, the erle of Warwyke and the duke of Norfolke, whiche by the duke of Yorke were assygned to geue attendaunce vpon the kynge, by consent of the kynge, gatheryd vnto theym strengthe of knyghtys, and mette with the quenys hoost at Seynt Albons foresayd, where atwene them a stronge fyghte was foughten vpon Shroue Tuysdaye in the mornynge, at ỹ which the duke of Norfolke, & the sayde erle in the ende were chasyd, and kynge Henry taken efte vpon the felde and broughte vnto the quene. And the same afternoone, after some wryters, he made his sone prynce Edwarde knyght, whiche than was of the age of. viii. yeres, with other to the noumbre of. xxx. parsones. Whan quene Margaret was thus cōmen agayne to hyr aboue, anon she sent vnto the mayer of London, wyllynge & cōmaundynge hym in ỹ kynges name, that he shulde, in all spedy wyse, sende to Seynt Albonys certeyne cartys with lētyn stuffe for ỹ vytaylynge of hyr hoost. Which cōmaundement the mayer obeyed, and with great dylygence made prouysyon for ỹ sayd vytayll, and sent it in cartys towarde Crepylgate, for to haue passyd to the quene; where, whan it was cūmyn, the cōmons many there beinge, whiche had harde other tydynges of the erle of Marche, as after shall be shewyd, of one mynde withstode the passage of the sayde cartys, & sayd it was not behouefull to fede theyr enemyes, which entendyd the robbyng of the cytie. And notwithstandyng that the mayer with his bretherne exortyd the people in theyr best maner, shewynge to them many great daungers whiche was lyke to ensue to ỹ cytie if the sayd vytayll went not forth, yet myght he not tourne them from theyr obstynat errour, but for a cōclusyon was fayne to apoynt the recoder, and with hym a certeyne of aldermen, to ryde vnto the kynges coūceyll to Barnet, and to make requeste vnto them that the northern men myght be retournyd home for fere of robbyng of the cytie; & ouer this, other secrete frendys were made vnto the quenys grace, to be good and gracyouse vnto the cytie. Duryng which treaty, dyuerse cytezyns auoydyd the cytie and lande, amonge the whiche, Phylyp Malpas, whiche, as before is shewyd in the. xx. and. viii. yere of this kynge, was robbyd of Iacke Cade, whiche Malpas and other was mette vpon the see with a Frensheman namyd Columpne, & of hym taken prysoner, and after payed. iiii. thousande marke for his raunsome. Thus passyng the tyme, the tydynges whiche before were secrete, nowe were blowen abrode, and openly was tolde that the erlys of Marche and of Warwyke were mette at Cottyswolde, and had gatheryd vnto them great strength of Marchemen, and were well spedde vpon theyr waye towarde London. For knowlege whereof, the kynge and the quene with theyr hoste, were retournyd northwarde. But or they departyd from Seynt Albonys, there was behedyd the lorde Bonuyle, & syr

Fol. CC.xi.

Comons sole hardynesse.

Phylyp Malpas raunsome was. iiii.M. marke.

Execucion.

Thomas Teryell[1], knyght, whiche were taken in the forenamed felde. Then the duchesse of Yorke beynge at Lōdon, heryng the losse of this felde, sent hyr. ii. yonger sonnys, ỹ is to meane George, whiche after was duke of Clarance, & Rycharde, that after was duke of Gloucetyr, into Vtrych ī Almayn, where they remaynyd a whyle. Than the foresayde erlys of Marche & of Warwyke sped theym towarde London, in such wyse ỹ they came thyder vpon thē Thursdaye in the fyrst weke of Lent, to whom resortyd all the gentylmen for ỹ more party of the South and Est partye of Englonde. And in this whyle that they thus restyd at Lōdon, a great cōuceyll was callyd of all lordys spyrytuell and temporell that then were there about; by the whiche fynally, after many argumentis made, for so moche as kynge Henry, cōtrary his honour and promesse at ỹ last parlyament made and assured, and also for that that he was reputyd vnable and insuffycyent to rule ỹ realme, was then by theyr assentys deposyd and dyschargyd of all kyngelye honour and regally. And incontynentlye by auctoryte of the sayde counceyll, and agrement of the comons there present, Edwarde the eldyst sone vnto the duke of Yorke, than was there electyd, & thē chosen for kyng of Englōde. After which eleccion and admyssyon, the sayde erle of Marche, geuynge lawde and preyse vnto God, vpon the. iiii. day of Marche, accompanyed with all the foresayd lordys & great multytude of comons, was conueyed vnto Westmynster, and there toke possessyon of the realme of Englonde. And syttynge in his astate royall, in the great halle of the same, with his ceptre in hande, a question was axyd of the people then present, if they wolde admytte hym for theyr kyng & soueraygne lord; ỹ which w̄ one voyce cryed "ye, ye." And thē after the accustumyd vse to kynges to swere, & after ỹ othe takyn, he went into ỹ abbay, where he was of the abbot & munkys mette with processyon, and cōueyed vnto seynt Edwardys shryne, and there offeryd as kyng; & that done, receuyd homage and feaute of all such lordes as there than were present. And vpon the morowe folowynge were proclamacions made in accustumat placys of the cytie, in the name of Edwarde the. iiii. then kynge of Englōde. Vpō which daye the kynge came vnto the palays at Paulys, and there dyned, and there restyd hym a season, in makynge prouysyon to goo northwarde for to subdue his enemyes. Then vpō the Saterday folowynge, beynge the day of Marche, the erle of Warwyke with a great puyssaūce of people, departyd out of London northwarde; and vpon Wednysdaye folowynge ỹ kynges fotemen went towarde the same iourney; & vpō Fryday next folowynge, the kynge toke his voyage throughe the cytie with a great bande of men, and so rode forth at Bysshoppysgate. In whiche selfe same daye, which was the. xii. day of Marche, a grocer of Lōdon, namyd Walter Walker, for offence by hym done agayne the kynge, was behedyd in Smythfelde; but his wyfe, which after was maryed to Iohn Norlande, grocer, and lastlye alderman, had suche frendys about the kynge, that hir goodys were not forfeyted to the kynges vse. The kynge than so holdynge his iourney, mette with his enemyes at a vyllage. ix. myles on this halfe Yorke callyd Towton or Shyreborne, and vpon Palme Sonday gaue vnto them batayll, ỹ whiche was so cruell, that in the felde and chace were slayen vpon. xxx. M. men ouer ỹ men of name, of the whiche hereafter some ensue. That is to say, the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Westmerlāde, ỹ lorde Clyfforde, the lorde Egromonde, syr Iohn syr Andrewe Trollop, and other to the noumber of. xi. or of moo[2]. And amonge other at the same felde was taken ỹ erle of Deuonshyre, and after the erle of Wyltshyre; which sayde erle of Deuonshyre was sent vnto Yorke, & there after behedyd. Henry than, which lately was kyng, with the quene & theyr sone syr Edwarde, the duke of Somerset, thē lorde Rose, and other beyng thā at Yorke, herynge of the ouerthrowe of theyr people, & great losse of theyr men, in all haste fled towarde Scotlande. And vpon the morowe folowynge, the kyng w̄ moch of his people entryd into Yorke, and there heide his Ester tyde. And vpō Ester euyn, tydynges were brought

[1] Kerye l. MS. Teryll. ed. t. 1533. [2] or moo. edit. 1542. 1559.

vnto

vnto Lōdon of the wynnynge of this felde; wherefore at Paulys Te Deum was songen w̄ great solēpnyte, & so through the cytie in all parysshe churchis. And thus this goostly man kynge Hēry lost all, whan he had reygned full. xxxviii. yeres. vi. monethes and odde dayes, and that noble and moost bounteuous pryncesse quene Margarete, of whom many and vntrewe surmyse was imagened and tolde, was fayne to flye comfortlesse, and lost all that she had in Englonde foreuer. Whan that kynge Edwarde with great solempnyte had holden the feest of Ester at Yorke, he then remoued to Durham; and after his busynesse there fynysshed, he retournyd agayn southwarde, & lefte in those partyes ŷ erle
Fol. CC.xii. of Warwyk, to see the rule and guydynge of that cōtrey. Than the kynge coostyd and vysyted the cōtreys southwarde and estwarde, that about the begynnyng of ŷ moneth of Iuny he came vnto his manour of Shene now callyd Rychemōut. All' which pastyme purueyaūce was made for the kynges coronacyon; in accōplysshynge wherof, the kynge vpon the. xxvii. daye of Iune, beynge Fryday, departyd from his sayd manour and rode vnto the Towre of Lōdon, vpon whom gaue attendaūce the mayer and his bretherne, all cladde in scarlet, and to the noūbre of. CCCC. cōmoners well horsyd and cladde all in grene. And vpon ŷ morne, beyng Saterday, he made there. xxviii. knyghtys of the Bath, and after that. iiii. moo; and the same afternoone, he[2] with all honour cōueyed to Westmynster, the sayde. xxxii. knyghtys rydynge before hym in blewe gownes, & hoodys vpon theyr shulders, lyke to prestys, w̄ many other goodlye and honorable ceremonyes, the whiche were longe to reherse in due order. And vpon the morne, beynge Sunday & seynt Peters daye, he was with great tryumphe, of the archebysshop of Caūtorbury, crowned and enoyntyd before ŷ hygh aulter of seynt Peters churche of Westmynster. And after this solempnyzacion of the crownynge of the kynge, with also the sumptuous & honorable feest holden in Westmynster all' was fynysshed, the kynge soone after creatyd George his brother duke of Clarence. And in the moneth of Iuly folowynge, at ŷ stādarde in Chepe, the hande of a seruaunt of the kynges, callyd Iohn̄ Dauy, was stryken of, for that he hadde stryken a man within the palays of Westmynster.

Caroli. viii.

CArolus or Charlis the. viii. of ŷ name, after the accōpte of this booke, or ŷ. vii. after the Frenshe hystory, sone of Charlys ŷ. vii. or. vi. began his reygne ouer the Frenshemen in the moneth of October, ī ŷ. yere of our Lorde. M.CCCC. and. xxii. and in the begynnynge of Henry the. vi. thē kyng of Englonde. Of this Charlys sundrye wryters sunderly wryte, in so moche as some afferme hym to be ŷ naturall sone of Charlys the. vii. some afferme hym to be the sone of the duke of Orleaūce, & borne of the quene, & some there ben ŷ name hym the sone of Charlys fore named, gotten in baast vpō his moost beauteuous paramoure named Agnes, the whiche, as testyfyeth Gagwynus, excellyd all other women in feture and beaute, and for the same to be surnamed ŷ fayer Agnes. This in hyr myddell age dyed. & was so ryche, that hir testament amountyd to. lx. M. scutis of golde, the which in sterlyng money amountyth to the sūme of. x. M.*li.* Thā to retourne to this Charlys, lykely it is ŷ he was not the naturall sone of the forenamed Charlys, for asmoche as his sayd father ordeynyd and wyliyd the realme of Fraūce vnto Katheryn his doughter, & wyfe vnto kyng Henry the. v. & agreed, with the concent of the more parte of the lordys of his realme, both spyrytuell & temporall, that durynge his lyfe the sayde kynge Henry shuld be regent of Fraunce, and after his deth to be kyng of the sayd region, as more at lengthe before I haue shewyd vnto you in ŷ. vii. yere of the sayd Hēry the. v. But whether[4] he his legyttymat sone or not, wherupon I purpose no lenger to stande, trouthe it is, that he was by his father ad-

[1] In all. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] he was. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] Westmynster hall. edit. 1542. 1559.
[4] were. MS. he be his. edit. 1542. 1559.

mytted and made Dolphyne of Vyen; by reason whereof he was in great auctoryte, and wan to hym fauoure of some lordys of Fraūce, which strongly maynteynyd his partye duryng the lyfe of kyng Henry the. v. and after all that season which[1] the duke of Bedforde occupyed there as regēt of that regyon, and was of some partyes of Fraunce reputyd for kynge: how be it he was neuyr crowned, so longe as ỹ sayd duke of Bedforde lyued. Neuertheiesse, he by meane of polycy & his frendys so defendyd hymselfe, that lytle by the Englysshmen was wonne vpō hym of suche landys as he fyrste was in possessyon of, but polytykely he defendyd them, & lytle & lytle so preuaylyd agayne them, that in ỹ ende he all onlye wanne not to hym the possessyon of ỹ prouynce, the which is named Fraūce, but also he wan to hym, in ỹ ende, the kynge of Englandys olde enherytaunce, that is Normandy, with all domynyons of the same apperteynynge. The maner of wynnyng of them I woll not in this story speke of, for so moche as in the former yeres of kynge Hēry the. vi. I haue there expressyd the maner of some parte therof; but ỹ I shall speke of them[2] shall be of thynges done atwene hym and other prynces. And for that I before in the. viii. yere of Henry the. vi. promysed in the. vi. yere of this Charlys, to shewe vnto you somewhat of ỹ mayden or pucell, which ỹ Frēshmen named La pucele de Dieu, and hir for a messynger frome God to be sent reputyd, I shall here folowe the sayinge of Gagwyne, whiche sayēth as foloweth. In the. vi. yere or there about, to rekyn from the deth of this Charlys father, a wenche or mayden, beynge bred in a strete or vyllage callyd in Latyne Valli Color, and in this tyme beyng spronge to the age of. xx. yeres or there about, hauynge to father a poore man named Iakes Delarch, & hyr mother Isabell, she also berynge the name of lane or Iohan, requyred by dyuerse & sundry tymes an vncle of hirs, beynge prefecte of the foresayde vyllage, that he wolde present hyr vnto ỹ Frensh kyng, for thynges concernynge greatlye the weale of hym and of his realme. Which sayd prefecte after many delayes, for so moch as in hir wordis he had lytle trust, yet at lengthe hir sayd vncle, beynge named Robert Baudryncourt, sent hyr w̄ a conuenyent company vnto the kynge, with letters certyfyinge hym of all the maner of this mayde. Whereof the sayde Charlis beyng asserteynyd, thougth he wolde vse some meane to knowe the vertue of this wenche; & for he had perfyght experyence ỹ before tymes this woman had neuer seen his persone, he thought he wolde chaunge his rome & habyte, to see whether she by hyr vertue coulde knowe hym from other. And that done, he standynge amonge other of hir[3] famylyers as one of them, she was callyd into the chaumber, and demaundyd if euer before tyme she had seen the kyng, and after she hadde answeryd nay, she was bydden to espye out the kynge, whiche there stode amonge that companye; the whiche anon without dyffyculte hym fande, and salutyd as kynge. And albe it that he refusyd hyr reuerence, & sayde that she erryd in hyr choyse, yet she parseueryd knelynge at his feete, and sayde, that by Goddys purueyaunce she was taught that he was hir very soueraygne prynce & none other. Wherfore ỹ kynge and all his lordes had in hyr ỹ more affyaunce, that by hyr the lande shulde be releuyd, which at that daye was in passynge mysery. Thē after dyuerse questyons to hyr made, what was the cause of hyr thyther cōmynge, she answerid and sayd, that she was sent from God to stablysshe the kynge in his realme; & that by hyr, she beynge leder and capytayne of his people, by dyuyne grace onely, the kynge shulde shortly subdue his enemyes. By reason of whiche wordes, ỹ kyng with his lordes were somedeale comfortyd. Vpō this, armour and sworde was sought for this mayden, the whiche, as sayeth my sayd auctour, was foūdē myraculously; wherof the processe to me appereth so darke and fantastycall, ỹ therewyth me lyst not to blot my booke, but suffre it to passe by. Then this wenche beinge purueyed of all thynges necessary to the warre, a company of knyghtes & soudyours to hyr by the kynge was assygned; and so she rydyng as a man, and in mannys habyte, contynued by ỹ space of. ii. yeres and more,

Fol. CC.xiii.

[1] while. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] here. MS. [3] his.

and dyd many wonderfull featys, and gat from the Englysshemen many stroge townes and holdys; wherefore amonge Frensshemen she was worshypped for an aūgell or a messynger sent from God, to releue theyr great myserye. And as affermyth the sayd auctour, she by hyr prouydence causyd the sayde Charlys, as kynge of Fraunce, to be crownyd at Raynys, in the yere of our Lorde. M.CCCC. and xxix. Albe it nouther the Frensh Cronycle, nor other whiche I haue them' testyfyeth that, but affermyn that he was not crowned durynge the lyfe of the duke of Bedforde. But Almyghty God, which for a season sufferyth suche sorcery and deuelysshe wayes to prospere & reygne, to the coreccion of synners, hastely[2] to shewe his power, & that good men shuld not fall into any errour, he shewyth the clerenesse of suche mystycall thynges, & so he dyd I this: for lastly she by a knyght Burgonyon was taken, and after sent to Roan, & there brent for hir demerites, as in the. viii. yere of Henry ỹ. vi. is more at lengthe shewyd. Then ỹ tyme forth passynge, and cōtynuell warre atwene Englonde and Fraunce cōtynuynge, amonge many trybulaciōs by this Charlys susteynyd, one was, ỹ his owne sone namyd Lewys, comfortyd & assysted by the dukys of Burbon and Alensone, ẅ other men of name, rebellyd agayn his father, and warryd vpon hym, and by strengthe wan from hym certeyn townes & stronge holdys. For remedy wherof, the sayde Charlys made warre vpon the fore named duke of Burbon, & wasted with iron and fyre ỹ countreys of the sayd duke of Burbon. By meane whereof, after this vnkyndly warre had duryd by the space of. vi. monethes or more, a peace and vnyte atwene the father and sone was treatid, & by meanys of the erle of Ewe a concorde and vnyte atwene them was fynally concludyd, & he the sayd Lewys, and all such as with hym were reteynyd or allyed, were for this offence, by the sayd Charlys clerely pardoned, one persone all onlye exceptyd, namyd Iaket or Iakys, by whose treason the castell of Maxent was loste and taken; for whiche offence he was after drawen, hanged, & also quarterid. Thā in processe of tyme folowynge, the Flemynges of Gaunt rebellyd agayn theyr duke or erle namyd Phylyp, cause of which rebellyon was, for that he areryd a greuouse taske vpon salte, and put the people therby to greuouse charge. Wherupon dedely warre atwene ỹ duke & his subiectys arose, to the dystruccion of moche people vpon bothe partyes, wherof the cyrcumstaūce were longe to wryte: how be it, in the ende the duke or erle, by ayde of the Frenshe kyng, was vyctour, and helde theym of Gaunt so streyghte, ỹ they were cōpellyd by force to by theyr peace ẅ great sūmes of money, & to theyr other manyfolde domages. About the. xxxi. yere of this sayde Charlis, came vnto hym from pope[3] Nycholas the. v. of ỹ name, an ambassade for to requyre ayde agayn the Turkys, for the defence of Cōstantyne the noble, which ỹ Turkys purposyd shortely after to assayle. To which ambassade by ỹ sayd Charlys it was answeryd, that to hym it was right greuouse to here of ỹ intollerable perfeccyon[4] which ỹ cristen dayly susteynyd of the Turkys; but he was of ỹ Englysshe nacion so vexyd & warryd, ỹ he myght not leue his lande wout an hedde, to ỹ cōforte of other, & to lose his owne. But to ỹ entēt ỹ he before[5] tymes myght haue warryd vpō ỹ sayd Turkys, he for ỹ cause onely had offeryd vnto ỹ kynge of Englande many reasonable offers; & if of the Englysshe party any lyke offers myght be to hym proferyd, he wolde gladly them accepte, & turne his spere incōtynently agayn ỹ forenamed Turkis. And ouer ỹ he wold, for ỹ furtheraūce of ỹ mater, sende with thē vnto ỹ kyng of Englād certeyn ambassadours, to see if ỹ as yet any reasonable peace myght be atwene thē cōcludid. For accōplysshemēt wherof, as testyfyeth myne auctoure Gaguynus, he sent the archbysshop of Raynes, ẅ other honorable persones: the which, whē they to kyng Hēry & his coūceyll had shewyd theyr legacion, it was to them shortly answeryd, ỹ at such season as ỹ Englysshemen had wonne agayne so moche lāde as the Frenshemen by cawtelis hadde wone from them, thē were it good

La Pucele de Dieu

[1] seen. [2] lastly. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] the b. of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] persecucion. [5] he for the times. edit. 1542. 1559. *erroneously.*

tyme

tyme & season to treate of accorde, & not before. By reason of whyche answere, the popys[1] ambassade retournyd to Rome wout ayde or cōfort, & thus ỹ Frēshe wryters lay euer ỹ charge from theyr prynces, & put it vnto other; but of this ambassade or answere fynde I no memory of any Englyssh wryters. Aboute ỹ. xxxiiii. yere of ỹ reygne of this Charlis, Lewis his sone before named, beynge a man of great lyberalyte & largenesse[2], thoughte his father departyd not ẁ hym of his mouables & possessions as he had cause to do: for ỹ which, by comforte of yonge persones as he had about hym, rebellyd this secōde tyme agayn his sayd father, & by reason of his largesse & liberalyte, drewe vnto hym moche wāton & wylde people; &, ẁ theyr assystēce, warryd vpō his fathers frendys, and entēdyd to depryue his father of all gouernaunce of ỹ realme. Whereof heryng, his father in all possible haste gatherid to hym great strēgth, & spedde hym towarde his sayd sone. But whē Lewys was warned of ỹ cōmyng of his father ẁ so great an hoste, & cōciderȳd his quarell and wekenesse, he ẁ a fewe persones fled towarde Burgoyne. Wherof herynge, ỹ father sent in all hast people to kepe ỹ passages, & dyd ỹ he myght to haue stoppyd hym of his way; but ỹ prouysyon notwithstādynge, ỹ sayd Lewys escapyd, & came safely vnto ỹ presence of Phylyp thē duke of Burgoyne, the which hym receyuyd ẁ glad chere, & entreatid hym accordyng to his estate, and so kepte hym durynge his fathers lyfe. Howe be it, he made for hym great sute & labour, to wynne hym to his fathers grace, but all was in vayne; for what by obstynacy of ỹ same[3], ỹ he wold not submytte hym to his father, & cōme vnto his presence whē he was sent fore, & for ỹ great stomake of the father, ỹ he wolde not be cōdycioned with of ỹ sone, this varyaūce contynued atwene them as aboue is sayde terme[4] of his fathers lyfe. In the which passetyme this Charlys concludyd a maryage atwene his doughter callyd Magdaleyne, & Ladislaus kyng of Beme, Hungary, & of Polayne. But whyle the bryde, with great apparayll & pōpe, was cōueyed towarde his[5] maryte[6] to be maryed, hyr sayde husbāde was taken sodenly with sykenesse, & dyed within. xxiiii. houres after that he fyrste complaynyd hym, whiche was by force of poysone, as moste writers agree. Of whiche tydynges, whē Charlys was asserteynyd, he therwith toke such a pensyffenesse, ỹ he dyed shortly after, whan he had rulyd a parte[7], & ỹ hole realme, to rekyn from the deth of his father. xxxvi. yeres. How be it of Frenshe wryters no certeyne terme of his reygne to hym is assygned, for so moche as kyng Henry the. vi. longe after the deth of his father, was alowyd in Parys & many other cyties of Fraunce, for soueraygne & kynge of that regyon. This Charlys thus beinge dede, lefte after hym. ii. sonys, that is to say, Lewys ỹ after hym was kyng, and a yonger namyd Charlys, with the fore named doughter named Magdaleyne, or after some Margarete. And after with great pompe his corps was conueyed vnto Seynt Denys, & there buried. *Fol. CC.xliii.*

Ludouici. xi.

LEwys the. xi. of ỹ name after the accōpte of this boke, &. x. after the Frēshe accōpte, whereof the cause is before shewyd, sone to Charlys last dede, began his domynyon ouer ỹ realme of Fraūce in the moneth of October, in the yere of grace. M.CCCC. & lviii. & the. xxxvi. yere of Hēry the. vi. thā kynge of Englāde. This of Gaguinus is callyd the sturdy or fell Lewys; the whiche, at the tyme of his fathers dethe, beynge, as aboue is sayd, vnrecoūsyled in the prouynce of Burgoyne, & herynge of the deth of his father, with ayde of the foresayd duke Phylyp shortly entryd ỹ realme of Fraunce, & toke vpon hym ỹ rule in euery good cytie & towne as he passyd as kyng of the same, so ỹ many lordes and hede offycers drewe vnto hym; by meane wherof he was strōge, & put suche vnto sylence, as after ỹ wyll & purpose of his father wolde haue preferryd his yonger sone named Charlys. Than this Lewys, by strengthe of his freendys, was shortlye after at Raynys

[1] Bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [2] largess. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] sone. MS. [4] the terme.
[5] hir. MS. her husbande. edit. 1542. 1559. [6] husbande. edit. 1542. 1559. [7] parte of the. edit. 1542. 1559.

crowned kyng of Fraũce; after which solempnyte fynysshed, he repayryd vnto Parys, & there, by cõcent of his coũceyll, made a lawe ẏ no man of what degre ẏ he were, shuld vse hũtyng or hawkyng without specyall lycence, & specyally for chasynge or hũtyng of woluys, nor to kepe with hym any houndys or other instrumẽtys wherby the game myght be destroyed. And ẏ done, Phylyp foresayd duke of Burgoyne, after coũceyll to hym geuen, ẏ he shuld forgette & forgeue all dyspleasurys to hym to fore done by any of his lordys, & them to honour & cherysshe, & specially his yonge brother Charles to norysshe, & to departe ẇ hym louyngely of his fathers possessiõs, toke leue of hym & departyd. After whose departure, he cõtrary ẏ foresayd coũceyll, refusyd the cõpany of his lordys, & also theyr coũceyll, and drewe vnto hym as his chefe coũceylours vylaynes & men of lowe byrth, of the which, the. iiii. pryncipall were named as foloweth: Iohñ de Lude, Iohñ Balna, Olyuer Deuyll, whom, for the odiousnesse of the name, ẏ kynge causyd it to be chaungyd, & to be named Dãman; & the. iiii. was named Stephan, & vsshar of ẏ kynges chaũbre dore, ẏ which he promotid to great honour & dygnytees; amonge whom Balna beinge a preest, was by his meanis at lẽgth made a cardynall of Rome. Thus he vsynge the coũceyll of theyse personys, murmure & grudge began to sprynge atwene hym & his lordys, in so moche ẏ firste the duke of Brytayne began to estraũge hym from the kyng, & refusyd to come vnto his presence whan he was sent fore. Wherof herynge, ẏ erle of Ewe ẇ other drewe them vnto the sayd duke; to ẏ whiche partye soone after, the kynges brother Charlys, ẇ also ẏ duke of Burbon, which had maryed ẏ kynges syster, with many other noble men of the realme, resortyd. Whã the kynge was ware that his lordys cõspyred agayne hym, feryng ẏ rebellyon of his cõmons, sent in spedy maner vnto Parys the forenamed Iohñ Balna ẇ other certeyn persones, to kepe ẏ cytie in due obeysaunce towarde hym, thynkynge that ẏ other cyties & good townes of his region, wolde take exaumple therof, & demeane them as ẏ cytie dyd. After whose comynge, the rulers of Parys, by the amonystement of the sayde Iohñ, ordeynyd good & sure watch, & so by ẏ mean kepte ẏ cytie in good order. And in ẏ meane season, ẏ kynge gatheryd to hym great foyson of knyghtys & soudyours, ẏ his hoste was noũbred at. xxx.M. men. And in lykewyse the other partye had assẽblyd as many or moo. And notẇstãdyng ẏ assyduat laboure & meanys made by ẏ duke of Burgoyn, & Carlota, wyfe to ẏ duke of Burbon, & syster to the kynge, as iſ aboue sayde, to make an vnyte & peace atwene Lewys & his lordys, yet fynally the kyng & they mette in playn batayll at a place called Chartris, where atwene them was a longe & cruell batayll, to the losse of moche people on both partyes. And albeit ẏ the kyng in ẏ begynnyng had the better of his enemyes, yet in ẏ ende he was ouercomen, his men chacid, & he forcyd to flye, & to take for his sauegarde a castell named Mountclere, from the whiche he shortlye departyd, & yode to another castell callyd Corboyll, and from thens lastly vnto Parys, where he entendyd to haue gatheryd newe people, & to haue reuẽgyd hym of his enemyes. But by ẏ wyse & good exortacion of the bysshop of Parys, the kynge chaũgyd his purpose, & all was set in a quyetnesse for ẏ tyme; but howe, or in what maner, or what ẏ cõdycions of that accorde were, myne auctour doth not expresse. The which accorde thus concluded, ẏ kynge contynued his olde maners, and delytyd hym more to cõpany ẇ symple & inreuerent persones, & to ete & drynke ẇ theym, to ẏ ende ẏ he myghte talke of rybaudry & vayne & vysyous fables, thã to accõpany hym ẇ his lordis, where he myght haue wonne hym moche honour. This Lewis also was of so dyuerse & wanton condycion, ẏ he wolde goo more lyker a yoman or a seruynge man, than lyke a prynce: ẏ which was for no regardshyp nor sparynge of good, for as before I haue shewyd, & also after shall appere, he was a prynce of moost lyberalite, & therwith an oppressour of his subiectys.

LEwis thus passynge his tyme, was dryuen of necessyte for lacke of money to a preest[1]

[1] aske a prest.

of ỹ cytezyns of Parys, the whiche, after many excusys by theym layed to put it by, and myght not be alowed, they lastly denayed ỹ kynges pleasure. Wherwall he being greuously discõtentyd, remouyd dyuerse from theyr offycis; & other which were of the rycheste & hed men of ỹ citie, he sought agayn them surmysyd causis, & wout prouys or iustyce, put many of them to deth. For theyse foresayd causys, & many other which tedyous were to expresse, ỹ foresayd lordis agayn assẽbled theyr people, entendynge to subdue the kyng, & to set his brother ī his place, or to cause hym otherwyse to rule the cõmon weale. And to strength the baronys party, Iohñ sone vnto the duke of Calabre, approchyd to them with a good bande of men. And to them came also ỹ sone of ỹ duke of Burgoyne, namyd Charlys, all which baronys of one assent mette at a towne callyd Stampis, where they cõtynued theyr counceyll by the space of. xv. dayes; & after ỹ counceyll fynysshed, toke theyr iourney towarde Parys. In which passetyme a spye of the duke of Brytayn, callyd Peter Gerolde, was taken in Paris, & drawen, hanged, & quarteryd, & diuerse men & women ỹ were suspectyd to owe fauoure vnto ỹ lordes, were sackid & caste into ỹ water of Seyn. Thẽ for to strength & guyde the cytie of Parys, the kynge sent thyther ỹ erle of Donoyse, by whose prouysyon all warly ordenaunce for ỹ defence of theyr enemyes was there preparyd. In ỹ which tyme & season, ỹ lordys in. iii. partyes enbataylyd, approchyd ỹ cytie: whereof ỹ firste hooste ladde Charlys, brother vnto the kynge, the seconde ỹ duke of Brytayne, & the thyrde Charlys, the sone to the duke of Burgoyne; prouyded that Charlys firste namyd ladde ỹ mydale warde. Whā the sayd erle of Donoyze had well consyderyd ỹ strengthe of the lordys, he sent vnto them a messanger, saying, ỹ in his mynde he maruaylyd to see so great a multytude of people assemblyd agayne ỹ cytie & cõmon weale of the lande, cõsyderynge that he was sette there by ỹ kynge as a medyatour, and a meane rather to make peace than warre, if they were contentyd ỹ by hym any medyacion myght be laboured & had. But this came to none effecte, so ỹ small assautys & skyrmysshes ensued to ỹ lytle domage of bothe partyes. In whiche passetyme the kynge sent by secret meanys vnto the forenamed Iohñ, sone vnto the duke of Calabre, & hym by many meanys instaũsyd to leue the cõpany of the lordys; but all his offers auaylyd right nought. Then the foresayd lordys thus lying before the cytie of Parys, in the playne where stādith the monastery of seynt Antony, Charlys, brother to the kynge, causyd. iiii. letters to be deuysyd; whereof one he sent to the bysshoppys & spyrytuell men within ỹ cytie, ỹ secõde to ỹ cõsullys or hed men, the. iii. to ỹ scolers of the vnyuersyte, & the. iiii. vnto the comynaltye. Of which letters the entent ensuyth, that he nor none of his cõpany was comen thyther as an enemye to the cytie, or to make warre agayn it or the comõ weale of ỹ lande, but for the encrece & augmentacion thereof, to the vttermoost of theyr powers. After receyte of which letters, & the mater in them conteyned well vnderstãde & debatid, certeyne oratours for ỹ sayde. iiii. partyes were assygned, as. iii. for ỹ spyrytuell men. iii. for the cõsuls. iii. for ỹ vnyuersyte, &. iii. for ỹ comynaltie, whose names I ouer passe; the whiche, ẅ the bysshop of Parys, were sent vnto the baronys, & after longe comunycacion with them hadde, returned to the cytie with suche reporte as foloweth.

First, ỹ lordes wolde ỹ the inhabytauntis of the cytie shuld cõsyder ỹ cõdycions of the kyng, ỹ which yerely oppressyth his subiectys with taskys & other greuouse seruagys.

Secondaryly, howe he despysyth the noble blode of his realme, & drawith to hym vylaynes, & men of no reputacyon, by whose counceylys onelye all the comon weale of the lande is rulyd and guydid.

Thyrdely, howe he rulyth his subiectis by force & wyll, wout mynystraciõ of iustyce, & hymselfe ī all coũceylys & parlyamentis is iuge ī all causys, & callyth his selfe[1] coũcelys and parlyamentys, more for his synguler weale thā for ỹ cõmon weale of his realme.

Fourthely, how he enhaũsith men of lowe byrth vnto great honours, & causyth noble men to be obedient vnto them, entendyng to brynge the same ignoble men for to be egall

[1] said. MS.

ẅ the

w the pryncys of the lande. Fyftely, how the lawes be delayed & bolstred by suche as stande in his fauoure, where thorugh at this daye lawe is wyll, and wyll is lawe, and no man almoste in any suertye of lyfe or goodes, in somoche ỹ dayly many been banysshed & put to deth for vnlefull causes: and also to any noble man at this day any[1] power or rome of honour belongeth, soo that the[2] wylde beestes in the forestes apperteyneth more lybertie and suertie, than ỹ more partie of the kynges subgettes.

Sixtly, the great taskes & sūmes of money whiche dayly be leuyed of the cōmons, ben nat spent in the kynges honourable nedys, & for the cōmon weale of ỹ realme, but are spent nysely & ryottously, & brybyd out of ỹ kynges cofers. For whiche enormytees and mysgouernaunce with many other, the sayd lordes were thyder comyn in defensyble araye, for ỹ sauegarde of theyr owne persones, as to the hedde and pryncipal cytie of the realme for to haue ayde and coūsayle to refourme the foresayd euylles, natwithstandynge[3] any harme vnto the kynges persone, or yet to remoue hym from his regally or kyngly mageste, but to enduce hym & aduertice hym to ỹ, that shuld be his honour and the weale of his realme, and to lyue in welth & honoure as his noble progenytoures haue lyued before hym. For the whiche causes & consyderacions, with many other, whiche I passe ouer, the said lordes, as the kynges trewe subgettes and frendes vnto the cōmon weale of the lande, & of that cytie, desyred to entre there to refresshe them & their people, and to pay truely for al thinge that they shuld take, & without doynge harme or violence to any persone. All whiche requestes and matyers of the lordes shewyd vnto the inhabytauntes of the cytie, by fauour of some frendes ỹ they there had, it was with the more partie well acceptyd, & thought conuenyent ỹ the sayd nobles shuld be receyued into ỹ cytie. How be it, that after longe debatyng of this matier, by meane of the forenamed erle of Donoyze, a sparynge of this receyt of ỹ lordes shuld be, tyl they had ferther knowlege of the kynges pleasure; whiche prouycion the sayd erle fande, for somoche as he was secretely warnyd of the kynges thyder cōmynge.

And vpon this agrement the cytie restyd. For suertie wherof suche as were within the cytie of the kynges seruauntes and frendes, rode dayly & nyghtly aboute the cytie with a stronge company in harneys, to se ỹ people kept in due ordre.

Than vpon the daye folowynge came vnto Parys a capitayne of the kynges, named Mountalbone, & with hym a good bende of men, the whiche shewyd vnto the cytezeyns that the kynge was cōmynge out of Normandy with a great hoost of[4] The lordes beynge warnyd, enbatayled theym in the foresayd playne of Seynt Antoyne, to shewe the strength of theyr hoost vnto the cytie, or suche as were therin as theyr enemyes; where they so lyinge, certayne knyghtes of the kynges partye, dyuerse and sondry tymes brake out by sodeyne resys, and skyrmysshed with the lordes people, to the lytell hurte of both partyes. In the whiche passe tyme kynge Lowys comynge out of Normandye, was receyued into the cytie, where, after his cōmynge, he put in execucion. v. persones named Iohn Worter, Eustace and Arnolde Worter, Iohn Coart, and Fraunceys Hasle; the which persones were accusyd to hym to be chief occacioners of ỹ legacion made vnto the lordes. Of whiche sayd. v. persones, thre, as Iohn Coart, Fraunceys Hasle, & Arnolde Worter, were messangers assygned in the said legacion for the consuls of Parys, and the forenamed Eustace Worter was one of ỹ thre assygned for the clergye.

The kynge thus beynge in possession of the cytie, many and dyuers assawtes and skyrmysshes atwene his knyghtes & the lordes were made, but no notary batayll, for the kyng was ferre weker. And ouer that in this tyme & season, the sayd lordes gat vnto them sondry
Fol. CC.xvi. castellys and stronge holdes. Than at length meanes of a peas was offeryd by the kynge; for cōcludynge wherof, for the kyng was admytted, ỹ erle of Mans, with certayne other persones; and for the baronys was assygned Iohn sone vnto the duke of Calabre, Lowys erle of Seynt Paule, & other; the whiche assembled and comonyd togyder by

[1] no. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] o edit 1542, 1559. [3] not entendyng. MS. [4] of people. MS.

sondry tymes. ix. dayes; in which season came vnto the kynge a newe strength of sowdyours out of Normandye, the whiche the kyng appoynted to kepe the subarbys of Seynt Marcell.

This treatye thus hangynge without conclusion or ende takynge, vpon the. xiiii. daye of Octobre, in the. vii. yere of the reygne of this Lowys, was proclaymed thorughe the cytie and also the hoost, a daye of lenger trewe, so that thanne the lordes withdrewe them vnto theyr stronge holdes & castellys, holdynge w̄ them many sowdyours, whiche fyll to robbyng & other vnlefull actes, to the great daunger and hurte of the lande. And at suche seasons as the arbitrours mette to fynysshe this great matyer, amonge other thynges offeryd by the kynge, he graunted to gyue vnto his brother Charlys for his porcion, all Champayne, with the lordshyppe of Brye, the cyties of Melde, of Monstruell, and Meldune therof to be exceptyd. And vnto Charlys, sone of the duke of Burgoyne, he was contentyd to gyue somoche money as he had spent in that iournay, but all was refusyd. And fynally, for obstynacy of both parties, the daye of expyracion of the trewe approchyd, wout hope of accorde concludynge, wherfore prouycion for warre vpon both parties was deuysed. Than̄ began grudge & murmur atwene the cytezeyns & the kynges sowdyours, wher thorugh many of ŷ cōmōs hertes[1] towarde to the lordes; so that for fere. ŷ surer & strōger watches were kept to the kynges great charge. Shortly after tydynges were brought vnto the kynge, that the castell of Gysons[2] was of ŷ lordes besiegyd; and that also the prefect of the kynges paleys in Roan, was taken of the cytezeins & holden in pryson. And ŷ day folowyng came another messanger, shewynge to the kynge, ŷ the duke of Burbone was by the posterne receyued into the castel of Roan, & was lykely to haue shortly the rule of the cytie, which came to effect in short whyle after. Whan the lordes had goten ŷ castell & cytie of Roan, whiche is hed cytie of Normandy, as Parys is hed of Fraunce, than in maner of derysion they sent vnto the kynge, sayinge, ŷ nother with Champayne, nor with Bry his brother Charlys wolde be contented, but scantly with the hole duchy of Normandy. Than kyng Lowys, cōsydering the great auaūtage whiche the lordes had of hym both by strength & fauoure of his cōmons, whiche dayly drewe vnto them by sondry companyes, in auoydynge of more daūger, concludyd a peas. For perfourmaunce wherof, he graunted vnto Charlys his broder the hole duchye of Normandy, takynge to hym in exchaunge the county of Berry. And to Charlis, sone to the duke of Burgoyn, Peroñ, Roya, and a cytie or towne called in Latyne Mondiderium, & therw̄ he ioyned Gwynary & the erledome of Boloyne, which lordshyppes the sayd kyng Lowys had before tymes bought of duke Philip his fader. To Iohñ of Calabre he graūted all such sūmes of money as he demaūdyd, to wage w̄ sowdyours, to ayde his fader agayne Fardynande, theñe kynge of Aragon. And to Iohñ duke of Burbon, the whiche, as before is sayd, had maryed his suster, he graūted al suche dowar as to hym was promysed at ŷ tyme of her maryage, & all such pencion as he was wont yerely to take of ŷ graūte of Charlys, last kyng w̄in the realme of Fraunce. To ŷ duke of Brytayne was restoryd the erledome of Mountferarde, with great sūmes of money whiche the kynge had receyued of the sayde countie. And to the erle of Dampmartyne was restoryd all such landes as before by act of parliamēt were forfaytyd to ŷ kynge. To ŷ erle of Seyn Paule was restorid ŷ offyce of the cōstablery of Fraunce, & to other men of name other notable thynges whiche I passe ouer. All which grauntys fermely & fastly assuryd, proclamaciōs were made of this pease through ŷ realme of Fraūce: & after this peace was thus cōcluded, ŷ kynge & his lordys mette, to whom he shewyd great sēblaūt of kyndenesse, & specially vnto his brother, wherein appered great dissymulacion, as here after shall appere. For this Lewys was of such cōdyciō, ŷ what he myght not ouer come w̄ stregth, he wolde wynne w̄ dissymulacion & trechery. After which peace thus cōcludyd, & the lordys departyd, ŷ kynge festyd ŷ rulers & cōsuls of ŷ cytie of Parys, & gaue

[1] herts turnyd. [2] Gysours. MS.

vnto

vnto them due thākys for ỹ great trouth & fydelyte which they bare towarde hym, duryng ỹ troubelous season, & graūtid vnto them such thynges as then they wolde aske for the weale of that cytie.

IT was not longe after ỹ dissymulacion fell atwene Charlys duke of Normādy & Iohn foresayde sone vnto ỹ duke of Calabre & the erle of Dampmartyne, whereof a parte of ỹ cause was, ỹ the sayd Charlys after theyr thynkyng, had not so bounteously rewardid them as they had deseruyd. Of whiche discorde kynge Lewys was fayne, & in spedy maner rode vnto a towne callyd Argentyne, & there w̄ the sayde Iohn thē beynge duke of Calabre, by reason of his fathers deth, helde with hym longe & great coūceyll, to ỹ entēt to dyspossesse his brother of the duchye of Normādy; by reason of which dyscorde atwene ỹ sayd. ii. dukys, kynge Lewys as ayder of the duke of Calabre, made warre in the partyes of Normandy, & in processe wane therin dyuerse castellys & other stronge holdys, & cōpellyd his brother to holde ỹ cytie of Roan for his refuge. Where he so beynge, ỹ kynge wane dayly vpon hym, in so moche ỹ dyuerse townys & stronge holdys submyttyd them to his grace; whereof herynge, the cytezyns of Roan made an ambassade vnto ỹ kynge, for purchace of grace for theyr duke & for themselfe: the whiche whē ỹ duke vnderstode, feryng lest his owne cytezyns wolde betraye hym, fled thens, & so yode to Humflewe, and from thense to Cadomy. In which passe tyme the kynge was w̄ due honour receyued into the cytie of Roan, where he remouyd many from theyr offycys, & of his seruaūtis or suche as lykyd hym put in ther placis, & moch of ỹ ordynaūce & of abylymētis of warre belongynge to ỹ towne he sent vnto Parys, & the prouost of Roan named Gauyne Manuell he put to deth, & after his body was cast into ỹ ryuer, & his hed sette vpō a pole, & dyuerse of ỹ colege w̄ the deane of the same place were put vnto deth. And all which tyranny by the kyng executyd, & the towne put in suretye by strēgthe of soudyours, he after sped hym vnto Orleaūce, where, as sayth myne auctour, he purueyed an honorable ambassade, & sent it vnto Edwarde ỹ. iiii. the kyng of Englōde. In ỹ. ix. yere of ỹ reygne of this Lewis, was so great a mortalyte of men in Fraūce, ỹ in Parys dyed ỹ yere ouer. xl.M. people. And in this yere began a grudge to growe atwene this Lewys & Phylyp duke of Burgoyn, but it was keept vnkyndely[1] duryng ỹ lyfe of ỹ duke, whiche dyed shortlye after: to whom succedyd Charlys his sone before named, which in processe of tyme maryed dame Margarete, syster vnto kyng Edwarde ỹ. iiii. as after shalbe shewyd. It was not longe after ỹ this Lewys assēblyd a great hoste of people to make warre vpō Charlys duke of Burgoyne, of whiche people he had cōmytted ỹ rule & charge vnto Iohn Balna, which at that day was preest & cardynall; & he as a tēporall capitayn, toke of them ỹ mustirs & other orders. Whereat the tēporall lordys dysdaynynge, ỹ erle of Dampmartyne sayd in the namys of them vnto the kynge: *Fol. CC.xvii.*

" Moost redowtyd soueraygne lorde, it hath pleasyd youre hyghnesse to cōmytte vnto a spyrytuell man ỹ charge of your puyssaunt hoste, & he, not feryng God, hath taken vpō hym ỹ cure & charge of them, to ỹ effusyon of Cristē mennys blode; wherefore it maye lyke your moste noble grace, to sende me a tēporall man to vysyte his diocese, & to take ỹ charge of his flocke, which is as syttynge for me as ỹ other dede is for hym." At this saying ỹ kyng had good game, but for all ỹ he dyd as to hym semyd best. Of this warre atwene ỹ kynge & duke Charlys of Burgoyne, I entende not to speke, for ỹ mater of it is somedeale lōge & tedyous to wryte. But in this whyle ỹ Lewys was occupyed i this warre, the Brytons w̄ an excedynge power assaylyd the partyes of Norue[2] , hauynge Charlys brother vnto Lewys to theyr leder, which to ỹ duke of Brytayn was fled for ayde & socoure. Wherof herynge kynge Lewys, all such hoste of sowdyours as he had purposed other wayes, he than ladde agayne his brother. In which hoste, as affermyth myne auctour, were an. C.M. men, ouer suche as had ỹ guydyng of ỹ ordenaūce. Whā

[1] vnkyndelyd. MS. [2] Normandy. MS.

Charlys

Charlys was suffyciētly instructyd, he gaue for an answere, ỹ if a parfyght concorde shulde be stablysshed atwene his brother & hym, ỹ it shulde be auctoryzed by ỹ hoole cōcent & coūceyll of ỹ barony of ỹ realme: with which answere the kynge beynge cōtentyd, at Turon in the moneth of Aprell &. x. yere of his reygne, assemblyd a great coūceyll of his lordes spyrituell & tēporall, in ỹ which ỹ demaūdis of ỹ sayde Charlys and offers of the kynge were shewyd. And after ỹ sayd coūceyll had at lengthe reasoned ỹ sayde demaūdys & offers, it was fynallye determyned ỹ the duchy of Normādy was so approuyd vnto the kynge of Fraūce & to his heyres kynges, ỹ in no wyse it myght be dysseueryd from ỹ crowne. But to ỹ entēt ỹ a parfyght vnyte myght be had atwene ỹ kynge & his brother, ỹ kyng shalbe instaūtid to geue yerely vnto his sayd brother, ī recōpencemēt of ỹ sayde duchy. xii.M.*li.* of Turon money, ẇ also a certeyn of lande to hym to be assygned with the name of a duke, & ouer ỹ the kynge to be [ass to gyue vnto][1] hym durynge his naturall lyfe, for suche porcion as he claymyd to be his right ẇin ỹ realme. lx.M.*li.*[2] of annuell rent, yerely to hym to be payed of the foresayde Turon money[3], [whiche ye shall vnderstande is[4] in value thā ỹ money of Parys, by in euery. *li.*][5] To all whiche graūtys ỹ kynge was agreed, & ouer ỹ to pardon vnto ỹ duke of Brytayne all offencis nowe newely done agayne his mageste, & cōtrary the dukys faythe & allegeaūce, & all such lordis[6] as ỹ kyng had wonne ẇin Brytayne, to restore vnto ỹ duke & his assygneys: all ỹ whiche offers myght not satysfye ỹ coūceyll of sayd Charlys, but clerelye was sette aparte and refusyd.

AFter ỹ foresayd offers were by Charlys refusyd, the kyng in spedy wyse, vpō ỹ refusayll, sent a strōge hoste into Brytayn, vnder ỹ guydyng of a knyght callyd Arnolde: & in ỹ meane season ỹ kyng vysytynge ỹ bordours of his realme, put in execuciō dyuerse parsones, such as were accusyd to offende agayne hym. Passynge whiche season, were it for ỹ greuys which ỹ foresayd hoost wrought ẇin the coūtrey of Brytayne, [or for other skyll, the foresayd Charlys & the duke of Brytayn][7] made newe meanys for a peace vnto ỹ kynge, & offeryd to be contentyd with that they myght stande in his fauoure and grace, and with suche proffers as the counceyll of ỹ realme was before tyme agreed and condyssendyd vpon: whereunto a sophystycall answere was made by the kyng, so ỹ the sayd Charlys[8] at ỹ tyme myght not be asserteynyd of peace or of warre. Howe be it in the yere folowyng, by instaunt laboure of the fore named Iohā Balna cardynall, ỹ kyng agreed to gyue vnto his brother Charlys ỹ duchye of Guyan onely, wherwith he helde hym contentyd, & so ceasyd of his warre in Normandy. It was not lōge after ỹ this sayde Iohā Balna, forgetynge the manyfolde great benefytys shewyd to hym by the kyng, cōspyryd agayn hym, & deuysed certeyne letters, the which he sent vnto Charlys duke of Burgoyne: wherein was conteynyd ỹ he shulde be ware & haue hym selfe in good gayte, for the vnyte & peace whiche lately was stablysshed atwene the kynge & Charlys his brother, was pryncypallye to dere & warre vpō hym, & to brynge hym in subiecc̄yon. Wherfore in auoydyng ỹ daunger, he aduysed hym in all possyble haste to assemble his knyghtys, that he were not takē vnp[illegible]rueyed; the whiche letters, were it by treason[9] of the berer or otherwyse, came to ỹ kynges presence. After receyt of whiche letters & knowlege of ỹ contente of them, anon the kyng causyd the sayd Iohā Balna to be taken & to be caste in stronge prysone: & that done he rode vnto Thuron, whyther to hym came his brother Charlys, & to hym dyd homage, & sware vnto hym feauty for ỹ duchye of Guyan. And for to knytte ỹ duke of Burgoyne[10] more fastlye to hym, he sente to hym a ceptre with a chayne of golde, the which ỹ duke refusyd to take, wherwith Lewys was greuously dyscōtented; cause[11] of which refusall was, for ỹ the sayd duke of Brytayn had

[1] moved to gyue. MS. [2] fourtye thousand. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] *In the margin of the Museum* MS. is, Nota that a pond of Turon money excedeth not ij *d.* iij.*q.* [4] is lasse. MS. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [6] holdis. MS. Lordships. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [7] *Omitted in* edit. 1559. [8] reason. edit. 1542. 1559. [9] Brytayn. [10] the cause.

lately before ỹ allyed hym with Charlys duke of Burgoyne, & had receyuyd his lyuerey of Golden Flees. And soone after, which was the. xi. yere of this Lewys, Carlota his wyfe was lyghted of a sone, & after named Charlys, by Charlys his brother, which after his father was kynge of Fraunce. And shortly after by meanys of Charlys duke of Guyan, & of the duke of Borbon & other, ỹ duke of Brytayn was recouncyled vnto the kynges fauoure: & in the. xii. yere of the reygne of this Lewys, dyed by force of venym the aboue named Charlys duke of Guyan, but by whose meanys myne auctoure inyndyth not. Than contynuynge the warre atwene this Lewys & this duke of Burgoyne, a marchaunt of Guyan named Itery, which after the deth of ỹ sayde duke of Guyan was fledde vnto the duke of Burgoyn, & with hym a season remaynyd, shewyd vnto hym many odyous' talys of the kynge; wherfore the duke apperceyuynge ỹ he owyd to the Frenshe kynge no fauoure, exortyd hym to poyson the sayde kynge, & if he myght brynge to effecte his purpose, he shulde therefore haue. l.M. florynes of golde: a floryne is in value of sterlyng money to. iii.s. After whiche promyse & assuraūce thus made by the duke, this Itery to brynge his euyll purpose about, made his seruaunt named Iohñ de Boldy of coūceyll, & promysed to hym great thynges if he wolde take vpō hym that acte: & after graunt had of ỹ sayd Iohñ, the sayde Itery prouyded the poyson & delyueryd it vnto his sayd seruaunt, the which incōtynently sped hym vnto Ambasye, where the Frēshe kynge thā laye, where this Iohñ de Boldy beynge of famylyer acqueyntaūce w one named Popyn, to the entent to brynge his entent ỹ better to effecte, after assuraūce of othe to hym made to kepe his counceyll, shewyd vnto hym all his mynde, & promysed to hym. *Fol. CC.xvii.* xx.M. florynes if he wold helpe to bryng to cōclusiō his purpose. The which Popyn made vnto hym assurid promyse, & sayde ỹ to brynge this mater about, it was very expedyēt to haue of coūceyll the kynges master cooke named Colynet, whom he knewe well to wynne, for the great fauoure ỹ eyther of them owid vnto other. And after comunycacyon had with ỹ sayd Colynet ỹ sayd poyson to hym was delyueryd, wherewith ỹ sayd Colynet & Popyn his felowe went at cōuenyent tyme after vnto the kyng, & shewyd to hym the compasse of all the mater: where after anon ỹ sayd Iohñ de Boldy was taken, & cōfessyd ỹ cyrcūstaunce of all ỹ hoole treason, for the which at Parys he was after drawen, hanged & quarteryd. Soone vpon this, Frederyke the thyrde of ỹ name thā emperoure of Almayn, sent vnto this Lewis, wyllyng & requyrynge hym that he wolde not endeuer hym to any peace or accorde with the duke of Burgoyne, for he entendyd in suche wyse to ayde his partye, that he trusted in God to brynge the sayd duke to his due & cōuenyent obeysaūce & subieccion. But ỹ kyng regardyd nothyng the emperours request, but cōcludyd a trewys with ỹ duke for a yere folowyng, by auctoryte of a great coūceyll or parlyament, at the whiche ỹ duke of Alensone was iuged to lose his hede, & his heredytamentys to be forfaytyd vnto ỹ kynge. Thā it foloweth in the story, or this foresayd trewys atwene the kynge & Charlys the duke were fully expyred, the sayde Charlys made warre vpon the sayd Lewys, & procuryd kyng Edwarde of Englande, whose syster he had maryed, to make also warre vpon hym; for expedycion whereof, the sayde kynge Edwarde landyd at Calays shortlye after, with a competent noumber of soudyours, as after in ỹ. xiiii. yere of ỹ reygne of the sayde Edwarde the. iiii. it shall be to you more clerely shewyd, with conclusion of a peace and other thynges. After the which peace atwene the sayd. ii. kynges agreed, a vnyte and concorde was also stablysshyd atwene this Lewys & ỹ duke of Burgoyn for. ix. yeres. About the. xvii. yere of this Lewys, ỹ stewarde of Normandy named Lewis Brysey, ỹ which had maryed the neuewe[2] of kyng Lewys, beyng warned of ỹ wāton rule of his wyfe, & of hir auoutry with one namyd Iohñ Louyr, vpon a day to proue his sayd wyfe, went on huntyng, and at his retourne feynyd hym wery & feynt for labour, & went vnto his bedde. And she anon demynge hir husbāde to be at his naturall rest, yode streyght vnto ỹ chaūber of the sayde

An auowtry was espyed and punyshyd.

[1] tedyous. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] nice. edit. 1542. 1559.

Iohñ Louyr; whereof the husbande beynge warned, with his swerde in hãde, sped hym vnto the sayd chaũber, & after the dore broken vp by vyolence, & fyndynge them in bedde or other suspeciouse maner, with his sayde swerde slewe first ỹ sayde Iohñ, & after, notwstãdyng her miserable & lamẽtable cryinge & askynge forgyuenesse vpõ hir knees, he also slew hyr, & after fledde tyll he had made his peace with the kynge. Longe it were and also tedyouse to folowe myne auctour, in declaryng of euery partyculer dede done by this Lewys, wherefore to shorten this story, trouth it is that after this Lewys had by longe tyme exercysyd hym in warrys, he lastly fell in a greuouse sykenesse, the which cõtynued and so encreasyd vpon[1], that he knewe well he shulde not longe endure. Wherefore he disposyd[2] there after, & causyd many dedys of almesse to be done for hym; amonge ỹ whiche within seynt Iohñs church the Baptyst within Parys, he founde certeyn preestys to synge for hym in parpetuyte, for sustentacyon of whom he gaue of yerelye rent a thousande pounde of Parys money, and so lãguysshynge by the space of thre yeres more before he dyed, passed his tyme with great trybulacion. In the whiche passe tyme oratours were sent from the Flemynges, for to conclude a maryage atwene Charlys his eldest sone & Margarete the doughter of Maxymylyan sone of Frederyke ỹ emperour, which Maxymylyan before dayes[3] had maryed Mary ỹ doughter of Charlys duke of Burgoyne. After which cõclusyon endyd and fynysshed, the kynge gaue vnto the sayde oratours. xxx.M. scutys of golde, which amountyth to. v.*M li.* sterlynge money, and ouer that he gaue to them in plate purposely made to ỹ value of. v C.*li.* sterlynge. And in the. xxv. yere of the reygne of the sayd Lewys, the forenamyd Margarete, a chylde of tender age, with great and somptuouse pompe was brought vnto Parys, and from thens she was conueyed vnto Ambasye, and there in the moneth of Iulye cowpelyd by maryage vnto the forenamed Charlys, sone vnto the kynge. After whiche solẽpnyte fynysshyd, ỹ sayde Lewys felynge his sykenesse more and more encreasyng, vpon a season callyd his sayde sone Charlys before hym, and exortyd hym in this wyse as after foloweth: "My moost deryst chylde, I feele & knowe well that I shall not tary longe in this countrey[4], for I am more nerer myne ende thã thou knowest; for I am so contynuelly greuyd with sykenesse, ỹ no medecyne may or can releue me, and thou arte he that must rule this londe after me: wherefore to the it is specially behouefull and necessary to haue trewe seruãtys. Amonge many ỹ I haue proued in my dayes, ii. there ben the whiche I specyally cõmende vnto the, that is to meane Olyuer Dãman, & Iohñ Doyacon, whose seruyces I haue in such wyse vsed, ỹ by theyr meanys & counceyll I thynke my lyfe hath ben longe preseruyd. And therefore specyally these. ii. kepe nere about ỹ, nothyng mynysshyng to theym of theyr offyces or possessyons that I before tymes to them haue gyuen. And after theyse. ii. take to the for thy[5] counceyllours, Guyot & Bochage, & for to guyde thy[5] warris, Phylyp Desquyer, ỹ which infantys of warre, as I haue well prouyd, hath passynge experyẽce. And other which I haue auaũcyd to offyces with in this realme, lette them so remayne: & the cõmons of the lande, the whiche, by occasyon of my warris, I haue greuously taxyd, & greatlye wekyd & enpouerysshed, socoure & fauoure to thy power. To ỹ Burgonyons me thought euer good to shewe fauoure, or ellys me thought it shuld haue soundyd to my dyshonoure; so I thynke it shall be good that thou so doo." After that kynge Lewys had thus exortid & counceylyd his sone, he then retournyd vnto Turon, where for the mytigacion of his peynfull sykenesse, which of myne auctoure is callyd in Latyne Morbus Elephãcie, he cõmaũdyd to be brought before hym all ỹ cunnynge masters of musyke within this[6] realme, ỹ by ỹ melodyous sounde of theyr instrumentys, he myght be easyd of his peyne. But when he had assemblyd of the best an. C. &. xx. in noumber, a fewe shepardys pypes were to hym more solace thã all ỹ other, or any parte of thẽ, ỹ whiche he helde styll in his court, & cõmaũdyd that euery day ỹ sayd shepherdis shuld play a certeyn dystaũce from the place where he laye. And ouer this he sent for all ankers & other

[1] vpon hym. [2] disposid hym. MS. [3] those dayes. [4] world. MS. [5] thy. MS. [6] his

relygyous men, ỹ were famyd for holy & parfyght men, and for them ordeyned placis in Turon, ỹ by ỹ meane of theyr prayers he myght be releasyd of his cõtynuell payues. And to haue lẽger cõtynuaũce of lyfe, myne auctor sayeth ỹ this Lewys had so great a desyre to haue lẽgth of lyfe, for somoch as he knewe well ỹ the realme of Fraũce shuld be in great trouble & vexaciõ shortly after. But notwstãdyng all theyse prouysyons & ordenaũcis, with many moo which longe were to wryte, fynally this Lewys dyed, when he had ben kyng of Fraũce by ỹ terme of. xxvi. yeres, or therupõ, & after was buryed in ỹ church of our Lady of Raynes, where before tyme he prouyded his sepulture, & in tyme of his sykenesse laye in it a certeyn season, whyle that certeyne orysons were ouer hym sayde.

Fol. CC.xviii.

Edwarde the iv.

EDwarde the. iiii. of that name, sone of Rycharde duke of Yorke, as before is towchyd, begã his reygne ouer the realme of Englande the. iiii. day of Marche, in the ende of the yere of Grace, to reken after the Church of Englõde. M. iiii.C. and. lx. and the secõde yere of Lewis ỹ. xii. thã kyng of Fraũce. The which Edwarde, after his possessyon takynge at Westmynster, and gettynge of the feelde at Towton by Yorke, was crowned and anoyntyd for kynge at Westmynster foresayde, the. xxix. daye of Iuny, as before is shewyd in the ende of the last yere of Henry the. vi. After which solempnytie fynysshed, the kyng in August after rode to Cauntorbury, & from thens he rode to Sandewyche, & from thens alonge by the sees syde to Southampton, and so into ỹ Marche of Walys, and retournyd by Brystowe, where he was with all honoure receyuyd, and after vysyted sundry parties of his realme. In whiche season or soone after, the tyme of Rycharde Lee, mayer of London, expyred, and Hughe Wyche, mercer, was admytted for the yere folowynge.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lxi. Anno Domini.M.CCCC.lxii.

Iohñ Looke.

Hughe Wyche. Anno. i.

George Irelande.

Parliamẽtum.

THis yere, beynge the later ende of the first yere of Edwarde the. iiii. & the begynnyng of this mayers yere, ỹ is to say, ỹ. iiii. daye of Septẽbre, a parlyamẽt was begunne at Westmynster. And vpõ ỹ morow folowinge dyed Iohñ duke of Norfolke, the which hadde ben a specyall ayder of the kyng. And vpõ Alhaloen daye before passyd, ỹ kynge creatyd Richarde his yonger brother, duke of Glowcetyr, ỹ lorde Bowchyer, erle of Essex, & the lord Fawcumbrydge, erle of Kent. And vpon the. xii. day of February was the erle of Oxenforde, w̃ the lorde Aubry his elder sone, syr Thomas Todenhame, Wyllyã Tyrell, & other, brought vnto the Towre of London: & vpõ the. xx. day of ỹ sayd moneth, ỹ sayd Lorde Awbry was drawen from Westmynster vnto ỹ Towre Hyll, and there behedyd. And vpõ the. xxiii. daye of the same moneth, syr Thomas Todenham, Wyllyam Tyrell, & Iohñ Mõgomory were also there behedid. And vpõ the Fryday next ensuynge, or the. xxvi. daye of ỹ sayd moneth, the erle of Oxenforde was ladde from Westmynster vpon his feete, to the sayde place, [of Inesse,]' & there also behedyd, whose corps was after borne vnto ỹ Frere Augustynes, & there buryed w̃in ỹ quyer for ỹ tyme. And in ỹ seconde and later ende of the moneth of Iuly, was the castell of Awnewyke yelden vnto the lorde Hastynges, by appoyntment. [And before tyme holden the same were sufferyd to goo at theyr lyberte.]' Whan kyng Edwarde was thus stablysshed in this realme, great sute and labour was made to hym for the repayment of the foresayd. xviii.M *li.* to hym and other delyueryd by the stapelers, as before in the. xxxviii. yere of Hẽry the. vi. to you I haue before shewyd'. Were it by ỹ agrement of ỹ sayde stapelers, or other wyse, one named Rycharde Heyron, a marchaũt, of pregnaunt

The erle of Oxenforde wt other put to deth.

Of Heyrõs vexacion.

' *Omitted in the* edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

' *Here the* MS. *and latter editions add* whereof was laborer.

wytte,

wytte, and of good maner & speche, for them shewyd. To whom at lengthe was answeryd by ŷ kynges counceyll, that the sayd. xviii. M. *li.* with moche more, ŷ which was couertly kept from ŷ kynges knowlege, belonged of ryght vnto the erle of Wylshyre, which at ŷ tyme of delyuery of ŷ sayd goodys, was hyghe tresourer of Englonde, and after for treason by hym done agayne ŷ kynge, the sayd erlys lādis & goodys were forfayted vnto ŷ kynge; wherfore the kyng reteynyd ŷ sayd. xviii. M. *li.* as parceyll of his forfayture, wolde[1] reteyne as his owne. Vpon whiche answere, this Heyron seynge ŷ of the kyng he myght haue no remedy, & for somoch, as moch of the sayd good belongyd to his charge, he then resortyd vnto ŷ stapelers, for cōtentacion of the sayd money. But how it was that there he fande no comfort, he fynallye suyd the mayer of the staple & his company, and put them vnto great vexacion & trowble; & in ŷ ende fande suche fauoure in the courte of Rome, ŷ he denouncyd all the marchaūtys stapelers accursyd: howe be it, that soone after they purchasyd an absolucyon, and he in conclusyon, after longe beynge in Westmynster as a seyntwary man, wout recouery of his costys or dutie, dyed there, beynge greatly endettyd vnto many parsonys.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lxii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.lxiii.

Wyllyam Hampton.

Thomas Cooke[2]. Anno. ii.

Barth. Iamys.

THis yere, & begynnynge of the moneth of Nouember, Margaret, late quene of Englōde, came out of Fraūce into Scotlande, & from thens into Englande, with a strenth of Frenshemen & Scottis. Wherfore the kynge sped hym into the Northe with a stronge hoost. Whereof herynge, the quene brake hyr araye and fledde, and toke a caruyle, & therein entēdyd to haue saylyd into Fraunce; but suche tempest fell vpon the see, that she was constraynyd to take a fysshers bote, & by meane therof landyd at Barkewyke[3], & so drewe hyr vnto the Scottisshe kyng. And shortlye after hyr landynge, tydynges came to hyr that hyr sayde caruyll was drowned, within the whiche she hadde great treasoure and other rychesse. And the same daye, vpon. CCCC. of Frenshemen were dryuen vpon lande nere vnto Bambourth, where they, for somoch as they myght not haue a way theyr shyppes, they fyred them, & after for theyr sauegarde toke an ilande win Northumberlande, where they were assaylyd of one called Maners, with other in his company, and of them slayen and takē prysoners, as many as there were. Whan the kynge was ware of the quenys thus auoydynge, he entendyd to haue folowed, & to haue made warre vpon the Scottys; but he was then vysyted with the sykenesse of pockys, that he was forcyd to leue that iournaye. In ŷ weke of Crystemas folowyng, ŷ Scottys w a stronge power percyd the lāde, entendynge to haue rescowyd certeyne castellys i ŷ North, but they retourned shortly without harme doynge. *Fol. CC.xiiii.*

And shortly after the duke of Somerset and sir Rauffe Percy submytted theym to the kynges grace.

Whanne the kynge was curyd and retourned southwarde, the Scottes abonte the tyme of Lent, entryd agayne into Englande, and layde a siege vnto Banbourth castell & wane it. Wherfore the kynge in the moneth of August folowynge, rode agayne northwarde with his power; and ouer that, vytayled certayne shyppes in the West countre, and manned theym, & sent them thyder to make warre vpon the sea coost.

And in the latter ende of this maiers yere, the duke of Somerset, herynge ŷ kynge Henry was comynge into the lande with a newe strength, departed secretly, and went agayne to hym.

[1] and would. [2] Draper. MS. [3] Barwyke.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxiiii.

Robert Basset.

Mathewe Philip, goldsmyth. Anno. iii.

Thomas Muschampe.

The lorde Iohnne of Mountagu.

THis yere, and moneth of May, whiche was in the begynnyng of the. iiii. yere of kinge Edwarde, the lorde Iohñ of Mountagu, hauynge then the rule in ỹ North partiel, beynge warnyd of the cõmynge of Henry, late kynge, with a great power out of Scotlãde, assembled ỹ Northynmen, and mette with hym aboute Exham, and there skyrmysshed with Scottes, & at lengthe wanne the victory of his enemyes, and chasyd Henry so nere, that he wan from hym certayne of his folowers, trapped with blewe veluet, and his bycoket, garnysshed with. ii. crownes of golde, and fret with perle and ryche stone.

The duke of Somerset.

He also toke at the sayde iourney the duke of Somerset, the lorde Hungerforde, and the lorde Roos; which sayd duke was shortly after put to deth at ỹ sayd towne of Exham, and the other. ii. lordes were soon after behedyd at New Castell. And other whiche were after that fyght taken in a wood faste by, as sir Philip Wentworth, sir Edmonde Fiz, knyghtes, Blacke Iaquys, Iohñ Bryce, and Thomas Hunt, were also put to deth at Exham foresayd, or Myddylham after some wryters; and sir Thomas Husey, knight, was behedid at Yorke. And in the moneth of Iuly nexte folowynge, the sayd lorde Mountagu, with ayde of his brother erle of Warwyke, wan by strengthe the forenamed castell of Bamburgthe, wherin as one of the sayd capitaynes was taken, ẅ other, sir Rauffe Gray, which shortly after at Yorke, was drawen, hangyd, and quarteryd.

The kynge maried.

In suche passe tyme, in moste secrete maner, vpon the firste daye of May, kynge Edwarde spousyd Elizabeth, late the wyfe of sir Iohñ Graye, knyght, whiche before tyme was slayne at Towetoñ or Yorke felde, whiche spowsayles were solempnyzed erely in ỹ mornynge at a towne named Graston[1], nere vnto Stonyngstratforde; at whiche mariage was no[2] persones present but the spowse, the spowsesse, the duches of Bedforde her moder, ỹ preest, two gentylwomen, and a yong man to helpe the preest synge. After which spowsayles endyd, he went to bedde, and so taried there vpon. iii. or. iiii. houres, and after departed & rode agayne to Stonyngstratforde, and came ī maner as though he had ben on huntinge, and there went to bedde agayne. And within a daye or. ii. after, he sent to Graston[1], to the lorde Ryuers, fader vnto his wyfe, shewynge to hym ỹ he wolde come & lodge with hym a certeyne season, where he was receyued with all honoure, and so taryed there by the space of. iiii. dayes. In whiche season, she nyghtly to his bedde was brought, in so secrete maner, that almooste none but her moder was of counsayll. And so this maryage was a season kept secret after, tyll nedely it muste be discouered & disclosed, by meane of other whiche were offeryd vnto the kynge, as the quene of Scottes and other. What oblyquy ran after of this maryage, howe the kynge was enchaũted by the duchesse of Bedforde, and howe after he wolde haue refusyd her, with many other thynges concernyng this matier, I here passe it ouer.

And this yere was king Henry takyn in a wood in the North countre, by one named Cantlowe, and presentyd to the kyng, and after sent to the Tower, where he remayned longe after[3].

[1] Grafton. MS. and edit. 1542. 1559. [2] no moo. MS. [3] *In the margin of the Museum* MS. *we have this note in the contemporary hand already mentioned.* In this seson was the erle of Warwyk & other noble men, sent into Spayn, to treat of a maryage atweene kyng Edward & the kyng's syster of Spayn; whych was first occacion of dyspleasur atweene kyng Edward & the said erle of Warwyk, for that the erle had entrid soo ferr in comynycacion and was deludyd.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxiiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxv.

Iohñ Tate.

Rauffe Iosselyn, draper. Anno. iiii.

Iohñ Stone.

THis yere, was a newe coyne ordeyned by the kynge, the whiche was namyd the royall[1], & was [& yet is][2] in value of. x. shillynges, the halfe royall[1]. v.*s.* and the ferthynge. ii.*s.* vi.*d.* And ouer that he ordeyned the seconde coyne of golde, & namyd it the angell, whiche was [and yet is][2] in value of. vi.*s.* viii.*d.* and the halfe angell. iii.*s.* iiii.*d.* He ordeyned also a newe coyne of grotes, halfe grotes, & penyes, whiche were of lasse weyght thanne the olde grote was by. viii.*d.* in an vunce. And thañe was fyne golde auansyd from *li*[3]. to. xl.*s.* an vunce, and other baser goldes after the[4] rate; and syluer that before was at. viii. grotes and. xxx.*d.* an vunce, was hyghed to. xl.*d.* an vunce, and. iii.*s.* ii.*d.*

And in this mayres yere, and begynnynge of the[5]. v. yere, that is to saye, ỹ. xxvi. daye of May, that yere Whytsonday, quene Elizabeth was crowned at Westmynster with grat solempnytie. At the whiche season at the Tower, the nyght before the coronacion, amonge many knyghtes of the Bathe there made, was as of ỹ company sir Thomas Cook, sir Mathewe Philip, sir Rauffe Iosselyne, and sir Henry Wauyr, cytezeins of London, than and there made knyghtes. Coronacio regine.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxvi.

Sir Henry Wauyr.

Rauffe Verney, mercer. Anno. v.

William Constantyne.

THis yere, that is to saye, the. xi. daye of the moneth of February, was Elizabeth pryncesse, and firste childe of kyng Edwarde, borne at Westmynster, whose cristenynge was doone in the abbaye with most solempnyte; and ỹ more, bycause ỹ kynge was assuryd of his phisycions that the quene was conceyued w a prynce; & specially of one named maister Domynyk, by whose counsayll great pronycion was ordeyned for cristenynge of the sayde prynce. Wherfore it was after tolde, that this maister Domynyk, to ỹ entent to haue great thanke & rewarde of ỹ kynge, he stode in the seconde chamber where ỹ quene trauayled, that he myght be the firste that shulde brynge tydynges to the kynge of the byrth of the prynce: and lastly when he harde ỹ childe crye, he knockyd or called secretly at ỹ chamber dore, and frayned what the quene had. To whom it was answeryd by one of the ladyes, what so euer the quenes grace hath here wythin, suer it is that a fole standithe there withoute. And so confused with thys answere, he deperted wythoute seynge of the kynge for that tyme. Byrth of ỹ pryncesse. *Fol. CC.xx.*

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxvii.

Iohn Browne.

Sir Iohn Yonge, grocer. Henry Bryce. Anno. vi.

Iohn Stokton.

THis yere, & moneth of dyed the forenamed Henry Bryce, and for hym was chosyn immedyatly, a sheryffe for this yere, Iohñ Stokton. And in the moneth of Iuny followynge, were certayne actes and featys of warre doone in Smythfelde, atwene sir Antony Wydeuyle, called lord Scalys, vpon that one partye, and the bastarde of Burgoyne, chalengour on that one[6] partye; of whiche the lorde Scalys wanne the honour: for the sayde bastarde was at the firste course rennynge, with sharpe sperys ouerthrowen Iustes in Smythfeld.

[1] ryall. [2] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559. [3] xxx.*s.* MS. [4] that. [5] the kynges. MS. [6] other.

horse

horse and man, which was by the rage of the horse of the sayd bastarde, and nat by vyolence of the stroke of his enemy, and by a pyke of iron, standynge vpon the fore parte of the sadyll of the lorde Scalys, wherwith the horse beynge blynde of the bastarde, was stryken into the nose thrylles, and for payne therof mounted so hyghe vpon the hinder feet, that he fyl bakwarde. Vpon the seconde day they met there agayne vpon fote, and fawght with theyr axes a fewe strokes. But whan the kynge sawe that the lorde Scalys hadde auauntage of the bastarde, as the poynt of his axe in the vysoure of his enemyes helmet, & by force therof was lykely to haue borne hym ouer, the kyng in hast, cryed to suche as hadde the rule of the felde, that they shuld departe theym; and for more spede of the same, caste downe a warderer whiche he then helde in his hande: and so were they departed to the honour of the lorde Scalys for both dayes. Vpon the morowe folowynge and the other dayes, were certayne actes of warre done atwene dyuerse gentylmen of this lande, & certayne of the sayd bastardes seruauntes; of the whiche also the Englysshmen wan the honoure. In this yere also one named Iohn Derby, alderman, for somoche as he refusyd to cary or to paye for the caryage away of a deed dogge lying at his dore, and for vnfyttynge langage whiche he gaue vnto the mayre, he was by a court of aldermen demyd to a fyne of. 1 *li.* whiche he payde euery peny.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxvii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxviii.

Humfrey Heyford.

Thomas Owlegraue[1]. *Anno. vii.*

Thomas Stalbroke.

IN this yere of the mayer, and in the beginning of the. viii. yere of this kynge Edwarde, that is to meane vpon Saterdaye next ensuynge the feest of Corpus Cristi, dame Margaret, suster vnto the kynge, rode thorough the cytie of London towarde the sees syde, to passe into Flaunders, there to be maryed to Charlys duke of Burgoyne, before named in the story of the. xi. Lowys kyng of Fraunce. After whose departure, sir Thomas Cook, late maier, which before was pechyd of treason by a seruaunt of the lorde Wenlokkis, called Hawkyns, and at the request of the sayd lady Margarete, vpon suertie sufferyd to go at large, then was arrestyd and sent vnto the Tower, and his goodes seasyd by the lorde Riuerse then tresourer of Englande, and his wyfe put out of his house, and commytted to the charge of the mayer, in whose place she laye a season after. And after the sayd sir Thomas hadde lyen a tyme in the Tower, he was brought vnto the Guyldhalle, and there areygned of the sayd treason, and quyt by sondry enquestes; and after that commytted vnto the Countour in Bradstrete, and from thens to the Kynges Benche in Southwerke, where he laye within the sayd pryson tyll his frendes agreed to sir Iohn Brandon, then keper of the sayd pryson, to take hym home to his place, where to his great charge he remayned as prysoner longe after. In which tyme and season he loste moche good; for bothe his places in the countre and also in London were vnder the gydynge of the sayd lord Ryuers seruauntes, and of the seruauntes of sir Iohn Fogge than vnder tresourer; the whiche spoyled and distroyed moche thynge. And ouer that moche of his iewellys and plate, with great substaunce of the[2] marchaundyse, as cloth of sylkes, & clothes of aras, were discouerid by suche persones as he had betaken the said goodes to keepe, and came to the treasourers handes, which to the sayd sir Thomas was a great enemye. And fynally, after many persecucions and losses, was compelled as for a fyne sette vpon hym for offence of mysprysion, to paye vnto the kynge. viii. M.*li.* And after he had thus agreed, and was at[3] large for the kynges interest, he was thanne in newe trowble agayne the quene; the whiche demaundyd of hym as her right, for euery M.*li.* payde vnto the kynge by waye of fyne, an houdreth

Sir Thomas Cook.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* Skynner. [2] other. MS. [3] set at. M.S.

marke;

marke. For the which he had after longe sute and great charge, and in conclusion was fayne to agre, and to gyue to her a great pleasure, besyde many good gyftes that he gaue vnto his[1] counsayll.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxviii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxix.

Symonde Smyth.

Wyllyam Taylour, grocer. Anno. viii.

William Haryot.

THis yere, &. xxi. day of Nouembre, a seruaunte of the duks of Exceter, named Richarde Sterys, after his iugement, was drawen thorughe the cytie vnto the Tower Hylle, and there parted in. ii. pesys, that is, the hede frome the body. And vpon the daye followynge, two persones beyng named[2] Poynys & that other Alforde, were drawen westwarde to Tyborne, and there whan they shulde haue been hanged, there chartours were shewyd, and so preseruyd. Execucion.

And about this season or soon after, was the erle of Oxenforde, which before tyme was taken by a surmyse in ielosy of treason, awaytyd for and arrestid, and after delyuered. In the latter ende of this mayers yere, &. ix. yere of the kynge, the marchauntes Esterlynges were condempned vnto the marchauntes auentures[3] Englysshe, after longe and sumptuous exspences in the lawe and before the kynges counsayll, in. xiii.M. v.C. and xx.*li.* whereof the payment was kept secret from wryters. The erle of Oxenforde.

In this yere the dissymuled fauoure, whiche atwene the kyng and the erle of Warwyke hadde this[4] cōtynued syne the maryage of the quene, beganne to appere; in somoch that the erle withdrewe hym from the kynge, and confederyd vnto hym the duke of Clarence, that before hadde maryed his doughter. *Fol. CC.xxi.*

Wherupon the comons of the North begañe to rebell, and chase theym a capitayne, whom they had named Robyn of Ryddysdale; the whiche dyd many feates, and lastly bare hym so wysely, ỹ he and his company were pardonyd of the kynge. In the whiche rumoure and stirrynge, the lord Ryuers, and sir Iohñ his sone, that before hadde maried the olde duchesse of Norffolke, lyinge at a place by Charynge Crosse called ỹ Muys, were taken by Lyncolñshyremē & brought vnto Northamptoñ, and there behedyd.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxx.

Richarde Gardyner.

Richarde Lee, grocer. Anno. ix.

Robert Drope.

THis yere, soone after Alhalowen tyde, proclamacyons were made thorugh the cytie of London, that the kynge had pardoned the Northyrn men of theyr riot, and aswell for ỹ deth of the lorde Ryuers, as all displeasures by theym before ỹ tyme done. And soon vpon this a new styrrynge began in Lyncolñshyre, wherof ỹ occacōner was the lorde Wellys, as ỹ fame then went; for whom the kynge sent by fayre meanes, promysyng hym to go safe and come safe as it was sayd. But trouth it is, after his cōmynge to the kynge, had he before suche promyse or nat, he was shortly after behedyd.

Than in February folowynge, by medyacion of lordes, a treatye of vnytie & concorde was labouryd atwene the kynge and his broder, and the erle of Warwyke; for whiche cause the sayd erle came thenne vnto London; & shortly after came the sayde duke, as vpon Shrouesondaye folowynge. And vpon the Tuysdaye folowynge, the kyng and the sayd duke mette at Baynardes Castell, where the duchesse of Yorke theyr moder thenne laye. In the whiche passe tyme, the erle of Warwyke was retourned to Warwyk, & there gaderyd to hym suche strengthe as he myght make, as it was reported.

[1] her. [2] the one. [3] auenturers. [4] styll. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

Sir Robert Wellys.

And in Lyncolnshyre sir Robert Wellys, sone vnto the lorde Wellys before put to deth, in this whyle had also assembled a great bende of men, purposyd[1] to gyue the kynge a felde. Of all whiche tydynges whenne the kynge was assertayned, he with his sayde broder the duke spedde hym northwarde, and in that whyle sent to the sayde sir Robert Wellys, wyllyng hym to sende home his people and come to hym, and he shuld haue his grace. But that other answerid, that by lyke promysse his fader was disceyued, and that shulde be his example. But in conclusion, whan the kynge with his power drewe nere vnto hym, he toke suche fere that he fledde, and soone after was taken,

Execucion.

and with hym sir Thomas Dymmok, knyght, and other, the whiche were shortly after put to deth.

In this season was the duke of Clarence departyd from the kynge, and was gone vnto the erle of Warwyke to take his parte. To whom the kynge in lykewyse sent, ỹ they shuld come to his presence withoute fere, where vnto they made a fayned answere.

The duke fledde.

And that[2] consyderyng their lacke of power agayne the kyng, departyd and went to the see syde, and so sayled into Fraunce, & requyred the. xi. Lowys, than kynge of that region, that he wolde ayde and assyste theym to restore kynge Henry to his ryghtfull enheritaunce. Wherof the sayd Lowys beynge gladde, graunted vnto theym their request, and helde theym there, whyle they with the counsayll of quene Margarete prouyded for theyr retourne into Englande.

Proclamacio.

Whan the sayd lordes were thus departyd the lande, the kyng cōmaūdyd them to be proclaymed as rebellys & traytours thorugh out his realme. And in the Easter weke folowynge, sir Geffery Gate, and one named Clapham, whiche entendyd at Southamptō to haue taken shyppynge and to haue sayled to the sayd lordes, were there taken by the lorde Howarde, and sent vnto warde, whiche sayd Clapham was behedyd soon after, and the sayd sir Geffrey Gate fande such frendshyp, that lastly he escapyd or was delyueryd, so that he yode after to seyntwary. Than was the lorde of Seynt Iohīs arrestyd; but at[3] instaunce of the archebysshop of Caunterbury, he went a season at large, vnder suertie, and was finally cōmytted to the Tower. In whiche passe tyme the erle of Oxenforde gat ouer vnto the foresayd lordes. Thus endurynge this trouble, a stirryng was made in ỹ North parties by the lordes Fitz Hugh, wherfore the kynge spedde hym thyderwarde. But so soon as the sayd lorde knewe of ỹ kynges cōmynge, anone he lefte his people and fledde into Scotlande. And the kynge whiche then was cōmyn to Yorke, restyd hym there a season and there aboute.

Duke of Clarence is landyd.

In the moneth of Septembre, &. x. yere of the kyng, the foresayd duke of Clarence, accōpanyed with ỹ erlys of Warwyke, of Penbroke, & of Oxenforde, & other many gentylmen, lādyd at Dartmouth in Deuynshyre, & there made theyr proclamacions in the name of kynge Henry the. vi. and so drewe ferther into the lande. Wherof he kynge, ỹ cōmons of that coūtre and other drewe vnto theim by great companyes.

Thenne the Kentysshemen beganne to wexe wylde, and assembled theym in great companyes, and so came vnto the out parties of the cytie of London, as Radclyffe, Seint Katherynes, and other places, and robbyd & spoyled the Flemynges, & all the berebowtes there as they came.

The kyng auoydeth.

Then the foresayd lordes holdynge on theyr iournaye drewe towarde the kyng, beyng in ỹ North, as aboue is sayd. Wherof he beynge warnyd, and hauynge with hym as then but small strength, wherof some to hym were nat very trusty, he with a secrete compan toke the next waye towarde the Wash in Lyncolneshyre, and there passed ouer with great daunger, nat without losse of dyuerse of his company, and so passyd the countres into Flaundres, and styntyd nat tyll he came to Charlys his broder, than duke of Burgoyne, with whom he restyd a season. Whanne the quene, whiche thenne was in the Tower, harde of the kynges auoydynge, anone she departyd frome thens, and yode vnto West-

[1] and purposed. edit. 1542. 1559. [2] that ayght foluyng. MS. then edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [3] at the.

mynster,

mynster, and there regystred herself for a seyntwary woman, and in lyke wyse dyd many of kynge Edwardes frendes.

And thenne aboute the begynnynge of Octobre, sir Geffrey Gate, that tyll that tyme hadde holden the sayd seyntwary, & other with hym, went vnto the prysons aboute London, & al suche as they had fauour vnto, toke them out & sette theym at lybertie. And then shypmen and other euyll disposid persones as then drewe to ỹ said Geffrey Gate, robbyd agayne the berehowses, and sette some of theym on fyre, and after resorted vnto ỹ gates of the cytie, & there wolde haue entred by force; but ỹ cytezeins withstode theym with suche force, ỹ they were compelled to departe thens. Vpon the. xii. daye of Octobre the Tower was gyuen vp by appoyntment, and kynge Henry was taken from ỹ lodgynge where before he laye, & was than lodgyd in ỹ kynges lodgynge within the said Tower. In whiche passe tyme the duke and the foresayd lordes drewe nere vnto the cytie. Sir Geffrey Gate. *Fol. CC.xxxvii.*

And vpon Saterdaye than nexte folowynge, the sayde duke accompanyed with the erlys of Warwyke, of Shrowysbury, and the lord Stanley, rode vnto the Tower, and there with all honour and reuerence fet out kynge Henry, and conueyed hym to Paulys, and there lodgyd hym in the bysshoppes palays, & so was than admytted and taken for kynge thorugh all the lande.

Readepcio Henrici sexti.

HEnry ỹ. vi. of that name, before by Edwarde the. iiii. put downe, was agayne restoryd to the crowne of Englande the[1] daye of Octobre, in ỹ yere of Grace. M. CCCC.lxix. and the. x. yere of Edwarde ỹ. iiii. and the. xii. yere of the. xii. Lowys than kynge of Fraunce. The erle of Worceter.

In whose begynnyng of raedepcion, the erle of Worceter, whiche for his cruelnesse was called the bochier of Englãde, was taken and put in streyght pryson. And vpon the. xv. daye of Octobre was the sayde erle aregned at Westmynster in the Whyte Halle, and there endyted of treason; and vpon the Mondaye folowyng adiugyd that he shuld go from ỹ same place vnto the Tower Hyll, & there to haue his hede smytten of. But as he was comynge from the sayd place of iugement towarde his execucion, the people presid so importunatly vpon hym for to se and beholde hym, that the sheryffes were fayne to tourne into the Flete, & there to borowe gayoll for hym for that nyght. And vpon the morowe after at after noone, beynge seynt Lukys daye, and. xviii. daye of Octobre, he was ladde to the Tower Hylle, where he toke his deth full pacyently, whose corps was after borne with the hede vnto the Blacke Friers, and there honourably buryed in a chapel stãdynge in the body of the churche, which he before tyme had foundyd. And thenne was dayly awaytynge vpon the see syde for the landynge of quene Margarete and prynce Edwarde her sone; and also prouycyon made for the defence of landynge of kynge Edwarde and his company.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxx.

Iohñ Stokton, mercer.

Iohñ Crosby.

Iohñ Warde.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxi.

Anno Henrici. vi. primo.
Anno Edwardi. iiii^{ti}. x^{o}.

IN this yere, whiche was in the ende of the. x. yere of kynge Edward, and begynnynge of the raedepcion of kynge Henry, that is to meane, the thirde daye of Nouembre, quene Elizabeth, beynge, as before is sayd, in Westmynster seyntwary, was lyghted of a fayre prynce. And within the sayd place the sayd childe, without pompe, was after cristenyd, whose godfaders were ỹ abbot and priour of the sayd place, and the lady Edwarde y^{e}. v. is borne.

[1] the xvith. MS.

Scrope godmoder. And the. xxvi. daye of the sayd moneth folowyng, beganne a parlyament[1], and from thens prorogyd to Paulis, where it contynued tyll Cristemas. In the[2] parlyament sir Thomas Cooke, before trowbelyd as I haue shewyd in the. vii. yere of kynge Edwarde, put in a byll into the comon house, to be restoryd of the lorde Ryuers landes and other occacioners of his trowble, to the sūme of. xxii. M. marke; of the whiche he had good comfort to haue ben allowed of kyng Henry if he had prosperyd. And the rather, for that ŷ he was of the cōmon house, and therwith a man of great boldnesse in speche and well spoken, and syngulerly wytted and well reasoned.

A parlyament.

Proclamacion.

Thanne durynge this parlyament kynge Edwarde was proclaymed vsurper of the crowne, and the duke of Glouceter his yonger broder traytour, and both attaynted by auctorytie of the sayd parlyament.

And vpon the. xiiii[3]. daye of February came the duke of Exceter to London. And the. xxvii[4]. daye of ŷ sayd moneth, rode the erle of Warwyke thorugh the cytie towarde Douer, for to haue receyued quene Margarete; but he was despoynted, for ŷ wynde was to her so contrary, that she laye at the see syde taryinge for a conuenyent wynde frome Nouembre tyll Apryll. And soo the sayde erle, after he hadde longe taryed for her at the see syde, was fayne to retourne without spede of his purpose.

Thus durynge this queysy season, the mayer ferynge the retourne of kynge Edwarde, fayned hym syke, and so kept his house a great season. All which tyme sir Thomas Cooke, whiche thenne was admytted to his former rome, was sette in his place, and allowyd for his deputie, whiche tourned after to his great trowble & sorowe.

Kynge Edwarde is lādyd.

Thanne fynally in the begynnynge of the moneth of Apryll, kynge Edwarde landyd in the North, at a place called Rauynspore, with a small company of Flemynges and other; so that all his company excedyd nat the nombre of. M. persones. And so drewe hym towarde Yorke, makyng his proclamacions as he went in the name of kyng Henry, and shewyd to the people, that he came for none entent, but oonly to clayme his enherytaunce, ŷ dukedome of Yorke; [and soo passyd the countres tyll he came to ŷ cytie of Yorke,][5] where the cytezeyns helde hym oute tyll they knewe his entent. And when he had shewyd vnto theym, as he before had done vnto other, & cōfermed it by an othe, he was there receyued and refresshed for a certayne tyme, and so departed and helde his way towarde London, and passyd by fauoure and fayer wordes the daunger of the lorde marquys Mountagu, whiche in that coostes laye than awayte for hym purposely to stoppe his way, and hadde people dowble the nombre that kynge Edwarde had of fyghtynge men. Whanne kynge Edwarde was thus passyd the sayde marquys, and sawe that his strength was greatly amendyd, and that also dayly ŷ people drewe vnto hym, he thanne made proclamacyons in his owne name as kynge of Englande; and so helde on his iournay tyll he came vnto London. In whiche passe tyme, that is to meane vpon Sherethursdaye, ŷ archebysshop of Yorke, beynge then at London with kynge Henry, to the entent to moue the peoples hertes towarde ŷ kynge, rode aboute the towne with hym, and shewyd hym to the people; the whiche rather withdrewe mēnes hertes than otherwyse. And in this season also sir Thomas Cook, befornamed, auoydyd the lāde, entendynge to haue sayled into Fraūce. But he was taken of a shyp of Flaunders, and his sone and heyre with hym; and soo sette there in pryson many dayes, and lastly was delyueryd vnto kynge Edwarde.

Thenne vpon Sherethursdaye at afternoone, kynge Edwarde was receyued into the cytie, and soo rode to Paulys, and there offeryd at the roode of the North dore. And that done, yode incontynently into the bisshoppes palays, where he fande kynge Henry almoste alone: for all suche lordes and other as ī the mornynge were about hym, whenne they harde of kynge Edwardes cōmynge, anone they fledde, & euery man was fayne and

Fol. CC.xxiii.

[1] *The* MS. *adds* at Westmenster. [2] which. MS. [3] xxiij. edit. 1542. xxiii. edit. 1559. [4] xxiii. edit. 1559. [5] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559.

gladde

gladde to saue hymselfe. Thenne kynge Edwarde lodgyd hym where kyng Henry laye, and put hym vnder saffe kepynge, and so restyd hym there tyll Easter euyn. Vpon the whiche euyn, herynge of his broders cõmynge, and ỹ other lordes with hym, with a stronge hoost vnto Seynt Albonys, spedde hym thederwarde, and lay that nyght at Barnet. In whiche season the duke of Clarence, cõtrary his othe and promyse made vnto the Frenshe kynge, refusyd the title of kyng Henry, & sodaynly with ỹ strength as he hadde, rode streyght vnto his broder kynge Edwarde, wherwith the other lordes were somdeale abasshed; the whiche natwithstandynge, the sayd lordes by the specyall comforte and exortacion of ỹ erle of Oxenforde, as it was sayde, heide on theyr iournay towarde Bernet, the sayde erle of Oxenforde beinge in the vawarde, and so cam vnto ỹ playne without Barnet, and there pyght theyr fylde. Then vpon the morowe beinge Ester day, and the. xiiii. day of Aprill, very erly both hoostes met, where vpon that one partye were. ii. kynges present, as Henry the. vi. whiche kynge Edwarde hadde brought thyder with hym, and kynge Edwarde the. iiii : and vpon that other partye was the duke of Exceter, the lorde marquys Mountagu, and the. ii. erlys of Warwyke and of Oxenforde, with many other men of name. Barnet felde.

There the sayde erle of Oxenforde & his company quytte theym so manfully, that he bare ouer that parte of the feldde whiche he sette vpon, so ferforthly, that tydynges came to London that kynge Edwarde hadde loste the feldde. And if his men hadde kept theyr araye and nat fallen to ryfflynge, lykely it hadde ben as it was after tolde, that the victory hadde fallen to that partye. But after longe and cruell fyght, in conclusyon kynge Edwarde opteyned the vpper hande, and slewe of his enemyes the marquys Mountagu and the erle of Warwyk his broder, with many other: and vpon the kynges partye was slayne the lorde Barnes. And of the cõmons vpon bothe parties were slayne vpon. xv.C. men and mo.

Of the mystes and other impedymẽtes whiche fyll vpon the lordes partye, by reason of the incantacyons wrought by fryer Bungey, as the fame went, me lyst nat to wryte. But trouth it is, ỹ after this victory thus wonne by kynge Edwarde, he sent the deed corps of the sayd marquys & erle of Warwyke vnto Paulys Churche, where they laye. ii. dayes after nakyd in. ii. coffyns, ỹ euery man might beholde and se theym. And the same after noone came kyng Edwarde agayne vnto London, and offeryd at the roode of the North dore in Paulys, and after rode vnto Westmynster and there lodgyd hym. And soone after that the kynge was thus passyd thorugh the cytie, was kynge Henry brought rydyng i a longe gowne of blewe veluet, and so conueyed thoroughe Chepe vnto Westmynster, and from thens vnto the Tower, where he remayned as prysoner all his lyues tyme after.

Repossessio Edwardi Quarti.

EDwarde the. iiii. before named, began agayne his domynyon ouer the realme of Englande the. xiiii. daye of Apryll, in the begynnynge of the yere of our Lorde. M.CCCC. lxxi. and the. xii. yere of Lowys the Frenshe kynge, and repossedyd all thynges as he before had done. And when the said. ii. corps hadde lyen in Paulys openly from the Sondaye tyll the Tuysdaye, they were hadde from thens and buryed where the kynge wolde assygne them.

The kynge thanne beynge in auctorytie, made prouycion for the defence of landynge of quene Margarete and his' sone, the whiche all this whyle laye at the see syde taryinge the wynde, and soo lastly landyd at , and came with a strength of Frenshmen and other, as far within ỹ lande as to a vyllage in called Tewkysbury, where the kynge mette with her and his' distressyd, and chasyd her company and slewe many of Tewkysbury felde.

' her.

theym.

theym. In the whiche batayll she was taken, and sir Edwarde her sone, and so brought vnto the kynge. But after the kynge hadde questyoned with the sayd sir Edwarde, and he had answeryd vnto hym contrarye his pleasure, he thenne strake hym with his gauntelet vpon the face: after whiche stroke so by hym receyued, he was by the kynges seruauntes incontynently slayne vpon the. iiii. day of the moneth of May.

Whan kynge Edwarde hadde thus subduyd his enemyes, anone he sent quene Margarete vnto London, where she restyd a season, and fynally she was sent home into her countre. And the goodes of sir Thomas Cook agayne ceasyd, and his wyfe put forth, and cõmaundyd to be kepte at the mayers.

Bastarde Fawconbrydge.

Vpon the. xiiii. daye of May folowyng, the bastarde of Fawconbrydge, that vnto hym had gaderyd a riottous and euyll disposyd company of shypmen and other, with also the assystence of the cõmons bothe of Essex and Kent, came in great multytude vnto the cytie of London, and after that the sayd company was denyed passage thorugh the cytie, sette vpon dyuerse parties therof, as Bysshoppes gate, Algate, London brydge, and a longe the waters syde, and shot gonnes and arowes, and fyred the gates with cruell malyce, as Bysshoppes gate and Algate, and faught so fyersly that they wanne the bulwerkys at Algate, and entred a certayne within the gate.

But the cytezeyns with comfort and ayde of Robert Basset alderman assygned to that gate, withstode the sayde rebellys soo manfully, that they slewe all suche as entred the gate, and compellyd the other to drawe abacke and forsake the gate; vpon whom the cytezeyns pursuyd, and chasyd them vnto the ferther Stratforde, and slewe and toke many of them prysoners.

Wherof, herynge, the other whiche asseyled the other parties of the cytie, fledde in lykewyse, whom the other cytezeyns pursuyd as ferre as Depforde, in sleynge and takynge of theym prysoners in great nombre, and after them raunsomyd as they had been Frenshmen. And the bastarde with his shypmen were chasyd vnto theyr shyppes lyinge at Blackwall, and there in the chase many [of them][1] slayne. And the sayd bastarde the nyght folowynge stale out his shippes out of the ryuer, & so departyd and escaped for the[2] tyme.

Thanne vpon Assencion Euyn next ensuynge, ỹ corps of Henry the. vi. late kynge was brought vnreuerently from ỹ Tower thorugh ỹ hygh stretes of ỹ cytie vnto Paulis *Fol. CC.xxiiii.* Church, and there lefte for that nyght, and vpon ỹ morowe conueyed with gleyuys & other wepyns, as he before thyther was broughte vnto Chertyssey, where he was buryed.

Henrici sexti mors.

Of ỹ deth of this prynce dyuerse tales were tolde: but the moost cõmon fame wente, that he was stykked with a dagger, by the handes of the duke of Glouceter, which, after Edwarde the. iiii. vsurpyd the crowne, and was kynge as after shall appere.

Thanne kynge Edwarde, whiche after this victory thus had at Tewkesbury, retourned vnto London, and vpon the Mondaye folowynge Ascencion Daye, he toke his iournaye into Kent, hauynge with hym a strength of people, and there sette his iustyces, & made inquysycions of the riot before done by the bastarde and his accessaryes, for the whiche, at Caunterbury & other good townes in Kent, dyuerse were put in execucion, of whom ỹ hedes were sent vnto London and sette vpon the bridge. And in lyke maner inquysycions were made in Essex, and some also of theym put in execucion, of whiche a capitayne named Spisynge was hangyd, and his hede sette vpon Aldgate: and many of the ryche cõmons of Kent were sette at greuous fynes, both for theymselfe and for theyr seruauntes. And whenne the kyng had thus spedde his iournay, he retourned and came to London vpon Whytson euyn; and ỹ done, soone after was bysshop Neuyll, archebysshop of Yorke, sent vnto Guynys and there kept as prisoner longe after. This was broder to ỹ marquys Mountagu, and to the erle of Warwyke.

Execucõn.

Fawconbridge.

Also in the ende of this maiers yere, was ỹ forenamed bastarde of Fawconbridge [was][1]

[1] *Omitted in* edit. 1542. 1559. [2] that. MS.

taken

taken aboute Southampton, & there put to execucion, whose hede was sent to London, and pyght vpon London bride amonge other.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxii.

Iohñ Aleyn.

Wyllyam Edwarde, grocer. Anno. xi.

Iohñ Chelley.

IN this yere, the erle of Oxenforde, whiche syne the season of Barnet felde hadde holden Seynt Myghellis Mount, was by an appoyntment taken thens, and shortly after sent vnto the castell of Guynes, where he remayned prysoner tyll the laste yere of Richarde the thirde, whiche was vpon. xiii[1]. yeres; in all whiche season my lady his wyfe myght neuer be suffred to come vnto hym, nor had any thyng to lyue vpon, but as the people of their charites wold gyue to her, or what she myght get with her nedyll or other suche conynge as she excercysed. The erle of Oxenforde.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiii.

Iohñ Browne.

Wylliam Hamptoñ, fysshemonger. Anno. xii.

Thomas Bledlow.

IN this yere, vpon the. vi. daye of Octobre, beganne a parliament at Westmynster; by auctorytie wherof an ayde was graunted to the kynge, towarde the great charge of his warres, there was[2] leuyed of mennes landes, as well of lordes as other. A parlyament.

This mayer, aboue all other, corrected sore bawdes and strumpettes, and causyd theym to be ladde aboute the towne w raye hoodes vpon theyr heddes dyuers and many, and sparyd none for mede nor for fauour, that were by the lawe atteynted, natwithstandyng that he myght haue take. xl.*li.* of redy money to hym offerid, for to haue spared one from that iugement. Meretrices.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiiii.

William Stokker.

Iohñ Tate, mercer. Anno. xiii.

Robert Byllysdon.

IN this yere, was ỹ duke of Exceter founden deed in the see atwene Douer and Calays, but howe he was drowned ỹ certaynte is nat knowen. Duke of Exceter.

In this mayers yere also was one Wylliam Oldhalle cõdempned vnto a draper of London called Cristofer Colyns, for the whiche condempnacion he remayned as a prysoner in Ludgate; wherupon a season he went at large with a keper, he brake from hym, and so escapyd, and after was taken and brought agayne to the sayde pryson. But that natwithstandynge, the sayd Cristofer suyd the sheryffes, and caused theym to spende great money in defendynge of his accion; and fynally were fayne, by waye of compremyse, to gyue vnto hym an hondreth marke for his duytie of lxxx.*li.* and odde.

And in this yere was one Iohñ Goos a Loller brent at the Tower Hylle for herysye; the whiche before dyner was delyueryd vnto Robert Byllydon, on[3] the sheryffes, to put in execucion ỹ same afternoone; wherefore he, lyke a charytable man, had hym home to his house, and there exorted hym that he shuld dye a Cristen man, & renye his false errours. But that other, after longe exortacõn harde, requyred ỹ sheryffe that he myght haue mete, for he sayd that he was sore hũgryd. Theñe the sheryffe cõmaundyd hỹ mete, wherof he toke as he had eyled nothinge, & sayd to suche as stode about hym, "I ete nowe a good and competent dyner, for I shall passe a lytell sharpe shower or I go to souper." Hereticus tenet. Hereticus credat vel vstus ab orbe recedat.

[1] xii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] the whyche was. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] oon of. MS.

souper." And whene he had dyned, he requyred that he myght shortly be ladde to his execucyon.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxv.

Edmonde Shaa.

Robert Drope, draper. Anno. xiiii.

Thomas Hylle.

THis yere, this kyng entending to make a voyage ouer see ito Fraūce, called before hym his lordes seuerally, both spirituall and temporall, to knowe theyr good myndes what of their free wylles they wolde ayde and depart with hym towarde the sayd voyage. And after he hadde so knowen their good disposicion to hym warde, he then sent for the mayer of London and his brethren the aldermen, and them seuerally examyned and exortyd to ayde & assyst hym towarde the sayd great iournaye; of whiche the maier for his parte granted. xxx.*li.* and of the aldermen some. xx. marke, & the leest. x.*li.*

Fol. CC.seuo.

The firste benyuolence.

And that done, he sent for all the trusty[1] commoners within the sayd cytie, and theym exortyd in lyke maner, whiche for the more partye graunted to hym the wages of halfe a man for a yere, the whiche amounted to. iiii.*li.* xi.*s.* iii.*d.* And after that he rode about the more parte of the lande, and vsed the people in suche fayre maner, that he reysed therby notable summes of money, the whiche way of the leuyinge of this money was after named a benyuolence.

Regis transfretacio.

Then the kynge thus hauynge this great substaunce of goods, made puruyaunce for the sayd iournaye. And vpon the. iiii. day of Iuly folowynge, in the. xv. yere of his reygne, rode with a goodly company thorugh the cytie towarde the see syde, and so spedd hym to Calays, and from thens into Fraunce. Wherof herynge, Lowys the Frenshe kynge assembled his people in great nombre, and so spedde hym towarde the kynge; but when both hoosts were met within shortly space, such offers of a pease were proferid by the Frenshe kynge, that fynally both prynces agreed vpon a pease to be hadde for the terme of bothe their lyues, and a yere after, as some wryters haue. For the perfourmaunce of whiche sayd pease, both prynces after mette vpon the daye of the Decollation of Seynt Iohn̄ the Baptyst, or the. xxix. day of August, at a place named in Frenshe Pynyak, and the. iiii. daye of Nouembre, as affermyth Gaguinus. But that cannat stande with, for kynge Edwarde was receyued agayne into London after his retourne out of Fraunce, the. xxviij. daye of Septembre. At this place was a ryuer, vpon the whiche a bridge was made suche wyse, that both prynces theron myght mete with suche company as eyther for them had appoynted. There also was ordeyned a place with a particon̄ atwene both prynces, that nother of them myght entre vnto other, but made with a lowpe, that eyther myght se other, and take eyther other by the hande.

A peas confermyd.

Where at the daye lymytted, eyther of theym mette with other hoostes[2] standynge a certayne distaunce from the ryuers syde in conuenyent araye. Then the sayd kynges there, after salutacion due made, eyther to other had longe communycacion. In conclusion wherof, as sayth Gagwyn, a peas was confirmyd atwene both realmes for. vii. yeres, for perfourmaunce wherof, as affermyth the sayd auctoure, the Frenshe kyng gaue vnto kyng Edwarde incontynently. lxxv. M. crownys of golde, & yerely after durynge the sayde. vii. yeres, l.M. crownys: and so he receyued in hande, accomptynge euery[3] at iiii.*s.* xv.M.*li.* and yerely after. x.M.*li.* whiche sayd. xv.M.*li.* the sayde Frenshe kynge borowed of his cytezayns of Parys. After this trewes or peas thus concludyd atwene these. ij. prynces, anone after theyr sonderynge, proclamacions were made therof thorugh both hoostes, and commaundement gyuen to the capitaynes that they shuld prouyde for theyr retourne homewarde. And soone vpon the Frenshe kynge sent vnto the dukys of Clarence

[1] thryfty. MS. [2] theyr hoostes. MS. [3] every crown.

and

and of Glouceter with other lordes, suche as were in kynge Edwardes fauour, great & costious gyfts.

Of the nyse & wanton disgysyd apparayll that the kynge Lowys ware vpon hym at the tyme of this metynge I myght make a longe rehersayl; but for it shulde sownde more to dishonour of suche a noble man, that was apparaylled more lyke a mynstrell than a prynce royal, therfor I passe it ouer. For albeit that he was so new fangyll in his clothinge, yet had he many vertues, wherof largesse was one, as it apperyd by sondry gyftes which he gaue vnto sondry straungers, whiche in his storye somdeale I haue towchyd: and also his bountie apperyd by a gyfte that he gaue vnto lorde Hastynges, than lorde chamberlayn, as. xxiiii. dosen of bollys, wherof halfe were gylt and halfe white, which weyed vpon. xvii. nobles euery cuppe or more. Then to retourne vnto kynge Edwarde; trowth it is, that, after the conformacion of that forsayd peas, kyng Edward retourned to Calays, and there shypped, and so spedde hym that vpon the. xxviiith daye of Septembre folowynge, he was with great tryumphe receyued of the mayer and cytezeyns of London at Blakheth, & with all honoure by theym conueyed thorugh the cytie vnto Westmynster; the mayer and aldermen beynge clade in scarlet, and the commoners to the nombre of. v.C. in murrey. De rege Lodowico.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxvi.

Hugh Bryce.

Robert Basset, salter. Anno. xv.

Robert Colwych.

THis yere this mayer dyd sharpe correccion vpon bakers for makynge of lyght brede, in so moche that he sette dyuerse vpon the pyllory, amonge the which, in the moneth of Iohn Mondue, baker, was there punyshed; and in the moneth of one named Willyam Hubbarde was also there shryued for lyke offence; and a woman named Agnes Deyntie was also there punysshed for sellyng of false myngyd butter.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxvii.

Richarde Rawson.

Rauffe Josseleyn, draper. Anno. xvi.

Willyam Horne.

IN this yere the mayer hauynge a great mynde to haue the wallys of the cytie repayred, by a consent of the benche, and of the comyn counsayll, caused the More Felde to be serchyd, and there prouyded for bryke and lyme; as firste causyd the erthe to be dyggyd and tempred, and then sette men on worke to moolde, and thenne sent into the west contre, and there purueyed wode for to bren it: and that done, sent into Kent, and there purueyed chalke, that shortly was brought into the sayd Moore Felde, & ryght there in a kylle whiche he in that season had prouyded, was brent, & made lyme of a great furtheraunce of that werke.

The mayer then beynge purueyed of brycke and also of lyme, the whiche was brent within the sayd moore, caused, by consent of a cõmon counsayll, to be graunted, that in euery parysshe churche euery Sondaye euery honest parysshon shuld paye towarde that charge. v.*d.* And for an example to other felysshyppes, he caused his owne company to make as moch of the walle as strechyth from the churche of Alhalowen within the said walle, vnto Bysshoppes gate. Whiche presydent caused other worshypfull felyshyppes to make the other parts, as now apperyth newe made; and the more part thereof done in this yere by his procurynge & callynge upon of hym, whiche was wonderful that somoche shuld be spedde in one yere, consyderynge the puruyaunce of the stuffe whiche had ben suffycient for some man to haue purueyed for in an hoole yere. Reparacio murorum. *Fol. CC.xxvi.*

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxvii. Anno Domini. M.iii.C.lxxvi.

Henry Calot[1].

Humfrey Heyforde, goldsmyth. Anno. xvii.

Iohn Stokker.

THis yere, that is to meane ỹ. xviii. daye of February, the duke of Clarence and . . . . . [2]brother to the kynge, thanne beyng prysoner in ỹ Tower, was secretely put to deth & drowned in a barell of maluesye within the sayd Tower. And this mayer this yere pursued also the reparacyon of the wallys, but nat so dylygently as his predecessour dyd, wherfore it was nat spedde as it myght haue been, and also he was a syke and a feble man, and hadde not so sharpe and quycke mynde as that other hadde. And one other cause was, whiche ensuythe of a generaltie, that for the more partie one mayer wyll nat fynesshe that thynge whiche that other begynneth, for then they thynke, be the dede neuer so good and profytable, that the honoure therof shalbe ascribed to ỹ begynner, and nat to the fynyssher, whiche lacke of charytie and desyre of veynglory causeth many good actes and dedys to dye and growe out of minde, to the great decaye of the cõmon weale of the cytie.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxviii. Anno Domini. M.iii.C.lxxix.

Robert Hardynge.

Richarde Gardyner, mercer. Anno. xviii.

Robert Byfelde.

THis yere was great mortalytie and dethe in London and many other partyes of this realme, the whiche beganne in the latter ende of Senii[3] in the presedynge yere, and contynued in this yere tylle the begynnynge of Nouembre, in the whiche passetyme dyed innumerable people in the sayd cytie and many places ellys where.

In this yere also, the mayer beynge at Paulys, knelynge in his deuocions at seynt Erkenwald shryne, Robert Byfelde, one of the shyreffs, vnauysidly knelyd downe nygh vnto the sayd mayer, wherof the mayer after reasonyd hym and layd it to his charge; but that other beyng some deale rude for lacke of conynge, answeryd the mayer stubburnly, and wold nat be aknowe of his offence; wherfore the mayer shewyd his behauer both of worde & dede vnto the benche, by auctorytie wherof, after the matyer hadde ben there at lengthe debated, the sayd Robert was fyned at. l.*li.* to be payd towarde the reparacion of the conduytes.

Correctio Vicecomitis.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxix. Anno Domini. M.iii.C.lxxx.

Thomas Ilam.

Bartylmewe Iamys, draper. Anno. xix.

Iohn Warde.

THis yere, one called Robert Deynys, for that that he presumyd to mary an orphan without lycense of ỹ mayer and aldermen, was for that offense demyd to paye to the chamber as a fyne, demyd by the sayd auctoryte, xx.*li.* And in the yere and moneth of were. iiii. felowes hanged at the Tower hylle, and incontyently theyr bodyes, with the gybet, brent vnto asshes, whiche execucion was for that they robbyd a churche, and entreatyd the sacrament of the aulter irreuerently.

Execucio.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxx. Anno Domini. M.iii.C.lxxxi.

William Danyell.

Iohn Browne[4]. Anno. xx.

Wyllyam Bacon.

THis yere kynge Edwarde requyred great sũmes of money to hym to be lent of the

[1] Colet. [2] second brother. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] September. [4] *The* MS. *adds* mercer.

cytezeyns

cytezeyns of London, to whom, after dyuerse assembles, they graunted to lende vnto hym. v.M. marke, for the leuyinge wherof a man was chosen of euery warde, that is to meane. xxv. men; the whiche. xxv. persones assembled in the Guyldhalle, sessyd all the cytie ouer with. ii. persones of euery parysshe to them assygned, whiche sayd. v.M. marke was repayed in the yere folowynge. A prest.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxii.

Robert Cate[1].
William Marryat[2], draper. William Wykyng. Anno. xxi.
Richarde Chawry.

THis yere in the moneth of February, or ende of Ianuary, dyed Wylliam Wykyng, one of the sheryffs, for whom was immedyatly chosen Richarde Chawry.

And in the moneth of Iulet folowynge, the king rode on huntynge into the forest of Waltham, whether he cõmaunded the mayer with a certayne of his brethren to come, and to gyue attendaunce vpon hym with certayne cõmoners of the cytie; where, when they were cõmyn, the kynge caused the game to be brought before them, so that they sawe course after course, & many a dere both rede and falowe to be slayne before them. And after that goodly disport was passyd, the kynge cõmaundyd his offycers to brynge the mayer and his company vnto a pleasaunt lodge made all of grene bowys, and garnisshed with tables and other thinges necessary, where they were set at dyner, and seruyd with many deyntie dysshes, and of dyuerse wynes good plentie, as whyte, rede and claret, and caused them to be sette to dyner or he were seruyd of his owne; & ouer that caused the lord chamberlayne w other lordes to hym assygned, to chere the sayd mayre and his company sondry tymes whyle they were at dyner, and at theyr departynge gaue vnto theym of venyson great plentie. And in the moneth of August folowynge, the kynge of his greate bounte sent vnto the mayresse and her susters, aldermennes wyfes. ii. hertes and. vi. bukkys, with a tonne of wyne to drynke with the sayde venyson; the whiche venyson & wyne was had vnto the Drapers halle, to whiche place, at daye assigned, the mayer desyred the aldermen and theyr wyfes with sondry comoners, and there the venyson with many other good dysshes were etyn, and the sayd wyne merely dronken. The cause of whiche bountie thus shewyd by the kynge was, as moost men toke it, for that that the mayer was a marchaunte of wonderous auentures, into many & sondry countres, by reason whereof the kynge had yerely of hym notable summes of money for his customes, besyde other pleasures that he had shewyd to the kynge before tymes. Liberalitas regis. Fol. CC.xxvii.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxiii.

William Whyte.
Edmonde Shaa, goldsmyth. Anno. xxii.
Iohn Mathewe.

THis yere, that is to meane of the mayer, and begynnyng of the. xxiii. yere of the kynge, at Westmynster, vpon the. ix. day of Apryll, dyed that noble prynce Edwarde the. iiii. late kynge of Englande, whose corps was after conueyed with due solempnitye vnto Wyndesore, and there honourably buryed, when he had reygned, to rekyn his beynge[3] out of the lande, with all other tyme, full. xxii. yeres, and asmoche as from the. iiii. daye of Marche vnto the ix. day of Apryll, leuynge after hym. ii. sonnes, that is to say prynce Edwarde his eldest sone and Richarde duke of Yorke, and. iii. doughters, as Elizabeth that after was quene, Cecyle, and Katheryne.

¶ Edwarde the. v.

EDwarde the. v. of that name, and sone vnto Edwarde the. iiii, beganne his reygne

[1] Tate. MS. [2] Haryat. MS. [3] *The later editions have* beginninge.

on the realme of Englande the. ix. daye of Apryll, in the begynnynge of the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCCC.lxxxiii. and the. xxiiii. yere of the. xi. Lowys than kyng of Fraunce. Anone as kyng Edwarde the. iiii. was deed, grudge and vnkyndnesse beganne to take place atwene the kynges and the quenes allye, for the lorde marquys of Dorset broder vnto the quene, & other of his affynytie, had then the rule and kepynge of this yonge kynge, whiche at the tyme of his faders dethe was of the age of. xi. yere or there about, and so beynge in this gydynge in the Marche of Walys, conueyed hym towarde London, and there to make prouycion for his coronacion. and for other necessary thynges for his weale. But the duke of Glouceter, brother vnto Edwarde the. iiii., entendynge otherwyse, as after shal appere, with a competent nombre of gentylmen of the North, all clad in blacke, mette with the kynge at Stonyng Stratford, & there after dissymuled countenaunce made atwene hym and the foresayd marquys, dischargyd hym of the rule of the kynge, & toke vpon hym the rule, & so from thens beynge accompanyed with the duke of Bukkyngham, brought the kynge with all honour towarde London. Wherof herynge quene Elizabeth, moder vnto the kynge, ferynge the sequele of this besynesse, went or tooke seyntwary within Westmynster, with her yonger sone Richarde the duke of Yorke. And the kyng drawynge nere vnto the cytie vpon the. iiii. daye of May, was of the mayer and his cytezeyns mette at Harnesey parke, the mayer and his bretherne beynge clothed in scarlet and the cytezeyns in vyolet, to the nombre of. v. hondred horses, and thanne from thens conueyed vnto the cytie, the kynge beyng in blewe velnet, and all his lordes and seruauntes in blacke clothe, and so after conueyed vnto the bysshoppes palays of London, & there lodgyd. And shortly after the sayd duke of Glouceter inuegelyd so the arbysshop of Caunterbury namyd Bowchier, that he went with hym to the quene Elizabeth, and there made suche assured promyse to the sayd quene, that she vpon the sayd archebisshoppes promyse, delyuered vnto theym her yonger sone duke of Yorke. And than the sayd duke caused the kyng to be remoued vnto the Tower and his broder with hym; but the quene, for all fayer promyses to her made, kept her and her doughters within the foresaid seintwary, and the duke lodgid hymselfe in Crosbyes place in Bysshoppis gate strete.

Dissimulatio viget.

Than prouycion was made for the kynges coronacion, in whiche passe tyme the duke beyng admytted for lord protectour, caused sir Antony Wydyuyle, called lorde Scalys, and broder vnto the quene, a vertuous knyghte, with the lorde Richard the quenes sone, sir Richarde Hawte and sir Thomas Vaghan, knyghtes, to be behedyd at Pountfreyt, more of wyll thanne of iustyce. Than the lord protectour, in furtherynge of his purpose & euyll entent, sent for the more partie of the nobles of the lande, and behauyd hym so couertly in al his matyers, that fewe vnderstode his wykked purpose. And so dayly kepynge & holdynge the lordes in counsayll and felyng theyr myndes, sodaynly vpon the. xiii. daye of Iuny, beyng within the Tower in the counsayll chambre, with dyuerse lordes with hym, as the duke of Bukkyngham, erle of Derby, the lorde Hastynges, than lorde chamberlayne, with dyuerse other, an owte crye by his assent of treason was made in the vtter chambre, wherwith the sayd lorde protectour beynge warnyd, roose vp & yode hymselfe to the chamber dore, and there receyued in suche persones as he before had appoynted to execute his malycious purpose, the whiche incontynently set hande vpon the forenamyd lord chamberlayne and other: in the whiche styrrynge the erle of Derby was hurte in the face, and kepte a whyle vnderholde. Thanne by commaundement of the sayd lorde protectour, the sayd lorde chamberlayne in all hast was ladde in the court or playne where the chapell of the Tower standeth, and there without iugement, or longe tyme of confession or repentaunce, vpon an ende of a longe and great tymber logge, whiche there laye with other for the repayrynge of the sayd Tower, caused his hedde to be smytten of, and all for he knewe well that he wolde nat assent vnto his wycked entent, whose body with the hed was after caried vnto Wyndesore, & there buryed by the tombe of kynge Edwarde.

Execucio.

Lorde Hastinges murderid.

Pol. CC.xxviii.

After

After whiche cruelte thus done, he shortly after sette in suer kepynge suche persones as he suspectyd to be agayne hym; wherof the bysshoppes of Yorke and of Ely, were. ii. as it was sayd, and the erle of Derby, for fere of his sone the lord Strange, lest he shuld haue arreryd Cheshyre & Lancastershyre agayne hym, was sette at large.

Thanne began the longe couert dissymulacion, whiche of the lorde protectour had been so craftly shadowyd, to breke out at large, insomoche that vpon the Sonday folowyng at Paulys crosse, hymself, with the duke of Bukkyngham, and other lordes beynge present, by the mouth of doctour Rafe Shaa, in the tyme of his sermon, was there shewyd openly that the childerne of kynge Edwarde the. iiij. were nat legitimat, nor ryghtfull enherytours of the crowne, with many dislaunderous wordes, in preferrynge of the tytle of the sayd lorde protectour, and in disanullyng of the other, to the great abusion of all the audyence, except such as fauoured the matyer, which were fewe in nombre, if the trouthe or playnesse myght haue ben shewyd. Of the whiche declaracion, as the fame went after, the sayd doctour Shaa toke such repentaunce, that he lyued in lytell prosperite after. And the more he was wonderyd of that he wold take vpon hym suche a besynesse, consyderynge that he was so famous a man, both of his lernynge and also of naturall wytte. Than vpon the Tuysdaye folowynge, an assemble of the commons of the cytie was appoynted at the Guyldhalle, where beynge present the duke of Bukkyngham, with other lordes, sent downe from the sayd lorde protectour, and there, in the presence of the mayer and comynaltie, rehersyd the ryght and title that the lorde protectour had to be preferred before his[1] of his broder kynge Edwarde to the ryght of the crowne of Englande; the which processe was in so eloquent wyse shewyd & vttred, without any impedyment of spyttynge or other countenaunce, and that of a longe whyle with so good sugred wordes of exortacion and accordynge sentence, that many a wyse man that daye meruayled and commendyd hym for the good ordryng of this[2] wordes; but nat for the entent and purpose the whiche that thervpon ensuyd. Predicacio de famosa.

Vpon the Thursdaye than next ensuynge, beynge the. xx. daye of Iuny, the sayd lorde protectour takyng then vpon hym as kyng and gouernour of the realme, went with great pompe vnto Westmynster, and there toke possessyon of the same. Where he beynge sette in thegreat halle in the see royall, with the duke of Norfolke, before called the lorde Hawarde, vpon the ryght hande, & the duke of Suffolke vpon the left hande, after the royall othe there taken, called before hym the iuges of the lawe, gyuynge vnto them a longe exortacion and streyght commaundement for the mynystrynge of his lawys, and to execute iustyce, and that without delaye. After whiche possessyon takynge, and other ceremonys there done, he conueyed[3] vnto the kynges palays within Westmynster, and there lodgyd. Vsurpacio.

In which passe tyme the prynce, or of ryght kynge Edwarde the. v., with his broder the duke of Yorke, were put vnder suer kepynge within the Tower, in suche wyse that they neuer came abrode after.

And thus endyd the reygne of Edward the. v. when he had borne the name of a kyng by the space of (two monethes and. xi. dayes). And vpon the Frydaye, beyng the. xxi[4]. daye of Iuny, was the sayde lorde protectour proclaymed thoroughe the cytie kynge of Englande, by the name of Richarde the thirde.

Thenne, soone after, for fere of the quenes blode and other, whiche he had in iolousy, he sent for a strength of men out of the North; the whiche came shortly to London, a lytell before his coronacion, and musteryd in the Moore Feldes wele vpon iiii. M. men, in theyr beste iakkis and rusty salettes, with a fewe in whyte harnys, nor[5] bunysshed to the sale; and shortly after his coronacyon, were countermaundyd home with suffycyent rewardes for their trauayll.

[1] his neues the sonnes. edit. 1559. [2] his. [3] was conveyed. [4] xxii. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [5] not. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

The lorde marqeys.

In whiche foresayd passe tyme, the marquys of Dorset, broder vnto quene Elizabeth, that before was fled, escapyd many wonderfull daungers, both aboute Lonoon, Ely, and other places, whereof to wryte the maner and circumstaunce wolde aske a longe and great leysour.

RIcharde the thirde of that name, sone to Richarde late duke of Yorke, and yongest broder vnto Edwarde the. iiii. late kynge, beganne his domynyon ouer the realme of Englande the. xx. daye of Mydsomer moneth, in the yere of our Lorde God. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. and the. xxv. yere of xi. Lowys, than kynge of Fraunce: of whom tedyous it is to me to wryte the tragedyous hystory, except that I remembre that good it is to wryte and put in remembraunce the punysshment of synners, to the ende that other may exchewe to fall in lyke daunger.

Than it foloweth anone as this man had taken vpon hym, he fyll in great hatrede of the more partye of the nobles of his realme, insomuche that suche as before louyd and praysed hym, and wolde haue iuparted[1] lyfe and good with hym if he had remayned styll as protectoure, now murmuryd and grudgyd agayne hym in suche wyse, that fewe or none fauouryd his partye, except it were for drede or for the great gyftes that they receyuyd of hym. By meane wherof he wanne dyuers to folowe his mynde, the whiche after deceyued hym.

And after his coronacion solempnyzed, whiche was holden at Westmynster the. vi. daye of Iuly, where also the same daye was crowned dame Anne his wyfe, he thenne, in shorte processe folowynge, rode northwarde to pacyfie that countre, and to redresse certayne riottes there lately done. In the passe tyme of whiche iournay, he beynge at Yorke, creatyd his legittimat sone prynce of Walys, and ouer that made his bastarde sone capitayn of Calays, whiche encreasyd more grudge to hym warde, as after shall appere.

Anno Domini. M.ccc.lxxiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiiii.

Thomas Norlando.

Robert Byllysdon, haberdasher. Anno. ii.

Wyllyam Martyn.

IN this yere the foresayd grudge encreasinge, and the more for asmoche as the common fame went that kynge Richarde hadde within the Tower put vnto secrete deth the. ii. sonnes of his broder Edwarde the. iiii. for the whiche, and other causes hadde within the brest of the duke of Bukkyngham, the sayd duke, in secrete maner, conspyred agayne hym, and allyed hym with dyuerse gentylmen, to the ende to bryng his purpose aboute.

But howe it was, his entent was espyed and shewyd vnto the kynge, and the kynge in *Fol. CC.xxix.* all haste sent for to take hym, he then beynge smally accompanyed at his manour of Brekenok, in the marche of Walys. Wherof the sayd duke beyng ware, in all hast he fledde from his sayd manour of Brekenok, vnto the house of a seruaunt of his owne, callyd Banaster, and that in so secrete maner, that fewe or none of his housholde seruaunts knewe where he was become.

In the whiche passe tyme kyng Richarde thynkynge that the duke wolde haue assembled his people, and so to haue gyuen to hym batayll, gaderyd to hym great strengthe, and after tooke his iournaye westwarde to haue mette with the said duke. But whanne the kynge was infourmed that he was fledde, anone he made proclamacyons that who that myght take the sayd duke shulde haue for a rewarde. M.*li.* of money, and the value of an hondreth pounde land by yere to hym, & to his heyres for euer more. Wherof herynge the foresayd Banaster, were it for mede of the sayd rewarde, or for the fere of

[1] [jeopardied?]

losynge

losynge of his lyfe and good, discoueryd the duke vnto the sheryffe of the shyre, and caused hym to be taken & soo brought vnto Salysbury, where the kynge than laye.

And all be it that the sayde duke made importune laboure to haue comyn to the kynges presence, yet nat that natwithstandynge he was there behedyd vpon the daye of the moneth of without speche or syght of the kynge. Than all suche gentylmen as hadde appoynted to mete with the sayd duke, were so dismayed, that they knewe nat what for to doo, but they that myght fled the lande, and some toke seyntwary places as they myght wyne vnto theym. But the kynge, to the ende to lette theym of their purpose, sent to the see coostes and stoppyd theyr waye in that that he myght, & he with a certayne strengthe rode vnto Exceter, where aboute that season was taken sir Thomas Selenger, knyght, and. ii. gentylmen, that one beyng named Thomas Ramme, and that other [1] the whiche. iii. persones were there shortly after behedyd.

The duke of Bukkyngeham put in execucion.

Selenger w[e] other.

And soon after in Kent were taken sir George Browne, knyght, & Robert Clifforde, esquyer, & brought vnto the Tower of London. And vpon the daye of Octobre the sayd sir George & Robert were drawen from Westmynster vnto the Tower Hyll, and there behedyd.

And the same daye were. iiii. persones, lately yomen of the crowne, with kynge Edward the. iiii. drawen out of Southwerke thorugh the cytie vnto Tyborne, and there hangyd. And when the kynge had spedde his iournay in the West countree, he hastyd hym towarde London; wherof the mayer and the cytezeyns hauynge knowlege, made prouyssyon to receyue hym, and vpon that made puruyaunce for his horse with violet clothynge and other necessaryes.

Execucion.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C lxxx.iiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxv.

Richarde Chester.
Thomas Hylle[2]. Thomas Bretayne. Anno. iii.
Raffe Astry.

IN the begynnynge of this mayers yere, and seconde yere of kynge Richarde, that is to meane vpon the. ix. day of the moneth of Nouembre, the mayer and his bredern beynge cladde in scarlet, and the cytezeyns to the nombre of. CCCC[3]. or moo in vyolet, met the kyng beyonde Kenyngton in Sotherey, and soo brought hym thorugh the cytie to the Warderobe besyde the Blacke Friers, where for that tyme he was lodgyd. And in short tyme after was sir Roger Clyfforde[4], knight, taken aboute Southampton, and from thens sent to the Tower of London, and after areygned and iuged at Westmynster; and from thens vpon the daye of drawen vnto the Tower Hylle. But whenne he came fore agayne Seint Martynes the Graunt, by the helpe of a fryer whiche was his confessour, and one of theym that was nexte aboute hym, his cordes were so lowsyd or cut that he put hym in deuoyr to haue entred the seyntwary. And lykely it had beene that he shuld haue so done, hadde nat been the quycke helpe and rescous of the sheryffes & theyr offycers, the whiche constrayned hym to lye downe vpon the hardyll, and newly [landyd hym][5] & so baryed hym to the sayd place of execucion, where he was deuyded in two pecys, and after his body with the head was conueyed to the Fryers Austynes, and there buryed before seynt Katherynes aulter.

The king receyued.

Sir Roger Clyfforde taken.

And in the moneth of February folowyng dyed Richarde Chester, one of the sheriffes, for whome was immedyatly chosen Raffe Astry, to contynue for that yere folowynge. Kynge Richarde than ledynge his lyfe in great agony and doubte, trustynge fewe of such as were about hym, sparyd nat to spende the great treasour, which before kynge Edwarde the. iiii. hadde gaderyd, in gyuynge of great and large gyftes; by meane wherof he aloonly wastyd nat the great treasour of his sayd broder, but also he was in suche daunger, that

Obitus vicecomitis.

[1] *A later hand in the* MS. *has here added* Thomas Halsb. [2] *The* MS. *adds* grocer. [3] v.C. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [4] sir Robert Clifforde. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] band him.

he

he borowyd many notable summes of money of ryche men of this realme, and specially of the cytezeyns of London, wherof the leest summe was. xl.*li.* For suertie wherof he delyueryd to theym good and sufficyent pledges.

In the whiche passe tyme many and sondry gentilmen, and dyuerse sheryffes, departyd ouer the see into Fraunce, & therealliyed theim with that vertuous prynce Henry, sone vnto the erle of Richmonde, discendyd lyneally from Henry the. iiii. lately kyng of this realme, and couenauntyd with hym, that if he wolde mary Elizabeth, the eldest doughter of Edwarde the. iiii. they wolde, with Goddes helpe, strength hym to be kynge of Englande, and ayde hym in suche maner, that he & also she were or myght be possessyd of theyr ryghtfull enherytaunce. Amonge the whiche gentylmen, sir Iamys Blount[1], then kepar of the castell of Guynys, was one, whiche with hym conueyed the erle of Oxenforde, that longe tofore hadde ben prysoner within the sayd castell.

Erle of Oxenforde delyuered.

Vpon which agrement thus concludyd, prouycion by theym and theyr frends was made to sayle into Englande. And after all thynges prepayred, the said prynce, with a small companye of Englysshe, Frenshe, & Brytons, toke shyppynge in Fraunce or Brytayne, & so landyd lastly in the porte of Mylbourne[2] in the moneth of August. For whose defence of landynge, kynge Richarde, for somoche as he feryd hym lytell, made but small prouycion.

Whyle thyse foresayde gentylmen of dyuerse coostes of Englande escapyd as is aboue-sayd ouer the see, of that affynyte was one named Wyllyam Colyngbourne taken, and after he had been holden a season in pryson, he, with another gentylman, named Turbyruyle, were brought vnto Guyldehalle, and there areygned; but the sayd Turbyruyle was repryed to pryson, and that other was caste for sondry treasons: & for a ryme which was layde to his charge, that he shulde make in derysion of the kynge and his counsayll, as folowith.

Colyngbourne.

The catte, the ratte, and Louell our dogge,
Rulyth all Englande vnder a hogge.

Fol. CC.xxx. The whiche was ment, that Catisby, Ratclyffe, and the lorde Louell, ruled the lande vnder the kynge, which bare the whyte bore for his conysaunce. For the whiche and other vpon the daye of he was put to the moost cruell deth at the Tower Hylle, where for hym were made a newe payer of galowes. Vpon the whiche, after he hadde hangyd a shorte season, he was cutte downe, beynge alyue, & his bowellys rypped out of his bely, and cast into the fyre there by hym, and lyued tyll the bowcher put his hande into the bulke of his body; insomuch that he sayd in the same instant, "O Lorde Ihesu, yet more trowble," & so dyed to the great compassion of moche people.

Thanne to retourne vnto the noble prynce & his company; when he was commyn vnto the lande, he incontyently knelyd downe vpon the erth, and with meke countenaunce and pure deuocion began this psalme: "Iudica me Deus, et decerne causam meam," &c. The whiche whenne he hadde fynysshid to the ende, and kyssed the grounde meekely and reuerently, made the signe of the crosse vpon hym, he commaundyd suche as were aboute hym boldly in the name of God and seint George to sette forewarde.

Whenne the landynge of this prynce was blowen aboute the lande, many was the man that drewe vnto hym, as well suche as were in sondry seyntwaryes, as other that were abrode, so that his strength encreasid shortly. Than the kynge gaderyd his power in all haste that spedde hym in suche wyse, that vpon the. xxii. daye of August, and begynnyng of the third yere of his reygne, he mette with the sayd prynce nere vnto a vyllage in Leycetershyre, named Bosworth, nere vnto Leyceter, where atwene theym was foughten a sharpe batayll, and sharper shulde haue been if the kynges partye had ben fast to hym;

Bellum de Bosworth.

[1] Tyrrell. MS. [2] *Omitted in the* MS.

but

but many towarde the felde refucyd hym, and yode vnto that other partie, and some stode houynge a ferre of, tyll they sawe to whiche partye the victory fyll.

In conclucon kynge Richarde was there slayne, and vpon his partye the duke of Norfolke, before tyme named lorde Howarde, with Brekyngbury lieutenaunt of the Tower, & many other. And amonge other was there taken on lyue the erle of Surrey, sone to the foresayd duke of Norffolke, and sent vnto the Tower of London, where he remayned as prysoner longe tyme after.

Thanne was the corps of Richarde, late kynge, spoyled, &, naked, as he was borne, cast behynde a man, and so caryed unreuerently overthwarte the horse backe vnto the fryers at Leyceter; where after a season that he had lyen, that all men myght beholde hym, he was there with lytel reuerence buryed. And thus with mysery endyd this prynce, which rulyd mostwhat by rygour and tyrannye, when he in great trowble and agonye had reygned or vsurpyd by the space of. ii. yeres. ii. monethes &. ii. dayes.

And then was the noble prynce Henry admytted for kynge, and so proclaymed kyng by the name of Henry the. vii. The which sped hym shortly to London, so that vpon the. xxviii. daye of the sayde moneth of August, he was by the mayer and the cytezeyns met in good araye, as the mayer and aldermen in scarlet, and the cytezeyns in vyolet, at Harnesey Parke, and from thens conueyed thorughe the cytie vnto the bysshop of London palays, and there for that tyme lodgyd.

And vpon the. xi. day of Octobre next folowynge, than beynge the swetynge sykenesse of newe begon, dyed the sayd Thomas Hylle than of London mayer, & for hym was chosen as mayer sir Wyllyam Stokker knyght and draper, which dyed also of the sayd sykenesse shortly after; & then Iohn Warde, grocer, was chosen mayer, which so contynued tyll the Feeste of Symonde and Iude folowynge. Swetynge sykenesse.

Charlys the. ix.

KArolus or Charlys the. ix. or. viii. of that name, sone vnto the. xi. Lowys, beganne his reigne ouer the realme of Fraunce the. iiii. day of Septembre, in the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCCC.lxxxiiii. and the seconde yere of Richarde the thirde, at that tyme kynge of Englande.

This Charlys was noble of wytte and meke of condicion, the whiche his fader wolde nat sette to lernynge of letters in his yougth, lest that by suche study he shuld at his lawfull age haue therby the more refrayned hym from knyghtly and marcyall actes. But whenne he came to mannes astate he than was ryght sory, and wolde saye full often, to his famyliers, a prynce is greatly blemysshed whenne he lakketh conynge of lecture. He was also in his youth so weke and impotent, that he lakked naturall strength as was accordynge to his age, insomoche that he myght nat goo; and whan he shulde ryde, he had alwaye on eyther syde of the hors. ii. men to staye hym, and to gyue on hym lyke attendaunce. Than after the solempnytie of his coronacion endyd in the cytie of Raynys, whiche there was solempnyzed w great pompe vpon the Sondaye next ensuynge the Feest of seynt Denys, commyssions were sent oute into all coostes of his domynyon, for to enquere of all superfluous gyfts gyuen before tyme by his fader, the whiche shortly after were resumed into the kynges hande. And in that season Olyuer Damman, (whom Lowys had in many great romes and offyces set, and by his dayes had hym in synguler loue and fauoure, insomoche, as before I haue shewyd in the ende of the story of the sayd Lowys, he made a specyall request vnto this Charlys his sone, that he shuld specially cherysshe this sayd Damman,) now was appechyd of treason, with one Danyell a Flemynge; the whiche after inquisicion of theym made, both after the lawe of that lande were iugyd to deth and soo put in execucion of hangynge, whose deth of the nobles and astats of the realme was lytell ruyd, consyderynge the rome that he bare by kynge Lowys dayes, and

the ignobylitie of his byrth, as an handcrafty man & barbour. After whose deth a metrician compyled these versis folowynge.

Sunt tua criminibus ridencia tempora tonsor,
Currere que, subito, prouida parca vetat.
Hoc poteras olim longe prenoscere Damma,
Ut saltem horrores tollere cede pios.
Te natura humilem, cum mater Flandra tulisset,
Arte vna noras radere cesariem,
Fol. CC.xxxii. Hunc talem et seruum te sepe lucetia[1] vidit,
Tutus ab hac poteras ducere sorte dies.
Raptus ad excelsam Lodowici principis aulam
Mox herebi fur furias moribus, ante venis,
Et caput huic tendens[2], dum suffers lingere ficos
Pre ducibus regi, regulus alter eras.
Quid tibi non licuit, soboles tam dira Neronis,
Nemo non vixit te reserente reus,
Nemo Dei sacra, censuram, nemo gerebat
Gaudia, qui renuit premere dona tibi,
Protenus exilium vel mors vel mulita[3] Negantem
Pressit: eras iudex, lictor et exicium.
Regnasti satis est, surgunt nova sedera[4] mundo,
Turba celestorum[5] territa luce fugit,
Agnosce, o tonsor, quo te scelus extulit atrox,
Et te precipitem depulit in laqueos.
Te Daniel, te dira cohors, te Menimius[6] odit,
Et scelerum auctorem dampnat et insequitur.
Nescio quid de te superi vel fata deponunt,
Seu lictore cades, seu cruce liber eas:
Una tamen vulgi constans sentencia, furcas
Expedit[7], vt faciet, te periunte, odium.
Interea vinctus culpas absterge gemendo,
Peccasti, morti[8] est nunc redimenda salus.

The whiche metyr or versis to theym that haue none vnderstandynge in Laten, maye be expowned in maner as foloweth.

The laughynge tymes with theyr crymes spent,
Thou barboure are ronne, the which by sodayne fate
Are nowe forboden, wherof the clere entent
Thou myght haue knowen, Damman, right well the state;
When thou, by meanes which were inordinat,
Put vnto deth many an innocent man
By cruell malyce, and well remembryd than

That, of lowe byrth, Flaundres thy moder the fedde[9],
And taught the a crafte thy heer well to shaue,
Lucecia[1], that cytie where thou thy lyfe ledde,

[1] Lutetia. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] tondens. edit. 1559. [3] mulcta. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.
[4] [s dera] [5] scælestorum. edit. 1559. [6] Memmius. edit. 1559. [7] expelit. [8] morte.
[9] fledde. edit. 1533.

Wytnessyth the a seruaunt therin thy lyuynge to craue,
And for thy dayes an honest lyfe to haue.
But whan thou were in Lowys court vp brought,
Than had thou no mynde that thou were come of nought.

But lyke the helle hounde thou waxed full furyous,
Expressynge thy malyce when thou to honoure styed,
Thynkynge for somoche as that prynce bounteous
His hede and herde to be he nought denyed,
And with all worldly pleasure he also the allyed,
The before his prynces makynge his gouernour;
Thy selfe thou blyndest with worldly vayne honour:

Whiche made the so proude, thou sone of harde Neroun,
That none myght lyue that thou accusyd of cryme.
No man was cursyd, nor none had punyssion,
That wolde thy hande with golde of gyftes lyme;
And who that nat his gyfte offred in tyme,
Outher deth or exyle to hym was soone applyed,
For as iuge and hangman thou all thynge excercised.

Thou reygned longe ynough, but now are sprongen newe
Sterrys to the worlde, and fledde is now clerely
The scelerat flokke; wherfore thou barbour yet rewe
Thyne odyous actes, whiche haue the sodaynly
Cast downe from welth in snarys bytterly;
For also Danyell the moste odyous fere
Dampnyth the of cryme whiche with the deth' here.

I knowe nat what of the the vpper bodyes aboue
Haue defyned, whether by sworde or by gybet
Thou shuld ende the lyfe; but one thynge I approue:
The sentence hooly of the people is sette,
That on a galowe thou shulde paye deth his dette.
Inwardly therfore bewayll so thyne offence,
That by this deth to God thou mayst make recompence.

Thus execucion of this Damman & his felowe endyd and fynysshed, to the lytell compassion of the people, within fewe dayes after another of the affeccionat seruauntes of kyng Lowys, named Iohn Doyacon, for trespasse & hatered by his occacion & deserte vnto the common people, was with all shame brought to the market place of Parys, and there beraft of both his erys. After which felony to hym done, he was there ryght banysshed the court for euer.

And thus two of the moste specyall and derest beloued seruauntes and counsayllours of kyng Lowys, where shortly after his deth brought vnto confeccion[1]: by reason wherof, as affermyth myne auctour Gagwyne, arose a prouerbe amonge the Frenshemen, sayinge (Principibus obsequi hereditarium non esse:) the whiche is to meane, the seruyce of prynces is nat heredytable. This tyme thus passyd, with many other matyers whiche I ouer passe, the season approchyd that varyaunce and enuy began to moue amonge some

[1] dyeth. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559. [2] confusion. edit. 1533. 1542. 1559.

nobles of the laude; in somoche that the duke of Orleaunce disdayned that Anne, suster vnto the kynge, with suche as she wolde call to counsayll, had all the rule aboute the kynge: wherfore he entendyng to haue the sayd rule, for somoche as he had maryed that other doughter of Lowys, gaderyd vnto hym strength of knyghtes, purposely to remoue from the kynge suche as he lyked and to sette aboute hym suche parsones as he thought conuenyent.

Fol. CCxxxiii. But how it was for lacke of wysely ordervnge of his people or other neclygence, at a place called Seynt Albynys he was taken of his aduersaries, and so by the kynge commaundyd to pryson to the castell of Byturicence, where he remayned longe tyme after. It was nat longe after that Maximylian, the whiche had maryed duke Charlys doughter of Burgoyne, gaderyd his sowdyours, to haue releued the foresayd duke of Orleaunce out of pryson; but he preuayled nat. Durynge whiche warre, Fraunceys, duke of Brytayne, dyed, whose doughter named Anne, and enherytour of that duchye, Maximylian had before trouth plyted for his lawfull wyfe; wherfore he herynge of the deth of the sayd Fraunceys, shortly entred the terrytory of Britayne, and seasyd it for his owne: but Charlys, with his Frenshmen, withstode hym by suche force, that he was constrayned to axe helpe of our soueraygne dom kynge[1] the. vii., the whiche in most bounteuous maner ayded & assysted hym both with men & money, to the kynges excedynge great charge and coste. Howe be in the ende the Frenshe kyng had his entent, and than maryed the sayd Anne duchesse of Brytayne, and refusyd Margarete the doughter of Maximylian, whiche before had maryed at Ambase, as before I haue shewyd to you in the ende of the story of his fader Lowys. After which victory thus opteyned by this Charlys in Brytayne, he made clayme and pretence vnto the lande of Scicilia or Scicile; and by the exortacion and stirrynge of the pope[2], Alexander the sixte, he with a stronge hoost entred the same both by lande and by water. To whom was a great ayde the duke of Mylayne, by whose meanes he shortly wanne a stronge cytie or towne named Campania, and dyuers other townes, and in processe Naples the chief cytie, that belonged vnto the kynge of Naplys; in somoche that he constrayned Alphounce, that thanne was kynge of Naplys and of Scicile, to forsake that countree, and so had the domynyon of the more parte of both the sayde countrees; the whiche whenne he hadde set in suche ordre as he thought conuenyent, he toke his iournaye homewarde into Fraunce thorugh Italy. In whiche passage this Charlys was beset of the Venycyans & other Italyens, the whiche entendyd to haue stoppyd his waye, and metynge with hym at a place called in Laten Fornouyences, gaue vnto hym batayll; wherof, as sayth myne auctour, he wanne the victory to his great honour considerynge his few sowdiours agayne their multytude and strength.

But to this sayinge repugne the Italyens dwellynge in London, and say, that if the said Charlys had nat sped hym fastly into Fraunce, he had nat comyn there that yere; but howe so it was he retourned home in sauete.

And soone after, [pope Alexander][3] foresayd toke such pleasure agayne the sayd Charlys, that he stirred almost all Cristen prynces of the worlde agayne hym; he had suche hatred to the great honoure of the Frenshe kynge, as sayth myn auctour Gagwyne, the which in all his werkys extollyth the dedes of Frenshemen ferther than may be veryfyed in moche of his wrytyng. [But whatso he wryte of the pope, it is to be demyd, that he wolde nat take so great party agayne this Charlys, and excite other prynces to do the same, except it had ben for great & vrgent causes, and nat for malyce, as he affermeth only.][4]

[1] Lord kyng Henry. [2] the bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [3] Alexander bishop of Rome. edit. 1542. [4] *Omitted in the* edit. 1542. 1559.

And

And thus the sayd Gagwyne endeth the story of the sayd Charlys, in the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCCC.lxxxxv. and the. xi. yere of the reygne of the same Charlys, thanne presently reygnynge and gydyng the realme of Fraunce, whiche was the. x. yere of our moost redoubtyd prynce kynge Henry the. vii.

EXPLICIT.

Thus endeth the newe Cronycles of Englande
and of Fraunce, emprynted by RICHARDE
PYNSON, prynter vnto the Kyngs noble
grace. The yere of our Lord God
a. M.CCCCC.xvi. The. vii.
daye of the moneth of
February.

Of kynge Henry the. vii.

HEnry the. vii. of that name, sone vnto the erle of Rychemounte, began his domynyon ouer ỹ realme of Englande the. xxii. daye of August, in the yere of our Lorde God. M.CCCC.lxxxv. and the seconde yere of the. viii. Charlys then kynge of Fraunce, and the. xxx. daye of Octobre folowynge, with great solempnytie, ỹ said Henry was crowned at Westmynster. This magnyficent & excellent prynce Henry the. vii. thus payinge to deth his dette of natůre, the Saterday next before seynt Georges daye, in the nyght, dyed, (whiche Saterdaye was the. xxi. daye of Apryll,) at his manour of Rychemoůt, as before is sayd, of whom suffycient lawde and prayse can nat be put in wrytynge, consyderynge ỹ contynuell peace and tranqullytie whiche he kept this his lande & cōmons in, with also this subduynge of his outwarde enemyes of the realmes of Fraunce and Scotlande, by his great polycy and wysdome, more than by shedynge of Cristen blode or cruell warre: and ouer ruled soo myghtely his subgectes, and mynystred to them suche iustyce, that nat aloonly they louyd & drade hym, but all Cristen prynces heryng of his glorious fame, were desyrous to haue with hym amyte and allyaunce. And for that he, in all temporall polycies and prouycions, excedyd al prynces by his tyme reygnynge, dyuerse popes, as Alexander the. vi., Pius the thirde, and Iulius the seconde, (nowe beynge pope,) by theyr tymes eyther of theym sonderly, with auctorytie and consent of theyr spirituell and deuyne counsaylles, elected & chase this excellent prynce, and admytted hym for chief defensoure of Cristes churche, before all other Cristen prynces. And, for a conformacyon of the same, sente vnto this inuyncible prynce, by. iii. sondry famous ambassades. iii. swerdes, with. iii. cappes of mayntenaūce. What myght I wryte of the stedfast contynency, great iustyce, and mercyfull dealynge of this prynce.

What myght I reporte of his excellent wysdome & moost sugryd eloquence, or of his inmouable pacyence & wonderfull discression, or what shulde I tell of his moost beautefull buyldynges, or excedynge charges of manyfest reparacyons; and ouer all this of his excedynge treasoure and rychesse innumerable. But as who wolde say, to consyder in ordre all his notable actes, which wolde aske a longe tract of tyme, with also the lyberall and sūptuous endowement of the monastery of Westmynster, and other to wryte, I myght conclude that his actes passed all the noble actes of his noble progenytours syne the Conquest, and may most congruly aboue all erthly prynces be lykenyd vnto Salamon kynge of Israelytes, and be called the seconde Salamon, for his great sapyence and actes by hym doone his lyues tyme executed. Vpon whose soule, and all Cristen, Ihesu haue mercy. AMEN.

And so foresayd this noble prynce reygned. xxiii. yeres and. vii. monethes, &one daye therof lackynge.

Hereafter ensueth the day of the raygne of our mooste redoughted soueraygne lorde kynge Henry the. viii.

THis excellent kinge Henry the. viii. of ỹ name, &. ii. sone of ỹ forenamed excellent prynce Henry the seuynth, began his most gracious reygne ouer the realme of Englande the. xxii. daye of Apryll, in the yere of our Lorde God. M. v.C. and. ix. to whom be all honour, reuerence, and ioyfull contynuaunce of his prosperous reygne, to the pleasure of God, and weale of this his realme. Amen.

[In the original this page stands detached; the last leaf of the first volume.]

CONTINUATION

OF

FABYAN'S CHRONICLE

FROM THE EDITION

OF

1533.

HENRY THE SEVENTH.

HENRY THE SEUENTH.

HEnry the. vii. of the name, sonne vnto the erle of Richemoñt, began his domynyon ouer the realme of Englande the. xxii. daye of Auguste, in the yere of oure Lorde God. M.iiii.C.lxxxv. and the seconde yere of the. viii. Charlys then kynge of Fraunce; and the. xxx. daye of October folowynge, with great solempnyte the sayd Henry was crowned at Westmynster.

And here, accordynge to my fyrste sayenge in the begynnynge of thys rude worke, I make an ende of the. vii. parte and hole worke, the. vii. day of Nouember, in the yere of our Lorde Iesu Christes Incarnacyon. M. v.C. and. iiii. and the. xx. yere of our moste Crysten and drad soueraygne lorde kyng Henry, after the conquest, of ŷ name the. vii. For whyche expedycyon and good exployt that I haue hadde in the accomplysshyng of thys work, wherin is included to rekyn from the landynge of Brute in thys ile of Albyon, vnto the fyrste yere or begynnyng of the reygne of our most drad sayd souerayne lorde. ii. M. vi.C. and. xx. yeres. [I here agayne salute and gyue thankes vnto that moste excellent vyrgyn our lady saynt Mary, with the last and. vii. ioye of the foresayd. vii. ioyes, begynnynge.

Gaude virgo mater pura, &c.

Be ioyfull and glad, virgyn and moder pure,
For ferme and stedfast thy ioye shall abyde,
And these. vii. ioyes shall euermore endure,
And neuer here after minishe by tyme nor by tyde,
But euer shall encreace, florysshe, and abyde,
By worldes all, euer in one to laste,
Tyme to come, tyme present, & tyme that is paste.][1]

And thus than endyth thys seuenth part, the which, from the fyrst yere of Wyllyam Conquerour to the laste yere of Rycharde the thyrde, includeth. iiii.C. xvii[2]. yeres.

Lenuoy.

Limas adest, præcessit opus, ne liuidus assis,
Lector habent mendas, denia prela suas.
Quoduis ingenium, quadam vel parte redundat,
Vel rudū[3], vel mancū est, vel grave vel fluidū.
Concio crebra tibi, culpatur furta Maronis,
Est Cicero elumbis, pes tibi Naso celer.
Non satis historiæ, Crispi præfatio quadrat,
Nil adeo cultum, liuor iniquus[4] habet.

[1] *The* edit. of 1542 *and* 1559 *merely say* I give thanks vnto almighty God. [2] CCCC. yeres. edit. 1542. 1559. [3] rude. 1542. 1559. [4] iniquis. edit. 1542. 1559.

Non minus hoc poterit tantillum capere morsor,
Læserit illustres cum fera lingua viros.
Sed quid agas residem, taxabit inertia mutum
Scriptorem risor, extenuabit inners;
Audenduin tamen est, spernendi mille latratus,
Occidet a busto murmur & inuidia.

The whyche verses to them that ben vnlettered may be Englysshed in maner and fourme as folowyth.

An ende of thys boke, or of thys rude warke
Here is now fyned, wherof the sence[1] precedyth.
Thou that shall it rede, be thou laye or clerke,
Be not enuyous, consyder how it ledyth
The reygne of prynces. And where as mendement nedyth,
If thou experte be, the fawtes therof amende,
And hym ascryve no sclaunder, that dyd but well entende.

Consyder euery scyence, in parte that it is suche,
To rude or to curyous, to breef or to longe.
Some blamyn Liuius for that he wrote so moche,
Some other Vyrgyle, and Cicero amonge,
For he was to scarse. Salust that dytyes songe
So excelently, yet is he not vnblamed:
So that to all men nothynge is duely framed.

Than syn the olde wryters whyche were so excellent,
Myghte not all men please wyth theyr famous wrytynge,
No maruayll though I, whyche neuer connynge hent,
Myghte order thys mater to euery mannys lykynge,
And specyally to suche as haue theyr delyghtynge,
Euer wyth dysclaunder moste wryters to lacke,
And barke whyle they maye to sette good wryters[2] a backe.

But though that ignoraunce and derysyon ben mette,
And reproue the maker in all that they can,
Why shulde any good worke for theyr malyce be lette?
For though they grudge & scorne, yet euery [wyse][3] good man
Wyll take the entent, and prayse the maker than,
And hym allow for his laborous[4] dede,
And requyre of God that he maye haue his mede[5].

Anno

[1] sentence. edit. 1559. [2] *The Museum* MS. *which contains this* Lenvoy *on the last leaf, reads* werke.
[3] *Omitted in* edit. 1559. [4] labours. edit. 1542. 1559. [5] *After this, on the very last page of the Museum* MS. *which is imperfect, we have*

TRAGEDIA.

That mannys lyffe is full vnstable,
Full short & full of wrecchidnesse.
The forsaid storyes been manyfestable,
That kyng nor prynce nor othir to expresse,
Nouthir yong nor olde may dethis force oppresse.
Wherfor all keyndis beholde thys tragedy,
And wyth compassionne axe from vs mercy.

And

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxvi.

Iohñ Tate.

Hugh Bryce, goldsmyth. Anno. i.

Iohñ Swan.

IN thys yere a prest was made to the kynge of. ii. M.*li.* of the whyche the mercers, grocers, & drapers lent. ix. C. xxxvii.*li.* and. vi.*s.* The coronacyoñ was holden at Westmynster the. xxx. day of October. And this yere whete was at. iii.*s.* ŷ bushell, & baye salt at the same pryce.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxvii.

Iohñ Percyuall.

Syr Henry Colet. Anno. ii.

Hugh Clopton.

IN this yere the kynge maryed kyng Edwardes eldest doughter, named Elizabeth. This yere was slayn, at Stookfelde, the erle of Lyncolne. And in the moneth of Septēber was borne prynce Arthur.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxvii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxviii.

Iohñ Fenkyll.

Wyllyam Horne. Anno. iii.

Wyllyam Remyngton.

THys yere was the quene crowned at Westmynster vpon saynt Katheryns daye. And this yere was a prest of. iiii. M.*li.* wherof mercers, grocers, and drapers lent. xvi.C. &. xvi.*li.* And thys yere was an other prest of two thousād. And thys yere Iohñ Ashley with other two were putte in execution at the Towre Hylle.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxviii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxix.

Wyllyam Isaak.

Robert Tate, mercer. Anno. iiii.

Rafe Tynley.

IN thys yere the comons of the North slewe the erle of Northumberlande, and Chamberlayne theyr capytayne wyth dyuerse other were after at Yorke hanged. Thys yere was the taske of the tenth peny of mennes landes and goodes. This yere was the felde of Dykysmew in Flaunders foughten by the lorde Dawbeney.

And specially such as soom tyme vs knewe,
Migthty and strong, that now lye fall lowe ;
Whoom deth soo stern wyth his wannyd hewe
Hath now pursuyd, wherby ze may well knowe
That gold nor sylvyr, nor landis on a rowe,
Nor all kyngly powar maye man from deth wry ;
Wherffor with compassionne for vs axe ye mercy.

For now to stoon & erth ar we putt in servage,
That whilom rulyd the erth wyth grete honour,
And warrid alle men of higth & lowe parage,
Whoom now doth warre the worm wt fowle hvmour,
The addir and snake, and gnawe wt grete horrour
Owir flesh whilom fedd wyth all delycacy ;
Therfor, wyth compassionne, axe for vs mercy.

And for vs lament, forevn and cytvzyne,
And behold this case generally all men,
Rich, pore, yong & old, that descendth.....
Naturally, and myend well.....

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.lxxx.ix. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xc.

Wyllyam Capell.

Wyllyam Whyte. Anno. v.

Iohn Brook.

IN this yere, one named Roger Shauelok slew hym selfe, for whose goodes was besynesse bytwen the kynges amner and the sheryffe, but the amner optayned.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xc. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xci.

Henry Coot.

Robert Reuell.

Iohn Matthew, mercer[r]. Anno. vi.

Hugh Pemberton.

IN this yere dyed Robert Reuel, sheryffe, & in his stede was chosen Hugh Peberton. And in March syr Robert Chaberlayne, knyght, was behedyd. And thys yere was a great benyuolence graunted vnto the kynge for his iournay into Fraunce, where unto the felysshyp of the drapers graunted more than any other felysshyp of the cytye; and euery alderma of London that tyme beynge, payed *volente & nolente* two hundreth pound. Ouer whyche somme the comoners somme extedyd to. ix. M. vi. C. lxxxii. *li.* xvii. *s.* iiii. *d.* And this yere was a busshell of whete at. xxii. *d.*

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xci. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcii.

Thomas Wood.

Hugh Clopton, mercer. Anno. vii.

Wyllyam Browne.

IN thys yere, a yoman of the crowne, named , was put to deth at Tybourne, for treason. And in thys yere was the cyte of Garnad gotte by ỹ kyng of Spayn. And i this yere was syr Iamys Parker, knyght, slayne in iustynge at Rychemont, with a gentylman named Hugh Vaghan. Also in the moneth of September, the kynge toke hys vyage towarde Fraunce.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xciii.

Wyllyam Purchase.

Wyllyam Martyn, skynner. Anno. viii.

Wyllyam Welbek.

IN thys yere, vpon the. ix[s]. daye of Nouember, was red a letter in the Guyldhall, ỹ shewed of a peas cocluded bytwen the kynges of England & of Fraunce. And the. xvii. day of December folowynge, the kynge landed at Douer. And the Saterdaye before Cristmas, he came to Westmynster. Vppon the. xvii. daye of Maye were. iiii. men put to deth at Tyborn, for treason. And thys yere, in the moneth of October and ende of thys mayres yere, was the fray made vppon the Eesterlynges, by the comons of the cytye, and specyally mercers seruauntes.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xciii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xciiii.

Robert Fabyan.

Rafe Astry, fishmonger. Anno. ix.

Iohn Wyngar.

IN this yere, in ỹ beginnyng, an enquery was made for ỹ ryot forenamed; for the

[r] Thomas Hylle. edit. 1542. 1559 [s] xi. edit. 1542. 1559.

which

which many yong men were punysshed by long imprysonment. Also vpō the. xxii. day of February, were regnyd at ỹ Guyldhall. iiii. persons named Thomas Bagnall, Iohn Scotte, Iohn Heth, and Iohn Kenyngton, which were taken out of Saynte Martyns seyntwary, wherof. iii. were put to deth at Tyborne, & Thomas Bagnall was had vnto the Towre of London. And the. xxvi. day of the sayd moneth, with ỹ foresayd. iii. persons, was put in execucyon Willyam Bulkley, a yoman of the kynges chamber, and a Duche man.

Thys yere, whete was at. vi.*d.* a busshel, and bay salt at. iii.*d. ob.* And thys yere doctor Hylle, bysshop of Lōdon, pursued greuously Persy, than pryour of Crystes chyrch in London. And in thys yere was the royall feste kepte in Westmynster Halle by ỹ kyng.

This yere, in the ende of Apryll, was brent in Smithfelde an olde woman for heresye, whych was called moder to the lady Yonge. And thys yere, the. xv. day of August, were reyned at the Guyldhalle one named Iohn Norfolk, & an other named Iohn White, & conuict for baudry, & set vpon ỹ pillory.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xciiii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcv.

Nycholas Alwyn.

Rycharde Chawry, salter. Anno. x.

Iohn Warner.

THis yere, the daye that ỹ mayre toke hys charge, in ỹ afternone came thorugh the cytye Henry duke of Yorke, a chylde about. iiii. yeres of age, towarde Westmynster, rydynge uppon a courser, with many goodly gentylmen to conuey hym. And vpon the. ix. daye of Nouember folowyng was holden a goodly iustyse within the paleys of Westmynster, wherof were chalengeours syr Wyllyā de la Pool then duke of Suffolk, therle of Essex, syr Robert Curson, & Iohn Pechy, esquyre. Also this yere, about Cristmas, sir Robert Clifford, whych before was fled the land, came agayne, & appechyd syr Wyllyā Stanley, than chamberlayne to the kynge, of treason; whych syr Wyllyam, vpon the. xvi. day of February folowynge, for the sayd treason was behedyd at the Tower Hylle. And ỹ same season was adiudged to deth at the Guyldhall the deane of Poulys (a famous doctour & precher,) the prouyncyall of the Blak Freres, and ỹ pryour of Langley, the person of saynt Stephyns in Walbrooke, named Doctour Sutton, syr Thomas Thwatys, knyght, Robert Ratclyffe, Wyllyam Dawbeney, Willyā Cressener, esquire, with sir Simond Mounforde, knight, & mo other; wherof ỹ more part was pardoned. And this yere was whyte heryng at. xl.*d.* a barel. And this yere began the first trouble of syr Wyllyam Capell, alderman. And in Iuly, Perkyn with his rebelles ariued in Kent, which named hym selfe Rychard, seconde sonne of Edwarde the. iiii. And in the same moneth was doctour Draper perforce borne out of Poulys, & so ladde to Labehyth, for varyaunce that than was bytwene the bysshoppes of Caunterbury and London. And soone after was hanged in sundry costes of Englande, an. C. and odde persons of the forenamed rebellys. And thys yere was a perlyamente holden at Westmynster. Also in the moneth of October was an excedynge thunder.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C. xcv. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcvi.

Thomas Kneysworth.

Syr Henry Colette, mercer. Anno. xi.

Henry Somyr.

IN thys yere, in the. xvi. daye of Nouēber, was holden the sergeaūtes feste within the bysshop of Elyes place. This yere was the body of Rychard Hakendyes wyfe takyn vp in Saynt Mary hyll churche hole, ỹ had lyen in the ground ouer. C. &. xx. yeres. And thys yere was great bysynesse for the entercourse bytwene England and Flaunders. And this yere

yere the kynge of Scottes made sharp warre vppon the marches. And this yere many Lollers stode wyth fagottes at Poulys Crosse.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcvi. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcvii.

Iohñ Shaa.

Iohñ Tate, mercer. Anno. xii.

Rycharde Haddon.

THe latter ende of October, by great coũsayll holden at Westmynster, was graũted to the kynge for the defence of the Scottes C. xx. M. *li.* The. xviii[i]. daye of Nouember was Poulys church suspendyd by a fraye of two yonge men. And in the same moneth was graunted to the kyng a prest of the cytye of. iiii. M. *li.* And the same moneth, at Calays, was behedyd the lord Fitzwater. The. xvi. day of Ianuary a parlyament beganne, wherby was graunted two dymes and a halfe, two aydes and two fyftenys, to leuy the foresayd. C. xx. M. *li.* And in the moneth of Iuny, and. xvii. day were the Cornyshmen dyscomfyted at Blakheth. And vpon the xxviii. daye of Iuny, the smyth & a gentylman named Flãmok, two capytaynes of ỹ sayd rebelles, were put in execucyon at Tybourne. And shortely after the lorde Audeley, which was hed capytayne of the sayd rebelles, was put to deth at ỹ Towre Hylle. And this yere was concluded a maryage bytwene my lorde prynce & the kynges doughter of Spayne. Thys yere also the kyng sent into Scotland an army, vnder the guydyng of the erle of Surrey and the lord Nenyle, the whyche made sharpe warre vpon the Scottes. And in the moneth of October Perkyn landed in Cornwayle, and assayled the towne of Exceter and other townes; but fynally he toke the seyntwary of Beawdely, and after was pardoned of hys lyfe.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcvii. Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcviii.

Bartholomewe Rede.

Wyllyam Purchace, mercer. Anno. xiii.

Thomas Wyndowght.

IN this yere vpon the. xxviii. day of Nouẽber, the sayd Parkyn was brought thorugh the cyty vnto the Towre, and there left as prysoner. And with hym a tall yomã, somtyme sergeaũt ferrour to the kyng, whych ferrour, and one named Edwarde, were shortely after put to deth at Tibourn. Vpon saynte Nycholas daye was a proclamacyon made thorugh the cytye, of a peas bytwene the realmes of England & Scotland, for terme of both kynges lyues. And in December a carpenter called Godfrey , toke downe the wedercok of Poulys styple & set it vp agayne. And this yere in Crystmas weke was a part of the kinges palayes of Rychemount brent. And this yere, vppon the. ix. daye of Iuny, the forenamed Parkin beyng at large in the kynges court, went secretlye awaye, and lastly went to the fader of Syon. And after the second pardon to hym by the kynge graunted, he was shewed at Westmynster & in Chepyssyde, with moch wonderment, and fynally had to the Towre and there keped.

Anno Domini. M.CCCC.xcviii. Anno Domini. M.CCCC.xcix.

Thomas Bradbery.

Syr Iohñ Percyuale. Anno. xiv.

Stephen Ienyns.

IN thys yere, vpon the. xxx. daye of Octobre, came my lord prince through the cytye wyth an honorabell company toward Westmynster. And vppon Shroue Tuysdaye was put in execucion, at Saynt Thomas Watrynge, a strepelyng of. xx. yeres of age, which had auaunced hym selfe to be the sonñ or heyre to the erle of Warwykes landes, & was the sonne of a cordyner of London. And thys yere mayster Iohñ Tate, alderman, began

[1] xxviij. edit. 1542. 1559.

the

the new edefyinge of saynt Anthonies church. And this yere, vpon the. xvi. day of Iuly, beynge Sonday, & vpon the Sonday folowyng, stode. xii. heretykes at Poules crosse shryned with fagottes.

Anno Domini. M.iiii.C.xcix. Anno Domini. M.v.C.

Iames Wylforde.

Nycholas Alwyn. Anno. xv.

Rychard Brond.

IN thys yere, the. xvi. day of Nouember, was areyned in the Whyte Halle at Westmynster, the forenamed Parkyn, &. iii. other; the whych Parkyn and one Iohñ Awatyr, were put shortly after in execucion at Tyborne. And soone after was the erle of Warwyke put to deth at the Towre Hylle, & one Blewet & Astwood at Tyborne. And thys yere, in May, the kyng & the quene sayled to Calays. And thys yere was Babrā, in Northfolke, brent. And in Iuly was an old heretyke brent in Smythfelde. And thys yere was a great deth in London, wherof died ouer. xx. M. of all ages. And this yere dyed doctour Morton, cardynall and chaunceler of Englande, in the moneth of October.

Anno Domini. M.v.C. Anno Domini. M.v.Ci.

Iohñ Hawys.

Wyllyam Remyngton. Anno. xvi.

Wyllyam Stede.

IN this yere, the. xxi. daye of December, in the nyght, was an hydyous thūder. And this yere was the name of the kyngs palays of Shene chaunged, & called after that day Rychemount. And this yere, in August, departed secretly out of this lande, the duke of Suffolke. And the. iiii. daye of October landed at Plymmowth, Kateryñ doughter of the kyng of Spayñ. And thys yere was fynysshed by mayster Tate, the church of saynt Anthony.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.i. Anno Domini. M.v.C.ii.

Syr Laurence Aylemer.

Syr Iohn Shaa. Anno. xvii.

Henry Hede.

IN this yere began the mayre & hys bretherne to ryde to the barge & other places. Vpō sait Ekenwaldes day, was my lord prince maryed to the kyng of Spaynes doughter. And this season the duke of Bukkyngham, wyth other, was chief chalēgeour, at a royall iustyce & turney holden in the palays of Westmynster. And thys yere came a greate ambassade out of Scotland, by reason wherof conclusion of maryage was made betwene the king of Scottes & dame Margarete, eldest doughter to oure soueraygne lord. Also thys yere was an excedyng great fysshe taken nere vnto Quynbourgh. And in Marche syr Wyllyam of Deuynshyre, syr Iamys Tyrell, & his eldest soñ, & one named Welborne, were arested for treason. And in Apryll folowyng dyed the noble prynce Arthur, in the towne of Ludlow. And vpon the last day of April were set vpon the pyllory. ii. yongmen, for defamyng of the kynges counsayll, and there erys cut of. Also aboute thys tyme the Gray Fryers were compelled to take theyr old habit russet, as the shepe doth dye it. And the. vi. day of Maye Iamys Tyrell, & syr Iohñ Wyndham, knyght, were beheded at the Towre Hyl, and a shypman for the same treason, was the same day drawen to Tyborne, & there hanged & quartered. And soone after a purseuaunt named Curson, & a yoman called Mathew Ionys, were put in execucion at Guynys, & all was for aydyng of syr Edmond de la Pool. Also thys yere, about Mydsomer, was taken a felowe whych hadde renewed many of Robin Hodes pagentes, which named him selfe Greneleef. And this yere began the new werke of the houses offyce within the Guyldhall

of London. And in the ende of October was proclaymed a peas betwene the king & the archeduke of Burgoyne. And the Sonday before saint Symond & Iude, was shewed a bull, by vertue wherof were denounced at Poules crosse as accursed, syr Edmond de la Pool, late duke of Suffolke, syr Robert Curson, knyght, &. v. other persones, and all such as ayded any of them again the king.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.ii. Anno Domini. M.v.C.iii.

Henry Kebyll.

Bartholmew Rede, goldsmyth. Anno. xviii.

Nycholas Nynys.

IN this yere began the new werk of the kynges chapell at Westmynster. And vpon the. xi. daye of February dyed quene Elizabeth, within the Towre, lieng in chyldbed. And vpon the fyrst Sonday of Lent was solemply accursed at Poules crosse wyth bel & candell, syr Edmond de la Pool, syr Robert Curson, & other, & all that then ayded agayn the kyng. And in thende of the moneth of Marche, was the pryour of the Charterhous at Shene sinfully murdered, wyth an other munk of the same place, by synyster meanes of a munk of the same place, named Goodwyne, & other mischeuous persones. And this yere the felisshyp of tayllours of London, purchased a graunt of the king to be called Marchaunt Tayllours. And the. viii. day of August was the kynge of Scottes maried vnto the eldest doughter of the kyng. Also in Iuly were areyned at the Guyldhall, Olyuer saynte Iohñ, Robert Simpson, Wellysborñ before named, Pool, bayly of Thorok, &. iiii. other, all beyng cast for treason, whereof the sayde Olyuer & Pool, wyth twoo shyppemen, were putte in execucion at Tyborne, and the other were pardoned.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.iii. Anno Domini. M.v.C.iiii.

Chrystoffer Hawys.

Syr Wyllyam Capell, draper. Robert Wattes.

Thomas Granger.

IN thys yere,the. xiii. day of Nouember, in the palays of the archebysshop of Caunterbury at Lambehyth, was holden the sergeauntes feest. And the. xxi. day of Nouember in the begynnyng of the nyght, was a dredeful fyre vpō the North ende of London brydge. And vpon the. vii. daye of Ianuary were certeyne houses cōsumed wyth fyre, agayn saynt Botulphis churche in Thamys strete. Vpon the. xxv. daye of Ianuary began a parliament at Wesmynster. And the. xxvii. day of March was an house brent agayn saynt Martyns le Graunt. And the same day was hurt done wyth fyre in the paryshe of saynt Peters the pore. And in the forenamed parlyament was ordeyned a new coyne of syluer, as grotes, & shyllynges with half faces. And in the forsayde parlyamente was graunted to the kynge an ayde of. xxxvi. thousand *li.* and a correccyon was dyuysed for clipped grotes.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.iiii. Anno Domini. M.v.C.v.

Roger Achylley.

Iohñ Wyngar, grocer. Anno. xx.

Wyllyam Browne.

IN thys yere the cytezyns of London graunted to the kyng. v. M. marke, for confermacion of theyr lyberties; whereof a. M. marke was payde in hande, and. iiii. M. mark in. iiii. yeres next ensuyng. Vpon saynt Georges day the kyng went in procession in Poules church, where was shewed a legge of saynt George, closed in syluer, whych was newly sent to the kyng. And vppon the. xxv. day of Apryll was a money maker, one of the coyners

coyners of the Towre, drawen to Tyborne, and there hanged. And in the later end of thys yere came the thyrde cappe of mayntenaunce from the pope.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.v. Anno Domini. M.v.C.vi.

Rycharde Shore.
Thomas Kneysworth, fysshemonger. Anno. xxi.
Roger Groue.

THys yere, vppon. xii. euyn, the kinges chamber at Rychemount was brent. And vpon tne euyn of seynt Maury, began an hidious wind, which endured vppon. xi. dayes folowynge, more or lasse, in contynuall blowyng, by meane whereof the wedercok of Poules was blowen downe, & moche other harme done. And by force of thys tempest the archeduke of Burgoyne was dryuen to lande in the West countre. And vpon the second Sonday of Lent, stood at Poules crosse the pryour of saynt Osyes, &. v. other heretykes. And in the ende of the moneth of March, syr Edmond de la Pool was conveyed through the citie vnto the Towre, and there left as prysoner. And in Maye moneth was the lord of Burgeueny commytteth to the Towre, for a certayn displeasure whych concerned no treason. Thys yere a new hylded galerey fyll in the nyght at Rychemount. And thys yere, in the ende of Iuly, was a gracyous myracle shewed by oure Lady image of Barkyng, by a mayden chylde that a carte laden wyth stone yode ouer.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.vi. Anno Domini. M.v.C.vii.

Wyllyam Copynger.
Syr Rychard Haddon, mercer. Anno. xxij.
Thomas Iohnson.
Wyllyam Fytz Wyllyam.

IN thys yere, aboute Crystmas, was the bakers house in Warwyke lane brent. And thys yere was a wonderfull easy and softe wynter, without stormys or frostes. And this yere the kyng of hys goodnesse delyuered, oute of all prysons in London, as many prysoners as laye for. xl.*s*. & vnder. And this yere was Thomas Kneysworth, late mayer, & hys. ii. shyreffes condempned to the kyng in great sommes of money, ouer paynfull prysonement by theym in the Marshalsy susteyned.

Anno Domini. M.v.C.vii. Anno Domini. M.v.C.viii.

Wyllyam Butler.
Wyllyam Browne, mercer. Anno. xxiij.
Iohn Kyrkby.

THys yere, in the ende of April, dyed the sayd Wyllyam Browne, and for hym was immedyatly chosen syr Laurence Aylemer, for the resydue of that yere.

Anno supradicto. Anno supradicto.

Wyllyam Butler.
Syr Laurence Aylemer, draper. Anno predicto.
Iohñ Kyrkby.

IN thys yere vpon the last daye of Iuny, was an house in Southwarke, nere vnto the brydge, consumed wyth fyre. And thys yere was syr Wyllyam Capell agayne put in vexacyon, by sute of the kynge, for thynges done by hym in the tyme of hys mayralte.

Anno Domini.M.v.C.viii. Anno Domini. M.v.C.ix.

Thomas Exmew.

Stephyn Ienyns, tayllour. Anno. xxiiij.

Rychard Smyth.

IN the begynnyng of the mayres tyme, syr Wyllyam Capell, after his prysonement in the Countour & shyreffes house, was by the kynges counsayll commaunded to the Towre, where he remayned tyll the kynge dyed, & shortly after was delyuered wyth many other. And in lykewyse was syr Laurence Aylemer dalt with, & commytted to the warde or house of Rychard Smyth, shryfe, & there remayned as a prisoner by the space aboue sayd. Thys yere, vppon the Saterdaye next before saynt Georges day, in the nyght, whych Saterdaye was the. xxi. daye of Apryll, dyed the kynge oure soueraygne lorde, at hys manour of Rychemount, vpon whose soule and all Chrysten, Iesu haue mercy. Amen. And so thys foresayd noble prince reygned. xxiii. yeres, and. vii. monethes, and one daye therof lakkynge.

Thys magnyfycent & excellent prynce Henry the. vii. thus payed to deth his dette of nature as before is sayd, of whome suffycient laude and prayse can nat be put in wrytyng, consyderyng the contynuall peace & tranquylete whyche he kept thys his lande & comons in, wyth also the subduynge of hys outwarde enymyes, of the realmes of Fraunce & Scotland, by hys greate polycy & wysedome, more than by shedyng of Cristen bloode or cruell warre. And euer ruled so myghtly hys subgectes, & mynystred to them suche iustyce, that nat allonely they loued and drad hym, but all Crysten prynces, heryng of hys glorious fame, were desyrous to haue wyth hym amyte and ailyaunce. And for that he in all temporall polycies & prouisions exceded all prynces by hys tyme reygnynge, dyuers popes, as Alexander the syxte, Pius the. iii., & Iulius the. ii. nowe beynge pope, by theyr tymes, eyther of them sunderly, wyth auctorytie & consent of theyr spyrytuall & deuyne counsayll, elected & chase thys excellente prynce, and admytted hym for chyefe defensour of Chrystes church, before all other Crysten prynces: and for a confermacion of the same, sente vnto thys inuyncibyll prince by. iii. sundry famous ambassades, thre swerdes, with. iii. cappes of mayntenaunce.

What myght I wryte of the stedfaste contynency, great iustyce, & mercyfull dealyng of thys prynce? What myght I report of hys excellente wysedome & moste sugred eloquence, or of hys inmouable pacience & wonderfull dyscressyon? Or what shuld I tell of his most beautyfull byldynges, or excedyng charges of manifest reperacions; and ouer all thys, of hys excedynge treasoure & rychesse innumerabyll? But as who wolde saye, to consider in order all his notabyll actes, which wolde aske a longe tract of tyme, with also the lyberall & somptuous endowement of the monastery of Westmynster & other, to wryte, I myghte conclude that hys actes passed all the noble actes of hys noble progenytours syne the conquest, and may moste congruly, aboue all erthly prynces, be lykened vnto Salamon kyng of the Israelytes, and be called the seconde Salomon for hys great sapience & actes by him done, hys lyuys tyme executed. All whyche premysses tenderly considered, euery naturall Englysshman now lyuyng, hath cause & ought deuoutly to pray for the soule of this moste excellent prynce Henry the. vii. that he maye atteyne that celestyall mansion, whych he and all trew Crysten soules are enheritours vnto, the which God hym graunt. Amen.

And the rather because of the excellent vertuous bryngyng and leuynge vnto vs by Goddes ayde and prouysyon, of our moste gracyous and moste drad soueraygne lord Henry the. viii. of that name, as ryghtfull enherytour vnto the. ii. crownes of Englande and of Fraunce, the whyche began hys moste gracyous reygne the. xxii. day of Apryll, in the yere of our Lord God. M. v.C. and. ix.

HEnry

HEnry the. viii. of that name and second sonne of the forenamed excellente prynce Henry the seuinth, began his moste gracyous reygn ouer the realme of Englande the. xxij. daye of Apryll, in the yere of our Lord God. M. v.C. and. ix. to whome be all honour, reuerence, & ioyfull contynaunce of prosperous reygn, to the pleasure of God & weale of thys hys realme. Amen.

Thus endeth Fabyans Cronycle.
Printed by W. Rastell, & fynysshed
the laste day of December, in
the yere of our Lorde
M. v.C. and. xxxiii.

CUM PRIVILEGIO.

CONTINUATION

OF

FABYAN'S CHRONICLE

FROM THE EDITION

OF

1542.

HENRY THE. VIII.

OVr moste gracious souerayne lorde kynge Henry the. viii. beganne his reygne the. xxii. daye of April, in the yere of our Lorde. M. cccc. ix. and was crowned at Westminster, in the feaste of the Natiuite of saynt Iohn Baptist, in the mayres tyme after named.

Anno Domini. M.cccc.ix. Anno Domini. M.cccc.x.

George Monox.

Thomas Bradbury, mercer. Anno. i.

Iohn Doket.

IN this yeare, in Auguste, was beheded Empson and Dudley. And in the seconde yere of the kynge, but in ỹ sayd mayrs tyme, sir Wylliam Fitzwilliam disfraunchysed, because he wolde not be shyryfe.

Anno Domini. M.cccc.x. Anno Domini. M.cccc.xi.

Iohn Mylborne.

Henry Keybell. Anno. ii.

Iohn Rest.

PRince Henry borne at Richemonde on Newyeres day, and iustes kept at Westmynster. And on saynte Mathewes daye the prynce dyed, in the thyrde yere of the kynge, and in the tyme Keybell'.

Anno Domini. M.cccc.xi. Anno Domini. M.cccc.xii.

Nicholas Shelton.

Roger Achyley, draper. Anno. iii.

Thomas Myrfyn.

THis yere was the lord Darcy sent into Spaine, to aide the kynge of Spayne, agaynst ỹ Mores; but peace was made before hys aryuynge, and so returned.

This same seasō was sir Edward Pownynges sent into Gelderlande, to ayde ỹ prince of Castell. The same tyme lorde Hawarde toke Andrew Barton, and an hundred Scottes, & twoo fayre shyppes.

Anno Domini. M.cccc.xii. Anno Domini. M.cccc.xiii.

Robert Holdernes.

Williā Copinger, Richarde Haddon, kn. Anno. iiii.

Robert Fenrother.

THis yere was Edmonde de la Poole beheded. And the lord marquis Dorset was

[1] Of Keibell. edit. 1559.

sente

sente into Spain with. x. thousand menne, & did muche hurt in Guyan, & returned in winter by reason of the flix, & on S. Laurēs daye, ỹ. v. yere, ỹ Regent & the Carick were brēt, which were. ii. great shippis.

Sir Edwarde Haward, lorde admirall of Englande, was slaine on saint Marke his daye, in Brytaine, by to muche hardines. The same yere in Iune, the kyng besieged Turwin, & discomfited ỹ power of Fraūce at Boomye, & toke the citees of Turwin and Turney, and returned without any more battaill offered. Duryng whiche tyme the kyng of Scotes enoyed Englād with an. C.M. menne, and was slayn hymself, &. xi. erles, by the erle of Surrey, ỹ kyng his leufetenaūt, wherfore ỹ kyng created hym afterwarde duke of Northfolke, & his soonne erle of Surrey.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxiii.

Wyllyam Browne, mercer.

Iohn Dawes.

Iohn Bruge.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxiiii.

Anno. v.

The said Dawes died ẅin ỹ yere, & ī his place was chose Roger Basford.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxiiii.

George Monox, draper.

Iames Yarforde.

Iohn Mundye.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxv.

Anno. vi.

THis yere was a peace cōcluded betwene Englande and Fraunce. On saint Denyes daye, in the moneth of Iune, the. vii. yere of the kyng, the Frenche kyng maried the lady Mary, the kyng his sister, and he dyed on Newyeres daye after, and therefore the kyng sent for hir againe by the duke of Suffolke and other. This yere also was Rycharde Hunne hanged in Lowlars towre.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxv.

Sir Wyllyam Butler, grocer.

Henry Worley.

Rycharde Grey.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxvi.

Anno. vii.

THe said Grey dyed within ỹ yere, and for hym was chose Wyllyam Baily. In Februaary was borne at Grenwiche, ỹ lady Mary, the kyng his doughter. In Apryll the Frenche quene came into Englande, and was maryed to lorde Charles, duke of Suffolke. This yere Margarete quene of Scottes, syster to the kyng, fled into Englād, and laye at Harbottell, and she was deliuered of a doughter called Margrete, and came vnto London in Maye, in eyght yere of the kyng, and taryed there a whole yere before she returned.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxvi.

Iohn Reste, grocer.

Thomas Seymer.

Rychard Thurston.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxvii.

Anno. viii.

THis yere was suche a frost, that all menne with cartes might passe bytwene Westminster & Lambeth. One Maye euin, this mayre his yere, the begynnyng of the. ix. yere of ỹ kyng, was an insurreccion of yong persones against alienes, of the whiche dinerse were putte to execucion, and the resydewe came to Westminster with halters about their neckes, & were pardoned. And the eyghtene daye of Maye folowyng, the quene of Scotes returned to hir countree againe.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxvii. Anno Domini. M.cccccxviii.

Thomas Baldry.

Sir Thomas Exmewe, goldsmith. Anno. ix.

Rychard Symond.

IN this yere the terme adiourned to Oxenforde and again to London. In October, in ỹ tenth yere of ỹ kyng, the admirall of Fraūce came into Englāde, & Tournei was deliuered to ỹ Frēche kyng.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxviii. Anno Domini. M cccccxix.

Iohn Aleyne.

Thomas Myrfyn, skynner. Anno. x.

Iames Spencer.

IN this yere, at Frākford, Charles the fifth was elected emperour. The erle of Surrey sente into Irelande.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxix. Anno Domini. M.cccccxx.

Iohn Wylkynson.

Sir Iames Yarforde, mercer. Anno. xi.

Nycholas Partrich.

THe kyng & the Frenche kyng mette at the campe betwene Arde & Guysnes, where were great tryumphes. After that ỹ kyng & the emperour mette, and the kyng went to Grauelin with hym, & he came to Calais with the kyng, and had greate chere, and the kyng returned.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxx. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxi.

Iohn Skeuinton.

Sir Iohn Bruge, draper. Anno. xii.

Iohn Kembe.

ANd this mayre his yere, & the. xiii. of ỹ kyng, ỹ duke of Buckynghā was beheded ỹ. xvii. daye of Maye. In Iune folowyng ỹ cardinall wēt to Calais to entrete a peace betwene thēperour & the Frēche kyng, & taried there till December, without any thyng concluded.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxi. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxii.

Iohn Breteyne.

Sir Iohn Mylborn, draper. Anno. xiii.

Thomas Pergetoure.

IN this maires yere, & the. xiiii. of ỹ kyng, ỹ Frydaie before Pēthecost, ỹ is to saie, ỹ. vi. day of Iune, Charles ỹ. v., emperour, was honourably receiued into the citee of Lōdō, of the mayre, aldermenne, & cōmunaltie, our soueraigne lorde accompaigniyng hym. And frō Londō he wēt to Windsore, & sat in ỹ stall of ỹ garter, & frome thence wēt to Hampton, & sayled ouer ỹ sea into Spaine. Duerying whiche tyme ỹ erle of Surrey, lorde admirall, brent Morles in Britaine, & after landed at Calais, & entred Pycardy, & brēt townes & castels, & beseged Hesdyng; but bicause of wynter he raised his siege & returned. This sōmer the duke of Albany was entryng Englande w̄ a great army; but, when he herde ỹ the erle of Shrowisbury was cōmyng to fight w̄ hym, he toke a truce for. vi. mone.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxii. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxiii.

Iohn Rudstone.

Sir Iohn Mundy, goldsmith. Anno. xiiii.

Iohn Champneis.

CHristierne, kyng of Denmarke, came into Englande in Iune. In ỹ. xv. of the kyng the erle of Surrey brent Iedworth & many other townes in Scotlãde. In this mayre his yere, the Turcke besieged the Rhodes, & vpon Christmas daye he toke it.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxiii. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxiiii.

Mighell Englisshe.

Sir Thomas Baldry, mercer. Anno. xv.

Nycholas Ienins.

ANd this yere ỹ duke of Suffolke went into Fraũce with. x. M. menne, and passed the water of Some wout bataill, and toke and destroyed many townes, & in Decembre retourned. The same yere the duke of Albanye besieged ỹ castell of Warke, & heryng of therle of Surre his cõmyng with a greate army, he cowardlye fled.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxv.

Raufe Dodmer.

Sir Wyllyam Baylay, draper. Anno. xvi.

Wyllyam Roche.

ANd in this yere came frome the emperoure the lorde of Campher and other lordes. Also out of Scotlande came the bisshop of Dũkell & other, as ambassadours. On saint Mathias day was the Frenche kyng taken by themperour. A mutyng in Norfolke & Suffolke for payment of money. A peace concluded bytwene Englande and Fraunce. The Frenche kyng deliuered in Marche. This mayres yere, & the. xvii. of ỹ kyng, in Septembre, was the coyne enhaunced.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxv. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxvi.

Iohn Cauton.

Sir Iohn Aleyn, mercer. Anno. xvii.

Christopher Ascue.

Anno Domini. M.cccccxxvi. Anno Domini. M.cccccxxvii.

Stephan Pecoke.

Sir Thomas Seymer, mercer. Anno. xviii.

Nicholas Lambart.

IN this yere the citee of Rome, by the viceroye of Naples & the duke of Burbone, ỹ same duke beyng first slaine, was taken & almost destroyed, and Clement the. vii. then bisshop of Rome, and diuerse of the cardinales there faũde, were taken and brought into captiuitee, and vnder the rule of Charles the emperoure. This yere corne beganne to faile. The cardinal went into Fraunce with greate põpe, where he concluded a leage bytwene the kyng and the Frenche kyng, whiche both defyed the emperoure, and sent an army into Italy; and in Septembre, in the nientene of the kyng, he retourned. In October the nientene, the greate maister of Fraunce came vnto Londõ with greate tryumphe, for conclucion of the same leage.

Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxvii. Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxviii.

Iohn Hardye.

Sir Iames Spencer, Vintener. Anno. xix.

Wyllyam Holleys.

THis yere corn was verie dere, & had bē dearer if marchūtes of ỹ styliarde had not been, & Dutche shippes restrined, & an abstinaūce of warre betwene Englāde & Flaūders. This mayres yere, &. xx. of ỹ kyng, was ỹ sweatyng sikenes; for ỹ whiche cause there was no watche at Midsomer. On S. Denis day in ỹ. xx. of ỹ kyng, a legate cā frō Rome.

Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxviii. Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxix.

Raufe Warren.

Sir Iohn Rudstone, draper. Anno. xx.

Iohn Long.

IN Iune, in the. xxi. yere of ỹ kyng, the legates satte at the Blacke Freres for ỹ kyng his mariage. And in October the cardinall was deposed of the chauncellership. This twenty and one yere was a peace concluded betwene the emperoure and the kyng.

Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxix. Anno. Domini. M.cccce.xxx.

Mighell Dormer.

Sir Raufe Dormer, mercer. Anno. xxi.

Water Champion.

A Parliament for ennormities of the cleargye. The emperoure was crowned at Bonony this yere in Februarie.

Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxx. Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxxi.

Wyllyam Dauncy.

Sir Thomas Pargetour, salter. Anno. xxii.

Iohn Cloppyng.

THis yere was ỹ Frēch kīges childrē deliuered. One boiled in Smithfeld for poysonyng. The cardinall died on saint Andrewes euin.

Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxxi. Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxxii.

Rychard Gresham.

Sir Nycolas Lamberd, grocer. Anno. xxiii.

Edwarde Altam.

ANd in this yere the kyng beganne to bulde his palace at Westminster. Gryffeth Rise beheded for treasō. In October, and the. xxiiii. yere, the kyng went ouer ỹ sea and met with ỹ Frenche kyng.

Anno Domini M.cccce.xxxii. Anno Domini. M.cccce.xxxiii.

Rychard Raynolde.

Sir Steuen Pecoke, habardasher. Anno. xxiiii.

Rychard Pynchon. Iohn Mertine.

ANd in this yere ỹ kyng was, by due proces of the lawe, diuorced frome lady Katherin, his brothers wife, & then he maryed lady Añe Bollein, whiche was crowned quene on Witsondaye, in ỹ. xxv. yere of ỹ kyng, in this maireis tyme. On Midsōmer daye folowyng dyed ỹ Frēche quene, wife vnto ỹ duke of Suffolke. And on ỹ euin of ỹ Natiuitie of our Lady folowing, was borne ỹ lady Elizabeth at Grenewiche. This said. xxv. yere was it enacted, that no mā should sue any appeale to Rome,

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxiii. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxiiii.

Wyllyam Forman.

Sir Christopher Ascue, draper. Anno. xxv.

Thomas Kitson.

ANd in this yere one Wolfe and his wife were hāged for killyng of twoo marchaūtes straungers on the Thamys. Also in Aprill was a nunne, called the holy mayde of Kente, twoo monkes, and twoo freres, hanged and heeded, for treason, blasphemie, and hypocresie. A peace concluded with Scotlande. This yere was the bishop of Rome, with all his false vsurped power, abholished quit out of this realme.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxiiii. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxv.

Nycolas Leuesō.

Sir Iohn Chāneyes, skinner. Anno. xxvi.

Wyllyam Denham.

ANd in this yere the erle of Kildare dyed in ỹ Towre, and his soonne rebelled, and slew the bisshop of Deuelyng; wherfore ỹ kyng sent sir Wyllyam Skeuinton thither. This yere was graunted to the kyng ỹ first frutes, & the tenthes of all spirituall possessions. In Iune, in ỹ. xxvii. yere, ỹ bisshop of Rochestre and sir Thomas Moore beheded, for deniyng ỹ kyng to bee supreme hede of ỹ Churche of Englande. And this said yere were. iii. monkes of ỹ Charter Hous executed for ỹ same offence.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxv. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxvi.

Humfrey Monmoth.

Sir Iohn Aleine, mercer. Anno. xxvii.

Iohn Cotes.

ANd in Ianuary dyed lady Katherine princes dowayer, & is buryed at Peterborow. This mayres yere, and the. xxviii. of the kyng, was quene Anne, the lorde Rotcheforde, Noris, Weston, Breerton, and Markes attainted of treasō and beheded. & the kyng maried lady Iane Seymer. And in October folowyng begāne a folishe comociō in Lincolnshire, and an other in Yorkeshire, by ỹ meanes of ỹ lorde Darcye, ỹ lorde Husei, sir Robart Constable, & Robert Aske, whiche, only by ỹ kyng his wisdō & his prudēt coūsaill, were appeaced without bloodde shedyng.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxvi. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxvii.

Rychard Paget.

Sir Raufe Warren, mercer. Anno. xxviii.

Wyllyam Bowyer.

ANd in Decēber ỹ Thamys was ouer frosen; wherfore ỹ kyng & ỹ quene rode thorow Lōdon w a goudly compaigne. In February was Thomas Fitz Garet, &. v. of his vncles hanged, drawen, & quartred. The lord Darcy, sir Fraūces Bygot, sir Robert Constable, and other, beganne a newe conspiracy in the. xxix. yere, whiche were attainted and put to death in Iune. And on saint Edwarde his euin folowyng was prince Edwarde borne at Hāpton court. The twenty and thre daye of October folowyng dyed quene Iane, and is buried at Wyndsore.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxvii. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxviii.

Iohn Gresham.

Sir Rychard Gresham. Anno. xxix.

Thomas Lewen.

ANd in this yere beganne ỹ colleccion for the poore, and a great nōbre cured of many greuous diseases, through the charite therof. In Maye, in ỹ. xxx. yere of the kyng,

was frere Forest hanged & brent in Smithfilde, for treason and hervsy, with the image of Daruell Gathern, in Walles. This yere all idolatry was forbiddē, & diuers images ỹ had inginnes to make their eies open & shut, and other limis to stirre, & many other false iuglynges, were espied out & destroied. Al freres, monkes, chanons, & nons chaunged their new-founde garmentes, forsoke their cloisters, & so came home again to their mother churche this. xxx. yere.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxviii. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxix.

Wyllyam Wylkynson.

Sir Wyllyam Forman. Anno. xxx.

Nycolas Gybson.

ANd in this yere, in Decēbre, was ỹ marques of Exceter, ỹ lorde Moūtacute, and sir Edward Neuell beheded, for high treason duly proued. And in Maye, in ỹ. xxx. yere of ỹ kyng, ỹ citezēs of Lōdō mustered all in bright harnes, & cotes of white silke, with white clothe, and chaynes of golde, in. iii. great battailes, to ỹ great wonder of straūgers.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xxxix. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xl.

John Fayry.

Sir Wyllyam Holeis. Anno. xxxi.

Thomas Huntlow.

ANd in Nouembre were the abbottes of Redyng, Glastēbury, and Colchestre attainted of high treasō, and like traitours putte to death. The. xxviii. day of Iuly folowyng Thomas Crōwell, late erle of Essex, and Water lorde Hungerforde, were beheded at the Towre Hill for treason. And the. xxx. daye folowyng were Barnes, Garet, and Hierom brēt, Abell Powell and Fetherstone were drawen, hanged, & quartred in Smithfelde. In this somer was a great heate and drought, so that in many places the people woulde haue giuē one bushel for the grindyng of another. This said. xxx. and two yere dyuers and many honeste persones died of ỹ hote agues, and of a greate laske, throught the realme. This. xxxii. yere was the bisshoppe of Chechester and doctour Wylson deliuered out of the Towre, vpon the kyng his pardon.

Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xl. Anno Domini. M.cccccc.xli.

Wyllyam Laxton.

Sir Wyllyam Roche. Anno. xxxii.

Sir Martin Bowes.

ANd in this yere ỹ collecciō for the poore people ceased. In Decembre were Egertō and Harman putte to execucion, for counterfaityng the kyng his greate seale. This winter was very colde, muche froste and snowe, & a great many of bestes dyed therof. This yere the kynges grace begāne great buildynges at Calais and Guynes.

In Aprill An. M.D.xli. in ỹ. xxxii. yere of ỹ kyng, certain preestes and laie menne beganne a newe cōmociō in Yorkeshire, whiche were shortly taken & putte to execuciō in diuers places; of whiche Leigh &. ii. other were putte to death at London the. xxviii. daye of Maye, in ỹ. xxxiii. yere of the kyng. And for ỹ offēce was sir Iohn Neuell, knight, drawen, hanged, and quartred, at Yorke, on Corpus Christi euin folowyng, &. xxx. hanged for robery. This. xxxiii. yere, ỹ. vi. daye of Maye, there was a proclamaciō, whiche now is a lawe, ỹ the bible should bee had in euery parishe churche win this realme redy for all sortes of people to rede, & here God his wourde at conuenient tymes. In the. xxxiii. yere, & the. xxvii. daye of May, ỹ countes of Salisbury beheded. The. ix. day of Iune folowyng were two yomen of ỹ kyng his garde hāged at Grenwiche, for robery, in example of all other. And the. x. daye of ỹ same Iune was sir Edmonde Kniuet, knight, arrained in the kyng his hall there, for giuyng a blow within the kyng his hous, & should haue lost his hande if ỹ kyng his maiesty had not extendid

extendid his mercy towardes hym. The. xxii. daye of Iuly folowyng there was a nother proclamaciō, whiche is a lawe likewise, ỹ no holy daye shal bee kept except our Ladyes dayes, the apostle Euāgelistes, S. George, &. S. Mary Magdalin, & that. S. Marke shall not bee taken, ne kepte as a fastyng daye, nor. S. Laurens euin; neither ỹ children should bee decked, ne goo about vpon. S. Nycolas, S. Katherin, S. Clement, the holy Innocens, and suche like dayes. Also ỹ. xxviii. daye of the same Iuly was the lorde Leonard Grey beheded at Towre Hill, for diuers treasons dooen in Irelād, while he was the kyng his deputee ther. The same daye were. iii. gentilmenne, called Mantell, Roydon, and Frowdes, hanged at saint Thomas Watrynges, for cōmittyng a shamefull murdre, & makyng an vnlawful assēble, cōfirmed by a sedicious othe, in Sussex, in Maye laste, in the compaignie of the lorde Dacres of the South, whiche lord Dacres was on S. Peter his daye folowyng ladde frome the Towre through London, by the sheriffes on fote, to Tyborne, and there hāged. The kyng his progres to Yorke with prouicion for the receiuyng of ỹ Scottishe kyng. And the firste daye of Iulye was a Welshe manne drawen, hanged, & quarterid, for prophesiyng of the kyng his maiesties death. Whose highnes Iesu long preserue, with his noble ympe prince Edward, and his noble counsaill, in honor, welth, and prosperitee, long to endure. AMEN.

THE ENDE OF CRONICLE.

CONTINUATION

OF

FABYAN'S CHRONICLE

FROM THE EDITION

OF

1559.

HENRY THE. VIII.

CONTINUED.

Anno Domini. M.D.xli. Anno Domini. M.D.xlii.

Sir Rouland Hill.

Sir Mighel Dormer. Anno. xxxiii.

Henry Suckely.

IN this yere, the tēth daie of Marche, there was a maide boiled in Smithfielde, for poisonyng diuers honest persons that she had dwelled with in the citee of London.

This yere came in the erle of Desmonde and the great Oneil out of Irelande, and did submit theim to the kynges maiestie, and after their submission the greate Oneill was created erle of Tyron, and his soonne baron of Doncannon.

Anno Domini. M.D.xlii. Anno Domini. M.D.xliii.

Henry Hoblethorne.

Ihon Cotes, salter. Anno. xxxiiii.

Henry Hancotes.

THis yere the frost dured so longe, that many of the poore people cried out for lacke of woode and coales, that the maior wente to the woode warfes, and solde to the poore people billet and faggot, by the peniworthe.

Also this yere was an acte of parliament for wood and coal to kepe the fulle sise, after the Purification of our Ladie, that shall be in the yere of our Lorde M.D.xliii. that no man shall bargaine, sell, bryng, or conueigh of any other sise, to be vttred or solde, vpon pain of forfaiture.

This yere, the eightene day of Iuly, was brente at Windsore three persones, that is to saie, one sir Anthonie Parson, priest, and twoo seculer men, and the third had the kynges pardon.

Also this yere was proclaimed in the citee of London, the third daie of August, open war betwene our soueraigne lorde the kyng and the French kyng, so that the kings highnes gaue licence and auctoritee to euery of his saied subiectes, to vse the said Frenche kyng, and all ẏ depende vpō hym, to their moste aduaūtage and commoditie, as his maiesties enemies hath in soche like case heretofore been vsed and accustomed.

Anno Domini. M.D.xliii. Anno Domini. M.D.xliiii.

Iohn Roules.

Sir William Bowyer, draper. Sir Raufe Warren, knight. Anno. xxxv.

Richard Dobbes.

THis yere died sir Willyā Bowyer, and after hym was chosen sir Raufe Warren for the rest of the yere.

THis yere was a great death in London, which continued so long that there was no Terme kept at London at Mighelmas, but was remoued to Sainct Albones, and there kept.

IN the yere of our Lord. M. D. xliii. and the. xxxvi. yere of king Hēry theight, in the tyme of the maioraltie of sir Raufe Warrē, the kynges maiestie sent an armie into Scotlande the fourth daie of Maie, & landed at Lith, and so wente burnyng and destroiyng the countrey aboute, sparyng neither castell, toune, pile, ne village.

The borough and toune of Edenbrough, with the abbaye called Holie Roode House, and the kynges palaice adioynyng to the same, were destroied.

The toune of Lithe also, and the hauen & pire destroied. The castle and village of Cragmiller, the abbaie of Newe Bottell, and parte of Muskelborowe toune, the chapel of our Ladie of Lauret, Prestō toune, and the castle of Harington toune, with the freres, and nunrie, a castle of Oliuer Sanckeres, the toune of Dundebarre, Laurestō, with the graunge, Drilawe, Westercrag, Enderlaugh the pile & ŷ toune, Broughton, Chester felles, Crawned, Dudistone, Stāhouse, the Fiker, Beuerton, Tranent, Shenstone, Marcle, Tarpren, Kyrlande hille, Katherwike, Belton, East Barnes, Howlād, Butterdē, Quickwoe, Blackbourne, Raunton, Bildi and the toure, and many other tounes and villages brent by ŷ flete vppon the sea side, with a greate number of piles and villages, whiche I cannot name nor rehearse, which wer destroyed & left desolate, Kincorne, S. Miuers, ŷ quenes fery, part of Petinwaines, and other diuers thinges doen by therle of Hartforde, lieutenaunt to the kyng.

At Lith, in Scotlande, were made fourtie and fiue knights.

Also this yere the kyng prepared an armie into Fraunce, and thither he went his owne person, and besieged the strong toune of Bulleine in Fraunce, as here after ye shall heare.

The. xiiii. daie of Iulie, the kynges maieste departed from Douer toward Caleis.

The. xv. day of Iuly, the king remoued to Morgisen, and ther camped one night.

The. xxvi. daie of Iuly, the armie remoued to high Bullen, and there camped on the North east parte of the toune.

The. xxvii. daie of Iuly, the duke of Suffolke laied siege vnto high Bullen, and there camped on theast part of the toune.

The. xxviii. daie of Iuly, the watche toure, otherwise called the olde man, was won.

The. xxix. daie of Iuly, Base Bullein was won.

The. xi. daie of September, was made a greate larum, and the castell was so shaken with gunpouder, ŷ the stones, which weighed thirtie pound weight, did flee. xx. score of, the whiche not a litle greued thenhabitors, to their daily paines & tormēts.

The. xiii. daie of September, the toune was victoriously conquered by kyng Henry theight, kyng of England, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender of the faith, and in yearth supreme heade of the Churche of Englande and Irelande; whiche, after the entreatie & humble petition made of the Frenchemen, gaue them licence to take bagge & baggage with them, and so to departe.

The. xiii. daie of September, at three of the clocke at after noone, the toune gate was opened, and the people begā to cum out, and thei helde on till seuen of the clocke at night; and there wer in number of men, women, and children, fower thousande, and of theim fiftene hundred able men of warre; and thei had with theim as moche as thei could cary, bothe men, women, and children, that was able to beare any thyng, and their horses and kine were loden with as moche stuffe as thei could beare awaie, and thei had. lxxv. wagons laden with thē. What laude and praise ought thei to giue vnto God, what worthy salutations ought thei to render, to soche a mercifull & bountifull kyng, which shewed them soche mercie and fauour, with the sauegarde of their liues.

The. xv. daie of September, the kyng entred into High Bulleine, with the nobilitie of his realme, and trumpettes blowyng, ŷ it reioysed all the whole hoste to heare.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.D.xliiii. Anno Domini. M.D.xlv.

Ihon Wilford.

William Laxton. Anno. xxxvi.

Andrewe Iud.

THe firste daie of October king Henry departed from Boleine toward Douer, and at his going he dubbed. iiii. knightes at the water side.

The eighte daie of October the dolphin came with greate power out of high Fraũce, and camped at Morgisen, and sente his trumpet, with two hundred horsemen and men of armes, toward Boleine, and thei marched on ỹ north east side, where the king camped; and the trumpetter came to Boleine gate, and blewe his trumpet to come to my lorde deputie, and taried at the gate from. ix. of the clock before noone till two of the clock at afternoone, and then he cam into Bolein to my lorde deputie, and saied the dolphine, his master, had sent to somon the toune, and my lord deputie and the counsaill gaue answere to the dolphine of defiaunce; and then the trumpetter and the bushemente of horsemen marched backe toward Morgisen.

The. ix. daie of October, about twoo or three of the clocke in the mornyng, came the dolphin and his armie from Morgisen towardes Boleine, on the north east side to the old man, and from thens marched forth doune to Base Boleine, aboute fower or fiue of the clock in the mornyng, and there beganne to spoile and kill our men in their beddes, and made great slaughter, till the larum was heard in Base Boleine, and the Frenchemen approched fast on them: yet by the might of God, our men, many beyng sicke, & but a smal number to the Frenche, fought with them frō fiue of the clocke till half an houre past. vi. Then the larum was heard in heighe Boleine, through the menne of Base Boleine, whiche were sore amased, and many slain & hurt for lacke of capitaines, and the rest were driuen vp to Boleine gates. And then all the men in high Bolein wer commaunded to the walles, & then the greate ordinaunce was shot out of Hye Bolein into Base Bolein, emōg the Frenchmen, and slue many of them. Yet the Frenchmen recouered the toune of theim, till the lorde deputie commaunded sir Thomas Poininges to take certain men with hym, for his menne warded in Base Boleine that night, and by the might of God and good fortune, sir Thomas Poinynges spred a stāderd with an hundred mē, and cried a newe larum, and sette on the Frenchmen, cummyng couragiously towardes thē, & fought sore with them, the Frenchmen tourned their backes and ran awaie, and our men folowed and slue many of them, and put thē all to flight, thankes be to God; and there was many slaine on bothe parties, to the number of. ix. hundred, besides those that wer hurte, of the whiche many died. And the same daie our soldiours tooke fiftene standers, and slue the bearers of them.

Also there was slain of their capitaines to the nomber of. lx.; one was taken & no more: and thei toke one of our capitaines, and diuers other that were naked, to the number of. xii. or. xvi. and then thei marched toward Morgisen.

The tenth daie of October, ỹ dolphin sent his trumpetter to the lorde deputie of Boleine, to knowe what capitaines, men of armes, and other of his men the Englishe menne had taken; and the lord deputie made answere and saied he had but one. Then the dolphins trompetter said, that thei lacked of their capitaines, men of armes, and other of their foote men, to the number of seuen hundred and mo; and the lorde deputie deliuered the French capitain, and the dolphin deliuered ours.

The leuenth day of October came a greate nauie of Frenche shippes, right before Bolein, and there remained in sight. ii. daies, and then sailed forth betwene Boleine and Calais, to hear of their master ỹ dolphin.

This yere was taken by the kynges ships of the west countrey, and of the Englishe coast, the number of three hundreth Frenche shippes and more.

The. xxvi. daie of Ianuary, in the yere of. xlv. there camped on the west side of

Boleine, beyonde the hauen, an armye of Frenche men to the number of. xviii. thousande, and laie there the space of ten daies; and the sixe daie of February, thei were all put flight by the erle of Herforde, and the lorde admirall, then being lorde deputie of Bolein, with a small companie of menne, and without bloud sheddyng on the Englisshe side; but diuers of thē wer slain, and thei lefte all their ordinaunce, with bagge & baggage behind them. After whiche victorie, sir Thomas Poinings was made lord.

This yere, in Iuly, about the twentie daie, the Frenche men, with a great nauie of shippes, enuaded ỹ Isle of Wight, where as thei were driuen backe, and a greate number slain.

This yere, in September, the churche of sainct Giles, without Cripelgate, was brent.

Anno Domini. M.D.xlv. Anno Domini. M.D.xlvi.

George Barnes.

Sir Martine Bowes, goldsmith. Anno. xxxvii.

Raufe Alein.

THis yere, in Februarie, should a womā haue been brent in Smithfielde, for clippyng of golde, but the kynges pardone came, she beyng at the stake redy to be brente.

This yere the citezens of Lōdon leuied in the citee two fiftenes, for the conueighaunce of more water to the citee.

This yere, the thirtene day of Iune, being Whitsundaie, a cōtinuall peace was proclaimed in the citee of London, betwene the kyng of Englande, of the one partie, and the French king, of the other partie, with a solempne procession at the tyme of proclamation, giuyng laude and praise to God, the auethour of peace; and at night, throughout the citee, greate fires, with moche ioye and gladnes.

This yere, the. xxvii. daie of Iune, doctor Crome preached at Poules crosse, and there opēly confessed that he had been seduced with naughtie bookes, contrary to the true doctrine of Christe, and in this dooyng he saied he was not compelled so to saie, neither for feare nor by any other meanes, but onely of his free and voluntary will.

This yere was brēt in Smithfield, Anne Ascue, and. iii. more, for heresie, and doctour Shaxton recanted the same tyme.

In the same yere, the twentie and one daie of August, came into Englande, to dooe his duetie from the Frenche kyng, Mounsure Deneball, high admirall of Fraunce, with great triūph, and brought with him the Sacre of Depe, and twelue galles well besceu in diuers poinctes, and landed at the Toure, where he was honourably receiued w̄ many nobles and peeres of this realme, with greate shotyng of gunnes, and so brought to the bisshoppe of Londons palais, and laie there twoo nightes, that is to saie, the. xxi. and. xxii. daie of Auguste, in the yere of our Lorde a thousande fiue hundred fourtie and sixe.

On Mondaie, the. xxiii. daie of August, he rode to Hampton Courte, where the kyng laie, and before he came there prince Edwarde receiued hym with a goodly compaignie, for there was the number of fiue hundred and fourtie in veluet coates, and the princes liuerie were with sleues of cloth of golde, and halfe the coate embrodered also with golde; and there were to the number of. viii. hundred horses roially apparelled, whiche brought him to the manour of Hampton Courte, to the prudente and redoubted prince his father, and queene Katherine. And on the morowe, the kyng and the saied Mounsure Deneball brake the hooste betwene theim, for a generalle peace, and so continued in banketting and pleasure triumphauntly, with noble maskes and mummeries, with diuers and sonderie chaunges; in so moche that the torche bearers were clothed in clothe of golde. This continued sixe daies, and so returned into Fraunce with many sunderie giftes, giuē him and his retinue.

Anno

Anno Domini. M.D.xlvi. Anno Domini. M.D.xlvii.

Richard Greues.

Henry Hobelthorne, marchaunt taillor. Anno. xxxviii.

Thomas Curtes.

THis yere, the nintene daie of Ianuarie, was therle of Surrey beheded at the Toure Hill, for treason.

This yere, the twentie and eight daie of Ianuarie, departed out of this worlde the noble kyng Henry, theight of that name, (whose soule God take to his infinite mercie, vnder whō his people of Englande liued long a ioifull and peaceable life,) and was full royally buried at Windsore, the sixtene daie of Februari, in the same yere.

Kyng Edward the. vi.

EDward the sixth began his reigne the. xxxi. daie of Ianuary, in the yere of our Lorde a thousande. v.C. fourtie and sixe, and was proclaimed kyng in all his fathers realmes and landes.

And the ninetene daie of February he rode solempnly with his vncle sir Edward Seimour, lorde gouernour, and protector duke of Somerset, with the nobilitie of the realme, from the Toure to Westminster, throughe the citee of Londō, whiche was richly hanged with couerlets and carpetts of tapestrie and arras, Chepeside beyng richely hanged with clothe of siluer and gold, euery conduict runnyng with wine, pagentes of childrē beyng richly apparelled, to receiue hym at euery place, with orations of his praise.

And on ȳ South side of Poules churche yarde, an argosie came from the batilment of the same churche, vpon a cable, beyng made faste to an anker at the deanes doore, liyng vppon his breaste, aidyng hymself neither with hande nor foote, and after ascended to the middes of the same cable, and tumbled & plaied many pretie toies, wherat the kyng, with other of the peres and nobles of the realme, laughed right hartely.

The twentie daie of February prince Edward, at Westminster, was proclaimed, annoynted, and crouned king; Thomas Lorde, archbisshop of Cauntorburie, and metropolitane of this reame, ministryng the deuine sacramentes and ceremonies.

The. xxi. &. xxii. daie, sir Thomas Seimour, lorde admiral, accompaignied with Deuelox, sir Anthonie Kyngston, sir Peter Carewe, Knowles, & Shelley, were chalengours againste all persones defendaunt, at tilt, barriers, and turney; wherin thei behaued theim selues like valiaunte men of armes. And this was finished on the Sundaie next followyng, beyng the. xxvii. daie, hauing at euen bankettes, at the whiche were diuers and sundrie plaies.

In this moneth of Marche, sir Andrewe Dudley, vice admiralle, with the Paunce and the Harte, being but single māned, had a greate conflicte with three Scottishe shippes, beeyng double manned and trimmed with ordinaunce, in the narrowe seas, and obtained the victorie, and tooke many prisoners, and brought the shippes into Orwell hauen, where thei did remain.

This yere, in Auguste, the duke of Somerset and the erle of Warwicke, with a noble armie, were sent into Scotlande; and neare to Edenbrough, at a place called Musselbrough, the Englishmen and Scottes met, where betwene thē was foughten a cruell battaill, the victory, by the onely prouision of God, fell to the Englishemen, and of the Scottes were slain, (as writeth maister Patten, in hys boke called the Expedition into Scotland,) aboue. xiiii. M. and taken prisoners of lordes, knightes, and gentlemen. xv.c.

Anno Domini. M.D.xlvii. Anno Domini. M.D.xlviii.

Thomas White.

Sir Ihon Gresham. Anno. i.

Robert Curteyse.

THis yere was ordeyned the communion to be receiued in both kindes.

This yere, the last day of Iuly, Stephen Gardener, bishop of Winchester, was commaunded to the Tower.

This yere was a greate mortalitie in London; then was a commaundement geuen to all curates, that thei shoulde burie none before sixe of the clock in the morning, nor after sixe at nighte, and that the belle shoulde ring three quarters of an houre or more.

Anno Domini. M.D.xlviii. Anno Domini. M.D.xlix.

William Locke.

Syr Henry Amcotes, fishmonger. Anno. ii.

Ihon Ailofe.

THis yere, in February, sir Thomas Seymour, lord admirall, was put to deth for diuers treasons, and was condempned by a parlyament.

In this yere was images put downe in all churches through out Englande.

This yere the marriages of priestes was graunted lawfull by parlyament.

This yere doctor Boner was deposed frō his bishoprike, the first day of October.

In this moneth the duke of Somerset was commaunded to the Tower.

This yere was a rising in Deuonshyre and Cornewal, about the middes of the yere, whiche was dammage to theim and other; wherefore their chief captains were taken and brought to the Tower of Londō, and the. xxvi. day of Ianuary after was drawē, hanged, and quartred, and thre more at Tiburne.

Also this yere, about the same time, was an insurrection in Norfolke and Suffolke, and their captain, called Kite, & his brother, was shortly taken, and iudged to bee hanged at Norwitche in cheynes. Durynge whiche insurrection, the gates of London were warded by certaine of the auncient citezins in harneys.

Anno Domini. M.D.xlix. Anno Domini. M.D.l.

Ihon Yorke.

Sir Rouland Hille. Anno. iii.

Ihon Turke.

IN this yere, the. xix. daie of Ianuarie, capitaine Gambold, a capitain of the Spaniardes, and an other capitaine, was slaine without Newgate in the euening, by capitain Degouarie, whiche was taken and hanged on the euen of sainct Poule, and three more with hym, in Smithfield.

The sixte daie of Februarie the duke of Somerset was deliuered out of the Toure.

In the same moneth wente out of Englande certain lordes of ŷ counsaill to Bolein, where certain of the Frenche counsail met with theim, and after long consultatiō had, and diuers metings betwene thē, there was a generall peace cōcluded, whiche was proclaimed the. xxix. daie of Marche folowyng.

Also aboute the. xxv. daie of Aprill folowyng, the toune of Bolein, with the fortresses therto belongyng, was deliuered by the Englishmen into the handes of Frenchmen.

This yere, the seconde daie of May, was brent in Smithfielde Ione Boucher, otherwise calld Ione of Kente, for the horrible heresie, that Christ toke no flesh of the Virgine Mary; and at her death did preache Ihon Scorie, a preacher of Cantorburie, shewyng to the people her abhominable opinions, warnyng al menne to beware of theim, and soche like.

Aboute

Aboute this tyme there was certain light persones pretended a commotion in Kent, but thei were apprehended, and the thirtene daie of Maie was for that trespasse hanged, at Asheforde, Richarde Lion and Goddarde Goran, and the nexte daie followyng was hanged, at Canterburie, Richard Ireland, for the same trespasse.

Anno Domini. M.D.l. Anno Domini. M.D.li.

Augustine Hinde.

Sir Andrewe Iud, skinner. Anno. iiii.

Ihon Lion.

THis yere, on sainct Valẽtines daie, at Feuersham, in Kent, was committed an horrible murder, for one Arden, a gentleman, was, by the cõsẽt of his wife, murdered; wherfore she was brente at Cantorburie, and there was one hanged in chaines for that murder; and at Feuersam was twoo hãged in chaines, and a woman brent; and in Smithfielde was hanged one Mosbie, and his sister, for the same murder also.

This yere doctoure Gardener, bisshop of Winchester, the sixtene daie of Februarie, was deposed of his bisshõprike, and so put into the Toure, where he laie duryng the life of king Edward; al whiche tyme doctour Ponet was ceased in that bisshoprike.

This yere was a Duchman brente in Smithfielde, for holdyng of the opinion of the Arrians.

In the moneth of Iuly, there was a proclamation for the deminished of the coigne, so that the piece of twelue penies was but nine penies, and the grote but three penies.

In the moneth of August folowyng, was an other proclamation for the like, so that the piece of nine penies was but sixe penies, the piece of three penies was but twoo penies, the piece of twoo penies was but a penie, and the piece of a penie but a halfe penie.

Anno Domini. M.D.li. Anno Domini. M.D.lii.

Ihon Lambert.

Richard Dobbes, skinner. Anno. v.

Ihon Couper.

BEtwene Easter and Whitsontide was an yearthequake in diuers places, specially in Southsex.

In this yere was the sweate in London, whereof there died in the first weke eight hundred persones, and then it ceased, thankes be to God.

This yere, the seconde daie of Nouember, the olde quene of Scottes came to Londõ, where she was honourably receiued, & lodged in the bisshops palace.

In this yere the sea brake in at Sãdwitch, in so moche that it did ouerflow all the marshes there about, and drouned moch cattaill, to the great losse bothe of the toune and the countrey.

In this yere, the twentie and twoo daie of Ianuary, the duke of Somerset was beheaded at Toure Hille, for felonie. And on the twentie and fiue daie of February folowyng, was hanged sir Raufe Auane, and sir Miles Partriche; and there were beheaded sir Thomas Arundell, and sir Mighell Stanhope, for the like offence.

This yere, in the moneth of August, a childe was borne at Middleston, with twoo bodies, twoo heades, fower armes and handes, one bellie and one nauill; on the one side twoo legges and twoo fete, on the other one legge made of twaine, and a foote with nine toes; the one part died before the other: it liued fower daies.

Anno Domini. M.D.lii. Anno Domini. M.D.liii.

Willyam Garret.

George Barnes, mercer. Anno. vi.

Ihon Mainarde.

IN the tyme of this maior, the. vi. day of Iuly, departed out of this world kyng Edwarde

warde the sixte of that name, and died at Grenewiche, in the sixten yere of his age, the seuenth yere of his raigne, and is buried at Westminster, whose soule God take to his infinite mercie. Amen.

The. x. daie of Iuly, the duke of Northumberlande, with his adherentes, did proclaime lady Iane (daughter to the duke of Suffolke, and wife to Gilforde Dudley) quene, the whiche duke incontinently made an armie against the lady Mary, right inheritour to the crowne of this realme. But his attempt (for as muche as it was not of God, coulde not come to any good successe.) For when he thought him selfe most strongest, part of the nobilitie, & almoste all the common people fel from him, so that at Cambridge, he with his sonnes and a fewe more were left alone, and were arested and sent to the Tower of London.

Queene Mary.

MAry, the elder doughter of king Henry the eight, began her raign ouer the realme of England, and was proclaimed queene the. xx. day of Iuly. in the yere of oure Lorde. M.D.liii. her grace then beinge at Frimingham, in Suffolke. The third day of August she came to London, and toke possession of the Tower. And in the time of her there abiding, she released out of prison the duke of Norfork, doctor Gardiner, & the lord Curteney. Shortly after, certain bishops, which were before depriued of their bishoprikes, were restored, that is to say, doctour Gardiner to the bishoprike of Winchester, and Ihon Ponet putte out; doctour Boner to the bishoprike of London, and Nicolas Ridley put out; doctour Day to the bishoprike of Chichester, and Ihon Scorye put out; doctour Tonstall to the bishoprike of Duresme; and doctour Heath to the bishoprike of Worchester, and Ihon Hoper expelled, and committed to the Flete; doctour Wesie to Excester, and Miles Couerdale put out.

The twelueth day of August was beheaded at the Tower Hil, Ihon Dudley, duke of Northūberlande, sir Iohn Gates, and sir Thomas Palmer, for treason; whiche duke at the time of his death did recant his former life, and exhorted the people not to be ashamed to returne to the catholike faith.

On the first day of October queene Mary was crowned at Westminster, by doctour Gardiner, bishop of Winchester (Thomas Cranmer, bishop of Canterborye, then being in the Tower for treason); which coronation was done royally, and such a multitude of people resorted out of all partes of the realme to se the same, that the like had not been seen tofore.

The tenth day of October began the parliament, and certaine actes made in kinge Edward the sixe daies, which wer not thought necessary, were repealed; among whiche the acte for marriage of priestes was repealed, and the acte for establishing of English seruice was also repealed, and the former Latyn seruice set forth.

Also at this parliament was cōuicted and attainted of high treason, Iohn duke of Northumberlande, Thomas Cranmer archbishop of Cantorbury, Willia marques of Northampton, Ihon earle of Warwike, sir Ambrose Dudley, knighte, Gilforde Dudley, esquier, and Iane his wife, Henrye Dudley, esquier, syr Andrewe Dudley, knight, syr Ihon Gates, and sir Thomas Palmer.

Anno Domini. M.D.liii. Anno Domini. M.D.liiii

Thomas Offeley.

Thomas White, marchaunt tailour. Anno. i.

William Hewet.

THis yere, on S. Katherins daye, after euen song, began the quere of Paules to goe about the steple singing, with lightes, after the olde custome.

On

On sainct Andrewes day beganne the procession in Latyn, the bishop, curates, persones, and the whole quier of Paules, with the maior and diuers aldermen, and the prebendes in their grey ammes, and thus continued thre daies folowing.

The. xiiii. day of Ianuary began the procession on the Sundayes about the churche, with the maior and the aldermen in their clokes, and the prechour takinge his benediction in the middes of the churche, according vnto the olde custome.

This yere, the sixt day of Ianuarye, came from the emperour in the name of the house of Burgoyne, noble ambassadours, as the countie Degmōt, countie Delyne, and mounsier Curtier, with other.

This yere, the fiftene daye of Ianuary, sir Thomas Wiat, George Harper, Hēry Isley, and Leonarde Digges, with other, began a rebellion at Maidston in Kent, and made a proclamation, pretending to defende the realme from Spaniardes and other straungers; and after came to Rochester, where came vnto them diuers as wel borne out of Kent as in Kent, as Robert Rudstone, Cuthberte Vaghan, Water and Water Mantels, Kneuet, Godfrey, with diuers other. At which commocion and stirre, althoughe there came to them from diuers places of Kent, yet Canterbury cōtinued trew and faithful, in so much as through the goodnes of God, and the circumspect prouision and diligent attendaūce of Ihon Twin, maier, and his brethren the aldermen, with the faithfull assistence of other, the citie was defended from the rebelles, and not so muche as one knowen of the saied citie to haue fled to Wiat, or to anye of his adherentes.

The. xx. day of Ianuary was condempned at Guilde Hal, lord Robert Dudley, for hie treason.

The sixe and twentie daye of the same moneth beganne the warding at al the gates about the city of London by ỹ aunciēt citezins & their seruauntes, for the great rebelliō of Wiat and his companions.

The. xxx. day of the same moneth, the duke of Norfolk came to Stroude, & bent his artilery against Wiat in Rochester; but Brian Fitzwilliā and captaine Bret, who came with the duke against Wiat, with certaine other of their confederacie, made a shoute and fled frō the duke to Wiat, and the duke hardly escaped.

And the next day Wiat went to Cooling, and toke the lorde Cobham.

The first day of February, at afternoone, the queene, accompanied with the lordes of her counsaile, with a goodly train of ladies, came into London, with her scepter in her hande, in token of peace, to Guild Hal, and there shewed her mind, concerninge marriage, vnto the maire and to the whole citie, and went to the court again by water, and toke her barge at the crane of the vintre.

And that same day came Wiat into Southwarke, and or it was night he had made a trēch at the bridge foote of London, for the drawe bridge was drawen against him.

And the lorde William Hawarde was ioyned in commission for that time, with the maire, for the surer defence of the citie of London.

The sixte daye of Februarye was shroue Twesday, and then was hanged twoo men vpon a gibbet in Paules church yarde.

And the same day, at nine of the clock in the morning, went Wyat to Kyngston on Thames, and passed ouer the water, where diuers of his menne fled from him the night before when he went oute of Southwarke. And that same time the duke of Suffolke with his brother, was taken by the erle of Huntingdon; and that same day the lorde Cobham and Harper were committed to the Tower.

The seuenth day of Februarye was Ashwednesdaye, and then Wiat with his hoste came vnto the parke pale, beside S. Iames, and there would haue pitched his field; and Kneuet with other hadde most traiterously shotte at the court gate.

And when Wiat perceyued that all thinges was not as he woulde haue it, he passed down by S. Iames, & there his train was cut of by the commaundement of the erle of Penbroke, and certaine of his men slaine, and then himself with diuers other came

in at Temple Barre, and so through Flete Strete to the Bell Sauage, and when he perceyued Ludgate was shutte against him he departed, saying, "I haue kept touche," and so went back again; and by the Temple Barre he was taken, and brought by water vnto the Towre of London. And all the queenes hooste came through London in goodly araye; and that daye was songe Te Deum, in the quenes chapell, for ioye of the takinge of the duke of Suffolke and his brother.

The eyghte day of February the duke of Suffolke and hys brother was brought through London, with a goodly company of speare menne, and so vnto the Toure of London.

The fourtene day of the same moneth wer hãged for the same rebellion, Vicars, a yoman of the garde, Bouthe, one of the quenes foote men, great Ihon Norton, and one Kyng, and in seuerall places about London ỹ number of fourtie. And that same daie on Haie hill, was. iii. hanged in chaines for the same offence.

This rebellion in Kent was ioyned and confedered with the commotion moued and attempted in Deuonshire, by Gawen and Peter Carowe, Gibbes, Champernham, & other, which Peter fledde into Fraunce, the cause why will shortly appere; but Gawen and Gibbes, with other were there takẽ, and was also confedered w Henry Gray, duke of Suffolke, who was apprehended by the worthy erle of Huntington, and was condemned of high treasõ at Westminster, the. xvii. daie of Februarie, and suffred paines of death for the same, at Toure Hil, the. xxiiii. daie of Februarie.

Henry Isley comyng to Wiat, was encountered by the lorde of Aburgainy, master Warham, and Willyam Sentlegers, with the helpe of master Clerke of Wortham, and there discomfited and fledde into Hampshire, where he was taken in the apparell of a mariner, his face disfigured with coales and dirt, and so broughte captiue into London.

And after that Robert Rudstone, Willyam Cromer, Brette, Cuthbert Vaghan, Hẽry Vane, Thomas Culpeper of Alesford, Kneuette, and Kneuette, Water and Water Mantels, lorde Ihõ Graie, and Leonarde Digges, was condempned in Westminster Hall of high treason, for the same rebellion.

The fiftene daie of Marche, was committed to the Toure againe, the erle of Deuonshire. And theightene day of the same moneth, whiche was Palmesundaie euen, was committed to the Toure the lady Elizabeth, the quenes sister; and after that the lorde Thomas Graie, and sir Iames Craftes, confederated with the saied duke of Suffolke in the same rebellion.

And shortly after that, the quene, of her aboundaunt and accustomed mercie, pardoned fower hundred and moe of the common people, whiche came to Westminster with halters about their neckes, and wer pardoned, who had been misled by the euill disposed aboue named.

And then immediatly summoned a parliament to be holden at Oxforde, and immediatly after it was retourned to Westminster and there holden.

The. x. daie of April was the oppositions at Oxford, by Thomas Cranmer, archebisshop of Cantorburie, Nicholas Ridley, late bisshop of London, & Hugh Latimer, against diuers doctours of bothe vniuersitees, and other learned menne, and were condempned, and remained there in prison.

The. xi. daie of April, sir Thomas Wiat was beheaded at the Toure Hil, for high treason, and after quartered, and his quarters set vp in diuers places, and his head set vpon the gallowes on Hay Hill, where he was ouer runne, and shortly after it was stollen awaie.

The xiii. daie of Maie, was Mondaie in Whitson weke, and then came the procession of S. Peters in Cornhil, with diuers other parishes, and the maior and aldermen, fisshemongers, and goldsmithes, vnto Poules, after the old custome, and other processions all the three daies, as thei were wont to doe.

The eightene daie of Maie was William Thomas drawen, hanged, and quartered, at Tybourne, for high treason.

The.

The. xxiiii. daie of May was Corpus Christie daie, and then was a ioyner that dwelte in Colmāstrete, called Ihō Strete, would haue taken the sacrament out of the priestes handes in Smithfield, in the tyme of the procession; but he was resisted and taken, and put in Newgate, and then he feined himself mad.

The. iiii. daie of Iune was taken doune all the gallowes that were aboute London.

The. xxii. daie of Iune was a proclamation made, concernyng shotyng in hande gunnes and bearyng of weapons.

The twentie daie of Iuly Philip, prince of Spaine, arrived at South Hampton, where he was, with all due honor and obeisaunce, receiued of the quenes counsaill, and moste partie of the nobilitie of this realme.

At his firste settyng foote on land, the garter of thorder was set & made fast aboute his legge, whiche was sent vnto hym by the quene, richly adorned with precious iewelles. Immediately vpon his receiuyng and mutuall salutyng on bothe parties, or he would enter into any house, he went first on foote to the churche of Holy Roodes in Hampton, standyng directly against the toune hous, a good distaunce from the kaie, to render thankes to almightie God, for his prosperous voiage.

When he had praied aboute half an houre or more, he roade to his lodgyng, whiche was backe again towardes the water gate, vpon a goodly ienet, whiche the quene had sent for that purpose, exceadyng richly trapped.

The Mondaie folowyng he roade from Southampton to Winchester, accompanied with a notable compaignie of lordes and gentlemen of Englande, euery of them hauyng a notable company, and excellently well apparailed & also horsed; but ỹ daie was a rainie daie, so that the iourney was sum what the lesse pleasaunt.

The twentie and fower daie of Iuly he was honourably receiued into the toune of Winchester, betwene sixe and seuen a clocke at night, and went into the cathedrall churche before he toke his lodging; and at the west ende of the churche, at his lighting from his horse, the quenes minstrels plaid vntil he came to the churche doore, and there the bisshop of Winchester, and fower bisshops more, with the priestes, singyng men, and childrē, receiued hym with procession in copes, with. iii. crosses.

In the first entrie of ỹ church he kneeled doune and made his praiers, & then arose and went vnder a canapie from the west doore vp into the quere, and as sone as his grace perceiued the sacramente, he put of his cap and did reuerence, and so entred into a goodly traueis richly hāged, and there kneled, and then my lorde chauncelour began Te Deum, and all the quere sang the rest. After all this finisshed his grace was brought out w torche light and wente a foote to his lodging, through the cloyster, where the quenes garde did stande all the waie to his lodgyng, whiche was in a faire hous of the deanes.

He was in a riche coate, embroudered richly with gold, and a hat moche like the same, with a fether in it. He tourned hymself towardes the people al the waie on both sides, and the people moche reioysed to se his noble personage, and cried God saue your grace. The sam night after he had supped, whiche was aboute ten of the clocke, certain of the counsail brought hym to the quene, by a secrete waie, where she receiued hym right louingly, and there thei stoode talkyng togither in the Spanishe tongue aboute halfe an houre, and then he tooke his leaue of her, and so departed to his lodgyng.

Vppon Tuesdaie, beeyng the. xxiiii. daie of Iuly, in the afternoone, about three of the clock, he came frō his lodgyng on foot, and with hym the lorde Steward, the erle of Darby, therle of Penbroke, and diuers other lordes and gentlemen, as well Englishe as others, goyng before him; he goyng alone, apparailed in a cloke of fine blacke clothe, embroudred about with white siluer, a paire of white hose, and the garter of the order of Englande aboute his legge, and so went to the court, where euery body might see hym. And after he had entred the court, & came nigh to the hall doore, the instrumentes plaid at his graces entryng into the hal, where the quene receiued hym, and

kissed hym in the presence of all the people; and she beyng on the right hand, thei went togither into the greate chamber of presence, and there in the presence of all the lordes and ladies, thei stode a quarter of an houre vnder the clothe of estate, talkyng togither; and then he tooke his leaue of her grace, & came forth into the open courte, where all the pentioners stoode, and the garde all along bothe the sides of the waie to the court gate, & from thens the lordes brought hym to the cathedrall churche, to euensong, and after euensong thei brought hym to his lodgyng with torche light, very honourably accordyng to his estate.

The same nighte the emperour sent a message to the quenes maiestie, declaring that his sonne, whiche should mary her, was not a prince onely, but a kyng, and that he was kyng of Naples and Hierusalem, and of the other dominions mencioned in his stile.

And you shall vnderstande, that vpon saincte Iames daie, beyng the. xxv. daie of Iuly, aboute aleuen of the clocke, the kyng and quene came frō their lodgyng towardes the churche, al on foote, richly apparelled in gounes of cloth of gold, set with stones, he with his gentlemen and garde, and she with hers, eche of theim hauyng a sworde borne before theim; before her therle of Darby bare the sword, and before his grace the erle of Penbroke bare the sworde; and beyng come into the churche, he went to one altar and she to an other, hanged closely with curtaines of clothe of golde, where we thinke thei wer shriuen. After that thei came from their places and met together, eche of them saluted other very humbly, his royall grace bare headed. And then the sixe bisshoppes went to the places appoincted for the marriage, and the kyng came and stode on the lefte side, and her grace on the right side, and the lorde chauncellour, beeyng there afore, vsed all thinges both in banes biddyng and otherwise, as hath been at marriages of old tyme, and spake it bothe in Latin and Englishe. Her marriage ryng was a rounde houpe of golde, without any stone; for her desire was to be married as maidens were married in the olde time, and so she was. Many noble men of straunge countreis were there, richely apparailed for golde and stone, and all the other gentlemen wer richly apparelled. After this marriage knot thus knitte, the kyng and the quene came hand in hande, a canapie borne ouer them by sixe knightes, and twoo swordes before them, all the lordes goyng before; and when thei came before the altare thei kneled doune a while there, and eche of theim had a taper: and then thei arose, and she went into a traueis made on the right side, and he into an other on the left side. After the gospell thei cam foorthe, and kneled before the altare all the masse tyme, and the care clothe was holden, and he kissed the bisshoppe at the agnus. As sone as masse was doen the kyng of heroldes openly in the churche, and in the presence of the kyng and quene, the lordes and ladies, and all the people, solempnly proclaimed their maiesties kyng and quene, with their title and stile in maner & forme as foloweth,

"Philip & Mary, by the grace of God, king and quene of Englād, Fraunce, Naples, Ierusalem, & Ireland, defenders of the faithe, princes of Spaine and Scicely, archdukes of Austrige, dukes of Milaine, Burgundie, and Brabant, counties of Haspurge, Flaunders, and Tiroll." Whiche ended, the trompettes blewe, and the kyng and quene came forthe hande in hande, with their lordes, ladies, and gentlemen awaityng on them, and twoo swordes borne before theim, and so went on foote to the court, and there dined openly in the hall, bothe together at one table.

Also the. xviii. daie of August, the kyng and the quene came to Suffolke Place, in Southewarke, and there dined, and after diner, with moste part of the nobilitie of the realme, roade right royally ouer Londō Bridge, and so through the citee, which was richely hanged with riche clothes of arres and tapistrie; and at euery conduite as thei came, were gorgious pageauntes of diuerse stories, in praise and cōmendacions of the kyng and queene. Also their maiesties were receiued into the cathedrall church of saincte

Paule, right reuerently by the bisshop of London, with processiō, and after thei had made their deuoute praiers, roade foorth vnto Westminster.

In the time of this maiour, and in the yere of our Lorde a thousande fiue hundred fiftie and fower, was the Latine seruice restored, by the auctoritie of a parliament holden at Westminster.

And in this yere came diuerse ambassadours to the king and quene, frō all places and countries of christendome, as from Polan, Hungarie, Naples, Ferrer, and other countries & cities.

Anno Domini. M.D.liiii. Anno Domini. M.D.lv.

Dauie Woodroffe.

Ihon Lion, grocer. Anno. i. & secundo.

Willyam Chester.

IN this yere a parliamēt was holden at Westminster, where emong other thynges the Englishe seruice and the communion boke was derogated and disanulled, and a generalle submission of the realme of Englāde made to the sea of Roome, the lorde Cardinall Poole beyng restored, all lawes to the contrary dissolued.

This yere, in Lente, wente to Roome the bisshop of Elie, and the lorde Mountacute, ambassadours from the king & quene.

In the tyme of this maior, and in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande fiue hundreth fiftie and fiue, in diuers partes of this realme were apprehended diuers sacramētaries, and many of them suffred death by fire; as at London, Ihon Rogers; Ihon Hoper, at Worcester, where he was bisshop; Farrar, at Saincte Dauides, in Wales, where he was bisshop; doctor Tailer, at Hadley, in Suffolke; and Ihon Bradforde, at Londō, and Bland, a priest, at Cauntorburie, with diuers other.

This moneth was reported all the realme ouer, that the quene was deliuered of a prince, for ioy whereof, in many places thei sang Te Deum, and made bonefires.

This yere, in Iune, the lorde chauncellour of Englande, the erle of Arundell lorde Steward, and the lorde Paget, went ouer the sea to Caleys, and nere vnto Marke treated with the emperours and Frenche kinges commissioners, for a peace to bee had betwene the sayed princes, cardinall Poole beeing president there, and retourned without effecte.

In this yere, in the latter end of Iune, was a certayne mutenyng traiterouslye attempted aboute Wadharst in Southsex, but it was spedilye perceyued, and wittely repressed.

In this yere, the eleuenth day of August, was a terrible fyght on the sea, betwene the Duchemen and the Frenchmen, nere vnto Rumney Marshe, where as eleuen shippes were brente and sonke, that is sixe Frenche shippes, and fiue greate hulkes, and certaine hulkes taken by the Frenchmen.

In this yeare, in the begynnyng of September, the kynge went ouer sea to Caleys, and so forth to Brusselles in Brabant, to visite ỹ emperour his father.

Anno Domini. M.D.lv. Anno Domini. M.D.lvi.

Thomas Lee.

Sir William Garret, haberdasher. Anno. ii. &. iii.

Ihon Macham.

A Proclamatiō of truce in Fraunce & Flaunders, betwene Charles the emperour and Henry the Frenche kyng.

In this yere, in Nouember, Nicholas Ridley and Hughe Latimer, were brent at Oxford.

ford. And in ỹ Lent folowing, Thomas Cranmer, archbisshoppe of Caũtorbury, after that he had recanted his supposed recantation, was also there brent.

This yere. in the. x. of March, apeared a notable comet or blasyng starre; and many children monsterouslye borne in diuers places of Englande.

This yere cardinall Poole, lord legate, was consecrated archbishop of Cauntorburye, for whō master Robert Colins, comissarie and prebendarie of Christes churche, was enstaulled on the day of the Aunnunciation of our blessed Lady, with all solempne rites and ceremonies thereto belonginge.

This yere was detected a hainous conspiracie bothe against the king and queenes persons, and also of inuading ỹ realme; and for the same suffered Vdal, Frogmorton, Daniel, Pecham, Stanton, & other, and diuers for the same fled out of ỹ realme.

Anno Domini. M.D.lvi. Anno Domini. M.D.lvii.

William Harper.

Sir Thomas Offeley. Anno. iii. &. iiii.

Ihon White.

THis yere, in February, the lorde Sturton was arraigned at Westminster Halle, for murderyng of twoo gentlemen, and the. ii. day of March he was conueyghed throughe London to Salisbury, and the. vi. daye of Marche suffered the paines of death.

In the time of this maiour, and in the yere of our Lorde a thousande fiue hundreth fiftie and seuen, and the twentie and seuen daye of Februarye, came to the kinge and the queene an ambassadour from the emperour of Russe.

This yere, in Marche, the king returned into Englande, and the twentie and twoo day of the same moneth, the kynge and the quene came frō Grenewiche by water, and landed at the Tower warffe, & so came throughe London to Westminster with a goodly company.

This yere, in May, came Hēry Stafforde, from Fraunce, & toke Scarborow castell, which he enioyed twoo dayes, & than was taken with his complices and brought to London, where he suffered at the Tower Hil for his treason.

In this yere, vpon the Monday in the Whitson weeke, beeyng the seuenth daye of Iune, was a proclamacion of warre betwene the queene and the Frenche king; wherevpon the queene sent ouer an armie of men, ordeynynge the earle of Penbroke lorde general, which mette the king with his armie at a towne in Fraunce, called S. Quintins.

The tenth daye of Auguste were taken of Fraunce, the chifest capitaines that the French king had, as foloweth,

The constable of Fraunce, and his yongest sonne the duke of Mounpaunce, the duke of Languila, the marshall of S. Andrewe, the ringraue coronall of Almaigne, Rocha dewe Maine, Rocha Forca, vicount Thuran, the baron of Courtō, the prince of Mantua, beside many gentlemen & capitaines were taken.

The. xxviii. daye of Auguste was taken the towne of Sainct Quintins.

Anno Domini. M.D.lvii. Anno Domini. M.D.lviii.

Iames Malarie.

Thomas Curteis, fishmonger. Anno. iiii. &. v.

Richarde Altam.

THe Frenchemen came to Caleis with a greate armie, and layed seyge thereunto; and by treason, at length they wanne the towne, wyth all the other pieces on that side the sea.

Also the. xxix. day of Iulye, certain of the queenes shippes lāded in Britain, at a place called Blanchbaye, and marched to the towne of Conquet, and burned the said town, with the

the tower of S. Andrewes, and S. Mathewes, and diuers villages, and so retourned without great losse of men.

Shortlye after the Frenchemen spoyled and burned Dunkirke in Flaūders; but thei were sone after met by the power of king Philip, and many taken and many slaine.

Against sommer great preparation was made on bothe parties, and eche fearing other; but bothe laye in campe with greate armies till winter, and then thei brake vp, & nothinge dooen, nor peace concluded, althoughe there had been moche talke of peace that shoulde bee concluded.

Anno Domini. M.D.lviii. Anno Domini. M.D.lix.

Thomas Hawes.

Thomas Lee, mercer. Anno. v. &. vi.

Richarde Champney.

IN the beginnynge of this maiors yere died many of the wealthiest mē, al England through, of a straunge feuer.

The. xvii. day of Nouember died queene Mary, at her mancion place called sainct Iames, where she hadde lien sicke long before of a quarteine feuer and other diseases, and ỹ same day was lady Elizabeth her sister proclaymed queene.

Queene Elizabeth.

ELizabeth, the seconde doughter, and heyre of kyng Henry the. viii. (for her brother and sister died issuelesse) beganne her raigne ouer this realme of Englande and her other dominions the. xvii. day of Nouember: her grace being then at Hatfielde in Hartfordeshire; who shortly after came to London, and was most ioyfully receiued of all sortes of her subiectes: and passinge through the citie to the Tower, behaued herself to like a louing soueraigne, that neuer princes could haue greater signes of loue shewed by subiectes then she had.

The. xviii. day of Nouember died cardinall Poole, at Lambeth, where he longe had lyen sicke; and, shortly after, diuers other bisshoppes.

Shortly after was the corps of quene Mary, with greate solempnitie and funerall rites, conueyed to Westminster, and there buried honourablye.

And while prouision was making for quene Elizabethes coronation, her highnes was lodged in the Tower, accompanied with the whole nobilitie and clergy of the realme who were abiding then at London, by the meanes of a parliamēt, which queene Mary had called not long before her death.

The portes & hauens were stopped, & none suffered to passe out of the realm woute licence.

The quenes highnes, by proclamation, forbadde all men to preache, saue such as she shulde appoynt; also to alter any rites or ceremonies vsed in ỹ church, saue as it was in her graces chappell, where the Englishe procession was songe, and the epistle and ghospell at masse read in English, without anye liftinge vp or shewinge of the sacrament.

The. xiiii. day of Ianuarye the queene, accompanied with the nobilitie and clergie, and her whole familie, departed frō the Tower, and passed through London to Westminster, there to bee crowned; in whiche passage she behaued herselfe moste humbly towarde God and her people: for at her graces firste comming out of the Tower, before she entered into her chariote, she lifted vp her handes to heauen and said,

"O Lorde Almightie and euer liuing God, I giue thee moste heartie thankes that thou hast been so mercifull vnto me, as to spare me to see this ioyfull daye. And I acknowledge that thou hast delt as wonderfullye and as mercifully with me as thou didst with

with thy true & faithfull seruaunt Daniel thy prophet, whō thou deliueredst out of the dēne from the crueltie of the gredy & raging lions: euen so was I ouerwhelmed, & only by thee deliuered. To thee therefore onely be thankes, honour, and praise for euer. Amen."

This was her graces praier. Then her grace passed on forth vntill she came to Fanchurche, the people on eche side ioyously beholding the viewe of so gracious a lady their quene, and her grace no lesse gladly noting and obseruing the same. Nere vnto Fanchurch was erected a scaffolde, richelye furnished, wherupon stoode a noyse of instrumentes, and a childe in costly apparell, whiche was appointed to welcum the quenes maiestie in the whole cities behalf. Against which place, whē her grace came, of her own wil she commaunded the chariot to be staied, & that the noise might be appeased, til the child had vttered his welcomming oration; at which words of the last line the whole people gaue a great shoute, wishing with one assent as the childe had saied, and the quenes maiestie thanked most heartly, bothe the citie for this her gentle receyuing at the first, and also the people for confirming the same.

Then her grace marched forward toward Gracious strete, where was erected a goodly pageant and a sumptuous, which was the vnitinge of the twoo houses of Yorke and Lancaster. This pageant was grounded vppon the queenes maiesties name; but when her grace had vnderstode the meaning thereof, she thanked the citie, and promised that she would do her noble endeuour for the continual preseruatiō of concorde, as the pageant did emporte.

Then her grace went forward till she came to Cornehill, wher was another goodly pageant, which was named the seate of worthy gouernemēt, wher her grace staied, & caused her chariot to be drawen nigh vnto it, ỹ her grace might heare the childes oration, whiche when she hadde hard, and vnderstode the meaning of the pageant at ful, gaue ỹ citie also thankes there; and moste graciously promised her good endeuour for the maintenaunce of the saied vertues, and suppression of the vices, as the saied pageant did emport. And so went forth till she came to the nexte pageant, whiche was against Soper lane ende. Whiche pageante was of the eyght beatitudes, expressed in the. v. Chap. of the Ghospell of S. Mathew, wherof euery one, vppon iust considerations, was applied vnto her highnes; whiche when her grace had moste attentiuelye heard what was pronounced vnto her by the child, al the people wished that God woulde strength her grace against al her aduersaries, whō the queenes maiestie moste heartelye thanked for their so louing wishe.

Then her grace passed forwarde throughe Cheapesyde, which was dressed faire, and at the standerd was placed a nois of trumpets, and banners and other furniture. Soone after her grace passed the crosse, she espied the pageant at the litle conduit at Cheape, and it was tolde her grace that there was placed Time. "Time," quod she, "and time hath broughte me hither." And as the whole matter was in declaring to her grace, and that she vnderstode that the Bible in Englishe should be deliuered her, she thanked the citie for that gift, and saied that she would often times reade ouer that booke, commaunding syr Iohn Parat, one of the knightes which helde vp the canapye, to go before and receyue the booke; but learning that it should be deliuered her grace downe by a sylken lace, she caused him to stay, and so passed on till she came against the aldermen in the hīgh end of Cheape. And there by appointment, the right worshipfull maister Ranulph Cholmeley, recorder of the citie, presented to the quenes maiestie a purse of crimosyn satin, richelye wroughte with golde, wherein the citie gaue vnto the queenes maiestie a thousande markes in golde, as maister recorder did declare brefely vnto the queenes maiestie, whose wordes tended to this ende; that the lorde maior, his brethren, and comminaltie of the citie, to declare their gladnes and good wil towardes the queenes maiestie, did present her grace wᵗ that golde, desiring her grace to continue their good

and

and gracious queene, and not to esteme the value of the gifte, but the minde of the geuers. The quenes maiestie w̄ bothe her handes tooke the purse, and answered to him merueylous pithily; and so pithilye that the standers by, as they embraced entirely her gracious answere, so thei merueyled at the couching therof, whiche was in wordes truely reported these: "I thanke my lorde Maior, his brethren, and you all. And where as your request is that I shoulde continue your good lady & queene, be ye sure that I wil be as good vnto you as euer was queene to her people. No wyll in me can lacke, neither dooe I truste there shall lacke any power; and perswade your selues, that for the safetie and quietnes of you all, I will not spare, if nede bee, to spende my bloud." Which answere of so noble an hearted princesse, if it moued a merueylous shoute and reioysing, it is nothynge to bee feared, sence both the hartinesse therof was so wonderfull, and the wordes thereof so ioyntly knitte. When her grace had thus answered the recorder, she marched towarde the litle conduit, where she staied also to heare the child whiche stoode to interprete the pageant; whiche childe declared vnto her grace the whole meaning of the saied pageant, as in a booke, which is set forth more plainlye, dooeth appeare. When the childe had ended his speache, he reached a booke towardes ŷ quenes maiestie, whiche by syr Ihon Parat was receiued, & deliuered to the quene; but she, as soone as she had receyued the boke, kissed it, and w̄ bothe her handes helde vp the same, & so laied it vpon her brest, with great thankes to the citie therfore; and so wēt forwardes towarde Paules church yarde. And whē she came ouer against Paules schole, a childe, appointed by the scholemaister thereof, pronounced an oration and certaine verses in Latyn; vnto the whiche her grace moste attentiuely harkened. And when the childe had pronounced he did kisse the oration, whiche he had there faire written in paper, and deliuered it vnto the queenes maiestie, which most gently receyued the same.

And when her grace had herd all that was there offered to be spoken, she marched towarde Ludgate, where she was receyued with a noise of instrumentes, the forfront of the gate being finely trimmed against her maiesties comming.

From thence by the waye as she went downe toward Fletebridge, one about her grace noted that there was no coste spared. Her grace answered that she did well consider the same, and that it should be remēbred. An honorable answere worthy a noble prince; which may comforte all subiectes, consideryng that there can bee no point of gentlenes or obeidient loue shewed towarde her grace, which she dooeth not most entierly accept, and graciously waye.

In this maner, the people on either side reioysing, her grace went forward toward the condite in Fletestrete, where was ŷ fifte and last pageant. The historie was of Debora, the iudge and restorer of the house of Israell, Iud. 4. When the quenes maiestie drewe nere vnto this pageant, and perceyued as in ŷ other a child ready to speake, her grace required silence, and commaunded her chariot to be remoued nigher that she might plainly heare the child speake. When the quenes msiestie had passed this pageant she marched towarde Temple Barre; but at sainct Dunstons churche, where the children of the hospitall were appointed to stand with their gouernours, her grace perceyuinge a childe offered to make an oration vnto her, staied her chariot, & did cast vp her eyes to heauen, as who woulde say, I here see this merciful worke towarde the poore, whom I muste, in the mydest of my royaltie, needes remēbre; and so tourned her face toward the childe, whiche in Latyn pronounced an oration to this effect, that after the quenes highnes hadde passed thorough the citie, and had sene so sūptuous, riche, and notable spectacles of the citezins, whiche declared their moste heartie receiuing & ioyous welcoming of her grace into the same, this one spectacle yet rested and remained, which was the euerlastinge spectacle of mercie, vnto the pore membres of almightie God, furthered by that famous and moste noble prince kynge Henrye the. viii., her graces father, erected by the citie of London, aduaūced by the most godly, ver-

tuous, & gracious prince king Edwarde the. vi., her graces dere & louing brother, doubting nothing of the mercie of ỹ quenes most gracious clemēcie, by the which thei may not onely be releued and helped, but also staied & defended; & therefore incessauntly thei would pray & crie to God for the long life and raigne of her hyghnes, w most prosperous victorie against her enemies. The child, after he had ended his oration, kissed the paper wherin the same was written, & reached it to the queenes maiestie, whiche receyued it graciously, both with wordes and countenaūce, declaring her gracious mind toward their relief.

From thence her grace came to Temple Barre, whiche was dressed finely with the twoo images of Gogmagog the Albion, and Corius ỹ Britton, two giauntes bigge in stature, furnished accordingly, which held in their hands, euen aboue the gate, a table, wherin was written in Latyn verses, the effecte of all the pageauntes whiche the citie before had erected. On the South side was appointed by the citie a noyse of singinge children, and one childe richely attyred as a poet, which gaue the queenes maiestie her farewell, in the name of the whole citie; wherin while he repeated certaine wishes, for maintenaunce of trueth, and rootinge out of erroure, she now & than helde vp her handes to heauenwarde, and willed the people to saye, Amen.

Whē the childe had ended, she saied, "Be ye well assured I wyll stande youre good queene." At whiche saying her grace departed forthe through the Temple Bar towarde Westminster, with no lesse shouting and criyng of the people, then she entred the citie, with a noyse of ordinaūce whiche the Tower shot of at her first entraūce into Tower strete.

Thus the queenes hyghnes passed through the citie, which, without any foracin person, of itself beautified itselfe, and receyued her grace at al places, as hath beene before mencioned, with moste tender obedience & loue, due to so gracious a quene and soueraigne lady; and her grace likewise on her side, in al her graces passage, shewed herselfe generallye an image of a worthy lady and gouernour.

The next day, which was the. xv. day of Ianuary, her grace was moste honorably crowned at Westminster, where ỹ seruice was in such sort celebrated as was vsed in her graces chappel.

Then for a while were feates of armes practised by the nobilitie, as running at the tilte, & fightinge at barriers, wherein the duke of Norfolk was much commended.

The. xx. day of Ianuary, her highnes began a parliament, before the estates whereof, in Westminster churche, doctour Coxe, late come fro beyonde the seas, made a learned and fruitefull sermon.

In this parliament the first fruites and tenthes were restored to the crowne; and also the supremacie, which quene Mary had alienated to the pope.

At the feast of Easter was the parliament respited for a season. During which time was begon a conference at Westminster abbey, betwene the clergie, cōcernynge matters disputable; but tooke none effecte, because certaine bishoppes woulde not obey the order, which thei themselues had desired & appointed.

At the time appoynted, the parliament began againe; by the authoritie whereof, al religious houses, as of monkes, freers, and nunnes, whiche wer reedified in quene Maries time, were geuen to the quene, to be at her highnes dispositiō.

Also the. vii. day of April, during yet the parliament, was proclaimed peace betwene England, Fraunce, and Scotland, to ỹ great reioysing of the people, whiche with the late warres had been sore impouerished.

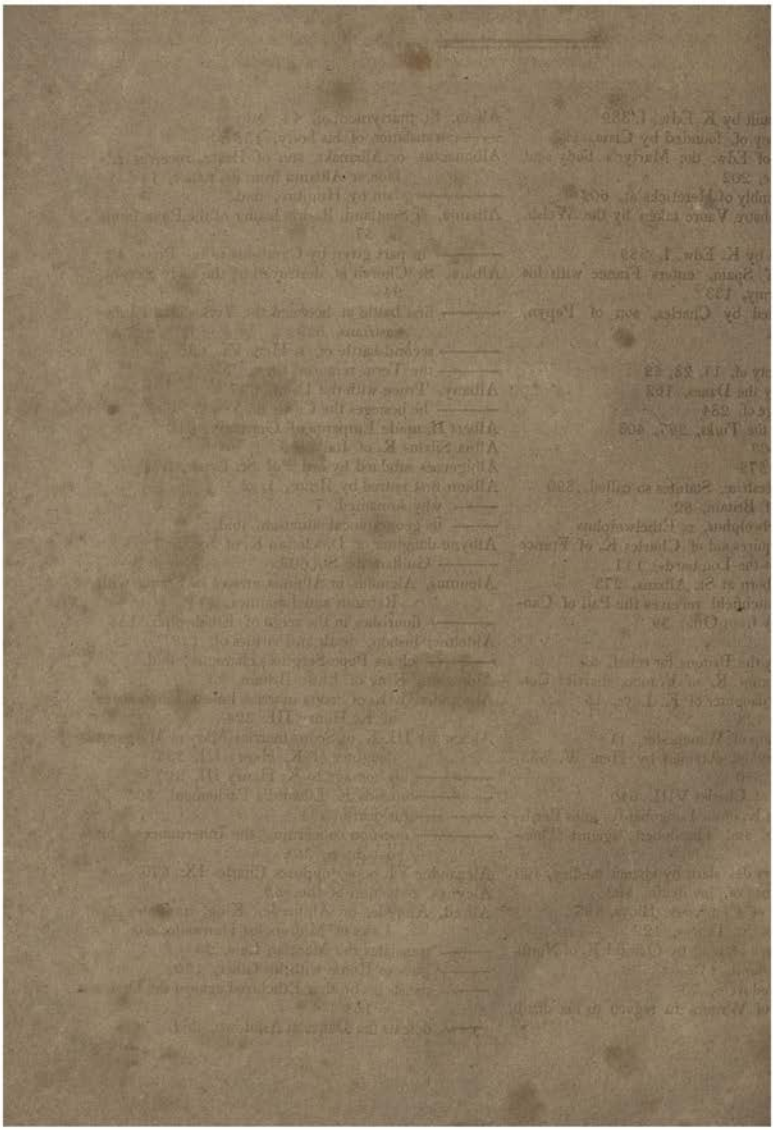
In the foresaied parliament also, was the booke of seruice & ministration of sacramentes, vsed in king Edward the sixtes time, reestablished, and al other fourmes and rites forbidden.

During this parliament, the lorde Wentworth, lord deputie of Caleys, whiche had

lien prisoner in Fraunce euer since the losse of ŷ towne, came to Westminster, and before the iudges so cleared him selfe of all suche treasons and crimes as were layed against him, that he was restored to his fame and liuing, which till that time had been kept from him.

The. viii. daye of Maye, the queenes hyghnes rode to the parliament, and gaue her roial assent to all such actes as there were made, with high thankes to al the estates, for their greate trauaile and diligence therein. Whose highnes Iesus preserue.

FINIS.



INDEX.

Aberconow Castle built by K. Edw. I. 389
Abingdon, the Abbey of, founded by Cissa, 120
——— a part of Edw. the Martyr's body sent there, 202
——— an Assembly of Hereticks at, 602
Abreswith, or Lambatre Vaure taken by the Welsh, 387
——— repaired by K. Edw. I. 389
Abyderamus, K. of Spain, enters France with his Army, 133
——— defeated by Charles, son of Pepyn, ibid.
Achilleus, 43
Acluid or Acliut, city of, 11, 28, 52
——— destroyed by the Danes, 162
Acon or Acre, siege of, 284
——— assaulted by the Turks, 367, 408
——— destroyed, 409
Acton, Sir Roger, 578
Additamenta Gloucestriæ, Statutes so called, 390
Adelbryght King of Britain, 82
Adeulphus, or Ethelwolphus, *v.* Ethelwolphus
Adrian I. pope, requires aid of Charles K. of France against the Lombards, 141
Adrian IV. pope, born at St. Albans, 273
Adulfe bishop of Litchfield receives the Pall of Canterbury from Offa, 39
Aeneas, 55
Aetius applied to by the Britons for relief, 53
Aganippus, or Agamp K. of France, marries Cordeilla daughter of K. Leyr, 15
Aganus, death of, 123
Agilbert made bishop of Winchester, 118
Agincourt, Victory of, obtained by Hen. V. 563, 579, 580
Agnes, paramour of Charles VIII. 640
Agon, or Adoaldus K. of the Longobardys joins Berthricus, Clothaire, and Theodobert, against Theodorich, 104
Agorne, Sir Robert de, slain by chance medley, 499
Agorne, Sir Thomas of, his death, 462
——— his defeat of Charles de Bloys, 497
Agulphus, abbot of St. Denys, 123
Agustald, the Church of, built by Oswald K. of Northumberland, 113
Alaric slain by Clodoveus, 73
——— difference of Writers in regard to his death, ibid.
Alban, St. martyrdom of, 44, 46
——— translation of his body, 138
Albanactus, or Albanakt, son of Brute, receives Albion or Albania from his father, 11
——— slain by Humbre, ibid.
Albania, or Scotland, Rodris leader of the Picts, lands in, 37
——— in part given by Carausius to the Picts, 42
Albans, St. Church at, destroyed by the early Saxons, 94
——— first battle at between the Yorkists and Lancastrians, 629
——— second battle of, *t.* Hen. VI. 638
——— the Term removed there, 706
Albany, Truce with the D. of, 697
——— he besieges the Castle of Warke, 698
Albert II. made Emperor of Germany, 612
Albia Silvius K. of Italy, 13
Albigenses subdued by order of St. Lewis, 371
Albion first entred by Brute, 1, 2
——— why so named, 7
——— its geographical situation, ibid.
Albyne daughter of Diocletian K. of Syria, 7
——— Guillam de St. 608
Alcuinus, Alcinnus, or Albinus, arrives in France with Rabanus and Iohannes, 144
——— flourishes in the reign of Ethelwolph, 155
Aldelme, bishop, death and virtues of, 129
——— clears Pope Sergius's character, ibid.
Aldroenus, King of Little Britain, 53
Alexander II. K. of Scotts marries Iane or Iohan sister of K. Henry III. 324
Alexander III. K. of Scotts marries Mary or Margaret daughter of K. Henry III. 337
——— his homage to K. Henry III. 397
——— attends K. Edward's Parliament, 393
——— his death, 394
——— question concerning the Inheritance of his daughters, 396
Alexander VI. pope, opposes Charles IX. 676
Aleynys, reduction of the, 55
Alfred, Alurede, or Alphrede, King, translates the Laws of Moliuncius Dunwallo, 20
——— translates the Marcian Law, 25
——— goes to Rome with his father, 155
——— assists his brother Etheldred against the Danes, 164
——— defeats the Danes at Ashdown, ibid.

Alfred

Alfred succeeds Etheldred as King, 165
——— ordains a Grammar School at Oxford, ibid.
——— has the Evil called Fycus, ibid.
——— cured by St. Modwenna, 166
——— marries Ethelwyda, ibid.
——— receives pledges from the Danes of their departure, ibid.
——— seizes the Kingdom of Mercia on the death of Colwolphus, 167
——— retires to Somersetshire, ibid.
——— comforted by St. Cuthbert, ibid.
——— relieves a pilgrim who asked alms, ibid.
——— enters the Danish Camp disguised, ibid.
——— builds a Tower and calls it Ethelinge, or Ethelyngysseye, ibid.
——— grants the Danes East Anglia, ibid.
——— compels Guttrun or Gowthram the Danish prince to receive Christianity, ibid.
——— repairs Shaftsbury, &c. 168
——— assails the Danes in different directions, 169
——— his humility and patience, 170
——— his mode of dividing time, ibid.
——— his death and burial at Wylton, ibid.
Alfrida *v.* Elfrida.
Alfrida, Alfritha, or Estrylde, the second wife of Edgar, 197
Alfridus Notus, K. of Northumberland, 122
Algarus exiled by K. Edw. Confessor, 228
——— twice reconciled by Harold, ibid. 229
Algina, daughter of Edward the Elder, marries Charles the Simple, 176
——— returns to England on the murder of her Husband, 181
——— goes back to France with her son Lewis, 185
Aliens beneficed in England put out of the King's protection, 400
Allectus sent by the Senate of Rome against Carausius, 42, 43
——— called Allec in the English Chronicle, ibid.
——— his tyrannies, ibid.
——— slain by Asclepeodotus, 44
Almarcus, K. of Spain, subdued by Childebert, 76
Almaricus betrays Canterbury, 206
——— heresy of, 286
Alnwick Castle surrendered to Lord Hastings, 652
Alphegus, or Elphegus, Archbishop of Canterbury, martyred, 203, 207
——— his body translated to Canterbury, 217
Alpherus, Duke of Mercia, puts out the monks at Winchester, 201
Alphon, K. of Spain, goes on a Crusade, 269
Alphonsus K. of Naples driven from his Kingdom by Charles IX. 676
Alphredus and Edward, sons of Egelredus, visit England, 223
Alverne, the country of, lost by K. Henry II. 280
Alunda, or Almyda, daughter of Edward the Elder, marries Ottho Emperor of Germany, 176, 182, 194
Aluredus *v.* Alfred.
Alwyn bisshop of Winchester disgraced, 224
Ambry, now Salisbury, 66
Ambrysbury, abbey at, founded by Elfrida, 202
——— Nuns brought there by K. Henry II. 276
Ampton, beside Oxford, fight at, 109
Amys and Amylyon, their history, 142
Ancerre, the town of, taken by the French, 468
Andragius, or Androgeus, son of Lud, 30, 31
——— receives the City of London from Cassibelan, with the Dukedom or Earldom of Kent, 31
——— rebels against Cassibelan, 32
——— invites Cæsar to a second Expedition, ibid.
——— gives his son Scena to Cæsar as a hostage, ibid.
——— assists Cæsar in defeating Cassibelan, 33
——— goes to Rome, ibid, 34
——— why not advanced to the Crown of Britain by Cæsar, ibid.
Angel Coin so denominated by K. Edw. IV. 655
Angeon, Dutchy of, made over to the French King, 618
——— the alienation offensive to the people, 622
Angles, 60
Anglesey, cruelties exercised at in the reign of William Rufus, 251
Anglesey, or the Isle of Man, won from the Welshmen by K. Edw. I. 395
Anglia named of Anglis by Egbert, 8
Angus, John E. of, marries the daughter of Lewellyn prince of Wales, 326
Anlaff or Aulaffe sent for by the Danes of Northumberland, 190
——— converted to Christianity, 203
Anna made K. of the E. Angles, 117
——— converted to Christianity by Felix, ibid.
Anne Queen of Richard II. lands in England, 531
——— her death, 539
Anne Queen of Richard III. crowned, 670
Anselm, or Ancelyne, abp. of York, 249
——— accounts of Writers concerning him, 250
——— made Archbishop of Canterbury, ibid.
——— offends K. William Rufus, 251
——— recalled from Exile, *t.* Hen. I. 253
——— assembles a Council at London, 255
——— goes to Rome, ibid.
——— calls another Council at London, ibid.
——— professes Gyrarde abp. of York to obedience, 256
——— his death, ibid.
——— his opposition to the marriage of K. Henry I. with Matilda, 258
Ansley, Sir John, 532
Anthenorus, 55
Antioch taken by the Crusaders, 270
Apollo Delphicus, temple of, 24
Aquysgrany, the city of, rebuilt by Charles son of Pepyn, 145
Arbideramus, *v.* Abyderamus.
Archbishops, the Order of, instituted by Lucius, 38
——— their first Sees, ibid. 39
Archemall, or Archemayll, reigns in Britain, 30
Archflamynys, 38

INDEX.

Archigallo made K. of Britain, 27
——— deposed, ibid.
——— found in a Wood, by his brother, 28
——— restored to his Kingdom, ibid.
——— buried at Caerbrank or York, ibid.
Arde, ceremonies at, during the espousal of Isabel daughter of Charles VI. 539
Arden of Feversham, murder of, 711
Argosie, exhibition of an, 709
Arian Heresy springs up in Britain, 61
Aribertus, or Cherebris, has the Country about Paris, 85
——— his vices, ibid.
Arlet, mother of William the Conqueror, her dream, 220
Armager *v.* Arviragus.
Armenia, or Ermonye, the K. of, visits K. Richard II. 532
Armorica subdued by Maximius, and given to Conan Merydok, 50
Arms of France *v.* of Pharamond, 57
—— of Edward the Confessor, 224
—— of Harold II. 233
—— of France quartered by Edw. III. 449
—— The Fleurs de Lis in the French Arms explained, 370
Arnolde of Normandy beheaded at Paris, 492
Arras, disturbance at quelled, 501
Arrogonoyse, Sir Francis, takes a Town belonging to the D. of Brytayne, 620
Arthur, son of Vter Pendragon, begins his reign in Britain, 79
——— discordance of Writers concerning him, ibid.
——— fights twelve notable Battles with the Saxons, ibid.
——— slays C.xl. Saxons with his own hand, ibid.
——— names of his Shield, Sword, and Spear, ibid.
——— accounted Chief Lord of Britain, 80
——— gives Hampshire and Somersetshire to Cerdicus, ibid.
——— according to some Writers went to France, ibid.
——— suppresses the rebellion of Mordred, ibid.
——— wounded unto death, and buried in the Vale of Avalon, 81
——— fables and errors relating to him, ibid.
——— his bones found in the reign of Henry II. in the isle of Avalon, ibid. 278
Arthur Duke of Brytayne, 310
——— taken prisoner by K. Iohn, 313
Arthur, esquire, beheaded, 619
Arthur son of K. Henry VII. born, 683
——— a marriage concluded for him with Katherine of Arragon, 686
——— married, 687
——— dies at Ludlow, ibid.
Artivele, Iaques de, murdered at Gaunt in Flanders, 495, 553
Artogayll *v.* Archigallo.
Artoys, Sir Iohn of, Earl of Ewe taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Artoys, sir Rob. de, begins his Plea in Parliament against Iohanne countess of Artoys, 490
——— sentence given against him, 491
——— proclaimed an Enemy to the Crown of France, ibid.
Artyvele, Philip, made captain of the Gaunteners, 553
——— sacks Bruges, 554
——— gives a second defeat to the E. of Flanders, 555
——— writes to the K. of France, ibid.
——— killed in battle, 556
Arviragus assumes the Arms and Cognizance of Guyderius, 35
——— made K. of Britain, 36
——— in the English Book named Armager, ibid.
——— slays Hamo, ibid.
——— marries Genuissa daughter of Claudius, ibid.
——— said by the English Chronicle to haue discomfited Claudius, ibid.
——— repairs the decayed Cities and towns of his Kingdom, ibid.
——— refuses the Romans tribute, ibid.
——— agrees to pay Tribute, 37
——— buried at Caerglone, or Gloucester, ibid.
Arundell, Iohn Earl of, accompanies K. Edw. II. 429
——— put to death at Hereford, 430
Arundell, Iohn Earl of, defeats the French at Beale Mount, 602
——— his death, 608
Arundell, Richard Earl of, sent into Guyan, 533
——— seized, 542
——— executed, and buried in the Church of the Friars Augustines, 543
Arundell, Sir Richard de, 574
Arundell, Thomas de, lands with Henry IV. at Ravyns Spore, 545
——— restored to his father's lands, 567
Arundell, Thomas of, Abp. of Canterbury, K. Richard II's promise to him of resignation, 547
——— restored to his See, 567
Arundell, Sir Thomas, 711
Aryan, la Roche d', taken by the English, 456
——— held against Charles de Bloys, 457
Ascalon, the Castle of, repaired by K. Rich. I. 302
Ascanius the son of Æneas, 8
Asclavons, Sclavons, or Bulgaris, make war upon Austracy, 115
Asclepeodotus opposes Allectus, 44
——— rules in Britain, ibid.
——— slain by Coill or Coilus, ibid.
Ashbornham, Sir Bartholomew, beheaded, 426
Ashley, Iohn, executed, 683
Aske, Robert, rebellion of, 700
Athelwolde *v.* Ethelwolde.
Attila, K. of the Huns, defeated, 63
Avalon, King Arthur's body discovered in the Isle of, 81, 278
Avane, Sir Raufe, Execution of, 711
Aubevyle Castle besieged, 308

Aubry, Lord, beheaded, 652
Auctovyle, Rafe, 560
Audeley Hugh de, made Earl of Gloucester, 445
Audeley, Iames, Lord, slain at Blore Heath, 634
Audovera the second wife of Chilpericus, 85
Augustine, St. converts Ethelbert K. of Kent, 67
——— sent into Britain by St. Gregory, 94, 95
——— lands in the isle of Thanet, 95
——— meets Ethelbert, and goes in procession to Canterbury, ibid.
——— goes into France, and is made archbishop, ibid.
——— makes two Archbishops, of London, and York, 96
——— his Charge to the Bishops of Britain, ibid.
——— shews a Miracle by a blind Angle, ibid.
——— gathers a Synod, ibid.
——— his requests of the Clergy of Britain, 96
——— baptizes ten thousand Saxons in one day, ibid.
——— appoints his successor, ibid.
——— dies and is buried at Canterbury, 97
——— his Well, at Cerne in Dorsetshire, 163
Augustines, Friars, *v.* London
Avignon accursed by the pope, 369
——— the citizens of, close their gates against Lewis ix. ibid.
——— mortality at, 498
Aumarle, Edward, Duke of, his answer to sir Iohn Bagots confession, 566
——— communicates the Conspiracy he had joined to K. Henry IV. 568
——— created Duke of York, 576
——— slain at the Battle of Agincourt, 580
Aungeou, Fouques, Earl of, takes part with Henry I. against the K. of France, 258
——— goes to the Holy Land, ibid.
——— quarrels with the King about his daughter's dower, 259
Aungiens (Angiers ?) besieged, 131
Aurelius Ambrosius, son of Constantine K. of Britain, 58
——— flies to Little Britain, 59.
——— arrives with Vter Pendragon, 68.
——— made K. of the Britons, ibid.
——— takes Octa or Osca prisoner, ibid.
——— restores Christianity, 69
——— besieges the Saxons at Badon, or Badowe, ibid.
——— said by some writers to have slain Hengist, ibid.
——— sends Vter against Pascencius, 70
——— poisoned by Coppa, ibid.
Aurelius Conanus slays Constantinus, 82
——— crowned K. of Britain, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
Auriflambe kept at St. Denys, 72
——— vsed by the Kings of France, 288, 467, 555
Aurygham, Sir Thomas, 626
Austin's Oak, 96.
Austracy, boundaries of the Lordship of, 85
——— why called Lorraine, 152, 157
Avynyon (Avignon ?) won by the Goths, 134
Awatyr, Iohn, 687
Aystulphus, King of the Longobardys, defends his country against Pepyn, 139
——— his death, 140

B

Babram in Norfolk burnt, 687
Babylon, death of the Soldan of, 373
Badby, Iohn, burnt for heresy, 574
——— verses on him, ibid.
Bagley, Sir Thomas, burnt in Smithfield for Heresy, 602
Bagnall, Thomas, 685
Bagot, Sir Iohn, 545
——— taken by Henry of Lancaster at Bristol, but escapes, and flies to Ireland, 546
——— his confession concerning Richard II. 565
Bailiffs of London, *v.* London
Bakers punished by the Tumberell, 345
——— by the Pillory, 665
Bakley, in Berkshire, Sorceries of a woman at, 229
Bakwell, Sir Iohn, his death, 417
Baldewyn, Bp. of Worcester, made Abp. of Canterbury, 279
——— preaches a Crusade, ibid.
——— his Quarrel with the monks of Canterbury, 304
——— Trevisa's account of him, 305
Baldocke, Robert, Chancellor of England, accompanies K. Edward II. 429
——— dies in Newgate, 430
Baldredus the last King of Kent, 67
Balna, Iohn, 644
——— made Cardinal, 649
——— conspires against Lewis XI. ibid.
Bamborough Castle surrendered to K. Henry II. 274
——— besieged by the Scots, 653
Bame, Adam, his death, 542
Bangor, Monks of, slain by Ethelfrid, 83, 94, 97
——— the Monastery of, enriched by Oswy, 83
——— the monks of, refuse to obey St. Austin, 96
Banner, consecrated, sent by Pope Alex. II. to William duke of Normandy before his Invasion, 234
Bannockburn, battle of, 420
Barbatte, Stephen, tumults against, at Paris, 414
——— grants a subsidy to Philip IV. 416
Bardolfe, Sr. Hugh, 396
Bargamum or Bergamum, built by Brennius, 23
Barkynge, Miracle performed by our Lady Image of, 689

Barnarde endeavours to seize Italy from Lodovicus I. 149
——— beheaded at Aquysgrany, ibid.
Barnet, battle of, 661
Barons, their Letter to K. Henry III. 353, 354
——— Answers to it from the King, and Richard K. of the Romans and Prince Edward, 354
——— gain the battle of Lewes, 355
——— revolt against Edw. II. 423
Barre, the French defeated at, by the Duke of Burgoyne, 602
Barre, the duke of, wins Harflew and St. Denys, 609
Bartholomew, captain of the Basclenses, 25
Barthran, Sir Robert, 494
Barton, Andrew, 695
Baselenses exiled from Spain, 25
——— have Ireland granted to them, ibid.
Basianus the son of Severus, rules in Britain, 41
——— slays his brother Geta, 42
——— succeeds his father as emperor, ibid.
——— called, also, Antonius, Marcus Aurelius, and Caracalla, ibid.
——— slain at Edissa, ibid.
Basil, assembly of the Council of, 607
—— Synod at, 612
Basset, Sir Philip, made chief Justice by the Barons, 347
Basyle, Peter, named by some as the person who killed Richard I. 309
Basyna, the wife of Besygne, marries Childerich, 64
——— explains Childericli's vision, ibid.
Basynge werk, abbey of, founded by K. Henry II. 273
Batayll Abbey founded by the Conqueror, 247
Bath, the hot Baths at, made, 14
—— Temple of Apollo at, ibid.
Bath, Knights of the, made by Henry V. at Caen, 582
—— made by K. Edward IV. 635
Batickle, wife of Clodoveus, becomes a Nun at Corbye, 123
Bawds, punishment of, in London, 613, 663
Bawdum, Castle of, won by Lewis VI. 261
Baylet, Iohn, slain, 509
Baylly, the friend of Iack Cade, beheaded, 624
Bayloll, Edward, crowned K. of Scotland, 541
——— does homage to K. Edw. I. ibid.
Bayioll, Sir Iohn, marries the eldest daughter of Alexander K. of Scotts, 396
——— beginning of the quarrel between him and Robert le Bruce, ibid.
——— admitted as inheritor of the Crown of Scotland, 397
——— renounces his homage to K. Edward, 398
——— imprisoned in the Tower of London, 399
Bayon, or Baieux, in Normandy, won by Lotharius, 193
——— given up to the French by appointment, 627
Beauchamp, Richard, called the good Earl of Warwick, his death at Roan, 612
Beaufort, Henry, Bp. of Winchester, 533, 609
——— created Cardinal by Pope Martin V. 597
——— quarrels with Humphrey D. of Gloucester, 596
——— his Letter to Iohn D. of Bedford, ibid.
——— reconciled to Duke Humphrey, 597
——— goes toward Prague to make war on the Lollards, 599
——— crowns K. Henry VI. at Paris, 603
Beaufort, or Beawforde, Iohn, afterwards D. of Somerset, 533
Beaufort, Thomas, E. of Huntingdon, 533
Beaufort, Sir Thomas, created E. of Dorset, 576
——— made Captain of Harflew, 579
Beaulieu, or Belew, Abbey, founded by K. Iohn, 322
Beau Marche, Eustace de, besieged in Pampeluna, 379
Beau Maryse Castle built by K. Edw. I. 395
Beauvais, Sir Robert of, killed at Calais, 461
Beauvaysine, rebellion of the people of, 512
Beche, Edmund de la, taken prisoner at Walingford, 428
Becket, Thomas, made Chancellor of England, 273, 274
——— dissention begins between him and Henry II. ibid.
——— goes to Rome, ibid.
——— is reconciled to Henry by the K. of France, 275
——— accurses those who had received the goods of the Church, ibid.
——— martyred at Canterbury, ibid.
——— his grave visited by K. Henry II. 277
——— his translation, 324
Beda, or Bede, compendious account of, 132, 135
—— writes his Historia Anglicana, 135
—— buried at Gyrvy, ibid.
—— "The comynyng that he restith nowe with Saynt Cutbert," ibid.
Bedford, the Castle of, besieged by Thurston, 265
——— by Henry III. 325
Bedford, Iohn Duke of, 533, 576
——— gains a naval victory, 581
——— made Protector of England in the absence of Henry V. 582
——— declared Regent of France, ibid.
——— wins many towns from the Dauphin, 594
——— gains the battle of Vernoyll, ibid.
——— brought to England by Cardinal Beaufort, 596
——— his death, 609
——— buried at Notre Dame, ibid.
Beleamounde, Thomas, 609
Belemont, Gawyn de, the treachery of, to the K. of France discovered, 496
Belknap, Sir Robert, convicted of Treason, 534
Belton destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. 706
Belinus and Brennius reign jointly in Britain, 20

Belinus holds Loegria, Wales, and Cornwall, ibid.
——— is attacked by his brother, ibid.
——— drives Brennius to Armorica, ibid.
——— overcomes his brother at Kalater, 21
——— assembles his Lords at Caerbrank, ibid.
——— confirms the Laws of Moliuncius, ibid.
——— Belinus and Brennius reconciled by Tonwenna their mother, 23
——— they subdue part of Gallia, Italy, and Germania, ibid.
——— Belinus builds Caeruske, ibid.
——— is buried at Belynus Gate within Troynovant, 25
Bella Landa, or Beyghlande, Abbey of, 427
Benedict XII. pope, sends two Cardinals into England, 454
Benedict XIII. Pope, 539
Benefeelde, Sir Roger, 423
——— slain at the battle of Boroughbridge, 425
Benet bishop of Weremouth, his holy life and acts, 120
——— introduces the craft of glazing, ibid.
Benevolence granted to K. Edw. IV. 664
——— granted to K. Henry VII. 684
Beoruredus, K. of Mercia, slain by Offa, 138
Bergery, Iacques, 610
Berham Down, a Charter sealed there by K. Iohn, 321
Berinus converts Kyngilsus to Christianity, 80, 116
——— his body translated to Winchester, ibid.
Berkhamsted Castle held by Lewis son of the K. of France, 323
Berkeley, Thomas de, Lord Berkeley, 546, 549
Berkshire suffers from the incursions of the Danes, 206
Bermondsey Abbey founded by William the Conq. 247
Bernes, Sir Iames, execution of, 534
Bernicia, the kingdom of, founded, 82
——— boundaries of, 83
——— end of the Kingdom in the time of Edredus, 192, 771
Bernulphus K. of Mercia defeated by Egbert, 147
Bernys, Iohn, his benefaction to the city of London, 482
Berthran, Sir William, bishop of Bayon, 494
Berthrand, the leader of the Saxons, who invaded Neustria, slain, 189
Berthricus, K. of Spain, wars upon Theodorich, 104
Bertulphus, K. of Mercia, slays St. Wylston, 155
——— his death, 156
Berwick and Roxborough Castles sold by Richard I. for x. M. *li.* 299
——— the English under K. Edw. I. defeated at, 398
——— yielded to Rob. le Bruce, 421
Besonne, or Beson, made Deputy of the Empire by Charles the Bald, 159
Bestone Castle built by Ranulph Earl of Chester, 325
Bethayr, or Barthayr, chosen master of the Palace to Theodorich, 125
——— slain by Pepyn, ibid.
Beverlay *v.* Burley
Beverley land of St. Iohn of, exempted from the ravages of Will. the Conqueror, 241
Beverley, Sir Iohn, 578
Beverton destroyed *t.* Henry VIII. 706
Bezant, value of the, 374
Bible ordered to be placed in every parish church, 701
Bigot, Sir Hugh, keeps the Pleas called Itinerarii at St. Saviours Southwark, 344
Bildi destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. 706
Bishopricks, division of, in Mercia, 122
Bishops, the order of, instituted by Lucius, 38
——— subject to the See of Canterbury, 39
——— two ordained for the Province of West Saxon, 118
——— Sees of several altered in the time of K. Will. Conq. 245
Bizantium, now called "Constantyne Noble," augmented by Constantine the Great, 47
Blackbourne destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. 706
Black-Friars *v.* London
Black-Heath, a great Wrestling at, 483
——— assembly of the rebels at *t.* Ric. II. 530
——— Bill of Petitions devised at, by Iack Cade's followers, 622
Bladud made governor of Britain, 14
——— makes the hot baths at Caerbadon, ibid.
——— teaches Necromancy, ibid.
——— endeavours to fly, ibid.
Bladysmore, Sir Bartholmew, loses his Castle of Leeds in Kent, 424
——— taken prisoner at Burgh-bridge, 425
——— beheaded, 426
Blackpool, fight of, 571
Blackwelhall, 20
Blanch, wife of Iohn of Gaunt, D. of Lancaster, her death, 480
Blanch, eldest daughter of K. Henry IV. married to the Duke's son of Bavaria, 570
Bledgaret, or Blegabridus, K. of Britain, 29, 30
Bledius, Bledius, or Bladunus, K. of Britain, 30
Blegabridus *v.* Bledgaret
Blont, Sr. Thomas, executed, 568
Blood rained in Britain, 17
Blore Heath, battle of, 634
Blount, Sir Iames, 672
Blount, Peter, 516
Bloys, Charles de, lays claim to the Dutchy of Brytayne, 454, 455, 493
——— possesses the more part of Brytayne, 456, 493
——— prisoner in England, 460, 497
——— slain by Sir Iohn de Mountforte the younger, 476, 521

Bloys, his widow receives the Earldom of Penyture, and the viscounty of Lymoges, 476
——— his assault upon the Rock of Aryan, 497
Blue-beard, rebellion under a captain so called, 622
Bocier, Sir Guy de, 583
Bohun, Humphrey, Earl of Hereford, 323
——— founds the house of the Friars Augustines in London, 464
Bohun, or Bohum, William de, made Earl of Northampton, 445
Bokerell, Walter, discloses the Conspiracy of Constantine the son of Arnulph, 326
Boldy, John de, 650
Bolesyn, Robert de, rebels against K. Hen. I. 255
Boleyn, Anne, married to K. Hen. VIII. 699
——— her execution, 700
Boleyne, Reynolde earl of, made prisoner by Philip II. 288
Bolyngbrooke, Roger, 614
——— executed at Tyburn, 615
Boner, Edmund, Bp. of London, deposed, 710
——— restored by Q. Mary, 712
Boniface Abp. of Canterbury, sings mass v. Hen. II. in the Cathedral of Walys, 39
Boniface of Savoy, made Archbishop of Canterbury, 332
——— accompanies the K. to Normandy, 338
Boniface VIII. pope, his treachery, 412
——— dies in prison, 413
Boniface IX. pope, 539
Bonvyle, the Lord, beheaded, 638
Boosaprest, a French knight, 608
Boston, town of, burnt, 386
Botulphus builds an Abbey beside Lincoln, 118
Boucher, Ione, burnt in Smithfield, 710
Bowchyer, the Lord, created E. of Essex, 652
Bowe, St. Mary, v. London
Boys, Sir Henry de, killed at Calais, 461
Bradborne, Sir Henry of, executed, 426
Bradford, John, burnt, 717
Brake, Sir Nicholas, 502, 504
Brandon, Sir John, 656
Braybrooke, Roger, bishop of London, favours the city, 545
Bread made of Vetches, Peas, Beans, and Fern-roots, 612
Brekyngbury, Robert, slain at Bosworth, 673
Brembre, Nicholas, knighted by K. Rich. II. 531
——— his execution, 534
Brenne v. Brennius
Brennius and Belynus reign jointly in Britain, 20
——— Brennius holds the land beyond Humber, ibid
——— driven by his brother to Armorica, ibid.
——— marries Elsynge or Elfyng, ibid.
——— is beaten at Sea by Cutlakus K. of Denmark, 21
——— lands in Albania, ibid.
——— beaten by his brother, he flies to Gallia, ibid.
——— received by Signius duke of Allebrog, 22
——— besieges Rome, ibid.
Brennius reconciled to Belynus by Tonwenna, 23
——— joins Belynus in subduing a great part of Gallia, Italy, and Germania, ibid.
——— builds different Cities and Towns in Italy and other parts of Gallia, ibid.
——— beaten by Furius Camillus, 24
——— overcomes the Macedoynes, ibid.
——— slays himself with his own sword, ibid.
Brent, Fowkys de, sent for from Normandy by K. John, 321
——— keeps the Castle of Bedford, 325
——— exiled, ibid.
Brentford, Edmund Ironside encounters the Danes at, 214
Bresse surrendered to Philip IV. 415
Brest delivered up by K. Rich. II. to the Duke of Brytayne, 541
Bresy, Sir Piers de, 632
Bret, Sir Bernard de, sent into Flanders, 492
Brightricus marries one of the Daughters of Offa, 138
——— begins his reign over the West Saxons, 146
——— repels the Invasion of the Danes, ibid.
——— poisoned by his queen Ethelburga, ibid.
Britain, named after Brute, 8, 11
——— when first inhabited, 35
——— seven contemporary Kings of, enumerated from a Register at St. Paul's, 111
——— confusion in, after the departure of Cadwalader, 127
Britons converted to Christianity by Faganius and Dimianus, 38
——— exhorted by the Romans to withstand their enemies, 52.
——— harassed by the Picts, ibid.
——— their misery after the departure of the Romans, 53
——— their address to Aetius, ibid.
——— send an Embassy to Gwitellinus, ibid.
——— Hengist's treachery against them, 66
——— retire toward Cambria, 82
——— still hold them against the Saxons, 98
——— chuse Cadwanus for their leader, ibid.
——— defeated by Kenwalcus, 118
Brixia built by Brennius, 23
Broke, Lawrence de, 364
Brokeys, Sir Barnarde, 568
Broshe, Peter de, his treachery to the K. of France, 380
Brotherton, Thomas of, 401
Broughton burnt v. Hen. VIII. 706
Browne, Sir John, 578
Bruce, or Bruze, David, K. of Scotland, marries Jane sister of Edw. III. 439
——— flies to France, 442
——— the French king endeavours to procure his restoration, 443
——— taken prisoner at Nevill's Cross, 459
——— again taken prisoner, 465
——— delivered upon ransom, 468
Bruce, Edward le, slain in Ireland, 426

Bruce, Rob. le, marries the second daughter of the K. of Scots, 396
——— sends for a dispensation of his Oath to K. Edward, 403
——— his accession to the Throne of Scotland, ibid.
——— opposed by Sir Iohn Comyn, 404
——— crowned King at St. John's town, ibid.
——— flies to Norway, ibid.
——— returns to Scotland t. Edw. II. 419
——— again made King, 420
Bruce, or Brunze, William le, hanged, 328
Bruges, rebellion at, 435, 436
——— surrendered to Philip de Valois, 490
——— pillaged by the Gaunteners, 354
Brunechieldis, or Brunechilde, the wife of Sigebert, exiled, 88
——— marries, after her husband's death, Meroneus, ibid.
——— persecuted by Chilperich, ibid.
——— in favour with the nobles of Orleance, 99
——— the murder of intended by Fredegunda, ibid.
——— banished with her paramour Prothadyus by Theodobert, 103
——— occasions Theodorich to desert his wife, 104
——— causes the sons of Theodobert to be slain, 105
——— prevents Theodorich's marriage with the daughter of Theodobert, and procures his murder, 106
——— plots against Clothayre, ibid.
——— named also Brunehenste, 107
——— is at last put to a cruel death, ibid.
Brunulphe caused to be slain by Dagobert, 114
Brute, arrival of, 1, 2, 7, 10
——— his descent, 8
——— slays his father, ibid.
——— lands in Greece, ibid.
——— in Africa, ibid.
——— Address of, to Diana, ibid.
——— his Vision previous to his arrival in Albion, 10
——— divides his Territories among his sons, 11
——— dies and is buried at London, ibid.
——— end of his Line or Offspring, 18
Brute Greneshielde made Governor of Britain, 13
——— buried at York, ibid.
Bruys, Robert de, 495
Bruys, Sir William de, 494
Bruyz, William le, Earl of Ferrys, 323
Bruze, Guyllam de, 495
Bryce, Iohn, 654
Brydlyngton, prophecies of Robert of, 417
Brye, rebellion in the Country of, 474
Bryglynus, bishop of Winchester, succeeds Oddo in the See of Canterbury, but returns to his former diocese, 198
Bryghtwaldus restored to life, 128
Bryghtwold, bishop of Wylton, his vision, 218
Brysey, Lewis, 650
Brystan, made Bishop of Winchester, 182, 183
Brytayn, Sir Iohn de, 396
Brytayne, Agreement between K. Edw. III. and Iohn K. of France concerning the Earldom of, 472
Brytayne, Iohn I. Duke of, marries the daughter of K. Henry III. 345
Brytayne, Iohn III. Duke of, his death, 454
Brytayne, Iohn IV. Duke of, his death, 493
Brytayne, Iohn de, Earl of Richmond, taken prisoner by the Scots, 427
Bubulus, Lucius, sent, with Julius Cæsar, as Consul into Gallia, 31
Buchet, Sir Nicholas, 450
Buckingham, a second Castle built at by Edward the elder, 177
Buckingham, Edward Duke of, beheaded, 697
Buckingham, Henry Duke of, conspires against K. Rich. III. 670
——— betrayed by his servant Banaster, ibid.
——— his execution, 671
Bucy, Sir Simon de, 502, 504
Bueffe, le Captall de, taken prisoner, 483
Bueyll, Sir Lewis de, killed in a Duel, 621
Bulgaris v. Asclavons.
Bulion, Godfrey de, goes to the Holy Land, 232
——— crowned King of Ierusalem, ibid.
Bulkeley, William, executed, 685
Bulleine, Account of the Siege of, by K. Henry VIII. 706
——— a Peace concluded at, in 1549, 710
Burbage, Iohn, 546
Burbon, Charles de, Earl of Longevile, taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Burbon, the Duke of, slain at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Burbon, Sir Iacques de, Earl of Poyteau, taken prisoner, 467
Burdeaux destroyed by Abyderamus, 133
Burdredus made King of Mercia, 156
——— assists Ethelredre against the Danes, 163
——— slain by the Danes, 166
Burgeveney, Lord, committed to the Tower, t. Hen. VII. 689
Burgonyons refuse obedience to Robert King of France, 213
——— those toward Basaynes revolt from France, 221
Burgoyne, or Burgundia, 56
Burgoyne, the Bastard of, justs with Lord Scales, 655, 656
Burgoyne, Charles Duke of, succeeds his father Philip, 648
Burgoyne, Henry Duke of, dies, 213
Burgoyne, Hugh Duke of, his submission to Philip II. of France, 283
Burgoyne, Iohn Duke of, his variance with the Dukes of Orleans and Berry about the regency of France, 559, 560
——— suspected of the murder of the Duke of Orleans, 560
——— flies to Artois and Flanders, ibid. 561
——— restored to the governance of the realm of France, 561

Burgoyne, Iohn Duke of, his death, 564, 584
Burgoyne, Philip Duke of, his death, 520
Burgoyne, Philip the Good Duke of, becomes an enemy to the English, 609
——— besieges Calais, 610
——— his counsel to Lewis XI. 644
Burgth, Hubert at, defeats the French King's Navy, 324
——— imprisoned and afterwards exiled, 328
Burgth, William, 534
Burley, Sir Simon, execution of, 534
Burnell, Sir Hugh, 546
Busshey, Sir Iohn, 545, 566
——— executed at Bristol, 546
Butterden destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. 706
Byfelde, Robert, his fine, 666
Bygot, Sir Francis, his conspiracy and execution, 700
Bygot, Hugh, his declaration of Henry the first's Will, 264
Byllydon, Robert, his Charity, 663

C.

Cablat, Sir Iohn de, 494
Cabylon, Sir Iohn, 562
Cade, Jack, rebellion of, 622, 623
——— enters Southwark, 623
——— lays his Sword on London Stone, 624
——— plunders the Citizens, ibid.
——— retires from Southwark, 625
——— killed in a Garden in Sussex, ibid.
Cadwalader, Cadwaladrus, or Cedwalla rules the Britons and the West Saxons, 125
——— his descent, ibid.
——— destroys Kent, and wins the Isle of Wight, ibid.
——— makes War upon Athelwold K. of the South Saxons, ibid.
——— goes on a pilgrimage to Rome, and continues there as a Monk, 126
——— the cause of his leaving Britain, ibid.
——— Merlyn's Prophecy concerning his relics, ibid.
——— his Epitaph, ibid.
Cadwall, or Cadwalyne, the son of Cadwan born, 110
——— begins his reign in Britain, 116
——— in amity with Penda, ibid.
——— dies, 122
——— Galfryde's account of him, ibid.
Cadwan, or Cadwanus, Duke of North Wales, made King of the Britons, 109
——— stated in Polycronyca to have slain Ethelfride and Osricus, Kings of Bernicia and Deyra, ibid.
——— according to other writers makes peace with Etuelfride, ibid.
——— unites with Penda against Edwin K. of Northumberland, 112
Cadwan, slain by Oswald at Denysborne, 113
Cædmon the Saxon Poet, 121
Caen taken by K. Edw. III. 457
Caerbadon *v.* Bath.
Caerbranke, now York, built, 13, 38
Caercoll, a Castle at, built by K. William Rufus, 240
Caerglone, Caerleone, Gloucester, 37
Caerleyll, 37
Caerleyr, now Leicester, built, 14
Caer Lud, or Luddys town, 31
Caerurst, 38
Caeruske built by Belinus, 23
Cæsar, Julius, sent with Lucius Bubulus, as Consul, into Gallia, 31
——— his Enquiries concerning Britain, ibid.
——— exhorts the Britons, by writing, to give tribute to Rome, ibid.
——— prosecutes his enterprize against Britain, ibid.
——— enters on a second Enterprize, but is repulsed, 32
——— invited again by Androgius, ibid.
——— makes Britain tributary, 33, 34
Calais besieged by K. Edw. III. 459, 460, 498
——— ceremonies at, between K. Edw. III. and Iohn K. of France, 472
——— restraint of the Wools at, 607
——— besieged by the D. of Burgoyne, 610
——— great buildings at, begun by K. Hen. VIII. 701
——— taken by the French *t.* Mary, 718
Calart, Sir Piers, 518
Calbis, Wonder at the Town of, 218
Caliboure, King Arthur's Sword, 79
Calley, Guyllyam, his rebellion, 512
Cambria, boundaries of, 11
Cambrius, Cambre, or Chambre, son of Brute receives Wales of his Father, 11
Cambyses K. of Syria, his Sentence upon an unjust Judge, 200
Camyan, Sir Reynolde, taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Cane, Robert of, takes a whole Fleet of Merchants, 621
Canterbury built by Lud Rudibrass, 14
——— the Archbishoprick of London removed to, 39
——— the See removed to Litchfield by Offa, ibid.
——— restored again in the time of Kenulphus, ibid.
——— the Welsh Bishops sacred at, ibid.
——— St. Augustine takes up his residence there, 95
——— Abbey of St. Peter and St. Paul at, founded by K. Ethelbert, ibid.
——— besieged by Swanus, 206
——— cruelty of the Danes to the Monks of, ibid.
——— primacy of the Archbishops of, 243, 244, 257
——— burnt *t.* Hen. II. 274

Canterbury, Parliament held at, 402
Canute or Canutus commands the navy of Swanus, 207
——— leaves England on his father's death, 208
——— returns and enters the Country of the West Saxons, ibid.
——— defeated at Gyllyngham by Edmund Ironside, 214
——— driven to the Isle of Shepey, 215
——— fights personally with Edmund Ironside at Olney or Olnege, and makes a partition of the land, ibid.
——— begins his dominion over the whole of England, 216
——— suspicious of the English nobles, ibid.
——— sends the son of Swanus to his brother Swanus, ibid.
——— calls a Parliament at Oxford, 217
——— sails to Denmark, ibid.
——— marries Emma the wife of Egelredus, ibid.
——— overcomes Malcolyne K. of Scotland, ibid.
——— goes again to Denmark, and thence to Rome, 217
——— buys the Arm of St. Augustine at Papya, 218
——— his pride, 219
——— marries his daughter to Henry son of Conradus the Emperor, ibid.
——— endows the Monastery of St. Edmund, ibid.
——— dies at Shaftesbury, ibid.
Caours, Sir Raufe de, 462, 499
Cap of Maintenance, the third, sent to K. Hen. VII. by the Pope, 689
Capell, Sir William, imprisoned in the Tower, 690
Capet, Hugh, usurps the Crown of France, 170, 212
——— married to one of the daughters of Edward the elder, ibid.
——— why named Capet, ibid.
——— crowned at Raynys, 212
——— wars with Arnulph E. of Flanders, ibid.
——— buried at St. Denys, ibid.
Capoir K. of Britain, 30
Caracalla, v. Basianus.
Carancius, or Carausius, has the keeping of the Coasts of Britain, 42
——— slays Basianus, ibid.
——— rules in Britain, ibid.
——— gives the Picts the Southern part of Albania, ibid.
——— slain by Allectus, ibid.
——— according to more erroneous Accounts overcomes Maximian, 43
——— his general history, ibid.
Cardiff, Robert D. of Normandy detained a prisoner at, 254
Carengon, or Carengyon, Iohn, combat of, with Iacquet Gryse, 557
Careticus, or Lareticus, begins to rule in Britain, 93
——— his character, ibid.
——— besieged in Sichestre, 94
——— flies to Cambria, ibid.
Carewe, Sir Peter, 709
Carlisle, the Bishop of, Suffragan to the Primate of York, 39
——— surrendered to K. Henry II. 274
Carnarvon Castle built by K. Edw. I. 389
Carolomanus, or Charlemayne, and Charlys reign jointly over France, 141
——— Charlemayne dies, when he had reigned little over two years, ibid.
Caron, or Craon, Iohn de, abp. of Raynes, 501, 502
Carowe, Gawan, 714
Carowe, Peter, ibid.
Cassibulan, or Cassibulanus, 30
——— made Protector of Britain, 31
——— answers Cæsar's overtures to the Britons, ibid.
——— encounters the Romans at their landing, 32
——— holds a solemn feast at Caer Lud or London after his Victory obtained over the Romans, ibid.
——— attacks Cæsar and Androgius, but is defeated, ibid. 33
——— becomes tributary to the Romans, ibid. 34
——— dies, and is buried at Caerbranke or York, ibid.
Cassyle besieged by Philip II. 286
——— siege of, by Philip de Valoys, 489
Castles built by Will. Conq. 241
Catell K. of Britain, 30
Catenesey or Cathenesia, granted to the Scytis or Picts, 37
Catrignus, brother of Vortimer, slain, 65
Caundyshe, Iohn, slain at Bury, 531
Ceawlmus defeats Ethelbertus K. of Kent, 84
——— takes Bath, Gloucester, and Surcetyr (Worcester) ibid.
——— fights with the Britons at Fechanlege, ibid.
Cecilius v. Sicillius.
Cecilius, or Siluius, made ruler of Britain, 17
——— buried at Caerbadon, or Bath, ibid.
Cedda bp. of Winchester builds Lastingay abbey, 118
——— made abp. of York, 120
——— deprived by Theodorus, ibid.
——— made bp. of the West Saxons, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
Celestine V. resigns the Papacy, 412
——— his death, 413
Cena, the city of, built, 22
Cenomana, or Cenemonya, relieved by K. William Rufus, 251
——— burnt by K. Henry II. 280
Cenonenses Galli, 22
Cerdicus, with Kenricus his son, founds the Kingdom of the W. Saxons, 80
——— called Credicus and Childricus by some authors, ibid.
——— lands at Cardysshor, now Yarmouth, ibid.
——— crowned at Winchester, 81
Cerne, St. Augustine's well at, 163
——— riches of the Abbey of, 164

Chalon,

Chalon, Guyllam de, robs the Church of St. Peter Cluny, 271
Chalon, Sir Guillyam de, taken prisoner, 468
Chalon, Sir Iohn de, his variance with the Duke of Burgoyne, 491
Chalons, Rauffe, 621
Chamberlayne, Sir Robert, beheaded, 684
Chamberlayne, Sir Roger, executed, 619
Chamblye, Sir Lewis de, 512
Champayne, Eudo E. of, slain, 220
——— the E. of, receives the guiding of the Christian Host at Jerusalem, 303
Channeau, Iohn, de Chartres, 502
Charlemayne and Pepyn, sons of Carolus Martellus, 135
——— reduce Gryffon, ibid.
——— subdue Hanualde D. of Guyan, 136
——— divide Hilderic's Kingdom between them, ibid.
——— Charlemayne is shorn a Monk at Rome, ibid.
——— dies at Mount Cassyne, ibid.
Charles Martellus son of Pepyn and of Alpayde, made a prisoner at Colcyn, 131
——— endeavours to obtain his father's office, ibid.
——— defeated by Ragafrede, but is at last victor, ibid.
——— becomes Master of the Palace, 132
——— his Victories over the Swevys and Alemanys, ibid.
——— defeats Abyderamus, 133
——— obtains the name of Carolus Martellus, ibid.
——— drives out the Saracens, ibid.
——— reduces the Burgonyons, ibid.
——— levies "dymys" of spiritual people, ibid.
——— seen by Ethereus bishop of Orleans in torment, ibid.
——— defeats the Sesues (Swiss?) and Hunys, or Gothis, ibid.
——— his death, 135
Charles son of Pepyn, Charles the Great, or CHARLEMAGNE, reigns jointly over France, 141
——— succeeds to the whole realm, ibid.
——— assists Pope Adrian against Desiderius K. of the Longobardys, ibid. 142
——— Desiderius's Kingdom given to him by the Pope, ibid.
——— his great privileges, ibid.
——— wars against the Huns in Spain, ibid.
——— his xii. peers, ibid.
——— his pilgrimage to St. Denys, ibid.
——— the progress of his Conquests in Spain, ibid.
——— promotes Christianity, 143
——— builds Churches, ibid.
——— deceived by the treachery of Gauelon, 144
——— subdues other countries in his return from Spain, ibid.
——— restores Pope Leo III. who anoints him Emperor of Rome, ibid.
——— Description of his person, ibid.
——— builds the bridge of Magunce, and as many abbeys "as there ben letters in the cross rowe of the A, B, C," 144
——— rebuilds Aquisgrany, ibid.
——— his learning, 145
——— makes his testament, ibid.
——— description of iii. particular Tables in his treasury, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
——— Inscription on his tomb, ibid. 146
Charles the Bald, son of Lewis I. by his second wife, 149
——— receives Neustria, or Normandy, from his father, ibid. 152
——— has a part of Austracy toward Hungary, ibid.
——— placed under the tuition of his half-brother Lothayre, ibid.
——— according to Polycronica has Burgoyne, 153
——— begins his reign over France, 156
——— fights with Lothayre and Lewis, 157
——— enters the province of Austracy, ibid.
——— marries Rychent or Ricent, 158
——— his cruelty to his son, ibid.
——— welcomed by Pope Iohn VIII. as Augustus or Emperor, 159
——— defeated by his nephew Lewis, 160
——— poisoned by a Jew physician, ibid.
——— buried first at Vercyle and afterwards removed to St. Denys, 161
——— duration of his reign, 209
Charles son of Charles the Bald, removed by his father from the rule of Belge, 158
——— deprived of sight, ibid.
——— escapes and flies to his uncle Lewis, ibid.
Charles the Simple succeeds to the Crown of France on the death of Eudo, 175, 178
——— his territories invaded by Rollo, 179
——— murdered by Hebert E. of Vermendoys, 181
——— duration of his reign, 209
Charles, uncle to Lewis VI. delivered by the bishop of Laon to Hugh Capet, 212
Charles, brother of St. Lewis, marries the daughter of the E. of Provence, 371
——— has the Earldom of Aymon, ibid.
——— sent into Cilicia against Manfred son of Fred. II. 376
——— made K. of Cilicia, ibid.
——— endeavours to recover Sicily, 381
——— his Navy defeated, 382
——— his death, ibid.
Charles V. begins his reign in France, 434
——— divorced from his queen Blanche, 435
——— marries Mary sister to the king of Bohemia, ibid.
——— after her death marries Iane his cousin german, 436
——— dies at Boys in Vincent, 438
Charles, son of Iohn K. of France, afterwards Charles VI. made Dauphin of Vienne, 498
——— takes the rule of Normandy, 464, 500
——— reconciles the K. of Navarre, 500
——— settles the Inheritance of Brytayne, 476

Charles VI. breaks the Peace with England, 479
——— consults his Clergy on the subject of Peace, 485
——— escapes from the battle of Poytiers, 501
——— assembles the iii. Estates at Paris, ibid.
——— opposed by the Commonalty of Paris, 503
——— his Agreement with the K. of Navarre, 507, 518
——— his Address to the People of Paris, 508
——— recompenses the K. of Navarre, 510
——— his alarm in the palace of Louvre, ibid.
——— proclaimed Regent, 511
——— again assembles the Estates, ibid.
——— his Address to the Parisians, ibid.
——— begins his reign as King, 521
——— concludes another accord with the K. of Navarre, ibid.
——— enacts a Law that Kings of France may be crowned at the age of xiv. 522
——— meets the Emperor Charles IV. 523
——— his death at Playsance sur Marne, 528
Charles VII. begins his reign in France, 552
——— aids the Earl of Flanders, 555
——— defeats Philip de Artyvele, 556
——— marries Isabel daughter of the D. of Bavaria, ibid.
——— exhorted by an anker, 557
——— makes war upon the Cenomanni, ibid.
——— receives a monition, with its sequel, 558
——— Interludes and Games devised to amuse him in his sickness, ibid.
——— sends assistance to the K. of Hungary against the Turks, ibid.
——— nearly killed by the Friars who administered Medicines to him, ibid.
——— demands the return of his daughter Isabel with her dower, after the deposition of K. Rich. II. 559
——— dissentions between the Dukes of Orleans, Burgoyne, and Berry, on account of the weakness of his reign, 559, 560
——— the rule of his person obtained treacherously, 563
——— his death, 564, 589, 592
Charles VIII. birth of, 559
——— seeks aid of K. Hen. IV. against the D. of Burgoyne, 562
——— holds out against K. Henry V. 585
——— drives the English from Paris, 614
——— begins his reign in France, 640
——— accounts of different Writers concerning him, ibid.
——— his policy and prowess, 641
——— his interview with the Maid of Orleans, ibid.
——— his death, 643
Charles IX. birth of, 650
——— marries the daughter of Maximilian, 651
——— refuses Margaret, and marries Anne dutchess of Brytayne, 676
——— claims Sicily, ibid.
——— takes possession of Campania and Naples, 676
Charles IX. defeats the Venetians, ibid.
Charles K. of Navarne, or Navarre, imprisoned by Iohn K. of France, 501
——— delivered, 506
——— pardoned of all offences against the Crown of France, 507
——— leaves Paris, ibid.
——— demands the Castles of Enroux, &c. ibid.
——— enters Roan, 508
——— the iii. Estates aid his cause, 510
——— lands granted to him in recompencement of his wrongs, 511
——— his advice to the Citizens of Paris, 512
——— defeats the Party under Guylliam Calley, 513
——— goes to St. Germayne in Pree and Gonnesse, ibid.
——— returns to Paris, 513, 514
——— wars upon the Country toward Gastenoys, 517
——— his Address to the People of Pountoyse, 519
——— sworn to be faithful to K. Iohn, 520
——— perfects an Accord with Charles VI. 522
——— his treachery developed by Iacquet de Rue, 523
——— his singular death, 556
Charles IV. Emperor of Germany, goes in pilgrimage to St. Denys, 523
Charles V. elected Emperor at Franckfort, 697
——— comes to England, ibid.
——— crowned at Bononia, 699
Charlon, son of Lewis, sent by his father against Charles the Bald, 159
——— has the rule of Bayon, ibid.
——— Pope Iohn VIII. refuses to anoint him, 170
——— admitted Emperor after the death of Lewis, ibid.
——— solicited to drive the Danes out of France, 174, 175
Charney, Sir Godfrey de, wounded at Calais, 461, 498
Charteley Castle built by Ranulph E. of Chester, 525
Charter House, three Monks of the, executed, 700
Chartris, Thebaude, or Theobald, Earl of, assists Lotharius against Richard D. of Normandy, 192, 193
——— solicits aid of Henry I. 257
Chasteleyn sur Louvayn won by Sir Robert Knolles, 469
Chastelon, Castle of, won by Philip II. 283
Chausy, the Castle of, besieged by the D. of Burgoyne, 491
Chayny, Iames de, 526
Chepe, Conduit in, made, 389
——— Cross in, a Letter of K. Edw. II's queen fastened to the, 129
Chepynham occupied by the Danes, 167
Cherimus K. of Britain, 30
Chertsey Monastery founded by Erkenwald, 121
——— re-edified by Edgar, ibid.
Chester won by Egbert from the Welsh, 147

Chester taken by the Danes, 169
——— repaired by Edward the elder, 176
——— the earldom of taken by K. Henry III. into his own hands, 330
Chester, Iohn, E. of, called Iohn Scotte, 328
——— his death, 330
Chester, Ranulph, E. of, takes part with the empress Mawde, 265
——— his death, 267
Chester, Ranulph, E. of, follows K. Iohn's example in divorcing his wife, 312
——— goes to the Holy Land, 324
——— his return, 325
——— makes peace with Lewellyn prince of Wales, 326
——— his death, 328
Chesterby, or Lindsey, sir William, admonishes K. Henry II. for the reformation of his kingdom, 278
Chesterfelles burnt t. Henry VIII. 706
Cheyny, sir Iohn, 542, 543, 565, 574
Cheyny, sir William, executed, 426
Childebert, son of Clodoveus, has middle France, 75
——— subdues Almarcus king of Spain, 76
——— kills two of the children of his brother Clodomyrus, ibid.
——— obtains the lordship of Orleans, ibid.
——— quarrels with his brother Lothaire, ibid. 77
——— dies, and is interred in the monastery of St. Germain de Pree, ibid.
Childebert the son of Sygebertus, delivered from the danger of Chylperiche, 88, 99
——— rules in Austracy, 90
——— solicits Chylperiche to aid him against Gunthranus, ibid.
——— joins Gunthranus against Chylperiche, 91
——— his forces defeated by Fredegunda, 102
——— his death, ibid.
Childebert, second son of Theodorich, begins his reign in France, 130
——— his death, ibid.
Childebert, brother of Charles Martell, sent against the Gothes, 134
Childerich, or Hildericus made K. of France, 63
——— avoids his land secretly, ibid.
——— restored to his kingdom, 64
——— subdues Orleans and Angeo, ibid.
——— marries Basina, ibid.
——— his vision explained by Basina, ibid.
——— his death, 65
——— duration of his reign, 137
Childeriche, Childericus, or Hildericus, third son of Clodoveus, has the rule of Austracy, 123
——— made K. of France, 124
——— oppresses his subjects, ibid.
——— is murdered, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 137
Children, monstrous, 711
Chilperiche, or Chilpericus, reigns over Soissons, 85
Chilperiche, or Chilpericus, not content with the dominion left him by his father, ibid.
——— seizes his father's treasure, ibid.
——— driven from Paris by his brothers, ibid.
——— takes to wife Golsanda, ibid.
——— marries to his second wife Audovera, 85
——— his sons, ibid.
——— occupied in war, with his brother, against the Switzers, or men of Swevy, 86
——— divorced from Audovera, ibid.
——— makes war on his brother Sigebert, ibid.
——— spoils the country of Champeyn, 87
——— joins Sigebert in making war upon Gunthranus, ibid.
——— the people of Turon rebel against him, 88
——— repents his life but returns to his vices, 89
——— excited by Mauricius to make war upon the Longobards, but deceives him, ibid.
——— falls into the Arian heresy, 90
——— joins Childebert against Gunthranus, ibid.
——— his sorrow for the death of Theodorus, 91
——— joy of, at the birth of his son Lotharius, ibid.
——— flies from Childebert and Gunthranus, ibid.
——— murdered by the direction of Fredegunda, 92
——— his epitaph, 93
——— duration of his reign, 137
Chilperich, first named Danyell, made K. of France, 131
——— dies, and is buried at Noen, or Noyen, 132
Chorea Gigantum, Stonehenge, 75
Christ, birth of, 34, 35
Christian II. K. of Denmark comes to England, 698
Christianity received in Britain earlier than in France, 74
——— almost extinct in Britain, 94
Church, Holy, what, 278, *n.*
Chycheley, Robert, his bequests to the city, 613
Cinque Ports, barons of the, spoil the merchants, as well English as other, 358
——— pardoned, and their privileges confirmed, 361
Cistercian Order, origin of the, 252
Clare, Gilbert de, earl of Gloucester, charged by his father to maintain the Articles made at Oxford, 348
——— seals the Letter from the Barons to K. Hen. III. 353
——— renews his rebellion, 362

Clare, Gilbert de, proposal for his going as the king's Proxy to the Holy Land, 366
—— sworn by K. Hen. III. on his death bed, to keep the peace, 369
—— marries Iohane daughter of K. Hen. III. 393
—— killed at Bannockburn, 420
Clare, Richard, E. of Gloucester, his death, 348
Clarence, George duke of, created by K. Edw. IV. 640
——— his visit to Almayne, 639
——— joins the E. of Warwick, 657, 658
——— goes to France, ibid.
——— lands in England and proclaims K. Hen. VI. ibid.
——— joins K. Edw. IV. at Barnet-field, 661
——— drowned in a butt of Malmesey wine, 666
Clarence, Leonell, son of K. Edw. III. created duke of, 475
——— his reception at Paris, 478
Clarence, Thomas, son of K. Henry IV. created duke of, 576
——— sent to aid the duke of Orleans, 563, 576
——— takes three Carykes of Iean, 571
Clarynton, sir Roger, hanged at Tyburn, 569
Claudio or Clodio Crinitus made K. of France, 57
——— makes war upon the Turynges, ibid.
——— besieges Cambray and Tournay, ibid.
——— his death, 58
Claudiocestria, 35, 37, 40
Claudius Cæsar gains the tribute from the Britons, 35
——— subdues the Orchades or Orkeis, ibid.
——— sends certain legions to Ireland, 36
Clayeon, or Glaycon, sir Barthram de, taken prisoner, 477
——— defeats the English at Vas, 481
——— wins divers holds in Poytowe, 483
——— enters Brytayne, 484
——— makes war upon the K. of Navarne, 520, 521
Claydon, John, 578
Clement IV. pope, requires St. Lewis to aid the Christians in the Holy Land, 376
Clement VI. pope, takes upon him to bestow bishopricks and benefices in England, 455
——— account of him, ibid.
——— sends two Cardinals into England to establish a peace, 462
Clement VII. elected pope, 487, 525
——— interferes with the D. of Angeou for the inhabitants of Mountpyller, 527
Cleremont, sir Iames, 620
Cleremount, sir John de, killed at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Cleremount, sir Robert de, 510, 511
——— fights with Philip brother to the K. of Navarne and sir Godfrey de Harecourt, 503
Clergy, a parliament held on account of their enormities, 699
Clerke, Peter, 599
Clerks, their luxury t. K. William Rufus, 251
Clito Ethelwaldus rebels against Edward the elder, 176
—— slain in battle, ibid.
Clodoaldus, son of Clodomyrus, escapes the danger of his uncles, 76
Clodomerus, or Clodomyrus, son of Clodoveus, born, 71
——— appointed to the lordship of Orleans, 75
——— slain in battle, ibid.
Clodoveus, (Clovis) I. made king of France, 70
——— marries Clotild, or Crotild, 71
——— blames the religion of his wife, but is at last converted to Christianity, ibid.
——— baptized by Remigius, ibid.
——— adopts the Fleurs-de-Lis as the French arms, 72
——— makes Gundebalde, ibid.
——— reconciled to Alaric by Theodoricus K. of Lombardy, ibid.
——— slays Alaric with his own hand, 73
——— admitted for a consul of Rome, ibid.
——— his offering to St. Martin, ibid.
——— his death and burial at Paris, ibid.
——— his epitaph, 74
——— duration of his reign, 137
Clodoveus, son of Chilperich, makes war on Sigebert, but is defeated, 86
——— sent against the people of Turon, 89
——— defeated by Momolenus, ibid.
——— slain by order of Fredegunda, 90
Clodoveus II. Lodovicus, or Lewis, son of Dagobert, has Burgoyne and Neustria assigned to him, 115
——— begins his reign in France, 122
——— guided by Aganus, ibid.
——— loses his reason in consequence of a visit to the shrine of St. Denys, 123
——— his death, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 137
Clodoveus III. son of the second Theodoricus, begins his reign in France, 130
——— duration of his reign, 137
Clotenus K. of Cornwall, 19 n.
Clotenus, or Clotens, K. of Britain, 30
Clotharius assists Childebert in obtaining the lordship of Orleance, 76
——— duration of his reign, 137
Clotharius II. or Lotharius, son of Chilperiche and K. of France, 98
——— fights with the sons of Childebert, 102
——— divides his territory with Theodobert and Theodorich, ibid. 103
——— wars in Neustria, ibid.
——— joins Berthricus K. of Spain in warring on Theodorich, 104
——— succeeds on Theodoriclis death to the whole principate of France, 106
——— releases to the Longobardys their tribute, 107

Clotharius II. makes war upon the Gothis or Saxons, 108
——— assembles his bishops for the better ordering the Church, 109
——— interred in the abbey of St. Vincent, ibid.
Clotharius III. son of Clodoveus made K. of France, 123
Clotild exhorts her children, after Clodoveus's death, to revenge the death of her parents, 75
——— her grief for the loss of her children, 76
——— devotion of, at the shrine of St. Martin, ibid.
——— her death, 77
Cloton duke of Cornwall, 19
Clycon, sir Oliver de, 494, 529
Clyfford, John lord, slain in the battle of St. Albans, 629
Clyfford, John lord, slain at Towton, 639
Clyfford, sir Richard, 564
Clyfford, sir Robert, killed at Bannockburn, 420
Clyfforde, sir Roger, letter sent to K. Henry III. under his seal, 349
——— drowned at Snowdon, 388
Clyfforde, sir Roger, 423
——— taken prisoner at Burghbridge, 425
——— beheaded, 426
Clyfforde, sir Roger, beheaded, 671
Clyfton, sir Gervase of, 614
Clynton, William de, made E. of Huntingdon, 445
Clyntstone, 11
Clyto, or Clyton, slays Kenulphus, K. of the West Saxons, 139
——— in his turn, slain by Offricus, ibid.
Coart, John, 646
Cobham, dame Eleanor, afterwards dutchess of Gloucester, exiled, 614
Cobham, sir John, 542, 543
Cobham, lord, taken prisoner in sir Thomas Wiat's rebellion, 713
Coggeshale, the abbey of, founded by K. Stephen, 269
Coelus begins his dominion over the Britons, 44
——— his death, 45
Coill, Coyll, or Coylus, made K. of Britain, 37
——— brought up in Italy, 38
——— pays tribute to the Romans, ibid.
——— the building of Colchester ascribed to him by some writers, ibid.
——— buried at Caerbranke, or York, ibid.
Coin, reformation of, t. K. Edw. I. 386
——— new, t. K. Hen. VII. 688
——— the diminution of, t. K. Edw. VI. 711
Coke, Robert, bp of Lion, his speech before the three estates, 505
Colbronde fights with Guy of Warwick, 184
Colchester, the building of, to whom ascribed, 38
——— battle fought near, by Vortimer, 65
——— the abbot of, executed, t. K. Hen. VIII. 701
Coleyne (Cologne) submits to Theodorich, 104
Colins, Robert, 718
Colredus becomes K. of Mercia, 129
——— wars with Ine, ibid.
Colwolphus reigns in Northumberland, 132, 135
——— resigns his kingdom to Egbertus, and is shorn a monk, ibid.
Colwolphus reigns in Mercia, 147, 166
Colyngbourne, William, executed for his rhime in derision of K. Rich. III. 672
Colyns, Christopher, 663
Combrainus, earl, slain by Sigebert, 138
Combremer, foundation of the abbey of, 260
Commons, their complaints against the ministers of K. Edw. III. 486
——— complaints of, against K. Rich. II. 543
——— introduce a bill for taking temporal lands out of the hands of spiritual persons, 575
——— the bill put by, 578
Communion ordained to be received in both kinds, 710
Comum built by Brennius, 23
Comyn, sir John, his opposition to Robert le Bruze, 403, 404
——— murdered, ibid.
Conan Merydock, 49
——— receives Armorica from Maximius, 50
——— sends to Dionotus for St. Ursula, and the 11,000 virgins, 51
Conflans, sir John de, 502
Conflans, sir Nicholas de, 510
Conquet burnt by the English, 718, 719
Conradus III. emperor of Almayne, goes on a Croisade, 269
Constable, sir Robert, his rebellions, 700
Constance wife of Robert K. of France, 214
Constant, or Constantius, son of Constantine, becomes a monk, 58
——— made K. of Britain by Vortigern, ibid.
——— murdered by his guards, ibid. 59
Constantine the Great, son of Constantius, 45
——— made K. of Britain, 46
——— at first, a Pagan, ibid.
——— makes war upon Maxentius, ibid.
——— his vision, ibid.
——— puts the sign of the cross upon his banners, 47
——— defeats Maxentius's army, ibid.
——— converted to Christianity, ibid.
——— gives the Church of Rome her first possessions, ibid.
——— builds the church of Santa Sophia at Constantinople, ibid.
——— removes the imperial seat to Constantinople, 48
——— his notable acts for the weal of Christ's faith, ibid.
——— assists in laying the foundation of St. Peter's church, ibid.
——— falls into the Arian heresy, ibid.
——— forbids the children to be slain to cure his Leprosy, ibid.

Constantine sends Traherne to reduce Octavius, who had usurped the rule of Britain, 49
——— his sword given to Ethelstan by Otthe the emperor, 182
Constantine, a Roman knight, sent into Britain on the death of Gracian, 52
Constantine, brother of Aldroenus, received for king in Britain, 58
——— crowned at Caercegent, now "Cicestre," ibid.
——— slain by a Pict, ibid.
Constantine K. of Scotts, submits to Edward the elder, 182
——— breaks covenant with Ethelstan, 183
——— slain at Brymforde, ibid.
Constantine the son of Arnulph, conspiracy of in London, 326
Constantinople *v.* Byzantium
——— taken by the Turks, 628
Constantinus, the son of Cador, made K. of Britain, 81
——— slays the sons of Mordred, ibid.
——— is killed by Aurelius Conanus, ibid.
——— buried at Stonehenge, ibid.
Constantius sent by the senate into Britain, 45
——— marries Helena daughter of Coill, ibid.
——— admitted Cæsar with Galerius, ibid.
——— subdues the Almaynes, ibid.
——— made emperor, ibid. 46
——— subdues Spain and a part of Gallia, 45
Constantius, a Roman knight, sent into Britain by Honorius, 52
Consynot, Guilliam, 620
Cook, sir Thomas, 655
—— his persecution, 656
—— applies for the restoration of his property, 660
—— again persecuted by K. Edw. IV. 662
Copharius, or Groffarius, 10
Coppa, or Eopa poisons Aurelius Ambrosius, 70
Corbel, William, archbishop of Canterbury, his death, 264
Corbueyll, Eudo, earl of, imprisoned in the castle of Bawdum, 261
Corby, Rob. de, 511
Cordeilla, daughter of K. Leyre, 14
——— marries Aganippus K. of France, 15
——— made lady of Britain, 16
——— deprived of her government by her nephews, ibid.
——— slays herself in prison, ibid.
Corfe Castle, murder of K. Edw. the martyr at, 201
Corineus, or Corneus, 10
——— fights with the giant Gogmagog, ibid.
Corn, prices of, in London, 421, 612, 699
Cornewall, sir Iohn, 574
Cornhill, tower in the ward of, 400
——— the conduit in, made, 570
Cornish men discomfited at Black-Heath, 686
Cornwall given to Corneus, 11
——— insurrection in, 710
Cornwall, Edmund, earl of, his death, 402
Cornwall, Karadok, duke of, 49
Cornwall opposes the arrival of Maximus, or Maximius, 50
Cornwall, Richard earl of, sent to Guyan, 327
——— lays siege to St. Machayr and Rochell, ibid.
Corpwaldus K. of the East Angles, 70
Cortif *v.* Careticus
Cortyf mentioned as a king of Britain, 84
Corvyle, castle of, taken by the English, 614, 615
Corynbatus, or Corynbratus, 25
Cotcheforde, Guy E. of, wars upon Lewis K. of France, 233
Coventry, the church of, built by Leofricus E. of Mercia, 229
——— freedom of the town of, procured by Godiua, ibid.
——— the monks of, dismissed by the bishop of Ely, 302
Coverdale, Miles, deprived of the bishoprick of Exeter, 712
Courtnay, Master, chancellor of Oxford, 574
Courtnaye, sir Peter, 538
Courtray, the town of, injured by the French, 556
Coyl or Coyle K. of Britain, 30
Coyll or Coelus, *v.* Coill
Craftes, sir Iames, 714
Cragmiller burnt, 706
Cramyris receives the rule of Guyan, 77
——— rebels against his father, 78
——— is defeated and taken prisoner, ibid.
——— burnt by order of Lothaire, with his wife and children, ibid.
Cranmer, Thomas, abp. of Canterbury, 709
——— attainted of treason, 712
——— disputes at Oxford, 714
——— burnt, 718
Crawned burnt, *v.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Crecy, Walter de, constable of France, 488
Cremona built by Brennius, 24
——— taken by Philip IV. 415
Creoll taken from the English, 610
Cressener, William, 685
Cressy, account of the battle of, 458, 485
Cressy, Guy de, with his father Guy le Rous seizes Eudo E. of Corbueyll, 261
Cressyngham, sir Hugh, sent by K. Edw. I. against the Scotts, 399
——— slain, 400
Cretynge, sir Adam, 396
Criniti, the early kings of France so called, 57
Crism, or Oyl, at Rheims, miracle relating to the, 71
Crocardes *v.* Pollardes
Croise, sir Iohn de la, 588
Crome, Dr. his confession at Pauls Cross, 708
Cromer, William, 714
Cromwell, sir Iohn, joins K. Edw. II's queen in France, 428
Cross, Holy, found at Ierusalem by St. Helena, 47
—— a part of it ornamented and conveyed to Rome by Constantine, 48

Crotild the daughter of Cundebald marries Clodoveus I. 71
——— converts Clodoveus to Christianity, ibid.
Croughton Abbey, king Iohn embowelled at, 322
Crowched Friars come to England, 418
Crowland Abbey, why so named, 128
Crowmer, William, beheaded, 624
Culdoe, Iohn, 517
Cunedagus, nephew of Cordeilla, divides Britain with his brother Morganus, 16
——— made war upon by his brother, but overcomes him, ibid.
——— made ruler of all Britain, ibid.
Cuneuestiore, 69
Curson, sir Robert, 685
——— accursed at Paul's Cross, 688
Cusake, Charles, 502. 506, 516
——— his speech to the people of Roan, 508
Cutbertus begins his reign over the West Saxons, 134
Cutha slain by the Britons, 84
Cuthbert, St. becomes an anker in the isle of Farn, 125
——— his body translated to Durham, 204
Cutlake leads an ankers life at Crowland, 128
Cutlakus K. of Denmark makes war on Brennius, 21
——— lands in Britain, ibid.
——— agrees to pay tribute for his kingdom to Belinus, ibid.
Cutwolfus or Cutwolphus, defeats the Britons, 84
——— takes Liganbrogth, Eglesborgth, Besyngton, and Euysham, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
Cyprus, the king of, escapes from Acon, 408

D

Dabygny sur le Metre taken by the English, 469
Dacres, Lord, his execution, 702
Dacy, Reynolde, slain, 510
Dacy, Robert, 511
Dagobert I. son of Clothaire, born, 107
——— given to hunting, ibid.
——— his treatment of his tutor Sadragesyle, ibid.
——— his vision of the martyrs, Denys, Rusticus, and Eleutherius, 108
——— made ruler of the signiory of Austracy, ibid.
——— rebels against his father, ibid.
——— begins his reign over the whole monarchy of France, 113
——— the Gascoynes rebel against him, ibid.
——— translates the bodies of St. Denys, Rusticus, and Eleutherius, ibid.
——— divorced from his first wife Gertrude, 114
——— marries Ranetrude, and has a son named Sigebert, ibid.
Dagobert I. ruled by Arnulph, and Pepyn master of the palace, ibid.
——— shews favour to St. Denys, ibid.
——— robs the church of St. Hilary in Poytiers, ibid.
——— his vices, ibid. 115
——— the lordship and country of Tholouse fall to him by the death of Heybart, 115
——— reduces the Aselavons or Sclavons, ibid.
——— dedicates the monastery of St. Denys, ibid.
——— makes his testament, 116
——— dies, and is buried at St. Denys, ibid.
——— vision of a hermit concerning his soul, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 137
Dagobert II. son of Childebert, begins his reign over France, 130
——— under the rule of Plectrude the wife of Pepyn, ibid.
——— his death, 131
——— duration of his reign, 137
Dalemere, sir Piers, addresses K. Edw. III. as speaker of the house of commons, on the abuses of his government, 486
——— thrown into prison, 487
Damas taken from the Turks, 325
——— won by St. Lewis, 333
Damianus, Dimianus, or Dumianus assists in converting the Britons to Christianity, 38
Damman, Oliver, 644, 651
——— impeached of treason and executed, 673
——— verses on his birth, 674, 675
Damyens, Iohn, 517
Dandell, sir Hugh, received in favour by K. Edw. II. 426
Danegelt introduced, 204
——— levied by Hardyknute, 222
——— remitted by K. Edw. Confessor, 224
——— again remitted by K. Hen. I. 260
Danes, the tokens preceding their invasion, 146
——— their first arrival, ibid.
——— their second invasion, 147
——— join in confederacy with the West Britons, 148
——— make incursions into Lindesey and Kent, 156
——— land in Norfolk and Suffolk, 162
——— their progress in Northumberland, ibid.
——— gain great advantages of K. Etheldredus, 165
——— land again in England, 169
——— in North Wales, ibid.
——— continue their incursions, 174, 176, 202, 203, 205, 206
——— of Northumberland send for Anlaff or Aulaffe, 190
——— disturb Edred, 191
——— slain throughout England by Egelredus or Etheired, 204
——— their pride and abusion, 205

Danes, or "Normanys" invade the lands of Charles the Bald, 158, 160, 172, 179, 180
Dannoy, Philip and Walter, executed at Pontoyse, 416
Danyell, afterwards named Chilperich, made K. of France, 131
Danyell, one, impeached of treason and executed, 673
Danyell, sir Gosselyne, 423, 426
Darcye, lord, his rebellion t. K. Hen. VIII. 700
Darell, sir William, 538
Darwent, battle upon the river of, 65
David, brother of Lewelyn, has the lordship of Frodesham, 386
——— excites a war between his brother and K. Edward, 387
——— adjudged to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, 389
David I. K. of Scotts renews his incursions, 265
——— his homage to K. Stephen, 396
David II. K. of Scotts, v. Bruce
Davids St. the archbishoprick of Gloucester in the British times removed to, 39
——— bishops at, without the pall, ibid.
——— the bishops of Wales sacred of the bishops of Menenia or St. Davids, ibid.
Davius made K. of Britain, 26
——— said by one writer to be the same person with Kimarchus, ibid.
Davy, Iohn, 640
Dawbeney, William, 685
Day, George, restored to the bishoprick of Chichester, 712
Dedacus K. of Britain, 30
Dee, Rize ap, executed, 576
Degovarie, captain, execution of, 710
Delacress abbey built by Ranulph earl of Chester, 325
Delarch, Iacques, 641
Delongevyle, Arthur, 616
Dene, the lord of, controversy concerning, as a prisoner, 529
Deneball, Mons. comes to England, 708
——— received at Hampton Court, ibid.
Denham, sir Arnold de, quells the disturbances at Arras, 501
Denys, St. the occasion of finding his body with those of Rusticus and Eleutherius, 107
——— the bodies translated by Dagobert, 113, 114
——— a fair granted to the house of, 115
——— miraculous dedication of the monastery of, ibid.
——— the monastery of, in part raised by Clodoveus to relieve the necessities of the people, 122
——— Clodoveus's visit to the shrine of, 123
——— the church of endowed by Rob. K. of France, 213
——— the great crucifix at, demanded by Philip de Valois, 496
——— the town of, taken by a knight of Orleans, 608
Denys, St. relaken by the English, ibid.
Derby taken from the Danes by Elfleda, 177
Derby, Henry earl of, created Duke of Lancaster, 463
——— wages battle in the French King's Court with the Duke of Bryswyke, ibid.
——— goes to Avynyon, ibid.
——— his death, 474
Desmonde, the Earl of submits to K. Hen. VIII. 705.
Desquyer, Philip, 651
Dessesyke, Sir Guy, 526
Desyderius, King of the Longobardys, robs the Church of some of its possessions, 141
——— is defeated by Charles K. of France, 142
——— his Kingdom given to Charles by the pope, ibid.
Devonshire, insurrections in, 710, 714
Devonshire, Edward Earl of, committed to the Tower, 714
Devonshire, Thomas Earl of, taken at Towton field, 639
——— beheaded at York, ibid.
Devonshire, Sir William of, arrested for treason, 687
Devyll, Oliver, 644
Deynys, Robert, fined for marrying an Orphan without licence, 666
Deyntie, Agnes, 685
Deyra, origin of the Kingdom of, 82
——— its boundaries, 83
Dieppe besieged by the Lord Talbot, 615
Digge, Leonard, in rebellion with Sir Thomas Wyat, 713
——— condemned, 714
Diocletian and Maximian rule the Empire of Rome, 43
——— begins his Empire alone, 45
Dionotus, or Dionotus, Duke of Cornwall, 51
Dodenham, Sir Arnold, taken prisoner, 477
Domesday, a register of Records belonging to the City of London so called, 293
Domesday Survey, formation of the, 246
Domynyk, phisician to Elizabeth queen of K. Edw. IV. 656
Dorchester made a Bishops See by Berinus, 80
——— Kyngylsus K. of the W. Saxons christened there, 116
——— the See of removed to Lincoln, 117, 245
Dorciat, Sir Foukes, 520
Dorset, Edmund Earl of, created Marquis of Dorset, 617
Dorset, Thomas Marquis of, his escape, 670
Dorset, Thomas Marquis of, sent into Spain, 696
Doublet, Colinet, 501
Dover, K. Edw. the Confessors displeasure with the men of, 226
——— spoiled by the French, 395
Dowglas, Sir James, defeats K. Edw. II. 427
Downe John, duel of, with John Upton, 601
Doyacon, Iohn, 651

Doyacon bereft of his ears and banished, 675
Dress, laws concerning, 445
Drilawe burnt *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Droynon, Thomas, 616
"Drynke-hayll," 61
Dudistone burnt *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Dudley, Sir Ambrose, 712
Dudley, Sir Andrew, gains a naval victory over the Scots, 709
——— attainted of Treason, 712
Dudley, Gilforde, attainted of treason, ibid.
Dudley, Henry, attainted of treason, ibid.
Dudley, Lord Robert, condemned, ibid.
Duket, Laurence, hanged within the Church of St. Mary Bow, 389
Dunbar, victory of the English at, 398
Dunbartas bishop of Winchester dies, 169
Dundebarre burnt, 706
Dunkirk burnt by the French, 719
Dunstable, a crucifix seen in the air at, 280
——— Justs and Tournaments held at, 454
Dunstan, St. born at Glastonbury, 181
——— exiled by Edredus or Edwyn, 195
——— revelation to him concerning the soul of Edwyn, ibid.
——— recalled from exile by K. Edgar, 196
——— made bishop of Worcester, ibid.
——— made archbishop of Canterbury, 198
——— his character, ibid.
——— inflicts penance on K. Edgar, ibid. 199
——— escapes unhurt from the council at Winchester, 201
——— his prophecy to Egelredus or Etheldred, 202
——— reproves Egelredus at Rochester, 203
——— his death, ibid.
Dunwalde made K. of Scotland, 250
——— deposed, but restored again on the death of Edgar, ibid.
Dunwallo *v.* Molmucius.
Dunwolfus made bishop of Winchester, 169
Durham, the bishop of, suffragan to the Primate of York, 39
Durwarde, William, made Speaker of the House of Commons, 565
Dygon, a great gun so named, 611
Dykysmew, battle of, in Flanders, 683
Dylet, Peter, 554
Dymmok, Sir Thomas, champion at K. Hen. IV.'s coronation, 565
Dymmok, Sir Thomas, executed, 658
Dynham, John, afterwards Lord Dynham, assists the Earls of Salisbury, March, and Warwick in their escape to Guernsey, 635
——— sent to Sandwich against the King's navy by the Yorkists at Calais, ibid.
——— takes the earl Rivers and lord Scales, ibid.
——— wounded, 636

E.

Earthquakes, 531, 711
——— one felt at Shrewsbury, 256
——— at Huntington, 329
——— at Naples, 632
East Angles, Kingdom of, founded by Uffa, 70
Easter, the keeping of recommended by St. Augustine, 96
East Saxon Kingdom begins, 95, 97
——— its boundaries and duration, ibid.
——— the Kings of the, named Under-Kings, 98
Eaufricus, son of Ethelfryd, becomes King of Bernicia, 112
——— slain by Cadwan, 113
Eba, Ebbe, or Obbo, abp. of Senons or Sens, defeats the "Wandalis," 134
Eboryn made master of the palace to Clotharius, 123
——— continued in his office by Theodorich, ibid.
——— imprisons Leodegayr, ibid.
——— brings Theodorich into disgrace, ibid.
——— exiled to Luxon, 124
——— restored by Theodorich, ibid.
——— slays Lyndesile master of the palace, ibid.
——— his tyranny again withstood by the nobles of Theodorich's court, ibid.
——— is slain by Harnefredus, 125
Ebrank made ruler of Britain, 13
——— has xxx. wives, xx. sons, and xxx. daughters, ibid.
——— invades Germania, ibid.
——— builds the Castle of Maydens, ibid.
——— subdues the Gauls, ibid.
——— buried at York, ibid.
Eclipse of the Sun, 289
Edburga daughter of K. Edw. the Elder, shrined at Winchester, 176
Edfrydus, or Egfridus, succeeds to the Kingdom of Northumberland, 120
——— marries Ethelfryd, ibid.
——— claims the land of Etheldred K. of Mercia, 121
——— gains a victory over him, ibid.
——— makes war upon the Picts and Scots, 122
——— slain, ibid.
Edgar begins his reign in England, 195
——— crowned at Bath, ibid.
——— his reformation in matters of religion, 196
——— demands an annual tribute of ccc. wolves from the Welsh, ibid.
——— rebukes Kynodus the Scottish King, ibid.
——— has a regular navy, ibid.
——— enacts a law against excessive drinking, 196
——— rowed upon the river Dee by eight Kings, 197
——— deceived by Ethelwolde, 197
——— the reason why he was not crowned till he had reigned xii. years, 198
——— his licentiousness, ibid.
——— buried at Glastonbury, 199

Edgar, verses concerning him, made by Henry the Historiographer, ibid.
——— his body found whole A. D. 1052, ibid.
——— his victory over Alphanius K. of Scots, 396
Edgar Adelynge, son of Edward the Outlaw, 233
——— his cause adopted by the Londoners after the battle of Hastings, 236
——— goes with the Conqueror to Normandy, 240
——— flies to Scotland, ibid.
——— sails into Apulia, 246
Edgar, eldest son of Malcolyne, made King of Scotland, 250
——— slain, ibid.
Edgina, or Edwyna, wife of Edward the Elder, 176
Edgina, daughter of Edward the Elder, 176
Edill or Ella, K. of the South Saxons, 82
——— *v.* Ella.
Edinburgh, taken from the Scots, 398
——— destroyed *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Editha, or Edyth, St. daughter of Edgar, 197
Editha, or Goditha, daughter of Earl Goodwin, married to K. Edw. Conf. 223, 224
Edmondsbury, parliament at *t.* K. Hen. VI. 618
Edmund, St. and King, reigns over the East Angles, 161
——— defeated by the Danes, 163
——— his martyrdom, 70, 163
——— buried at Eglisdon, now St. Edmondsbury, ibid.
——— the Monastery and Shrine of reverenced by K. Canute, 207
Edmund I. begins his reign over England, 190
——— defeats the Danes, ibid.
——— gives Cumberland to Malcolyne K. of Scotland, ibid.
——— different accounts of his death, 191
Edmund, son of Edward the Elder, 176
Edmund II. surnamed Ironside, born, 203
——— begins his reign in England, 214
——— crowned at London, ibid.
——— overcomes Canute, near Gyllyngham, ibid.
——— encounters the Danes at Brentford, ibid.
——— fights in single combat with Canute, 215
——— slain by the son of Edricus, ibid.
——— descent of the children of, 216
Edmund, St. made bishop of Lyndesser, or Durham, 217
Edmund, surnamed Crowch-back, spoken of as the eldest son of Henry III. 330
——— marries the daughter of the Earl of Aumerle, 366
——— dies at Bayon (Baieux?) 399
Edmund, son of K. Edw. III. created Earl of Cambridge, 475
——— marries Isabel daughter of Peter K. of Castile, 483
Edolf, Earl of Caerlegion, escapes from the treachery of Hengist, 66
Edred, or Edredus, son of Edward the Elder, 176
——— begins his reign in England, 191
Edred anointed by Oddo archbishop of Canterbury, ibid.
——— reduces the Danes and Scotts to obedience, ibid. 396
——— buried at Winchester, 192
Edredus, or Edwyn, son of Edmund, begins his reign in England, 194
——— crowned at Kingston, ibid.
——— irregularity of his life, 195
——— his deposition and death, ibid.
Edricus, or Edric, favours the Danes, 205, 206, 208
——— created Duke of Mercia, 206
——— joins Edmund Ironside against Canute, 214
——— again returns to the Danes, ibid.
——— his son slays Edmund Ironside, 215
——— punished for his treachery, according to some writers, by Canute, 216, 217
——— according to other writers still retained in favour, 216
Edward the Elder begins his reign in England, 175
——— his numerous family, ibid.
——— makes vii. bishops in England, ibid.
——— causes his father's body to be removed to the new Abbey at Winchester, ibid
——— gives a great defeat to the Danes, 177
——— builds several Castles, 177
——— receives the submission of the Kings of Scotts and Wales, 178, 396
——— dies at Faringdon, 178
Edward the Martyr begins his reign in England, 200
——— opposed in his accession to the throne by Elfrida, ibid.
——— crowned by Dunstan at Kingston, ibid.
——— slain by the treachery of Elfrida, 201
——— buried, first at Wareham, afterwards at Shaftsbury, 202
Edward the Confessor, Bryghtwold's vision relating to him, 218
——— visits England with his brother Alfred, 223
——— sent for from Normandy after the death of Hardykynytus, 224
——— crowned at Westminster, ibid.
——— his chastity, ibid.
——— relieves the English from the payment of Danegelt, ibid.
——— his vision concerning the Danes, 225
——— gathers a navy to withstand them, ibid.
——— his speech to Earl Goodwin concerning his brother Alfred, 228
——— sends for Edward the son of Edmund Ironside, ibid.
——— his vision of the Sleepers, 231
——— his warning vision of the future state of England, ibid.
——— his death, and burial at Westminster, 232
——— translation of his body, ibid. 366
——— said by Marianus Scotus to have ordained Harold his successor, 233

Edward Conf. his relationship to K. William the Conqueror, 237
Edward, son of Edmund Ironside, sent for by K. Edward the Confessor, 228
——— dies at London, ibid.
Edward I. surnamed Longshanks, born at Westminster, 330
——— marries Eleanor of Castile, 338
——— goes against the Welsh, 339
——— his variance with Richard Earl of Gloucester, 346
——— taken prisoner by the Barons, 355
——— leaves the court, and goes to Chester, 356
——— gains the battle of Evesham, 357
——— goes to the Holy Land, 367
——— arrived at Acris, or Acon, ibid.
——— returns from the Holy Land on his father's death, 384
——— crowned at Westminster, ibid. 385
——— wars upon Lewelyn Prince of Wales, ibid. 387
——— pursues David the brother of Lewelyn, 389
——— divides Wales into shires, ibid.
——— goes to France, 391
——— makes his homage for Guyan, ibid.
——— returns to England, 392
——— subdues the rebellion of the Welsh, 395
——— asks a subsidy for the war in France, ibid.
——— claims the supremacy over Scotland, 396
——— wins Berwick, &c. 398
——— sails to Flanders, 399
——— renews the war in Scotland, 400
——— marries Margaret sister of the K. of France, 401
——— makes his third voyage into Scotland, ibid.
——— takes the Castle of Sterling, ibid.
——— defeats the Scots under Robert Bruce, 404
——— swears his lords to fidelity, 405
——— forbids the return of Piers Gaveston, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
——— verses concerning him, ibid. 406
——— his policy in saving Flanders from Philip IV. 412
Edward II. born at Carnarvon, 389, 416
——— imprisoned for his conduct with Piers Gaveston, 402
——— made Prince of Wales and Earl of Cornwall, ibid.
——— crowned at Westminster, 416
——— his character, ibid.
——— sends for Piers Gaveston, ibid.
——— marries Isabel daughter of Philip le Beawe, 417
——— the Lords in Council remonstrate with him, 418
——— defeated at Bannockburn, 420
——— continues his vicious courses, 422
——— the Barons revolt against him, 423, 425
——— purchases a curse of pope Iohn xxii. against Robert Bruce, 423
——— near being taken prisoner by the Scots, 427
Edward II. seizes the lands belonging to his queen, 428
——— taken prisoner in Wales, 430
——— conveyed to Kenilworth, ibid.
——— deposed, ibid.
——— his "Complaynt" made in time of his imprisonment, 151, 431
——— conveyed to Berkeley Castle, 438
——— put to death by means of sir Roger Mortymer, ibid. 441
Edward III. born at Windsor, 419
——— sent by his father to do homage in France, 428
——— his stay in France displeasing to his father, ibid.
——— conclusion of a marriage for him, ibid.
——— succeeds to the crown of England, 438
——— unsuccessful in his first march against the Scots, 439
——— marries Philippa daughter of the earl of Hainault, 439
——— his dishonourable peace with the Scots, ibid.
——— does homage for Guyan, 440, 490
——— fixes Edward Baliol on the throne of Scotland, 441
——— gains the victory of Halydown hill, 442
——— makes alliances in Almayne, 447
——— quarters the Arms of France, 449
——— goes to Brabant, ibid.
——— gains a naval victory at Scluse, 450, 492
——— his letter to the French King, claiming the inheritance of the crown of France, ibid. 452
——— devises the Order of the Garter, 456
——— sails again to Scluse, ibid.
——— lands at la Hougue, 457, 492, 493
——— takes Karentene, or Karenton, ibid.
——— takes the town of Caen, ibid.
——— sets fire to St. Clowe, ibid.
——— burns Poyzy, ibid.
——— enters Picardy, ibid.
——— gains the battle of Cressy, 458
——— goes secretly to Calais to resist the treachery of Sir Godfrey de Charney, 461, 498
——— defeats the Spanish Fleet on the coast of Winchelsea, 462
——— subdues the K. of Scots, 465
——— his agreement with the Burgonyons, 469
——— cessions made to him in France, 471
——— renounces his interest in the Crown of France, ibid.
——— begins the foundation of St. Stephen's Chapel, 476
——— displeased with the Clergy for their unwillingness to aid his wars, 483
——— the ransom demanded by him for the K. of France, 518
——— dies at his palace of Shene, 487
——— his epitaph at Westminster, ibid. 488
——— the nature of his claim to the Crown of France, ibid.
Edward the Black Prince, birth of, 440

Edward the Black Prince made Duke of Cornwall, 445
——— created Prince of Wales, 455
——— enters Gascoyne, 464, 501
——— enters the Province of Berry, 465
——— gains the battle of Poytiers, 466, 501
——— his entry into London, 467
——— wins the hold of Tournellys, 469
——— sworn to keep the peace with France, 472, 473
——— weds the Countess of Kent, 474
——— receives possession of Guyan, 475
——— takes the part of Peter K. of Castile, 476, 521
——— defeats Henry the usurper of the Crown of Castile, 477
——— returns to Bourdeaux, ibid.
——— appealed in the French King's Court by the Earls of Armenak, of Bret, and of Perigort, 478, 479, 521
——— his death, and burial at Canterbury, 486
Edward, first son of Edward the Black Prince, 486
Edward IV. his descent, as Earl of March, 582
——— raises forces to support his father, 627
——— gathers his force at Cotswold, 638
——— proceeds with the Earl of Warwick to London, 639
——— elected King of England, ibid.
——— his coronation, 640
——— lands at Calais, 650
——— begins his reign in England, 652
——— visits different parts of his realm, ibid.
——— has "the sykenesse of pockys," 653
——— marries the lady Elizabeth Gray, 654
——— escapes to Flanders, 658
——— proclaimed an usurper, 660
——— lands again at Ravynspore, ibid.
——— gains the battle of Barnet, 661
——— begins the second part of his reign in England, ibid.
——— orders Inquisitions to be made concerning the rebellion of the Bastard of Fauconbridge, 662
——— asks a Benevolence for his journey into France, 664
——— his interview with Lewis XI. ibid.
——— his return, 665
——— borrows money of the Londoners, 667
——— rides hunting with the citizens in Waltham Forest, ibid.
——— his liberality, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
Edward, son of Henry VI. birth of, 628
——— set apart from the succession to the throne, 637
——— struck by Edw. IV. and slain, 628, 662
Edward V. born, 659
——— begins his reign in England, 667
——— in his way to town seized by the Duke of Gloucester, 668
——— committed to the Tower, 669
——— murdered, with his brother, 670
Edward VI. birth of, 700
——— begins his reign in England, 709
——— his procession to Westminster, ibid.
——— his death, 712
Edwarde and Cristofer, two ships of K. Edw. III. taken by the French, 447
Edwoldus, brother of St. Edmund, becomes a monk at Cerne, 163
Edwy, or Edwyn, *v.* Edredus.
Edwyn, the first christian prince of Northumberland, 83
——— represented as the son of Ethelfride, 110
——— more properly the son of Elle or Ella K. of Deyra, ibid.
——— persecuted by Ethelfride, ibid.
——— flies to Redwald K. of the East Angles, ibid.
——— token given to him in a vision, ibid.
——— slays Ethelfride in battle, ibid.
——— becomes K. of Northumberland, ibid.
——— his life attempted by order of Quichellinus, 111
——— overcomes the West Saxons, ibid.
——— exhorted by pope Boniface V. to receive Christianity, 112
——— Paulinus repeats the token, ibid.
——— his good administration of Justice, 112
——— wins Eubonia, now the Isle of Man, ibid.
——— Penda and Cadwan unite against him, ibid.
——— slain at Hatfeld, ibid.
Edwyn, son of Edward the Elder, 176
Edwyn and Malcharus, or Morcar, defeat Tosti, 234
——— they submit to William the Conqueror, 236
——— the Conqueror takes them with him to Normandy, 240
——— Morcharus sails into Scotland, 240
——— they rebel against the Conqueror, 242
——— Edwin is slain, ibid.
——— Morcharus, with the Bishop of Durham, takes possession of the Isle of Ely, ibid.
——— he is kept in prison till the Conqueror's death, 247
Egbert, King of Kent, begins his reign, 119
——— made prisoner by Offa, 138
Egbert, King of Northumberland, 132, 135
——— becomes a monk, 139
Egbert, King of the West Saxons, put out of his kingdom by Brigthricus, 146
——— retires to the Court of Charlemagne, ibid.
——— returns to his Kingdom on the death of Brigthricus, 147
——— defeats Bernulph K. of Mercia, ibid.
——— makes war upon the Kentish Saxons and Northumbers, ibid.
——— wins Chester from the Welsh, ibid.
——— crowned chief Lord of England, ibid.
——— defeated by the Danes at Carrum, 148
——— his death, ibid.
Egbertus made Archbishop of York, 137
——— brings the pall which had been foregone since the time of Paulinus, 138
——— collects a library at York, ibid.

Egelfleda, the first wife of Edgar, 197
Egelredus, Etheldredus, or Eldred, (Etheldred II.) the son of Edgar, begins his reign in England, 202
——— crowned at Kingston, ibid.
——— marries Ethelgina, or Elgina, 203
——— besieges Rochester, ibid.
——— his licentiousness and vices, 204
——— marries Emma daughter of Richard duke of Normandy, 204
——— orders the Danes to be slain throughout his territories, ibid.
——— sends his wife and sons to Normandy, 207
——— flies to Normandy himself, ibid.
——— returns on the death of Swanus, ibid.
——— dies at London, 208
Egfertus succeeds Offa in the Kingdom of Mercia, 147
Eglidon, or Eglisdon, now called St. Edmondsbury, 163
Egremont, Thomas Lord, quarrel of with the sons of the E. of Salisbury, 632
——— slain at Towton, 639
Egritus receives the Kingdom of East Anglia from Sigebert, 117
Elanius, or Davius, made K. of Britain, 26
Eldad K. of Britain, 30
Eldegarde wife of Charlemagne, 145
Eldon or Eldoll K. of Britain, 30
Eleanor queen of Henry II. liberated from prison by her son Richard, 299
——— homage of, for the Country of Poytiers, 310
Eleanor of Provence, married to K. Henry III. 329
——— crowned queen at Westminster, ibid.
——— her death, 393
Eleanor of Castile, married to K. Edw. I. 338
——— received by the citizens of London, ibid.
——— her death, 393
Elfleda, or Enfleda, daughter of Oswy, becomes abbess of Streamshalte in the Vale of Whitby, 119
Elfleda, daughter of K. Alfred, receives the rule of Mercia from her husband, 166, 177
——— builds numerous towns and castles, 177
——— defeats the Welsh, ibid.
——— takes Derby from the Danes, ibid.
——— her death, ibid.
Elfricus, admiral of Ethelldred's navy, joins the Danes, 203
Elfrida daughter of K. Alfred, 166
Elfrida, Alfrida, Alfritha, or Estrylde, married to a knight of Edgar's Court named Ethelwolde, 197
——— afterwards becomes the wife of Edgar, 198
——— builds a house of nuns at Warwell, ibid. 201
——— opposes Edward the Martyr's accession to the Throne, 200
——— her repentance after Edward the Martyr's murder, 201
——— founds the Monastery of Ambrysbury, 202
Elidurus v. Heliodorus
Elidurus K. of Britain, 30
Eliud or Eldred K. of Britain, 30
Elizabeth daughter of the K. of Hungary, her fame, 327
Elizabeth queen of Edw. IV. v. Gray.
Elizabeth of York, daughter of K. Edw. IV. afterwards queen of Hen. VII. birth of, 655
——— crowned at Westminster, 683
——— her death, 688
Elizabeth, queen of England, born, 699
——— committed by her sister Mary to the Tower, 714
——— begins her reign, 719
——— her prayer on leaving the Tower, ibid.
——— procession to Westminster, ibid. 720
——— her coronation, 722
Ella arrives in Britain, 69
——— founds the Kingdom of the South Saxons, ibid.
——— reigns in Deyra, 83
——— chosen K. of the Northumbers, 162
Elman, or Thetford, the principal town of the East Angles, 70
Elmynbrydge, Sir William, 423
——— beheaded, 426
Elphegus v. Alphegus.
Elphleda v. Elfleda.
Elswyna holds the lordship of Mercia, 178
Elsynge or Elfynge, married to Brennius, 20
——— taken prisoner by the K. of Denmark, 21
Eltham, Iohn of, made Duke of Cornwall, 440
——— his death, 445
Eltutus, the bell of St. seized by K. Edgar, 199
Ely, the Isle of, seized by Morcharus and the Bishop of Durham, 242
——— taken by the adherents of the Barons, 361, 362, 365
Ely, the bishoprick of, ordained by K. Henry I. 256
Ely Palace v. London.
——— Iohn of Gaunt dies there, 544
——— the Duke of Holande lodged there, 581
Emanuel, Emperor of Constantinople, deceives the Crusaders, 270
Emerian, or Eminicianus, K. of Britain, 29, 30
Emma, mother of K. Edward the Confessor, 237
——— her penance, 224, 225
——— benefactions of, to St. Swithin's Monastery at Winchester, ibid.
——— her death, 227
Empson and Dudley beheaded, 695
Enderlaugh burnt v. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Eneas exiled from Troy, 8
——— lands in Italy, ibid.
Enfleda, daughter of Edwyn K. of Northumberland, christened by Paulinus, 111
——— becomes abbess of Streanshall in the vale of Whitby, 112
English, the, mixed with other nations, 127
——— many put to death at Paris, 515
Enguerram, the favourite of Philip IV. 414, 416
——— called to account, 432

Enguerram, death of, 433
Enguerram Lord of Concy, cruelty of, and penance, 375
Eoppa *v.* Coppa.
Epifoorde, or Aglifthorp, battle at, 65
Epidemye rages in France, 558
——— in England, 612
Eraclius *v.* Heraclius.
Ercombertus reigns in Kent, 117
——— revives Christianity, ibid.
——— marries Sexburga daughter of Anna, ibid.
——— death of, 119
Erkenwald, bishop of London, founds the Monasteries of Chertsey and Berking, 121
Ermenilda daughter of Wolpherus, ibid.
Ermyngstrete Way described, 22
Erpyngham, Sir Thomas, 549
Eryth, fishes taken at, 631
Esodir the name of Heliodorus in the English Chronicle, 27
Essars, Pepyn de, 516
Essayer, or Sayer, Peter, 561
Essex, rebellion of the Commons of, *t.* K. Hen. VI. 623
Esterlings ally themselves with K. Edw. III. 460
Esterlings, Merchants, fined, 657
——— affray upon them by the Commons of the City, 684
Estfelde, Sir William, 613
Esthandune, Castle of, besieged, 492
Estryvelyn, the Castle of, besieged by K. Edw. I. 401
Ethelardus or Etheldredus begins his reign over the West Saxons, 132
——— his death, ibid.
Ethelbalde, or Ethelwalde, reigns in Northumberland, 132
Ethelbert, the first Christian King of Kent, 67
——— edifies the Monastery of St. Peter and St. Paul at Canterbury, ibid. 95
——— founds the Archbishop's See at Canterbury, 67
——— gives battle to Ceawlmus, 84
——— enlarges his dominions, 95
——— receives St. Augustine and his company, ibid.
——— remains of his Palace, ibid. *n.*
——— his conversion, ibid.
——— gives St. Augustine a residence at Canterbury, ibid.
——— begins the foundation of St. Paul's, 97
——— founds the Church of St. Andrew at Rochester, ibid.
——— excites a dweller of London to build the Church of St. Peter Westminster, ibid.
——— slain in fight with Ethelfryde K. of Northumberland, ibid.
Ethelbertus, son of Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus, begins his reign over the West Saxons, 162
Ethelbertus, defeats the Danes, ibid.
——— buried at Sherborne, ibid.
Ethelburga, wife of Edwyn, goes into a Monastery in France, 112, 117
Ethelburga, wife of Iue, perswades her husband to resign his crown, 129, 130
——— becomes abbess of Berking, 130
Ethelburga, queen of Brigthricus, poisons her husband, 146
——— flies to France, ibid.
——— the choice offered her by Charlemagne, ibid.
Etheldreda *v.* Ethelfryd.
Etheldredus made K. of Mercia, 121
——— has three holy daughters and a son, ibid.
——— defeated by Egfryd K. of Northumberland, ibid.
——— becomes a monk at Bardney, 128
——— his death, 132
Etheldredus, or Etheldred I. begins his reign over the greater part of England, 162
——— wars with the Danes, ibid.
——— lays siege to Nottingham, 165
——— defeated by the Danes near Basingstoke, ibid.
——— founds the College of Canons at Exeter, ibid.
——— buried at Winbourne, or Woburne, ibid.
Etheldredus II. *v.* Egelredus.
Etheldredus, Duke of Mercia, builds a Monastery at Gloucester, 177
Etheleswyda wife of Edward the Elder, 176
Ethelfridus, or Elfryde, rules the North Saxons, 94
——— slays the monks of Bangor, ibid.
——— fights with the Britons at Chester, 97, 109
——— wrongly stated to have been slain by Cadwan, ibid.
——— puts from him his wife, ibid.
——— slain in battle by Edwin, 110
Ethelfryd, or Etheldreda, becomes a nun at Colud, 120
——— afterwards abbess of Ely, ibid.
——— her death, 121
Ethelgina, or Elgina, the wife of Egelredus or Etheldred, 203
Ethelgota, daughter of K. Alfred, becomes a nun, 166
Ethelstan, son of Edward the Elder, 176
——— begins his reign over England, 181
——— on the death of Sythrycus seizes Northumberland, 182
——— reduces Constantine King of Scots, ibid. 183, 396
——— receives jewels and relics from Otho the Emperor, 182
——— crowned at Kingston, ibid.
——— offers his knife at St. Iohn of Beverley, 183
——— a stone riven by him remaining in the time of K. Edward III. ibid.
——— subdues the North Britons, 183

Ethelstan, his vision, 184
——— buried at Malmesbury, 185
Ethelwaldus, or Ethelwoldus, son of Ethelwolph, begins his reign over the West Saxons, 161
——— discordances of writers concerning him, ibid.
Ethelwold, St. builds an abbey at Peterborough, 121
Ethelwold, or Athelwold, K. of the South Saxons, stated by some writers to have been slain by Cadwalader, 125
Ethelwold, Duke of Berkshire, slain by the Danes, 164
Ethelwolphus begins his reign over the West Saxons, 154
——— takes his son Aluredе or Alfred to Rome, 155
——— repairs the Saxon school which was founded there by Offa, ibid.
——— the foundation of the University of Oxford attributed to him, ibid.
——— received in France by Charles the Bald, ibid.
——— returns to England, ibid.
——— forces the Danes to take their ships, 156
——— dies, and is buried at Winchester, ibid.
Ethelwyda wife of K. Alfred, 166
Ethelyngesey, a monastery built there by K. Alfred, 168
Ethereus, bishop of Orleans, 134
Ethilwalde, bishop of Winchester, account of, 203
Eubonia, now the Isle of Man, 112
Eudo begins his reign in France, 175
—— his death, ibid.
Evelinus wrestles with Hirreglass nephew of Cassibelan, and kills him, 32
——— departs Cassibelan's Court with Androgius, ibid.
Evesham, battle of, 357
——— riot against the monks of, by the Earl of Warwick's servants, 487
Eugeberge wife of Lewis V. 189
Eugenius IV. elected pope, 607
——— his character, ibid.
——— holds a council to agree the realms of England and France, 609
——— deposed, 612
Eukengoda, daughter of Ercombertus, 117
Eustace earl of Boulogne visits Edward the Confessor, 226
Eustace, son of K. Stephen, marries Constance the daughter of Lewis VI. 265
——— makes war upon Henry duke of Normandy, 268
——— drowned, and buried at Feversham, ibid.
Eustace, or Estate, abbot of Flay, blesses a well at Wye in Kent, 312
Ew, Sir Ranf earl of, beheaded, 499
Exeter repaired by K. Ethelstan, 183
——— taken by Swanus K. of Denmark, 205
——— besieged by William the Conqueror, 240
Exeter rebels against K. Stephen, 264
Exeter, Henry duke of, suffers the earl of Warwick's fleet to escape him, 636
——— found drowned, 663
Exeter, Henry marquis of, beheaded, *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 701
Exton, sir Piers of, the murderer of Richard II. 568
Eyvyle, sir Iohn, 364

F

Faganus and Dimianus convert the Britons to Christianity, 38
Farneham *v.* Fernham
Farrar, Nicholas, bishop of St. Davids, burnt, 717
Farthings of silver coined, 387
Fauconbridge, William lord, taken prisoner, 621
——— created earl of Kent, 652
Fauconbrydge, rebellion of the bastard of, 662
——— his death, 663
Feasts, coronation, 586, 587, 599
Felix V. made pope, 612
—— resigns the papal dignity, 619
—— made legate of France, and cardinal of Savoye, 620
Felowe, Iohn, 635
Fenbyll, Genyn, 635
Ferdinandus K. of Castile, dies, 379
——— disposes of the crown of Castile contrary to the covenant of his marriage, ibid.
Fereby, sir Iohn, executed, 568
Fernham Castle taken by Lewis son of the French king, 321
Ferrers, Rafe, 529
Ferrers, Robert, earl of Derby, 353
——— fined, 362
Ferrex and Porrex made governors of Britain, 18
—— Ferrex reported by some writers to have been slain by Porrex, ibid.
Feryby, Thomas, 546
Feversham Abbey founded by K. Stephen, 269
Fiker the, destroyed *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Fire, Greek, 373
First fruits and tenths restored to the crown by queen Elizabeth, 722
Fisher, Iohn, bishop of Rochester, beheaded, 700
Fishes taken at Erith, 631
Fitz-Garet, Thomas, executed, 700
Fitz-Hugh, lord, raises forces against K. Edw. IV. 658
Fitz-Iohn, sir Iohn, 353, 364
Fitz-William, Bryan, joins sir Thomas Wyat, 713
Fitz-William, sir William, executed, 426
Fitz-William, sir William, disfranchised, 695
Fiz, Sir Edmund, beheaded, 654
Flamyns, 38

Flamyns or bishops subject to the archbishops, 39
——— Archflamyns' and Flamyns' sees endowed by Lucius, 40
Flanders, the beginning of the earldom of, 161
——— broken in upon by the sea, 255
——— intercourse of the merchants of, 368
——— invaded by Robert earl of Artoys, 399
——— the war of Philip IV. in, 410
——— a new rebellion in, 415
——— the earldom of, given to the earl of Nevers, 435
——— the towns of, loose the wool-staples, 464
Flanders, Arnold or Arnulph, earl of, slays William duke of Normandy, 187
——— refuses obedience to Hugh Capet, 212
——— is reconciled to him, ibid.
Flanders, Bawdewyne, or Baldwin, earl of, 161
Flanders, Charles earl of, his death, 263
Flanders, Guy earl of, after a long resistance drives the French from his country, 410, 411
Flanders, the earl of, escapes from the treachery of Philip de Artyvele, 554
——— defeated by Philip de Artyvele in a pitched battle, 555
Flaundres, sir Robert de, 489
Flemings settle in Wales, 255
——— defend Cassyle against Philip de Valois, 489
——— their treaty with the duke of Burgoyne, 526
——— robbed by the Kentish men, 658
Flemynge, sir William, beheaded, 426
Fleurs de Lis, why borne in the arms of France, 370
Flint Castle built by K. Edw. I. 385
Floce, or Floze, Peter, death of, 437
Floquet receives the towns of Normandy for the French king, 620, 626
Florins first coined by K. Edw. III. 455
Flory, abbey of, 179
Fogyers, the taking of the town of, 621
Folkmote held at Paul's Cross, 342
Foloaynes sends a Roman Legion against the Picts, 52
Forest, statutes of the, confirmed, 356
Forest, friar, execution of, in Smithfield, 701
Forest, Peter de la, archbishop of Roan, 502, 504
——— declares to the great council of France the imprisonment of K. Iohn, 501
Fosse-Way described, 21
Fountaynys, sir Reynold de, 514
France *v.* Gallia
——— beginning of the reign of the kings of, 54
——— the first arms of, 57
——— kings of, for a long time called Criniti, ibid.
——— the monasteries of, preferred in the Saxon times, 117
——— table of the kings of, from Meroveus to Hildericus, 137
France, table of the kings of, from Pepyn to Lewis VI. 209, 211
——— the three estates of, hold their council after the taking of K. Iohn by the English, 501
——— the demands of the three estates to the duke of Normandy, 502
——— the council dissolved, 503
——— reassembly of the estates of, 506
——— K. Henry V. admitted regent of France, 584
France, the great master of, comes to England, 698
Franci, or French, origin of the, 55, 56
Franco, or Francio, the reputed son of Hector, 55
——— lands with Turchus in Thrace, ibid.
——— removes to Pannoma, or Pannonia, ibid.
——— builds Sicambria, ibid.
——— his people named Sicambri and Franci, ibid.
Franke, value of a, 527
Fredegunda the mistress of Chilpericus, 85
——— endeavours to separate Chilperich and Audouera, ibid.
——— married to Chilperiche, 86
——— procures the murder of Sygebertus, 87
——— procures the death of Clodoveus, 90
——— revenges the death of her son Theodorus, 91
——— her adultery, ibid.
——— contrives the murder of Chilperiche, 92
——— takes refuge in a monastery at Paris, 98
——— her death demanded of Gunthramns, 99
——— sent to Neustria or Normandy, ibid.
——— intends the assassination of Brunechieldis, ibid.
——— defeats the forces of Childebert, 102
——— falls sick and dies, ibid.
Frederick II. emperor of Almayne, accursed by pope Gregory IX. 326
——— marries Isabel the sister of K. Hen. III. 329
——— his death, 335
——— epitaph for him at Ferenciola, ibid.
——— his supposed treachery toward St. Lewis, 370, 371
Frederick III. emperor of Almayne, sends to Lewis XI. 650
Fredeswyd, St. death of, 135
Free Warren granted to the citizens of London, 327
Fria, one of the Saxon deities, 60
Friars, Monks, Canons, and Nuns, leave their cloisters, 701
Friars, Grey, come to England, 259
——— compelled to take their old habit, 687
Friars-Augustines settle in Wales

Friars-Minors brought to England, 325
——— first settled at Canterbury, ibid.
Friday, origin of the name of, 60
Friquant, sir Friquet de, kept a prisoner by John K. of France, 501
Frosts, great, 573, 608, 705
Frountayne, John, 610
Frystanne, bishop of Winchester, dies, 182
Fugacius and Dimianus convert the Britons under Lucius, 38
Fulgen, or Fulgenius K. of Britain, 30
Fulgencius, or Fulgenius slays Severus, 41
Fulle, sir Silvester de la, 498
Fulthorpe, Robert, 534
Furius Camillus made dictator of Rome, 24
Furneys Abbey founded by K. Stephen, 269
Fynchanster, wonderful well at, 251

G

Galerius and Constantius admitted Cæsars, 43, 45
——— Galerius made emperor of Illyricum, ibid.
Galli, or Gauls, distinctions among the, 22
—— overcome the Romans, 24
—— tributary to Rome, 55
—— covenanted with by Valentinian for the reduction of the Aleynys, ibid.
—— driven from Sicambria, ibid.
—— defeat the army of Theodosius, 56
Galli Cenonenses, 22
Gallia, why so named, 56
——— its division, ibid.
——— provinces and lordships of, ibid. 57
Gambold, captain, slain, 710
Ganders, the feast of, instituted at Rome, 24
Gardener, Stephen, bishop of Winchester, imprisoned in the Tower, 710
——— deposed, 711
——— released by Q. Mary and restored, 712
Garnad (Grenada?) taken by the king of Spain, 684
Garnery and Albone, sent by Brunechielde against Lothaire, 106
——— betray Sigebert's army, ibid.
——— Garnery is made prefect of the palace by Lothaire, 107
Garny, friar, aids the war of Philip II. in Flanders, 287
Garolus, or Gorleis, slain by Uter Pendragon at Tyntaggel, 75
Garter, order of the, devised by K. Edw. III. 456
Garton, 532
Gascoyne, or Vasconia, 56
——— Gascoyne, Guyan, and Poytiers granted to the children of K. Edw. III. 453
——— the Gascoynys war with France, 497
Gascoyne, Endo or Guydo duke of, rebels against the K. of France, 132
Gascoyne, Endo duke of, allies him with Abyderamus K. of Spain, 133
——— is pardoned and restored to his country of Gascoyne, ibid.
——— dies, 134
Gasymerans, rebellion of, in Navarre, 379
Gate, sir Geffrey, taken prisoner at Southampton, 658
—— liberated, 659
Gates, sir John, attainted of treason, 712
Gathern, image of Daruell, burnt, 701
Gauelon deceives Charles the son of Pepyn, 143
——— put to death at Aquysgrany, 144
Gaveston, Piers, banished by K. Edw. I. 402
——— recalled by K. Edw. II. 417
——— made duke of Cornwall, ibid.
——— banished to Ireland, 418
——— recalled, ibid.
——— exiled to Flanders, 419
——— recalled by K. Edward, ibid.
——— beheaded at Gaversede near Warwick, ibid.
Gaufride, variation of, from other writers, 23
Gaunt, rebellion of the inhabitants of, 528
——— the inhabitants of, still obstinate, 556
Gaunt, John of, his birth, 450
——— created duke of Lancaster, 474
——— carries on the war in France, 480, 484, 505, 521
——— marries Constance daughter of Peter K. of Castile, 483
——— becomes regent of England, 487
——— breaks up the siege of Roan, 505
——— goes to Spain to claim certain lands in the right of Constance his wife, 535
——— makes a treaty of peace with the K. of Spain, ibid.
——— his death at the bishop of Ely's palace, 544
——— chantries and anniversary founded for him, 480, 544
Gaunt, sir Soyer of, 528
Gayton, Robert, knighted by K. Richard II. 531
Geffrey, archbishop of York, deprived by the bishop of Ely, 302
Genebaux, 55
Generon, or Gwayneren, the castle of, built by Vortiger, 65, 68
Genuissa or Gennen the daughter of Claudius marries Arviragus, 36
——— tribute to the Romans paid by Arviragus at her entreaty, 37
Germains, St. de Prée, monastery of, 77
Germanus, or St. Germayne, and Lupus arrive in Britain, 61
——— St. Germayne performs a miracle, ibid. 62
——— is said in the Legend to have deposed Vortiger, ibid.
——— performs a miracle for the Britons, 65
Germaynes, St. taken from the English, 610

Gerolde, Peter, executed, 645
Geron, or Geronde, in Arragon surrendered to the K. of France, 383
Geruntius K. of Britain, 30
Geta, son of Severus, 41
—— allowed by the Romans in Britain for their king, 42
Giants in Britain, 7
——— destroyed by Brute, 10
Giffarde, sir Iohn, beheaded, 426
Gildas translates the laws of Moliuncius Dunwallo, 20, 22
Gille, or Gillion, chosen for their governor by the Frenshmen, 63
—— advised by Guynemeus to oppress his subjects, ibid.
—— leaves his kingdom, and flies to Soissons, 64
Glaycon *v.* Claycon
Glazing, the craft of, introduced into England, 120
Glastonbury Abbey founded by Iue (Ina) king of the West Saxons, 129
———— repaired in the times of Edmond and Edgar, ibid.
———— the bones of Colfridus and the abbess Hilda brought there, 190
———— strife between the abbot Thurstan and his monks, 246
———— the abbot of, executed *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 701
Glaumorgan explained, 16
Gloucester anciently the see of an archbishop, 39
———— all Wales subject to the see of, ibid.
———— the archbishoprick removed to St. Menenia, since called St. David's, ibid.
———— an abbey built at, 122
———— monastery of St. Peter at, built by Ethelredus earl of Mercia, 177
———————— destroyed by the Danes, but renewed by Aldredus archbishop of York, 178
Gloucester, Eleanor dutchess of, exiled, 614
Gloucester, Humphrey duke of, 533, 576
———— made protector of England during the minority of K. Hen. VI. 592
———— visits Holland, 595
———— his quarrel with cardinal Beaufort, ibid.
———— the bill of complaint preferred by him in parliament, 596
———— his reconciliation with the cardinal, 597
———— relieves Calais, 610
———— follows the duke of Burgoyne into Flanders, 611
———— takes Poperynge and Bell, ibid.
———— his enemies prevail against him, 614
———— arrested by the viscount Beawmonde, 619
———— his murder, ibid.
———— character of him, ibid.
———— buried at Saint Albans, ibid.
Gloucester, Robert earl of, withdraws his allegiance from K. Stephen, 265
———— exchanged for him when prisoner, 267
Glyguell, or Glygwell, K. of Britain, 30, 31
Godarde, Iohn, 517
Godfray, a Danish chieftain, receives Fryse from the king of France, 173
Godina, wife of Leofric earl of Mercia, procures the freedom of Coventry, 229
Gogmagog, the giant, 10
Golden Fleece, order of the, instituted by the duke of Burgundy, 609
Goldsmiths and Taylors, variance between the fellowships of, 364
Goldyngton, sir Iohn, execution of, 428
Golsanda, daughter of Anahildus, marries Chilpericus, 85
Gondigisillus, 75
Gonorilla, daughter of K. Leyr, 14
Goodwin, earl, opposes the accession of Harold Harefoot to the throne, 221
———— takes the rule of the kingdom under Hardykynytus, 223
———— his children, ibid.
———— compasses the death of Alfred, brother of Edward the Confessor, ibid.
———— withdraws from Edward the Confessor's court, 226
———— sails to Flanders, ibid.
———— is outlawed, ibid.
———— his return and reconciliation, 227
———— his death, 228
Goos, Iohn, burnt as a Lollard, 663
Goran, Goddarde, 711
Gorbodiam, 17
Gorbodio made ruler of Britain, 18
———— buried at New Troy or London, ibid.
Gorbomannus, or Gorbonianus, made K. of Britain, 27, 29
———————— repairs the temples through his realm, 27
Gosseleyne intrigues against Lowys and Charles, the sons of Lewis Balbus, 172, 173
Goths, or Gothis, win Avynyon, 134
——— driven from their country, 180
Gough, Matthew, 608
———— killed in the defence of London bridge against Cade, 625
Gowthram, or Gutteron, the Danish prince, arrives, 167
———— accepts Christianity after his defeat by Alfred, 168
Graccon chosen master of the palace to Theodorich, 125
Gracian, or Gracianus, a captain of Maximius, holds the land of Britain to his behalf, 51
———— seizes the government of Britain on Maximius's death, ibid.
———— called of "Gaufride" Municeps, ibid.
———— is slain by the Britons for his tyranny, ibid.
———— the last of the Roman kings, 54
Graie, the lord Iohn, condemned for treason, 714
Graie, the lord Thomas, committed to the Tower, 714
Grame, Robert, 612

Granbodian the name of Gorbomannus in the English Chronicle, 27
Gratianus, emperor of Rome, slain by Maximius at Lyons, 50
Gravesend burnt by the Frensh, 529
Gravysende, Stephen, bishop of London, 537
——— respect shewn by the citizens of London to his memory, 538
Gray, the lady Elizabeth, secretly married to K. Edw. IV. 654
—— crowned at Westminster, 655
—— takes sanctuary, 668
Gray, lady Iane, proclaimed queen, 712
Gray, sir Ralph, 611
—— beheaded, 654
Gray, Richard, 534
Gray, sir Richard, 353, 364
Gray, sir Thomas, 549
—— beheaded, 579
Grayll, sir Iacques de la, 595
Greek Fire, 373
Green, sir Henry, 566
Gregory, St. sees the English youths at Rome, 94
——— sends St. Augustine into Britain, ibid. 95
——— made pope, ibid.
——— sends Melitus, Iustus, and Paulinus, with books and relics, to St. Augustine, 96
Gregory IV. pope, endeavours to reconcile Lewis I. with his sons, 150
Gregory X. elected pope, 378
Gregory XI. pope, endeavours to settle a peace between England and France, 482, 484, 522.
Grene, sir Henry, 545
——— executed at Bristol, 546
Grenelce'e, the rebel so named, 687
Grey, the lord Leonard, beheaded on Tower Hill, 702
Grey Friars *v.* Friars.
Griffin K. of Wales, invades the county of Hereford, 223
Groats and half-groats of a light weight coined by K. Edw. III. 461
Groats coined by K. Edw. IV. 655
Grolle or Grollo, the chieftain of the Danes, invades Normandy, 188, 189
Grosthead, Robert, bishop of Lincoln, his complaint of aliens being admitted to English benefices, 334
——— his death, 336
——— his letter to pope Innocent IV. ibid.
Gryffon son of Carolus Martellus, 135
——— makes war upon his two brethren, ibid.
——— is taken by them and imprisoned, ibid.
——— liberated, but allies himself with the Saxons, 136
——— annoys Tassylon duke of the Bavarys, ibid.
Gryffon again taken prisoner by Pepyn, ibid.
——— has xii. earldoms of France assigned to him, ibid.
——— his death, 139
Gryffyth ap Lewelyn, killed in escaping from the Tower of London, 332
Gryse, Iaquet, treachery of to Iohn Carongyon, 556
Gualo, or Swalo, sent as Legate into England, 322
——— excommunicates Lewis son of the French king, 323
Guedon, Bertrand, the person who killed Richard I. 309
Guiderius begins his reign in Britain, 35
——— denies the British tribute to the Romans, ibid.
——— slain in battle, ibid.
Guildford Castle taken by Lewis son of the French king, 321
Guildhall rebuilt *t.* K. Hen. IV. 576
Guillamour slain by Uter, 70
Guilthdak, or Guilthdakus *v.* Cutlakus
Guitelinus, or Guytellius made K. of Britain, 25
Gundebalde taken prisoner by Clodoveus, but released, 72
——— shares Burgoyne with Hilpericus, 75
——— slays Hilpericus, and exiles his children, ibid.
——— assists in delivering Childebert, Sigebert's son, 88
Gundefelf makes war on Gundebalde, 72
Gundenchus grandfather of Clotild, 75
Gundoaldus slays Theodobert son of Chilperich, 87
Gundoaldus, a young man of the name of, claims to be the son of the first Lothaire, 99
——— sends ambassadors to Gunthranus, ibid.
——— makes war upon Gunthranus, 100
——— is deceived, and killed, 101
Gunhardus (Gaufride) or Sunardus duke of Gallia, 18
Gunthranus, or Guntranus, has the province of Orleans, 85
——— his brothers Chilperich and Sigebert make war upon him, 87
——— claims certain territories about Turon, 89
——— reconciled to Childebert and Chilperiche, 90
——— Gunthranus and Childebert unite against Chilperiche, 91
——— takes upon him the protection of Clotharius, son of Chilperiche, 98
——— holds a council with Childebert, 99, 100
——— admits Childebert for his heir, ibid.
——— defeats Gundoaldus, ibid.
——— dies and is buried at Cabilon, 101
Gunylda, wife of the emperor Hen. III. accused of "spousebreach," 222

Gunylda clears herself by her champion, ibid. 223
Gurgineus or Gurginetes K. of Britain, 30
Gurgustius made ruler of Britain, 17
——— buried at York, ibid.
Gurguncius, Gurguyntus, or Gurguyt, made K. of Britain, 25
——— sails into Denmark, and wastes the country, ibid.
——— grants Ireland to the Basclenses, ibid.
——— buried at London, or at Caer Leon, ibid.
Gurmundus assists Ethelfridus in his wars upon the Britons, 94
——— is slain in France, ibid.
Gurmundus Africanus sent for from Ireland, ibid.
——— wars with Careticus in Britain, ibid.
Gurth, or Surth, gives advice to Harold, 235
Guthlac, St. *v.* Cutlake
Guy *v.* Warwick
Guyan, 10
——— war in continued, 427
——— skirmishes in, between the English and French, 432
Guyan, Charles duke of, poisoned, 650
Guyan, Gayfer, duke of, sets a tribute upon spiritual lands, 140
——— admonished by Pepyn, ibid.
——— the territories of, laid waste, ibid. 141
Guyan, Hanualde duke of, rebels against the crown of France, 136
Guyffarde, John, 517
Guyllyam, steward or constable of France, restores Lewis I. 151
Guynomadus, or Guynemeus, counsels Childerich to avoid his kingdom, 63
——— advises Gille, the successor of Childerich, to increase the burthens of his subjects, ibid.
——— assists in restoring Childerich, 64
Goynthelinus *v.* Guitelinus
Guynys surrendered to the English, 462
Gwanus and Melga defeated and chased to Ireland by Gracian, 51
——— return to Britain on Gracian's death, 52
Gwentolena, or Gwentoleyn queen of Britain, 12
Gwentolyne *v.* Guitelinus
Gwitellinus, or Gosselyne, applied to by the Britons, 53
Gyfford, sir John, 423
Gyfforde, sir Gilbert, 353
Gylbert, or Gerbres, made bishop of Orleans, 212
——— preferred to the church of Ravenne, ibid.
Gylle, Peter, 512, 516
Gyllomarus made master of the palace to Theodorich, 125
Gysors, the castle of, taken by the lords in rebellion against Lewis XI. 647
Gyuyle, sir John, 353

H

Hagustald *v.* Agustald
Hakendye, Richard, body of the wife of taken up at St. Mary Hill, 685
Halfpenny, the, coined in silver, 387
Hall, sir Robert, death of, 529
Halys, sir Robert, prior of St. John's, murdered by the rebels under Jack Straw, 530
Hame, or Hamon, slays Guyderius, 35
Hanart, John, 620
Harding, Stephen, founder of the order of Cisterian monks, 252
Hardykynytus, or Hardyknough, son of Canute, 217
——— begins his reign in England, 222
——— crowned at London, ibid.
——— orders his brother's corpse to be thrown into the Thames, ibid.
——— levies the tribute called Dane gelt, ibid.
——— betakes the rule of the land to his mother and earl Goodwin, 223
——— dies at Lambeth at a feast, ibid.
Harecourt, sir Godfrey, de, 494, 499
——— banished as a traitor, 494
——— slain, 503
Harecourt, sir Guilliam de, 501
Harecourt, sir John de, 395, 494
Harecourte, sir John earl of, beheaded, 501
——— his body delivered to his friends, 507
——— his obsequy, 508
Harecourte, sir Lewis de, 501
Harflewe won by the duke of Barre, 609
——— remains to the English after the giving up of Normaundy, 626
——— won by the French, 627
Harington, the town of, in part destroyed *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Harkeley, sir Andrew, 425
——— made earl of Carlisle, 426
——— in disgrace, 427
——— his execution, ibid.
Harmavyle, the castle of, besieged, 193
Harmefreditus slays Eboryn, 125
Harold, son of Canutus, begins his reign in England, 221
——— surnamed Harefoot, ibid.
——— banishes his stepmother Emma, 222
——— his death and burial at Westminster, ibid.
——— his body taken from Westminster and afterwards buried at St. Clements, ibid.
Harold Harfager invades England, but is defeated, 234
Harold II. son of earl Goodwin, joins his father against K. Edw. Confessor, 226
——— his earldom restored to him, 227
——— has his father's lordships, 228

Harold II. sent by Edw. Confessor against Griffin K. of Wales, ibid. 229
——— visits Normandy and is made a prisoner, 230
——— his oath to William duke of Normandy, ibid.
——— marries William's daughter, ibid.
——— sent by Edw. Confessor against the Northumbers, 231
——— begins his reign in England, 233
——— establishes good laws, ibid.
——— defeats Harold Harlager and Tosti, 234
——— loses the favour of his soldiers, ibid.
——— his answer to duke William concerning the covenant said to have been made, ibid. 236
——— his answer to the terms proposed by the duke of Normandy, ibid.
——— wounded in the eye by an arrow, and then slain, ibid.
——— different accounts of his death, ibid.
——— buried at Waltham Abbey, 237
Harold and Canutus, sons of Swanus, land in the N. of Humber, 241
Harowe, John, executed at Pountfreyt, 638
Harper, George, joins sir Thomas Wyat in rebellion, 713
——— committed to the Tower, ibid.
Harvey, sir Walter, accused of harms done to the city, 385
Hasle, Francis, 646
Hastings, battle of, 236
Hastings, one, marries the third daughter of Alexander K. of Scots, 396
Hastings, sir Henry, 353, 357
——— defends the castle of Kenilworth, 357, 360
Hastings, William lord, beheaded in the Tower, 668
——— his present, received from Lewis XI. 665
Haward, sir Edmond, slain, 696
Hawarde, lord William, joined in the defence of London against sir Thomas Wyat, 713
Hawberke, sir Nicholas, 538
Heath, Nicholas, restored to the bishoprick of Worcester, 712
Helena, the daughter of Coill, marries Constantius, 45
——— converted to Christianity by her son Constantine the Great, 47
——— goes to Ierusalem and finds the holy cross, ibid.
Helenus, 55
Heliodir s. Elidurus
Heliodorus made K. of Britain, 27
——— finds his brother Archigallo who had been deposed, 28
——— resigns his crown to him, ibid.
——— again made king upon Archigallo's death, ibid.
——— imprisoned by his younger brethren, ibid.
Heliodorus made K. of Britain the third time, 29
——— buried at Caerleyl, or Karlele, ibid.
Hely begins to rule the Israelites, 1
Hely K. of Britain, 30, 31
Henault, the seneschall of, comes to England, 573
Hengist and Horsa arrive in Britain, 60
——— they are taken into favour by Vortiger, ibid.
——— Hengist obtains a grant of as much ground as the hide of a bull will compass, ibid.
——— builds Thong Castle, ibid.
——— his treachery toward Vortiger and the Britons, 66
——— slays the British nobles at a feast, ibid.
——— receives iii. provinces of Vortiger, ibid.
——— begins his lordship over the province of Kent, 67
——— overcomes the Britons with Octa, 68
——— his death, 69
Henry I. surnamed Beauclerke, begins his reign in England, 253
——— his reformation in the state, ibid.
——— marries Mawde or Molde, daughter of Malcolyne K. of Scots, 254
——— wars with his brother Robert in Normandy, ibid.
——— subdues Robert de Bolesyn, 255
——— returns again to Normandy, ibid.
——— keeps the see of Canterbury vacant five years, 256
——— founds the abbey of Hyde, ibid.
——— renews the war with Lewis of France, 257
——— defeats him, 258
——— returns to England, ibid.
——— endeavours to entail the succession to the throne on his daughter Matilda, 259
——— his dreams and monitions, ibid. 260
——— inherits the earldom of Flanders, ibid.
——— his death, embalmment, and burial at Reading Abbey, ibid.
——— verses relating to him, ibid.
Henry II. descent of, 240, 259
——— his birth, 260
——— made duke of Angeou and Normandy, 267
——— marries Elenor daughter of the earl of Peytowe, ibid.
——— enters England, 268
——— wins the Tower of London, ibid.
——— by him the Saxon blood returned to the crown of England, 269
——— claims Peytowe, Gascoyne, and Guyan, 271
——— begins his reign in England, 272
——— description of his person, ibid. 273
——— wins Ireland, ibid. 275
——— throws down many of the castles which were built in Stephen's time, 273
——— goes into Wales, ibid.
——— invades Scotland, 274

Henry II. seizes the manors and temporal lands of Becket, ibid.
——— fall of his fortunes after Becket's murder, 275
——— a wonder shewn to him after his return from Ireland, 276
——— purchases a dispensation for a visit to the Holy Land, ibid.
——— his sons rebel against him, ibid.
——— receives a second monition, 277
——— his licentiousness, 278
——— admonished of the reformation of seven articles, ibid.
——— cause of the war between him and Philip II. K. of France, 279
——— unsuccessful in a voyage to Ireland, 280
——— defeated in Normandy by his son Richard, ibid.
——— dies at the castle of Conomeus, 281
——— his epitaph at Fount Evrard, ibid.
——— the character given of him by Girardus Cambrensis, ibid.
Henry, son of K. Henry II. marries the daughter of Lewis VIII. of France, 273
——— crowned king of England by his father at Westminster, ibid.
——— his death, 278
——— by many writers named Henry III. 396, 397
Henry III. birth of, at Winchester, 316
——— begins his reign in England, 323
——— crowned at Gloucester, ibid.
——— begins the new work of St. Peter's Westminster, 324
——— crowned a second time at Westminster, 325
——— holds a general council at Oxford, ibid.
——— ward and marriage granted to him, 326
——— has a fifteenth granted to him for the recovery of his lands in Normandy, Guyan, and Poyteau, 328
——— marries Eleanor of Provence, 329
——— a clerk of Oxford attempts to assassinate him, 330
——— his displeasure with the citizens of London, 331, 332
——— makes a progress into Wales, ibid.
——— sails into Normandy, ibid.
——— goes to Normandy with his queen and son Edward, 338
——— the barons revolt against him, 343, 344
——— asks licence of the commonalty of London to pass the sea, 345
——— received at Paris by St. Lewis, ibid.
——— renounces his claim to Normandy, Angeou, Poyteau, and Mayne, 346
——— absolved by the pope from maintaining the articles made at Oxford, 347
——— falls sick at Bourdeaux, 348
——— his rupture with the barons, 349
——— attends the French king's parliament, 351
Henry III. agrees to refer his differences with his barons to the decision of the French king, 352
——— the rupture with the barons renewed, ibid.
——— his answer to the barons, 355
——— taken prisoner at Lewes, ibid.
——— grants a pardon to the barons, knights, &c. 356
——— reconciled to the earl of Gloucester, 363
——— his death at Westminster, 369
——— verses on a tablet near his tomb, ibid.
Henry IV. created earl of Derby, 533
——— marries the daughter of the countess of Hereford, ibid.
——— made duke of Hereford, 543
——— accuses the duke of Norfolk, 544
——— sails into France, 545
——— lands at Ravynspore, ibid.
——— his interview with K. Richard II. in the Tower, 547
——— claims the crown of England in parliament, 549
——— his speech on taking possession of the throne, 551
——— marries the widow of the duke of Brytayne, 559, 570
——— his coronation, 565
——— conspiracy against him, 568
——— sends an expedition to France, 563
——— preparations for his visiting the Holy Land, 576
——— seized with sickness at St. Edward's shrine, ibid.
——— his death in the Ierusalem chamber, 563, 577
——— buried at Canterbury, ibid.
Henry V. knighted by K. Rich. II. 545
——— made prince of Wales, 565
——— begins his reign in England, 577
——— his conduct in his youth, ibid.
——— removes the corps of K. Rich. II. from Langley to Westminster, ibid.
——— his provision to make war on France, 578
——— takes Harflew, 579
——— gains the victory of Agincourt, 562, 579, 580
——— returns to England, 581
——— goes a second time to France, 582
——— wins Caen, Phaleys, Roan, and other towns of Normandy, 564, 582, 583
——— marries Catharine daughter of the K. of France, ibid.
——— goes a third time to France, 588
——— his death at Boys in Vincent, 589
——— buried at Westminster, ibid. 592
——— his character, 589
——— verses on him, 590, 591
Henry VI. born at Windsor, 588
——— begins his reign in England, 591
——— his extraordinary piety, 593
——— crowned at Westminster in his eighth year, 599

Henry VI. goes to France, 601
——— received at Paris, 602
——— crowned at Paris, 603
——— returns to England, ibid.
——— ceremonies attending his entry into London, ibid. 604, 605, 606, 607
——— supposed treason against, by the dutchess of Gloucester and others, 614
——— his marriage, 617
——— the fortune of the world falls from him, 618
——— removes with his queen to Kenilworth, 623
——— falls ill at Clarendon, 627
——— meets the duke of York and the lords of his party at London, 633
——— is deposed, 639
——— flies to Scotland, ibid.
——— defeated at Hexham, 654
——— taken prisoner by one Cantlowe, ibid.
——— proclaimed king by the duke of Clarence and others at Dartmouth, 658
——— liberated from the Tower and restored, 659
——— found forsaken of his lords, by K. Edw. IV. 661
——— conveyed a prisoner to the Tower again, ibid.
——— his death, and burial at Chertsey, 662
Henry VII. proposal to, to marry Elizabeth daughter of K. Edw. IV. 672
——— lands at Mylbourne Port, ibid.
——— his piety, ibid.
——— proclaimed king, 673
——— gains the battle of Bosworth, 672, 673
——— begins his reign in England, 681
——— marries Elizabeth of York, 683
——— assists Charles IX. of France, 676
——— prest made to him by the citizens of London, 683
——— has a benevolence from the city of London, 684
——— goes to France, ibid.
——— his return, ibid.
——— has another prest from the citizens, 686
——— his chapel at Westminster began, 611, 688
——— his death and character, 678, 690
Henry VIII. visits the city of London when duke of York, 685
——— begins his reign, 678, 691, 695
——— aids the K. of Spain against the Moors, 695
——— besieges Turwen, 696
——— meets the French king near Guisnes, 697
——— the legates sit at Black Friers on his marriage, 699
——— divorced from Q. Katherine of Arragon, ibid.
——— marries Anne Boleyn, ibid.
——— meets the French king over sea, ibid.
——— begins great buildings at Calais and Guisnes, 701
Henry VIII. his progress toward York, 702
——— sends an army against Scotland, 706
——— at the siege of Bulleine, ibid. 707
——— his death, 709
Henry, son of Henry the VIII. birth and death of, 695
Henry, son of Robert, begins his reign in France, 219
——— makes war upon Eudo earl of Champeyn and Baldwin earl of Flanders, 220
——— builds the monastery of St. Martin, called des Champs, by Paris, ibid.
——— his unkindness to Robert duke of Normandy, ibid.
——— admits his son Philip to the rule of France, 221
——— his death, ibid.
Henry IV. emperor of Almayne, imprisons pope Pascal, 255
——— resigns his dignity to Calixtus II. ibid.
——— comes to England and lives at Chester, ibid.
——— said by some writers to have died at Spyre, 256
Henry the bastard usurper of Castile, defeated by Edward the Black Prince, 477
——— takes the city of Calahore, ibid.
——— recovers Castile, ibid.
Herbarde beheaded, 619
Heraclius, patriarch of Iesusalem, comes to England, 278
——— offers the keys of the city and of our Lord's grave to Henry II. ibid.
——— his discontent with Henry II. ibid.
——— goes into France, 282
——— in returning to Ierusalem is driven into the port of Damas, ibid.
——— Hercules' pillars, 10
Hereford castle built by Edward the elder, 176
——— the minster of, burnt by Griffin king of Wales, 228
Hereford, Humphrey earl of, slain at Burghbrydge by Edw. II. 425
Hereford, Roger earl of, his conspiracy against William the Conqueror, 245
Hermyngarde, wife of Lewys I. 153
Herrings, white, price of *t.* K. Hen. VII. 685
Hertford Castle held by Lewis son of the King of France, 323
Hesbertus slays Saint Kenelm, 147
Heth, Iohn, 685
Heybert, son of Clothayre, has certain Cities assigned to him, 113
Heyron, Rickard, 652
——— his opposition to King Edw. IV. 653
——— dies in sanctuary, ibid.
Hide of land, what, 246
Higanius and Petitur, the names of Vigenius and Peridurus in the English Chronicle, 28
Highways of Britain, iiii. begun by Moliuncius Dunwallo, 20

Highways completed by Belynus, 21
Hildericus, or Childericus the second, begins his reign in France, 135
——— his kingdom seized by Charlemayne and Pepyn, 136
——— is formally deposed and becomes a monk, 137
——— with him the race of Meroneus ends, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, ibid.
Hilpericus, son of Gundenchus, 75
——— shares Burgoyne with Gundebaldus, ibid,
——— is slain with his wife, by Gundebaldus, ibid.
Hirelda *v.* Hirreglas.
Hirreglas or Hirelda nephew to Cassibelan, 32
——— slain in wrestling, ibid.
Hisider the name of Heliodorus in the English Chronicle, 27
Holand, Sir Edmund, Earl of Kent, marries the Duke of Milan's sister, 572
——— made Admiral, 573
——— killed in besieging Bryak, ibid.
Holande, Sir John, his variance with the Earl of Stafford's son, 532
——— created Earl of Huntingdon, 533
Holande, John, Duke of Exeter, his account of his interview with Richard II. at Woodstock, 566
——— beheaded, 568
Holande, Sir Othan of, 468
Holande, Rauffe, 615
Holande, Sir Robert, joins the party of K. Edw. I. 425
Holidays forbidden to be kept, 702
Holie Rood House destroyed *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 706
Holte, John, 534
Homer, the Recuyll of the siege of Troy ascribed to him, 36
Hoper, John, bishop of Worcester, deposed, 712
——— burnt, 717
Horne, Robert, 623, 624
Horologe or Clock, sent by the King of Percy to Charlemagne, 145
Horsa or Horsus, the brother of Hengist, slain, 65
Hounden, Richard, burnt on Tower Hill for heresy, 602
Howland destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. 706
Hubbard, William, 665
Hubert bishop of Salisbury, with Richard I. at Jerusalem, 303
——— sent to England by Richard on the subject of his ransom, 304
Hubert, archbishop of Canterbury, death of, 313
Hugh bishop of Lincoln dies, 311
Hugh le Graunde, earl of Parys, takes Richard duke of Normandy under his protection, 188
——— sides with the King, ibid.
Hugh, or Hue le Grande, defeats the Danes, 174
Hum, John, 614, 615
Humber or Humbre, K. of Hunys, 12
Humber, river of, 12
Hungary invaded by the Chaan of Tartary, 331
Hungary, Belas King of, marries Margaret the daughter of Henry II. 283
Hungerforde, Lord, taken prisoner at Hexham and beheaded, 654
Hunne, Richard, hanged in Lollard's Tower, 696
Huns invade France, 102
Hunt, Thomas, 654
Hunting, laws concerning, enacted by Lewis XI. 644
Huntingdon, John earl of, created Duke of Exeter, 543
Huntingdon, John earl of, *t.* K. Hen. V. taken prisoner in France, 588
Huntingdon, John earl of, sent into France, 608
Hunyldys, or Hunyldus, ruler of Guyan, rebels against Charles, 141
——— is surrendered by Lupus duke of Gascoyne, ibid.
Hurlyng time, season so called, 531
Husac, John Lord, his rebellions *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 700
Husey, Sir Thomas, beheaded, 654
Hylda or Helda, abbess of Whitby, 119, 121
Hynguoar and Hubba, said to have slain Ethelwaldus, 161
——— land in Norfolk, 163
——— they are slain at a place called Englefelde, 164
Hyrus, a French Captain, slays the Earl of Arundel, 608

I.

Iacques, or Iames, admitted K. of Aragon, 407
Iago or Lago, made governor of Britain, 17
——— buried at Caerbrank or York, ibid.
Iames I. K. of Scots marries Ioan daughter of the dutchess of Clarence, 593
——— his murder, 612
Iames IV. of Scotland, marries Mary daughter of Henry VII. 687
——— his death, 696
Iane or Iohanne queen of Philip de Valois, death of, 498
Iane queen of Charles VI. K. of France, death of, 523
Ianuay Merchants arrested through London, 633
Ianuays, or soldiers of the city of Ieane, 497
Iapheth the town of, won by Saladine, 302
Iaquys, Blacke, beheaded, 654
Iaundyes, the yellow evil so called, prevalent in Wales, 39
Ida reigns in Bernicia, 85
Iden, wife of Gorbodio, slays her son, 18
Iden, Alexander, 625
Idolatry forbidden *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 701
Ierusalem, Godfrey de Bulleine made K. of, 279
——— continues under the rule of ix. Christian Kings, ibid.
——— Knights of St. John of, take the Isle of Rhodes, 418
Iew, or Iue, succeeds Cadwalader as King of the West Saxons, 128

Iew, or Iue, wars with the Kentish Saxons, ibid.
—— begins the building of Glastonbury Abbey, 129
—— his grant of Rome scot or Peter pence, 130
Iewell or Iuall, K. of Britain, 30
Iews crucify a Child at Norwich, 267, 329
—— punished for their usuries in France, 272
—— crucify a Child at Bury, 280
—— exiled from France, 282
—— again driven from France for their cruelties, 283
—— persecuted in England at the time of Richard the First's Coronation, 299, 300
—— extraordinary conversion of a Jew, 334
—— of Lincoln crucify a Child, 339
—— story of the Iew of Tewksbury, 347
—— slain in London, 348
—— robbed and spoiled in London, 353, 386
—— slain at Winchester, 357
—— of England assessed at great sums, 391
—— exiled the country, ibid.
—— persecutions of in Languedoc, 434
—— robbed and spoiled at Paris, 552
Ikenild Street Way described, 22
Ile, Iohn de la, 506, 516
Images put down in Churches, 710
Ina v. Iew.
Incarnation of Christ, 34, 35
Indith, or Iudith, the wife of Lewys I., divorced from her husband by the pope, 150, 154
——— is recovered by Lewis, 150
——— closed in a place of religion, ibid.
——— restored to Lewys, 151
——— her intrigues for the promotion of her son, 152
Indith, wife of Ethelwolphus King of West Saxons, after her husband's death returns toward France, 161
——— detained by Bawdewyn, afterwards Earl of Flanders, ibid.
Ingebrida, or Ingeberta, 85
Innocent III. pope threatens England with an Interdict, 315
——— the Interdict of, denounced by the bishops of London, Ely, and Hereford, ibid.
——— denounces a new Interdict absolving the English from their allegiance, 318, 317
Innocent VI. pope, account of, 464
——— sends two Cardinals into England to treat of a peace, 468
Interdiction denounced v. K. Iohn, 315, 318, 317
——— released, 320
Interludes and Games devised to amuse Charles VII. of France in his sickness, 558
Ioan, widow of the Duke of Brytayne, married to K. Hen. IV. of England, 570
—— crowned at Westminster, ibid.
—— her death at Bermondsey, 611
—— buried at Canterbury, ibid.
Iohannes v. Alcinnus.
Iohn, K. son of Henry II. sent to Ireland by his father, 280
—— defeats Philip II. in Normandy, 284
Iohn, created Earl of Lancaster, 299
—— marries the Earl of Gloucester's daughter, ibid.
—— takes the Castles of Windsor and Nottingham, 304
—— deprived of his dignities by Richard, 305
—— is reconciled, 306
—— in Normandy at the time of Richard's death, 310
—— crowned at Westminster, 285, 310
—— summoned to appear as the French King's liege man, 285, 312
—— goes again to Normandy, 311
—— divorced from his wife, ibid.
—— marries Isabel daughter of the Earl of Engolesym, ibid.
—— received with great honour at St. Denys, ibid.
—— takes his nephew Arthur prisoner, 312, 313
—— wars upon the borders of France, 314
—— marries his bastard daughter to Llewelyn prince of Wales, ibid.
—— accursed by the Interdict of Pope Innocent III. 315
—— holds out against archbishop Langton, 316
—— recovers a great part of Normandy, 317
—— resigns his Crown to the Pope's Legate, 319
—— receives Langton as archbishop, 320
—— falls in dissention with his lords, ibid.
—— seals a Charter on Berham Down, 321
—— breaks the peace with his barons, ibid.
—— sends for succour from Normandy, ibid.
—— dies of the flux at Newark, 322
—— according to other accounts, at Swynyshede, or Sebynyshede Abbey, ibid.
—— buried at Worcester, ibid.
Iohn K. of France begins his reign, 499
—— makes war on the K. of Navarne, ibid.
—— seizes the lands of the K. of Navarne in Normandy, ibid.
—— sends his son Charles to ask aid of the Normans, ibid.
—— raises an army against the K. of England, 500
—— his expedition to the Castle of Rouen, ibid. 501
—— taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467, 501
—— brought to London, 467, 505
—— his ransom agreed upon by Treaty, 471, 518
—— goes to Calais, 472, 520
—— the sureties put in for his ransom, 473
—— returns to England, 475, 520
—— his death in the Palace of the Savoy, 475, 520
Iohn King of Ierusalem comes to England, 326
Iohn, St. of Beverley, 129
Ionys, Matthew, beheaded, 687
Iosquyne, Philip, 564
Iosselyne, Sir Ralph, 655
Iourdan of the Ile executed, 435
Iourdemayne, Margery, 614
Joys, seven, of the Blessed Virgin, 19, 33, 40, 54, 127, 238, 681
Ireland granted to the Basclenses, 25

Ireland, Claudius sends certain Legions to, 36
——— subdued by Henry II. 275
——— the Irish rebel against K. Iohn, 316
Ireland, Richard, 711
Irreglas v. Hirreglas.
Isabella queen of Edw. II. her stay in France, 428
——— goes to the Earl of Henawde's Court, ibid.
——— lands with her son at Orwell, 429
——— her Letter published in the City, ibid.
Isabell queen of Richard II. lands at Dover, 540
——— her coronation, 541
——— sent back to France by K. Henry IV. 559, 568
——— marries Charles eldest son of the duke of Orleans, 559
Iselde, or Isell, Sir Waren of, executed, 426
Isley, Henry, joins Sir Thomas Wiat in rebellion, 713, 714
——— apprehended in Hampshire, 714
Itinerarii, the Pleas so called, held at St. Saviour's Southwark, 344
Iubilee, year of, 462
——— at Rome, 622
Iugebert and Amabert slay Childeriche, 124
Iulius Cæsar supposed by William of Malmesbury to have made the hot baths at Bath, 14
Iustus sent by Gregory to St. Augustine, 96
Iutes, or Iewetes, 60

K.

Kaerglone, Gloucester, 38
Kaerguent, or Winchester, built, 14
Kaerkyn, or Canterbury, built by Lud Rudibrass, 14
Kalater, or Kalaterium, 21
Katherine queen of Henry V. her dower, 584
——— crowned at Westminster, 586
——— ceremonies &c. of the Coronation dinner, ibid.
——— follows the K. to France, 588
Katherine queen of Henry VI. her death at Bermundsey, 611
——— buried at Westminster, ibid.
Katherine of Arragon, lands in England, 687
——— divorced from K. Hen. VIII. 699
——— her death, 700
Katherine, St. custom on the day of, 712
Katherwike destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Kenelme, or Kenelmus, King of Mercia, and Martyr, 147
——— miraculous discovery of his body, ibid.
Kenelphus, son of Offa, becomes K. of Mercia, 139
Kenelworth, fight at, between Edw. Prince of Wales and the Barons, 357
——— the Castle of, besieged by K. Henry III. 360, 361
Kenewinus becomes King of the West Saxons, 120
——— chases the Britons, 122
Kenredus becomes King of Mercia, 129
——— goes in pilgrimage to Rome, ibid.
Kent, beginning of the Kingdom of, 67
——— called Hengistus land, ibid.
——— its boundaries, ibid.
——— a commotion in, pretended t. K. Edw. VI. 711
Kent, execution of the Holy Maid of, 700
Kent, Ione of, otherwise called Ione Boucher, burnt in Smithfield for heresy, 710
Kent, Thomas earl of, created Duke of Surrey, 543
Kenulphus begins his reign over the West Saxons, 138
——— his wars with Offa, ibid.
——— slain by a relation of Sigebert, whom he had deposed, 139
——— buried at Winchester, ibid.
Kenulphus, Kenwolfus, or Kenwolphus K. of Mercia, 147
Kenwalcus or Kynwalcus, succeeds to the Kingdom of the West Saxons, 117
——— puts away his wife, the daughter of Penda, ibid.
——— ordains a Bishop's See at Winchester, 118
——— his benefactions to the See of Winchester, 119
——— makes war upon Wolpherus King of Mercia, ibid.
——— dies, 120
Kenyngton, Iohn, 685
Kikenildis Street v. Ikenild Street
Kildare, the earl of, dies in the Tower of London, 700
Kimarchus or Kymor made K. of Britain, 26
——— Kimarchus and Davius said to be one person, ibid.
Kincorne destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Kingston, Saxon Kings crowned at, 182, 194, 200, 202
Kinimachus v. Kymarchus
Kite, or Kett, heads the insurrection in Norfolk, 710
Kneysworth, Thomas, condemned in great sums of money, 689
Knivet, Sir Edmund, arraigned for giving a blow in the King's House, 701
Knolles or Knoleys, Sir Robert, 468
——— wins many Holds in Brytayne, 469, 517, 518
——— invades France, 480, 481
——— at variance with a part of his host, 481
——— his foundations, 573
Kylbrydge Castle besieged, 442
Kylmayn, the Prior of, impeaches the Earl of Urmonde, 618
Kylwardby, Robert, archbishop of Canterbury, made a Cardinal of Rome, 386
Kymarchus made ruler of Britain, 18
——— buried at York, ibid.
Kymbalinus or Kymbalyne, made King of Britain, 34
——— had liberty from the Romans to pay tribute or not, ibid.
Kynadus, K. of Scotland, rebuked by Edgar, 196

Kyng, William, 583
Kyngilsus, the first Christian K. of the West Saxons, 80
——— rules jointly with Quichellinus, 109
——— converted by Birinus, 116
——— his death, 117
Kyngston, Sir Anthony, 709
Kyriell, Thomas, 608
Kyrlande Hille, village of, destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Kyrton, the Bishoprick of, translated to Exeter, 245

L.

Lacy, Henry, Earl of Lincoln, his request upon his death bed, 419
Ladislaus K. of Beme, his sudden death, 643
Lago v. Iago.
Lambert, bishop of Treet, murdered, 130
Lambeth, serjeants feast at, 688
Lamfranke, or Lanfrank, an Italian, made archbishop of Canterbury, 242
——— takes profession of the bishops of England, ibid.
——— receives the Pall, 243
——— his dispute with the archbishop of York, ibid.
——— by some admitted for a Saint, 245
——— his death and character, 248
Lancaster, Thomas, Earl of, 423
——— beheaded, 425
Langley, Edmond of, born, 454
——— created Duke of York, 533
——— made Lieutenant in England, when K. Richard II. went to Ireland, 545
Langley, Richard of, Earl of Cambridge beheaded, 579
Langton, Stephen, chosen archbishop of Canterbury, 313
——— opposed by King John, ibid.
——— Pope Innocent III. interferes in his behalf, 314
——— supported by the Pope, 318, 319
——— received by K. John, at Winchester, 320
——— his death, 327
Langton, Walter, bishop of Chester, his complaint against Edward the second and Piers of Gaveston, 402
——— committed by Edw. II. to the Tower, 418
Languedocke, Lazars of, burnt, 434
——— the iii. Estates of the province of, make an aid for the deliverance of K. John, 503
Lastyngay Abbey, built by Cedda, 118
Latimer, Hugh, bishop of Worcester, disputes at Oxford, 714
——— is burnt, 717
Laundre, Robert, knighted by K. Rich. II. 531
Laureston, destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Lauret, Chapel of our Lady of, in Scotland, destroyed, ibid.
Law Pleadings ordered to be held in English, 476
Laylery, Michael, 610
Leeds Castle in Kent taken by K. Edw. II. 424
Legion of Knights, what, 36
Leicester built by Leyr, 14
Lenvoy, 681, 682
Lessyngnan, Guy de, the last Christian King of Jerusalem, 283
——— his death, 303
Letter from the Barons to K. Henry III. 353, 354
——— answer to it from the King, ibid.
——— answer from Richard K. of the Romans and Prince Edward, ibid.
Leutherius bishop of Winchester, 118
Lewelyn prince of Wales accursed by the Pope's Legate, 324
——— refuses to attend K. Edw. I. coronation, 385
——— slain by Sir Edmund Mortimer, 383
——— verses concerning him, ibid.
Lewes, the Danes build a Castle near, 169
——— battle at, between K. Henry III. and the Barons, 355
Lewis I. son of Charlemagne, begins his reign in France, 148
——— called Lewys the mild, ibid.
——— confirms the alliances of his father, ibid.
——— restores to the Saxons the lands which had been taken from them by his father, ibid.
——— makes his son Lothayre partner in the Empire, 149
——— his sons rebell against him and divide his possessions, 150
——— his compositions during his imprisonment, ibid. 151
——— discharged of his authority by a general Council or Parliament, 151
——— becomes a Monk, ibid.
——— restored to his Empire, ibid.
——— pardons Lothayre, ibid.
——— enquires into the administration of his Laws, 152
——— gives his youngest son Charles a portion of the Empire, and the whole Country of Neustria, ibid.
——— places him under the protection of Lothayre, ibid. 153
——— his sickness, 153, 154
——— his donations to the Church of Rome, and his son Lotharius, 154
——— his death, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 209
Lewis son of Lewis I. has the rule of Bayon, 149, 150
——— becomes jealous of his half-brother Charles, 152
——— rebels against his father, 153
——— is pardoned by him in his last sickness, 154
——— joins with Lothayre against Charles the Bald, 156
——— his admonition to his brother Charles, 157
——— agrees to the division of Austracy, 158

Lewis son of Lewis I. dies, and is buried at St. Nazer, 159
Lewis, son of Lewis, has the rule of Germany, ibid.
——— defeats Charles the Bald, 160
Lewis, son of Lothayre, anointed Emperor, 157
Lewis son of Charles the Bald, rules Austracy or Lorayne, 158, 160
Lewis King of Germany, at variance with Lewis Balbus, 170, 171
——— solicited by the Nobles to take the rule of Middle France, 171
——— receives instead of it a part of Lorayn, 172
Lewis II. begins his reign in France, 170
——— named Lodowycus Balbus, the Stammerer, ibid.
——— admitted Emperor by pope Iohn VIII. ibid.
——— accursed by pope Nicholas I. ibid.
——— his death, 171
——— duration of his reign, 209
Lewis III. and Charles, sons of Lewis Balbus, begin their reign in France together, 171
——— placed under the tuition of Barnarde earl of Aunergii, ibid.
——— the Nobles plot against them, ibid.
——— they divide the Kingdom of France between them, 172
——— Lewis dies at Turonne, 173
——— Charles has great difficulty in subduing the Danes, ibid.
——— grants the Province of Fryse to the Danes, ibid.
——— the time of his death unknown, ibid.
——— duration of their reign, 209
Lewis IV. begins his reign in France, 174
——— has the name of Rienfezant, ibid.
——— his death, 175
——— duration of his reign, 209
Lewis V. begins his reign over France, 185
——— fetched from England where he had been brought by his mother, ibid.
——— revenges the death of his father, 186
——— carries Richard duke of Normandy with him into France, 187
——— is taken prisoner by the Danes, 189
——— set at large by the interest of Hugh le Graunde, ibid.
——— induces Ottho the Emperor to join him in the invasion of Normandy, ibid. 190
——— buried at Raynys, 190
——— duration of his reign, 210
Lewis VI. the last King of the blood of Pepyn, 208
——— takes upon him the rule of France in his father's life time, 232
——— requires homage of K. Hen. I. of England for Normandy, 256
——— begins his reign in France as King, 208, 260
——— crowned at Orleans, ibid.
——— wars with K. Hen. I. 262
——— makes war on Hen. IV. emperor, ibid.
Lewis VI. besieges Brudgis, 263
——— restores the bishop of Clermonde, ibid.
——— dies at St. Denys, ibid.
——— his Epitaph, 264
Lewis VII. (according to Fabyan the VIII.)
——— crowned King of France in his father's life time, 263
——— marries Elynour daughter of the Duke of Guyon, ibid.
——— begins his reign in France, 269
——— takes upon him the cross, ibid.
——— besieges Damas, 270
——— his piety, ibid.
——— returns and is divorced from Eleanor his queen, ibid.
——— marries Constance daughter of the K. of Spain to his second wife, 271
——— on her death, marries Alys the daughter of the Earl of Blois, ibid.
——— his children, ibid.
——— punishes the Iews, 272
——— his death, ibid. 278
——— subdues the Earls of Clermont, Puyll, and Polmet, 274
Lewis VIII. (according to Fabyan the IX.) son of Philip II. invited into England by the Barons, 321
——— forsaken by the English Lords on the death of Iohn, 323
——— accursed by Gwalo, the Pope's Legate, ibid.
——— returns to France, 324
——— begins his reign in France, 369
——— by his wife Isabel, daughter of the Earl of Hainault, the blood of Pepyn returns to the Crown of France, ibid.
——— wins certain Castles in Poytiers, 326, 369
——— takes the Cross, ibid.
——— besieges Avignon, ibid. 370
——— dies at Mount Pauncer, ibid.
Lewis IX. surnamed St. Lewis (according to Fabyan the X.)
——— begins his reign in France, 370
——— opposed on account of his youth by the Duke of Brytayne, ibid.
——— crowned at Raynes, ibid.
——— marries Margaret daughter of the E. of Provence, 370
——— wars upon the lands of the Earl of March, 332
——— makes a vow to go to the Holy Land, 371
——— visits Innocent IV. at Cluny, ibid.
——— departs upon his journey, ibid. 333
——— passes the winter in Cyprus, 372
——— lands near Damas, or Damiette, 372
——— obtains possession of the City, ibid.
——— intrenches his troops, 373
——— taken prisoner by the Soldan, 336, 373
——— his liberation and ransom, ibid.
——— his meekness and charity, 374, 376

Lewis IX. repairs Ioppa, 374
——— visits Nazareth and Mt. Tabor, ibid.
——— his ordinances for the government of Paris, 375
——— receives Henry III. of England at Paris, 376
——— resigns certain lordships to the K. of Arragon, 377
——— his grants of the lordships of Guyan, Angeou, and Mayne to K. Henry III. 346
——— goes again to the Holy Land, 376
——— arrives at, and takes Tunis, ibid. 377
——— his death, 367, 377
——— canonized by Boniface VII. ibid.
——— his body translated to St. Denys, 409
Lewis X. (according to Fabyan the XI.) son of Philip IV. born 408
——— begins his reign in France, 432
——— invades Flanders, 433
——— his death, ibid.
Lewis XI. rescues Depe or Dieppe from the English, 616
——— makes war upon his father, 642, 643
——— begins his reign in France, ibid.
——— his counsellors, 644
——— defeated by the D. of Burgoyne, ibid.
——— makes peace with his barons, 648
——— his dissimulation, ibid.
——— deprives his brother of the dutchy of Normandy, ibid.
——— sends a strong host to Brytayne, 649
——— sends presents to the duke of Burgoyne which are refused, 649
——— his almsdeeds at Paris, 651
——— his exhortation to his son, ibid.
——— dies of the morbus elephancie, 652
——— his interview with Edw. IV. 664
——— the niceness of his apparel, 665
Lewis of Bavaria, emperor, ordains Edw. III. vicar of the empire, 446
Lewis, son of Iohn K. of France, made earl of Alenson, 499
Leyborne, sir Roger, 358, 359, 361
Leyllus or Leill made ruler of Britain, 13
Leyr made ruler over the Britons, 14
—— founds Leicester, ibid.
—— has iii. daughters, Gonorilla, Ragan, and Cordeilla, ibid.
—— his questions to his daughters, and their answers, ibid.
—— divides his land between his ii. elder daughters, 15
—— the dukes of Cornewall and Albania rise against him, ibid.
—— flies to Cordeilla to be comforted, ibid.
—— is restored to his government by Aganippus, 16
—— dies and is interred at Leicester, ibid.
Library collected at York by Egbert, 138
Lilla saves the life of Edwin K. of Northumberland, 111
Lily, order of the, instituted by the duke of Burgundy, 609
Lincoln, castle at, built by William Conqueror, 241
——— taken by K. Stephen, 265
——— won by the barons from Lewis the French king's son, 323
——— taken by the adherents of the barons, 361
Lincoln, Alexander bishop of, imprisoned by king Stephen, 265
Lincoln, Iohn earl of, slain at Stookfelde, 683
Lincolnshire, insurrection in *t.* K. Edw. IV. 657
——— insurrection in *t.* K. Hen. VIII. 700
Lion, Richard, 711
Litchfield, the see of, translated to Chester, 245
Lith, knights made at, 706
Lithe, or Leith, destroyed *t.* Hen. VIII. ibid.
Liveries, an act against giving them to other than household servants, 567
Livius Gallus defends himself in London, 44
——— gives name to Gallus or Wallus brook, now Wall-brook, ibid.
Locrinus, or Locryne, son of Brute, receives Britain of his father, 11
——— Locrinus and Camber subdues the Huns, 12
——— is slain and interred at Troynovant, ibid.
Locton, Iohn, 534
Loegria or Logiers, 11
Lollards stand with faggots at Paul's Cross, 686
London, anciently called Caer Lud, or Luddys Town, 31
——— building of, 35 *n.*
——— anciently the see of an archbishop, 38
——— Cornwall and middle England, to Humber, subject to the see of, 39
——— had the privilege of an archbishop's see from St. Gregory, ibid. 96
——— the see of, removed by St. Austin to Canterbury, 39, 97
——— the care of, entrusted by Alfred to Etheldredus earl of Mercia, 169
——— burnt, or injured by fire, 202, 247, 320, 328
——— its extent in the time of Etheldred, 202
——— the Londoners take the part of Edgar Atheling, 236
——— Charter granted to, by William the Conqueror, in the Saxon tongue, 247
——— greatly injured by a storm of wind, 249
——— buildings of William Rufus at, 251
——— church of St. Bartholomew in Smithfield built, 254
——— Council at, 259
——— adheres to the party of K. Stephen, 266
——— officers, laws, and customs of, 293
——— wards of, and parishes within them, 295, 296
——— churches, houses of religion, colleges, &c. of, 297

London, churches, monasteries, &c. without the walls of, 298
——— ruled by ii. bailiffs, 299
——— William Longbeard flies to St. Mary Bowe Church, 307
——— alteration in the mode of choosing the bailiffs of, 313
——— K. John imprisons the rulers of the city, 317
——— London Bridge first built of stone, 318
——— the Tower of, surrendered to the barons, 322
——— the shirewick of London and Middlesex let to ferme, 327
——— privileges granted to, by K. Henry III. ibid.
——— the sheriffs of, ordained to continue no longer than a year in office, 328
——— aldermen of, first chosen, 332
——— the pleas of the crown kept at the Tower of, 333
——— the franchises of, seized by K. Henry III. 336, 338
——— allowance made by K. Henry III. to the sheriffs, 337
——— the mayor of, to be presented to the barons of the exchequer, ibid.
——— the oppressions of the commonalty of, punished, 339
——— dearth in, 343
——— the citizens of, summoned by sir Hugh Bygot concerning certain tolls, 344
——— strife between the Londoners and the Constable of the Tower, 348
——— conduct of the citizens in the quarrel between K. Henry III. and his barons, 350
——— ordinances framed by the citizens, but rejected, ibid.
——— privileges claimed by the citizens in Westminster, ibid.
——— threatened by K. Henry III. 357
——— the citizens put them in the king's mercy, 358
——— their charter of pardon, 360
——— franchises of, confirmed, 361
——— the citizens oppose the earl of Gloucester's entrance, 362
——— the city interdicted, 363, 364
——— the rule of, given to sir Edward the king's son, 365
——— a new toll paid by the citizens, 366
——— confirmation of the charter of, ibid.
——— the steeple of St. Mary Bowe thrown down, 367
——— liberties of, confirmed by K. Edw. I. 385
——— the Black Friars by Ludgate founded, 386
——— franchises of, again seized, 389
——— frauds of the merchants-strangers of, 390
——— the citizens of, obtains the return of their franchises at Winchester, 400
——— constrained by K. Edw. II. to find CC. fighting men, 422
London, liberties of, confirmed and enlarged by K. Edw. II. 439
——— a mace allowed to the mayors of, 445
——— assessment of the wards of, anno 1339, 447, 448, 449
——— the house of the Friars Augustines in, founded, 464
——— the liberties of, seized on account of a riot at the bishop of Salisbury's palace, 537
——— the citizens meet Richard II. on their submission, ibid.
——— renewal of the charter, 538
——— act concerning the sale of fish in, 567
——— the citizens obtain privileges on the Thames, 573
——— the body of the White Frier's church in, re-edified, ibid.
——— the guildhall of, rebuilt, 576
——— pageants at, in honour of K. Hen. VI's. return from France, 603, 607
——— people slain at Baynard's Castle, 612
——— the Lions in the Tower of, die, ibid.
——— the Conduit in Fleet Street begun, 613
——— affray in Fleet Street, 616, 633
——— the steeple of St. Paul's church in, fired by lightning, 617
——— London Stone struck by Cade with his sword, 624
——— a battle fought on London Bridge in Cade's rebellion, 625
——— affray in Cheape, 630
——— K. Edw. IVths. entry into, 662
——— Aldgate defended against the bastard of Fawconbridge, ibid.
——— the walls of, repaired, 665, 666
——— mortality in, 666, 706, 710
——— the citizens meet K. Richard III. 671
——— sweating sickness in, 673, 711
——— the citizens grant a benevolence to K. Henry VII. 684
——— enquiry made into the affray against the Esterlings, 685
——— serjeants feast at Ely Place, 685
——— St. Paul's church in, suspended for a fray, 686
——— St. Anthonie's church re-edified, 687
——— the mayor of, begins to ride to the barge, ibid.
——— new buildings at the Guildhall, 688
——— fires at, ibid. 689
——— church of St. Peter the Poor in, burnt, 688
——— the liberties of, confirmed by K. Henry VII. ibid.
——— muster of the citizens of, t. K. Henry VIII. 701
——— the gates of, watched during Kett's rebellion, 710
——— again during the rebellion of sir Thomas Wiat, 713

London.

Ballivi or Bailiffs of London, from A. D. 1180 to A. D. 1209.

Aldermanbury, Simon of, 312
Aleyn, Richard fiz, 303
Alyze, William fiz, 312
Antiloche, Gerarde de, 305
Arnold, Arnold fiz, 311
Arnold, William fiz, 303
Arnolde, Constantine fiz, 303
Barth, Iames fiz, 311
Beawe, Robert le, 308
Besaunt, Robert, 304
Blondell, Norman, 313
Blount, Roger, 307
Bronde, Hamonde, 315
Browne, Walter, 314
Buknotte, Iohn, 301
Chaumberleyn, William, 314
Cornhyll, Henry of, 299
Darty, Richard fiz, 311
Desert, Roger, ibid.
Duke, Nicholas, 302, 307
Duke, Roger, 299, 303
Duraunt, Robert, 305
Ely, Iohn of, 313
Gerard, Edmund fiz, 316
Hardell, Edmund, 317
Hauersball, William, 301
Haveryll, Thomas, 315
Herlion, Iohn, 299
Holyland, Iohn, 316
Iosue, Iokell le, 303
Isabell, William fiz, 303
Nowlay, Peter, 302
Ryver, Richard fiz, 299
Serle the mercer, 317
Seynt Albon, Hugh of, ibid.
Walgrave, Iohn, 315
Wynchestyr, Richard of, ibid.
Wynchestyr, Roger, 317

Mayors of London from A. D. 1209 to A. D. 1559.

Abyndon, Stephen, 421
Achyley, Roger, 695
Adryan, Iohn, 366, 368
Aleine, or Aleyn, Iohn, 698, 700
Aleyn, Roger Fitz, 321
Aleyne, Piers, 335
Alwyn, Henry Fitz, 318, 319, 320
Alwyn, Nicholas, 687
Amcotes, sir Henry, 710
Andrewe, Iames, 478
Ascue, sir Christopher, 700
Ashewey, Rafe, 333
Askam, William, 571
Astry, Rafe, 684
Athirley, Iohn, 616
Awbry, Andrew, 447, 450, 462
Aylemer, sir Lawrence, 689

London.

Baldry, sir Thomas, 698
Bamme, or Bame, Adam, 535, 541
Barentyne, Drewe, 545, 573
Barnes, George, 711
Barton, Henry, 581, 599
Basset, Robert, 665
Basynge, Adam, 337
Batte, Gerard, 331
Batte, Nicholas, 337
Baylay, sir William, 698
Bengley, Remonde, 331, 332
Bernes, Iohn, 481, 482
Bernes, Walter, 479
Betayne, Richard, 430, 439
Blount, sir Iohn, 402, 403, 404, 417
Boleyn, Godfrey, 632
Bowes, sir Martin, 708
Bowyer, sir William, 705
Bradbury, sir Thomas, 695
Brembre, Nicholas, 487, 529, 532
Brokley, Iohn, 608
Browne, Iohn, 666
Browne, Stephen, 612, 621
Browne, William, 689, 696
Bruge, sir Iohn, 697
Bryce, Hugh, 683
Bryton, sir Iohn, 391, 394, 395, 397, 399
Bukerell, Andrew, 328, 329, 330
Bungay, Reyner de, 331 *n.* 332 *n.*
Bury, Adam of, 476, 484
Butler, sir William, 696
Byllysdon, Robert, 670
Cambryge, William, 588
Canynges, Thomas, 631
Capell, sir William, 688
Catworthe, Thomas, 617
Caundissh, Stephen, 475
Chalton, Thomas, 621
Channyes, sir Iohn, 700
Chawry, Richard, 685
Chycheley, or Chicheley, Robert, 576, 588
Chychester, Iohn, 480
Chykwell, Hamonde, 424, 425, 426, 428, 439
Clopton, Hugh, 684
Clopton, Robert, 615
Colet, sir Henry, 683, 685
Cooke, Thomas, 653
Copinger, William, 695
Cotes, Iohn, 705
Coventre, Iohn, 595
Crowmer, William, 578, 592
Culworth, sir Richard de, 363
Cunduytte, Reynolde at, 443, 444
Curteis, Thomas, 718
Darcy, Henry, 445, 446
Dobbes, Richard, 711
Doffelde, Simon, 469
Dormer, sir Mighell, 705
Dormer, sir Raufe, 699

London.
Drope, Robert, 664
Duke, Roger, 327, 328
Edwarde, William, 663
Estfelde, or Estfeylde, William, 599, 612
Exmewe, sir Thomas, 697
Exton, Nicholas, 533, 534
Eyer, Simon, 618
Faryngdon, Nicholas, 418, 420
Fawconer, Thomas, 528
Feyldynge, Godfrey, 627
Forman, sir William, 701
Forster, Stephen, 629
Franceys, or Fraunces, Simon, 427, 454, 464
Fraunces, Iohn, 569
Fraunceys, Adam, 463
Frenshe, Iohn, 539
Frowyk, Henry, 385, 609, 617
Gardyner, Richard, 666
Garret, sir William, 717
Gedney, Iohn, 598, 619
Graumtham, Iohn, 440
Gregory, William, 626
Gresham, sir Iohn, 710
Gresham, sir Richard, 700
Gysors, or Gysours, Iohn, 334, 345, 419, 420
Haddon, sir Richard, 689, 695
Hadley, Iohn, 529, 538
Hamonde, Iohn, 455
Hampton, William, 663
Hardell, Richard, 338, 339, 344
Hardell, William, 332
Heende, Iohn, 536
Henry, sir Walter, 368
Hervy, sir Walter, ibid. n. 384
Heyforde, Humphrey, 666
Hille, sir Rouland, 710
Hobelthorne, Henry, 709
Holcis, sir William, 701
Horne, William, 683
Hulyn, William, 635
Hyende, Iohn, 572
Hylle, Thomas, 671
Iamys, Bartholomew, 666
Ienyns, Stephen, 690
Iosselyn, Ralph, 655, 665
Ioynour, William, 331
Iud, sir Andrew, 711
Keybell, Henry, 695
Killyngbury, Richard, 462
Kneysworth, Thomas, 689
Knollys, Thomas, 567, 576
Lacer, Richard, 456
Lamberd, sir Nicholas, 699
Large, Robert, 613
Laxton, William, 707
Lee, Richard, 637, 657
Lee, Thomas, 719
Legge, Thomas, 459, 464
London.
Lion, Iohn, 717
Luffyn, Luffkyn, Lovekyn, or Luskyn, Iohn, 460, 468, 468 n. 476, 476 n. 477
Marlowe, or Merlowe, Richard, 574, 583
Marowe, William, 630
Marryat, William, 667
Martyn, William, 684
Matthew, Iohn, ibid.
Monox, George, 696
Mordon, Simon, 479
More, William, 539
Mundy, sir Iohn 698
Mychell, Iohn, 594, 611
Mylborn, sir Iohn, 697
Myrfyn, Thomas, 697
Norman, Iohn, 337, 628,
Northampton, Iohn, 531
Notte, Iohn, 475
Offeley, sir Thomas, 718
Olney, Iohn, 618
Otley, Robert, 608
Owlegrave, Thomas, 656
Oxynforde, Iohn, 454
Paddysley, Iohn, 614
Pargetour, sir Thomas, 699
Parneys, Iohn, 607
Pecche, Iohn, 474
Pecoke, sir Stephen, 699
Percyvale, sir Iohn, 686
Philip, Matthew, 654
Phylpot, Iohn, 529
Pontenay, Pontnay, or Pountnay, Iohn, 419, 441, 443, 444
Preston, Iohn, 442
Purchase, William, 686
Pycharde, Henry, 467
Pyell, Iohn, 483
Raynell, Iohn, 597
Rede, Bartholomew, 688
Kemyngton, William, 687
Renger, Richard, 326, 330
Reste, Iohn, 696
Richarde, William Fitz, 347, 360, 361
Roche, sir William, 701
Roffham, Richard, 418
Roger, Roger Fitz, 336
Rokkisle, Gregory, 385, 386, 387, 389
Romayn, Thomas, 418
Rudstone, sir Iohn, 699
Russell, Ellys, 401, 402
Sandewych, Stephen, 389
Sandewyche, Rauffe, 390, 392, 393
Scotte, Thomas, 633
Serle, Robert, 324, 325, 326
Sevenok, William, 583
Seymer, sir Thomas, 698
Shaa, Edmond, 667
Shaa, sir Iohn, 687
Shadworth, Iohn, 570

London.
Sowch, Alain, 361, 363, 364
Spencer, Sir James, 699
Staple, Adam, 486
Stody, Iohn, 467
Stokton, Iohn, 659
Stondon, William, 537, 573
Swayloud, Simon, 441
Tate, Iohn, 663, 686
Tate, Robert, 683
Taylour, Philip le, 384
Taylour, William, 657
Thomas, Thomas Fitz, 348, 351, 355, 359, 360, 363
Toleson, Iohn, 337
Tony, Michael, 334, 336
Turke, William, 461
Twyfforde, Sir Nicholas, 524
Venour, William, 535
Verney, Rauffe, 655
Walcot, Iohn, 570
Walderne, or Waldren, William, 577, 592
Waleys, Henry, 384, 387, 388, 400
Walworth, William, 485, 530
Warde, Iohn, 485
Warren, Sir Ralph, 700, 705
Wellys, Iohn, 603
Wengrave, Iohn, 422
Wengrave, Stephen, 421
White, Sir Thomas, 712
Whittyngton, or Whytyngton, Richard, 543, 573, 585
Whyte, William, 684
Wichyngham, Geffrey, 456
Woodcok, Iohn, 572
Wotton, Nicholas, 580, 602
Wroth, Iohn, 474
Wyche, Hugh, 652
Wyfforde, Nicholas, 626
Wyngar, Iohn, 688
Yarforde, Sir James, 697
Yonge, Sir Iohn, 655

Sheriffs of London from A. D. 1209 to A. D. 1559.

Abbot, Iohn, 599
Abraham, William, 619
Abyngdon, Simon, 424
Abyngdone, Stephen of, 420
Achylley, Roger, 688
Adryan, Iohn, 345, 359, 361, 385
Adyrlee, Iohn, 603
Ailoffe, Iohn, 710
Alein, Raufe, 708
Aleyne, Iohn, 663, 697
Aleyn, Thomas, 578
Alis, Martin fiz, 321
Alley, Richard, 627
Altam, Edward, 699
Altam, Richard, 718
Alverne, or Alverun, Anketyll de, 365, 366

London.
Alwyn, Nicholas, 685
Andrewe, Iames, 475
Ardell, Robert, 329
Armenter, Iohn, 401
Arnolde, Iohn, 597
Aschewy, or Asshewye, Ralph, 329, 331, 332, 338
Ascue, Christopher, 698
Ashewy, William, 339
Askham, William, 543
Astry, Rafe, 671
Aunger, Peter, 361
Austeyne, Thomas, 534
Awbrey, Andrew, 441
Awbry, Iohn, 484
Awbry, Martin, 393
Aylemer, Sir Lawrence, 687
Aylesham, Iohn, 455
Bacon, William, 666
Badecot, Luke, 361
Baldry, Thomas, 697
Bale, Henry, 393
Bame, Adam, 531
Barentyne, Drew, 538
Baret, William, 529
Barnes, George, 708
Barney, Walter, 474
Barton, Henry, 572
Barton, Rauffe, 583
Basse, Humphrey, 337
Basset, Robert, 654
Basynge, Adam, 333
Basynge, Hugh, 321
Basynge, Robert, 385
Basynge, Solomon, 321
Basynge, Thomas, 362
Basynge, William, 418
Basyngstoke, Richard, 459
Batte, Gerarde, 328, 329
Batte, Nicholas, 334, 335, 337
Batte, Peter, 321
Bayton, Robert, 481 *n.*
Beaumont, Thomas, 616
Bedingham, William, 420 *n.*
Bedyll, Iohn, 368
Bedyngton, Simon, 469 *n.*
Bedyngton, William, 421 *n.*
Belyngton, Robert, 338
Benet, Simon, 404 *n.*
Benet, William, 392
Bengley, Remonde, 331
Bentley, Adam, 334 *n.*
Berkynge, Richard, 454
Bernes, Iohn, 468
Bernwell, Thomas, 608
Berton, Rauffe, 583
Betayn, William, 392
Betencourt, Luke, 361 *n.*
Betnell, Hawkyn, 388
Bewly, Adam, 334

London.
Blacnay, Peter, 318
Bledlow, Thomas, 663
Blont, Edward, 361
Blounde, William, 323, 323 n. 324
Blount, Hugh, 333
Blounte, Rauffe, 385, 393
Blounte, Roger, 329
Blounte, Walter, 390
Blunte, Rauffe, 388
Bokerell, Andrew, 326, 328
Bokerell, Matthew, 339
Bokerell, Stephen, 327
Bokerell, Thomas, 324
Bolet, Simon, 404
Boloyne, Godfrey, 618
Borney, Walter, 474
Boseham, Iohn, 529
Bosham, Peter, 402
Boteler, Iohn, 588
Botyller, Iohn, 585
Bowes, Sir Martin, 701
Bowyer, William, 700
Box, Thomas, 387
Boxe, Hamonde, 393
Boxe, Henry, 394
Bradbery, Thomas, 686
Brampton, William, 539
Bramson, Adam, 459
Brandon, Thomas, 464
Brassey, Robert, 386, 387 n.
Brecy, Robert de, 385
Brember, Nicholas, 483
Bretayne, Thomas, 671
Breteyne, Iohn, 697
Brikylsworth, Iohn, 476
Brokle, Iohn, 595
Brond, Richard, 687
Brook, Godfrey, 573
Brook, Iohn, 684
Browne, Iohn, 655, 663
Browne, Stephen, 603
Browne, William, 684, 688
Brownynge, Adam, 347
Bruge, Iohn, 696
Bryan, Iohn, 583
Bryce, Henry, 655
Bryce, Hugh, 655
Brykelsworthe, William, 444
Bulmer, Raufe, 421
Burden, Adam, 420
Burfforde, Iohn de, 403
Buris, Iohn, 468
Bury, Adam, 461
Butler, Iohn, 418
Buller, William, 689
Byfelde, Robert, 666
Byllysdon, Robert, 663
Bylton, Robert, 338 n.
Bywater, Iohn, 594
Callet, Robert, 402
London.
Calot, Henry, 666
Cambridge, William, 580
Canston, Iohn, 428
Cansyn, William, 403 n.
Cantlow, William, 621
Canynge, Thomas, ibid.
Capell, William, 684
Caston, Iohn, 428 n.
Caston, William, 421
Cate, Robert, 667
Cateleiger, Robert, 344 n.
Catelyon, Robert, 344
Cathyll, Adam, 534
Catworth, Thomas, 609
Caundy-she, Stephen, 467
Caunterbury, Iohn of, 392
Cauton, Iohn, 698
Caxton, Hugh, 420 n.
Ceynture, Benet le, 323 n.
Ceytur, Benet le, 324
Chadworth, Iohn, 536
Chalton, Thomas, 608
Champeis, Richard, 402
Champion, Walter, 699
Champneis, Iohn, 698
Champney, Richard, 719
Chapman, William, 612
Chawntelere, Roger, 433
Chawry, Richard, 667
Chelley, Iohn, 663
Chertsey, Walter, 602
Chester, Richard, 671
Chester, William, 717
Chichele, Robert, 570
Chycheley, William, 574
Chychester, Iohn, 469
Chykwell, Hamonde, 420
Chyrchman, Iohn, 532
Cloppyng, Iohn, 699
Clopton, Hugh, 683
Clopton, Robert, 609
Clopton, William, 456
Cobham, Henry, 327, 330
Colesan, Iohn, 330 n.
Colet, Henry, 666 n.
Colwych, Robert, 665
Colynson, Iohn, 330 n.
Combmartyn, Henry, 439
Combmartyn, William, 403
Conduyt, Godfrey de la, 404
Constantyne, Richard, 426
Constantyne, William, 654
Consyn, William, 403 n.
Conton, Iohn, 430
Cooke, Thomas, 628
Coot, Henry, 684
Copynger, William, 689
Cordewaner, Gerarde, 330
Cordwaynerstrete, Gervays of, 330 n.
Cornehyll, Robert, 345

London.
Cornhyll, Robert, 334
Cornhylle, Robert de, 362
Cornhylle, Stephen, 389
Cornwaleys, Thomas, 529
Cotes, Iohn, 700
Cotton, Iohn, 430
Cotton, Walter, 576 *n.*
Cotton, William, 576
Coventre, Henry, 384
Coventre, Iohn, 581
Coventre, Iurden, 330
Corentre, Richard, 347
Couper, Iohn, 711
Crane, Nicholas, 445
Croppe, Simon, 418
Crosby, Iohn, 659
Crosse, Thomas, 391
Crowmer, William, 572
Croydon, Iohn, 456
Croydon, Richard, 475
Cumbys, William, 615
Cunduyt, Reynold at, 425
Curtes, Thomas, 709
Curteyse, Robert, 710
Dallynge, Iohn, 422
Danyell, Willfiam, 666
Darcy, Henry, 439
Dauncy, William, 699
Dawes, Iohn, 696
Denfelde, Walter, 328
Denham, William, 700
Denys, Iohn, 474
Derby, Iohn, 618
Dere, William, 626
Dikman, William, 478
Doket, William, 530
Dobbes, Richard, 705
Doderell, Raynold, 403
Doderley, Raynold, 403 *n.*
Dodmer, Raufe, 698
Doket, Iohn, 695
Dolsell, Simon, 460 *n.*
Dolsely, Simon, 460
Dolzell, Thomas, 467 *n.*
Dormer, Michael, 679
Dosell, Thomas, 467
Drelande, Iohn, 476
Drope, Robert, 657
Drury, Myghell, 417
Duffeel, Walter de, 328 *n.*
Duke, Peter, 318
Duke, Roger, 326
Duke, Thomas, 573
Dulgrave, Thomas, 630
Dunstable, Iohn, 395
Duremson, William de, 364 *n.*
Duresyne, Thomas, 331
Durham, Thomas, 331 *n.*
Durham, William, 337
London.
Durham, William de, 364, 365
Dushous, Thomas, 599
Dyke, Hughe, 612
Dykman, William, 477
Ebot, William, 569
Edmonton, Henry de, 328 *n.*
Edwarde, William, 632
Elande, William, 318
Eldementon, Henry, 328
Ely, Richard of, 426
Ely, Robert of, 441
Elys, Roger, 539
Endelmartyr, Henry de, 328 *n.*
Englisshe, Michael, 698
Estfeylde, William, 592
Everarde, Aleyn, 580
Ewell, Richard, 339
Exmew, Thomas, 690
Exton, Nicholas, 532
Eylande, Raufe, 320
Eyre, Symonde, 608
Fabyan, Robert, 684
Faryngdon, William, 387
Fawconer, Thomas, 571
Fayry, Iohn, 701
Felde, Iohn, 629
Fenkyll, Iohn, 683
Fenour, Rauffe, 385
Fenrother, Robert, 695
Flemynge, Richard, 637
Forman, William, 700
Forsham, Roger, 447
Forster, Thomas, 464
Fostalfe, Hugh, 534
Foster, Stephen, 617
Fourde, Thomas de la, 359 *n.* 360
Fourdeous, Thomas de la, 359
Fraunces, Iohn, 535
Fraunces, Simon, 439
Fremyngham, Iohn, 570
Frenshe, Iohn, 532
Frostelynge, Bartylmewe, 467
Frowyke, Henry, 385, 598
Frowyke, Lawrence, 334, 337
Fryngryth, Henry, 401
Fulham, Benet of, 428
Fullam, Adam de, 397
Furneux, William, 422
Furneys, William, 417 *n.*
Fyeldynge, Godfrey, 618
Fyfeelde, Iohn, 484
Fysshyde, Iohn, 484
Gardyner, Richard, 657
Garlonde, Iohn, 320
Garret, William, 711
Gayton, Hugh, 420
Gayton, Robert, 481, 482
Gedney, Iohn, 583

London.
Gloucester, Iohn, 456
Glouceter, Richard, 394
Godechepe, Hamonde, 421
Goundresse, Iohn, 330
Graas, Stephen le, 319
Granger, Thomas, 688
Grantham, Iohn, 426
Gregory, William, 611
Gresham, Iohn, 700
Gresham, Richard, 699
Greves, Richard, 709
Grey, Richard, 696
Growe, Roger, 689
Gybson, Nicholas, 701
Gylande, Raufe, 324
Gyrdeler, Robert, 479
Gysors, Iohn, 331
Gysours, Henry, 440
Haddistok, William, 365
Haddon, Richard, 686
Hadestock, William de, 366
Hadley, Iohn, 485
Hakeney, Richard, 426
Halton, Henry, 573
Halyngbery, Adam, 395
Halys, William, 612
Hamonde, Iohn, 442 n. 443
Hampton, William, 653
Hancotes, Henry, 705
Hansarde, William, 442, 443
Hardell, Robert, 329 n.
Hardye, Iohn, 699
Hardynge, Robert, 666
Harper, William, 718
Harworde, Thomas, 441
Haryot, William, 657
Hatfelde, Robert, 482
Haverynge, Luke, 402
Hawes, Thomas, 719
Hawteyn, William, 391
Hawteyne, Iohn, 439
Hawys, Christopher, 688
Hawys, Iohn, 687
Hede, Henry, 687
Hempnale, Edmund, 456
Henry, Walter, 364, 365
Herfforde, William, 392
Hervie or Harvy, Walter, 359, 364 n.
Hewet, William, 712
Heyford, Humfrey, 656
Heylysdone, Iohn, 529
Hill, Sir Rowland, 705
Hinde, Augustine, 711
Hoblethorne, Henry, 705
Holande, Raffe, 599
Holbacch, Hugh, 480 n.
Holbech, William, 474
Holdernes, Robert, 695
Holdiche, Hugh, 480
Holleys, William, 699
London.
Horne, Iohn, 384, 385
Horne, Robert, 618
Horne, William, 665
Hulyn, William, 621
Huntlow, Thomas, 701
Husbande, Iohn, 442
Hyde, William, 567
Hygtham, Iohn, 597
Hylle, Thomas, 664
Hyltofte, Iohn, 475 n.
Hyltoste, Iohn, 475
Hynde, Iohn, 531
Hynkstone, Iohn, 443
Iamys, Barth. 653
Iamys, Nicholas, 592
Ienins, Nicholas, 698
Ienyns, Stephen, 686
Iiam, Thomas, 666
Iocii, Nicholas fiz, 336 n.
Iohn, Iohn fiz, 332
Iohn, Robert fiz, 327
Iohnson, Thomas, 689
Iosne, Constantine le, 320
Iosne, Ioseus le, 325
Iosselyne, Rafe, 633
Ioy, Nicholas, 336
Ioyner, Richard, 326
Ioynour, William, 326
Irelande, George, 652
Ireland, Iohn, 476
Isaak, William, 683
Iud, Andrew, 707
Kebyll, Henry, 688
Kelsyngbury, Richard, 454 n.
Kembe, Iohn, 697
Kitson, Thomas, 700
Kneysworth, Thomas, 685
Knollys, Thomas, 539
Knygthode, William, 530
Kyrkby, Iohn, 689
Kylsyngbury, Richard, 454
Lambarde, Iohn, 637
Lambart, Nicholas, 698
Lamberde, Thomas, 326
Lambert, Iohn, 711
Lambyn, Iohn, 419
Lane, Iohn, 574 n.
Langforde, Salamon, 392
Langley, Walter, 385
Large, Robert, 602
Launde, Robert, 486
Lawe, Iohn, 574
Laxton, William, 701
Lazar, Richard, 440
Lee, Richard, 627
Lee, Thomas, 717
Legge, Thomas, 455
Levenham, Rauffe, 576
Leveson, Nicholas, 700
Levyngham, Rauffe, 577

London.
Lewen, Thomas, 700
Lion, John, 711
Lock, William, 710
Long, John, 699
Looke, John, 652
Loveney, John, 535
Lowfthe, William, 572
Lucas, Adam, 450
Luskyn, John, 454
Lutekyn, Adam, 419
Lutekyn, Richard, 419 *n.*
Lyncoln, John, 403
Lynge, John, 608
Lynne, Rauſe, 461
Lyntson, Robert de, 363
Lyons, Richard, 485
Lyre, William de, 392
Lytell, John, 463
Macham, John, 717
Mainarde, John, 711
Malarie, James, 718
Malpas, Philip, 613
Manfeylde, Gilbert, 537
Marbre, Hugo, 446
Marchall, Robert, 613
Marowe, William, 621
Marre, Symond fiz, 329
Marres, Bartholomew, 450
Marshall, Roger, 363
Martyn, William, 670
Mary, Simon fiz, 329 *n.* 334
Mathewe, John, 667
Mazerer, William, 385, 387
Merlewe, Richard, 570
Mertine, John, 699
Merwode, Simon, 419
Meyre, William le, 386, 387 *n.*
Milrede, William, 595
Mockynge, John, 441
Mommoth, Henry, 700
Monox, George, 695
Moordon, Gilbert, 430
Moore, William, 533
Mordon, Symonde, 476
Mordon, Walter, 444
More, John, 532
More, Rauffe, 3
Morsted, Thomas, 611
Mounplere, Robert, 351
Mundye, John, 696
Munpilers, Robert, 355 *n.*
Muschampe, Thomas, 654
Mychell, John, 578
Mycoll, John, ibid.
Myddylton, John, 626
Mylborne, John, 695
Mynoure, John, 339
Myrfyn, Thomas, 695
Neale, Walter, 4
Nedeham, Richard, 633
London.
Neel, Thomas, 318
Newlande, Andrew, 322, 323
Newporte, William, 485
Newyngton, Thomas, 337
Nordon, Richard, 616
Norlande, Thomas, 670
Norman, John, 329, 617
Northall, John, 444
Northampton, John, 337, 347, 486
Norton, William, 573
Notte, John, 462
Notyngham, Richard, 467
Nynys, Nicholas, 688
Offeley, Thomas, 712
Olney, John, 603
Oran, John, 532 *n.*
Organ, John, 532
Otle, Thomas, 477 *n.*
Otley, Robert, 598
Oxynforde, John of, 427
Oystyrgate, Stephen, 338
Paddysley, John, 607
Paget, Richard, 700
Palmer, Rauſe, 421
Palmer, Roger, 418
Paris, Richard, 368
Parker, William, 541
Parnesse, John, 583
Partrich, Nicholas, 697
Parys, Rogier, 403
Parys, Simon, 402
Patencourt, Lucas, 385
Pecchy, John, 463 *n.*
Peche, John, 463
Pecoke, Stephen, 698
Pemberton, Hugh, 684
Penne, John, 576
Percyvall, John, 683
Pergetoure, Thomas, 697
Pet, Iosne fitz, 320
Peter, Iosne fitz, ibid.
Phylpotte, John, 483
Phylyp, Matthew, 626
Pikman, Andrew, 529
Plummer, John, 635
Ponfreyt, Henry, 573
Pontenay, John, 422
Pooll, Thomas, 571
Porter, Walter, 366
Potter, Walter, 366, 384
Pountfreyt, William of, 446
Pourt, Hugh, 402
Preston, John, 424
Prodham, William, 425
Pryoure, John, 422
Purchase, William, 684
Pycarde, Henry, 460
Pycarde, Richard, 337, 347
Pyell, John, 480
Pygotte, Nicholas, 417

London.
Pyke, Nicholas, 442
Pyke, Thomas, 576
Pykman, Andrew, 487
Pynchon, Richard, 699
Rawson, Richard, 665
Raynewell, Iohn, 576
Raynolde, Richard, 699
Rede, Bartholomew, 686
Redynge, William, 421
Reffham, Richard, 400
Remyngton, William, 683
Renger, Richard, 325
Rest, Iohn, 695
Revell, Robert, 684
Reyner, Thomas, 632
Richarde, Thomas fiz, 344
Roche, William, 698
Rode, Henry, 583
Rokesby, Robert, 389
Rokkisley, Robert, 393
Rokkysle, Gregory, 359 *n.* 360, 368
Rokyslee, Iohn, 454
Romayn, Thomas, 392
Rote, Iohn, 531
Rothyng, Richard, 438
Roules, Iohn, 705
Rudstone, Iohn, 698
Russe, William, 599
Russell, Elys, 393
Rychard, William fiz, 337 *n.*
Ryche, Richard, 615
Salesbury, Adam, 427
Scot, Thomas, 620
Seint Albones, Iohn of, 475
Sely, Iohn, 531
Sely, Thomas, 400
Seman, Simon de, 594
Sevenok, William, 576, 577
Seymer, Thomas, 696
Seynt Edmunde, Fulke of, 392
Seynt Edmunde, Iamys of, 418
Seynt Elene, Michael of, 328
Shaa, Edmond, 664
Shaa, Iohn, 686
Shelton, Nicholas, 695
Sheryngham, William, 539
Shore, Richard, 689
Skevinton, Iohn, 697
Smert, Richard, 464
Smyth, Simond, 657
Smythe, Richard, 690
Somyr, Henry, 685
Spencer, Iames, 697
Spicer, Iosne le, 324
Spilman, Stephen, 572
Spycer, Rafe, 334
Stalbroke, Thomas, 656
Stanys, Thomas, 392
Staple, Adam, 482 *n.*
Stayndrope, Gybbon, or Gilbert, 462
Stede, William, 687

London.
Stewarde, Iohn, 455, 631
Stocker, Iohn, 635
Stodeney, Iohn, 463
Stokker, Iohn, 666
Stokker, William, 663
Stokton, Iohn, 655
Stondon, William, 533
Stone, Iohn, 655
Stortford, Iohn de, 399
Stortforde, William de, ibid.
Suckeley, Henry, 705
Suffolke, Robert de, 351
Suffolke, Thomas de, 397
Sutton, Iohn, 578, 614
Swan, Iohn, 683
Symond, Richard, 697
Syward, Iohn, 455 *n.*
Tame, Iames, 474
Tate, Iohn, 655, 683
Tate, Robert, 667 *n.*
Tatersale, Robert, 592
Tayler, Richard, 351 *n.*
Tayller, Iohn, 366
Taylour, William, 629
Taylour, Philip, 355
Tayloure, Richard, 348
Teylour, Iohn, 366
Thesalan, Iohn, 330
Thorney, William, 447
Thurston, Richard, 696
Toleson, Iohn, 336
Tontyngham, William, 464 *n.*
Tony, Michael, 331
Torgolde, Iohn, 478
Tosalane, Iohn, 336
Totyngham, William, 464
Travers, Iohn, 322, 323, 326
Turke, Iohn, 710
Turke, Walter, 443
Twyfforde, Nicholas, 529
Twyforde, Nicholas, 487
Tynley, Rafe, 683
Vamere, Henry, 536
Venour, William, 534, 570
Verney, Raufe, 631
Viell, Iohn, 335 *n.*
Voyle, Iohn, 335
Upton, Richard, 444
Vyoll, Iohn, 331
Vyvent, Thomas, 535
Wade, Iohn, 390, 545
Wadeforde, Thomas, 592
Wakele, Iohn, 569
Walbroke, Philip, 348, 351 *n.*
Walcot, Iohn, 535
Walden, Iohn, 628
Walderne, William, 567
Waleys, Henry, 368
Walmoode, Henry, 338
Walworth, William, 481
Warde, Iohn, 477, 659, 666

London.
Warner, Iohn, 545, 685
Warren, Raufe, 699
Warren, sir Raufe, 705
Warton, Christopher, 626
Wattes, Robert, 688
Wavyr, sir Henry, 655
Wayell, Iohn, 325
Wayle, Iohn, 324
Waylle, Iohn, 335 *n.*
Welbek, William, 684
Welde, Iohn, 463
Wellys, Iohn, 588
Weston, William, ibid.
Wetynhale, William, 614
Whetley, Adam, 319
White, Iohn, 718
White, Thomas, 710
Whyte, William, 667
Whytyngham, Robert, 585
Wilford, Iohn, 707
Willyam, Martin fiz, 326
Wodborne, Iohn, 328
Wodecok, Iohn, 543
Wodhowee, William, 485
Wodtyngton, Robert, 581
Wonborne, Iohn, 328
Wood, Thomas, 684
Woodroffe, Davie, 717
Worcestre, William, 462
Worley, Henry, 696
Wotton, Nicholas, 573
Wrothe, Iohn, 462
Wyche, Hugh, 617
Wychyngham, Geffrey, 455
Wyfforde, Nicholas, 617
Wykyng, William, 667
Wylford, Iames, 687
Wylforde, Richard, 419
Wylforde, Thomas, 541
Wylhale, Iohn, 330
Wylkynson, Iohn, 697
Wylkynson, William, 701
Wyllyam, Richard fiz, 328
Wyllyam, William fiz, 689
Wymbeday, Richard, 325
Wymborne, Thomas, 337
Wymbyngham, Adam, 479
Wymondham, Simon, 469
Wynchecombe, Simon, 532
Wynchester, Godfrey, 336 *n.*
Wynchester, Nicholas, 384, 387
Wynchester, Walter, 327
Wyndowght, Thomas, 686
Wyngar, Iohn, 684
Wynter, Geffrey, 336
Wynter, Osbert, 355
Wytyngeton, Richard, 538
Yarforde, Iames, 696
Yonge, Iohn, 630
London.
Yonge, Peter, 318
Yoo, Nicholas, 662
Yorke, Iohn, 710

Londricus, 37
Longbeard, William, excites tumults in London, 306
Longchampe, William de, bishop of Ely, made regent during Richard I's. absence in the Holy Land, 300
———— his oppressions, 302
———— deposed by the English lords, 304
Longevile, earl of, *v.* Borbon
Longobards, or Lombards, why so called, 39 *n.*
———— make war on Childebert, 102
———— their tribute released by Clothayre II. 107
———— join the Huns against Charles Martell, 134
Lopham, Denys, 546
Lorayne *v.* Austracy
Lorize, sir Robert, joins the K. of Navarne, 499, 502
Losaunge, Robert, bishop of Thetford, removes his see to Norwich, 252
Lothaire *v.* Clotharius
Lotharingia, or Lorayne, why so called, 152, 157
Lotharius, or Clotharius made king of part of France, 75
———— wars in Spain, 77
———— gives his son Cramyris the rule of Guyan, 77
———— on the death of Childebert seizes middle France, ibid.
———— defeats Conobalde or Gonobalde, 78
———— suppresses the rebellion of Cramiris, ibid.
———— makes his offerings at the shrine of St. Martin, ibid.
———— dies of a surfeit, 79
Lotharius K. of Kent, death of, 125
Lotharius, or Lothayre, son of Lewys I. made partner in the empire with his father, 149
———— takes party against him, ibid. 150
———— seizes the empire, ibid. 151
———— reconciled to his father, ibid.
———— rebels against the Church of Rome, 152
———— receives Austracy from his father, ibid.
———— takes charge of Charles, his half-brother, ibid. 153
———— has the empire on his father's death, 156
———— joins Lewis in making war on Charles, 157
———— gives name to Lotharyngia or Lorayne, ibid.
———— becomes a monk at Prany, ibid.
Lotharius, son of Lowys V. begins his reign over France, 192
———— takes part against Richard duke of Normandy, ibid.
———— invades the territory of Ottho K. of Germany, 194

Lotharius, death of, 194
——— duration of his reign, 210
Lotrimus or Lotryne, v. Locrinus
Loveryn, Nicholas, 610
Lovyr, John, 650, 651
Lowes, v. Clodoveus. Lewis.
Lucenbourgh, sir Warayne de, 502
Lucius, or Lucy, made king of Britain, 38
——— sends letters to pope Eleutherius concerning the conversion of the Britons, ibid.
——— at what period he received the Christian faith, 38
——— institutes the orders of archbishops and bishops, ibid.
——— endows the archflamyns and flamyns with the lands which before upheld the Pagan rites and law, 40
——— buried at Claudiocestria or Gloucester, ibid.
——— tablet to his memory at St. Paul's, ibid.
——— stated to have subdued the enemies of the Christian faith abroad, ibid.
——— the line of the Britons ends with him, ibid.
Lucy, sir Gilbert de, 364
Lucy, sir Godfrey de, 355
Lud, 30
—— made king of Britain, 31
—— edifies Troynovant, ibid.
—— his character, ibid.
—— buried at Port Lud, the gate he had built, ibid.
Lud or Lud Rudibras made ruler of Britain, 14
—— builds Kaerkyn or Canterbury, ibid.
——— Kaerguient or Winchester, ibid.
——— Mount Paladour, now Septon, or Shaftesbury, ibid.
Luddys Towne, now London, 11
Lude, John de, 644
Lud-gate, or Luddys Gate, first built, 31
——— Geffrey of Monmouth's notice of, 122
Ludlow, the town and castle of, spoiled by K. Hen. VI. 635
Ludwallus, Prince of Wales, pays an annual tribute of CCC. wolves to K. Edgar, 196
Lupus v. Germanus
Lurdayn, meaning of the term, 205
Lutetia, the name given to Paris by the Sicambri, 56
——— changed to Paris, 283
Luxemburghe, sir John, takes the Maid of Orleans prisoner, 601
Luytprandus, king of the Longobardie, stated by some writers to have joined the Gothis against Charles Martell, by others to have been in amity with him, 134
Lymoges taken by the French, 482
Lymosyne given up by Lewis IX. 327
——— the rule of obtained by the K. of France, 482
Lynde, sir John, made one of the stewards of the city of London by K. Hen. III. 359
Lyndesay, sir William, 387
Lyndesile, master of the palace to Childericlie, slain by Eboryn, 124
Lyngues Incayse, the town of, taken by Lewis (son of Philip,) 257

M

Machomet, rise and increase of the sect of, 117
Madan, son of Locrinus, 12
Madok, or Meredok, excites a rebellion among the Welsh, 395
——— executed at London, 397
Maesurian, 49
Magny, (or Manny,) sir Walter de, sent by K. Edw III. to Flanders, 446
Magunee, bridge at, built by Charles son of Pepyn, 144
Mahomet II. takes Constantinople, 628
Maidstone, the rebellion of sir Thomas Wiat begins at, 713
Malcolyne K. of Scots, children of, 240
——— swears fealty to the Conqueror, 241
——— makes incursions, but renews his obedience to William Rufus, 249
——— revives the war between England and Scotland, 250
——— is slain, ibid.
Malestrete, sir Godfrey de, executed, 494
Malestrete, Henry de, put to death, 455, 495
Malestrete, sir John, executed, 494
Malgo begins his reign in Britain, 84
—— subdues Iceland, the Orcades, and Norway, ibid.
—— his vices, ibid.
—— his death, ibid.
Mallius, or Manlius Torquatus puts off the Gallis who invade the capitol, 24
Malmesbury Abbey enriched by Ethelstan, 182
Malpas, Philip, plundered by the rebels under Jack Cade, 624
——— pays iiii.M. marks for his ransom, 638
Malne, or Malea, the river, 10
Man, Isle of, 251
—— won by Edwyn K. of Northumberland, 112
—— invaded by the K. of Norway, 252
Mans surrendered to the earl of Salisbury, 595
Mantels, Walter, 713, 714
Mantua built by Brennius, 24
Marcell, Giles, 516
March, the earl of, warred with by Lewis X. 333
Marches, the lords of the, waste the lands of the earls of Leicester and Gloucester, 356
Marcianus emperor of Britain, 51
Marcien lawe translated by K. Alfred, 25
Marcle destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Marcomyrus, 55
——— changes the name of Lutetia to Paris 56
Mareys, Charles, 616
Margan, Morgan, or Morganus, nephew of Cordeilla, 16
——— divides Britain with his brother, ibid.

Margan, Morgan, or Morganus, driven into Wales, 16
——— slain in battle by Cunedagus, ibid.
Margaret queen of K. Edw. I. received at London, 402
Margaret queen of K. Henry VI. arrives in England, 617
——— married at Sawthwyke, ibid.
——— her entry into London, ibid. 618
——— rules the king, ibid.
——— unpopular with the English, 626
——— her fatal policy for K. Hen. VI. 631, 634
——— defeats the Yorkists at Wakefield, 638
——— is defeated in turn at St. Albans, ibid.
——— lands in England, 653
——— seeks refuge with the K. of Scots, ibid.
——— lands in England with her son, 661
——— defeated at Tewksbury by K. Edw. IV. ibid.
——— sent home, 662
Margaret sister of K. Edw. IV. marries the D. of Burgundy, 656
Margaret daughter of K. Hen. VII. flies to England, and is delivered of a daughter, 696
——— returns, ibid.
Marianus the Scot, account of, 228
Marius or Marius made king of Britain, 37
——— gains a victory over Rodris, ibid.
——— buried at Caerleyll, ibid.
Marke, Peryn, executed, 509
Markham, John, 546
Marle, Henry de, 563
Marmyon, sir William, 353, 364
Marsh, William of the, executed at London, 332
Marshall, William, earl of Pembroke, 323
Marsyle, John, 552, 554
Martell, Stephen, 502
Martell, sir William, ransomed by K. Stephen, 267
Martin, St. bishop of Turon, reproves Maximius, 50
Martin V. chosen pope, 578
——— summons the council of Basil, 607
——— his death, ibid.
Martin's le Grand, St. treasure at, sought for, 400
——— the sanctuary at, 613
——— an affray at, 629
——— ordinances made for the sanctuary of, 633
Martyn and Pepyn oppose Eboryn, 124
——— Martyn is slain, 125
Mary, Virgin, joys of the, 19, 33, 40, 54, 127, 238, 681
Mary sister of Hen. VIII. married to the French king, 696
——— married afterward to the D. of Suffolk, ibid.
Mary I. Q. of England, born at Greenwich, 696
——— begins her reign, 712
——— crowned at Westminster by bishop Gardener, ibid.
——— visits the city on occasion of sir Thomas Wiat's rebellion, 713
——— ceremonials of her marriage with Philip prince of Spain, 716
Mary I. her delivery of a prince reported, 717
——— dies at St. James's, 719
Mary Q. of Scots, birth of, 696
Maston, Geffrey de, 516
Mategryffons and other ordinances of war made by K. Richard I. 300
Matilda, Molde, or Mawde, wife of the Conqueror crowned queen, 241
Matilda, or Molde, daughter of Malcolyne K. of Scots, marries K. Henry I. 240
——— her death in Normandy, and character, 258
Matilda, or Mawde, wife of K. Stephen, descent of, 241
Matilda, Mawde, or Molde, daughter of K. Henry I. marries Henry IV. emperor of Germany, 259
——— on the death of the emperor marries Geffrey Plantagenet, ibid.
——— lands at Portsmouth, 265
——— defeats the forces of Stephen, 266
——— lays siege to Winchester, 267
——— escapes from Oxford to Wallyngeford, ibid.
Maule, sir Edmond of, killed at Bannockburn, 420
Maulius, or Manlius, slain by his brother Mempricius, 12
Maundeley, sir John, executed, 568
Maundevyle, William, heads the hereticks at Abyndon, 602
Maunt Gomoryk, Roger, earl of Shrewsbury, rebellion of, 248
Maurice, son of Karadok, sent by Octavius to invite Maximus into Britain, 49, 50
Maurice, or Morgan, made bishop of London, 246
Mauricius, emperor of Constantinople, excites Childeperiche to war upon the Longobards, 89
——— his promises to Childebert, 102
Mauritania, 27 *n.*
Mawbert, sir Maugot, 520
Maxent, castle of, taken, 642
Maxentius declared emperor, 46
——— persecutes the Christians, ibid.
——— expels his father Maximianus, ibid.
——— is defeated by Constantine, 47
Maximianus stated to have overcome Carausius, 43
——— rules the empire with Diocletian, ibid.
Maximus, or Maximius, receives the rule of Britain from Octavius, 50
——— is opposed by Conan Merydok, ibid.
——— subdues Armorica, and gives it to Conan, ibid.
——— proclaimed emperor, ibid.
——— breaks his oath to Gratian and Valentinian, 50
——— subdues Gallia and Germania, ibid.
——— subdues Gratian, ibid.
——— joins his son, Victour, in the empire with him, 51
——— is beheaded by Theodosius the Elder at Aquinum, 51

Maylart, John, 516
Maynchester repaired by Edward the Elder, 178
Mayne, earldom of, made over to the French King, 618
——— the alienation of, offensive to the English, 622
Mayors of London v. London.
Mediolana or Milleyn, in Lumbardy, built by Brennius, 23
Megrave, (Segrave) Sir Nicholas de, 353
Meldune, or Melcon, besieged by K. Hen. V. 585
Melcon, the castle of, delivered to Eudo earl of Carnolense, 215
Melcon, Sir Simon, taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Melcoun, Sir John de, Earl of Cancarvile, taken prisoner at the battle of Poytiers, 467
Melitus, sent by Gregory to St. Augustine, 96
——— made bishop of London, ibid.
——— converts Sebert, 98
Mempricius made ruler of Britain, 12
——— slays his brother Manlius, ibid.
——— is destroyed by wild beasts, 13
Menenia v. St. David's.
Menlene, Sir Almary, 507
Merchenelagth, 26
Mercia or Marcia, wife of Guitelinus, 25
——— enacts the Marcien lawe, ibid.
——— dies, and is buried at New Troy, 26
Mercia, the Kingdom of, founded by Penda, 110
——— its boundaries, shires, and duration, 111
——— Kings of, allowed for Saints, ibid.
——— divided into five Bishopricks, 122
——— the Lordship of united by Edward the Elder to the Crown, 178
Mercia, Leofricus earl of, his death, 229
Meredok, Sir Rice ap, his quarrel with Sir Payne Tiptoft, 392
——— brought to York and executed, ibid.
Merianus K. of Britain, 30
Merlin, birth of, 68
Meroneus made K. of France, 62
——— defeats the Huns, 63
Meroneus, the son of Chilperiche, sent to appease certain rebellions in Boturynges, 88
——— marries Brunechielde, the widow of Sigebert, at Roan, ibid.
——— in fear of his father, he flies, with his wife, to the Church of St. Martin, ibid.
——— pardoned and deceived by Chilperich, ibid.
——— causes himself to be slain, ibid.
Meroneus, the race of, ends with Hilderiche, 137
Meroneus, the son of Clothayre, taken prisoner, 103
Merton, Statute of, enacted, 329
Michael's Mount, St. held by the Earl of Oxford v. K. Edw. IV. 663
Middleston, monstrous child born at, 711
Modwenna, St. comes to England, 166
——— the sites of two Abbeys granted to her by Adulfus or Ethelwolph, ibid.
Moliuncius, or Mulmutius Dunwallo, 19
——— begins his reign over Britain, 20
——— named in the English Chronicle Donebant, ibid.
——— builds the Temple of Peace in Troy-novant, ibid.
——— his Laws, 20
——— translated into Latin by Gildas, ibid.
——— into English by K. Alfred, ibid.
——— begins the four Highways of Britain, ibid.
——— makes the towns of Malmsbury and Vyes, ibid.
——— ordains a Crown or Diadem of Gold, 20
——— buried in the Temple of Peace, ibid.
Momeleus defeats Clodoveus the son of Chilperich, 89
Momolus betrays Gundoalde to Gunthranus, 101
——— slain by order of Lyndegilsus, ibid.
Mondue, John, 665
Monforde, Sir Henry, beheaded, 426
Mongomery, John, beheaded, 652
Monks, estimation of the, in the Saxon times, 120
——— Fabyan's character of them, 164
Montague, John de, made Earl of Salisbury, 543
Montague, William de, made Earl of Salisbury, 441 v. Salisbury.
Montefort, Simon de, v. Mountforde.
Moons, three, seen at once, 273
——— five, seen at once, 312
Moravia, 27
Morcarus, earl of Northumberland, v. Edwyn.
Mordred, nephew of King Arthur, left in charge of the Government of Britain, 80
——— crowned King at London, 81
——— slain, after three battles, by his uncle, ibid.
——— his sons slain by Constantinus, 81
More, Sir Thomas, beheaded, 700
Morgan, King of Britain, v. Margan.
Morindus v. Morvidus.
Moris, Master, metres of, 314
Morley, Thomas Lord, challenges the Earl of Salisbury, 567
Mors Maryne taken at Erith, 631
Mortality in England, 461, 486
Mortuayn, Statute of, 385
Morton, Cardinal, death of, 687
Mortymer, Sir Edmund, 387
Mortymer, Sir John, accused of treason, 593
Mortymer, Roger, the lands of, destroyed, 352
——— made Earl of March, 440
——— taken prisoner in Nottingham Castle, 441
——— articles exhibited in Parliament against him, ibid.
——— his execution, ibid.
Mortymer, Roger, earl of March, proclaimed heir apparent to the crown of England, 533
——— goes to Ireland, ibid.

Mortymer,

Mortymer, his issue, ibid.
Mortymer, Roger, earl of March, 579
Mortymer, Sir Roger, of Werke, 423, 424
Mortymer, Sir Roger, of Wygmoore, 424
——— escapes from the Tower of London, 428
Morvidus made K. of Britain, 26
——— overcomes a Prince of Moravia, 27
——— is devoured by a Monster, ibid.
Morwith v. Morvidus
Motons, what, 468
Moubray, Sir John, 423
——— taken prisoner at Burghbridge, 425
——— beheaded, 426
Moubray, or Monbray, Sir Thomas, created earl of Nottingham and Marshall of England, 533
——— challenged by the Lord Moryf, 538
Mounforde, Sir Simon, made Captain of Sandwich, 636
——— beheaded by the Yorkists, ibid.
Mounforde, Sir Simon, 685
Mountacute, or Mountague, Henry Lord, beheaded t. K. Hen. VIII. 701
Mountagu, John Lord, defeats K. Henry VI. 654
——— wins the Castle of Bamborough, ibid.
Mountagu, John marquis of, slain at Barnet Field, 661
Mountague, Sir Philip de, 443
Mountalbone, Sir John de, 494
Mount-Canise, William de, taken prisoner at Kenilworth, 357
Mountforde, Sir Henry, 353
——— slain at Evesham, 357
Mountforde, Sir Peter de, slain at Evesham, 357
Mountforde, Simon de, Earl of Leycester, seals the Letter from the Barons to K. Hen. III. 353
——— his dissention with the Earl of Glouceſter, 356
——— takes Winchester, ibid.
——— defeated at Kenilworth by Edward son of Hen. III. 357
——— slain at Evesham, ibid.
Mountforde, Sir Simon de, the younger, has Kenilworth Castle restored to him, 367
——— joins the rovers of the Sea, 360
Mountfort, the Castle of, built, 213
Mountfort, John de, claims the Dutchy of Brytayne, 454, 455, 493
——— holds him in a strong town of Brytayne, ibid.
——— imprisoned in the Castle of Louvre, ibid.
——— his death, 456
Mountfort, Sir John de, the younger, Earl of Mountfort, slays Charles de Blois, 476, 521
——— maintains himself in Brytayne, 525
——— aided by the English, 530
Mountfychet, William de, founds Stratford Langthorne Abbey, 266
Mounthedesy, Sir William de, 353
Mountmerency, birth of Charles afterward Earl of, 521
Mount Morency, Sir Matthew de, 395
Mount Paladour, now Septon, or Shaftsbury, built, 14
Mountpyller, insurrection of the Citizens of, 526
——— Arnold governor of, slain, ibid.
——— submission and sentence of the inhabitants of, 527, 528
Mount Royall, Castle of, besieged, 371
Mulkyn, brother of Cadwaladir, besieged and burnt in Kent, 125
Muskeborowe Town, in part destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Musselbrough, victory over the Scots at, 709
Myddelton beheaded, 619
Myddelton, Sir Robert, or Gilbert, execution of, 421
Mynsterworth, Sir John, execution of at Tyburn, 487

N.

Nails of our Saviour's Cross found by St. Helena, 47
——— miracle performed by one of them in the Adriatic Sea, 48
Narsetus, 42
Nauntes wasted by the Danes, 179
——— Guyment bishop of, slain, ibid.
Nautylde, wife of Dagobert, 122
Neale, Sir Guy de, taken prisoner, 463
Nedam, Richard, 619
Nele, Sir Ralph, 395
Neotus, St. buried at Crowlande, 128
——— the adviser of Alfred, 165
Nevell, Sir Edward, executed, 701
Nevell, Sir John, executed for rebellion, t. K. Hen. VIII. 701
Nevers, Lawdry, earl of, 213
——— disobedience of the Earl of, 272
Nevill, George, archbishop of York, endeavours to excite the Londoners in favour of K. Hen. VI. 660
——— sent prisoner to Guisnes, 665
Nevill, Rafe, earl of Westmoreland, 546
——— made Marshall of England, 564
Nevils-Cross, battle of, 459
Nevius, 30
Neustria or Normandy, 56
——— invaded by the Saxons, 108
——— wasted by the Danes under Rollo, 179
——— given to Rollo, by Charles the Simple, as his wife's dower, 180
——— created Duke of Neustria, ibid.
——— the name of, changed to Normandy, ibid.
Nevyle, Alexander, archbishop of York, flies from England, 534
Nevyle, Hugh, taken prisoner at Kenilworth, 357
Nevyll, Dan Raby, made Earl of Westmoreland, 543
Nevyll, Sir Thomas, slain at the battle of Wakefield, 638
Newcastle upon Tyne surrendered to K. Henry II. 274
New Company, the name assumed by the rebels of Brye, 474, 477
Newebery, John, 564

Newe Bottell, abbey of, destroyed, 706
New Forest made by William the Conqueror, 247
Newgate rebuilt by the executors of Richard Whyttyngton, 592
New Market, Adam de, taken prisoner at Kenilworth, 357
Nicholas V. made Pope, 613, 620
———— requires aid of Charles VIII. against the Turks, 642
Nigenius v. Vigenius.
Noble, coin of the, first made, 576
Nogent, the town of, won by the Earl of St. Paule, 622
Noglodiene, 73
Norfolk, insurrection in, t. K. Edw. VI. 710
Norfolk, John, 685
Norfolk, John Duke of, his death, 652
Norfolk, John Duke of, slain at Bosworth, 673
Norfolk, Thomas Duke of, drowned in his way to Greenwich, 593
Norfolk, Thomas Duke of, defeated by Sir Thomas Wiat, 713
Norham, meeting at, t. K. Edw. I. 397
———— the Castle of, taken by the Scots, 427
Noris, Lord, attainted of treason and beheaded, 700
Norlande, John, 639
Norman, John, the first Mayor of London, who went in procession to Westminster by water, 628
Normandy v. Neustria.
———— genealogy of the Dukes of, 238
———— won from John by Philip II. 316
———— the rule of, taken by Charles Dauphin of Vienne, 464
———— lost to the English, 614, 616, 618, 626
———— the Dutchy of, granted by Lewis XI. to his brother Charles, 647
———— annexed finally to the Crown of France, 849
Normandy, John Duke of, sent by his brother Philip de Valois, against the Earls of Derby and Nottingham, 456
———— besieges the Castle of Aguyllon, 458
———— his death, 490
Normandy, Richard, third duke of, particulars concerning, 208, 209, 237
———— left a minor, 187
———— carried by Lowys V. in France, ibid.
———— escapes by the help of Osmund his teacher, 188
———— takes upon him the rule of his signory, 189
———— requires aid of Erarde K. of Denmark, 193
———— is reconciled to Lotharius, ibid.
———— surnamed the hardy, 201
Normandy, Richard the Good, fourth Duke of, 237
Normandy, Robert, sixth Duke of, his character, 219
———— goes to Jherusalem, 220
———— dies in returning at Bethenia, ibid.
Normandy, Robert D. of Normandy, called Robert Curthose, rebels against his father, 245
Normandy, Robert duke of, has Normandy bequeathed to him, 246
———— pledges his Dukedom to his brother William, 249
———— prepares to invade England on the death of William Rufus, 253
———— lands at Portsmouth, ibid.
———— is reconciled to K. Henry I. ibid.
———— his bravery at Acon, 254
———— refuses the Kingdom of Jerusalem, 254
———— marries the daughter of the Lord of Apulia, ibid.
———— the Lords of Normandy rebel against him, ibid.
———— visits England, 254
———— taken prisoner and brought to Cardiff in Wales, ibid.
———— his death, and burial at Gloucester, 260
Normandy, William Longa Spata, second Duke of, slain by Arnolde, earl of Flanders, 187, 237
Normandy, William duke of, v. William Conq.
Normans, origin of the, 180
Northampton, variance between the Londoners and men of the town of, 347
———— taken by K. Henry III. 353
———— battle at t. K. Hen. VI. 636
Northampton, William marquis of, attainted of treason, 712
Northern men rebel, 657
Northumberland, Kingdom of, founded, 82
———— its boundaries, ibid. 83
———— shires included in it, ibid.
———— possessed by the Danes, 162, 163
———— the Inhabitants of, subdued by Swanus, 206
———— the Northumbers rebel against K. W. the Conq. 246
Northumberland, Henry, earl of, slain at St. Alban's, 629
Northumberland, Henry, earl of, slain at Towton, 640
Northumberland, Henry, earl of, slain by the Commons of the North, 683
Northumberland, John, duke of, proclaims the Lady Jane Gray, queen, 711
———— attainted of treason, 712
Norton, foundation of the priory of, in Cheshire, 260
Norton, great John, 714
Norwich pillaged by the Danes, 205
———— a Monastery at, founded by Robert Losaunge, 252
———— the Iews at, crucify a child, 329
———— Monastery of the Trinity in, burnt, 368
Noryncourt Castle taken, 308
Notha, Countess of Perche, lost at Sea in returning from Normandy, 258
Notice, John, of Orleans, 608, 610, 616
Nottingham, or Snotyngham, won by the Danes, 162
———— besieged by Ethelfred, 163
———— Edward the Elder builds a new town at, 178

Nottingham, a castle at, built by William the Conqueror, 241
——— the town of, burnt in the time of Stephen, 268
——— the castle seized by K. Iohn, 304
——— recovered by K. Richard I. 305
Nottingham, Thomas Moubray, earl of, created duke of Norfolk, 343
Novaunt, Hugh, bishop of Chester, death of, 302

O.

Obbo v. Ebe
Octa (the son of Hengist) or Osca, overcomes the Britons with his father, 68
—— taken prisoner by Aurelius Ambrosius, ibid.
—— escapes and fights the battle of Crekynford, ibid.
—— succeeds to the kingdom of Kent, 69
Octabonus or Octoboon, comes as legate from pope Gregory IX. 330
——— ill treated by the students of Oxford, ibid.
——— interdicts the city of London, 365
Octavius, or Octavian, deputed by Constantine to govern Britain, 46
——— usurps the rule of Britain, 49
——— sends for Maximus, or Maximius, and resigns to him the rule of Britain, 50
Oddo, archbishop of Canterbury, death of, 198
Odo bishop of Bayon, left in care of the realm of England by William Conqueror, 240
—— released by the Conqueror from prison, during his last sickness, 247
—— made earl of Kent, 248
—— rebels against William Rufus, ibid.
—— compelled to forsake England, ibid.
Odylwaldus joined by Oswy in the kingdom of Northumberland, 118
Offa, nephew to Ethelwalde, 111, 138
—— slays Beoruredus, ibid.
—— becomes king of Mercia, ibid.
—— his wars with the Northumbers, Etheldrede king of East Angles, and Egbert king of Kent, ibid.
—— builds the church of Wynchcomb, ibid.
—— removes the see of Canterbury to Litchfield, 138
—— chases the Britons into Wales, and makes the dike which retains his name, ibid.
—— translates the body of St. Alban, ibid.
—— sends Anselmus to Charles the great, 138
—— his wars with Kenulphus king of the West Saxons, ibid.
—— leaves his kingdom to his son Kenelphus, 139
Offekyrke built by Offa, 138
Offricus revenges the death of Kenulphe king of the West Saxons, 139
Okefforde, or Otford, battle at, between Edmund Ironside and the Danes, 214
Oldcastle, sir Iohn, lord Cobham, impeached as a heretick, 577
——— assembly of his adherents, 578
——— executed at Tyburn, 583
Oldhalle, William, 663
Olney or Olenege, the isle where Edmund Ironside and Canute fought in single combat, 215
Omers, St. entered by sir Robert of Artoys, 409
——— besieged, 451
Oneil created earl of Tyron, 705
Orcades or Orkeys taken by the king of Norway, 252
Orleans, the city of, taken by Lothaire, 103
——— insurrection of the students, burgesses, &c. of, 494
Orleans, dissentions of the duke of, with the dukes of Burgoyne and Berry, 559, 560
——— he is slain at Paris, 560
Orleans, the Maid of, called la Pucelle de Dieu, 599
——— raises the siege of Compeyne, 601
——— is taken by sir Iohn Luxemburghe, ibid.
——— judged and burnt, 602
——— account of her, 641
Orpewaldus or Corpewaldus, son of Redwald, converted to Christianity, 112
Orpheuer, Peter, 560
Oryflambe v. Auriflambe
Osbrutus K. of Northumberland, 162
Osithes, the prior of, stands at Paul's Cross, 689
Osmond, bishop of Salisbury, builds a new church there, 245
——— compiles the Ordinary or Consuetudinary now named "Salisbury Use," ibid.
Osricus becomes king of Deyra, 112
——— slain by Cadwan, 113
Osryke, or Oswy, defeated, 165
Oswalde rules both Brenicia and Deyra, 113
——— his piety, ibid.
——— gains a victory over Cadwan, ibid.
——— stands godfather to Kyngylsus at his baptism, 116
——— slain by Penda, 118
——— his relics preserved by the monks, ibid.
——— his bones translated from Bradony to Glocester, 117
Oswalde, St. archbishop of Canterbury, dies, 204
Oswolph reigns in Northumberland, 132
Oswy becomes king of Northumberland, 118
—— slays Oswyn king of Deyra, ibid.
—— joins Odylwaldus with him in his kingdom, ibid.
—— his vow to God when Penda comes against him, 119
—— defeats and kills Penda near Leeds, ibid.
—— his gifts to the church, ibid.
—— his death, 120
Oswyn, K. of Deyra, slain by Oswy, 118

Ottho, the emperor, joins Lewis V. in invading Normandy, 190
Ottho II. emperor and king of Germany, wars with Lotharius, 194
Ottho IV. makes war on Philip II. 287
—— is defeated, 288
—— excommunicated by pope Innocent III. 322
Overey, monastery of St. Mary, founded, 318
Owen, K. of Britain, 30
Owen of Glendower, irruption of, in Wales, 569
—— pursued by K. Henry IV. 570
Oxford respected in honour of St. Frideswide, 135
—— taken by Swanus, 206
—— general council at, 325
—— hospital of St. John at, founded by K. Henry III. 329
—— acts made in the parliament of, 343, 345, 349
—— statutes of, made Anno 41 Hen. III. repealed, 357
—— the term adjourned to, 697
Oxford, university of, said by one writer to have been founded by Ethelwolphus, 155
—— accursed by Octobonus the pope's legate, 330
Oxford, John earl of, with the lord Aubrey his eldest son, beheaded by order of K. Edw. IV. 652
Oxford, John earl of, arrested for treason, but delivered, 657
—— his bravery at Barnet Field, 661
—— sent prisoner to Guisnes, 663
—— the misery endured by his countess, ibid.
—— delivered from the castle of Guisnes, 672
Oxenford, Robert earl of, taken prisoner at Kenilworth t. K. Henry III. 357
Oyens, sir Fernande de, 524
Oyngne, St. castle of, 437
Oysell, Hugh, executed, 315

P.

Page, John, executed, 426
Paleologus, the emperor, beheaded, 628
Pall, the "indument" so called, explained, 243
Palmer, Denysot, 519
Palmer, sir Thomas, attainted of treason, 712
Pampilona, or Papilonia, besieged by Charles son of Pepyn, 143
Pandarus or Pandrasius, 9
Pandulphus comes as legate to England, 318
—— admonishes king John a second time, 319
—— takes possession of the crown, ibid.
Papya or Papye, built by Brennius, 23
—— besieged by Pepyn, 139, 140
—— strengthened and defended by Desiderius K. of the Longobardys, 142
Pepyn, besieged by Charles son of Pepyn, ibid.
Paret, John, 512, 516
Paris, when founded, 56
—— the monastery of St. Vincent at, built by Childebert, 77
—— defended against the Danes, 174
—— improved by Philip II. 283
—— pound of Paris money, what, 258
—— variance between the students and citizens of, 370
—— the provost of, appointed by St. Lewis, 375
—— dissentions between the governours and commonalty of, 414
—— the occasioners of the riot punished, ibid.
—— mortality at, 460
—— troubles in, 502, 503, 513
—— the citizens submit to the regent, 514
—— commotions are renewed in, 515
—— the Parisians are defeated by the English, ibid.
—— coins and values of money newly ordained at, 503, 505
—— the citizens of, make an offering to St. Remyge, 506
—— a more feeble money ordained at, 509
—— the citizens of, murmur against Charles VII. 552, 554
—— tumults at, 563
—— taken from the English, 610
—— distressed by wolves, 614
—— mortality in, 648
—— alms deeds of Lewis XI. at, 651
Parker, sir James, slain in justing, 684
Parliament held at Oxford, called Insane Parliamentum, 343
—— the acts of confirmed by a parliament at Winchester, 345
—— of White Bands, 423
Parnassus, mount, falls upon Brennius's host, 24
Parson, Anthonie, 705
Partriche, sir Miles, executed, 711
Pascal I. elected pope, 149
Pascal II. pope, imprisoned by Hen. IV. emperor of Almayne, 235
Pascencius, the youngest son of Vortiger, invades Britain, 70
—— is defeated by Uter, ibid.
Paul, St. tablet in the church of, to the memory of Lucius, 40
—— when founded, 97
—— newly hallowed, 331
—— steeple of, fired by lightning, 617
—— suspended for a fray, 686
Paul, earl of St. buried at St. Paul's, 608
Paulinus sent by Gregory to St. Augustine, 96
—— converts Edwyn K. of Northumberland to Christianity, 112
—— baptizes the inhabitants of Deyra and Bernicia, ibid.
—— flies with Edwyn's queen and daughter into Kent, 112

Paulinus forsakes the archbishoprick of York, and becomes bishop of Rochester, ibid.
Pechy, John, 685
Pecoke, Reynold, Bp. of Chichester, abjured as a heretick, 632
Peers, xii. chosen for the reformation of the state of the land, 343
Pekham, John, made archbishop of Canterbury, 386
——— his death, 394
Pembroke, the earl of, taken by the Spaniards, 483
Pembroke, Iasper, earl of, so created by K. Henry VI. 627
——— made duke of Bedford by K. Hen. VII. ibid.
Pembroke, William, earl of, lands with the other lords in England, 658
Penda founds the kingdom of Mercia, 110
——— envies Edwin king of Northumberland, 112
——— avenges his daughter, 117
——— slays Oswald K. of Northumberland, 118
——— goes against Anna, ibid.
——— is slain by Oswy, 119
Pepyn I. dies, 123
Pepyn II. opposes Eboryn, 124
——— retires to Austracy, or Lorayne, 125
——— defeats Theodoriche, and is appointed master of the palace, ibid.
———. returns to Austracy, ibid.
——— continued as master of the palace by Childebertus, 130
——— irregularity of his life, ibid.
——— has a son named Charles Marcellus, ibid.
Pepyn son of Carolus Martellus, 135
——— joins his brother Charlemayne, 136
——— they divide Hilderic's kingdom, ibid.
——— Pepyn, on the death of Charlemayne, becomes sole ruler of France, ibid.
——— reduces Gryffon, ibid.
——— after application to the pope, formally deposes Hilderiche, 137
——— chosen sovereign of France, ibid. 139
——— overcomes the Saxons, otherwise called Danes or Normans, ibid.
——— amends the state of the church, 139
——— the kingdom of France confirmed to him and his heirs, ibid.
——— assists pope Stephen II. against Aystulphus, ibid.
——— besieges Papye, ibid.
——— is dreaded by neighbouring princes, 140
——— establishes the parliament of France, ibid.
——— admonishes Gayfer duke of Guyan, ibid.
——— punishes his rebellion, ibid. 141
——— offers a great part of the treasure and jewels taken from Gayfer to St. Denys, ibid.
——— dies at Paris, ibid.
Pepyn, son of Lewis I. made duke of Guyan, 149, 150
——— his death, 153
Pepyns, three, distinction of the, 115
——— their descent, ibid.
Perche, Notha, Countess of, lost at sea in returning from Normandy, 258
Percy, (Persia?) the king of, sends presents to Charlemayne, 145
Percy, Henry, created earl of Northumberland, 543, 546
——— made constable of England, 564
——— slain in rebellion, 573
Percy, sir Henry, slain at the battle of Shrewsbury, 570
Percy, sir Ralph, submits to K. Edw. IV. 653
Percy, Thomas, earl of Worcester, dissolves Richard II.'s household at Flint Castle, 546
——— beheaded after the battle of Shrewsbury, 570
Peridurus made king of Britain jointly with Vigenius, 28
——— authors differ on his character, 29
Persecution under Diocletian and Maximian, 46
Peter king of Aragon, cruelty of, in Sicily, 381
——— excommunicated by the pope, ibid.
——— goes to the relief of Geron, but is defeated and dies of his wounds, 382, 383
Peter K. of Castile, driven from his country, 476, 477
——— aided by Edward the Black Prince, 476, 521
——— seeks aid of the Sarazens, 479
——— beheaded by Henry his bastard brother, ibid.
Peter Pence, 218, 320
——— granted to Rome by Ethelwolphus, 155
——— ordered by K. Edw. III. to be no longer gathered in England, 477
Petitur v. Higanius
Petwarden, Thomas, 583
Pharamond, first king of France, 57
Philip I. begins his reign in France, 232
——— marries Berta, daughter of the earl of Flanders, ibid.
——— his adultery, ibid.
——— commits the rule of France to his son Lowys, ibid.
——— his death, and burial at St. Benet sur Loyre, 233
Philip II. surnamed Dieu done, begins his reign in France, 282
——— excites the sons of K. Henry II. to war against their father, ibid.
——— receives homage of Richard for the Dutchy of Guyon, ibid.
——— wars with K. Henry II. 278
——— besieges Vergy, 282
——— with the nobles of France, takes upon him the cross, 283
——— marries Iugebert daughter of the king of Denmark, 284
——— marries a third time, the daughter of Philip duke of Swevy, ibid.
——— wars upon the Normans, ibid.

Philip II. accursed by his prelates for refusing to receive Iugebert again, 285
——— admonished to appear before the council of Sorsore, ibid.
——— punishes the earl of Rossell and Roger de Rose, ibid.
——— makes war again on Normandy, 286
——— intends the invasion of England, ibid.
——— loses his navy at Sluse, ibid. 287
——— reconciled to Iugebert, ibid.
——— wars in Flanders, ibid.
——— his variance in the Holy Land with K. Richard I. 300
——— departs from Acon or Acre, 301
——— enters Normandy and receives homage from Arthur D. of Brytayne, 310
——— concludes a truce with Iohn K. of England, 289
——— his death, ibid.
——— his testamentary bequests, ibid. 290
——— gives different castles in Normandy to Arthur D. of Brytayne, 312
——— wins the castle of Gaillarde, 314, 315
——— seizes the whole of Normandy, ibid.
——— enters Guyon, 318
——— excommunicated by the pope, 322
Philip the III. marries Isabel daughter of the K. of Arragon, 377
——— succeeds to the crown of France, 272, 377
——— subdues the king of Tunis, ibid.
——— buries the bowels of his father at Mount Royall, ibid.
——— death of his wife, 378
——— detail of his journey from Viterbe to Paris, ibid.
——— crowned at Raynes, 378
——— visits Artoys, ibid.
——— enters the province of the earl of Foyz, ibid.
——— marries Mary daughter of the earl of Burboun, 379
——— goes to Sainterre, ibid.
——— meets Sanxion K. of Spain, 380
——— invades Arragon, 381
——— besieges Geron, 382
——— a part of his navy destroyed by the Arragonians, 383
——— dies at Parpynyan, ibid.
——— his wives and children, 384
Philip IV. surnamed le Beawe, begins his reign in France, 407
——— wars in Flanders, 394, 409, 411
——— defeats the Flemings, 413
——— elected emperor, 415
——— wars successfully in Italy, ibid.
——— levies a new tax through his dominions, 416
——— the wives of his iii. sons accused of "spouse breaking," ibid.
——— his death at Fountayne Beliaunt, ibid.
Philip V. (de Valoys) admitted for protector of the realm of France, 433, 488
——— his claim to the crown of France, ibid. ibid.
——— his coronation opposed by the D. of Burgoyne, 433
——— crowned at Raynys, 437, 488
——— receives homage for the earldom of Flanders, ibid.
——— rhime made upon him by the Flemings in Cassyle, 489
——— wins the town, 490
——— visits different parts of his realm, 491
——— sends reinforcements to the Scots, 441
——— invites K. Edw. III. to a crusade, 442
——— prepares to resist K. Edw. III's. claims on France, 445
——— his answer to K. Edward III's. letter claiming the crown of France, 452
——— goes to the relief of Tournay, 453
——— flies to Broy after the battle of Cressy, 458
——— levies the tax called a gabell, 493
——— demands a subsidy of the monks of St. Denys, 495
——— marries to his second wife Blanch daughter of the queen of Navarne, 498
——— his death, 434, 462, 499
Philip, prince of Spain, afterward Philip II. arrives at Southampton, 715
——— receives the order of the garter, ibid.
——— received at Winchester, ibid.
——— made K. of Naples and Hierusalem, 716
——— ceremonial of his marriage with Mary, 716
——— visits his father the emperor, 717
——— returns to England, 718
Philip, son of the duke of Burgoyne, takes part with the English against the Dauphin, 564
Philip, sir Matthew, 655
Philippa, queen of K. Edw. III. sails to Brabant, 446
——— her death, 480
Philippa, youngest daughter of K. Hen. IV. married to the K. of Denmark, 572
Phylpot, Iohn, knighted by K. Rich. II. 531
Picts descended from the Scythis or Scythis, 37
——— called also Gothis or Hunys, ibid.
——— Catenesey, or Cathenesia, granted to them, ibid.
——— ally themselves with the Irish, ibid.
——— their country called Irelande, Pictavia, and lastly Scotland, ibid.
——— receive the southern part of Albania from Carausius, 42
Picts and Scots break out on the departure of the Romans, 52
——— their history, ibid.
Pinnor K. of Loegria, 20 *n.*
Plantagenet, Geffrey, husband of the empress Maude, death of, 267

Pleas of the Crown pleaded in London, 326
Plectrude wife of Pepyn, rules Dagobert II. 130
Plessis, Sir John de, 494
Plymouth spoiled by the French, 571
Pomynges, Sir Thomas, his conduct at the siege of Bullein, 707
Pole, Michael de la, created Earl of Suffolk, 533
—— escapes from England, 534
Pollardes, Crocardes, and Rosaries, coins so named called in, 401
Pomfret, Piers, or Peter of, put to death by K. John, 321
Pomyers, Sir Guyllyam de, 632
Poncell, Sir Guyllyam, 526
Ponet, John, deposed from the bishoprick of Winchester, 712
Ponton, Sir William, 616
Poole, Cardinal, 717
—— made archbishop of Canterbury, 718
—— dies at Lambeth, 719
Poor, collections for the, t. K. Hen. VIII. 700, 701
Popes, two, chosen on the death of Gregory XI. 487, 525
Porchester, 49
Poret, Nicholas, 517
Porrex, made governor of Britain with Ferrex, 18
—— slain by Ferrex, ibid.
Porter, William, 574
Porth lands in Britain, 69
Portismouth, origin of, 69
Portlid or Ludgate, when built, 31
Pound of Paris Money, what, 289
Pount, the Castle de la, given up, 503
Pount at Arche, the town or hold of, taken by the French, 620
Pountalu, John de, 501
Pount Andenere, won by the Earl of St. Paule, 622
Pountenay, Edmond of, intercedes for Hubert of Burgth, 328
—— made archbishop of Canterbury, 329
—— named also Edmond of Abyndon, ibid.
—— his death, 332
Pountharge taken by the English, 613
Pount Melane delivered to the regent of France, 592
Powell, Abel, 701
Pownings, Sir Edward, 695
Poylet, Symonde, put to death at Paris, 495
Poyteau, earl of, v. Burbon
Poytiers, the City of, ruined by Dagobert I. 114
—— destroyed again by Abyderamus, 133
—— won by Philip II. 316
—— the battle of, 466, 501
Prague, the heretieks of, summoned to the Council of Basil, 607
Pren v. Egbert
Pretest archbishop of Roan, persecuted by Chilperiche, 89
Prevost, John, 516
Preston Town destroyed, 706
Prigune, the name of K. Arthur's shield, 79
—— marriage of, forbidden, 710
Priests, act allowing the marriage of repealed, 712
Printing, discovery of the art of, 632
Processions renewed in Churches by queen Mary, 713, 714
Prodigies seen in England, 251, 252, 273, 289, 313, 368, 390, 474
Prothadyus, the paramour of Brunechielde, 103
—— banished by Theodobert, ibid.
—— murdered by the nobles of Theodorich's Court, 104
Provinces, Ecclesiastical, reduced to two only in England and Wales, 39
Prylle, John, 502, 504
Puyssake, the Castle of, destroyed, 262
Puyssake, Hugh, rebels against Lewis VI. 262
Puyssour, Peter, 516
Pwylesdon, Thomas, rebellion of, 390
Pyers, Alice, a cause of popular clamour, 486
Pygacen, Thomas, 610
Pykeryng, the Town of, founded by Peridurus, 29
Pype, Sir James, 468
Pyquegny, Sir Robert, 517
Pyquygny, Sir John, 506, 509
—— makes war on Turnay, 517
—— besieges Amyas, ibid.
Pyr, or Pyrrhus, K. of Britain, 30, 31
Pysdo, Marten of, executed, 519

Q.

Queen, title of, after the murder of Brigthricus, denied to the wives of the West Saxon Kings, 146
—— restored by Ethelwolphus, 155
Queen Hythe, the wharf of, let to ferm, 336
Quendreda, treachery of, 147
Queret, Sir Hugh, 450
Quichellinus gives the City of Dorchester to Berinus, to make there his See, 80
Quichellinus and Kyngylsus, rule the West Saxon Kingdom jointly, 109
—— Quichellinus sends a swordman to kill Edwyn King of Northumberland, 111
Quickwoe destroyed t. K. Henry VIII. 706
Quyntyne, St. won by the Flemings, 562
—— battle of, 718

R.

Rabanus v. Alcinnus.
Radcot Bridge, meeting of a Council at, t. K. Rich. II. 534
Radegunda, St. wife of Lotharius K. of France, 79
Radulphus, the son of Richard duke of Burgoyne, begins his reign in France, 181
—— buried at St. Columb, ibid.
—— duration of his reign, 210
Ragau, daughter of K. Leyr, 14
Ragman, the Charter or Indenture so called, 441
Ramme, Thomas, executed, 671
Ramston, Sir Thomas, drowned, 572

Rangasredus,

Rangasredus, or Rangafredus, made master of the Palace to Dagobert II. 131
——— defeats Charles, son of Pepyn and Alpayda, ibid.
Ranulph, bishop of London, imprisoned by K. Henry I. 253
——— escapes to Normandy, ibid.
Ratclyf, Sir Iohn, 610
Ratclyffe, Robert, 685
Raufe bishop of Rochester, chosen archbishop of Canterbury, 257
——— his death, 259
Raunton destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Rawlyn, Nicholas, 609
Rayns, Arnolde, bishop of, deprived by Hugh Capet, 212
——— restored by order of pope Iohn xvi. ibid.
Reading Abbey founded by K. Henry I. 259
——— the abbot of executed for treason, t. K. Hen. VIII. 701
Record, Robert, an addition of, to Fabyan's History, 19 n.
"Recuyll of the siege of Troy" ascribed to Homer, 36
Redian, or Rodian, K. of Britain, 30
Redwaldus, the first Christian King of the East Angles, 70
Rees, the last King of Wales, defeated by K. William Rufus, 250
Regent, the ship so called, burnt, t. K. Hen. VIII. 696
Reguli, the seven principates of Britain so called, 67
Reigate Castle, taken by Lewis son of the French King, 321
Relics, of St. Vincent, 77
——— sent by pope Gregory to St. Augustine, 96
——— given by K. Hen. III. to the Abbey of Westminster, 97
——— of St. Oswald, 118
——— brought by Benet into England, 120
——— the Smock of our Lady, 179
——— the spear that opened our Saviour's side, 182
——— the banner of Seynt Morys, ibid.
——— part of the Holy Cross, ibid.
——— a part of the Crown of Thorns, ibid.
——— of St. Martin at Towres, 179
——— of St. Benet at the Monastery of Flory, ibid.
——— the sword of Constantine the Great, 182
——— the head of St. Apolynare, 199
——— of St. Vincent, ibid.
——— the arm of St. Augustine, 218
——— a neume of blood sent by the Patriarch of Ierusalem, 334
——— the leg of St. George, exhibited at St. Paul's, 688
Remigius, bishop of Raynes, baptizes Clodoveus, 71
Remy, Peter, execution of, 488
Restable, Iohn, 517
Reygny, son of Gorboninian, 30
Rheims, miraculous Crism at, 71
Rhodes taken from the Turks, 418
——— taken by the Turks, 698
Rhymes, Scottish, in derision of the English, 398, 440
Rhymes, English, in reproach of the Scots at Dunbar, 398
——— made by the Scots after the battle of Bannockburn, 420
Richard, son of Henry I. lost at Sea, 258
Richard I. when Earl of Peytowe, makes war upon his father, 280
——— his saying of his father's family, 281
——— does homage for Guyan, 282
——— begins his reign in England, 298
——— prepares for his journey to the Holy Land, 299
——— leaves the bishop of Ely regent, 300
——— passes the winter at Turon, ibid.
——— meets Philip the second in Sicily, 284, 300
——— takes Acon or Acris, 300
——— variance between him and the King of France, 284, 300
——— puts a great number of the Turks to death, 301
——— returns from the neighbourhood of Ierusalem to Acre, 302
——— gains a victory at Iapheth, 302
——— returns to the Isle of Cyprus, 303
——— taken prisoner by the [illegible] of Ostriche, ibid. 304
——— sent to Henry VI. emperor of Almayn, ibid.
——— fabulous stories related of him during his imprisonment, 304
——— his ransom, 305
——— lands at Sandwich, ibid.
——— again crowned at Winchester, ibid.
——— besieges the Castle of Arques in France, 305
——— his pledges return on the death of the Duke of Ostriche, 307
——— goes to Normandy, 308
——— assaults Gysours, 308
——— wounded at the siege of Chalons, or Gaillarde, 309
——— his death, and burial at Font Eborard, 285, 309
Richard II. born at Burdeaux, 477, 529
——— created Prince of Wales, 487
——— begins his reign in England, 529
——— goes to Ireland, 539
——— espouses, to his second wife, Isabel daughter of Charles VI. ibid.
——— gifts presented and received at the espousals, 540
——— holds a Council in the Earl of Nottingham's Palace, 542
——— complaints of the Commons against him, 544
——— account of his luxuries, 544 n.
——— report that he had let the realm to farm, 545
——— goes again to Ireland, ibid.
——— lands at Milford Haven, ibid.

Saxons, old ace, levied by way of tribute, 140
——— caused by Charles, son of Pepyn, to renounce idolatry, 143
——— rebel against Lewis I. 149
Say, lord, beheaded by the rebels under Cade, 624
Scarnflet, monastery at, founded by Philip II. 283
Scales, Anthony lord, puts with the bastard of Burgundy, 655
——— beheaded, 668
Scales, or Scalys, Thomas lord, opposes the rebellion of Jack Cade, 623
——— taken prisoner at Sandwich, 635
Scayse, Guyllyam, 509
Scena given by his father Andraste to Cæsar as a hostage, 32
Scheveninge, Asclavone
Scorie, John, preaches at the death of Jane of Kent, 710
——— put out of the bishoprick of Chichester, 712
Scot, sir Robert, 593
Scotland given to Albanakt by Brute, 11
——— boundaries of, ibid.
——— beginning of the quarrel between Baliol and Bruce, 396
——— supremacy of England over Scotland, 396
——— papal bulls enforcing the obedience of Scotland, 397
——— the Scotch excuse themselves at Norham, ibid.
——— regalia of, taken by the English, 399
——— the black cross of, a relic of great "preciosity", 439
——— peace with, 709
——— v. Baylioll, Bruce
Scotte, John, 685
Scots enter Northumberland, 241, 421
——— chase William Wallace for their leader, 399
——— yield them to K. Edw. I. 400
——— make incursions in Yorkshire, 422
——— the old queen of, comes to London to K. Edw. VI. 711
Scroop, sir Richard, beheaded, 579
Scroope, Richard, archbishop of York, 546
——— reports K. Richard II's resignation of the crown in parliament, 548
——— beheaded for rebellion against K. Henry IV. 572
Scrope, sir Geffrey, 543
Scrope, sir William, made earl of Wiltshire, 543, 545
——— executed at Bristol, 546
Scurry, sir Richard, 486
Scute of gold, value of the, 583
Sea, cardinal rising of the, t. K. Henry III. 337
Sebertus K. of the East Angles, 79, 97
——— builds St. Paul's church in London, ibid.
——— converted by Mellitus bishop of London, 98
Segrave, Sir Nicholas, 364
Seine, sailors rise at the, 281
Selesey, sir Thomas, executed, 579
Selly, Sir Jocy, executed, 579
Selsey, the see of, translated to Chichester, 278
Sely Sir Borret executed, 568
Semi built by Brennius, 23
Senly, Bernaine earl of, protects Richard duke of Normandy, 188
——— invites the Danes to make war upon Normandy, ibid.
Senne, Dary de, 495
Senne, John de, ibid.
Senons overcome the Romans, 24
Senes, Arnolde earl of, his tyranny, 213
——— besieged in his castle by the K. of France, ibid.
Sens, Leoparicus bishop of, delivers the city to the king of France, 243
Sentliegers, William, 715
Septon, or Shaftsbury built, 14
Sergeants and Apprentices of the law ordered to plead in their mother tongue, 476
Sergeants' feast at Ely Place, 685
——— at Lambeth, 688
Sergius, pope, false accusation against, 179
——— sends for Bede, 135
Serle, Sir John, 564
Serle, William, 571
Service, act for establishing the English, in churches, repealed, 712
——— in Latin restored, 717
——— the book of, established by K. Edw. VI. restored by Q. Eliz. 722
Severus begins his dominion over Britain, 40, 41
——— named Parthicus, ibid.
——— builds the celebrated wall of turf, ibid.
——— slain, and buried at York, ibid.
Sewarde, earl of Northumberland, enters Scotland, 220
——— his death, 222
Sexburga rules the West Saxon kingdom, 120
——— succeeds Ethelredus as abbess of Ely, 124
Seymer, Jane, married to K. Henry VIII. 707
——— her death, and burial at Windsor, ibid.
Seymour, Sir Thomas, 709
——— put to death for treason, 710
Seymoures, the earl of, lands in different parts of Kent and Sussex, 578
Seyzill, v. Cecilius
Shaa, Dr. Rafe, sermon at St. Paul's Cross, 662
Shaftsbury built by Lud Hudibras, 14
——— repaired by Alfred, 168
——— Edward the Martyr's body removed to, 202
Shalons, Sir John, de, 512
Shaveloce, Roger, 684
Shene, name of the palace at, changed to Richmond, 687
Sheneste destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706

Sacrifices, examples admitted by the church in the time of Henry VI. 347
——— of Jesse to be changed yearly, 347
——— at London in Tarulen
Shrewsbury, the courts of law removed to, 326
——— battle of, 370
Shrewsbury, Warine, earl of, builds St. Alban's abbey, 246
Shyreborne, the see of, removed to Salisbury, 218, 248
Sicambri or Gauls, 25
——— defeated by Valentinian, ibid.
——— being driven from Sicambria they settle near the Rhine, ibid.
——— make war, under their leaders, upon the empire, ibid.
——— defeat the army of Theodosius, 36
——— obtain Treveris, ibid.
——— extend their territory to the Seine, ibid.
Sicillius or Scellius made king of Britain, 26
Sicily, all the Frenchmen in, slain in one night, 381
——— claimed by Charles IX. 676
Sigebert, or Sigebertus, has the country of Meos or Austracy, 85
——— wars in Suevy, ibid.
——— wars upon his brother Chilperich, ibid.
——— makes peace with Chilperich, 87
——— unites with him in making war upon Gunthrans, ibid.
——— renews his war upon Chilperich, ibid.
——— is slain by the treachery of Fredegunda, ibid.
——— buried at the monastery of St. Medard, 88
Sigebert, the cosyn of Cuthbert, begins his reign over the West Saxons, 137
——— his cruelty, ibid.
——— deposed, and at last slain, 138
Sigebert, son of Dagobert, born, 114
——— his miraculous answer to bishop Amandus, ibid.
——— has Austracy assigned to him by his father, 115, 119
——— dies without an heir, 123
Sigebert, the son of Theodoricb, set up by Brunechielde as heir to the kingdom of Austracy, 106
——— defeated by Clothayre, ibid. 107
Sigebertus, king of East Anglia, erects schools of learning, 117
——— converted by Felix, afterwards bishop of Dunwich, ibid.
——— resigns his kingdom to his nephew, and becomes a monk, ibid.
——— is slain by Penda, ibid.
Sigismund emperor of Almayne, comes to England, 681
——— buried at St. Paris, 612
Sigmus, duke of Allebrey, receives Brennius into his court, 22
Silvester converts Constantine the Great to Christianity, 47
——— exiled from Rome, 48
Silvius a Cecilius
Silvius Posthumus
Silvius, Posthumus, son of Eneas, ibid.
Simpson, Robert, 688
Singulphus overcomes Cledoveus, 86
Sistillus, Cistillus, or Silius, K. of Britain, 30
Skeynton, sir William, sent to Dublin, 700
Slake, John, 546
Sleepers, vii. Edward the Confessor's Vision of the, 231
Smert, Roger, execution of, 566
Smithfield, in old times a place of execution, 254
——— justs and tournaments held in, 467, 534, 538, 572, 574, 575, 655
——— the priory of St. John's in, burnt by the rebels 5 K. Richard II. 580
——— persons burnt in, for heresy, 569, 574, 578, 592, 601, 602, 685, 697, 701, 705, 708, 710, 711, 717
——— duels in, 601, 618
——— one boiled in, for poisoning, 699
Somerset, Edmund duke of, arrested on his return from Normandy, 626
——— his delivery of Normandy to the French king, ibid.
——— obnoxious to the Yorkists, 627
——— made captain of Calais, 628
——— slain in the first battle of St. Alben's, 629
Somerset, Edward duke of, gains a victory over the Scots at Musselburgh, 705
——— delivered out of the Tower, 710
——— beheaded, 711
Somerset, Henry duke of, quarrel of, with sir John Neyll, 632
——— made captain of Calais, 635
——— defeated by the earl of Warwick, ibid.
——— submits to K. Edw. IV. ibid.
——— beheaded after the battle of Hexham, 654
Somerset, John earl of, created marquis of Dorset, 543
——— wins certain feats of arms in Smithfield against the seneschal of Hainault, 574
Somerset, John earl of, taken prisoner anno 1421, 588
Sotelties, devices at great feasts, 587, 600, 601
Sonnums or Symon, 55
Sophia, Santa, church of, built by Constantine the Great, 47
Sorsore, council at, 285
Soulas, John, 542
Sotis, value of a, 272
Southampton spoiled by the French, 447
South-Saxons, kingdom of the, founded by Ella, 69
——— its boundaries, ibid.
——— continuance of the kingdom, 125
Southwark in great part burnt, 420
——— admitted to remain under the rule of the mayor of London, 438
Southwell, Thomas, 614
Sowdan, sir Perceval, impeached of treason, 373
Spain subdued by Constantius, 45

Spaldyng, seen to the bishoprick of Lincoln, 256
Spayne, sir Charles de, murdered by order of the K. of Navarre, 199
Spencer, Henry, bishop of Norwich, goes on a crusade in Flanders, 533
——— compelled to return to England, 532
Spencer, Thomas lord, created earl of Gloucester, 543
Spenser, sir Hugh le, 347, 353
——— made chief justice, 350
——— slain at Evesham, 357
Spenser, sir Hugh, father and son, held in hatred by the people, 422
——— their lands spoiled by the barons, 423
——— the son made high chamberlain, ibid.
——— both banished, 424
——— the son hovers on the coast of England to spoil the merchants, ibid.
——— both recalled, ibid.
——— their lands in Wales spoiled by the barons, ibid.
——— their fortunes increase, 425
——— the father made earl of Winchester, 426
——— they accompany K. Edward through his misfortunes, 428, 429
——— taken prisoners, and put to death, 430
——— verses on the death of Hugh the son, ibid.
Stafforde, Edmund earl of, slain at the battle of Shrewsbury, 570
Stafforde, Henry, executed for Treason, 718
Stafforde, Humphrey earl of, created duke of Buckingham, 617
Stafforde, sir Humfrey, defeated by the rebels under Cade, at Sevenok, 623
Stafforde, sir Raufe, created earl of Stafford, 463
Standysshe, John, 574
Stanhope, sir Michael, 711
Stanhouse burnt c. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Stanley, sir Thomas, 614
Stanley, Sir William, beheaded, 685
Stanysmore, battle of Marius at, 37
Stapylton, Walter, bishop of Exeter, has the rule of London, 429
——— beheaded by the populace, ibid.
Star of singular appearance c. K. Hen. I. 253
Stars, blazing, seen in England, 121, 135, 200, 202, 256, 289, 445, 478, 491, 607, 718
——— an extraordinary one seen in France, 558
Staterius K. of Scotland, 20 n.
Stemysford Bridge, battle at, 234
Stephen, K. begins his reign in England, 264
——— oath of, to the Lords at Oxford, ibid.
——— licences the creation of castles by the barons, ibid.
——— receives homage from David K. of Scots, ibid.
——— deprives different prelates of their castles, 265
——— taken prisoner by the empress Maud, 266
Stephen delivered to exchange for earl Robert, 271
——— besieges Oxford castle, ibid.
——— again crowned at Lincoln, ibid.
——— intended to have crowned Eustace his son King, in his life time, 288
——— takes the castles of Newbury, Wallingford, Warwick, and Warwell, ibid.
——— his death, 292
——— genealogy of, ibid.
Stephen II. pope, asks aid of Pepyn against Aystulphus K. of the Longobardys, 139
——— his death, 148
Sterys, Richard, execution of, 657
Stewarde, John, 574
Stigandus made archbishop of Canterbury, 227
——— his character and history, ibid.
——— with Edw. the Confessor in his last illness, 232
——— absent from the coronation of William the Conqueror, 240
——— taken by the Conqueror to Normandy, ibid.
——— deprived and imprisoned at Winchester, ibid. 241
——— the causes of his deprivation, ibid. 242
Stirling c. Estryvelyn
Stokkys, the market-house so called, edified, 375
Stonehenge erected by Aurelius Ambrosius in memory of the Britons slain by Hengist, 69
——— ascribed by Polycronica to Uter Pendragon, ibid. 75
——— said to have been brought from Ireland, ibid.
Stowe, Thomas, 546
Stratford Langthorne Abbey founded, 266
——— K. Henry III. lodges there, 363
Stratton, sir William de, 498
Straw, Jack, rebellion of, 550
——— conveys K. Rich. II. to Smithfield, ibid.
Sturmyn, a merchant of Bristowe, spoiled by the Januays, 633
Strete, John, 715
Sturton, lord, executed for murder, 718
Sudbury, Simon, bishop of London, made archbishop of Canterbury, 485
——— murdered by the rebels under Jack Straw, 550
Suffolk, Charles Brandon, duke of, his expedition into France, 698
Suffolk, Edmond de la Pole, D. of, 687
——— accursed at Paul's Cross, 688
——— committed to the Tower, 689
——— beheaded, 695
Suffolk, Henry Grey, duke of, taken by the E. of Huntingdon, 713
——— brought to the Tower and executed, 714
Suffolk, William de la Pole, earl of, prevents K. Hen. VI.'s marriage with the daughter of the earl of Armenak, 615

Suffolk, William earl of, created marquis and afterwards D. of Suffolk, 617
——— hated by the people, 618
——— suspected of the murder of Humfrey duke of Gloucester, 619
——— arrested, 622
——— exiled for five years, ibid.
——— beheaded at sea, ibid.
Suffolk, William de la Pole, duke of, 685
Sullande, sir William, 423
——— slain at Burghfridge, 425
Sumptuary laws enacted, 445
Sun, singular appearance of the, 426
——— two Suns seen at once, 273
Sunday, act of the common council of London for the observance of, 617
Supremacy restored to the crown by Q. Elizabeth, 722
Surrey, Henry earl of, beheaded, 709
Surrey, John, duke of, beheaded, 568
Surrey, Thomas earl of, sent into Ireland, 697
——— burns Morles in Britaine, ibid.
——— burns many towns in Scotland, 698
Swanus, king of Denmark, makes a temporary incursion into England, 205
——— returns again with a larger force, ibid. 206
——— is slain at Thetford, 207
Swanus, king of Denmark, brother to Canute, 217
——— makes war on Harold Harfager, 226
Swanus, son of earl Godwin, joins his father against Edward the Confessor, 226
——— dies on his journey toward Jerusalem, 227
Sweating sickness, 673, 699, 711
Sword-fish taken at Erith, 631
Swynford, dame Katharine, 533
——— made countess of Hereford, ibid.
Synod at St. Paul's, 345
——— at Basil, 612
Sythricus, K. of Northumberland, marries the sister of Ethelstan, 182

T.

Taiker, De, burnt at Hadley in Suffolk, 717
Talbot, the lord, besieges Dieppe, 613
——— slain at Castyllyon, 622
Talents, three kinds of, 218
Tangustels, the concubine of Davius, 26
Tanner, John, assumes to be the son of Edw. I. 420
——— executed at Northampton, 421
Tanny, sir Richard, 387
Tany, sir Ralph, 396
Tarpren destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Tartars begin their dominion, 312
Tartary, the great Chann of, enters Hungery, 331
Tassylon, duke of the Bavarys, annoyed by Gryffon, son of Carolus Martellus, 136
——— is restored by Peppyn, ibid.
Taylton, William, burnt in Smithfield, 592
Taylors, the fellowship of, called Merchant Taylors, 688
Tenancius, or Tevancius, son of Lud, 31
——— receives the dukedom of Cornwall from Cassibelan, ibid.
——— made king of Britain, 34
——— called in the English Chronicle Teonace, ibid.
——— buried at Caer Lud or London, ibid.
Tetnesford, the Danish castle at, destroyed by Edward the Elder, 177
Templars purchase the Isle of Cyprus of K. Richard, I. 303
——— suppressed in [illegible] for their heresy, 414
——— many of them burnt, 415
——— Jacob, the master of the Templars, burnt, 416
——— the lands of the, given to the knights of St. John, 418
Temporal possessions of the religious in England t. K. Hen. IV. enumerated, 575
Temporibus, Johannes de, account of, 260
Tertre, Peter de, executed, 524
Teryell, Keryell, or Teryll, sir Thomas, beheaded, 639
Tewksbury, battle of, 661
Thames, the river of, frozen, 267, 348, 365, 603, 709
——— the weirs in, ordered to be destroyed, 327, 572
——— sudden rise of the, 333, 576
Thanet, the Isle of, given to the Saxons by Vortiger, 60
Thebaude, or Thebalds, abbot of Bec, made archbishop of Canterbury, 265
——— mediates a peace between Stephen, and Henry duke of Normandy, 283
——— his death, 274
Theobalde, 616
Theodobert, or Theodobertus, succeeds Theodericus as king of Austrasy, 78
——— wins the favour of Childebert, ibid.
——— again reconciled to his uncles, 77
——— his death, ibid.
Theodobert, son of Chilperich, taken prisoner by Sigebertus, 86
——— invades Neustria, ibid.
——— slain by Gundoaldus, 87
Theodobert, son of Childebert, rules in Neustria, 103
——— defeats Lotharius, ibid.
——— joins Berthoalds and Clothaire against Theodoricus, 104
——— comes to an agreement with Theodoricus, ibid.
——— his territory subdued, ibid.
——— slain by treachery, ibid.
Theodora, the wife of Constantius, 45

Theodoric, king of Lombardy, reconciles Clodoveus and Alaric, 72
Theodorich, son of Childebert, deceived by Brunechielde and Prothadius, 103
——— marries Membrege, daughter of the K. of Spain, 104
——— deserts her at the instigation of Brunechielde, ibid.
——— reduces the country of Theodobert to subjection, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 137
Theodorich, son of Clodoveus, receives Austracy, 75
——— his death, 76
Theodorich, son of Clodoveus (Clovis II) made king of France, 123
——— deprived of his dignity, 124
——— restored, ibid.
——— defeated by Pepyn, 125
——— dies, ibid.
——— duration of his reign, 137
Theodoricus, son of Dagobert II, begins his reign in France, 132
——— nourished in a house of nuns, ibid.
——— his death, 134
——— duration of his reign, 137
Theodorus, brother of Childebert, takes Mountclere, 76
Theodosus, archbishop of Canterbury, has the rule of the churches in Britain, 120
——— holds a synod at Hatfield, 121
Theoldowald, master of the palace under Dagobert II, 130
——— deprived of his office, 131
Thetford, battle at, 65
——— the principal town of the East Angles, 70
——— pillaged by the Danes, 205
Thilfer, the Norman champion, slain, 236
Thomas, canon of Bayon, made archbishop of York, 242
——— refuses obedience to Lanfranke, ibid.
——— appeals to the court of Rome, 243
Thomas, St. of Dover, slain, 395
Thomas, St. of Herforde, translated, 392
Thomas, William, execution of, 714
Thong Castle built by Hengist, 61
——— massacre of the British nobles at, 66
Thorney, Westminster so called, 97
Thorney, Venyt, execution of, 562
Thune, the castle of, besieged by Philip de Valois, 492
Thunys taken from the Turks, 535
Thurning, sir William, 546
——— renounces his homage to K. Richard II, 552
Thurston chosen archbishop of York, 257
Thwatys, sir Thomas, 685
Thylwall, the town of, built by K. Edward the elder, 178
Thyrnyng, William, 549
Thyrlworth, palace of the King of the Romans at, destroyed, 362
——— amends made for its destruction, 364
Ties, or Tryers, sir John, 423, 426
Tiptoft, sir Payne, quarrel of, with sir Ries ap Meredok, 392
Tiptoft, sir Robert, 395
Tiptoft, sir Thomas, beheaded, 652
Tuckett, or Tuckettys, sir Roger, 423
——— taken prisoner at Bing bridge, 425
——— his execution, 426
Tolongn, John de, 564
Tonwenna, Conwenna, or Cornewey, reconciles Belynus and Brennius, 23
Tostius, Tosty, or Costy, cruelty of, toward the servants of his brother Harold, 230
——— makes incursions in England, 233
——— slain in battle by Harold, 234
Totnesse, Brute lands at, 10
Tournaments v. Dunstable, Smithfield, Windsor.
Tournay, the Romans in, give battle to Claudio Crinitus, 57
——— relieved by Philip de Valois, 453
——— delivered to the French king, 697
Tony, or Tony, Michael, execution of, 385
Towcester reedified by Edward the Elder, 177
Towers destroyed by Ahyderamus, 133
——— the abbey and city of, destroyed by the Danes, 179
Towton, battle of, 639
Traherne is sent by Constantine to reduce Octavius to subjection, 49
——— succeeds at first, but is afterwards defeated, ibid.
Trancut destroyed t. K. Hen. VIII. 706
Trevaur, John, bishop of St. Asaph, 549
Treveris, when founded, 56
——— obtained by the Sicambri, ibid.
Tribute to the Romans ceases, 53
Trojans, after the siege of their city, land in divers countries, 55
Trollop, Andrew, joins the Yorkists, 634
——— goes over to the royal party, ibid.
——— slain at Towton, 639
Trona daughter of Hilpericus, 75
Troy taken by the Greeks, 1, 2
Troyl bastons Inquisition of, 402
Troynovant built by Brute, 11, 13
——— afterwards called Luddys Towne, now London, 11
——— Temple of Peace in, built by Dunwallo Moliuncius, 20
——— repaired by Lud, 31
Trussel, sir John, 582
Trussel, sir William, joins K. Edw. II.'s queen in France, 425
——— his speech to K. Edw. II. on his deposition, 431
Tumberell, bakers punished by the, 345, 384
Turbevyle, sir Thomas, executed, 395

Turchus,

Turchus, the son of Troylus, 58
——— lands with Francio, or Francis, in Thrace, ibid.
——— sails to Fano the less in Scythia, ibid.
——— descendants of, ibid.
Turks, or rather the Ismeeys or men of Jean, 535
Turkyllus lands in Kent, 206
Turmyn, Richard, 578
Turonus, or Turonus, 10
Turon, the people of, rebel against Chilperich, 83
Turwin and Tournay taken by K. Henry VIII. 686
Twyffard, Nicholas, knighted by K. Rich. II. 531
Tuyller, Robert, 563
Tykhyll castle taken by Richard I. 305
Tyrell, James, beheaded, 637
Tyrell, sir James, ibid.
Tyron or Turon Sea, 10

V.

Vaghan, Cuthbert, 713, 714
Vaghan, sir Thomas, beheaded at Pountfreyt, 663
Valence, sir Gautier de, killed at Calais, 581
Valentinian flies to Constantinople, 51
——— wars upon the "Aleynys," 55
——— covenants with the Gauls for the reduction of the "Aleynys," ibid.
Valery, St. William duke of Normandy sets sail from, 235
Vandals, or Wandalis, defeated by Eba archbishop of Sens, 134
Vane, Henry, 714
Vayllant, Iolin, 512
Vempount, sir Robert de, 353
Verdeley, the people of, rebel against the abbot, 271
Vere, Lyonell, created marquis of Dublin, 533
——— flies from England, 534
Vergy besieged by Philip II. K. of France, 282
Vermendoys, Hebert, earl of, executed, 186
Vernyel Castle besieged by K. Philip II. 284
Vernoyll, the town of, taken by the treason of a French baker, 622
Verona built by Brennius, 24
Verolam, or Verolamium, v. St. Alban's
Vespasian sent to Britain to subdue Arviragus, 36
——— reduces the Isle of Wight, 37
Veysy, sir John de, 353
Uffa founds the kingdom of the East Angles, 70
Ufforde, Robert of, made earl of Suffolk, 435
Victor, abbey of St. founded by K. Philip II. 289
Vincent, St. sepulchre of, 77
Vincentia, built by Brennius, 24
Vgenius and Peridurus depose their brother Heliodorus, 28
——— ——— are jointly made kings of Britain, ibid.
Virgin, joys of the, 19, 33, 40, 54, 127, 238, 681
Vortiger, or Vortigernus, raises Constantius to the throne of Britain, 53
Vortiger after the murder of Constantius becomes king himself, 59
——— his nobles rebel against him, ibid.
——— sends for the Saxons to defend his land, ibid.
——— takes Hengist into favour, 61
——— marries Ronowen, or Rowena, ibid.
——— deprived of his crown by the Britons, 62
——— restored upon the death of Vortimer, 65
——— builds a castle called Genereon or Gwayneren in Wales, ibid.
——— Hengist's treachery toward him, 66
——— flies to Wales, 68
——— commits incest, and is accused by St. Germayne, ibid.
——— his death, ibid.
Vortimerus crowned king of Britain, 62, 63
——— fights numerous battles with the Saxons, 65
——— poisoned by Rowena, ibid.
Vortiporius K. of Britain, 82
——— his death, 83
Upton, John, battle of, with John Dowse, 601
Urban VI. elected pope, 437, 525
Ursula and the 11,000 virgins sent for by Conge Merydok, 51
——— martyred in the time of Marcianus, ibid.
Urkatell defeats the Danes in Norfolk, 205
Uske, John, convicted of treason, 534
Uter Pendragon, son of Constantinus, 58
——— flies to Little Britain, 59
——— made K. of Britain, 74
——— why named Pendragon, ibid.
——— enamoured of Ygyarne, whose husband he kills in battle, 75
——— poisoned and afterwards interred at Stonehange, ibid.
Utrike, Frederyke bishop of, slain, 190
——— his advice to Lewys I. 154
Vyell, Margaret, judgment of the City of London against her, 536
Vyenne, Sir John de, 525
Vyllers, John, 566
Vyllers, John de, 613
Vytry, the town of, burnt, 514

W.

Wadhurst, insurrection at, attempted by Q. Mary, 717
Wake, Sir Baldewin, 353
——— taken prisoner at Kenilworth, 337
Wakefield, battle of, 638
Walden, Roger, made archbishop of Canterbury, 545
——— his oration to Henry IV. taking possession of the throne, 550, 551
——— removed back to the see of London, 567
Waldenham, Sir Francis, beheaded, 426
Waldren, John, made one of the stewards of the city of London by K. Henry III. 359

00030937

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018